GAUDEO

PETER MARTYR'S DECADES.—The History of Travayle in the West and East Indies, and other Countryes, in Muscovia, Persia, China, Giapan, with a discourse of the Northwest Passage, &c., gathered in parte and done into Englyshe by *Richard Eden*, newly set in order, augmented and finished, by *Richarde Willes*, small 4to. **Black Letter**, hf. calf, *best edition, fine copy, complete.* Lond. 1577

"Eden was the first Englishman who undertook to present in a collective form the astonishing results of that spirit of maritime enterprise which had been everywhere awakened by the discovery of America; nor was he a mere compiler: we are indebted to him for several original Voyages of great curiosity and value." Besides the Decades of Peter Martyr, this work contains Oviedo's History, "certain speciall reports of New Spain or Mexico, of Peru, of Rio de la Plate, of the Lands Labrador, and Bacalaos, with the discovering of Florida, &c."

GAUDEO.

John Carter Brown.



F

THE
Hiſtory of Trauayle
in the
VVeſt and Eaſt Indies, and other countreys lying eyther way, towardes the fruitfull and ryche *Moluccaes.*

As
Moſcouia, Perſia, Arabia, Syria, Ægypte, Ethiopia, Guinea, China in *Cathayo*, and *Giapan*: VVith a diſcourſe of the Northweſt paſſage.

In the hande of our Lorde be all the corners of the earth. Pſal. 94.

Gathered in parte, and done into Englyſhe by *Richarde Eden.*

Newly ſet in order, augmented, and finiſhed by Richarde VVilles.

¶ *Imprinted at London* by Richarde Iugge. 1577.

Cum Priuilegio.

JOHN CARTER BROWN

To the ryght noble and excellent

Lady, the Lady Brigit, Counteſſe of Bedforde, my ſinguler good Lady and Myſtreſſe.

ALL ſtudies haue theyr ſpeciall tymes (Ryght noble Lady) all good partes, and ſinguler qualities of the mynde are holden vp, and maynteyned with honour. The ſeely chylde learneth in his tẽder age how to ſpeake, to reade, to write: yoũg laddes beſtowe theyr tyme in the ſtudy of other liberall ſciences: as yeeres come on, and wyt encreaſeth, ſo finally, the whole courſe of learnyng is runne ouer. Agayne, the arte of Grammer is wont erſt to be learned, and than Logike afterwarde: naturall Philoſophie goeth not before eloquence in our ſchooles: Geometry is firſt read, & than Geography. So that the ſtudies of good letters haue their times in reſpecte of mans age, they haue theyr tymes in the order of learning: yea they haue a tyme, that maketh vs all to beſtowe therein our tyme, and to ſtudie eche facultie in due tyme, I meane that ſpeciall tyme they floryshe in. I may not denye but that learnyng hath at all tymes ben well accompted of, in moſt countreys the ſkyll of dyuers languages well thought of, & learned men to haue ben alwayes rewarded, what is than that ſpeciall tyme wherin all ſtudies doe flooryſhe? Learnyng may bee ryght well compared vnto the floutes & fruites

of the earth, and the ſpeciall tyme of learnyng, vnto theyr ſinguler ſeaſons. In May, floures: in Iune, Cheries: at Harueſt, corne: in September, Grapes: ſo fareth it in the ſtudy of good letters. There was a tyme whā the arte of grammer was ſo muche eſteemed, that Gramariens proceeded maſters thereof as woorſhypfully, as other profeſſours now doe in any other facultie. Than was it honourable to be a Poet: honourable I ſay, for that the Poet Laureate enioyed the honour of a Palatine, that tyme is paſte. There was a tyme whan Logike & Aſtrology onely ſo weeried the heades of young ſchollers, yea and buſied olde age alſo, that true Philoſophie in deede was almoſt forgotten, eloquence defaced, the languages exiled, that tyme is paſt. Not long ſince happy was he that had any ſkil in the greke tongue, he was thought a great ſcholler that could make a greeke verſe. Nowe a dayes, who ſtudieth not rather the Hebrue language? VVhere haue you almoſt any greecke aucthour printed? Geography laye hydden many hundred yeeres in darkeneſſe and obliuion, without regarde and price: of late who taketh not vppon him to diſcourſe of the whole worlde, and eche prouince thereof particulerly, euen by hearſay, although in the firſt principles of that arte, he bee altogeather ignorant and vnſkylfull? This tyme is now. So long as Poetry was eſteemed, the arte of grammer accompted of, Logike muche made of, Aſtrology well thought of: Diuine Poets, good Gramariens, perfecte Logiciens, excellent Aſtronomers no where wanted.

A Virgile can you neuer want where one Mecènas is. Honour & promotion beſtowed vppon the maynteyners of controuerſies in religion, hath brought gray heares from endleſſe Sophiſtry, from Scotus formalites, from Buridan and Burley, from Holcot, from Bricot, from Vademecum, from Dormi ſecure, and taught yonger yeeres rather to paſſe through Ariſtotle and his interpreters, than euer to dwell therein: cauſed them to ſtudie the ſcriptures, to reade ouer the fathers, to conferre the counſeyles, to learne the greeke and Hebrue languages, to ſearche the Chalday Paraphraſte, to peruſe the olde Doctours, to tranſlate the newe wryters, to heape vp common places, to diſcourſe of ſectes, to wryte cunningly, to preach eloquently: and made them to be, for braulyng Sophiſters, graue Philoſophers, for formal Dunſes, plaine doctors, for rude queſtionaries, diuine Orators, for vnſkilful ſchoolemen, eloquent and graue diuines.

It is nowe almoſt one hundred & fiftie yeeres agoe, that Don Henrico, ſonne of Iohn the fyrſt of that name Kyng in Portugale, and Nepheu vnto our Kyng Henry the fourth, made his vyage after the conqueſt of Septa to the Canaries, and encouraged the Portugales to ſearche the coaſtes of Africa, and to ſeeke the landes thereabout not ſpoken of to fore. His grande Nepheu Iohn the ſeconde, ſo furthered this enterpryſe, that the Portugale ſhyppes halled the Cape of good hope, diſcouered Æthiopia, and ſayled where antiquitie denyed paſſage, beyond all Africa into the Indian ſeas. He ſent alſo expert and

cunning traueylers into Ægypt, and the redde ſea coaſtes to eſpye what way the Portugales might looke for beyond the Cape of good hope to Calecut in India: the which viage in his ſonne Emanuell his tyme, was proſperouſly taken in hand by Vaſquez Gama, the nienth day of Iuly, in the yeere of our Lorde. 1497. & happely ended in Iuly againe, two yeeres after, to his great credit and preferment, to the immortal fame & honour of his Prince and countrey. Here began the ſtudie of Geographie, that euer ſince Ptolomeus raigne laye troden vnder foote, & buried in duſt and aſhes, to ſpring vp agayne, and by the relations of ſkilful traueylers in Europe, Affrike, & Aſie: through the diſcouery of the far Indies, the Moluccaes, & new founde landes, of late ſo to be wondred at, as no other faculte more. I dare be bold to ſay, that generally all Chriſtians, Iewes, Turkes, Moores, Infidels, & Barbares be this day in loue with Geographie. The wylde and rogiſhe Tartares myght for famine periſhe in the winter, if they in the ſommer ſkylfully followed not the ſunne. The heathen Giapans diuided the worlde into three partes : Afrike was deſcribed by a Moore. The Iewes report the eſtates of all countreyes to the Turkes. The Turkiſhe Baſſhaes gouerne the ſweeteſt prouinces in Europe, Afrike, and Aſia, no men greater traueylers than Chriſtians. VVho but Geographers doe teach vs what partes of the earth be cold, warme, or temperate? Of whom doe we learne howe to diuyde the world into partes, the partes into prouinces, the prouinces into ſhyres? of Geographers. vnto

whom

whom haue wee to make recourſe for Mappes, Globes, tables, and Cardes, wherein the dyuers countreys of the worlde are ſet downe? vnto Geographers. Set Geographie aſyde, you ſhal neyther be able to get intelligences of the ſituation and ſtrength of any citie, nor of the limites and boundes of any countrey, nor of the rule and gouernement of any kingdome, nor be able wel to trauayle out of your owne doores. wil you ſee what wiſe and experte traueylers, ſkilful in geometry and Aſtronomy, (for that is to bee a Geographer in deede) be able to doe? Looke you on the King of Portugales title: the two partes, of the three therein, were atchiued by Vaſques Gama, and other traueylers aduentures. Conſider the fruites, the drugges, the pearle, the treaſure, the millions of golde and ſiluer, the Spanyardes haue brought out of the VVeſt Indies ſince the firſt viage of Columbus: The great commodities our nation reapeth by the traueyle of our countreymen into Barbary, Guiny, and Moſcouia, wil be a ſufficient teſtimony vnto all vs Engliſhmen, what it is to be a ſkilful traueyler, what to bee a paineful Geographer, and learned. Deſire of rule breedeth victories, victories come by cõqueſtes, conqueſtes are furthered by traueyle, traueyle can not bee maynteyned without great wealth, wealth maketh all traueyle pleaſant. The Northweſterne vyage, be it neuer ſo full of difficulties, will become as plauſible as any other iourney, if our paſſengers may returne with plentie of ſiluer, ſilkes, and pearle. Let Columbus, Americus, Corteſius, be wel ſet foorth againe, and bounte-

Kyng of Portugale & Algarbs, Lorde of Guinea, of the cõqueſt, nauigation, and trafike into Ethiopia, Arabia, Perſia, & India,

ly rewarded, you ſhal heare of other newe found landes yet altogeather vnknowen. Let Gama be ſet in place, and Gama will tell you the ſituation, the maners, the force and wealth of forreyne nations. for Gama his endeuor was, not onely by his friend Cœlius to deſcrye the countrey wherſoeuer he came, but alſo to learne him ſelfe the riches, ſtrength, and conditions of the people. Honour maynteyneth arte: and the ſkill in Geography, as all other ſciences, hath but a tyme of preferment, the whiche than chiefly myght bee looked for, whan it is moſt eſteemed. This in the noble mynde of Cadamuſt bred that earneſt deſire, after Don Henrico his example, to traueyle, to pen his owne aduentures into the Southeaſt and Eaſt partes, to make the nauigation of Gama and his companions knowen vnto the worlde. The occaſions, the good ſucceſſe, the great commodities wherof, Barros a counſeller of the Portugale Kyng, paynted out long agoe in manye bookes, Oſorius of late, hiſtorically hath written the ſame in fewe. This made Marcus Paulus Venetus a courtier in Tartary, Hayton the Armenian to become a Frenchman, Lewes Vartomanne a traueyler in Ethiopia, Brocardus an inhabiter of Iury, & eche one of them to leaue his painful iorney with poſteritie in wrytyng. This enflamed the Spanyardes to take vppon them the diſcouery of the VVeſt and Southweſterne landes, done and written by Columbus, Pinzonus, Alfonſus, Corteſius, and Americus, of whom that region America hath name. VVhoſe long letters and tedious reportes of thinges there brought to

paſſe

passe in the conquest of that halfe worlde, the straunge beastes, the sundry sortes of fruites, the ioyes and riches the whiche that countrey yeeldeth, the manners and fashions of the people, their cities, and princely palaces, theyr nobilitie, their maner of gouernement, their warres, theyr seruile estate vnder the kynges of Spayne, their conuersion vnto the Christian fayth, P. Martyr a learned and graue man, borne at Angleria in the duchy of Milane, then President of the Spanish kinges counsell for the west Indies, gathered into one volume, and leauing a side all superfluous narrations, made thereof, as it were, one briefe and continuall historie. This volume deuided he into eyght Decades, after the Greeke worde, so calling the sundry parcels thereof, for that eche one conteyneth in it ten particuler bookes or chapters. R. Eden our countreyman dyd into English, whan K. Philippe was in Englande, the three first Decades, and the fourth also, though vnder a wrong title, according to the Dutche Printers edition, wherin the fifte, sixte, seuenth, and eight Decades were lefte out. He translated moreouer Gonzales Ferdinandus Ouiedus breuiary of the west Indies, & geathered togeather out of many myghty and huge workes, some other prety pamflettes concernyng the Spanyardes and Portugalles voiages into the late discouered lands, adding thereto certeine discourses of the north partes. These his aforesayde doinges, as fewe mennes workes at the first come exactly abrode, this paynefull translatour mynded, if not to amende, at the least to augment,

by puttyng thereunto in English Lewes Vartomannus Nauigation into Ægypte, Arabia, Siria, Persia, and India, with our Merchantes Moscouian and Persian trauelles: but death preuented his purpose, not suffryng him to accomplish his desire.

Christian charitie therefore vnto the party departed, caused me to helpe his workes forwarde: Nature moued me to take some paynes in placing orderly, that whiche he had confusely gyuen out, the better to direct, and the more to profit the reader: My profession enforced me to cut of some superfluous translations, and to fill vp the rest of his doinges with P. Martyrs other writinges, and finally to furnishe his want with my owne store, Hoping and perswading with my ~~selfe~~, that if God likewise call me from these worldly Nauigations, and earthly descriptions, before my other trauell in this facultye, taken long since in hande, be ended: some other professor of Cosmography wil so rewarde me after my death, as presently of this dead man I doe deserue. Other credite seeke I none therefore, I loke for no prayse, I hope not for honor, I gape for no gayne by this kind of studie. I knowe this day no place, no preferment, no publike chayre, no ordinarie lecture, no commune stipende, no special reward due vnto the studentes in Geography: no not at this time, when this faculty was neuer more set by: no not in this realme, where yt neuer more florished. The honorable name of a Christian, and the infallible fruites thereof, euer inclined me, euen from my tender yeeres,

yeeres,for the ſmal portion of learning that god hath lent me,to do good,if I could,vnto many: and ſpecially to make thoſe my friendes and wel doers knowen vnto the worlde,by whoſe beneuolence & fauour I doe liue,and am mainteined. In the ſmal number whereof,for amongſt many wel willers I finde but few well doers,your Honor(right noble Lady) my Lorde & you, his noble children and yours, ſince my firſt returne from beyond the ſeas, muſt I confeſſe to haue ſtoode me chiefly in ſteede: & humbly acknowledge,the firſt yeerely penſion I euer was aſſured of in England,to haue ben by your Ladiſhip beſtowed on me. VVherefore as I will moſt willingly yeelde vnto many other of your Honors gẽtlemẽ to come of great houſes,to haue welthier friendes,larger poſſeſſions & reuenues than I, to be more actiue,more comely,more wyſe, politike,learned,& to haue ſeene more: ſo in hũble duety,loyal ſeruice,ſincere affection & good wil to your Honor,I may,Ican,I wyl contende with any of them all,euen to the vttermuſt force and power of my hart,head,body,life,blood,mynd, & ſoule. In teſtimony wherof,and full aſſurance of my ſeruice vnto you for euer, theſe laſt doings of R. Eden newly encreaſed, my firſt labours in our language, his hiſtory & mine of trauel in the weſt & Eaſt Indies, altogeather in one volume, duetifully do I preſent vnto your Honour, with al humility praying & moſt earneſtly requeſting your good Ladiſhip, that you will vouchſafe it, & by leyſure, in this iourney, the whiche my

Lorde and you haue determined into the weſt countrey, to let your page reade them ouer to your Honours recreation, as one of the principall cauſes wherefore at this tyme they were ſet foorth. If varietie of matter, occurrents out of forraigne countryes, newes of newe founde landes, the ſundry ſortes of gouernement, the different manners & faſhions of diuers nations, the wonderfull workes of nature, the ſightes of ſtraunge trees, fruites, foule, and beaſtes, the infinite treaſure of Pearle, Golde, Siluer, & ioyes may recreate and delight a mynde trauelled in weighty matters, & weeried with great affayres: credit me, good Madam, in liſtning vnto this worke, ſhall you haue recreation, you ſhall finde delight in reading ouer theſe relations, wherein ſo newe, ſo ſtraunge, ſo diuers, ſo many recreations and delightes of the mynd are expreſſed. Your Honours good lykyng thereof, wyll be to me no ſmall contentation for this worke paynefully doone, a good occaſion ſpedyly to finiſh the reſt of my owne labours concerning this faculty, a great encouragement and comfort to beſtow my whole time hereafter only in that ſtudy, wherewith all my former knowledge in Philoſophy and Geography may ende. The whiche, conueniently now, I am in good hope to perfourme, with my Lorde and your Ladyſhyps good leaue, and continuance of my duety and effectuall deſire to doe your Honours the better ſeruice. *At London the 4. day. of Iuly. 1577.*

Your Honors ſeruaunt humbly at commaundement.

Richarde VVilles.

R. VVilles Preface vnto the Reader, wherein is set downe a generall summe as it were of the whole worke.



His greate and large volume consisteth principally of foure partes, agreeable vnto those foure corners of the worlde, whereunto the skilfull seamen and merchauntes aduenturers of late yeeres haue chiefely trauciled, and yet specially are wont to resorte. The first part conteyneth foure Decades, The first part, the first Decade written by *P. Martyr*, a learned & graue counseller of Charles the Emperour fifte of that name, concernyng the Spanyardes voyages Southwestwarde, & theyr famous exploites doone in these newly discouered partes of the worlde, the whiche vsually wee now call the west *Indies*. Hereunto haue we added *Gonzalus Eerdinandus Ouiedus* breefe history touching the same matter, so that the first part of our volume hath fiue particular bookes. In the first whereof cap 1.2.3.4 and 5. *P. Martir* describeth *Columbus* first and second nauigations and discoueries of certaine Ilandes made by hym specially and his brother. In the 6 chapter or booke thereof (for both names we finde) is set foorth *Columbus* third voiage, and the discouery of *Peru*, in the maigne west *Indish* lande. In the seuenth, his troubles both in the west *Indies*, and retourne into Spaigne with his brother, being both prisoners. The 8. is of *P. Alfonsus* voyages that same way. In the 9. are declared the trauailes of *Vincent* and *Peter Pinzoni*, and other Spaniards likewise thither from *Palos*. The 10. is a conclusion of the whole Decade, with particuler mention of some special nouelties, & *Colūbus* fourth voiage beganne. So that in the first Decade you haue historically set downe the discouerye of the west *Indies*, taken in hande about the yeere of our Lorde. 1492. by *Columbus* and his companions, vntill the yeere 1510. as *P. Martir* witnesseth fol. 8. 43. 47. and 54. This worthy trauayler and skilfull seaman died at *Validolid* in Spaigne. *An. dom.* 1506. as *Lopez* reporteth cap. 25. in his generall history *de las Indias*.

The second Decade conteyneth *Peru* matters, entituled by *P. Martir, Creditus Cortinens*, that is, a continent or maigne lande, as The second Decade.

in deede it is of it selfe with the rest of *America*, in lyke maner as Europe, Affryk, & Alia, be one continent or maigne lande vnited togeather. In the fyrst and seconde chapters of this Decade, shall you reade the voyages of *Fogeda* and *Nicuesa*, to *Dariena*. In the thyrd, *Colmenaris* trauayles, *Nicuesa* his death, and the *Indishe* kyng *Comogrus* bencuolence: In the fourth, *Vasquez Nunnez* doynges in *Vraba* gulfe. His conquest of rebellious Barbarian kyngs in the fifte. In the syxt *Quicedus* & *Colmenaris* ambassage out of *Dariena* to *Hispaniola*, and the religion of king *Commendator* in *Cuba*. The seuenth booke conteineth *Petrus Arias* iorney to *Paria* in *Peru*. The. 8. the dissention betwixt the Spaniardes and Portugales for theyr boundes, and makyng of fyue Bishops in these newely founde partes of the worlde. In the. 9 are shewed the ryuers of *Darien*, and philosophically the causes of so great waters there. That countrey is described in the. 10 and the extreme hunger, abydden by the companions of *Nicuesa*, set forth.

The third Decade.

In the fyrst, second, and thyrd chapters of the thyrde Decade, is contayned an abridgement of *Vascus Nunnez* relations, concerning his voyage to the south sea, for it lyeth south from *Darien*, vsually termed nowe a dayes *Mar del zur*, and may also be called the wyde east Indyshe Ocean. The discouery thereof made by *Nunnez*, the kyng subdued by hym, especially kyng *Commogrus* christenyng by the name of Charles, and the wynnyng of kyng *Tumanama* or *Tubanama* and his countrey. In the fourth chapter shal you fynd *Columbus* fourth vyage, began *An. do.* 1502 to the mayne west Indyshe lande, with the description of some part therof, lying betwyxt our Atlantike or westerne Ocean, and the aforesayde *Mar del zur*, as *Vraba*, and *Veragua*. In respecte of the history and course of yeeres, this booke myght haue been placed before the seconde Decade, but it shoulde seeme that these reportes came no sooner to. *P. Martyr.* his handes, wherefore he began this fourth booke ryght well thus. I was determined. &c. The fyfth booke contayneth. *P. Arias* iorney mentioned dec. 2. lib. 7. to the north syde of *Peru*, wherein *Carthagena* and *S. Martha*, two famous hauens, do stande, with a description of the countrey and people thereof. In the syxt you haue a disputation touchyng the Leuant streame or easterne surge of the sea, the discouery

of

of *Baccalaos* done by *Cabot*. *P. Arias* arriuall in Darien, the buil-dyng of *S. Maria antiqua* there, with other foxtreſſes, finally the commodities and vnwholeſomneſſe of *Darien*. In the .7 8. & .9 bookes, ſhal you haue a deſcription of *Hiſpaniola*, *Cuba*, and other Ilandes thereabout, done by *Andreas Moralis*. And in the .10 ſhall you reade of the Ilande *Diues* in *Mar del zur*, of the kyng therof ſubdued by *Andreas Moralis*, of *Pearles* & the finding ther-of, of *Petrus Arias* Captaynes dounges agaynſt the Caniballes, of the Barbares fowlyng, & the manner of the geatheryng of gold in *Dariena*.

The fourth Decade, for ſo was it named in the Spanyards edi-tion of *P. Martyr* his wooxkes ſet forth at *Alcala* in Spayne *An. do.* 1530. though the *Baſile* and *Cullen* printers haue entituled it, *De inſulis nuper inuentis*, that is, of Ilandes lately found out, to wyt, after *Columbus* voyages: this booke I ſay was by *P. Mar.* culled out of the Indian regiſters, conteynyng ſpeciall notes that ſeemed vnto hym moſt meete to be publyſhed: as the diſco-nery of certayne Ilandes and creekes, namely *Iucatan* (done by *Fernandes* of *Corduba* & his companions) *Cozumella*, the Ilands of Sacrifice, the Ilandes of women, the prouince *Coluacan* and *Palmaria* &c. by *Iohn Griſalua* & his felowes: the *Iucaians* cap-tiuitie and diſcouery of *Florida* made by thoſe Spanyardes which *Diegus Velaſquen* ſent out of *Cuba*, and *Ferd. Corteſius* fyrſt nauti-gation, wherein he conquered *Potanchana* in newe Spayne, the death of *Valdiuia*, ỹ execution of *Vaſcus Nunnez*, king *Muteezũa* his preſentes to Charles the Emperour, his bookes, letters, and ſuperſtitions, finally the ruine of *Hiſpaniola*, and vtter decaye thereof, if heede ſhoulde not be taken in tyme.

The fourth Decade.

Laſt of al *Gonzalus Ferdinandus Ouedus* hiſtorie conteineth in .18. ſeuerall chapters (eche one whereof hath his proper title) a briefe declaration of the weſt Indyſh nauigation, of the metals the which are found in thoſe lately diſcouered lands, of the maners of the people, rites, cuſtomes, and cerimonies, of the beaſtes, foules, byrdes, wormes, fyſhes, ſeas, riuers, ſpryinges, trees, plantes, hearbes, & diuers other thinges that are engendred there both on the land & in the water. To this haue we added certaine ſpeciall reports of new Spaine or *Mexico*, of *Peru*, of *Rio de la Plata*, & the countrey lying therunto, of the lands *Laborador* & *Baccalaos*, with the diſcouering of *Florida*. And thus muche for the fyrſt part of this volume.

The

The seconde part.

The seconde part of this worke appeareth what it is, by the title thereof set downe. Fol. 230. to wyt, a discourse to proue that there is a passage to the *Moluccaes* by the northwest, the whiche presently *M. Cap. Furbisher* attempteth, with certayne reportes of the prouince *China* in *Cathayo*, where he hath to strike in his voyage, and thyrdly of *Giapan*, and other Ilandes by the way. The whiche seconde part, wherein matter concernyng the northwest is handled, is so muche the shorter, by how much the fyrst part seemed ouerlong: besydes that the particularities of this corner of the worlde are not yet so throughly knowen, but that other writers shal doubtlesse in more ample maner employe theyr labour therein after the returne of our northwesterne trauaylers. The which I wyshe to be most happie and prosperous, as they most valiantly & painefully, to the renowme of our Englyshe nation, do shewe to haue taken it in hande.

The thyrde part.

In the thyrd part shal you fynd a discription of the northeasterne frosty seas and kingdomes lying that way: as *Moscouia*, *Schondia*, or *Denmarke*, *Groenlande*, *Islande*, *Laponia*, *Norway*, *Suecia*, or *Swethlande*, *Bothnia*, and *Gothlande*: out of *Zeiglerus*, *Paulus Iouius*, *Haiton*, and *Sebastian* free lord or Baron of *Herbestein*, with the countreys as well north and northeast beyond *Moscouia*, namely *Petzora*, *Iubra*, and other prouinces of the Tartars: as also the voyages made through *Moscouia* by the merchauntes of London into *Persia*, conteinyng many speciall thynges worthy the knowledge, both of the countrey it self, the commodities thereof, the manners of the people, and the priuiledges graunted vnto our merchauntes by the *Sophie* or *Shaugh* the *Persian* kyng.

The fourth part.

Finally in the fourth part are set downe our merchauntes voyages into *Guinea*, and the other parcelles of Affrike lying towardes the Southeast, *Lewes Vertomannus* nauigations into Egypte, *Ethiopia*, *Arabia*, *Syria*, *Persia*, and east *India*, euen to the fruitefull *Moluccaes*, with the prices of drugges and other wares brought from thence. Whereto for a conclusion, haue we added partly out of *Maximilian Transiluanus* letter wrytten vnto the Cardinall of *Saltzburge*, and partly out of *P. Martyrs* other woorkes, that famous nauigation made round about the whole world: the contention betwixte the Portugales and Spanyardes for the *Moluccaes*, & the decydyng thereof by

Pope

Pope Alexander the syxt: and last of all the abridgement of .P. *Martyrs* foure last Decades, wherein especially that noble and glorious conquest of *Mexico* is wrytten. Generally this much of the foure partes of this large volume. The lesser parcelles and speciall matter conteyned in eche part, you haue so exactely rehearsed in the table of the Decades. Fol. 173. and in the resydue of the whole woorke before eche chapter so euidently set downe, that any particular table thereof at al the reader greatly needeth not, if so be that he be able to remember in what region of the worlde, East, West, Nyth, or South, that be, the which he looketh for.

Nowe concernyng .R. Edens owne doynges, syncerely to say what I thynke, and curteously to yeelde hym that due prayse the whiche worthyly these his labours deserue, yet not to flatter hym neither, where any faulte hath ben committed: as hyghly he was to be commended for Englyshyng so straunge, so wonderfull, so profitable histories as these are, nothyng inferior to the bookes of auncient writers, far exceedyng the multitude of foolysh commentaries and friuolous translations, to to licentiously vsed in our tyme: So may the gentle reader forbeare his ouersyghte, in so great a woorke, where some Spanyshe prouerbe, harsh latine phrase, or vncleane speache may seeme hardly Englyshed, or any rashe note to shame the texte. I would excuse hym for translatyng the dayes by the latine names, as Fol. 12. *Non. April.* thus. At the Nones of Aprill *.item*, 3. *Idus Octobris.* thus. The thyrd daye of the Ides of October. *item. Fol.* 17. *tertio Kalend. Maij.* thus. The thyrd daye before the Kalendes of Maye: meanyng in deede, the fyfth daye of Aprill, the .13. day of October, the 29. of Aprill: but therein it shoulde seeme that he folowed his owne humor, for he obserueth the same phrase of translatyng throughout. *P. Martyrs* whole worke. Many of his Englyshe woordes cannot be excused in my opinion for smellyng to much of the Latine, as *Dominators. Fol* 5. *Ponderouse. Fol.* 23. *Ditionaries. Fol.* 25. *Portentouse, Fol.* 28. *Antiques. Fol.* 31. *despicable. Eol.* 387. *Solicitate .Fol.* 76. *obsequiouse. Fol.* 90. *homicide. Fol.* 390. *imbibed .Fol.* 395. *Destructiue. Fol.* 276.

Prodigious

Prodigious. Fol. 279. with other such lyke: in the steede of Lords, weyghtie, subiectes, wonderfull, auncient, lowe, carefull, duetifull, manslaughter, drunken, noysome, monstrous .&c. the which faultes he confesseth in other his owne verses, wryting thus of hym selfe.

I haue not for euery worde asked counsayle
of eloquent Eliot, or Sir Thomas Moore:
Take it therefore as I haue intended,
the faultes with fauour may soone be amended.

Certayne Preambles here folowe, gea-thered by R. Eden, for the better vn-derſtanding of the whole worke.

Of the fyrst discoueryng of the west Indies.

A Certayne Carauel saylyng in the West Ocean, about the coastes of Spayne, had a forcyble and continuall wynde from the East, wherby it was dryuen to a land vnknowen, and not described in any map or carde of the sea, and was dryuen styl along by the coaste of the same for the space of many dayes, vntyll it came to a hauen, where in a shorte tyme the most part of the maryners, beyng long before very weake and feble by reason of hunger and trauayll, dyed: So that onely the Pilot, with three or foure other, remayned alyue. And not only they that dyed, dyd not inioye the Indies whiche they fyrst discouered to theyr myssortune, but the residue also that lyued had in maner as litle fruition of the same: not leauyng, or at the least not openly publyshyng any memorie thereof, neyther of the place, or what it was called, or in what yeere it was founde: Albeit, the fault was not theyrs, but rather the malyce of other, or the enuie of that which we call fortune. I do not therfore marueyle, that the auncient histories affyrme, that great thynges proceede and increase of small and obscure begynnynges, syth we haue seene the same verysied in this fynding of the Indies, being so notable and newe a thyng. We neede not be curious to seeke the name of the Pilot, syth death made a shorte ende of his doynges. Some wyl, that he came from *Andaluzia*, and traded to the Ilandes of *Canaria*, and the Iland of *Madera*, when this large and mortal nauigation chaunced vnto hym. Other say that he was a *Byscanne*, and traded into Englande and Fraunce. Other also, that he was a Portugale, & that either he went or came from *Mina* or *India*: which agreeth well with the name of these newe landes, as I haue sayd before. Agayne, some there be that say that he brought the Carauel to Portugale, or to the Iland of *Madera*, or to some other of the Ilandes called *De los Azores*. Yet do none of them affyrme any thyng, although they al affirme that the Pilot dyed in the house of *Christopher Colon*, with whom remayned all suche writynges and annotations as he had made of his voyage in the sad Carauell, aswell of such thynges as he obserued both by land and sea, as also of the elcuation of the pole in those landes whiche he had discouered.

A harde begynnyng.

The Pylot that fyrst founde the Indies.

Mina.

VVhat man Colon was.

VVhat maner of man Christopher Colon (otherwyse called Columbus) was, and how he came fyrst to the knowledge of the Indies.

CHristopher *Colon* was borne in *Cugureo*, or (as some say) in *Nerui*, a vyllage in the territorie of *Genua* in Italie. He descended as some thynke, of the house of the *Peleſtreles* of *Placentia* in *Lumbardie*. He begaune of a chylde to be a maryner: of whose arte they haue great exercise on the ryuer of *Genua*. He traded many yeeres into *Suria*, and other partes of the East. After this, he became a maister in makyng cardes for the sea, whereby he had great bantage. He came to Portugale to know the reason & description of the south coastes of Affrica, and the nauigations of the Portugales, thereby to make his cardes more perfecte to be solde. He maryed in Portugale, as some say: or as many say, in the Ilande of *Madera*, where he dwelt at suche tyme as the sayd Carauell arryued there, whose Pilot soiorned in his house, and dyed also there, bequeathyng to *Colon* his carde of the description of suche newe landes as he had found, whereby *Colon* had the fyrst knowledge of the Indies. Some haue thought ꝑ *Colon* was wel learned in ꝑ Latine tongue and the science of Cosmographie: and that he was thereby fyrst moued to seeke the lands of *Antipodes*, and the ryche Ilande of *Cipango*, wherof *Marchus Paulus* wryteth. Also that he had redde what *Plato* in his dialoges of *Timeus* and *Cricias*, writeth of the great Ilande of *Atlantide*, and of a great land in the west Ocean vndiscouered, beyng bygger then Asia and Affrica. Furthermore that he had knowledge what *Aristotell* and *Theophrastus* saye in theyr bookes of marueyles, where they wryte that certayne merchauntes of Carthage, saylyng from the streyghtes of *Gibraltar* towarde the West and South, founde after many dayes a great Ilande not inhabited, yet replenyshed with al thynges requisite, and hauing many nauigable ryuers. Indeede *Colan* was not greatly learned: yet of good vnderstanding. And when he had knowledge of the sayde newe landes by the information of the dead Pilot, made relation thereof to certeyne learned men, with whom he conferred as touching ꝑ like thinges mentioned of olde autours. He communicated this secrete

Colon was not much learned.

Colon conferred with learned men.

and

and conferred chiefely with a fryer, named *Iohn Perez* of *Marchena*, that dwelt in the monastery of *Rabida*. So that I verely beleeue, that in maner all that he declared, and many thynges moze that he leaft vnspoken, were written by the sayde Spanyshe Pilot that dyed in his house. For I am persuaded, that if *Colon* by science atteined to the knowledg of the Indies, he would long before haue communicat this secreate to his owne countrey men the *Genueses*, that trauayle all the woride for gaynes, and not haue come into Spayne for this purpose. But doubteleſſe he neuer thought of any such thyng, before he chaunced to be acquainted with the sayde Pilot, who founde those landes by fortune, accordyng to the saying of Plinie, *Quod ars docere non potuit, casus inuenit.* That is, That arte coulde not teache, chaunce founde. Albeit, the more Christian opinion is, to thynke that God of his singuler prouidence and infinite goodneſſe, at the length with eyes of compassion as it were lookyng downe from heauen vppon the sonnes of Adam, so long kept vnder Sathans captiuitie, intended euen then (for causes to hym onely knowen) to rayse those wyndes of mercy whereby that Carauell (herein most lyke vnto the shyppe of Noe, whereby the remnante of the whole world was saued, as by this Carauel this newe worlde receyued the fyrst hope of theyr saluation) was dryuen to these landes. But we wyll now declare what great thynges folowed of this small begynnyng, and howe *Colon* folowed this matter, reueeled vnto hym not without Gods prouidence.

VVhat labour and trauayle Colon tooke in attemptyng his fyrst voyage to the Indies.

After the death of the Pilot & maryners of the Spanyshe Carauell that discouered ỹ Indies, *Christopher Colon* purposed to seeke the same. But in howe muche more he desyred this, the lesse was his power to accomplyshe his desyre. For, beside that of hym selfe he was not able to furnyshe one shyppe, he lacked also the fauoure of a kyng, vnder whose protection he myght so enioye the ryches he hoped to fynde, that none other myght take the same from hym, or defeate him therof.

And seyng the kyng of Portugale occupied in the conquest of Africa, and the Nauigations of the East, whiche were then fyrst attempted, the kyng of Castyle lykewyse no lesse busyed in the warres of *Granada*, he sent to his brother *Bartholomewe Colon* (who was also priuie to this secrete) to practise with the kyng of England (Henry the seuenth) beyng very ryche and without warres, promysyng to bryng hym great ryches in short tyme, if he woulde shewe hym fauour, and furnyshe hym with shyps to discouer the newe Indies, whereof he had certayne knowledge. But neyther here beyng able to bryng his suite to passe, he caused the matter to be moued to the kyng of Portugale *Don Alonso*, the fyfth of that name: at whose handes he founde neither fauour nor mony, forasmuch as the Licenciat *Calzadilla* the bishop of *Viseo*, and one maister *Rodrigo*, men of credite in the science of Cosmographie, withstoode hym, and contended that there neither was nor coulde any golde or other ryches be founde in the west, as *Colon* affirmed. By reason whereof he was very sad and pensiue: but yet was not discouraged, or despaired of the hope of his good aduenture, which he afterwarde founde. This doone, he tooke shyppyng at *Lisburne*, and came to *Palos* of *Moguer*, where he communed with *Martin Alonso Pinzon*, an expert Pilot, who offered hym selfe vnto hym. After this, disclosyng the whole secretes of his mynd to *Iohn Perez* of *Marchena* (a fryer of thorder of saint Frances in *Rabida*, & well learned in Cosmographie) and declaryng vnto hym howe by folowyng the course of the Sunne by a temperate voyage, rych and great landes myght be founde: the fryer greatly commended his interpryse, and gaue him counsayle to breake the matter to the Duke of *Medina Sidonia*, *Don Eurique* of *Guzman*, a great lorde, and very rych: and also to *Don Luis* of *Cerda*, the Duke of *Medina Celi*, who at that time had great prouision of shyps wel furnyshed in his hauen of *Santa Maria*. But whereas both these Dukes tooke the matter for a dreame, and as a thyng deuised of an Italian deceyuer, who (as they thought) had before with lyke pretence deluded the kynges of Englande and Portugale, the fryer gaue hym courage to go to the courte of the Catholyke princes *Don Ferdinando*, and lady *Isabell* princes of Castyle, affyrmyng that they woulde be ioyful of suche newes: And for his better furtherance herein, wrote

Kyng Henry the seuenth.

Barnarde knewe not all thynges.

letters

etters by hym to fryer *Ferdinando* of *Talauera* the queenes confessor. *Christopher Colon* therefore, repayred to the courte of the Catholyke princes, in the yeere .1486. and delyuered vnto theyr handes the petition of his request, as concernyng the discouerynge of the new Indies. But they beyng more careful, and applying al theyr mynde howe they myght dryue the Moores out of the kyngdome of *Granada*, whiche greate enterprise they had alredy taken in hande, dyd lyttle or nothyng esteeme the matter. But *Colon* not thus discouraged, founde the meanes to declare his sute to suche as had sometymes priuate communication with the kyng. Yet because he was a straunger, and went but in simple apparell, nor otherwyse credited then by the letter of a gray frier, they beleeued hym not, neyther gaue eare to his woordes, wherby he was greatly tormented in his imagination. Onely *Alonso* of *Quintanilia*, the kynges chiefe auditour, gaue hym meate and drynke at his owne charges, and hearde gladly such thynges as he declared of the landes not then founde: desyryng hym in the meane tyme to be content with that poore entertaynment, and not to despayre of his enterprise: puttyng hym also in good comforte that he should, at one tyme or other, come to the speache of the Catholyke princes. And thus shortly after, by the meanes of *Alonso* of *Quintanilia*, *Colon* was brought to the presence and audience of the Cardinall *Don Pero Gonzales* of *Mendoza*, archbishop of *Toledo*, a man of great reuenues and authoritie with the kyng and queene, who brought hym before them, after that he well perceiued and examined his intent. And by this meanes was his sute hearde of the Catholyke princes, who also redde the booke of his memorials whiche he presented vnto them. And although at the fyrst they tooke it for vayne and false that he promysed, neuertheless they put hym in good hope that he shoulde be well dispatched when they had fynished the warres of *Granada* whiche they had nowe in hande. With which answere, *Colon* began to reuyue his spirites, with hope to be better esteemed, and more fauorably to be hearde among the gentelmen & noble men of the courte, who before tooke hym onely for a craftie felowe and deceyuer: and was nothyng dismayde or discouraged whensoeuer he debated the matter with them, although many iudged hym phantasticall, as is the maner of ignorant men, to cal all

The conquest of Granada.

The archbishop of Toledo.

ſuche as attempt any thyng beyonde theyr reache, and the compaſſe of theyr knowledge, thynkyng the woꝛlde to be no bygger then the cagies wherein they are bꝛought bp and lyue. But to returne to *Colon*. So hotte and vrgente was the ſiege of *Granada*, that they preſentely graunted hym his demaunde to ſeeke the newe landes, and to bꝛyng from thence golde, ſyluer, pearles, pꝛecious ſtones, ſpices, and ſuche other ryche thynges. They gaue hym alſo the tenth part of all the reuenues and cuſtomes due vnto the kyng, of all ſuch landes as he ſhoulde diſcouer, not doyng pꝛeiudice in any thyng to the kyng of Poꝛtugale. The particulars of this agreement were made in the towne called *Sancta Fe*: and the pꝛiuiledge of the rewarde in *Granada* the .xxx. daye of Apꝛyll, the ſame yeere that the citie was woonne. And whereas the ſayde Catholyke pꝛinces had not mony pꝛeſently to diſpatch *Colon*, *Luis* of .S. *Angel*, the kynges ſecretary of accomptes, lent them fyꝛe *Quentes* of *Maraz*, whiche in a groſſe ſumme make .xvi. thouſande ducades.

In the ſcutcheon of armes geuen to *Columbus* by *Don Ferdinando* and queene *Iſabella*, theſe verſes were wꝛitten.

Por Caſtella, y por Leon. Nueuo mondo hallo Colon.

Foꝛ *Caſtile* and foꝛ *Leon*.

A newe woꝛlde founde was by *Colon*.

VVhy they were called Indies.

SOme thynke that the people of the newe woꝛld were called Indians, bycauſe they are of the colour of the eaſt Indians. And although (as it ſemmeth to me) they dyffer much in colour and faſhions, yet is it true, that of India they were called Indians. India is pꝛoperly called that great pꝛouince of Aſia, in the whiche great Alexander kepte his warres, and was ſo named of the ryuer *Indus*: and is diuided into many kyngdomes confinyng with the ſame. From this great India (called the Eaſt India) came great companyes of men, as wꝛytteth *Herodotus*, and inhabited that part of Ethiopia that lyeth betweene the ſea *Bermeia* (otherwyſe called the red ſea, oꝛ ẏ gulfe of *Arabia*) and the ryuer of *Nilus*: all whiche regions that great Chꝛiſtian pꝛince *Preſter Iohn* doth nowe poſſeſſe. The ſaid Indians pꝛeuayled ſo muche, that they vtterly chaunged the cuſtomes and

The colour of the Eaſt Indians.

name

name of that lande, and called it India: by reason whereof, Ethiopia also hath of long tyme ben called India. And hereupon came it that *Aristotle*, *Seneca*, and certayne other olde authours sayd, that India was not farre from Spayne. After this also, of later dayes our west India was so called, of the sayde India of *Prester Iohn* where the Portugales had theyr trade: For the Pilot of the Carauell that was fyrst dryuen by forcible wynde to an vnknowen lande in the west Ocean, called the same India, because the Portugales so called such landes as they had lately discouered eastward. *Christophor Colon* also, after the sayd Pilot, called the west landes by the same name: Albeit some that take *Colonus* for an expert Cosmographer, thynke that he so named them of the East India, as to be the furthest and vnknowen ende thereof, reachyng into the West, vnder the other hemisphere or halfe globe of the earth beneath vs: affirming that when he fyrste attempted to discouer the Indies, he went chiefly to seeke the ryche Ilande of *Cipango*, whiche falleth on the part of great *China* or *Cathay*, as wryteth *Marcus Paulus Venetus*, and other: And that he shoulde sooner come thyther by folowyng the course of the Sunne Westward, then agaynst the same.

Of the colour of the Indians.

ONe of the marueylous thynges ỳ God vseth in the composition of man, is coloure: whiche doubtlesse can not be consydered without great admiration, in holdyng one to be whyte, and an other blacke, beyng colours vtterly contrary: some lykewyse to be yealowe, whiche is betweene blacke and white: and other of other colours, as it were of diuers liueries. And as these colours are to be marueyled at, euen so is it to be considered, howe they dyffer one from an other, as it were by degrees, forasmuch as some men are whyte after dyuers sorts of whitnes, yelowe after diuers maners of yelowe, & blacke after dyuers sorts of blackenes: & how from white they go to yelow by discolouring to browne & red, and to blacke by ashe colour, & murry, somwhat lighter then blacke, & tawny like vnto the west Indians, which are altogether in general either purple or tawny,

The colour of the west Indians.

lyke vnto sodde Quinses, or of the colour of Chestnuttes or Olyues, which colour is to them naturall: and not by theyr goyng naked, as many haue thought: albeit theyr nakednesse haue somewhat helped thereunto. Therefore in lyke maner, and with suche diuersitie as men are commonly whyte in Europe, and blacke in Affrike, euen with lyke varietie are they tawney in these Indies, with diuers degrees diuersly inclinyng more or lesse to blacke or whyte. No lesse marueyle is it to consider, that men are white in Siuile, and blacke at the cape of *Buena Speranza*, and of Chestnut colour at the ryuer of *Plata*, being all in equall degrees from the Equinoctiall lyne. Lykewyse, that the men of Affrike and Asia, that lyue vnder the burnt line (called *Zona Torrida*) are blacke: and not they that lyue beneath, or on this syde the same lyne, as in *Mexico, Iucatan, Quauhtema, Lian, Nicaragua, Panama, Santo Domingo, Paria, Cape Sainct Augustine, Lima, Quito*, and other landes of *Peru*, which touche in the same Equinoctiall. For in all the tracte of these coastes, certayne blacke men were founde only in *Quarequa*, when *Vaschus Nunnez* of *Balboa* discouered the sea of *Sur*. By reason whereof it may seeme, that such varietie of colours proceedeth of man, and not of the earth: which may wel be, although we be al boyne of Adam & Eue, & know not the cause why God hath so ordeyned it, otherwise then to consider that his diuine maiestie hath done this, as infinite other, to declare his omnipotencie and wisedome, in such diuersities of colours, as appeare not only in the nature of man, but the like also in beasts, byrdes, and floures, where diuers and contrary colours are seene in one litle feather, or the leaues growyng out of one litle stalke. An other thing is also greatly to be noted, as touching these Indians: and this is, that their heare is not curld, as is the Moores and Ethiopians that inhabite the same clime: neyther are they balde, excepte very sildome, and that but litle. All whiche thynges may gyue further occasions to Philosophers to searche the secretes of nature, and complexions of men, with the nouelties of the newe worlde.

Gods wyse dome & power is seene in his workes.

A moſt auncient teſtimonie of the VVeſt Indies, by the writing of the diuine Philoſopher Plato.

PLato in his famous and diuine Dialogue, named *Timeus*, where he entreateth of the vniuerſall nature and frame of the whole woꝛlde, taketh foꝛ his pꝛinciple the moſte auncient hyſtoꝛie of an Ilande, in tyme of great antiquitie, named *Athlantides*, makyng alſo mention of the kyng, people, and inhabitantes of the ſame: and that they kept warre agaynſt the *Atheniens*, and were ouercome of them. *Plato* alſo there inducing the ſayde hyſtoꝛie to be rehearſed by one named *Critia*, who affirmed that he had often heaꝛde it of his Uncle, who was in the tyme of *Solon*, one of the ſeuen ſages of the Grekes. This *Critia* declared, that when *Solon* went into Egypt to a certayne citie named *Saim*, ſituate vpon the riuer of *Nilus*, where the diuiſion and recurryng of the riuer, maketh the Ilande *Delta*, he there ſpake with certayne learned pꝛieſtes, very ſkylful in knowledge of antiquities of many woꝛldes paſt. Inſomuch that they made mention of manye thinges that were beforꝛe the flood of Noe, oꝛ *Deucalion*, and alſo beforꝛe the vniuerſal conflagration oꝛ burning of the woꝛlde in the tyme of *Phæton*, foꝛaſmuche as the warres betweene the people of the ſayde Ilande of *Athlantides* and the *Atheniens*, was long beforꝛe the general flood, and the conflagration aforeſayde. *Plato* inducetb the pꝛieſt, ſpeaking to *Solon* in maner as folowetb.

Thinges moſt marueylous and true (*O Solon*) remayne in auncient wꝛitynges and memoꝛie of our pꝛedeceſſours, and olde ages long beforꝛe our tymes. But aboue all thynges, one exceedeth al admiration foꝛ the greatneſſe and ſingularitie thereof, whiche is this: It is in our recoꝛdes of moſte antiquities, that in times paſt your citie of *Athens* hath oftentymes kepte warres agaynſt an innumerable multitude of nations whiche came from the ſea *Athlantike*, in maner into al *Europe* and *Aſia*: whereas nowe appeareth no ſuche nation, foꝛaſmuche as the ſayde ſea is nowe al ouer nauigable: And yet at that tyme had,

in the mouth, and as it were in the entrie (where you place the Columnes of Hercules) an Ilande whiche was sayd to be much greater then al *Africa* and *Asia*, and that from thence was passage to many other Ilandes neare thereabout, and from the sayde Ilandes to the continent or fyrme lande, whiche was right ouer agaynst it neare vnto the sea: Yet, that within the mouth, there was a litle gulfe with a porte: the deepe sea without, was the true sea, and the lande without was the true continent. This Ilande was named *Athlantides*, and in it was a kyng of marueylous great power and myght, who had the dominion of the sayde Ilande, and many other, and also a great part of the continent lande whereof we haue spoken, and muche more towarde our partes also, forasmuche as they were dominatours of the thyrde part of the worlde, conteynyng *Africa*, *Egypt*, and *Europe*, euen vnto the sea *Tirrhenum*. The power therefore of them beyng then so great, they came to inuade both your countrey and ours, and all other that are within the Columnes of Hercules. Then (*O Solon*) the vertue of your citie shewed it selfe famous in magnanimitie and feates of armes, with the assemblance of the other Grecians, in resystyng theyr great power, vntyl you had driuen them out of our lands, and restored vs to our libertie. But shortly after that this enterprise was atchiued, befel a marueylous great earthquake, and exundation or ouerflowing of the sea, which continued for the space of one day and nyght: In the whiche the earth opened it selfe, and inglutted all those valiant and warlike men, and the sayde Ilande *Athlantides* sunke into the bottome of the sea, whiche was the occasion that neuer from that tyme forwarde, any shyp coulde sayle that way, by reason of the great mudde and slyme whiche remayned of the drowned Ilande.

This is the summe of those thynges whiche olde *Critia* sayde he had vnderstoode of *Solon*. And certaynely these wordes of *Plato* of the said Iland, haue caused great contention among many great Philosophers, which haue written commentaries vpon the sayde Dialogue of *Timeus* composed by *Plato*: Insomuche that the same in those dayes being vtterly vnknowen, many haue taken this narration of *Solon*, for an allegorical fable, and haue interpreted the same in diuers senses and meanynges. But it

may

may nowe well appeare the true meanyng hereof to be this: that *Plato* intendyng to wryte of the vniuersall frame of the worlde, the whiche he knewe to be made an habitation for the diuine best man, and also beholdyng therin the great ornament and beautie of the heauen and starres, whereby man myght knowe his God and creatour, it myght seeme to hym a thyng to farre from reason, that only two partes thereof shoulde be inhabited, and the other part desolate and depriued of men: and that the Sunne and starres might seeme to shewe theyr lyght only halfe theyr course without profite, shining only vpon the sea and desolate places, destitute of man and other liuing creatures. And therefore *Plato* had in great admiration the hystorie of the sayde Egyptian priest, makyng mention of an other part of the worlde beside *Asia, Europa,* and *Africa,* and thought it woorthy to be rehearsed in the beginning of his diuine Dialogue aforesayde. We ought therefore certainely to thinke our selues most bounde vnto God, that in these our tymes it hath pleased hym to reueale and discouer this secrete in the fyndyng of this newe worlde, whereby we are certaynely assured, that vnder our Pole starre, and vnder the *Equinoctial* line, are most goodlye and ample regions, as well and commodiously inhabited, as are other partes of the worlde best knowen vnto vs.

The testimonie of the Poet *Seneca* in his Tragedie *De Medea,* where by the spirite of Poetical furie, he sayth.

Venient annis
Secula seris, quibus Oceanus
Vincula rerum laxet, et ingens
Pateat tellus, Typhisque nouos
Detegat Orbes,
Nec sit terris, vltima Thyle.

Whiche may be thus Englished.

In late yeeres newe worldes shalbe founde,
And newe landes shal then appeare on the grounde.

When *Typhis* Nauigation newe worldes shal fynde out,
Then shal not Thyle for last be left out.
For then shal the Ocean dissolue his large bandes,
And shewe fourth newe worldes, regions, and landes.

Thyle is Islande.

To the moste noble prince and ca-

tholike kynge, Charles, Perer Martyr of Angleria wisheth perpetual felicitie.



The largenesse of the Ocean vnknowen to this day.

The diuine prouidence, from the time that he fyrst created the worlde, hath reserued vnto this day the knowledge of the great and large Ocean sea: In the whiche tyme he hath opened the same, chiefely vnto you (moste mightie Prince) by the good fourtune and happie successe of your grandfather by your mother syde. The same prouidence (I knowe not by what destenie) hath brought me out of my native countrey of Milane, and out of the citie of Rome (where I continued almost. x. yeeres) into Spaine, that I myght particularlye collecte these marueilous and newe thinges, which shoulde otherwyse perhappes haue lien drowned in the whirlepoole of obliuion, forasmuche as the Spanyardes (men worthy great commendation) had only care to the generall inuentions of these thinges. Notwithstanding, I do not chalenge vnto me only, the thankes of the trauaile bestowed herein, whereas the chiefe rewarde therof is due to Ascanius, vicount Cardinal, who perceauyng that I was wylling to departe out of the citie to be present at the warres of *Granatum*, disswaded me from my purpose: But seeing that I was fully resolued to departe, exhorted & required me to write vnto him suche newes as were famous in Spaine, & worthy to be noted. I toke therfore my iourney into Spayne, chiefely for the desyre I had to see therpedition whiche was prepared agaynst the enimies of the fayth, forasmuche as in Italye, by reason of the dissention among the Princes, I coulde fynde nothyng wherewith I myght feede my wytte, beyng a younge man desyrous of knowledge and experience

Cardinal Ascanius.

The warres at Granatum agaynst the Moores.

of

of thynges. I was therefore presente at the warres, from whence I writte to Cardinal Ascanius, and by sundry epistles certifyed hym of such thinges as I thought most worthye to be put in memorie. But when I perceiued that his fortune was turned from a naturall mother to a stepdame, I ceassed from wrytyng. Yet after I sawe, that by thouerthowe of the enimies of our fayth, Spayne was pourged of the Moores, as of an euil weede plucked vp by the rootes, leste I shoulde bestowe my slippery yeares in vnprofitable idlenesse, I was mynded to returne to Italie. But the singuler benignitie of both the Catholyke kyng and queene nowe departed, and theyr large promises towarde me vpon my returne from my legacie of Babylon, deteyned me from my purpose. Yet doth it not repent me that I drew backe my foote, aswel for that I see in no other place of the world at this tyme the lyke worthy thinges to be done: as also that in maner throughout all Italie, by reason of the discorde of Christian Princes, I perceiued all thynges to runne headlong into ruine, the countreys to be destroyed and made fatte with humane blood, the cities sacked, virgins and matrones with theyr goods and possessions caried away as captiues, and miserable innocentes without offence to be slayne vnarmed within theyr owne houses. Of the whiche calamities, I dyd not onely heare the lamentable outcryes, but dyd also feele the same: For euen the blood of myne owne kinsfolkes and frendes, was not free from that crueltie. As I was therefore musyng with my selfe of these thynges, the Cardinal of Arragone, after that he had seene the two fyrst bookes of my Decades wrytten to Ascanius, required me in the name of kyng Frederike his vncle, to put fourth the other eyght epistle bookes. In the meane tyme also, whyle I was voyde of al care as touching the matters of the Ocean, the Apostolicall messengers of the byshop of Rome, Leo the tenth (by whose holsome counsayle and auctoritie we trust the calamities of Italy shalbe fynished) rayled me as it were from sleepe, & encouraged me to proceede as I had begun. To his holynesse I wrytte two Decades, compryled in short bookes, after the maner of epistles, and added them to the fyrst, which was printed without mine aduise, as shal further appeare by the preface folowyng. But nowe I returne to you (most

Italy disquieted with warres.

The sequeles of warre.

Kyng Frederike.

noble Prince) from whom I haue somwhat digressed. Therfore wheras your grandfather by your mothers side, haue subdued al Spaine vnder your dominion, except only one corner of the same, and haue also lefte you the kingdome of Naples, with the fruteful Ilands of our seas, it is surely a great thing and worthy to be noted in our cronacles. But not offendyng the reuerence due to our predecessours, whatsoeuer from the begynnyng of the worlde hath been doone or wytten to this day, to my iudgement seemeth but lyttle, yf we consyder what newe landes and countreys, what newe seas, what sundry nations and tounges, what golde mynes, what treasuries of perles they haue lefte vnto your hyghnesse, besyde other reuennes. The whiche, what they are, and howe greate, these three Decades shall declare. Come therfore most noble Prince elected of God, and enioye that hyghe estate of thinges not yet vnderstode to men. We offer vnto you the *Equinoctiall* lyne hytherto vnknowen, and burnte by the furious heate of the sonne, and vnhabitable after the opinion of the olde wyters, a fewe excepted: but nowe founde to be most replenished with people, faire, fruiteful, and most fortunate, with a thousande Ilandes crowned with golde and bewtifull pearles, besydes that greate portion of earth supposed to be parte of the firme lande, excedyng in quantitie three Europes. Come therfore and embrase this newe world, and suffer vs no longer to consume in desyre of your presence. From hence, from hence I say (most noble young Prince) shal instrumentes be prepared for you, wherby al the worlde shalbe vnder your obeysance. And thus I byd your maiestie farewell: to whose taste if I shal perceaue the frutes of this my tyllage to be delectable, I wyll heareafter do my endeuoure that you may receaue the same more abundauntly. From Madrid, the day before the Calendes of October,
In the yere of Christ
M.D.XUI.

Spayne subdued from the Moores.

The kyngdome of Naples.

The temperatnesse of the Equinoctiall vnknowen to the olde wyters.

Continent or fyrme lande as bygge as three Europes.

Riches are the instruments of conquestes.

The fyrſt Booke of the Decades of the Ocean, written by Peter Martyr of Angleria Milenoes, counſaylour to the king of Spayne, and Protonotarie Apoſtolicall to *Aſcanius Sphorcia*, Vicount Cardinal. &c.

THe reuerende and thankful antiquitie was accuſtomed to eſteeme thoſe men as gods, by whoſe induſtrie and magnanimitie ſuch landes and regions were diſcouered, as were vnknowen to theyr predeceſſours. But vnto vs, hauyng only one God, whom we honour in triplicitie of perſon, this reſteth, that albeit we do not worſhip that kinde of men with diuine honour, yet do we reuerence them, and woorthyly marueyle at theyr noble actes and enterpryſes. Vnto kynges and prynces we geue due obeyſaunce, by whoſe gouernance and furtherance they haue ben aided to perfourme their attempts: we commend both, and for theyr iuſt deſartes woorthyly extol them. Wherefore, as concerning the Ilandes of the weſt Ocean, lately diſcouered, and of the auctours of the ſame (whiche thyng you deſyre by your letters to knowe) I wyl begyn at the fyrſt aucthour thereof, leſt I be iniurious to any man. Take it therefore as foloweth.

The rewarde of vertue.

The Ilandes of the Weſt Ocean.

Chriſtophorus Colonus (otherwyſe called *Columbus*) a gentleman of Italie, borne in the citie of *Genua*, perſwaded Fernando and Elizabeth, catholike prynces, that he doubted not to fynde certayne Ilandes of *India*, nere vnto our Ocean ſea, if they woulde furnyſhe hym with ſhyppes and other thynges appartenyng: affyrmyng that therby not onely the Chriſtian religion myght be enlarged, but Spayne alſo enryched by the great plentie of golde, pearles, pyectous ſtones, and ſpices, whiche myght be founde there. At the length three ſhyppes were appoynted hym at the kinges charges: of the whiche one was a great caracte with deckes, and the other two were light marchaunte ſhyppes without deckes, whiche the Spaniardes call *Carauelas*. Thus he departed from the coſtes of Spaine about the

Chriſtophorus Colonus.

India.

calendes

The fyrſt voyage of Colonus

calendes of September, in the yeere of Chriſte. 1492. and ſet forwarde on his viage, being accompanied with CC. xx. Spanyardes. The fortunate Ilandes (as manye thynke them to be, whiche the Spaniardes call *Canariæ*, found but of late dayes) are diſtaunte from the Ilandes of *Gades* a thouſande and two hundreth myles, accordyng to theyr accomptes, for they ſay they are diſtant three hundred leagues: whereas ſuche as are expert ſea men, affirme that euery league conteineth foure miles, after theyr ſupputations. Theſe Ilandes were called fortunate, for the temperate ayre whiche is in them. For neyther the colonesſe of wynter is ſharpe vnto them, nor the heate of ſommer intollerable. Yet ſome men are of opinion, that thoſe were in olde tyme called the fortunate Ilandes, whiche the Portugales call *Capo Verde*. *Colonus* therfore ſayled fyrſt to the Ilandes of *Canariæ*, to the intente there to refreſhe his ſhyppes with freſhe water and fuell, before he committed hym ſelfe to this ſo laborous a viage. And becauſe I haue heare made mention of the Ilandes of *Canariæ*, it ſhal not be muche from my purpoſe, to declare howe of vnknowen they became knowen, and of ſauage and wilde, better manured: For by the long courſe of many yeeres, they were forgotten, and remayned as vnknowen.

Gades, or Calsmals.

A leagues what it conteyneth by ſea.

The fortunate Ilandes.

Capo Verde.

The .vii. Ilandes of Canarie.

Betanchor a Frenche man ſubdued the Ilandes of Canarie, &c.

These ſeuen Ilandes (therefore) called the *Canaries*, were founde by chaunce by a frenche man, called *Betanchor*, by the permiſſion of queene Katharine, protectrixe of king Iohn her ſonne, while he was yet in his nonage, about the yeere of Chriſte. M.CCCC.U. This *Betanchor* inuaded two of theſe Ilandes called *Lancelotus* and *Fortiſuentura*, which he inhabited & brought to better culture. He being dead, his ſonne and heire ſolde bothe the ſayde Ilandes to certayne Spaniardes.

After this, *Farnandus Peraria* and his wyfe, inuaded *Ferrea* and *Gomera*. The other three were ſubdued in our time. *Grancanaria*, by *Petrus de Vera*, citizen of the noble citie of *Xericium*, and Michael of *Moxica*. *Palma* and *Tenerifen*, by *Alphonſus Lugo*, at the kings charges. *Gomera* and *Ferrea* were eaſily ſubdued: But the matter went harde with *Alphonſus Lugo*. For that naked and wylde nation, fyghtyng only with ſtones and clubbes, droue his armie to flight at the firſt aſſaulte, and ſlue about foure hundred of his men: But at the length he ouercame them. And thus all

Alphonſus Lugo.

the

the Ilandes of *Canariæ* were added to the dominion of Spayne. From these Ilandes *Colonus* directyng his voyage towarde the west, folowyng the falling of the sunne, but declining somewhat towarde the left hande, sayled on forwarde .xxxiii. dayes continually, hauyng only the fruition of the heauen and the water. Then the Spanyardes whiche were accompanyed with hym, began fyrst to murmure secretely among them selues, and shortly after with wordes of reproche spake euil of *Colonus* theyr gouernour, and consulted with them selues, eyther to ryd hym out of the way, or els to cast hym into the sea: ragyng that they were deceyued of a stranger, an outlandyshe man, a Ligurian, a Genues, and brought into suche daungerous places, that they might neuer returne agayne. And after .xxxiii. dayes were past, they furiously cryed out against him, and threatned him that he shoulde passe no further. But he euer with gentle wordes and large promises, appeased their furie, and prolonged day after day, some tyme desyryng them to beare with hym yet a whyle, and some time putting them in remembrance that yf they shoulde attempt any thing against him, or otherwyse disobey hym, it would be reputed for treason. Thus after a fewe dayes, with chearefull harts they espied the lande long looked for. In this fyrst nauigation, he discouered .vi. ilandes, wherof two were exceedyng great: Of whiche, the one he called *Hispaniola*, and the other *Iohanna*. But at that tyme he knew not perfectly that *Iohanna* (otherwyse called *Cuba*) was an ilande. As they coasted along by the shore of certayne of these ilandes, they hearde Nyghtyngales syng in the thycke woodes in the moneth of Nouember. They founde also great ryuers of freshe water, and naturall hauens, of capacitie to harbour great nauies of shippes. Sayling by the coastes of *Iohanna*, from the north poynt to the west, he rode litle lesse then eight hundred miles (for they cal it a hundred and fourescore leagues) supposing that it had ben the continent or fyrme lande, because he coulde neither fynde the landes ende, nor any token of the ende, as farre as he could iudge with his eye: wherfore he determined to turne backe agayne, beyng partly thereto enforced by the roughnesse of the sea, for the sea bankes of the ilande of *Iohanna*, by sundrye wyndynges and turnynges, bende them selues so muche towarde the north, that the northnortheast winde

Colonus men rebel agaynst hym.

Fayre wordes and promises.

Hispaniola. Iohanna.

Nightingales syng in Nouember.

roughly tolled the ſhyps by reaſon of the winter. Turning therfore the ſtemmes of his ſhyppes towarde the Eaſt, he affyrmed that he had found the ilande of *Ophir*, whither Solomons ſhippes ſayled for golde. But the diſcription of the Coſmographers well conſidered, it ſeemeth that both theſe, and the other ilandes adioynyng, are the ilands of *Antilia*. This ilande he called *Hiſpaniola*, on whoſe north ſyde as he approched neare to the lande, the keele or bottome of the biggeſt veſſell ranne vpon a blynde rocke couered with water, and cloue in ſunder: but the playneneſſe of the rocke was a helpe to them that they were not drowned. Makyng haſte therfore with the other two ſhyps to helpe them, they brought awaye al the men without hurte. Here comming fyrſt a land, they ſawe certayne men of the Ilande, who perceiuyng an vnknowen nation comming toward them, flocked togeather, and ranne al into the thycke woods, as it had ben hares courſed with greyhoundes. Our men purſuing them, tooke onely one woman, whom they brought to the ſhips: where fylling her with meate and wyne, and appareling her, they let her depart to her companye. Shortly after a greate multitude of them came runnyng to the ſhore to behold this newe nation, whom they thought to haue diſcended from heauen. They caſt them ſelues by heapes into the ſea, & came ſwimming to the ſhyppes, bryngyng gold with them, whiche they chaunged with our men for earthen pottes, drinking glaſſes, poyntes, pinnes, hawkes bels, looking glaſſes, & ſuch other trifles. Thus growing to further familiaritie, our men were honorably entertained of the king of that part of the iland, whoſe name was *Guaccanarillus*: for it hath many kyngs, as when *Eneas* arriued in Italy, he found *Latium* diuided into many kingdoms and prouinces, as *Latium*, *Mezentium*, *Turnum*, and *Tarchontem*, which were ſeparated with narowe boundes, as ſhal more largly appeare hereafter. At the euen tide about the falling of the ſonne, when our men went to prayer, and kneeled on their knees after the maner of ỹ Chriſtians, they dyd the lyke alſo. And after what maner ſo euer they ſawe them pray to the croſſe, they folowed them in al poyntes as wel as they coulde. They ſhewed much humanitie towards our men, and helped them with theyr lyghters or ſmal boates (which they cal *Canoas*) to vnlade their broken

The Ilande of Ophir.

The Ilandes of Antilia.

A ſhyppwracke.

The people of the Ilande.

Naked people.

Expert ſwymmers.

Gold for earthy and glaſſe.

Many kynges

Religious and humane people

Canoas.

ſhippes.

shyppe, and that with suche celeritie and cherefulnesse, that no frende for frende, or kynseman for kynseman, in such case moued with pitie, coulde do more. Theyr boates are made only of one tree, made holowe with a certaine sharpe stone (for they haue no yron) and are very long and narowe. Many affirme that they haue seene some of them with fortie ores. The wilde and mysche-uous people called *Canibales*, or *Caribes*, whiche were accustomed to eate mans flesshe (& called of the olde writers, *Anthropophagi*) molest them exceedyngly, inuading their countrey, takyng them captiue, kyllyng & eatyng them. As our men sayled to the iiandes of these meke and humane people, they left the ilands of the *Canibales*, in maner in the middest of theyr viage toward the south. They complayned that theyr ilands were no lesse vexed with the incursions of these manhuntyng *Canibales* when they goe forth a rouyng to seeke theyr pray, then are other tame beastes of Lions and Tigers. Such chyldren as they take, they geld to make them fat, as we do cocke chickens and young hogges, and eate them when they are wel fedde: of suche as they eate, they fyrst eate the intralles and extreme partes, as handes, feete, armes, necke, and head. The other most flesshye partes, they pouder for store, as we do pestels of porke, and gammondes of bakon: yet do they abstayne from eatyng of women, and counte it vyle. Therfore suche young women as they take, they kepe for increase, as we do hennes to leye egges: the olde women, they make theyr drudges. They of the iiandes (which we may nowe cal ours) bothe the men and ỹ women, when they perceiue the *Canibales* comming, haue none other shyft but onely to flee: for although they vse very sharpe arrowes made of reedes, yet are they of small force to represse ỹ furie of the *Canibales*: for euen they them selues confesse, that ten of the *Canibales* are able to ouercome a hundred of them if they encountre with them. Theyr meate is a certayne roote, which they cal *Ages*, muche lyke a nauewe roote in fourme and greatnesse, but of sweete tast, much lyke a greene chestnutte. They haue also an other kynde of rootes, which they call *Iucca*, whereof they make bread in kyke maner. They vse *Ages* more often rosted or sodden, then to make bread thereof. But they neuer eate *Iucca*, except it be first sliced and pressed (for it is full of lycoure) and then baked or sodden. But this is to be

Monoxyla. They haue no iron.

Canibales, or Caribes. Anthropophagi.

The crueltie of the Canibales.

Ages. Rootes in the steede of meate. Iucca. Bread of rootes.

 marue-

An hearbe of strange nature.

marueyled at, that the iuice of this roote is a poyson as strong as *Aconitum*, so that if it be dzunke, it causeth pzesent death, and yet the bzead made of the masse thereof, is of good taste and holsome, as they all haue pzoued. They make also another kynde of bzead of a certayne pulse, called *Panicum*, muche like vnto wheate, whereof is great plentie in the Dukedome of Millane, Spayne, and *Cranatum*. But that of this Countrey is longer by a spanne, somewhat sharpe towarde the ende, and as bygge as a mans arme in ỳ bzawne: the graynes wherof are set in a marueylous ozder, & are in fourme somewhat lyke a Pease. Whyle they be soure and vnripe, they are whyte, but when they are ripe, they be very blacke, when they are bzoken, they be whiter then snowe: this kynde of grayne they call *Maizium*. Golde is of some estimation among them: foz some of them hang certayne small peeces thereof at theyz eares and nosethzylles. A litle beyonde this place, our men went a lande foz fresshe water, where they chaunced vpon a riuer, whose sande was myxed with muche golde. They founde there no kindes of foure footed beastes, except three kindes of litle conies. These ilandes also nourysshe serpentes, but suche as are without hurt. Likewise wilde geese, turtle doues, and duckes, muche greater then ours, and as white as swannes, with heades of purple colour. Also Popiniayes, of the whiche some are greene, some yelowe, & some lyke them of *India*, with yelowe rynges about theyz neckes, as Plinie describeth them. Of these they bzought fourtie with them, of moste lyuely and dilectable colours, hauyng theyz feathers enterminged with greene, yelowe, and purple, whiche varietie delyghteth the sense not a litle. Thus muche thought I good to speake of Popyniayes (ryght noble pzince) specially to this intent, that albeit the opinion of *Christophorus Colonus* (who affyzmeth these ilandes to be part of *India*) doth not in all poyntes agree with the iudgement of auncient wyters as touchyng the bygnesse of the Sphere and compasse of the Globe, as concernyng the nauigable pozcion of the same being vnder vs, yet the Popiniayes and many other thynges bzought from thence, doo declare that these Ilandes sauour somewhat of *India*, eyther beyng neare vnto it, oz els of the same nature: fozasmuche as *Aristole* also, about the ende of his booke *de Cælo & Mundo*, and likewyse *Seneca*, with

Maizium.

Golde in estimation.

Golde in the sandes of riuers.

Serpentes without venime.
Turtle doues.
Duckes.
Popiniayes.
Plini.

These Ilandes are part of India.
The Indians are Antipodes to the Spanyardes.

Aristotle.
Seneca.

with diuers other aucthours not ignorant in Cosmographie, do affirme that *India* is no long tracte by sea, distant from Spaine by the west Ocean, for the soyle of these ilandes bryngeth fooyth Mastyx, Aloes, and sundry other sweete gummes and spyces, as doth *India*, Cotton also of the Gossampine tree, as in *India* in the countrey of the people called Seres.

India not farre from Spayne.
Mastyx.
Aloe.
Gossampine cotton or bombase.
Seres.

The languages of all the nations of these ilandes, may well be wrytten with our Latine letters. For they cal heauen *Turei*. A house *Boa*. Golde *Cauni*. A good man, *Taino*. Nothing, *Mayani*. Al other words of theyr language, they pronounce as plainly as we do the Latine tongue. In these ilandes they founde no trees knowen vnto them, but Pine apple trees, and Date trees, and those of marueylous heyght, and exceedyng harde, by reason of the great moystnesse and fatnesse of the grounde, with continual and temperate heate of the sunne, whiche endureth so al the whole yere. They playnely affirme the ilande of *Hispaniola* to be the moste fruitefull lande that the heauen compasseth about, as shall more largely appeare hereafter in the particuler description of the same, which we entende to set fooyth when we shalbe better instructed. Thus makyng a league offrendshyp with the king, and leauing with hym .xxxviii. men to searche the ilande, he departed to Spayne, takyng with hym tenne of the inhabitauntes to learne the Spanishe tongue, to the intent to vse them afterward for interpretours. *Colonus* therfore at his returne was honourably receiued of the kyng and queene, who caused hym to syt in theyr presence, whiche is a token of great loue and honour among the Spanyardes. He was also made Admiral of the Ocean, and his brother gouernour of the ilande.

The language of these Indians.

Trees & fruites vnknowē to vs

Fat and moyst grounde.
Heate continual & temperate.
The fruitefulnesse of Hispaniola.

Toward the second voyage he was furnished with .xvii. ships, wherof three were great caractes of a thousande tunne. xii. were of that sort which the Spaniards cal *Carauelas*, without deckes, and two other of the same sorte somewhat bygger, and more apt to beare deckes, by reason of the greatnesse of theyr mastes. He had also a thousande and two hundred armed footemen well appoynted: among which were many artificers, as smythes, Carpenters, myners, and suche other, certayne hoysmen also, well armed: Lykewyse mares, sheepe, heyghfers, and suche other of both kindes for encrease: Lykewise al kinde of pulse, or grayne,

The seconde voyage of Colonus.

Corne & seedes to sowe.

and corne, as wheate, barley, rye, beanes, and pease, and suche other, aswel for foode as to sowe: beside vines, plantes, and seedes, of suche trees, fruites, and herbes, as those countreyes lacke, and (not to be forgotten) sundry kyndes of artyllerie and iron tooles, as bowes, arrowes, crosbowes, bylles, hargabusses, brode swoordes, large targettes, pykes, mattockes, shouelles, hammers, nayles, sawes, axes, and suche other. Thus beyng furnished accordyngly, they set forward from the Ilandes of *Gades* (nowe called *Cales*) the seuenth day before the Calendes of October, in the yeere of Christ. 1493. and arriued at the ilandes of *Canarie* at the Calendes of October: Of these ilandes, the last is called *Ferrea*, in whiche there is no other water that may be dronke, but only that is geathered of the deawe, which continually distylleth from one only tree, growyng on the hyghest bancke of the ilande, and falleth into a rounde trenche made with mans hande: we were enfourmed of these thynges within fewe dayes after his departure. What shall succeede, we wyl certifie you hereafter. Thus fare ye well, from the courte, at the Ides of Nouember. 1493.

Tooles and artyllerie.

Water droppyng from a tree continually.

The seconde booke of the first Decade, to *Ascanius Sphorcia*, Vicount Cardinal. &c.

YOu repeate (ryght honourable prince) that you are delyrous to knowe what newes we haue in Spayne from the newe worlde, and that those thyngs haue greatly delyted you, whiche I wrote vnto your hyghnesse of the fyrst Nauigation: You shal nowe therefore receiue what hath succeeded. *Methymna Campi*, is a famous towne in high Spayne, in respect from you, and is in that parte of Spayne whiche is called *Castella Vetus*, beyng distant from *Gades* about. xl. myles. Here the courte remayned, when about the. ix. of the Calendes of Aprill, in this yeere of nynetie and foure, there were postes sent to the king and queene, certifyng them that there were twelue shyppes come from the newe ilandes, and arriued at *Gades*: but the gouernour of

Methymna Campi. Castella Vetus.

Gades.

of the shyppes sent woorde to the kyng and queene, that he had none other matter to certifie them of by the postes, but only that the Admiral with fiue shyppes, and fourescore and ten men, remayned styll in *Hispaniola* to searche the secretes of the ilande, and that as touchyng other matters, he hym selfe would shortly make relation in theyr presence by woorde of mouth: therefore the day before the Nones of Apryl, he came to the Courte hym selfe. What I learned of hym, and other faythfull and credible men, whiche came with hym from the Admirall, I wil rehearse vnto you, in suche order as they declared the same to me, when I demaunded them: take it therefore as foloweth. The third day of the Ides of October, departyng from *Ferrea*, the laste of the ilandes of *Canariæ*, and from the coastes of Spayne, with a Nauie of seuenteene shippes, they sayled .xxi. dayes before they came to any ilande, inclining of purpose more towarde the left hand then at the fyrst voyage, folowing the north northeast winde, and arriued fyrst at the ilandes of the *Canibales* or *Caribes*, of whiche only the fame was knowen to our men. Among these, they chaunced fyrst vpon one, so beset with trees, that they coulde not see so muche as an elle space of bare earth or stonie grounde, this they called *Dominica*, because they found it on the Sunday. They taried here no time, because they saw it to be desart. In the space of these .xxi. dayes, they thynke that they sayled eyght hundred & xx. leagues, the north northeast wynde was so ful with them, and so freshly folowed the sterne of theyr shyppes. After they had sayled a lytle further, they espied diuers ilandes replenyshed with sundry kindes of trees, from the whiche came fragrant sauours of spyces and sweete Gummes: here they sawe neyther man nor beast, except certayne Lysartes of huge bygnesse, as they reported which went aland to viewe the countrey. This iland they called *Galana* or *Galanta*: from the cape or poynt of this ilande, espying a mountayne a farre of, they sayled thyther. About .xxx. myles from this mountayne, they sawe a ryuer descendyng, which seemed to be a token of some great and large flood. This is the fyrst lande whiche they founde inhabited from the ilandes of *Canariæ*, and is an ilande of the *Canibales*, as they learned by the interpretours whiche they tooke with them from *Hispaniola* into Spayne at theyr fyrst voyage. Searching the ilande,

The Ilande of Ferrea.

Ilandes of the Canibales.

The Ilande of Dominica.

Lysartes.

The Ilande of Galanta.

The Ilande of Guadalupe.

Villages of.xx. or.xxx. houses.

they found innumerable villages of.xx.houses,or.xxx.at the most, set rounde about in order, makyng the streete in compasse lyke a market place. And forasmuche as I haue made mention of

The buildyng of theyr houses.

theyr houses, it shall not be greatly from my purpose to describe in what manner they are buylded: They are made rounde lyke belles or rounde pauilions. Theyr frame is rayled of exceedyng high trees,set close togeather, and fast rampaired in the ground, so standing aslope, and bending inwarde, that the toppes of the trees ioyne togeather, and beare one agaynst another, hauyng also within the house certaine strong and short proppes or postes whiche susteyne the trees from fallyng. They couer them with the leaues of date trees, and other trees stronglye compact and hardened, wherwith they make them close from winde and weather. At the shorte postes or proppes within the house, they tye ropes of the cotton of gossampine trees,or other ropes made of

Gossampine cotton.

certayne long & rough rootes, much lyke vnto the shrubbe called *Spartum*, wherof in old tyme they vsed to make bandes for vines, and gables and ropes for shyppes. These they tye ouerthwarte the house from poste to poste, on these they lay as it were certaine matresses made of the cotton of gossampine trees, whiche growe plentifully in these Ilandes. This cotton the Spanyards

Bombase. Hangyng beddes.

cal *Algodon*, and the Italians *Bombasine*: and thus they sleepe in hangyng beddes. At the entrance of one of theyr houses,they sawe two images of wood lyke vnto serpentes, whiche they thought had been suche idols as they honour: but they learned afterwarde that they were set there onlye for comelynesse, for they knowe none other god then the sunne and moone, although

Images.

they make certaine images of gossampine cotton to ỹ similitude of suche phantasies as they say appeare to them in the nyght. Our men found in theyr houses, al kindes of earthen vessels, not muche vnlyke vnto ours. They founde also in theyr kytchens,

Fine cookerie.

mans flesshe,duckes flesshe,& goose flesshe,al in one pot, and other on the spyts redy to be layde to the fyre. Entring into their inner lodgynges, they founde faggottes of the bones of mens armes

Arrowheades of bones.

and legges, whiche they reserue to make heades for theyr arrowes, because they lacke iron, the other bones they cast away when they haue eaten the flesshe. They founde lykewyse the head of a young man fastened to a poste,and yet bleedyng. They haue

in

in ſome byllages, one great hall or pallace, about the whiche theyr common houſes are placed: to this they reſort, as often as they come togeather to playe. When they perceiued the commyng of our men, they fledde. In theyr houſes they founde alſo aboue thirtie chyldren captiues, whiche were reſerued to be eaten, but our men tooke them away to vſe them for interpreters. Searching more diligently the inner parts of the ilande, they founde ſeuen other ryuers, bygger then this whiche we ſpake of before, runnyng thrugh the ilande, with fruitefull and pleaſaunt bankes, delectable to beholde. This ilande they called *Guadalupea*, for the ſimilitude that it hath to the mount *Guadalupus* in Spayne, where the image of the virgin Marie is religiouſly honoured, but the inhabitauntes call it *Carucueria*, or *Queraquiera*: It is the cheefe habitation of the *Canibales*. They brought from this ilande, vii. Popiniayes, bigger then Pheſants, muche dyfferyng from other in colour, hauyng theyr backes, breſtes, and bellies of purple colour, and theyr wynges of other variable colours: in al theſe ilands is no leſſe plentie of Poppyniayes, then with vs of ſparrowes or ſtarelynges. As we bring vp capons and hennes to franke and make them fat, ſo doo they theſe bigger kindes of Poppyniayes for the ſame purpoſe. After that they had thus ſearched the ilande, and driuen theſe *Canibales* to flight (whiche ran away at theyr fyrſt approche, as ſoone as they had eſpied them) they called their company togeather, and as ſoone as they had broken ỹ *Canibales* boates or lighters (whiche they cal *Canoas*) they looſed theyr ankers the day before the Ides of Nouember, and departed from *Guadalupea*. *Colonus* the Admiral, for the deſyre he had to ſee his companions, whiche at his fyrſt voyage he left the yeere before in *Hiſpaniola* to ſearch the countrey, let paſſe many ilandes both on his ryght hande, & left hande, and ſayled directly thyther. By the way there appeared from the north a great iland, which the captiues that were taken in *Hiſpaniola*, called *Madanino*, or *Matinino*, affirming it to be inhabited only with women, to whō the *Canibales* haue acceſſe at certayne tymes of the yeere, as in olde tyme the *Thracians* had to the *Amazones* in the ilande of *Leſbos*: the men chyldren they ſende to theyr fathers, but the women they keepe with them ſelues.

The mount Guadalupus.

Carucueria.

Popiniayes bygger then Pheſantes.

The Canibales driuē to flyght.

Matinino an Ilande of women.

ſelues. They haue great and ſtrong caues or dennes in the grounde, to the whiche they flee for ſafgarde if any men reſorte vnto them at any other tyme then is appoynted, and there defende them ſelues with bowes and arrowes, agaynſt the violence of ſuche as attempte to inuade them. They coulde not at this tyme approche to this ilande, by reaſon of the North northeaſt wynde, which blewe ſo vehemently from the ſame, wheras they nowe folowed the Eaſt ſoutheaſte. After they departed from *Madanino*, and ſayled by the ſpace of .xl. myles, they paſſed not farre from an other ilande which the captynes ſayde to be verye populus, and replenyſhed with al thynges neceſſarie for the life of man. This they called *Mons Serratus*, becauſe it was full of mountaynes. The captynes further declared, that the *Canibales* are woont at ſome time to goe from theyr owne coaſtes aboue a thouſande myles to hunt for men. The day folowing, they ſawe an other ilande, the whiche becauſe it was rounde, they called *Sancta Maria Rotunda*. The next day, they founde an other, whiche they called *S. Martini*, whiche they let paſſe alſo, becauſe they had no leaſure to tarrye. Lykewyſe the thirde daye they eſpied an other, whoſe *Diametral* ſyde, extendyng from the Eaſte to the weſt, they iudged to be a hundred & fyftie myle. They affirme all theſe ilandes to be maruelous fayre and fruitefull: This laſt, they called *Sancta Maria Antiqua*. Saylyng forwarde, and leauyng many other ilandes, after they had ſayled about fourtie myles, they chaunced vpon an other, much bygger then any of the reſt, which thinhabitans call *Ay Ay*, but they named it *Inſula crucis*: Here they caſt anker to fetche freſhe water. The Admiral alſo commaunded .xxx. men to goe a lande out of his owne ſhyp, and to ſearch the ilande: Here they founde foure dogges on the ſhore. The Inhabitants are *Canibales*, and maruelous experte in ſhooting, as wel women as men, and vſe to infect their arrowes with poyſon. When they had taried there two dayes, they ſawe a farre of a *Canoa*, in the whiche were eight men, and as many women, hauyng with them bowes and arrowes. They fiercely aſſayled our men without all feare, and hurt ſome of them with theyr venemous arrowes. Among theſe there was a certayne woman, to whom the other gaue reuerence, and obeyed as though ſhe were theyr queene. Her ſonne wayted vppon her, beyng a young man, ſtrongly made,

The Ilandes of Mons Serratus.

Huntyng for men.

Sancta Maria Rotunda.

Sanctus Martinus.

Sancta Maria Antiqua.

Inſula crucis, an Ilande of the Canibales.

The Canibales are expert Archers.

Arrowes infected with venime.

made, of terrible and frownyng countenance, and a Lions face. Our men, leaſte they ſhoulde take the moze hurte by beyng wounded a farre of, thought it beſte to ioyne with them. Therfoze with al ſpeede, ſetting forward with their ozes the brigandine in whiche they were ſette alande, they ouerturned their *Canoa* with a great violence, whiche being ouerwhelmed, they notwithſtanding, as wel the women as the men, ſwymming, caſte theyr dartes at our men thicke and threefolde. At the length, geatheryng them ſelues togeather vpon a rocke couered with the water, they fought manfully vntyll they were ouercome and taken, one beyng ſlayne, and the queenes ſonne ſoze wounded. When they were brought into the Admirals ſhippe, they dyd no moze put of their fiercenes and cruel countenaunces, then do the Lions of *Lybia* when they perceiue them ſelues to be bounde in chaynes. There is no man able to beholde them, but he ſhall feele his bowels grate with a certayne horrour, nature hath endued them with ſo terrible menacing and cruell aſpect. This coniecture I make of mee ſelfe, & other which oftentymes went with me to ſee them at *Methymna Campi*: but nowe to returne to the voyage. Proceeding thus further and further, moze then fyue hundred myles, fyrſte towarde the weſt ſouthweſt, then towarde the ſouthweſt, and at the length towarde the weſt northweſt, they entred into a mayne large ſea, hauyng in it innumerable ilandes, marueylouſly dyfferyng one from another, for ſome of them were very fruitefull, and full of hearbes and trees, other ſome, very dry, barren, and rough, with high rockye mountaynes of ſtone, whereof ſome were of bryght blewe, or aſurine colour, and other glyſteryng whyte: wherefore they ſuppoſed them, by good reaſon, to be the mines of mettalles and precious ſtones: but the roughneſſe of the ſea, and multitude of ilandes ſtandyng ſo thycke togeather, hyndered them ſo, that they coulde caſt no anker, leſt the bigger veſſelles ſhoulde runne vppon the rockes: therefore they deferred the ſearchyng of theſe ilandes vntyll another tyme: they were ſo manye, and ſtoode ſo thycke, that they coulde not number them, yet the ſmaller veſſelles whiche drewe no great deapth, entred among them, and numbred fourtie and fyue ilandes, but the bygger veſſels kept aloofe in the mayne ſea, for feare of the rockes.

A conflict with the Canibales.

The fiercenesse & terrible countenance of the Canibales.

Methymna Campi.

Innumerable Ilandes.

The mynes of mettals & precious stones.

They

The ſea called Archipelagus.

They call the ſea where this multitude of ilandes are ſituate, *Archipelagus*. From this tracte proceding forward, in the midde way there lyeth an ilande whiche thinhabitantes call *Burichina*, or *Buchena*: but they named it *Inſula. S. Iohannis*. Dyuers of them whom we had delyuered from the *Canibales*, ſayde that they were borne in this ilande, affirming it to be verye populous and fruteſull, hauing alſo many faire wooddes and hauens. Ther is deadly hatred and continual battayle betwene them and the *Canibales*. They haue no boates to paſſe from their owne coaſtes to the *Canibales*: but if it be their chaunce to ouercome them when they make incurſion into theyr countrey to ſeeke their praye (as it ſometyme happeneth, the fortune of warre being vncertayne) they ſerue them with like ſauſe, requiting death for death. For one of them mangeleth an other in pieces, and roſte them, and eate them euen before their eyes. They tarryed not in this ilande: Yet in the weſt angle therof, a fewe of them went a lande for freſhe water, and founde a great and high houſe after the maner of their buyldyng, hauing .xii. other of their vulgare cotages placed about the ſame, but were all lefte deſolate, whether it were that they reſorted to the mountaynes by reaſon of the heate which was that tyme of the yeere, and to returne to the playne when the ayre waxeth coulder, or els for feare of the *Canibales* whiche make incurſion into the ilande at certayne ſeaſons. In al this ilande is only one kyng. The ſouth ſyde hereof extendeth about two hundreth myles. Shortly after, they came to the ilande of *Hiſpaniola*, being diſtante from the firſte ilande of the *Canibales*, fyue hundreth leagues. Here they founde al thinges out of order, and theyr felowes ſlayne whiche they lefte here at their fyrſt voyage. In the begynnyng of *Hiſpaniola* (hauing in it many regions and kyngdomes as we haue ſayde) is the region of *Xamana*, whoſe kyng is named *Guaccanarillus*. This *Guaccanarillus* ioyned frendſhip with our men at the fyrſt voyage, and made a league with them: but in the abſence of the Admirall, he rebelled, and was the cauſe of our mens deſtruction, although he diſſimuled the ſame, and pretended frendſhip at the Admirales returne. As our men ſayled on yet a litle further, they eſpied a long *Canoa* with many oxes, in whiche was the brother of *Guaccanarillus*, with only one man wayting on hym.

Inſula. S. Iohannes or Buchena.

Death for death

The mountaynes are colder then the playnes.

From Dominica to Hiſpaniola fiue hundred leagues.

The Spaniardes left in the Ilande are ſlayne.

Kyng Guaccanarillus rebelleth.

He

He brought with him two images of golde, whiche he gaue the Admyrall in the name of his brother, and tolde a tale in his language as concernyng the death of our men, as they proued afterwarde, but at this tyme had no regarde to his communication for lacke of interpretours, whiche were eyther all dead, or escaped and stolne away when they drewe neare the landes. But of the ten, seuen dyed by chaunge of ayre and dyet. The inhabitauntes of these landes haue ben euer so vsed to lyue at libertie, in play and pastyme, that they can hardly away with the yoke of seruitude, which they attempte to shake of by all meanes they may. And surely yf they had receiued our religion, I woulde thynke their lyfe moste happie of all men, yf they myght therewith enioye their auncient libertie. A fewe thinges contente them, hauyng no delyte in suche superfluities, for the whiche in other places men take infinite paynes, and commit manye vnlawfull actes, and yet are neuer satisfied, whereas manye haue to muche, and none ynough. But among these symple soules, a fewe clothes serue the naked: weightes and measures are not needefull to suche as can not skyl of craft and deceyte, and haue not the vse of pestiferous money, the seede of innumerable mischeeues: so that yf we shall not be ashamed to confesse the trueth, they seeme to liue in that golden worlde of the whiche olde wryters speake so muche, wherein men lyued symplye and innocentlye without enforcement of lawes, without quarrelyng, iudges, and libelles, content only to satisfie nature, without further veration for knowledge of thynges to come. Yet these naked people also are tormented with ambition, for ẏ desire they haue to enlarge their dominions: by reason wherof, they kepe war and destroy one another, from the whiche plague I suppose the golden worlde was not free. For euen then also, *Cede, non cedam*, that is, geue place, and I will not geue place, had entred among men. But nowe to returne to the matter from which we haue digressed. The admiral desyrous to know further of ẏ̃ death of his men, sent for *Guaccanerillus* to come to him to his ship, dissimulyng that he knewe any thyng of the matter. After that he came aboord shyp, saluting the Admiral and his company, geuing also certayne golde to the captaynes and officers, turned hym to the women captiues, whiche not long before our men had delyuered from

Two images of golde.

Libertie and idlenesse.

A happie kinde of lyfe.

Superfluitie.

Many haue to much, and none ynough.

The golden worlde.

Naked men troubled with ambition.

Geue place.

The Admirall sendeth for the kyng.

from the *Canibales*, and earnestly beholdyng one of them whom our men called Katherine, he spake gently vnto her. And thus when he had seene and marueyled at the hoyses, and such other thyngs as were in the shyppe, vnknowen to them, and had with a good grace and meryly asked leaue of the Admiral, he departed. Yet some there were whiche counsayled the Admirall to keepe hym styll, that yf they myght by any meanes proue that he was consentyng to the death of our men, he myght be punyshed accordyngly. But the Admiral consyderyng that it was yet no time to incense the inhabitantes myndes to wrath, dismissed him. The next day folowyng, the kynges brother resortyng to the shyppes, eyther in his owne name or in his brothers, seduced the women. For on the next nyght about mydnyght, this Katherine, aswell to recouer her owne libertie, as also her fellowes, being suborned thereto either by the king or his brothers promises, attempted a muche more difficult and daungerous aduenture then dyd *Cloelia* of Rome, whiche beyng in hostage with other maydes to the king *Porcena*, deceiued her keepers, and rode ouer ỹ riuer *Tiber*, with the other virgins which were pledges with her. For whereas they swamme ouer the riuer on horsbacke, this Katherine with seuen other women, trustyng only to the strength of their owne armes, swam aboue three long miles, and that also at suche time as the sea was somewhat rough: for euen so farre of from the shore lay the shyppes at rode, as nygh as they coulde conjecture. But our men folowing them with the shipboates, by the same light seene on the shore, whereby the women were ledde, tooke three of them, supposing that Katherine with the other foure, went to *Guaccanarillus*: for in the spryng of the morning, certaine messengers being sent vnto him by the Admirall, had intelligence that he was fledde with al his familie and stuffe, and the women also, whiche thyng ministred further suspection that he was consentyng to the death of our men. Wherefore the Admirall sent foorth an armie of three hundred men, ouer the which he appoynted one *Melchior* to be captaine, wyllyng him to make diligent search to fynd out *Guaccanarillus*. *Melchior* therefore with the smallest vesselles entryng into the countrey by the riuers, and scouryng the shores, chaunced into certaine crooked goulfes, defended with fiue litle & steepe hilles, suppo-

No horses in the Ilandes.

A tyme for all thynges.

A desperate aduenture of a woman.

Cloelia of Rome.

Guaccanarillus is sought.

Melchior.

ſuppoſing that it had byn the mouth of ſome great ryuer. He founde heare alſo a very commodious and ſafe hauen, and therefore named it *Portus Regalis*. They ſay that the enterance of this is ſo crooked and bending, that after the ſhyps are once within the ſame, whether they turne them to the left hand, or to the right, they can not perceyue where they came in, vntyl they returne to the mouth of the ryuer, although it be there ſo brode that three of the byggeſt veſſels may ſayle togeather on a froont. The ſharpe and high hylles on the one ſyde and on the other, ſo blake the wynde, that they were vncertaine how to rule theyr ſayles. In the myddle gulfe of the ryuer, there is a promontorie or point of the land with a pleaſant groue, ful of Popingiayes and other byrdes, which breede therin & ſing very ſweetly: They perceyued alſo that two ryuers of no ſmal largeneſſe fell into the hauen. Whyle they thus ſearched the lande betweene both, *Melchior* eſpied a high houſe a farre of, where ſuppoſing that *Guaccanarillus* had lyen hyd, he made towarde it: and as he was goyng, there met hym a man with a frowneyng countenance, and a grymme looke, with a hundred men folowyng hym, armed with bowes and arrowes, and long and ſharpe ſtaues lyke iauelynnes, made harde at the endes with fyre, who approching towardes our men, ſpake out aloud with a terrible voyce, ſaying that they were *Taini* (that is) noble men, and not *Canibales*: but when our men had geuen them ſignes of peace, they left both theyr weapons and fierceneſſe. Thus geuyng ech of them certayne haukes bels, they tooke it for ſo great a rewarde, that they deſyred to enter bondes of neare frendſhyp with vs, and feared not immediatly to ſubmit them ſelues vnder our power, and reſorted to our ſhyps with their preſentes. They that meaſured the houſe (beyng made in round fourme) found it to be from ſyde to ſyde, xxxii. great paces, compaſſed about with xxx. other vulgare houſes, hauyng in them many beames croſſe ouer, & couered with reedes of ſundry colours, wrethed & as it were weaued with marueilous art. Whē our men aſked ſome of them where they might find *Guaccanarillus*? They anſwered, that that region was none of his, but theyr kynges, beyng there preſent: Yet they ſayde they ſuppoſed that *Guaccanarillus* was gone from the playne to the mountaynes.

Popyngiayes and byrdes.

Taini.

Yaubes belles.

A large houſe.

Reedes of ſundry colours.

Makyng

Caccius.

Hoiedus and Goualanus.

Gold in riuers fallyng from mountaynes.

The manner of gathering gold.

Graynes of golde.

A masse of rude gold weyghing ix. ounces.

Caunaboa, kyng of the house of golde.

Wholsome water, and plentie of fyshe.

The day and nyght of equall length in December.

Byrdes breede in December.

Makyng therefore a brotherly league with this *Cacicus* (that is to say a kyng) they returned to the Admiral, to make relation what they had seene and heard: whereupon he sent foorth diuers other Centurians with theyr hundredes, to searche the countrey yet further: among whiche were *Hoiedus* and *Gorualanus*, noble young gentlemen, and of great courage. And as they went towarde the mountaynes to seeke *Guaccanerillus*, diuiding the mountaynes betweene them, one of them founde on the one syde thereof, foure ryuers fallyng from the same mountaynes, and the other founde three on the other syde. In the sandes of al these riuers is founde great plentie of golde, whiche the inhabitauntes of the same ilande whiche were with vs, geathered in this manner: makyng holes in the sande with theyr handes a Cubite deepe, and takyng vp sande with theyr left handes from the bottome of the same, they pycked out graynes of golde with theyr ryght handes without any more art or cunnyng, and so deliuered it to our men, who affirme that many of them thus geathered, were as bygge as tares or fytches. And I mee selfe sawe a masse of rude golde (that is to say, suche as was neuer moulten) lyke vnto suche stones as are founde in the bottomes of ryuers, weighyng niene ounces, whiche *Hoieda* hym selfe founde. Beyng contented with these signes, they returned to the Admirall to certifie hym hereof. For the Admirall had commaunded vnder payne of punyshment, that they shoulde meddle no further then theyr commission: whiche was only, to searche the places with theyr signes. For the fame went that there was a certayne kyng of the mountaynes from whence those ryuers had theyr fall, whom they cal *Cacicus Caunaboa*, that is, the lord of the house of golde, for they cal a house *Boa*, golde, *Cauni*, and a kyng or lorde *Cacicus*, as we haue sayde before. They affirme that there can no where be founde better fyshe, nor of more pleasant taste, or more holsome then in these riuers: also the waters of the same to be moste holsome to drynke. *Melchior* him selfe tolde me, that in the moneth of December, the dayes & nyghtes be of equal length among the *Canibales*: but the sphere or circles of the heauen agreeth not thereunto, albeit that in the same moneth, some byrdes make theyr nestes, and some haue alredye hatched theyr egges by reason of the heate, beyng rather continuall

nuall then extreme. He tolde me also when I questioned with him as concerning ỹ eleuation of the pole frō the horizontal line, that al the starres called *Plastrum* or charles wayne, are hyd vnder the North pole to the *Canibales*. And surely there returned none from thence at this viage, to whom there is more credit to be geuen, then to this man. But if he had byn skilfull in Astronomie, he shoulde haue sayde that the day was almoste equall with the night: For in no place towarde the stay of the sonne (called *Solsticium*) can the night be equall with the day. And as for them, they neuer came vnder the *Equinoctial*, forasmuch as they had euer the North pole theyr guyde, and euer eleuate in sight aboue the *Horizontal*. Thus haue I briefely written vnto your honour, as muche as I thought sufficient at this tyme, and shall shortly hereafter (by Gods fauoure) wryte vnto you more largely of such matters as shalbe dayly better knowen For the Admiral hym selfe (whom I vse fauyerly as my very frende) hath promised me by his letters, that he wyl geue me knowledge of al such thinges as shall chaunce. He hath nowe chosen a strong place where he may build a citie, neare vnto a cōmodious hauen, and hath alredy buylded many houses, and a chapel, in the which (as in a newe worlde heretofore voyde of all religion) God is dayly serued with .xiii. priestes, accordyng to the maner of our churches. When the tyme nowe approched that he promysed to sende to the king and queene, and hauyng prosperous winde for that purpose, sent backe the .xii. Carauelles, wherof we made mention before: which was no smal hynderance and greefe vnto hym, especially consyderyng the death of his men whom he lefte in the ilande at the fyrst voyage, wherby we are yet ignorant of many places and other secretes, wherof we myght otherwyse haue had further knowledge: but as tyme shall reueale them agayne, so wyll I aduertyse you of the same. And that you may the better knowe by conference had with the *Apothecaries* and marchaunt strangers *Sirophenicians*, what this Regions beare, & how hot theyr ground is, I haue sent you all kyndes of graines, with the barke and inner partes of that tree whiche they suppose to be the Cinamome tree. And yf it be your pleasure to taste eyther of the graynes, or of the smal seedes, the whiche you shoulde perceaue to haue fallen from these graynes, or of the wood it

The eleuation of the pole.
The starres are called guardens of the pole.
The Equinoctial line.
A chappell and prieltes.
Marchantes Sinophenicians.
The Cinamome tree.

ſelfe, touch them fyrſt ſoftly, mouyng them to your lyppes, for although they be not hurtfull, yet for theyr exceſſe of heate, they are ſharpe, and byte the tongue yf they remayne any while thereon: but yf the tongue be blyſtered by taſtyng of them, the ſame is taken away by drynkyng of water. Of the corne alſo whereof they make theyr bread, this bringer ſhall deliuer ſome graynes to your lordſhyp, both whyte and blacke, and therwith alſo a trunke of the tree of *Aloes*, the whiche yf you cut in peeces, you ſhall feele a ſweete ſauour to proceede from the ſame. Thus fare you hartily well, from the Court of *Methymna Campi*, the thyrde day before the Calendes of May. *Anno Dom.* 1494.

Xiloaloes, or lignum Aloes.

The thyrde booke of the firſt Decade, to *Lodouike* Cardinall of *Aragonie*, and Neuiewe to the kyng.

YOu deſyre that foolyſhe *Phæton* ſhoulde agayne rule the chariots of the Sunne, and contende to drawe ſweete licours out of the harde flynt, wheras you require me to diſcribe vnto you the newe worlde, found in the weſt by the good fortune and gouernaunce of the Catholique princes *Ferdinandus* and Elizabeth, your Uncle and Aunte, ſhewyng me alſo the letters of kyng *Frederike* your Uncle, writen to me in that behalfe: But ſyth you haue layde this burden on my backe, in whoſe power it is to commaunde me to take vppon me more then I am well able, ye both ſhall receiue this precious ſtone rudely cloſed in lead after my manner of workemanſhyp. Wherefore, when you ſhal perceiue the learned ſort frendly, the malitious enuiouſly, and the backbyters furiouſly, to bende theyr ſlaunderous dartes agaynſt our fayre *Nimphes* of the *Ocean*, you ſhall freely proteſt in howe ſhort tyme, and in the myddeſt of what troubles and calamities you haue enforced me to wryte of the ſame. Thus fare you wel, from *Granata* the nienth day before the Calendes of May.

We haue declared in the booke herebefore, how the Admiral paſſed by the coaſtes of the *Canibales*, to the ilande of *Hiſpaniola* with

Hiſpaniola.

with his whole naule: But nowe we entende further to shewe what he founde as concernyng the nature of this ilande, after that he had better searched the secretes of the same: Lykewyse of the ilande of *Cuba* neare vnto it, whiche he supposed to be the fyrme lande. *Hispaniola* therefore (whiche he affirmeth to be *Ophir*, whereof we reade in the thyrde booke of the kynges) is of latitude fyue south degrees, hauyng the north pole eleuate on the north syde .xxbii. degrees, and on the south syde (as they say) xxii. degrees, it reacheth in length from East to West, seuen hundred and fourescore myles, it is distant from the ilandes of *Gades* (called *Cales*) xlix. degrees, and more, as some say: the fourme of the ilande resembleth the leaffe of a Chesnutte tree. Upon a hygh hyll on the North syde of the ilande, he buylded a citie, because this place was most apt for that purpose, by reason of a myne of stones whiche was neare vnto the same, seruyng well both to buylde with, and also to make Lyme: at the bottome of this hyll, is there a great playne of threescore myles in length, and in breadth somewhere .xii. somewhere .xx. myles where it is brodest, & fyue myles where it is narrowest: through this playne runne diuers fayre ryuers of wholsome waters, but the greatest of them, whiche is nauigable, falleth into the hauen of the citie for the space of halfe a furlong: howe fertile and fruitful this valley is, you shal understande by these thynges whiche folowe. On the shore of this ryuer, they haue ymitted and enclosed certayne ground, to make gardens and orchyardes, in the whiche al kynde of bygger hearbes, as radishe, lettuse, coleworts, borage, & suche other, waxe rype within .xbi dayes after the seede is sowen, lykewyse Melones, Gourdes, Cucumers, and suche other, within the space of .xxbi. dayes, these garden hearbes they haue freshe & greene al the whole yeere. Also the rootes of the canes or reedes of the licour whereof suger is made, growe a cubite hygh within the space of .xv. dayes, but the licour is not yet hardened. The lyke they affirme of plantes or shroudes of young vines, and that they haue the seconde yeere geathered rype and sweete grapes of the same: but by reason of to muche rankenesse they beare but fewe clusters. Furthermore, a man of the countrey sowed a lytle Wheate about the Calendes of Februarye, and brought with hym to the citie an handful

Ophir, whither Solomons shyps sayled for Golde.

Isabella.

A token of marueilous fruitefulnesse.

Hearbes greene al the whole yeere.

Suger reedes, Plantes and vines.

Corne & grayne ripe twyse a yeere.

of the rype eares of the ſame the thyrde day before the calendes of Aprill, which was that yeere the vigile of the Reſurrection of our Lord. Alſo, al kyndes of pulſe, as beanes, peaſon, fytches, tares, & ſuch other, are rype twyſe in the yeere, as al they whiche come from thence affirme with one voyce, yet the grounde is not vniuerſally apte to beare wheate. In the meane tyme whyle theſe thinges were doing, the Admirall ſent out a companye of .xxx. men to ſearche the Region of *Cipanga*, otherwyſe called *Cibana*. This Region is full of mountaynes and rockes: and in the myddle backe of the whole ilande is great plentie of golde. When they that went to ſearche the region were returned, they repoꝛted maruelous thinges as touching the great ryches of this Region. From theſe mountaynes, deſcende foure great ryuers, which by the maruelous induſtrye of nature, diuideth the whole ilande into foure partes, in maner equal, ouerſpꝛeading & wateryng the whole ilande with their bꝛanches. Of theſe foure ryuers, the one reacheth towarde the Eaſte, this the inhabitantes call *Iunna*: another towarde the weſte, and is called *Attibunicus*: the thirde toward the Noꝛth, named *Iachem*: the laſte reacheth into the South, and is called *Naiba*. The day before the Ides of Marche, the Admirall him ſelfe, with al his hoꝛſemen, and foure hundꝛed footemen, marched directly towarde the South ſyde of the golden Region. Thus paſſing ouer the ryuer, the playne, and the mountayne which enuironed the other ſyde of the playne, he chaunced vppon an other vale, with a ryuer much bygger then the fyꝛſte, & many other meane ryuers running thꝛough. When he had alſo conueighed his armye ouer the ryuer, and paſſed the ſeconde vale, which was in no part inferiour to the fyꝛſt, he made away thꝛough the thirde mountaine, where was no paſſage before, and deſcended into another vale, whiche was nowe the begynnyng of *Cibana*. Thꝛough this alſo runne many fluddes and ryuers out of euery hyll, and in the ſandes of them all is founde great plentie of golde. And when he had nowe entred thꝛeeſcoꝛe and twelue myles into the golden Region from the citie, he entended to buylde a foꝛtreſſe vppon the toppe of a hyll, ſtandyng by ý ſhoꝛe of a certayne great ryuer, that he myght the better and moꝛe ſafelye ſearche the ſecretes of the inner partes of the Region: this he called the foꝛtreſſe

The region of Cipanga, oꝛ Cibana.

Golde.

The golden region of Cibana.

The vale of Cibana.

foꝛtreſſe of ſaint Thomas, the whiche in the meane tyme whyle he was buyldyng, the inhabitauntes beyng deſyꝛous of haukes belles, and other of our thinges, reſoꝛted dayly thyther, to whom the Admirall declared, that yf they woulde bꝛyng golde, they ſhoulde haue whatſoeuer they woulde aſke. Foꝛthwith turning theyꝛ backes, and runnyng to the ſhoꝛe of the next riuer, they returned in a ſhoꝛte tyme, bꝛyngyng with them theyꝛ handes ful of golde. Amongſt all other, there came an olde man, bꝛyngyng with him two pibble ſtones of golde, weyghyng an ounce, deſyꝛyng them to geue hym a bell foꝛ the ſame: who when he ſawe our men marueyle at the bygneſſe thereof, he made ſignes that they were but ſmall and of no value in reſpecte of ſome that he had ſeene, and takyng in his hande foure ſtones, the leaſt wheꝛof was as bigge as a Walnut, and the biggeſt as bigge as an Oꝛange, he ſayd that there was founde peeces of golde ſo bygge in his countrey, beyng but halfe a dayes iourney from thence, and that they had no regarde to the geatheryng thereof, wherby we perceiued that they paſſe not muche foꝛ golde, inaſmuche as it is golde only, but ſo farre eſteeme it, as the hande of the Artificer hath faſhioned it in any comely fourme. Foꝛ who dooth greatly eſteeme rough marble, oꝛ vnwrought Iuoꝛie? but if they be wꝛought with the cunning hande of *Phidias* oꝛ *Praxiteles*, and ſhaped to the ſimilitude of ỹ fayꝛe Nimphes oꝛ Faires of the ſea (called *Nereiades*) oꝛ the Fayꝛes of the wooddes (called *Hamadriades*) they ſhal neuer lacke byers. Beſyde this olde man, there came alſo diuers other, bꝛyngyng with them pybble ſtones of golde, weighing .x. oꝛ .xii. dꝛammes, & feared not to confeſſe, that inꝰ place where they geathered that gold, there were found ſomtyme ſtones of golde as bygge as the head of a childe. When he had taried here a few dayes, he ſent one *Luxanus*, a noble yong gentleman, with a few armed men, to ſearch al the partes of this region: who at his returne, repoꝛted that the inhabitants ſhewed him greater thynges then we haue ſpoken of here befoꝛe, but he dyd openly declare nothyng thereof, whiche they thought was done by the Admirals commaundement. They haue woods ful of certayne ſpyces, but not ſuch as we commonly vſe: theſe they geather euen as they do golde, that is, as muche as wyl ſerue foꝛ their purpoſe, euery man foꝛ him ſelfe, to exchange the ſame with

Golde foꝛ haukes bels.

Grapnes and pibble ſtones of golde.

They paſſe not foꝛ golde, in that it is golde onely but. &c.

Stones of golde as big as the head of a childe.

Spices.

the inhabitauntes of other countreys adioyning to them, for such thynges as they lacke, as dyshes, pottes, stooles, and such other necessaries. As *Luxanus* returned to the Admirall (whiche was about the Ides of Marche) he founde in the woods certaine wilde vines, rype, and of pleasant taste, but the inhabitauntes passe not on them. This region, though it be full of stones and rockes (and is therefore called *Cibana*, whiche is as muche to say as a stone) yet it is wel replenyshed with trees and pastures, yea they constantly affirme, that yf ẏ grasse of these mountaynes be cutte, it groweth agayne within the space of foure dayes, hygher then wheate. And forasmuche as many showres of rayne doo fall in this region, whereof the ryuers and flooddes haue theyr encrease, in euery of the whiche golde is founde myxt with sande in all places, they iudge that the golde is dryuen from the mountaynes, by the vehement course of the streames whiche fall from the same, and runne into the ryuers. The people of this region are geuen to idlenesse and play, for suche as inhabite the mountaynes, syt quakyng for colde in the Wynter season, and had rather to wander vp and downe idelly, then take the paynes to make them apparell, where as they haue wooddes full of Gossampine cotton: but suche as dwell in the valles or playnes, feele no colde in Wynter. When the Admirall had thus searched the beginning of the region of *Cibana*, he repayred to *Isabella* (for so he named the citie) where, leauyng the gouernaunce of the Ilande with his deputies, he prepared hym selfe to search further the limittes of the Ilande of *Cuba* or *Iohanna*, whiche he yet doubted to be the firme lande, and distant from *Hispaniola* only .lxx. myles. This dyd he with more speedye expedition, eallyng to remembraunce the kynges commaundement, who wylled hym fyrst with al celeritie, to ouerrunne the coastes of the new Ilandes, lest any other prince shoulde in the meane time attempt to inuade the same, for the kyng of Portugale affirmed that it parteyned only to him to discouer these vnknowen landes: but the bishop of Rome, Alexander the sixt, to auoyde the cause of this dissention, graunted to the kyng of Spayne by the aucthoritie of his leaden bulles, that no other prince shoulde be so bolde, as to make any voyages to any of these vnknowen regions, lying without the precinct of a direct lyne drawen from the North

Wilde vines of pleasaunte taste.

Fruitful mountaynes.

Golde in the lande of ryuers falling from the mountaynes.

Libertie and idlenes: The mountaynes are colde.

The ilande of Cuba.

Least any other prince. &c.

Dissention betweene the Portingales and Spaniardes.

to the South a hundred leagues Westwarde, without the paralels of the Ilandes called *Capud Viride*, or *Cabuerde*, whiche we thinke to be those that in olde tyme were called *Hesperides*: these parteyne to the kyng of Portugale, and from these his Pylotes, whiche do yeerely searche newe coastes and regions, directe theyr course to the East, saylyng euer towarde the left hande by the backe of Aphrike, and the seas of the Ethiopians: neyther to this day had the Portugales at any tyme sayled Southwarde or Westwarde from the Ilandes of *Cabouerde*. Preparing therfore three shyppes, he made haste towarde the Ilande of *Iobanna* or *Cuba*, whyther he came in short space, and named the poynt therof, where he fyrste arryued, *Alpha* and *O*, that is, the fyrste and the last: for he supposed that there had ben the ende of our East, because the sonne falleth there, and of the West, because it ryseth there. For it is apparant, that Westwarde, it is the beginning of *India* beyonde the ryuer of *Ganges*, and Eastwarde, the furthest ende of the same: whiche thyng is not contrary to reason, forasmuche as the Cosmographers haue left the lymittes of *India* beyond *Ganges* vndetermined, where as also some were of opinion, that *India* was not farre from the coastes of Spaine, as we haue said before. Within the prospect of the beginnyng of *Cuba*, he founde a commodious hauen in the extreme angle of the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, for in this part the Ilande receiueth a great goulfe: this hauen he named Saint Nicholas porte, beyng scarcely twentie leagues from *Cuba*. As he departed from hence, and sayled Westward by the South syde of *Cuba*, the further that he went, so muche the more the sea seemed to be extended in breadth, and to bende towarde the South. On the South syde of *Cuba*, he founde an Ilande whiche the inhabitauntes call *Iamaica*, this he affirmeth to be longer & broder then the Iland of *Scicile*, hauyng in it only one mountaine, which on euery part, beginning from the sea, ryseth by litle and litle into the myddest of the Ilande, and that so playnely without roughnesse, that such as goe vp to the toppe of the same, can scarcely perceiue that they assende: This Ilande he affyrmeth to be very fruiteful and ful of people, aswel in thinner partes of the same, as by the shore, and that the inhabitantes are of quicker wytte then in the other Ilandes, and more expert Artificers, and warlyke men: For

The ilandes of cobouerde or Hesperides.

The Portugales viages.

The ende of the easte and weste.

Note. India not far from Spaine.

Sainte Nicolas porte.

The iland of Iamaica.

Quicke witted people.

in many places where he woulde haue aryued, they came armed against him, and forbode him with threatnyng wordes: but beyng ouercome, they made a league of frendshyp with hym. Thus departing from *Iamaica*, he sayled toward the West, with a prosperous wynde, for the space of threescore and tenne dayes, thynking that he had passed so farre by the compasse of the earth being vnderneath vs, that he had ben neare vnto *Aurea Chersonesus* (nowe called *Malaccha*) in our east India, beyonde the begynnyng of *Persides*: for he playnely beleeued that he had left only two of the twelue houres of the sunne, which were vnknowen to vs, for the olde wryters haue left halfe the course of the sunne vntouched, where as they haue but only discussed that superficial parte of the earth whiche lyeth betweene the Ilandes of *Gades*, and the ryuer of *Ganges*, or at the vttermost, to *Aurea Chersonesus*. In this Nauigation, he chaunced on many furious seas, running with a fall as it had ben the streames of floods, also many whyrlepooles, and shelfes, with many other dangers, and strayghtes, by reason of the multitude of ilandes whiche lay on euery syde. But not regardyng al these perylles, he determined to proceede, vntil he had certaine knowledge whether *Cuba* were an ilande, or firme lande. Thus he sayled forward, coastyng euer by the shore toward the West for the space of. CC. xxii. leagues, that is, about a thousande and three hundred myles, and gaue names to seuen hundred ilandes by the way, leauyng also on the left hande (as he feared not to report) three thousande here and there. But let vs nowe returne to suche thynges as he founde woorthy to be noted in this nauigation. Saylyng therefore by the syde of *Cuba*, and searchyng the nature of the places, he espyed not farre from *Alpha* and *O* a large hauen, of capacitie to harborowe many shyppes, whose entraunce is bendyng, beyng inclosed on both sydes with capes or poyntes whiche receiue the water: this hauen is large within, and of exceedyng deapth. Saylyng by the shore of this porte, he sawe not farre from the same, two cotages, couered with reedes, and in many places fyre kyndled. Here he sent certayne armed men out of the shyppes to the cotages, where they founde neyther man nor woman, but rostemeate yenough, for they founde certayne spyttes of wood lying at the fyre, hauyng fyshe on them about a hundred

pounde

The compassing of the earth.

Aurea Chersonesus, or Malaccha.

A secreate of Astronomie.

The riuer of Ganges.

Daungerous streightes by reason of many Ilandes.

A large hauen.

Rosted fishe and serpents of viii. foote longe.

pounde weight, and two ſerpentes of eyght foote long apeece: whereat marueylyng, and lookyng about if they could eſpye any of the inhabitauntes, and that none appeared in ſyght (for they fledde al to the mountaynes at the commyng of our men) they fel to theyr meate, and ate the fyſhe taken with other mens trauayle, but they abſteyned from the ſerpentes, which they affirme to differ nothing from the Crocodiles of Egypt, but only in bygneſſe: for (as *Plinie* ſayth) Crocodiles haue ſometymes ben found of .xviii. cubits long, but of theſe the biggeſt were but of eyght foote. Thus being wel refreſhed, they entred into the next wood, where they found many of the ſame kynde of ſerpentes, hanging vpon boughes of trees, of the whiche, ſome had theyr mouthes tyed with ſtrynges, and ſome theyr teeth taken out. And as they ſearched the places neare vnto the hauen, they ſawe about. lxx. men in the top of a hygh rocke, whiche fled as ſoone as they had eſpyed our men, who by ſignes and tokens of peace callyng them agayne, there was one which came neare them, and ſtoode on the toppe of a rocke, ſeemyng as though he were yet fearefull: but the Admiral ſent one *Didacus* to hym, a man of the ſame countrey, whom he had at his fyrſte voyage taken in the ilande of *Guanahaini*, being neare vnto *Cuba*, wyllyng hym to come neare, and not to be afraide. When he hearde *Didacus* ſpeake to hym in his owne tongue, he came boldly to hym, and ſhortly after reſorted to his company, perſwading them to come without al feare. After this meſſage was done, there deſſended from the rockes to the ſhyps, about threeſcore and ten of the inhabitantes, profering frendſhip and gentleneſſe to our men: whiche the Admiral accepted thankfully, and gaue them diuers rewardes, and that the rather, for that he had intelligence by *Didacus* the interpreter, that they were the kynges fyſhers, ſent of theyr lorde to take fyſhe agaynſt a ſolemne feaſt whiche he prepared for another kyng. And whereas the Admiralles men had eaten the fyſhe whiche they lefte at the fyre, they were the gladder therof, becauſe they had lefte the ſerpentes: for there is nothing among theyr delicate dyſſhes, that they eſteeme ſo muche as theſe ſerpentes, in ſo muche that it is no more lawfull for common people to eate of them, then Peacockes or Phe-

Crocodiles of Egipte.

The kinges fiſhers.

Serpentes eſteemed for delicate meate

as many moze the ſame nyght. Beyng alked why they fyrſte roſted the fyſhe whiche they entended to beare to theyr kyng: they anſweared, that they myght be the freſher and vncorrupted. Thus ioynyng handes for a token of further frendſhyp, euerye man reſorted to his owne. The Admirall went forwarde as he had appoynted, folowyng the fallyng of the ſunne from the beginning of *Cuba*, called *Alpha* and *O*: the ſhores or ſea bankes euen vnto this hauen, albeit they be full of trees, yet are they rough with mountaines: of theſe trees, ſome were full of bloſſomes and flowres, and other laden with fruites. Beyonde the hauen, the lande is more fertile and populus, whoſe inhabitantes are more gentle, and more deſyrous of our thynges: for as ſoone as they had eſpied our ſhyppes, they flocked all to the ſhore, bryngyng with them ſuche bread as they are accuſtomed to eate, and gourdes full of water, offeryng them vnto our men, and further, deſyryng them to come alande. In al theſe Ilandes is a certaine kinde of trees as bigge as Elmes, whiche beare Gourdes in the ſteade of fruites, theſe they vſe only for drynkyng pottes, and to fetche water in, but not for meate, for the inner ſubſtance of them is ſowrer then gall, and the barke as harde as any ſhell. At the Ides of May, the watchmen lookyng out of the top caſtle of the ſhyp, towarde the South, ſawe a multitude of Ilandes ſtandyng thycke togeather, being al wel repleniſhed with trees, graſſe, and hearbes, and well inhabited: in the ſhore of the continent, he chaunced into a nauigable riuer, whoſe water was ſo hot, that no man might endure to abyde his hande therein anye time. The day folowing, eſpying a farre of a *Canoa* of fyſhermen of the inhabitantes, fearyng leſt they ſhoulde ſee at the ſyght of our men, he commaunded certayne to aſſayle them priuily with the ſhip boates: but they fearing nothing, taryed the commyng of our men. Nowe ſhall you heare a newe kynde of fyſhyng. Lyke as we with Greyhoundes do hunt Hares in the playne feeldes, ſo doo they, as it were with a hunting fiſhe, take other fiſhes: this fyſhe was of ſhape or fourme vnknowen vnto vs, but the bodye thereof not muche vnlyke a great yeele, hauyng on the hynder parte of the head a very tough ſkynne, lyke vnto a great bagge or purſe: this fyſhe is tyed by the ſyde of the boate with a corde, let downe ſo farre into the water, that the fiſhe may

Moſſomes & fruites both at one time.

Trees which beare gourds.

A multitude of Ilandes.

Hotte water.

A ſtraunge kinde of fiſhing.

may lye cloſe hid by the keele or bottome of the ſame, for ſhe may in no caſe abyde the ſyght of the ayre. Thus when they eſpye any great fyſhe, or Tortoyſe (wherof there is great abundance, bygger then great targettes) they let the corde at length, but when ſhe feeleth her ſelfe looſed, ſhe inuadeth the fyſhe or Tortoyſe as ſwiftly as an arrowe, and where ſhe hath once faſtened her holde, ſhe caſteth the purſe of ſkynne, whereof we ſpake before, and by drawyng the ſame togeather, ſo graſpeleth her pray, that no mans ſtrength is ſuffycient to vnlooſe the ſame, excepte by lytle and lytle drawyng the lyne, ſhe be lyfted ſomwhat aboue the brymme of the water, for then, as ſone as ſhe ſeeth the brightneſſe of the ayre, ſhe letteth goe her holde. The praye therfore beyng nowe drawen nere to the brymme of the water, there leapeth ſodenly out of the boate into the ſea, ſo manye fyſhers as may ſuffice to holde faſt the praye, vntyll the reſt of the company haue taken it into the boate. Whiche thyng doone, they looſe ſo muche of the corde, that the huntyng fyſhe may agayne returne to her place within the water, where by an other corde, they let downe to her a peece of the pray, as we vſe to rewarde greyhoundes after they haue kylled theyr game. This fyſhe, they cal *Guaicanum*, but our men cal it *Reuerſum*. They gaue our men foure Tortoyſes taken by this meanes, and thoſe of ſuche byggeneſſe, that they almoſt fylled theyr fyſhyng boate: for theſe fyſhes are eſteemed among them for delycate meate. Our men recompenſed them agayne with other rewardes, and ſo let them depart. Beyng aſked of the compaſſe of that lande, they aunſweared that it had no ende weſtwarde. Moſt inſtantly they deſyred the Admirall to come a lande, or in his name to ſende one with them to ſalute theyr *Cazicus*, (that is) their kyng, affirmyng that he woulde geue our men many preſentes, yf they would goe to hym. But the Admirall, leſt he ſhoulde be hindered of the voyage whiche he had begunne, refuſed to goe with them. Then they deſyred to knowe his name, and tolde our men lykewiſe the name of theyr king. Thus ſayling on yet further euer towarde the Weſt, within fewe dayes he came nere vnto a certayne exceedyng high mountayne, wel inhabyted by reaſon of the great fertilitie of the ſame. Thinhabitauntes of this mountaine, brought to our ſhyp, bread, goſſampine cotton, cunnies, & ſundry

Abundance of Tortoyſes.

Fiſher men.

The fiſhe Guaicanum.

Humane people.

A mountayne fruitfull and well inhabited.

kyndes

kyndes of wyldfoule, demaundyng relygiouſly of thinterpre-
tours, if this nation deſcended not from heauen. The kyng of
this people, and dyuers other ſage men that ſtoode by him, infor-
med hym that that lande was no Ilande. Shortly after, entring
into one of the ilandes being on the lefte hande of this lande,
they founde no body therin, for they fledde al at the comming of
our men: Yet founde they there foure dogges of maruelous de-
formed ſhape, & ſuche as coulde not barke. This kynd of doggs,
they eate as we do goates. Here is great plentie of geeſe, duckes,
and hearons. Betwene theſe ilandes and the continent, he en-
tered into ſo narowe ſtreyghtes, that he coulde ſcarſely turne
backe the ſhyppes, and theſe alſo ſo ſhalowe, that the keele of the
ſhyppes ſomtyme raſed on the ſandes. The water of theſe ſtrey-
ghtes, for the ſpace of fourtie myles, was white and thycke, lyke
vnto mylke, and as though meale had ben ſparkeled throughout
al that ſea. And when they had at the length eſcaped theſe ſtray-
ghtes, and were nowe come into a mayne and large ſea, and had
ſayled theron for the ſpace of foureſcore myles, they eſpyed an o-
ther exceding hygh mountayne, whyther the Admirall reſorted
to ſtore his ſhyppes with freſhe water and fuel. Heare among
certayne wooddes of Date trees, & pyneapple trees of excedyng
height, he founde two natiue ſprynges of freſhe water. In the
meane tyme, whyle the woodde was cuttyng, and the barrelles
fyllyng, one of our archers went into the wood to hunt, where
he eſpyed a certayne man with a whyte veſture, ſo lyke a fryer of
thorder of ſaynt Marye of *Mercedis*, that at the fyrſte ſight he
ſuppoſed it had ben the Admirals prieſt, which he brought with
hym, beyng a man of the ſame order: but two other folowed him
immediatlye out of the ſame wooddes. Shortly after, he ſawe a
farre of a whole company of men clothed in apparel, being about
xxx. in number. Then turning his backe, and crying out to his
felowes, he made haſte to the ſhyppes with all that he myght
dryue. Theſe apparelled men, made ſygnes and tokens to hym
to tary, and not to be afrayd, but that notwithſtandyng he ceaſſed
not to flee. The Admirall beyng aduertyſed hereof, and not
a lytle reioycyng that he had founde a ciuile people, in-
continently ſent fooryth armed men, with commaundement
that yf neede ſhould ſo requyre, they ſhoulde enter fourtie myles

Dogges of ſtrange ſhape and dumme

white and chicke water.

Wooddes of date trees.

Men apparelled like white fryers.

Apparelled men.

into

into the ſlande, vntyl they myght fynde eyther thoſe apparelled men, or other inhabitauntes of that countrey. When they had paſſed ouer the wood, they came into a great playne ful of graſſe and hearbes, in whiche appeared no token of any pathway. Here attemptyng to goe thyough the graſſe and hearbes, they were ſo entangled and bewrapt therein, that they were ſcarſelye able to paſſe a myle, the graſſe beyng there lytle lower then our ripe corne: beyng therefore weeryed, they were enforced to returne agayne, finding no pathway. The day folowyng he ſent foorth xxv. armed men another way, commaundyng them to make diligent ſearch and inquiſition what manner of people inhabited the lande: Who departyng, when they had found, not farre from the ſea ſide, certayne ſteps of wyld beaſtes, of the which they ſuſpected ſome to be of Lions feete, beyng ſtrycken with feare, returned backe agayne. As they came, they founde a wood in the whiche were many natiue vines, here and there creepyng about hygh trees, with many other trees bearyng aromatical fruites and ſpyces. Of theſe vines they brought with them into Spaine many cluſters of grapes, very ponderous, and ful of licour: but of the other fruites they brought none, becauſe they putrified by the way in the ſhyp, & were caſt into the ſea. They ſay alſo that in the landes or medowes of thoſe wooddes, they ſawe flockes of great Cranes, twyſe as bygge as ours. As he went forward, and turned his ſayles towarde certayne other mountaynes, he eſpied two cotages on the ſhore, in the whiche he ſawe only one man, who being brought to the ſhippe, ſignified with head, fyngers, and by al other ſignes that he coulde deuiſe, that the lande whiche lay beyonde thoſe mountaynes was very full of people: and as the Admiral drew neare the ſhore of the ſame, there met him certayne *Canoas*, hauyng in them many people of the countrey, who made ſignes and tokens of peace and frendſhyp. But here *Didacus* the interpretour, which vnderſtoode the language of thinhabitantes of the beginning of *Cuba*, vnderſtode not them one whit, whereby they conſydered that in ſundry prouinces of *Cuba*, were ſundry languages. He had alſo intelligence, that in the inlande of this region was a king of great power, & accuſtomed to weare apparell: he ſayde that all the tracte of this ſhore was drowned with water, and ful of mudde, beſette with mauye trees,

Natiue vines. Trees bearyng ſpices & ſweete fruites.

Diuers languages in the Ilande of Cuba.

Pearles in thel fyshes.

after the maner of our marysshes: Yet whereas in this place they went alande for freshe water, they founde many of the ll el fyshes in the whiche pearles are geathered. But that coulde not cause the Admirall to tracte the tyme there, entending at this viage, only to proue howe many landes & seas he could discouer according to the kinges commaundement. As they yet proceded forwarde, they sawe here and there, al the way along by the shore, a great smoke rysing, vntyll they came to an other mountayne foure score myles distant. there was no rocke or hyll that couloe be seene, but the same was all of a smoke. But whether these fyres were made by thinhabitantes for their necessary busynes, or (as we are wont to sette beacons on fyre when we suspecte thapproche of our enimies) thereby to geue warning to theyr neyghbours to be in a redines, & geather togeather, if perhaps our men shoulde attempt any thyng against them, or otherwyse as (seemeth most lykely) to cal them togeather, as to a wonder, to beholde our shyppes, they knowe yet no certentie. In this tracte, the shores bended somtyme towarde the South, and sometyme towarde the West and west southwest, and the sea was euerye where entangled with Ilandes, by reason whereof, the keeles of the shyppes often times rased the sandes for shalownesse of the water: So that the shyppes being very sore bruised and appayred, the sayles, cables, and other tackelinges, in maner rotten, and the vytailes (especially the biskette bread) corrupted by takyng water at the ryftes eupll closed, the Admirall was enforced to turne backe agayne: This laste poynte where he touched of *Cuba* (not yet being knowen to be an ilande) he called *Euangelista*. Thus turning his sayles towarde other ilandes lying not farre from the supposed continent, he chaunced into a mayne sea, where was suche a multitude of great Tortoyses, that somtyme they stayed the shyppes: Not long after, he entred into a gulfe of whyte water, lyke vnto that wherof we spake before. At the length, fearing the shelfes of the ilands, he returned to the shore of *Cuba* by the same way whiche he came. Here a multitude of thinhabitantes, as well women as men, resorted to hym with cheerefull countenances, and with feare, bringyng with them popingayes, bread, water, and cunnyes, but especially stocke doues, much bygger then ours, which he affirmeth, in sauour and taste,

The sea entangled with Ilandes.

A multitude of great Tortoyses.

A gulfe of white water.

taſte, to be muche moꝛe pleaſaunt then our partryches. Wherefoꝛe where as in eating of them he perceiued a certayne ſauoure of ſpyce to proceede from them, he commaunded the croppe to be opened of ſuche as were newely kylled, and founde the ſame full of ſweete ſpyces, whiche he argued to be the cauſe of theyꝛ ſtrange taſte: Foꝛ it ſtandeth with good reaſon, that the fleſhe of beaſtes, ſhoulde dꝛawe the nature and qualitie of theyꝛ accuſtomed nouryſhment. As the Admirall harde maſſe on the ſhoꝛe, there came towarde hym a certayne gouernoure, a man of foure ſcoꝛe yeeres of age, and of great grauitie, although he were naked ſauing his pꝛyuie partes. He had a great trayne of men wayting on hym. All the whyle the pꝛieſte was at maſſe, he ſhewed him ſelfe very humble, and gaue reuerent attendance, with graue and demure countenaunce. When the maſſe was ended, he pꝛeſented to the Admirall a baſkette of the fruites of his countrey, delyuering the ſame with his owne handes. When the Admirall had gentelly entertayned him, deſyꝛing leaue to ſpeake, he made an oꝛation in the pꝛeſence of *Didacus* the interpꝛeter, to this effect. I haue byn aduertiſed (moſt mighty pꝛince) that you haue of late with great power ſubdued many lands and Regions, hytherto vnknowen to you, and haue bꝛought no litle feare vppon all the people and inhabitauntes of the ſame: the whiche (foꝛ your good foꝛtune) you ſhal beare with leſſe inſolencie, if you remember that the ſoules of men haue two iourneyes after they are departed from this body: The one, foule and darke, pꝛepared foꝛ ſuche as are iniurious and cruell to mankynde: the other, pleaſaunt and delectable, oꝛdeyned foꝛ them which in theyꝛ lyfe tyme loued peace and quietnes. Iſtherfoꝛe you acknowledge your ſelfe to be moꝛtall, and conſider that euery man ſhal receiue condigne rewarde oꝛ punyſhement foꝛ ſuche thynges as he hath done in this life, you wyl wꝛongfully hurte no man. When he had ſaide theſe woꝛdes and other lyke, which were declared to the Admirall by the interpꝛeter, he marueyling at the iudgement of the naked olde man, anſweared, that he was gladdo to heare his opinion as touching the ſundꝛy iourneys and rewardes of ſoules departed from theyꝛ bodyes, ſuppoſing that nother he, oꝛ any other of thinhabitantes of thoſe Regions, had had any knowledge thereof: declaring further, that the chiefe cauſe of his

The humanitie of a reuerende olde gouernoure.

An oꝛation of the naked gouernour.

Theyꝛ opinion of the ſoule of man.

comming

Despyse of gold, founde that which religion coulde not fynde. *Virtus post nummos. &c.*

comming thither, was to instruct them in such godly knowledge and true religion: and that he was sent into those countreyes by the Christian kyng of Spayne (his lord and maister) for the same purpose, and specially to subdue and punyshe the *Canibales*, and suche other mischeuous people, and to defend innocentes against the violence of euyl doers, wyllyng hym, and al other suche as imbraced vertue, in no case to be afrayde, but rather to open his mynde vnto hym, yf eyther he, or any other suche quiet men as he was, had susteyned any wrong of theyr neyghbours, and that he woulde see the same reuenged. These comfortable words of the Admirall so pleased the olde man, that notwithstandyng his extreme age, he woulde gladly haue gone with the Admiral, as he had done in deede, yf his wyfe and chyldren had not hyndered hym of his purpose: but he marueyled not a lytle, that the Admiral was vnder the dominion of another: and much more, when the interpretour tolde hym of the glorye, magnificence, pompe, great power, and furnimentes of warre of our kinges, and of the multitudes of cities and townes whiche were vnder theyr dominions. Intendyng therefore to haue gone with the Admirall, his wyfe and chyldren fell prostrate at his feete, with teares desyring him not to forsake them and leaue them desolate: at whose pitiful requestes, the worthy olde man beyng mooued, remayned at home to the comfort of his people and familie, satisfyng rather them then hym selfe: for not yet ceassyng to woonder, and of heauie countenance because he myght not depart, he demaunded oftentymes yf that lande were not heauen, whiche brought forth suche a kynde of men? For it is certaine, that among them the lande is as common as the sunne and water, and that Myne and Thyne (the seedes of all myscheefe) haue no place with them. They are content with so lytle, that in so large a countrey they haue rather superfluitie then scarcenesse: so that (as we haue sayde before) they seeme to lyue in the golden worlde without toyle, lyuyng in open gardens, not intrenched with dyches, diuided with hedges, or defended with walles: they deale trnely one with another without lawes, without bookes, and without iudges: they take hym for an euyl and mischeuous man, whiche taketh pleasure in dooyng hurt to other. And albeit that they delyte not in superfluities, yet make they

The lande as common as the sunne and water.

they prouision for the increase of suche rootes whereof they make they breade, as *Maizium*, *Iucca*, and *Ages*, contented with suche symple dyet, whereby health is preserued, and diseases auoyded. Simple dyet.

The Amirall therefore departyng from thence, and myndyng to returne agayne shortly after, chaunced to come agayne to the Ilande of *Iamaica*, beyng on the south syde thereof, and coasted all along by the shore of the same from the West to the East, from whose last corner on the East syde, when he sawe towarde the North syde on his left hande certayne hygh mountaynes, he knewe at the length that it was the south syde of the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, whiche he had not yet passed by. Wherefore, at the Calendes of September, entryng into the hauen of the same Ilande, called saint Nicholas hauen, he repayred his shyppes, to the intent that he might agayne waste and spoyle the Ilandes of the *Canibales*, and burne all theyr *Canoas*, that those rauenyng wolues might no longer persecute and deuoure the innocent sheepe: but he was at this tyme hyndered of his purpose, by reason of a disease which he had gotten by to much watching. Thus beyng feeble and weake, he was ledde of the Maryners to the citie of *Isabella*, where, with his two brethren whiche were there, and other of his familiars, he recouered his health in shorte space: yet coulde he not at this tyme assayle the *Canibales*, by reason of sedition that was risen of late among the Spanyardes whiche he had left in *Hispaniola*, whereof we wyll speake more hereafter. Thus fare ye well.

Hispaniola.

The Canibales.

Sickenesse of to much Watching.

The fourth booke of the first Decade, to *Lodouike* Cardinal of *Aragonie*.

COlonus the Admiral of the Ocean, returning (as he supposed) from the continent or fyrme lande of East *India*, had aduertisment that his brother *Boilus*, and one *Peter Margarita*, an olde familiar of the kynges, and a noble man, with diuers other of those to whom he had left the gouernment of the Ilande, were (of corrupted mynde agaynst hym) departed into Spayne. Wherefore, aswel to purge hym selfe of suche crimes, as

East India.

The Spaniardes rebell in the Admirals absence.

as they ſhould lay to his charge, as alſo to make a ſupply of other men in the place of them whiche were returned, and eſpeciallye to prouide for vyttualles, as wheate, wine, oyle, and ſuche other, whiche the Spanyardes are accuſtomed to eate, becauſe they coulde not yet well agree with ſuch meates as they founde in the Ilandes, determined ſhortly to take his voyage into Spayne: but what he dyd before his departure, I wyll breefely rehearſe.

The kinges of the ilande rebell.

The kynges of the Ilandes which had hytherto lyued quietly, and content with theyr lytle whiche they thought aboundant, wheras they nowe perceiued that our men began to faſten foote within theyr regions, & to beare rule among them, they toke the matter ſo greeuouſly, that they thought nothyng els but by what meanes they myght vtterlye deſtroy them, and for euer abolyſhe the memory of theyr name, for that kinde of men (the Spanyardes I meane, which folowed the Admiral in that nauigation) were for the moſte part vnruly, regarding nothyng but idleneſſe, play, and libertie, and woulde by no meanes abſteyne from iniuries, rauiſhing of the women of the Ilandes before the faces of their huſbandes, fathers, and brethren: by which theyr abominable myſdemeanour, they diſquieted the myndes of all the inhabitantes, inſomuche that whereſoeuer they founde any of our men vnprepared, they ſlue them with ſuch fierceneſſe and gladneſſe, as though they had offered ſacrifice to God. Intendyng therfore to pacifie theyr troubled myndes, and to punyſhe them that ſlue his men before he departed from thence, he ſent for the king of that vale, whiche in the booke before we deſcribed to be at the foote of the mountaynes of the region of *Cibana*, this kynges name was *Guarionexius*: who, the more ſtrayghtly to concyle vnto hym the frendſhyp of the Admirall, gaue his ſyſter to wyfe to *Didacus*, a man from his chyldes age brought vp with the Admirall, whom he vſed for his interpreter in the prouinces of *Cuba*. After this, he ſent for *Caunaboa*, called the lorde of the houſe of golde, that is, of the mountaynes of *Cibana*: For this *Caunaboa* he ſent one Captayne *Hoieda*, whom the dittionaries of *Caunaboa* had enforced to keepe his holde, beſieging for the ſpace of thirtie dayes the fortreſſe of ſaint Thomas, in the whiche *Hoieda* with his fyftie ſouldiers ſtoode at theyr defence, vntyll the comming of the Admirall. Whyle *Hoieda* remayned with *Caunaboa*, ma-

The Spaniſh ardes miſbehauiour.

A iuſt reuenge.

Capitayne Hoieda.

nye ambassadours of the kynges of diuers regions were sent to *Caunaboa*, perswading him in no condition to permit the Christians to inhabite the Ilande, except he had rather serue then rule. On the other partie, *Hoieda* aduertised *Caunaboa* to goe to the Admiral, and to make a league of frendshyp with hym: but the ambassadours on the contrary part, threatned hym, that if he woulde so doo, the other kynges woulde inuade his region. But *Hoieda* aunswered them agayne, that whereas they conspired to mayntayne theyr libertie, they should by that meanes be brought to seruitude & destruction, if they entended to resist or kepe warre against the Christians. Thus *Caunaboa* on the one side and the other beyng troubled, as it were a rocke in the sea beaten with contrary flooddes, and muche more vexed with the stormes of his gyltie conscience, for that he had priuily slayne. xx. of our men vnder pretence of peace, feared to come to the Admirall: but at the length, hauyng excogitated his deceyt, to haue slayne the Admirall and his companye, vnder the colour of frendshyp, yf opportunitie would so haue serued, he repayred to ỹ Admiral, with his whole familie, and many other wayting on him, armed after theyr manner. Beyng demaunded why he brought so great a rout of men with him, he aunswered, that it was not decent for so great a prince as he was, to goe out of his house without suche a bande of men: but the thyng chaunced muche otherwyse then he looked for, for he fell into the snares whiche he had prepared for other, for whereas by the way he began to repent hym that he came fooryth of his house, *Hoieda* with many fayre woordes & promises brought him to the Admiral, at whose commaundement he was immediatly taken and put in prison, so that the soules of our men were not long from theyr bodyes vnreuenged. Thus *Caunaboa* with al his familie beyng taken, the Admirall was determined to runne ouer the Ilande, but he was certified that there was suche famine among the inhabitauntes, that there was alredy fyftie thousande men dead thereof, and that they dyed yet dayly, as it were rotten sheepe, the cause whereof, was wel knowen to be theyr owne obstinacie and frowardnesse: for wheras they sawe that our men entended to choose them a dwelling place in the Ilande, supposing that they myght haue dryuen them from thence if the vittualles of the Ilande should fayle,

Caunaboa conspireth the Admirals death.

Famine in the ilande of Hispaniola.

The hunger of golde cauſeth greate famine.

they determined with them ſelues, not only to leaue ſowyng and plantyng, but alſo to deſtroy and plucke vp by the rootes, euery man in his owne region, that whiche they had alredy ſowen, of both kyndes of bread, whereof we made mention in the firſte booke, but eſpecially among the mountaynes of *Cibana*, otherwyſe called *Cipanga*, foraſmuche as they had knowledge that the golde whiche aboundeth in that region, was the chiefe cauſe that deteyned our men in the Iland. In the meane tyme, he ſent forth a Captayne with a bande of men, to ſearche the South ſyde of the Iſlande, who at his returne, reported that throughout all the regions that he trauayled, there was ſuche ſcarceneſſe of bread, that for the ſpace of. xvi. dayes, he ate nothyng but the rootes of hearbes, and of young date trees, or the fruites of other wylde trees: but *Guarionexius* the kyng of the vale, lying beneath the mountaynes of *Cibana*, whoſe kyngdome was not ſo waſted as the other, gaue our men certayne vyttualles. Within a fewe dayes after, both that the iourneys myght be the ſhorter, and alſo that our men myght haue more ſafe places of refuge, if the inhabitauntes ſhoulde hereafter rebell in lyke manner, he buylded another fortreſſe (whiche he called the Towre of Conception) betweene the Citie of *Iſabella*, and Saint Thomas fortreſſe, in the marches of the kyngdome of this *Guarionexius*, within the precincte of *Cibana*, vpon the ſyde of a hyll, hauyng a fayre riuer of holſome water runnyng harde by the ſame. Thus when the inhabitantes ſawe newe buyldinges to be dayly erected, and our ſhippes lying in the hauen rotten and halfe broken, they began to diſpayre of any hope of libertie, and wandred vp and downe with heauie cheare. From the Towre of Conception, ſearchyng diligentlye the inner partes of the mountaynes of *Cibana*, there was a certayne kyng whiche gaue them a maſſe of rude golde as bigge as a mans fyſt, weighing. xx. ounces: this golde was not founde in the banke of that riuer, but in a heape of dyrte earth, and was lyke vnto the ſtone called *Tophus*, whiche is ſoone reſolued into ſande. This maſſe of golde I mee ſelfe ſawe in Caſtile, in the famous Citie of *Methymna Campi*, where the Court lay al that wynter. I ſawe alſo a great peece of pure *Electrum*, of the which belles, and Apothecaries morters, & many ſuche other veſſelles and inſtrumentes may be made, as were in

The tower of conception.

olde

olde tyme of copper the citie of *Corinthus*. This peece of *Electrum* was of suche weight, that I was not only with both my handes vnable to lift it from the ground, but also not of strength to remoue it eyther one way or other: they affirmed that it weyed more then three hundred pounde weyght, after eyght ounces to the pounde, it was founde in the house of a certayne prynce, and left hym by his predecessours: and albeit that in the dayes of the inhabitauntes yet lyuyng, *Electrum* was no where digged, yet knewe they where the myne thereof was, but our men with muche adoo coulde hardely cause them to shewe them the place, they bore them suche priuie hatred, yet at the length they brought them to the myne, beyng now ruinate and stopped with stones and rubbyshe: it is muche easyer to dygge then is the iron myne, and might be restored agayne, yf myners and other workmen skylful therein were appointed thereto. Not farre from the towne of Conception, in the same mountaynes, is founde great plentie of Amber, and out of certaine rockes of the same, distilleth a substance of the yelowe colour whiche the Paynters vse. Not farre from these mountaynes are many great woods, in the whiche are none other trees then Brasile, which the Italians cal *Verzino*. But here perhaps (right noble prynce) you woulde aske, what should be the cause, that where as the Spanyardes haue brought out of these Islandes certayne shyppes laden with Brasile, somewhat of Gossampine cotton, a quantitie of Amber, a lytle golde, & some spyces, why they haue not brought suche plentie of golde, and suche other ryche marchaundizes, as the fruitefulnesse of these regions seeme to promyse? To this I aunswere, that when *Colonus* the Admirall was lykewyse demaunded the cause hereof, he made aunswere, that the Spanyardes whiche he tooke with hym into these regions, were geuen rather to sleepe, play, and idlenesse, then to labour, and were more studious of sedition and newes, then desirous of peace and quietnesse: also, that being geuen to licenciousnesse, they rebelled & forsooke him, findyng matter of false accusation against hym, because he went about to represse theyr outragiousnesse: by reason whereof, he was not yet able to breake the power of the inhabitauntes, and freelye to possesse the full dominion of the Islande, and these hynderaunces to be the cause that hytherto

Electrum is a metall naturally mixt of one portion of golde, & an other of siluer, being of property to bewraye poyson, and was therfore in olde time in greater estimation then golde.

The mine of Electrum.

An other kinde of amber is taken out of greate whale fishes.

Oyement or oker.

Woodes of brasile trees.

Licentiusnes of to much libertie.

And this only geathered, and not dygged out of the bodye of the mine.

therto the gaynes haue scarsely counteruayled the charges: albeit, euen this yeere whyle I wrote these thyngs at your request, they geathered in two monethes the summe of a thousande and two hundred poundes weyght of gold. But because we entende to speake more largely of these thynges in theyr place, we wyll nowe returne from whence we haue digressed. When the inhabitauntes perceiued that they coulde by no meanes shake the yoke from theyr necks, they made humble supplication to the Admiral, that they myght stande to theyr tribute, and applye themselues to reincrease the fruites of theyr countrey, beyng nowe almost wasted. He graunted them theyr request, and appoynted suche order that euery region shoulde pay theyr tribute, with the commodities of theyr countreys, accordyng to theyr portion, and at suche tyme as they were agreed vpon: but the violent famine did frustrate al these appoyntmentes, for al the trauayles of theyr bodyes, were scarcelye able to suffise to fynde them meate in the wooddes, whereby to susteyne theyr lyues, beyng of long tyme contented with rootes and the fruites of wylde trees: yet many of the kynges with theyr people, euen in this extreme necessitie, brought part of theyr tribute, most humblye desyryng the Admiral to haue compassion of their calamities, and to beare with them yet a whyle, vntyl the Ilande were restored to the olde state, promysyng further, that that whiche was nowe wantyng, shoulde then be double recompenced. But fewe of the inhabitauntes of the mountaynes of *Cibaua* kept theyr promise, because they were sorer oppressed with famine then anye of the other. They say that the inhabitantes of these mountaynes dyffer no lesse in language and manners from them whiche dwel in the playnes, then among vs the rusticalles of the countrey, from the gentlemen of the courte: wheras notwithstanding they lyue as it were both vnder one portion of heauen, and in many thinges much after one fashion, as in nakednesse, and rude simplicitie. But nowe let vs returne to *Caunaboa* the king of the house of golde, beyng in captiuitie. When he perceiued hym selfe to be cast in prison, frettyng and gratyng his teeth, as it had been a Lion of *Libia*, and dayly and nyghtly deuysyng with hym selfe howe he myght be delyuered, beganne to perswade the Admiral, that forasmuche as he had nowe taken vnto his

The nature of the region disposeth the maner of the people.

Kyng Caunaboa in captiuitie.

dominion

dominion the region of *Cipanga* or *Cibaua* (wherof he was king) it shoulde be expedient to sende thyther a garrison of Christian men, to defende the same from the incursions of his olde enimies and borderers: for he sayde, that it was signified vnto him, that the countrey was wasted and spoyled with suche incursions. By this craftie deuise, he thought to haue brought to passe, that his brother whiche was in that region, and the other his kynsfolkes and frendes with theyr adherentes, should haue taken, eyther by sleight or force, as many of our men as myght haue redeemed hym. But the Admiral vnderstandyng his craftie meanyng, sent *Hoieda* with suche a companye of men, as myght vanquishe the *Cibauians*, yf they shoulde moue warre agaynst them. Our men had scarcelye entred into the region, but the brother of *Caunaboa* came agaynst them with an armie of fyue thousande naked men, armed after theyr manner, with clubbes, arrowes tipt with bones, and speares made harde at the endes with fyre. He stole vpon our men beyng in one of theyr houses, and encamped roumde about the same on euery syde. This *Cibauian*, as a man not ignorant in the discipline of warre, about the distaunce of a furlong from the house, diuided his armie into fyue battayles, appoyntyng to euery one of them a circuite by equall diuision, and placed the froont of his owne battayle directly agaynst our men. When he had thus set his battayles in good aray, he gaue certayne signes that ỹ whole armie should marche forwarde in order with equall paces, and with a larome freshly assayle theyr enimies, in such sort that none might escape. But our men iudging it better to encountre with one of the battayles, then to abyde the brunt of the whole armie, gaue onset on the mayne battayle aranged in the playne, because that place was most commodious for the horsmen. When the horsmen therefore had geuen the charge, they ouerthrewe them with the brestes of theyr horses, and slue as many as abode the ende of the fight, the residue beyng strycken with feare, disparcled, and fledde to the mountaynes and rockes: from whence they made a pitifull howlyng to our men, desyryng them to spare them, protestyng that they woulde neuer more rebell, but doo what so euer they woulde commaund them, yf they woulde suffer them to lyue in theyr owne countrey. Thus the brother of *Caunaboa*

Caunaboa his brother rebelleth.

A conflict betwene the Cibauians and the Spaniards.

beyng taken, the Admiral licenced the people to resort euerye man to his owne: these thynges thus fortunately atchiued, this region was pacified. Among these mountaynes, the vale whiche *Caunaboa* inhabited, is called *Magona*, and is exceeding fruitful, hauing in it many goodly springes and riuers, in the sande whereof is founde great plentie of golde. The same yeere in the moneth of June, they say there arose such a boystous tempest of winde from the Southwest, as hath not lightly ben heard of, the violence wherof was such, that it plucked vp by the rootes whatsoeuer great trees were within the reache of the force therof. When this whyrlewynde came to the hauen of the citie, it beat downe to the bottome of the sea three shyppes, whiche lay at anker, and broke the cables in sunder, and that (whiche is the greater marueyle) without any stormе or roughnesse of the sea, only turnyng them three or foure tymes about. The inhabitauntes also affyrme, that the same yeere the sea extended it selfe further into the lande, and rose hygher then euer it dyd before by the memorie of man, by the space of a cubit. The people therefore muttered among them selues, that our nation had troubled the elementes, & caused suche portentous signes. These tempestes of the ayre (whiche the Grecians call *Tiphones*, that is, whyrlewyndes) they call *Furacanes*, whiche they say, doo often tymes chaunce in this Ilande: but that neyther they, nor theyr great graundfathers, euer sawe suche violent and furious *Furacanes*, that plucked vp great trees by the rootes, neyther yet such surges and vehement mocions on the sea, that so wasted the land: as in deede it may appeare, forasmuche as whersoeuer the sea bankes are neere to any playne, there are in maner euery where flowyshyng medowes reaching euen vnto the shore: but nowe let vs returne to *Caunaboa*. As kyng *Caunaboa* therefore and his brother shoulde haue ben brought into Spayne, they dyed by the way, for very pensiuenesse and anguish of minde. The Admiral, whose shippes were drowned in the foresayd tempest, perceiuing him selfe to be nowe enclosed, commaunded forthwith two other shyppes (whiche the Spaniardes cal *Caruelas*) to be made: for he had with hym all manner of Artificers parteyning thereunto. Whyle these thynges were dooyng, he sent foorth *Bartholomeus Colonus* his brother, beyng Lieuetenant of the Ilande,

A greate tempest in the moneth of June.

Whirle windes.
Furacanes.

The death of king Caunaboa and his brother.

with

with an armie of men to ſearche the golde mynes, beyng diſtant threeſcore leagues from the citie of *Iſabella*, whiche were founde by the conducte of certayne people of the Iſlande, before the mynes of *Cipanga* or *Cibana* were knowen. In theſe mynes they founde certayne deepe pittes, which had ben dygged in old time, out of theſe pyttes, the Admiral (who affirmeth this Iſlande of *Hiſpaniola* to be Ophir, as we ſayde before) ſuppoſeth that Solomon the kyng of *Hieruſalem* had his great ryches of golde, whereof we reade in the olde Teſtament, and that his ſhyppes ſayled to this Ophir by the gulfe of *Perſia*, called *Sinus Perſicus*. But whether it be ſo or not, it lyeth not in me to iudge, but in my opinion it is farre of. As the myners dygged the ſuperficial or vppermoſt part of the earth of ẏ mynes, duryng for the ſpace of ſixe myles, & in dyuers places ſyfted the ſame on the dye lande, they founde ſuche plentie of golde, that euery hyred labourer could eaſily finde euery day the weight of three dyammes. Theſe mynes beyng thus ſearched & founde, the Lieuetenant certified the Admirall hereof by his letters, the which when he had receiued, the fifth day of the Ides of March, *Anno*. 1495. he entred into his newe ſhyppes, and tooke his voyage directly to Spayne, to aduertiſe the kyng of all his affayres, leauyng the whole regiment of the Iſlande with his brother the Lieuetenant.

The golde mines of Salomon.

Gold in the ſuperficiall partes of the earth.

The fift booke of the fyrſt Decade, to *Lodouike* Cardinall of *Aragonie*.

After the Admirals departing into Spaine, his brother the Lieuetenaunt buylded a fortreſſe in the golde mines, as he had commaunded hym: this he called the golden towne, becauſe the labourers founde golde in the earth, and ſtone wherof they made the walles of the fortreſſe. He conſumed three monethes in makyng the inſtrumentes wherewith the golde ſhoulde be geathered, waſhed, tryed, and moulten: yet was he at this tyme, by reaſon of wante of vittualles, enforced to leaue al thynges imperfecte, and to goe ſeeke for meate. Thus as he, with a bande of armed men, had entred threeſcore myles further

The golden tower.

Lacke of victuales.

further within the land, the people of the countrey here and there reſorting to hym, gaue hym a certayne portion of theyr bread, in exchaunge for other of our thynges: but he coulde not long tary here, becauſe they lacked meate in the fortreſſe, whyther he hasted with ſuch as he had now gotten. Leauyng therefore in the fortreſſe a garriſon of ten men, with that portion of the Ilande bread whiche yet remayned, leauyng alſo with them a Houde to take thoſe kyndes of lytle beaſtes whiche they call *Vſias*, not muche vnlyke our Conies, he returned to the fortreſſe of Conception. This alſo was the moneth wherein the kyng *Guarionexius*, and alſo *Manicautexius* borderer vnto hym, ſhoulde haue brought in theyr tributes. Remaynyng there the whole moneth of June, he exacted the whole tribute of theſe two kynges, & bytualles neceſſary for hym and ſuch as he brought with hym, whiche were about foure hundred in number. Shortly after, about the Kalendes of July, there came three Carauels from Spayne, bringing with them ſundrye kyndes of byttualles, as wheate, oyle, wine, bakon, & Martelmas beefe, whiche were diuided to euery man accordyng as neede required, ſome alſo was loſt in the carryage for lacke of good lookyng to. At the aryual of theſe ſhyppes, the Lieutenaunt receiued commaundement from the kyng and the Admiral his brother, that he with his men ſhould remoue their habitation to the ſouth ſyde of the Ilande, becauſe it was nearer to the golde mynes: Alſo that he ſhoulde make diligent ſearche for thoſe kinges whiche had ſlayne the Chriſtian men, and to ſende them with theyr confederates bounde into Spayne. At the next voyage therefore he ſent three hundred captiues, with three kynges, and when he had diligently ſearched the coaſtes of the ſouth ſyde, he tranſported his habitation, and buylded a fortreſſe there, vpon the toppe of a hyll neare vnto a ſure hauen: this fortreſſe he called ſaint Dominikes towre. Into this hauen runneth a riuer of wholſome water, repleniſhed with ſundry kyndes of good fyſhes: they affyrme this ryuer to haue many benefites of nature, for where ſo euer it runneth, all thinges are exceedyng pleaſaunt and fruitefull, hauyng on euery ſyde groues of Date trees, and diuers other of the Ilande fruites ſo plentifullye, that as they ſayled along by the ſhore, oftentymes the braunches thereof, laden with flowres and

Bittualles brought from Spayne.

Saint Dominikes towre.

and fruites, hong ſo ouer theyr heades, that they might plucke them with theyr handes: alſo that the fruitfulnes of this ground, is eyther equall with the ſoyle of Iſabella, or better. In *Iſabella* he lefte only certayne ſicke men, and ſhippe wyghtes, whom he had appoynted to make certayne carauels, the reſidue of his men, he conueighed to the ſouth, to ſaynt Dominickes towne. After he had buylded this foyntreſſe, leauyng therin a garryſon of .xx. men, he with the remanent of his ſouldiers, prepared them ſelues to ſearche the inner partes of the Weſt ſyde of the Iſlande, hytherto knowen onely by name. Therefore about .xxx. leagues, (that is) foureſcore and tenne myles from the foyntreſſe, he chaunced on the ryuer *Naiba*, whiche we ſayde to deſende from the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, ryght towarde the ſouth, by the myddeſt of the ilande. When he had ouerpaſſed this ryuer with a companye of armed men diuyded into .xxb. decurions, that is, tenne in a company, with theyr capitaynes, he ſent two decurions to the regions of thoſe kynges in whoſe landes were the great woodds of byaſile trees. Inclyning towarde the lefte hande, they founde the wooddes, entred into them, and felled the high and precious trees, which were to that day vntouched. Eche of the decurions filled certayne of the ilande houſes with the trunkes of byaſile, there to be reſerued vntil the ſhippes came which ſhould cary them away. But the Lieutenaunt directing his iourney towarde the right hande, not farre from the bankes of ỹ riuer of *Naiba*, founde a certaine kyng whoſe name was *Beuchius Anacauchoa*, encamped againſt thinhabitantes of the prouince of *Naiba*, to ſubdue them vnder his dominion, as he had done many other kings of the iland, borderers vnto him. The palace of this great king, is called *Xaragua*, & is ſituate toward the Weſt ende of the ilande, diſtant from the ryuer of *Naiba* .xxx. leagues. All the prynces which dwell betwene the Weſt ende & his palace, are ditionaries vnto him. All that region from *Naiba*, to the furtheſt marches of the weſt, is vtterly without golde, although it be full of mountaynes. When the kyng had eſpied our men, laying a part his weapons, & geuyng ſignes of peace, he ſpake gentelly to them (vncerteyne whether it were of humanitie or feare) and demaunded of them what they woulde haue. The Lieuetenaunt aunſweared, That he ſhould

Iſabella.

The Riuer of Naiba.

Wooddes of Byaſile trees.

Mountaynes without golde.

paye

paye tribute to the Admirall his brother, in the name of the Chriſtian kyng of Spayne. To whom he ſayde, Howe can you requyre that of me, whereas neuer a region vnder my dominion bringeth forth golde? For he had heard, that there was a ſtrange nation entred into the ilande, whiche made great ſearch for golde: But he ſuppoſed that they deſyred ſome other thyng. The lieutenaunt anſweared agayne, God forbydde that we ſhoulde enioyne any man to paye ſuch tribute as he myght not eaſely forbeare, or ſuch as were not engendered or growing in the region: but we vnderſtande that your regions bryng fourth great plentie of Goſſampine cotton, and hempe, with ſuch other, wherof we deſyre you to geue vs parte. When he heard theſe woordes, he promyſed with cherefull countenaunce, to geue hym as much of theſe thynges as he woulde requyre. Thus diſmiſſing his army, and ſending meſſengers before, he him ſelfe accompanied the Lieutenaunt, and brought him to his palace, being diſtant (as we haue ſayde) .xxx. leagues. In al this tracte, they paſſed through the iuriſdiction of other princes, beyng vnder his dominion: Of the whiche, ſome gaue them hempe, of no leſſe goodnes to make tackelinges for ſhyppes then our wood: Other ſome brought bread, and ſome goſſamppne cotton. And ſo euery of them payde trybute with ſuche commodities as theyr countreys brought fourth. At the length they came to the kinges manſion place of *Xaragua*. Before they entered into the palace, a great multitude of the kynges ſeruauntes & ſubiectes reſorted to the court, honorably (after their maner) to receyue their kyng *Beuchius Anacauchoa*, with the ſtrangers which he brought with him to ſee the magnificence of his court. But now ſhal you heare howe they were intertained. Among other triumphes and ſyghtes, two are eſpecially to be noted: Fyrſt, there mette them a company of .xxx. women, beyng al the kynges wyues and concubines, bearyng in theyr handes branches of date trees, ſingyng and daunſyng: they were all naked, ſauyng that theyr pryuie partes were couered with breeches of goſſampine cotton: but the virgins, hauyng theyr heare hangyng downe about their ſhoulders, tyed about the forehead with a fyllet, were vtterly naked. They affirme that theyr faces, breaſtes, pappes, handes, and other partes of theyr bodyes, were exceedyng ſmoothe,

The kinges wiues.

Well fauored women.

smothe, and well proportioned, but somwhat inclynyng to a louely broune. They supposed that they had seene those most beutyfull *Dryades*, or the natyue nymphes or fayres of the fountaynes whereof the antiques spake so muche. The braunches of date trees, which they bore in theyr right handes when they daunced, they delyuered to the Lieuetenaunt, with lowe curtesy and smylyng countenaunce. Thus enteryng into the kynges house, they founde a delycate supper prepared for them, after theyr maner. When they were well refreshed with meate, the nyght drawyng on, they were brought by the kynges officers, euery man to his lodgyng, according to his degree, in certayne of theyr houses about the pallaice, where they rested them in hangyng beddes, after the maner of the countrey, wherof we haue spoken more largely in an other place. Dryades.

The day folowyng, they brought our men to their common hall, into the whiche they come togeather as often as they make any notable games or triumphes, as we haue sayde before. Here, after many daunsynges, syngynges, maskynges, runnynges, wrestlyngs, and other tryng of maistryes, sodaynly there appeared in a large plaine neere vnto the hal, two great armies of men of warre, whiche the kyng for his pastyme had caused to be prepared, as the Spaniardes vse the playe with reedes, which they call *Iuga de Canias*. As the armies drewe neere togeather, they assayled the one the other as fiersely, as if mortall enimies with theyr baners spreade, should fight for theyr goodes, theyr landes, theyr lyues, theyr libertie, theyr countrey, theyr wyues & theyr children, so that within the momente of an houre, foure men were slayne, and many wounded. The battayle also shoulde haue contynued longer, yf the kyng had not, at the request of our men, caused them to ceasse. The thyrde day, the Lieuetenant counsaylyng the kyng to sowe more plentie of gossampine vppon the bankes neere vnto the waters syde, that they myght the better paye theyr trybute pryuately, accordyng to the multitude of theyr houses, he prepayred to *Isabella*, to vysite the sycke men whiche he had lefte there, and also to see howe his woorkes went forwarde. In the tyme of his absence .xxx. of his men were consumed with diuerse diseases. Wherefore beyng sore troubled in his mynde, and in maner at his wyttes ende, what Apetie pastyme. Foure men slayne in sport. Diuision for diseased men.

what he were best to doo, for as muche as he wanted al thynges necessarie, as wel to restore them to health whiche were yet acrased, as also vitayles to mayntayne ỳ whole multitude, where as there was yet no shyppe come from Spayne: at the length, he determyned to sende abrode the sicke men here and there to sundrye Regyons of the ilande, and to the castelles whiche they had erected in the same. For directly from the citie of Isabella to saynt Dominikes towne, that is, from the north to the south, throughe the ilande, they had buylded thus many castles. Fyrst, xxvi. myles distant from Isabella, they buylded the castell of *Sperantia*. From *Sperantia*. xxv. myles, was the castell of saynt Katharine. From saynt Katharines .xx. myles, was saynt Iames towne. Other. xx. myles from saynt Iames towne, was a stronger fortresse then any of the other, whiche they called the towne of Conception, which he made the stronger, because it was situat at the rootes of the golden mountaynes of Cibaua, in the great and large playne, so fruiteful and well inhabited as we haue before described. He buylded also an other in the mydde waye betwene the towne of Conception, & saynt Dominikes towne, the whiche also was stronger then the towne of Conception, because it was within the lymittes of a great kyng, hauyng vnder his dominion fiue thousande men, whose chiefe citie and head of the Realme, beyng called *Bonauum*, he wylled that the castell should also be called after the same name. Therefore leauyng the sicke men in these castels, and other of the ilande houses nere vnto the same, he hym selfe repayred to saynt Dominikes, exacting trybutes of al the kynges whiche were in his way. When he had tarved there a fewe dayes, there was a rumour spredde, that all the kynges about the borders of the towne of Conception, had conspyred with desperate myndes to rebell agaynst the Spaniardes. When the Lieutenaunt was certified hereof, he tooke his iourney towarde them immediately, not beyng discoraged eyther by the length of the waye, or feeblenesse of his souldyers, beyng in maner foreweried with trauayle. As he drewe nere vnto them, he had aduertysement that kyng *Guarionexius* was chosen by other prynces to be the Capitayne of this rebellion, and that he was enforsed therto halfe vnwyllyng, beyng seduced by perswasions and prouocations: the

The castels or towers of hispaniola.

The golden mountaynes of Cibana.

The kinges rebell.

whiche is more lykely to be true, for that he had before had experience of the power and policie of our men. They came togeather at a daye appoynted, accompanyed with .xv. thousande men, armed after their manner, once agayne to proue the fortune of warre. Here the Lieutenaunt, consultyng with the Captayne of the fortresse and the other souldiers of whom he had the conducte, determyned to sette vpon them vnwares in their owne houses, before they coulde prepare theyr army. He sent foorth therefore to euery kyng a Centurion, that is, a captayne of a hundred, which were commaunded vpon a sudden to inuade theyr houses in the nyght, and to take them sleepyng, before the people (being scattred here & there) myght assemble togeather. Thus secretly enteryng into their byllages, not fortified with walles, trenches, or bulwarks, they broke in vponthem, toke them, bound them, & led away euery man his prisoner according as they were commaunded. The Lieuetenant hym selfe with his hundred men, assayled kyng *Guarionexius* as the worthier personage, whom he tooke prysoner, as did the other captaines theyr kings, and at the same houre appoynted. Foureteene of them were brought the same nyght to the towne of Conception. Shortlye after, when he had put to death two of the kynges whiche were the chiefe autours of this newe reuolte, and had suborned *Guarionexius* & the other kynges to attempt the same, least the people for sorowe of theyr kinges shoulde neglecte or forsake their countrey, whiche thyng myght haue ben great incommoditie to our men, who by thincrease of theyr seedes and fruites were oftentymes ayded, he freely pardoned and dismissed *Guarionexius* and the other kynges, the people in the meane tyme flocking togeather about the towne, to the number of fyue thousande without weapons, with pitiful houling for the deliuerance of their kinges: The ayre thundered, & the earth trembled through the vehemencie of theyr outcry. The Lieutenaunt warned *Guarionexius* and the other kynges, with threatenynges, with rewardes, and with promyses, neuer thereafter to attempt any suche thyng. Then *Guarionexius* made an oration to the people, of ỹ great power of our men, of theyr clemencie towarde offenders, & liberalitie to suche as remaine faithfull, desyring them to quiet theyr mindes, and from thencefoorth neyther in deede nor thought to interpryse

An army of xv. thousand Barbarians.

The kinges are taken prisoners.

king Guarionexius is pardoned.

any

any thyng agaynst the Chrystians, but to obeye and serue them, excepte they woulde dayly bryng them selues into further calamities. When the oration was fynyshed, they tooke hym vp, and set hym on theyr shoulders, and so caryed hym home to his owne pallace: and by this meanes, this Region was pacifyed for a whyle. But our men, with heauy countenaunce wandered vp and downe, as desolate in a strange countrey, lackyng vittailes, and worne out of apparell, whereas.xv. monethes were nowe passed sence the Admirals departure, duryng which tyme, they coulde heare nothyng out of Spayne. The Lieuetenaunt comforted them all that he coulde with fayre wordes and promyses. In the meane tyme, *Beuchius Anacauchoa* (the kyng of the West partes of the Region of *Xaragua* (of whom we spake before) sent messengers to the Lieuetenaunt, to signifye vnto hym, that he had in a redynes the gossampine cotton, and suche other thynges as he wylled hym to prepare for the payment of his trybute. Whereupon the Lieuetenaunt tooke his iourney thyther, and was honorably receiued of the kyng and his syster, somtyme the wyfe of *Caunaboa* the kyng of *Cibana*, bearyng no lesse rule in the gouernaunce of her brothers kyngdome, then he hym selfe: For they affirmed her to be a wyse woman, of good maners, & pleasaunt in company. She earnestly perswaded her brother, by thexample of her husband, to loue and obey the Chrystians. This woman was called *Anacaona*. He founde in the palace of *Beuchius Anacauchoa*. xxxii. kyngs, which had brought theyr tributes with them, and abode his comming. They brought with them also, besyde theyr tribut assigned them, further to demerite ỹ fauour of our men, great plentie of vitailes, as both kindes of bread, cunnies, and fishes, alredy dried, because they should not putrifie: Serpentes also of that kynde which we sayd to be esteemed among them as most delicate meat, and lyke vnto Crocodiles sauing in bygnes. These serpentes they cal *Iuannas*, which our men learned (somwhat to late) to haue ben engendred in the ilande: For vnto that day, none of them durst aduenture to tast of them, by reason of theyr horrible deformitie and lothsomnes. Yet the Lieuetenant, being entysed by the pleasantnes of the kynges syster, determined to tast of the serpentes. But when he felte the flesshe thereof to be so delycate to his

Lacke of vyttayles.

xxxii. kinges.

Serpentes eaten.

tongue,

tongue, he fel to amayne without al feare: the whiche thyng his companions perceiuing, were not behinde hym in greedyneſſe, inſomuch that they had now none other talke, then of the ſweeteneſſe of theſe ſerpentes, which they affyrme to be of more pleaſaunt taſte, then eyther our Phesantes or Partriches: but they loſe theyr taſte, except they be prepared after a certayne faſhion, as doo Peacockes and Phesantes, except they be enterlarded before they be rosted. They prepare them therefore after this manner: Fyrſt, taking out theyr bowelles, euen from the throte to the thyghes, they waſhe and rubbe theyr bodyes very cleane both within & without, then rolling them together on a circle, inuolued after the manner of a ſleepyng ſnake, they thruſte them into a pot, of no bigger capacitie then to holde them only, this done, putting a litle water vnto them, with a portion of the Ilande Pepper, they ſeethe them with a ſoft fyre of ſweete wood, and ſuche as maketh no great ſmoke: Of the fatte of them beyng thus ſodde, is made an exceedyng pleaſant broth or potage. They ſay alſo, that there is no meate to be compared to the egges of theſe ſerpentes, which they vſe to ſeethe by themſelues: they are good to be eaten as ſoone as they are ſodde, and may alſo be reſerued many dayes after. But hauyng ſayde thus much of their entertaynement and daintie fare, let vs nowe ſpeake of other matters. When the Lieuetenaunt had fylled one of the Ilande houſes with the Goſſampine cotton which he had receiued for tribute, the kynges promyſed furthermore to geue hym as muche of theyr head as he woulde demaunde: he gaue them hartie thankes, and gently accepted theyr frendly proffer. In the meane tyme, whyle this head was a geatheryng in ſundry regions, to be brought to the pallace of *Beuchius Anachaucoa* kyng of *Xaragua*, he ſent meſſengers to *Iſabella*, for one of the two Carauelles whiche were lately made there, intendyng to ſend the ſame againe thither laden with head. The Maryners glad of theſe tydynges, ſayled about the Ilande, and in ſhorte ſpace brought the ſhyppe to the coaſtes of *Xaragua*. The ſyſter of kyng *Beuchius Anacauchoa*, that wyſe and pleaſaunt woman *Anacaona* (the wyfe ſometyme of *Caunaboa* the kyng of the golden houſe of the mountaynes of *Cibana*, whoſe huſbande dyed in the way when he ſhoulde haue ben caryed into Spayne) when

The dreſſing of ſerpentes to be eaten.

Serpentes egges eaten.

Goſſopine cotton.

Queene Anacaona.

ſhe heard ſay that our ſhyppe was arriued on the ſhore of her natiue countrey, perſwaded the king her brother, that they both myght goe together to ſee it: for the place where the ſhyppe lay, was not paſte. vi. myles diſtant from *Xaragua*. They reſted all nyght in the midway, in a certayne byllage in the which was the treaſurie or iewel houſe of *Anacaona*. Her treaſure was neither golde, ſiluer, or pretious ſtones, but only thynges neceſſary to be vſed, as chayres, ſtooles, ſettels, diſſhes, potingers, pottes, pannes, baſons, treyes, and ſuch other houſholde ſtuffe and inſtrumentes, workemanly made of a certayne blacke and harde ſhyning wood, which that excellent learned phiſition, Iohn baptiſt *Eliſius*, affirmeth to be Hebene. Whatſoeuer portion of wit nature hath geuen to the inhabitantes of theſe ilandes, the ſame doth moſt appeare in theſe kynde of woorkes, in which they ſhewe great art and cunnyng, but thoſe which this woman had, were made in the iland of *Guanabba*, ſituate in the mouth of the weſt ſyde of *Hiſpaniola*: In theſe they graue the lyuely images of ſuch phantaſies as they ſuppoſe they ſee walke by nyght, which the antiques called *Lemures*: Alſo the images of men, ſerpents, beaſtes, & what ſo euer other thing they haue once ſeene. What woulde you thinke (moſte noble prince) that they coulde doo, if they had the vſe of Iron and ſteele? For they only fyrſt make theſe ſoft in the fyre, & afterwarde make them holowe and carue them with a certayne ſtone which they fynd in the ryuers. Of ſtooles and chayres, ſhe gaue the Lieuetenaunt fourteene, and of veſſelles partayning to the table and kitchen, ſhee gaue hym threeſcore, ſome of wood, and ſome of earth, alſo goſſampyne cotton redye ſpunne, foure great bottomes of exceeding weight. The day folowing, when they came to the ſea ſide, where was an other billage of the kynges, the Lieuetenaunt commaunded the ſhyppe boate to be brought to the ſhore. The kyng alſo had prepared two Canoas, paynted after theyr maner, one for hym ſelfe and certayne of his gentelmen, an other for his ſiſter *Anacaona* and her wayting women: but *Anacaona* deſyred to be caried in the ſhippe boate with the Lieuetenaunt. When they nowe approched neare vnto the ſhippe, certayne great peeces of ordinaunce were diſcharged of purpoſe, the ſea was fylled with thunder, and the ayre with ſmoke, they trembled

The treaſurie of Queene Anacaona.

Hebene wood.

The Iſlande of Guanabba.

Cunnyng Artificers.

A ſtone in the ſteede of Iron.

Gunnes.

and

and quaked for feare, supposyng that the frame of the worlde had ben in daunger of fallyng, but when they sawe the Lieuetenant laugh, and looke chearefully on them, they called agayne theyr spirites, and when they yet drewe nearer to the shyp, and hearde the noyse of the fluites, shawmes, and drummes, they were wonderfully astonied at the sweete harmonie thereof. Entryng into the shyppe, and beholdyng the foreshyp and the sterne, the toppe castel, the maste, the hatches, the cabbens, the keele, and the tackleynges, the brother fyxyng his eyes on the syster, and the syster on the brother, they were both as it were dumme and amazed, and wyste not what to say for to muche woondryng. Whyle beholdyng these thyngs, they wandered vp and downe the shyp, the Lieutenaunt commaunded the ankers to be loosed, and the sayles to be hoysed vp. Then were they further astonyshed, when they saw so great a mole to moue as it were by it selfe, without dres, and without the force of man: for there arose from the earth suche a wynde, as a man woulde haue wyshed for of purpose. Yet furthermore, when they perceiued the shippe to moue sometime forwarde, and sometyme backward, sometyme toward the right hande, and sometyme towarde the lefte, and that with one winde, and in manner at one instant, they were at theyr wyttes ende for to much admiration. These thynges finished, and the shippes laden with bread, and suche other rewardes, they beyng also recompenced with other of our thynges, he dismissed not onely the kyng *Beuchius Anachauchoa* and his syster, but lykewise all theyr seruauntes & women, replenished with ioye & wondering. After this, he hym selfe tooke his iorney by foote with his souldiers to the citie of *Isabella*, where he was aduertised that one *Roldanus Ximenus*, a noughty felowe (whom before, beyng his seruant, he had preferred to be capitayne of the myners and labourers, & after made hym a Iudge in causers of controuersie) had vsed hym selfe outragiously, and was maliciously mynded against hym, and further, the cause of much mischiefe in his absence. For kyng *Guarionexius* (who a whyle before was pardoned of his former rebellion, and persuaded the people to obey the Spanyardes) was by his noughtie vsage, and suche other as were confederred with hym, so accensed to reuenge the iniuries whiche they susteyned at his handes, besyde the abominable

Musical instrumentes.

Ignorance causeth admiration.

The intemperancie & malice of a seruile wit aduaunced.

Ciguanians.

actes whiche they, folowing only the lawe of nature, abhoyred to admit, that he, with his famylie, famplyers, and ditionaries, of deſperate minde fledde to the mountaines, being diſtaunt from *Iſabella* only tenne leagues weſtwarde, towarde the noyth ſide of the ſea. Theſe mountaynes, and alſo the inhabitauntes of the ſame, they call by one name, *Ciguaios*. The great king of all the kinges and regions of theſe mountaynes is called *Maiobanexius*, and his court or pallace is named *Capronus*: the mountaynes are rough, high, and ſuch as no man can paſſe to the toppes therof, they are alſo bending, and haue their coyners reaching downe to the ſea. Betweene both the coyners of the mountaynes, is there a greate playne, by the whiche many riuers fall from the mountaynes into the ſea, the people are verye fierſe and warlike men, hauing theyr original of the Canibales: for when they deſcend from the mountaynes to the playnes, to keepe warre with theyr boyderers, they eate all ſuch as they kil. *Guarionexius* therfoye, fleeing to this kyng of theſe mountaynes, gaue him many preſentes of ſuch thinges as are wanting in his countrey, therwith declaring how vilely, villanouſly, and violently he had ben vſed of our men, with whom he coulde nothyng preuaile, neither by fayre meanes, noy by foule, nother by humilitie, noy by ſtoutneſſe, and that to be the cauſe of his reſoyting, to hym at that tyme, moſt humbly deſyring him to be his defence agaynſt thoppreſſions of ſuche myſcheuous people. *Maiobanexius* hereuppon, made hym promiſſe to ayde and helpe hym againſt the Chriſtians al that he might. The Lieutenant therefoye made haſte to the foytreſſe of Conception, whither, as ſoone as he was come, he ſent foy *Roldanus Xeminus*, who with ſuche as folowed hym, lay in certayne of the Iſland villages, xii. myles diſtant from the foytreſſe. At his commyng, the Lieuetenaunt aſked him what al theſe ſturres and tumultes meant: He anſwered without abaſhment, Your brother the Admiral hath to doo therewith, and ſhall aunſwere foy the ſame befoye the kyng, foy we perceiue that the kyng hath ſo put hym in truſt, that he hath had no regarde to vs: here we peryſhe foy hunger, whyle we folowe you, and are dryuen to ſeeke our vnhappye foode in the deſartes: Your brother alſo aſſigned me aſſyſtaunt with you in gouernyng the Iſlande. Wherefoye, ſyth you haue no moye

reſpect

respecte vnto vs, we are determined no longer to be vnder your obedience. When *Roldanus* had spoken these wordes, and suche other, the Lieuetenaunt woulde haue layde handes on hym, but he escaped his fyngers, and fledde to the West partes of the region of *Xaragua*, hauyng with hym a trayne of threescore and ten men, whiche were of his confederacie. Here this fylthy synke of rebelles thus conspired, playde theyr vages, and ryued with loose bydles in al kynde of myscheefe, robbyng the people, spoyling the countrey, and rauishyng both wyues and virgins. Whyle these thynges were dooing in the Ilande, the Admiral had eight shippes appoynted him by the kyng, of the whiche he sent two laden with vyttualles, from *Cales* or *Gades* of Hercules pyllers, directly to the Lieuetenant his brother. These shyps by chaunce arryued fyrst on that syde of the Ilande where *Roldanus Xeminus* ranged with his companions. *Roldanus* in short tyme had seduced them, promysyng them in the steede of mattockes, wenches pappes: for labour, pleasure: for hunger, abundance: and for wearynesse and watchyng, sleepe and quietnesse. *Guarionexius* in the meane tyme assembled a power of his frendes and confederates, & came oftentymes downe into the playne, and slue as many of the Christian men as he coulde meete conueniently, and also the Ilande men whiche were theyr freendes, wastyng theyr grounde, destroying theyr seedes, and spoyling their vyllages. But *Roldanus* and his adherentes, albeit they had knowledge that the Admiral woulde shortly come, yet feared they nothing, because they had seduced the newe men whiche came in the fyrst shyppes. Whyle the Lieuetenaunt was thus tossed in the myddest of these stormes, in the meane tyme his brother the Admiral set forwarde from the coastes of Spayne: but not directly to *Hispaniola*, for he turned more towarde the south. In the whiche voyage, what he dyd, what coastes both of the lande and sea he compassed, and what newe regions he discouered, we wyl fyrst declare: for to what ende and conclusion the sayd tumultes and seditions came, we wyl expresse in the ende of the booke folowyng. Thus fare ye well.

Licenciousnesse in libertie.

Hercules pyllers.

A violent persuasion.

The furie of Guarionexius.

The thyrd voyage of Colonus the Admiral.

The syxt booke of the fyrst Decade, to *Lodouike* Cardinal of *Aragonie*.

Olonus the Admirall, the thirde day of the Calendes of June, in the yeere of Chriſte 1498. hoyſed vp his ſayles in the hauen of the towne *Barramedabas*, not farre diſtant from *Cales*, and ſet forwarde on his voyage with eyght ſhyppes laden with vittualles and other neceſſaries. He diuerted from his accuſtomed race, whiche was by the Ilandes of *Canarie*, by reaſon of certayne frenchmen pyrates and rouers on the ſea, whiche lay in the ryght way to meete with hym. In the way from *Cales* to the Ilandes of *Canarie*, about foureſcore and tenne myles towarde the left hande, is the Ilande of *Madera*, more ſouthward then the citie of *Ciuile* by foure degrees, for the Pole Artike is eleuate to *Ciuile*. xxxvi. degrees, but to this Ilande (as the Mariners ſay) only. xxxii. He ſayled therefore fyrſt to *Madera*, and ſendyng from thence directly to *Hiſpaniola* the reſidue of the ſhippes laden with vittualles and other neceſſaries, he him ſelfe with one ſhyppe with deckes, and two Marchant Caraueles, coaſted towarde the South to come to the Equinoctial lyne, and ſo forth to folowe the tracte of the ſame towarde the Weſt, to the intent to ſearch the natures of ſuche places as he coulde finde vnder or neare vnto the ſame, leauing *Hiſpaniola* on the north ſide on his ryght hande. In the middle of this race, lye xiii. Ilandes of the Portugales, whiche were in olde tyme called *Heſperides*, and are nowe called *Caput Viride*, or *Cabouerde*, theſe are ſituate in the ſea, ryght ouer agaynſt the inner partes of Ethiope, Weſtwarde two dayes ſaylyng. One of theſe the Portugales call *Bonauiſta*. With the Snayles, or rather the Tortoyſes of this Ilande, many leprous men are healed and cleanſed of theyr leproſie. Departing ſodainly from hence, by reaſon of the contagiouſneſſe of the ayre, he ſayled. CCCClxxx. myles toward the Weſt ſouthweſt, whiche is in the middeſt betweene the Weſt and the South. There was he ſo vexed with maladies and heate (for it was the moneth of June) that his ſhyps were almoſt ſet on fyre: The hoopes of his barrels cracked and brake, and the freſh water ranne out: the men alſo complayned that they were not able

Frenche men pyrates.

The iland of Madera.

Healing of the leper.

Contagious ayre and extreeme heate.

to abide that extremitie of heate. Here the north pole was elleuate onely .v. degrees from the Horizontall. For the space of .viii. dayes, in the which he suffered these extremites, onely the fyrst day was fayre, but al the other, clowdy and rayny, yet neuertheless feruent hotte: Wherefore it oftentymes repented hym not a litle, that euer he tooke that way. Being tossed in these dangers and vexations eyght continuall dayes, at the lengthe an Eastsoutheast wynde arose, and gaue a prosperous blaste to his sayles. Whiche wynde folowing directly towarde the west, he founde the starres ouer that paralell placed in other order, and an other kynde of ayre, as the Admirall hym selfe toilde me. And they al affirme, that within three dayes sayling, they founde most temperate and pleasaunt ayre. The Admiral also affirmeth, that from the clime of the great heate and vnholsome ayre, he euer ascended by the backe of the sea, as it were by a hygh mountayne towarde heauen, yet in all this tyme, coulde he not once see any land: But at the length, the day before the Caiendes of July, the watchman lookyng foorth of the toppe castel of the greatest shippe, cried out aloude for ioy that he espied three exceding hygh mountaynes, exhorting his felowes to be of good cheere, and to put away al pensiuenes: for they were very heauy and sorowfull, as well for the greefe which they susteyned by reason of thintollerable heate, as also that their freshe water sayled them, whiche ranne out at the ryftes of the barels, caused by extreme heate, as we haue sayd. Thus being wel comforted, they drew to the land, but at theyr fyrst approch they could not aryue, by reason of the shalownes of the sea neere the shore: Yet loking out of theyr shyppes, they myght well perceiue that the Region was inhabyted, and wel cultured, for they sawe very fayre gardens, and pleasaunt medowes: from the trees and herbes wherof, when the mornyng deawes beganne to ryse, there proceaded manye sweete sauoures. Twentie myles distant from hence, they chaunced into a hauen, very apte to harborowe shyppes, but it had no ryuer running into it. Sayling on yet somwhat further, he founde at the length a commodious hauen, wherin he might repayre his shyppes, and make prouision of freshe water and fuel. *Arenalis* calleth this land *Puta*. They found no houses nere vnto the hauen, but innumerable steppes of certeyn wilde

The iland of Puta.

beastes feete, of the whiche they founde one dead, muche lyke a goate. The day folowyng, they sawe a Canoa commyng a farre of, hauyng in it foure and twentie young men of goodly corporature and high stature, al armed with targets, bowes, & arrowes: the heare of theyr heades was long and playne, and cutte on the forehead much after the maner of the Spanyards, their pryuie partes were couered with fyllets of gossampine cotton, of sundry colours enterlaced, & were beside al ouer naked. Here the Admiral, consydering with him selfe the corporature of this people, and nature of the lande, he beleeued the same to be so muche the nearer heauen, then other regions of the same paralel, and further remooued from the grosse vapours of the vales, and marysshes, howe muche the hyghest toppes of the byggest mountaynes are distant from the deepe vales. For he earnestly affirmeth, that in al that nauigation, he neuer went out of the paralels of Ethiope: So great difference is there betweene the nature of thinhabitauntes, and of the soyles of diuers regions, al vnder one clime or paralel, as is to see betweene the people and regions beyng in the fyrme lande of Ethiope, and them of the Ilandes vnder the same clime, hauyng the pole starre eleuate in ỹ same degree. For the Ethiopians are all blacke, hauing theyr heare curled, more like wool then heare: but these people of the Iland of *Puta*, (beyng as I haue sayde vnder the clyme of Ethiope) are white, with long heare, and of yelow colour. Wherefore it is apparant, the cause of this so great difference, to be rather by the disposition of the earth, then constitution of heauen. For we knowe, that snowe falleth on the mountaynes of the Equinoctial, or burnt lyne, and the same to endure there continuallye: we knowe lykewyse, that the inhabitauntes of the regions farre distant from that lyne towarde the north, are molested with great heate. The Admirall, that he myght allure the young men to hym with gentlenesse, shewed them looking glasses, fayre and bryght vessels of copper, haukes belles, and suche other thynges vnknowen to them. But the more they were called, so muche the more they suspected craft and decepte, and fledde backewarde: Yet dyd they with great admiration beholde our men and theyr thynges, but styll hauyng theyr ores in theyr handes redy to flee. When the Admirall sawe that he coulde

People of comly corporature, and long heare, neere the Equinoctial.

The higher, the colder.

by

by no meanes allure them by gyftes, he thought to proue what he coulde do with muſicall inſtrumentes, and therefore commaunded that they whiche were in the greateſt ſhyp, ſhould play on theyr drummes and ſhawmes. But the young men ſuppoſing this to be a token of battayle, left theyr ores, & in the twincking of an eye had theyr arrowes in theyr bowes, and theyr targets on their armes: and thus directing theyr arrowes towarde our men, ſtoode in expectation to knowe what this noyſe might meane. Our men likewyſe preparyng theyr bowes and arrowes, approched towarde them by litle and litle. But they departing from the Admirals ſhyppe, and truſting to the dexteritie of theyr ores, came ſo neare one of the leſſe ſhyppes, that one of them plucked the cloke from the gouernour of the ſhyppe, and as wel as they coulde by ſignes, required hym to come alande, promiſyng fayth that they woulde commune with him of peace. But when they ſawe him goe to the Admirals ſhyp, whyther he went to aſke leaue that he might commune with them, ſuſpecting hereby ſome further deceyt, they leapt immediatlye into the Canoa, and fleedde as ſwyft as the wynde, ſo that to conclude, they could by no meanes be allured to familiaritie: Wherfore the Admiral thought it not conuenient to beſtowe any long time there at this voyage. No great ſpace from this Ilande, euer towarde the Weſt, the Admiral ſayth he found ſo outragious a fal of water, runnyng with ſuche a violence from the Eaſt to the Weſt, that it was nothyng inferior to a myghtie ſtreame fallyng from hygh mountaynes. He alſo confeſſed, that ſynce the fyrſt day that euer he knewe what the ſea meant, he was neuer in ſuche feare. Proceedyng yet ſomewhat further in this daungerous voyage, he founde certayne gulfes of eyght myles, as it had ben the entraunce of ſome great hauen, into the whiche the ſayde violent ſtreames dyd fall. Theſe gulfes or ſtreyghtes he called *Os Draconis*, that is, the Dragons mouth: and the Ilande directly oueragaynſt the ſame, he called *Margarita*. Out of theſe ſtrayghtes, iſſued no leſſe force of freſhe water, whiche encounteryng with the ſalte, dyd ſtryue to paſſe forth, ſo that betweene both the waters, was no ſmall conflycte: But entryng into the gulfe, at the length he founde the water thereof verye freſhe and good to dryncke. The Admirall

Muſical inſtrumentes.

The violent courſe of the water from the Eaſt to the Weſt.

The gulfe called Os Draconis.

hym ſelfe, and they which were his companions in this voyage, beyng men of good credit, and perceauing my diligence in ſearchyng for theſe matters, tolde me yet of a greater thyng, that is, that for the ſpace of .xxvi. leagues, amountyng to a hundreth and foure myles, he ſayled euer by freſhe water, inſomuch that the further he proceaded, eſpecially towarde the weſt, he affirmed the water to be the freſher. After this, he came to a highe mountayne inhabited onely with Monkeyes or Marmaſits, on that part towarde the Eaſt: For that ſyde was rowgh with rockye and ſtony mountaynes, and therefore not inhabited with men. Yet they that went a lande to ſearche the countrey, founde nere vnto the ſea, many fayre fieldes, well tylled and ſowen, but no people, nor yet houſes or cotages: Parhappes they were gone further into the countrey, to ſowe theyr corne, and applye theyr huſbandry, as wee often ſee our huſbandemen to leaue theyr ſtations and villages for the ſame purpoſe. In the weſt ſyde of that mountayne, they eſpyed a large playne, whither they made haſt, and caſt anker in the rode ryuer. As ſoone as the inhabitantes had knowledge that a ſtrange nation was arryued in theyr coaſtes, they came flockyng without all feare to ſee our men. We vnderſtode by theyr ſygnes and poyntynges, that this Region was called *Paria*, and that it was very large: in ſo muche that the further it reacheth towarde the weſte, to be ſo muche the better inhabited and repleniſhed with people. The Admiral therfore, takyng into his ſhippe foure of the men of that lande, ſearched the weſt partes of the ſame. By the temperatenes of the ayer, the pleaſauntnes of the ground, and the multitude of people which they ſawe daily more & more as they ſayled, they coniectured that theſe thynges portended ſome great matter: as in deede their opininon failed them not, as we will further declare in his place. The ſonne not yet ryſen, but beginnyng euen nowe to ryſe, being one day allured by the pleaſauntnes of the place, and ſweete ſauours whiche breathed from the lande to the ſhyppes, they went a lande: Here they founde a greater multytude of people, then in any other place. As our men approched towarde them, there came certeine meſſengers from their *Cacici*, that is, the kinges of the countrey, to deſyre the Admirall in the name of theyr princes to come to theyr palaces with-

A ſea of freſh water.

Marmaſets. Monkeyes.

The fayre and large region of Paria.

Humane people.

without feare, and that they and al theyrs ſhoulde bee at his commaundement. When the Admirall had thanked them, and made his excuſe for that tyme, there came innumerable people with theyr boates to the ſhyppes, hauyng for the moſt parte cheynes about theyr neckes, garlandes on theyr heades, and bꝛaſelettes on theyr armes of pearles of India, and that ſo commonlye, that our women in playes and tryumphes, haue not greater plentie of ſtones of glaſſe and cryſtall in theyr garlands, crownes, girdels, and ſuche other tyꝛementes. Beyng aſked where they gathered them, they poynted to the next ſhoꝛe by the ſea bankes. They ſignified alſo, by certeyne ſcoꝛnefull ieſtures whiche they made with theyr mouthes and handes, that they nothyng eſteemed pearles. Taking alſo baſkettes in their handes, they made ſignes that the ſame myght be fylled with them in ſhoꝛte ſpace. But becauſe the coꝛne wherwith his ſhyppes were laden to be caryed into *Hiſpaniola*, had taken hurt by reaſon of the ſalt water, he determined to deferre this marte to a moꝛe conuenient tyme: Yet he ſent to land two of the ſhyp boates laden with men, to thintent to fetch ſome garlands of pearles foꝛ exchange of our thynges, and alſo ſomwhat to ſearche the nature of the Region, and diſpoſition of the people. They enterteyned our men gentelly, and came flocking to them by heapes, as it had ben to beholde ſome ſtrange monſters. Fyꝛſt there came to meete our men, two men of grauitie, whom the multitude folowed: One of theſe was well in age, and the other but young. They thinke it was the father, with his ſonne whiche ſhould ſucceede hym. When the one had ſaluted and embꝛaſed the other, they bꝛought our men into a certeyne rounde houſe, neere vnto the whiche was a great courte. Hyther were bꝛought many chayers and ſtooles made of a certeyne blacke wood, and very cunnyngly wꝛought. After that our men and theyr Pꝛinces were ſette, theyr waytyng men came in laden, ſome with ſundꝛy delycate dyſhes, and ſome with wyne: But theyr meat, was only fruites, and thoſe of dyuers kyndes, and vtterly vnknowen to vs. Theyr wyne was both whyte and redde, not made of grapes, but of the lycour of dyuers fruites, and very pleaſaunte in dꝛynkyng. After this banquet made in the olde mans houſe, the young man bꝛought them to his tabernacle oꝛ mantion place, where

Chayers and ſtooles of Hebene.

was

was a great company both of men and women, but they stoode disseuered the one from the other. They are whyte, euen as our men are, sauing suche as are much conuersant in the sunne. They are also very gentle, and full of humanitie towarde strangers. They couer theyr priuie partes with gossampine cotton, wrought with sundry colours, and are beside all naked. There was fewe, or none, that had not eyther a coller, a chayne, or a bracelet of golde and pearles, and many had all. Beyng asked where they had that golde, they pointed to certayne mountaynes, seemyng with theyr countenaunce to dissuade our men from goyng thither: For putting theyr armes in theyr mouthes, and grynnyng as though they bytte the same, styll poyntyng to the mountaynes, they seemed to insinuate that men were eaten there: but whether they meant by the Canibales, or wylde beastes, our men coulde not wel perceiue. They tooke it exceedyng greeuously, that they coulde neyther understande our men, nor our men them. When they whiche were sent to lande, were returned to the shyppes about three of the clocke at after noone the same day, bryngyng with them certayne garlandes, and collers of pearles, they loosed theyr ankers to departe, myndyng to come agayne shortlye, when all thynges were set in good order in *Hispaniola*: but he was preuented by another, whiche defeated him of the rewarde of his trauayle. He was also hyndered at this time by reason of the shalowneſſe of the sea, & violent course of the water, which with continuall tossyng, bruised the greatest shippe as often as any great gale of wind arose. To auoyde the daungers of suche shalowe places and shelfes, he euer sent one of the smallest Carauelles before to trye the way with soundyng, and the byggest shyppes folowed behynde. The regions beyng in the large prouince of *Paria*, for the space of. CCxxx. myles, are called of the inhabitants, *Cumana*, and *Manacapana*: from these regions distant .lx. leagues, is there an other region called *Curiana*. When he had thus passed ouer this long tract of sea, supposing styl that it had ben an Ilande, & doubtyng that he myght passe by the West to the North directly to *Hispaniola*, he chaunced into a ryuer of. xxx. cubits deapth, and of suche breadth as hath not lyghtly ben hearde of. For he affyrmeth it to be. xxviii. leagues. A lytle further towarde the West,

Whyte men neere the Equinoctiall.

Shalowneſſe of the sea.

The vse of Carauels or Brigandines.

A riuer of marueylous deapth and breadth.

Weſt, yet ſomewhat more ſouthwarde, as the bendyng of the ſhore requyred, he entered into a ſea full of herbes or weedes. The ſeede of the herbes whiche ſwymme on the water, are muche lyke the berryes of the tree called *Lentiſcus*, whiche beareth the ſweete gumme called *Maſtix*: they grewe ſo thycke, that they ſomtyme in maner ſtayed the ſhyppes. The Admiral reported, that here there is not one daye throughout all the yeere much longer or ſhorter then an other, and that the North pole is here eleuate onely fyue degrees as at *Paria*, in whoſe tracte all theſe coaſtes lye. He alſo declared certayne thinges as concernyng the variete of the north pole: the whiche becauſe they ſeeme contrarye to thopinyons of all the Aſtronomers, I wyll touche them but with a dry foote, as ſayth the prouerbe. But it is well knowen (moſt noble prince) that whiche we call the pole ſtarre, or north ſtarre (called of the Italians *Tramontana*) is not the very poynt of the pole Artyke, vppon the whiche the axes or extremities of heauens are turned about. The whiche thing may well be proued, if when the ſtarres fyrſt appeare, you beholde the pole ſtarre through any narowe hole: For ſo, applying your inſtrument therto in the morning, ſomwhat before the daye ſpring haue blemiſhed theyr light, yf then you looke through the ſame hole, you ſhall perceiue it to be moued from the place where you ſawe it fyrſt. But howe it commeth to paſſe, that at the begynnyng of the euenyng twilight it is eleuate in that Region only fyue degrees in the moneth of June, and in the morning twylyght to be eleuate .xv. degrees by the ſame quadrant, I doo not vnderſtande, nor yet doo the reaſons whiche he bryngeth, in any poynt ſatyſfye me. For he ſayth, that he hereby coniectured, that the earth is not perfectly round: but that when it was created, there was a certayne heape rayſed theron, muche hygher then the other partes of the ſame. So that (as he ſayth) it is not rounde after the forme of an apple or a ball (as other thinke) but rather lyke a peare as it hangeth on the tree, and that *Paria* is the Region which poſſeſſeth the ſuperminent or hygheſt part therof neareſt vnto heauen: In ſo muche that he earneſtly contendeth, the earthly Paradyſe to be ſytuate in the toppes of thoſe three hylles, whiche we ſayde before, that the watchman ſawe out of the toppe caſtel of

The eleuation of the Pole at Paria.

Note a ſecrete as concernyng the Pole ſtarre.

An experience.

A marueylous ſecrete.

the

the shippe, and that the outragious streames of the freshe waters whiche so violentlye isshue out of the sayde gulfes, and stryue so with the salt water, fall headlong from the toppes of the saide mountaynes: But of this matter, it shall suffyce to haue sayde thus muche. Let vs nowe therefore returne to the hystorie from whiche we haue digressed. When he perceiued him selfe to be thus inwrapped in so great a gulfe beyonde his expectation, so that he had nowe no hope to fynde any passage towarde the north, wherby he myght sayle directly to *Hispaniola*, he was enforced to turne backe the same way by the whiche he came, and directed his byoage to *Hispaniola* by the north of that lande lying towarde the East. They whiche afterwarde searched this lande more curyously, wyll it to be parte of the continent or firme lande of India, and not of *Cuba* as the Admiral supposed: For there are many whiche affirme that they haue sayled round about *Cuba*. But whether it be so or not, or whether enuying the good fortune of this man, they seeke occasyon of quarelyng agaynst hym, I can not iudge: But tyme shall speake, whiche in tyme appoynted, reuealeth both truth and falsehod. But whether *Paria* be continent or not, the Admirall doth not muche contende, but he supposeth it to be continent: He also affirmeth that *Paria* is more southwarde then *Hispaniola*, by eyght hundred fourescore and two myles. At the length he came to *Hispaniola* (to see his souldiers which he left with his brethren) the thyrd day of the calendes of September, in the yeere. 1498. but (as often times chaunceth in humane thynges) among his so many prosperous, pleasaunt, and luckye affayres, fortune myngled some seedes of wormewood, and corrupted his pure corne with the malicious weedes of cockle.

Time reuealeth all thynges.

¶ The seuenth booke of the fyrst decade, to the same *Lodouike* Cardinal. &c.

The Spaniardes rebell in the Admiralles absence.

When the Admiral was now come to the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, he founde all thynges confounded and out of order. For *Roldanus* (of whom we spake before) refused in his absence to obey his brother, trusting to the multitude of such as were confedered with hym,

hym, and not onely behaued hym selfe proudely agaynst the Admiralles brother and Lieuetenant, sometyme his maister, but also sent letters to his reproche to the kyng of Spayne, therin accusyng both the brethren, laying heynous matters to theyr charges. But the Admirall agayne sent messengers to the kyng, whiche myght informe hym of theyr rebellyon, instantly desyring his grace to sende hym a newe supplye of men, wherby he might suppresse theyr lecentiousnes, and punish them for theyr mischeuous actes. They accused the Admirall and his brother to be vniust men, cruel enimies, and shedders of the Spanyshe blood, declaryng that vppon euery lyght occasyon they woulde racke them, hang them, and head them, and that they tooke pleasure therin, and that they departed from them, as from cruell tyrantes and wylde beastes reioycyng in blood, also the kynges enimies: affyrmyng lykewyse, that they wel perceiued theyr entent to be none other then to vsurpe themprie of the Ilandes, whiche thyng (they sayde) they suspected by a thousande coniectures, and especially in that they woulde permit none to resorte to the golde mynes, but only suche as were theyr familiers. The Admirall on the contrary part, when he desyred ayde of the kyng to infring theyr insolencie, auouched that al those his accusers, which had deuised suche lyes agaynst hym, were naughtie felowes, abhominable knaues and vilains, theeues and bawdes, ruffians, adulterers, & rauishers of women, false periured vagaboundes, and such as had ben eyther conuict in prysons, or fledde for feare of iudgement: so escaping punishment, but not leauing vice, wherin they styll contynued, and brought the same with them to the iland, lyuing there in like maner as before, in theefte, lechery, & all kyndes of mischeefe, and so gyuen to Idlenes and sleepe, that wheras they were brought thyther for myners, labourers, & scullyans, they would not now goe one furlong from theyr houses, except they were borne on mens backes, like vnto them whiche in olde time were called *Ediles Curules*: For to this office they put the miserable iland me, whom they handled most cruelly. For least theyr handes should discontinue from sheddyng of blood, and the better to trye theyr strength and manhod, they vsed now & then for their pastyme, to fyght among them selues, and proue who coulde most cleanely

The Spaniardes accuse the Admiral.

The Admirals answere.

These had the custodies of the temples.

with

A cruel & deuillyke pastyme.

with his swoorde at one stroke stryke of the head of an innocente. Soo that he whiche coulde with moste agilitie make the head of one of those poore wretches to flee quyte and cleane from the bodye to the grounde at one strocke, he was the best man, and counted most honorable. These thynges, and many suche other, the one of them laid to the others charge before the king. While these thinges were dooyng, the Admirall sent his brother the Leanetenaunt with an army of fourescore and tenne footemen, and a fewe horsemen (with three thousande of the Ilande men, whiche were mortall enimyes to the Ciguauians) to meete the people of *Ciguana*, with Kyng *Guarionexius* theyr graunde capitayne, who had doone muche myscheefe to our men, and suche as fauoured them. Therefore when the Lieutenaunt had conducted his army to the bankes of a certeyne great ryuer runnyng by the playne, whiche we sayde before to lye betwene the corners of the mountaynes of *Ciguana* and the sea, he founde two scoutes of his enimies lurkyng in certeyne bushes, whereof the one, castyng hym selfe headlong into the sea, escaped, and by the mouth of the ryuer swamme ouer to his companions: the other being taken, declared that in the woodde on the other syde the ryuer, there lay in campe sixe thousande Ciguauians redy, vnwares to assaile our men passing bye. Wherefore the Lieutenaunt finding a shalow place where he might passe ouer, he with his whole army entred into the ryuer, the which thing when the Ciguauians had espyed, they came runnyng out of the woodde with a terrible crye, and most horrible aspect, much like vnto the people called *Agathyrsi*, of whom the poet Virgil speaketh: For they were all payuted and spotted with sundry colours, and especiall with blacke and red, which they make of certeyne fruites noorysshed for the same purpose in theyr gardens, with the iuyce wherof they paynt them selues from the forhead, euen to the knees, hauyng theyr heare (whiche by art they make long and blacke, if nature deny it them) wreathed and rolled after a thousande fashions, a man woulde thinke them to be deuylles incarnat newly broke out of hell, they are so like vnto hellhoundes. As our men waded ouer the ryuer, they shotte at them, and hurled dartes so thycke, that it almost tooke the lyght of the sonne from our men: insomuche that if they had not borne of the force

Heare made long & blacke by arte.

therof

thereof with theyr targettes, the matter had gone wrong with them. Yet at the length, manye beyng wounded, they passed ouer the ryuer: which thyng when the enimies sawe, they fledde, whom our men pursuyng, slue some in the chase, but not manye, by reason of theyr swyftnesse of foote. Thus beyng in the woodes, they shotte at our men more safely, for they beyng accustomed to the wooddes, and naked without anye lette, passed through the bushes and shrubbes, as it had ben wylde bores or Hartes, whereas our men were hyndered by reason of theyr apparell, targets, long iauelins, & ignorannce of the place. Wherfore, when he had rested there al that nyght in vayne, and the day folowyng he sawe no stirring in the wooddes, he went (by the counsel and conducte of the other Ilande men whiche were in his army) immediatly frō thence to the mountaynes, in the whiche kyng *Maiobanexius* had his cheefe mansion place, in the village called *Capronum*, by the which name also the kyngs palace was called, beyng in the same village. Thus marching forwarde with his armie, about twelue myles of, he encamped in the village of another kyng, whiche the inhabitauntes had forsaken for feare of our men: Yet makyng diligent searche, they found two, by whom they had knowledge that there was temme kinges with *Maiobanexius* in his palace of *Capronum*, with an armie of eight thousand Ciguauians. At the Lieutenants fyrst approch, he durst not geue them battayle, vntyll he had somewhat better searched the region: yet dyd he in the meane tyme skyrmyshe with them twyse. The next nyght about mydnyght, he sent forth scoutes, and with them guides of the Ilande men whiche knewe the countrey: Whom the Ciguauians espying frō the mountaines, prepared them selues to the battayle, with a terrible crye or alarum after their maner, but yet durst not come out of the woods, supposing that the Lieuetenant with his mayne army had ben euen at hande. The day folowyng, when he brought his army to the place where they encamped, leaping out of the wooddes, they twyse attempted the fortune of warre, fiercely assayling our men with a mayne force, and wounding many before they coulde coouer them with theyr targettes: Yet our men put them to flyght, slue manye, and tooke manye, the residue fledde to the wooddes, where they kept them styll as in their

Kyng Maiobanexius.

An army of eight thousand Ciguauians.

moſt ſafe holde. Of them whiche were taken, he ſent one, and with him another of the Ilande men, which was of his part, to *Maiobanexius*, with commaundement in this effect, The Lieuetenaunt bryought not hyther his army (O *Maiobanexius*) to kepe warre either againſt you, or your people, for he greatly deſyreth your frendſhip: but his intent is, that *Guarionexius*, who hath perſwaded you to be his ayde againſt him, to the great deſtruction of your people, and vndoyng of your countrey, may haue due correction, aſwell for his diſobedience towarde hym, as alſo for rayſyng tumultes among the people: Wherefore he requireth you, and exhorteth you to deliuer *Guarionexius* into his handes, the whiche thing yf you ſhal perfourme, the Admirall his brother wyll not only gladly admyt you to his freendſhyp, but alſo enlarge and defende your dominion. And yf herein you refuſe to accomplyſhe his requeſt, it wyll folowe, that you ſhal ſhortlye repente you thereof: For your kyngdome ſhalbe waſted with ſwoorde and fyre, and you ſhall abyde the fortune of warre, whereof you haue had experience with fauour, as you ſhall further know heareafter to your payne, yf with ſtubberneſſe you prouoke him to ſhewe the vttermoſte of his power. When the meſſenger had thus doone his arant, *Maiobanexius* anſwered, that *Guarionexius* was a good man, indued with many vertues as all men knewe, and therfore he thought him worthy his ayde, eſpecially in as much as he fled to him for ſuccoure, and that he had made him ſuche promiſe, whom alſo he had proued to be his faithfull frend: againe, that they were noughty men, violent, and cruell, deſiring other mens goodes, and ſuch as ſpared not to ſhed innocentes blood: in fine, that he would not haue to doo with ſuche myſcheuous men, nor yet enter into frendſhyppe with them. When theſe thynges came to the Lieuetenauntes eare, he commaunded the village to be burnt where he hym ſelfe encamped, with manye other villages there about: and when he drewe nere to the place where *Maiobanexius* lay, he ſent meſſengers to him agayne, to common the matter with him, and to wyll hym to ſend ſome one of his moſte faythfull frendes to entreate with hym of peace. Whereuppon the kyng ſent vnto hym one of his cheefe gentelmen, and with hym two other to wayte on hym. When he came to the Lieuetenauntes preſence,

Kyng Guarionexius.

Naturall hatred of vyce.

sence, he frendly requyred hym to perswade his lord and maister in his name, and earnestly to admonishe hym, not to suffer his flourishyng kyngdome to be spoyled, or hym selfe to abyde the hasarde of warre for *Guarionexius* sake: and further to exhorte hym to delyuer hym, excepte he woulde procure the destruction both of hym selfe, his people, and his countrey. When the messenger was returned, *Maiobanexius* assembled the people, declaring vnto them what was doone: but they cryed out on him to deliuer *Guarionexius*, and began to curse the daye that euer they had receaued hym, thus to disturbe theyr quietnesse. *Maiobanexius* answered them, that *Guarionexius* was a good man, & had well deserued of him, geuing him many princely presentes, and had also taught both his wife and him to sing and daunce, which thing he did not little esteeme, and was therfore fully resolued in no case to forsake him, or agaynst al humanitie to betray hys frende, which fled to him for succoure, but rather to abide al extremities with him, then to minister occasion of obloquie to slaunderers, to reporte that he had betraied his gheſt, whom he toke into his house with warranties. Thus dimissing the people, sighing and with sorowfull hartes, he called *Gnarionexius* before him, promising him agayne, that he would be partaker of his fortune while life lasted: in so much that he thought it not best to send any further woorde to the Lieuetenaunt, but appoynted him whom before he sent to him, to keepe the way with a garrison of men, to thintent, that yf any messengers should be sent from the Lieuetenaunt, to slay them by the way, and admit none to communication, or further entreatie of peace. In the meane time, the Lieutenaunt sent two, whereof the one was a captiue Ciguauian, and the other an Iland man, of them which were frendes to our men: and they were both taken and slaine. The Lieutenaunt followed them only with ten footemen & foure horsemen, finding his messengers dead in the way, he was further prouoked to wrath, and determined more extremely to deale with *Maiobanexius*, & therfore went forward incontinently with his whole army to his cheefe pallace of *Capronum*, where he yet lay in campe. At his approche, al ỹ kinges fled, euery man his way, & forsoke their capitaine *Maiobanexius*, who also with al his familye, fled to ỹ rough moũtaines. Some of the Ciguauians sought for

The Lieuetenaunts gentelnesse toward Maiobanexius.

A rare faithfulnesse in a barbarous kyng.

The Lieuetenauntes messengers are slayne.

Guarionexius to ſlay hym, for that he was the cauſe of all theſe troubles: but his feete ſaued his lyfe, for he fledde in tyme to the mountaines, where he lurked in maner alone among the deſolate rockes. Wheras now the Lieuetenauntes ſouldiers were forewerped with long warre, with watching, laboure, and hunger (for it was nowe three monethes ſence the warres began) many deſyred leaue to departe to the towne of Conception, where they had graneges, & exerciſed tillage. He gaue them their paſſeports with alowance of vittayles, and ſo that onely thyrtie remayned with hym. Theſe three mouethes warre, they contynued very paynefull and myſerablye: So that duryng al that tyme, they had none other meate but only *Cazibi*, that is, ſuch rootes wherof they make theyr bread, and that but ſeldome to theyr fyll: alſo *Vſias*, that is, lyttle beaſtes lyke Conyes, if by chaunce nowe and then they tooke ſome with theyr houndes. Their drinke was none other then water, ſuch as they founde, ſomtyme ſweete, and ſomtyme muddy, ſauerynge of the maryſhes. Emong theſe delicates, that lyttle ſleepe that they had, was euer for the moſt parte abrode vnder the firmament, and that not without watchemen, and in continual remoouing, as the nature of warre requireth. With theſe fewe therfore, the Lieuetenaunt determined to ſearche the mountaynes, dennes, and caues, if he coulde in any place fynde the ſteppes of *Maiobanexius* or *Guarionexius*. In the meane tyme certayne of his men (whom hunger enforced to goe a hunting, to proue if they coulde take any conies) chaunced vpon two of *Maiobanexius* familyers, which were ſent to certaine villages of his, to make prouiſion of bread. Theſe he enforced to declare where theyr lorde lay hid, & vſed the ſame alſo for guides, to bring our men to the place. Twelue of our men tooke this enterpryſe in hand, painting them ſelues after ỹ maner of the Ciguauians: So that by this ſtratageme or policie, they came ſodenly vppon *Maiobanexius*, and tooke hym priſoner, with his wyfe, children, & family, and conueighed them to the towne of Conception to the Lieuetenaunt. Within a fewe dayes after, hunger compelled *Guarionexius* to come out of the dennes, whom certaine of the people fearing the Lieuetenaunt, bewrayed to our hunters. The Lieuetenaunt being certified hereof, ſent foorth a bande of foote men, commaunding them to lye in ambuſhe vntyll

The Spaniardes are painfull in the warres.

A deſperate aduenture with thirtie men.

A pollicie.

fyll suche tyme as *Guarionexius* went from the playnes to the mountaynes, and then sodenly to entrappe hym. They went as they were commaunded, tooke hym, and brought hym away with them, and by this meanes were al the regions neare about pacified and quieted. A certayne noble woman of neare kynred to *Maiobanexius*, and wyfe to another kyng, whose dominion was yet vntouched, folowed hym in all these aduersities. They affirme this woman to be the fayrest and most beautifull, that euer nature brought foorth in the Iland: Whom, when the king her husbande, who loued her most ardently (as her beautie deserued) hearde say that she was taken prysoner, he wandered vp and downe the desartes lyke a man out of his wytte, not knowyng what to doo or say. But at the length, he came to the Lieutenaunt, promisyng most faythfullye, that he woulde submit him selfe and al that he coulde make, vnder his power, so that he woulde restore hym his wyfe. The Lieutenaunt accepted the condition, & restored him his wife, with certaine other rulers and gentlemen which he had taken prysoners before: chargyng them, and bynding them with an othe, to be euer redy at his commaundement. Shortly after, this king of his owne free motion, came agayne to the Lieutenaunt, bryngyng with him fyue thousande men without weapons, sauyng only suche instrumentes as they vse in tyllage of theyr ground. He brought with hym also seedes to sowe, wherwith at his owne charge, he caused such plentie of theyr corne and fruites to growe in sundry places of the larg vale, wherof we spake before, that shortly after, were seene many fayre and fruitfull feeldes that came therof: and for his gentelnesse being rewarded of the Lieuetenaunte with certayne of our thynges, he departed ioyfullye. When the report hereof came to the Ciguauians, it mooued the mindes of the kynges to hope of clemencie, whereuppon they came together to the Lieuetenaunt with humble submission and faithfull promyse, euer after to be vnder his obedience, desyryng hym to restore vnto them theyr kyng with his familie. At theyr request, the kynges wyfe and his housholde was set at libertie, but the king kept styl as a prysoner. These thynges dyd the Lieutenaunt in the Iland, not yet knowyng what his aduersaries and accusers had layde to his charge before the kyng of

A beautifull woman.

The kynges submit them selues to the Lieuetenaunt.

A newe gouernour of the Ilande.

Spaine: who being disquieted with theyr quarelinges and accusations, and especially for that by reason of theyr discention, of so greate abundance of golde and other thynges, there was as yet but lyttle brought into Spayne, appoynted a newe gouernour, which shoulde see a redresse in these thynges: and eyther to punyshe such as were fautie, or els to sende them to him. What was founde agaynst the Admirall and his brother, or agaynst his aduersaries which accused hym, I do not well knowe. But this I am sure of, that both the brethren are taken, brought, and caste in prison, with theyr goodes confiscate. But as soone as the king understode that they were brought bounde to Cales, he sent messengers in poste, with commaundement that they should be loosed and come freely to his presence: wherby he declared that he toke their troubles greeuously. It is also said, that the new gouernour sent letters to the kyng, written with the Admiralles hand in straunge and vnknowen syphringes, to his brother the Lieuetenaunt being absent, wyllyng hym to be in a redynes with a power of armed men to come and ayd hym, if the Gouernoure should proffer hym any violence. Whereof the gouernour hauing knowledge (as he sayth) beyng also aduertised that the Lieuetenaunt was gone to his brother before the men whiche he had prepared were in a redines, apprehended them both vnwares, before the multitude came togeather. What wyl folowe, tyme, the most true and prudent Iudge wyll declare. Thus fare ye well.

¶ The eygth booke of the fyrst Decade, to Cardinall *Lodouike*.

The Ocean sea heretofore vnknowen.



HE great, ryche, and plentifull Ocean sea, heretofore vnknowen, and nowe founde by *Christophorus Colonus* the Admiral, by thautoritie & furtherance of the Catholyke king, I haue presented vnto your honour (ryght noble Prince) like a golden chayne vnwrokmanly wrought: but you shal now receiue a pretious iewell to be appendaunt therto. Therefore among such as were pylottes or gouernours vnder the admyrall, and had dyligently marked the courses & dyfferences of the windes, many

many had lycences graunted them of the kyng to seeke further at theyr owne charges, vpon condition to pay hym faythfully his portion, which is the fyfte part. But because amonge all other, one *Petrus Alphonsus*, called *Nignus* by his surname, sayled to- The nauigation of Petrus Alphonsus.
warde the south with more prosperous fortune then any of the other, I thinke it best first to speake somewhat of his voyage. He therfore with only one shyp, well furnished at his owne charges, after that he had his passeporte, with commaundement in no case to cast anker past fyftye leagues distant from anye place where the Admirall had touched, sayled fyrst to *Paria*, where the Admiral founde both the men and women so laden with cheines, garlandes, and braselettes of pearles, as we haue sayde before. Coastyng therfore along by the same shore, accordyng to the kings commaundement (yet leauing behynd hym the regions of *Cumana* and *Manacapana*) he came to the regions which thinhabitantes therof cal *Curiana*, where he found a hauen (as he saith) much lyke the port of *Gades* or *Cales*: into the which enteryng, he sawe a farre of certayne houses one the shore, and perceyued, when he drewe neere, that it was a village of only eyght houses. Proceading yet further for the space of three myles, he espied an other village well replenyshed with people, where there met hym fyftye naked men on a company, hauing with them a certayne ruler, who desyred Alphonsus to come to theyr coastes. He brought with hym at thys tyme, many haukes belles, pynnes, nedels, braselettes, cheynes, garlandes, and rynges, with counterfet stones and glasses, and such other tryfelles, the which within the moment of an houre, he had exchaunged for fyfteene ounces of theyr pearles, which they wore aboute theyr neckes Pearles for tryfles.
and armes. Then they yet more ernestly desyred hym to sayle to theyr coastes, promysyng hym that he shoulde there haue as many pearles as he woulde desyre. He condiscended to theyr Great plentie of pearles.
request: and the day folowing, came to the place where they appoynted hym: Lying there at anker, a great multitude of people resorted to hym, instantly requyring hym to come alande. But when he consydered the innumerable multitude of people which was there assembled, and he had only .xxiii. men in his company, he durst not commit hym selfe to theyr handes, but gaue them to vnderstand by sygnes and tokens, that they shoulde

come to the shyp with their *Canoas*: for their boates (which the men of the iland cal *Canoas*) are made only of one whole peece of wood as in the Ilandes, yet more rude, and not so artificially as theyrs are: these they call *Gallitas*. These swarmed therfore to the shyp as faste as they might, bringyng with them greate plenty of pearles (which they cal *Tenoras*) exchanging the same for our marchaundies. He founde this people to be of gentyll nature, simple, and innocent, being conuersant with them in theyr houses, for the space of xx. dayes. Theyr houses are made of wood, couered with the leaues of date trees. Their meate for the moste parte, is the shelfyshes in the which the pearles are engendered, wherof their sea costes are full. They haue also greate plenty of wyld beastes, as hartes, wyld boores, and connies like vnto hares, both in coloure and bignesse, stocke doues also, and turtle doues: lykewyse geese and duckes, which they norishe in theyr houses as we doo. Peacockes flee aboute in maner in euery wood and groue, but they are not distinct with sundry colours as ours are: for the cockes are like vnto the hennes. These people of *Curiana* are craftie hunters, and exceding cunning archers, so that they will not lyghtly misse any beaste or byrde that they shoote at. Our men consumed certayne dayes heare very pleasauntely: durying which time, whosoeuer brought them a peacocke, had for the same foure pinnes: he that brought a pheasaunte, had two, and for a stocke doue, or turtle doue, one, and for a goose, a smale looking glasse, or a litle stone of glasse. Thus they bought and solde with profering and bydding, denying and refusing, as it had byn in a greate market. When pinnes were profered them, they asked what they shoulde do with them, being naked: But our men satisfied them with a craftie answere, declaring by tokens that they were very necessary, to picke theyr teeth, and to pull thornes out of theyr flesshe. But aboue al thynges, haukes belles were most esteemed among them, for theyr sound & faire colour, and woulde therfore geue much for one of them. Our men, lodging in their houses, heard in the nyght season horrible noyses & rorynges of wild beastes in the wooddes, whiche are full of exceding great and hygh trees of sundrye kindes: but the beastes of these woodes, are not noysome to men, for the people of the countrey goo daylye a huntyng

Shel fyshes in which pearles are engendred.

Theyr manner of bargapning.

The vse of pynnes.

Haukes belles in great estimation.

Roryng of wild beastes.

naked,

naked, with theyr bowes and arrowes, yet hath it not ben harde of, that any man hath ben ſlayne of any wylde beaſt. As many hartes or wylde boyes as our men woulde deſyre them to byyng, they woulde kyll in the woodes with their arrowes, and not to fayle to byyng them. They lacke kyne, goates and ſheepe. Theyr bread is made of rootes, as is theyrs of the Iſlands. This nation, hath blacke heare, groſſe and ſomwhat curlde, yet long alſo. They keepe theyr teeth very whyte, and for that purpoſe vſe to cary a certaine herbe betwene theyr lyppes for the moſt part of the day, and to waſhe theyr mouths when they caſt it away. The women doo all theyr buſynes at home in theyr howſes, and haue alſo the cure of tyllage of the grounde: but the men apply them ſelues to the warres and huntyng, to playe, ſyngyng and daunſyng. They haue ſundry kyndes of water pottes, iugges, and drinkyng cuppes made of earth in other places about them, and brought thyther for exchaung of other thynges: For they vſe fayres and markettes for the ſame purpoſe, and are greatly deſyrous of ſuch thynges, as are not brought forth or made in theyr countrey, as nature hath geuen a diſpoſytion to al men, to deſyre and be delyted with newe and ſtrang thynges. Many of them had hangyng at theyr pearles the images of certeine beaſtes and birdes, very artificiouſly made of golde, but not pure: theſe alſo are brought them from other places for exchang of other thynges. The golde wherof they are made, is natiue, and of much lyke fineneſs to that wherof the florens are coyned. The men of this countrey, incloſe theyr priuie members in a gourde, cutte after the faſhiō of a coddepice, or els couer the ſame with the ſhell of a tortoyſe, tyed about theyr loynes with laces of goſſampine cotton: In other places of that tract, they thruſt the ſynew within the ſheeth therof, and bynde the ſkinne faſt with a ſtring. The great wylde beaſtes wherof we ſpake before, and many other thynges which are not found in any of the Iſlandes, teſtifie that this region is parte of ỹ continet or firme lande. But the chiefeſt coniecture wherby they argue the ſame, is, that by the coaſtes of that lande, from *Paria* towarde the weſt, they ſayled about three .M. myles, findyng no ſigne or token of any ende. Theſe people of *Curiana* (whiche ſome call *Curtana*) being demaunded where they had ſuch plentie of golde, ſignified that it

Hartes and wylde boyes.

Cunnyng artificers.

Baſe golds.

Tokens of the continent or firme lande.

was

The goldeñ region of Canchieta.

was brought them from a region called *Canchieta*, or *Cauchieta*, beyng distant from them sixe iunnes, that is, sixe dayes iourney westwarde: and that theyr images of golde were made in the same region. Whereupon our men directed theyr voyage thyther immediatly, and arryued there at the Kalendes of Nouember, in the yeere of Christe a thousande and fyue hundred. The people of the countrey resorted to them without feare, bryngyng with them of the golde whiche we sayde to be native in that region. This people had also collers of pearles about theyr neckes, which were brought them from *Curiana* for exchaunge of theyr marchandises. None of them woulde exchaunge anye of those thynges whiche they had out of other countreys: as neyther the Curians golde, nor the Canchietans pearles: yet among the Canchietans they founde but lytle golde redy geathered. They toke with them from thence certayne very fayre Marmasets or Munkeyes, and many Poppyngayes of sundrye coloures. In the moneth of Nouember, the ayre was there most temperate, and nothyng colde. The guardens of the north pole were out of syght to both these people, they are so neare the Equinoctial. Of the degrees of the pole, they can geue none other accompte. These people are wel disposed men, of honest conditions, and nothyng suspitious, for almost al the nyght long they resorted to the shyppe with theyr boates, and went aboorde shyppe without feare, as dyd the Curians. They call pearles, *Corixas*. They are somewhat ielous, for when anye straungers come among them, they euer place theyr women behynde them. In this region of *Canchieta*, the gossampine trees growe of them selues commonly in many places, as doo with vs elmes, wyllowes, and sallowes: and therefore they vse to make breeches of cotton, wherewith they couer theyr priuie partes in many other regions thereabout. When they had yet sayled on forwarde by the same coastes, there came forth against them about two thousande men, armed after theyr manner, forbyddyng them to come alande. These people were so rude and sauage, that our men coulde by no meanes allure them to familiaritie. Our men therefore, contented only with theyr pearles, returned backe ẏ same way they came, where they remained with the Curians continually for the space of .xx. dayes, & fylled theyr bellies

The Equinoctial line.

Gossampine trees.

bellies wel with good meate. And here it seemeth to me not farre from my purpose, to declare what chaunced vnto them in theyr returne when they came now within the sight of the coast of *Paria*. They happened therfore in the way, at *Os Draconis*, and the gulfes of *Paria* (wherof we spake before) to meete with a nauy of xviii. Canoas of Canibales, which went a rouing to hunt for men: who assoone as they had espied our men, assailed their ship fiercely, & without feare enclosed ỹ same, disturbing our men on euery side with their arrowes: but our men so feared them with theyr gunnes, that they fled immediatly, whō our men folowing with the shyp boate, tooke one of theyr Canoas, and in it only one Canibal (for the other had escaped) and with him another man bounde, who with teares runnyng downe his cheekes, and with gesture of his handes, eyes, and head, signified that sixe of his companions had ben cruelly cut in peeces, and eaten of that mischeuous nation, and that he shoulde haue ben likewyse handled the day folowyng: wherefore they gaue hym power ouer the Canibal, to do with him what he would. Then with the Canibals owne clubbe, he layde on hym al that he might dryue with hande and foote, grinning and fretting as it had ben a wyld boze, thinkyng that he had not yet sufficiently reuenged the death of his companions, when he had beaten out his braynes and guttes. When he was demaunded after what sort the Canibales were woont to inuade other countreys, he answered, that they euer vsed to carye with them in theyr Canoas, a great multitude of clubbes, the whiche, wheresoeuer they do lande, they pytch in the grounde, and encampe them selues within the compasse of the same, to lye the more safely in the nyght season. In *Curiana* they founde the head of a captayne of the Canibales, nayled ouer the doore of a certayne gouernour for a token of victorye, as it had ben the standerde or helmet taken from the enimie in battayle. In these coastes of *Paria* is a region called *Haraia*, in the which great plentie of salt is geathered after a strange sorte: for the sea beyng there tossed with the power of the wyndes, dryueth the salte waters into a large playne by the sea syde, where, afterwarde when the sea wareth calme, and the sunne begynneth to shine, the water is conieled into most pure and whyte salte, wherewith innumerable shyppes myght be laden, yf men dyd resorte

Canibales in the gulfes of Paria.

Death for death.

Howe the Canibales fortifie their campe.

Haraia.

reſort thether for the ſame before there fale any rayne: For the rayne melteth it, and cauſeth it to ſynke into the ſande, and ſo by the pooꝛes of the earth, to returne to the place from whence it was dꝛyuen. Other ſay, that the playne is not fylled from the ſea, but of certeine ſpꝛynges whoſe water is moꝛe ſharpe and ſalt then the water of the ſea. Thinhabitantes do greatlye eſteeme this bay of ſalt, whiche they vſe, not only for theyꝛ owne commoditie, but alſo wooꝛking the ſame into a ſquare foꝛme lyke vnto bꝛickes, they ſell it to ſtrangers for exchaunge of other thynges whiche the lacke. In this Region, they ſtretche and dꝛye the dead bodies of theyꝛ kinges and noble men, laying the ſame vpon a certayne frame of wooode, muche lyke vnto a hurdle oꝛ grediren, with a gentell fyꝛe vnder the ſame, by lyttle and lyttle conſumyng the fleſhe, and keping the ſkynne hole with the bones incloſed therein. Theſe dꝛyed carcaſes, they haue in great reuerence, and honour them for theyꝛ houſhoulde and famylier gods. They ſay that in this place they ſawe a man, & in an other place a woman, thus dꝛyed and reſerued. When they departed from *Curiana*, the .viii. day of the Ides of Febꝛuary, to returne to Spayne, they had threeſcoꝛe and .xvi pounde weight (after .viii. vnces to the pounde) of pearles, which they bought for exchange of our thinges, amounting to the value of fyue ſhillinges. Departing therfoꝛe, they conſumed threeſcoꝛe dayes in theyꝛ iourney (although it were ſhoꝛter then from *Hiſpaniola*) by reaſon of the continuall courſe of the ſea in the weſt, which dyd not only greatly ſtey the ſhippe, but alſo ſomtymes dꝛyue it backe. But at the length they came home ſo laden with pearles, that they were with euery maryner, in maner as common as chaffe. But the maſter of the ſhyppe, *Petrus Alphonſus*, being accuſed of his companyons that he had ſtowlen a great multitude of pꝛetious pearles, and defrauded the kyng of his poꝛtion whiche was the fifth parte, was taken of *Fernando de Vega*, a man of great lerning and experience, & gouernour of *Gallecia*, where they arꝛyued, and was there kept in pꝛyſon a long tyme. But he ſtyll denyeth that euer he deteyned any part of the pearles. Many of theſe pearles were as bygge as haſell nuttes, and as oꝛiente (as we call it) as they be of the Eaſt partes: Yet not of ſo great pꝛyce, by reaſon that the holes thereof are not ſo perfecte. When I my ſelfe

Springes of ſalt water.

The bodyes of pynces dyed and reſerued.

Oꝛient pearles as bygge as Haſel nuts.

selfe was present with the right honorable duke of *Methyna*, and was biddē to dynner with him, in the citie of Ciuile, they brought to hym aboue a hundred and twentie ounces of pearles to be solde, whiche surely dyd greatly delyte me with their fayrenes and brightnes. Some say, that *Alphonsus* had not these pearles in *Curiana*, being distant from *Os Draconis* more then a hundred & twentie leagues, but that they had them in the regions of *Cumana* and *Manacapana*, nere vnto *Os Draconis* and the ilande of *Margarita*: for they deny that there is any pearles founde in *Curiana*. But sith the matter is yet in controuersie, we wyl passe to other matters. Thus muche you haue, whereby you may coniecture, what commoditie in tyme to come may bee looked for from these newe landes of the west Ocean, whereas at the fyrst discouering, they shewe suche tokens of great ryches. Thus fare ye well.

The Ilande of Margarita.

¶ The .ix. booke of the fyrst Decade to Cardinal *Lodouike*.

Incentiagnes Pinzonus, & also *Aries Pinzonus*, his neuiew by his brother syde, whiche accompanyed the Admiral *Colonus* in his fyrst vyage, & were by him appoynted to be maisters of two of the small shippes which the Spaniards call *Carauelas*, being moued by the great ryches & amplitude of the new landes, furnyshed of theyr owne charges foure Carauels, in the hauen of theyr owne countrey, which the Spanyardes cal *Palos*, bordering on the west Ocean. Hauing therfore the kings licence & passeport to depart, they loosed from the hauen, about the Calendes of December, in the yeere. 1499. This hauen of *Palos*, is threescore & twelue myles distant from *Gades*, commonly called *Cales*, and .lxiiii. myles from Ciuile. All thinhabitantes of this towne, not one excepted, are greatly geuē to searching of the sea, and continually exercised in sayling. They also directed their viage fyrst to the iland of Canarie by the ilands of *Hesperides*, now called *Cabouerde*, which some cal *Gorgodes Meducias*. Sayling therfore directly toward the south from that ilande of *Hesperides* whiche the Portugales (beyng possessers of the same) cal *Sancti Iacobi*,

The nauigation of Vincentius, and Aries Pinzonus.

The Ilandes of Canarie. Cabouerde.

S. Iames Ilande.

Iacobi, and departing from thence at the Ides of Ianuary, they folowed the southwest wynde, beyng in the myddest betwene the south and the west. When they supposed that they had sayled about three hundreth leagues by the same wynde, they say that they lost the syght of the Northe starre: and were shortely after tossed with excedyng tempestes bothe of wynde and sea, and vexed with intollerable heate: Yet sayled they on further (not without great daunger) for the space of two hundred & fortie leagues, folowing yet the same wynd by the lost pole. Wherfore, whether habitable regions be vnder the Equinoctiall lyne or not, let these men and the oulde wryters, aswel Philosophers as poetes and cosmographers discusse. For these mẽ affirme it to be habitable, and meruelously replenished with people: and they, that it is vnhabitable by reason of the sonne beames depending perpendicularly or directlye ouer the same. Yet were there many of the olde wryters, whiche attempted to proue it habitable. These maryners being demaunded, if they saw the south pole, they answered that they knew no starre there like vnto this pole, that might be deterned about the poynt: but that they sawe an other order of starres, and a certeyne thicke myst rysyng from the horizontall lyne, whiche greatly hyndered theyr syght. They contende also, that there is a great heape or rysyng in the myddest of the earth, whiche taketh away the syght of the south pole, vntyll they haue vtterly passed ouer the same: but they verely beleeue that they sawe other images of starres, muche differing from the situation of the starres of our hemispherie, or halfe circle of heauen. Howe so euer the matter be, as they informe vs, we certifie you. At the length, the seuenth day of the calendes of Februarye, the espied lande a farre of, and seeing the water of the sea to be troubelous, sounding with theyr plummet, they founde it to be. xvi fathames deepe. Going a lande, and tarying there for the space of two dayes, they departed, bycause they sawe no people sterring, although they founde certeyne steppes of men by the sea syde. Thus grauing on the trees & the stones nere vnto the shore, the kynges name and theyrs, and the tyme of theyr commyng thether, they departed. Not farre from this station, folowyng the fyers on the land by nyght, they founde a nation lying vnder the

The north pole out of sight.

Habitable regions vnder the Equinoctial lyne.

the open fyrmament, after the maner of warre. Our men thought it not best to trouble them vntyll the morrynge. Therfore, at the rysyng of the sonne, fortie of our men well armed, wente towarde them: agaynst whom came forth. xxxii. of them, with bowes, slynges and dartes, euen redy to fyght. The other companye folowed them, armed after the same maner. Our men affirme that they were of hygher stature then eyther the Almaynes or Pannonians. They beheld our men with frownyng & threatenyng countenaunce: but our men thought it not good to fal to bickering with them, vncertayne whether it were for feare, or bycause they would not dryue them to fight. Wherfore they went about to allure them by faire meanes & rewards: but they refused all kynde of gentelnes, and stoode euer in a redines to fight, declaring the same by signes and tokens. Thus our men resorted to theyr shyppes, and they to the place from whence they came, without any further busines. The same nyght about mydnyght, they fledde, & left the place voyde where they lay in the campe. Our men suppose them to be a vagabund and wandering nation, lyke vnto the Scythians, without houses or certeyne dwelling places, lyuing only with the fruites of the earth, hauing theyr wyues and chyldren folowing them. Suche as measured their footesteppes in the sande, affirme with great othes, that one of theyr feete is almost as long as two feete of our men of the meane sorte. Sayling on yet further, they founde an other riuer, but not of deapth sufficient to beare the Carauels: they sent therefore the foure shippe boates to lande, full of armed men to search the countrey. They espyed vppon a hygh hyll nere vnto the sea syde, a greate multitude of people, to whom our company sent forth one man with certeyne of our thynges to allure them to exchange. And when he had cast a haukes bell towarde them, they cast downe a wedge of golde a cubit longe: the which as he stouped to take vp, they sodenly inclosed hym, and caryed hym away. But he was shortly after rescued by his companions, to some of their paynes: for they slue eyght of our men, & wounded many a farre of, with theyr arrowes, and dartes made of wood, hardened at the endes with fyre. After this they encompassed our shippe boates within the ryuer, and came rashly within the reache of our men, laying holde on the boates

People of high stature.

A vagabounde kynde of men.

Giantes.

sydes,

Desperate boldnesse.

sydes, where they were thrust through, and hewen in peeces as if had ben sheepe, by reason they were naked. Yet woulde they not for al this geue ouer, but tooke from our men one of their boates, hauing no men in it: for the gouernour thereof being slayne with an arrowe, the other fledde and escaped. And thus they lefte this fierce and warlyke people, saylyng toward the north-west, along by the same coastes, with sorowfull hartes for the death of their companyons. When they had sayled about .xl. leagues, they chaunced into a sea of suche freshe water, that they fylled their barelles and hoggesheades therewith. Searching the cause hereof, they vnderstoode that a vehement course of riuers discended with great violence from the toppes of certayne great hylles. They say also that there lyeth within the sea, many fortunate and fruitfull Ilandes, and well inhabited, and that thinhabitantes of this tracte are men of meeke nature, and suche as doo not refuse straungers, yet lyttle profytable to them, because they haue no marchandyes for their purpose, as golde, or precious stones: for lacke whereof, they brought from thence thyrtie captiues to sell for slaues. Thinhabitantes call this region *Mariatambal*. The region of the east part of that ryuer, is called *Camomorus*, and that of the west part *Paricora*, in the mid-lande whereof, thinhabitantes signifyed that there is great plentie of golde: For, folowing this riuer directly toward the North (as the bending of the shore requyred) they recouered againe the syght of the north pole. All the coaste of this tracte, parteyneth to *Paria*, the which (as we sayd before) was fyrst found by *Colonus* hym selfe, and hath in maner in euery place great abundaunce of pearles. They say that these coastes are adioynyng vnto, and all one with *Os Draconis*, and also borderyng vppon the regions of *Cumana, Manacapana, Curiana, Cauchieta*, and *Cuchibachoa*: Wherfore they thought it to be part of the firme lande of India, beyonde the riuer of *Ganges*. For the great & large compasse therof, doth not permit that it shoulde be an ilande, albeit the whole earth vncouered with water, largely taken, may be called an Ilande. From the poynt of that land where they lost the sight of the north pole, saylyng by a continuall tracte about three hundred leagues towarde the west syde of *Paria*, they say that (almost in the mid way) they chaunced into a riuer called *Maragnonum*, whiche

A sea of freshe water.

Many fruitful Ilandes.

Humane people.

Regions of Paria.

Gold & pearles

whiche they affirme to be of suche exceedyng breadth, that it might seeme incredible, yf the antiques dyd not make mention of the lyke. Beyng demaunded of me yf it were not salt water where it diuided the lande, they answeared that the water therof was very fresshe and sweete, and that the further it ranne, to be so muche the fresher: also ful of Ilandes and wholsome fyshe: they dare auouche the breadth therof to be moze then thirtie leagues. Yet yf we wel weigh and consyder the largenesse and widenesse of *Boriostomea* and *Spiriostomea*, the mouthes of the famous riuer of *Ister* (nowe called *Danubius*) and howe farre they violate oz corrupt the salt water with their freshnesse, we shal ceasse to marueyle, although this other riuer be greater: foz who can diminish the power of nature, but that it may make this bigger then the other, and another bygger then this? And I suppose this to be the ryuer whereof *Colonus* the Admirall made mention in the description of his voyage in these coastes. But we shal hereafter haue further knowledge hereof: let vs nowe therefoze returne to the commodities of these regions. They found in many Ilands about *Paria*, great wooddes of Brasile trees, and brought away with them three thousande poundes weyght thereof. They say that the Brasile of *Hispaniola*, is muche better then this to dye cloth with a moze fayze and durable colour. From hence, folowing the winds (which the Spaniards cal *Northuest*, and the Italians *Græco*) they passed by many Ilandes very fruiteful, yet left desolate and wasted by reason of the crueltie of the Canibales: foz they went alande in many places, they founde the ruines of many destroyed houses: yet in some places they founde men, but those exceedyng fearefull, fleeyng to the mountaynes, rockes, and wooddes at the syght of euery straunger oz shyppe, & wanderyng without houses oz certayne abydyng places, foz feare of the Caniballes laying wayte and huntyng after them. Here they found those great trees whiche of them selues in dyuers places bryng forth that fruite oz spice, which the Apothecaries cal *Cassia Phistula*, and that of no lesse goodnesse, then that which the phisitians minister to suche as be diseased with the ague, but it was not rype at theyz beyng there. They affirme that there are trees of suche bygnesse, that .vi. men ioyning handes togeather, and standyng in compasse, can scarcely embrace some of them.

The commodities of the regions & Ilands about Paria. Brasile.

Canibales.

Trees of Cassia fistula.

A monſtrous beaſt.

Among theſe trees is found that monſtrous beaſte with a ſnoute lyke a foxe, a tayle lyke a marmaſette, eares lyke a bat, handes lyke a man, and feete lyke an ape, bearyng her whelpes aboute with her in an outwarde bellye much lyke vnto a great bagge or purſe. The deade carkas of this beaſte, you ſawe with me, and turned it ouer and ouer with your owne handes, marueylyng at that new belly, and wonderful prouiſion of nature. They ſay it is knowen by experience, that ſhe neuer letteth her whelpes goo out of that purſe, except it be ether to play, or to ſucke, vntyll ſuche tyme that they be able to gette theyr lyuyng by them ſelues. They tooke thys beaſte with her whelpes: But the whelpes dyed ſhortely after in the ſhyppes. Yet the damme liued certaine monethes: but at the length, not being able to abide ſo great alteration of ayre, and change of meate, ſhe died alſo in the way. But of this beaſte, we haue ſaidt enongh. Let vs now therfore returne to the aucthours of theſe thinges. Theſe two *Pinzoni*, the vncle and the neuiew, ſuſteyned many greate troubles & horrible tempeſtes and perilles in this nauigation. For when they had nowe ſailed by the coaſtes of *Paria* about fyue hundred leagues, & (as they ſuppoſed) beyond the citie of *Cathay*, and the coſtes of Eaſt Iudia beyond the riuer of Ganges, there roſe ſodenly ſo fierce a tempeſt in the moneth of Iuly, that of the four Carauels which they had with them, two were drowned euen before theyr eyes: and the thyrd lying at anker, with lyke ſodennes caried out of theyr ſyght throwgh the violence of the tempeſt: the fourth alſo lying at anker, was ſo ſhaken and broſed, that all the ſeames therof were almoſt looſed: Yet came they to land out of this laſt ſhyp, but vtterly deſpayryng of the ſhyp. Wherfore conſultyng with them ſelues what was beſt to bee donne in ſo extreeme a caſe, and how to prouyde them a ſafe dwellyng place in thoſe Regions, beyng out of all hope how to depart from thence, they determyned to ſlay all the inhabytauntes of the countrey nere about them, leaſt they with the other ſhoulde conſpyre together to kyll them, but theyr fortune was better: For the Carauel which the tempeſt had caried away, was come to them agayne. This had in it. xviii. men: And the other that remayned, was ſaued and repayred. With theſe two therfore, they tooke theyr voyage directly to Spayne,

Extreme remedie in a deſperate caſe.

and

and thus being tossed with tempestes, and vexed with aduersities, they returned to theyr natyue countrey of *Palos*, to theyr wyues and chyldren, the day before the Calendes of October, with the losse of many of theyr deere frends & neighbours. They brought with them Cinamome and ginger: but not very good, because they were not there fully seasoned with the heate of the sonne, before they brought them from thence. They brought also certayne pretious stones, which *Baptista Elysius* that excellent philosopher, and your lordshyppes phisition, affirmeth to be true Topases. After these mens returne, other of theyr neighbours being moued therto by a certaine emulation, to proue yf theyr fortune wold be any better, lyke men of good corage, beyng nothing discomforted by the hard fortune of their neighboures, knowing that it often times chaunceth, that that which is one mans vndoing, is an other mans making, attempted a newe voiage toward the south by ỹ costes of *Paria*, folowyng the steps of *Colonus* the Admiral, who had fyrste discouered the same. They also brought with them great plentie of *Cassia fistula*, and founde that precious medicine called of the Spaniards *Animæ album*, whose perfume is of most excellent effect to heale the reumes, murres, and heauines of the head. As touching this vyage, as yet I know no other newes that I thought woorthy to certifie you of, wherfore, I wyl nowe make an ende of this booke, because you put me so often in remembrance of your departure: Yet to accomplyshe the Decade, I wyl declare somewhat of the superstitions of *Hispaniola*. You shall nowe therfore vnderstand the illusions wherewith the people of the Ilande haue ben seduced after the errours of the olde gentilitie, and wandered in the ignorance and blyndnesse of humane nature, corrupted by the disobedience of our fyrst parentes, whiche hath remayned in all nations vpon the face of the earth, except where it hath pleased GOD by the lyght of his spirite by his woorde, to powre vpon his electe the grace of renouation, by the lyght whereof the natural darkenesse receiueth some cleareneſſe as in a glasse, vntil imperfection shalbe abolished. Our men therefore were long in the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, before they knewe that the people thereof honoured any other thyng then the lyghtes of heauen, or had anye other religion: but when they had ben nowe long conuersaunt

Cinamome and Ginger.

Topases.

Men of noble courage.

Another voyage.

Animæ album

The superstitions of Hispaniola.

The errours of the olde gentilitie.

with them, and by vnderstandyng their language, drew to a further familiaritie, they had knowledge that they vsed diuers rites and superstitions: I haue therefore geathered these fewe thinges folowyng, out of a booke wrytten by one *Ramonus* an Heremite, whom *Colonus* had left with certayne kynges of the Ilande to instruct them in the Christian fayth. And because in manner their whole religion is none other thyng then idolatrie, I wil begyn at theyr idolles. It is therefore apparant by the images whiche they honour openly and commonly, that there appeare vnto them in the nyght seasons, certayne phantasies and illusions of euil spirites, seducing them into many fonde and foolish errours: for they make certayne images of Gossampine cotton, folded or wreathed after theyr manner, and hard stopped within. These images they make syttyng, muche lyke vnto the pyctures of spirites and deuyls which our paynters are accustomed to paynt vpon walles: but forasmuche as I mee selfe sent you foure of these images, you may better presently signifie vnto the kyng your vncle, what manner of thynges they are, and howe like vnto paynted deuylles, then I can expresse the same by wrytyng. These images, the inhabitantes call *Zemes*, whereof the least, made to the lykenesse of young deuyls, they bynde to their foreheades when they goe to the warres agaynst theyr enimies, and for that purpose haue they those stringes hangyng at them which you see. Of these, they beleeue to obteyne rayne, yf rayne be lackyng, lykewyse fayre weather: for they thynke that these *Zemes* are the mediatours and messengers of the great god, whom they acknowledge to be only one, eternal, without ende, omnipotent, and inuisible. Thus euery king hath his particuler *Zemes*, whiche he honoureth. They cal the eternal god by these two names, *Iocauna* and *Guamaonocon*, as theyr predecessours taught them, affyrmyng that he hath a father called by these fiue names: that is, *Attabeira, Mamona, Guacarapita, Liella, Guimazoa*. Nowe shal you heare what they fable on the earth as touching the original of man There is in the Iland, a region called *Caunana*, where they fayne that mankynde came fyrst out of two caues of a mountayne: and that the byggest sorte of men came forth of the mouth of the byggest caue, and the least sort out of the least caue. The rocke in the which these caues are, they call

Idolatrie and idolles.

Illusions of euil spirites. Images of gossampine cotton.

Young deuyls.

Cauta,

Cauta. The greatest denne, they name *Cazibaxagua*, and the lesse, *Amaiauna*. They say, that before it was lawfull for men to come fooyth of the caue, the mouth of the caue was kept and watched nyghtly by a man whose name was *Machochael*: this *Machochael*, departyng somewhat farre from the caue, to the intent to see what things were abrode, was sodenly taken of the sunne, (whose syght he was forbidden) & was turned into a stone. They fayne the lyke of diuers other, that whereas they went fooyth in the nyght season a fyshyng so farre from the caue, that they could not returne before the rysyng of the sunne (the whiche it was not lawful for them to beholde) they were transfourmed into Myrobalane trees, which of them selues grow plentifully in the Iland. They say furthermore, that a certayne ruler called *Vagoniona*, sent one fooyth of the caue to goe a fyshyng, who by like chaunce was turned into a Nyghtingale, because the sunne was rysen before he came agayne to the caue: and that yeerely about the same time that he was turned into a bryde, he doth in the nyght with a mournyng song bewayle his mysfortune, and call for the helpe of his maister *Vagoniona*: And this they thynke to be the cause why that bryd syngeth in the nyght season. But *Vagoniona*, beyng sore troubled in his mind for the losse of his familiar frend whom he loued so entirely, leauyng the men in the caue, brought fooyth only the women with theyr suckyng chyldren, leauyng the women in one of the Ilands of that tracte, called *Mathinino*, and caryed the chyldren away with hym: which poore wretches oppressed with famine, faynted and remayned on the banke of a certayne riuer, where they were turned into frogges, and cryed *toa, toa*, that is, *mamma, mamma*, as chyldren are woont to crye for the mothers pappe. And hereof they say it commeth that frogges vse to crye so pitifully in the sprying tyme of the yeere: And that men were scattered abrode in the caues of *Hispaniola* without the company of women. They say also, that where as *Vagoniona* him selfe was accustomed to wander in diuers places, and yet by a special grace neuer transfourmed, descended to a certayne fayre woman whom he sawe in the bottome of the sea, and receiued of her certayne pibble stones of marble (which they cal *Cibas*) and also certayne yellowe and bright plates of latton, which they cal *Guaninos*. These thinges to this day are had in great

Fables much like Ouide his transformations.

The Nyghtingale.

The Iland of Mathinino.

Children turned into Frogs

A special grace.

Holy reliques.

great estimation among the kynges, as goodly iewelles, and most holy reliques. But nowe (moste noble prynce) you shall heare a more pleasaunt fable. There is a certayne caue called *Iouanaboina*, in the territorie of a certayne kyng whose name is *Machinnech*: This caue they honour more religiously then dyd the Grekes in tyme paste, *Corinth*, *Cyrrha*, or *Nysa*, and haue adourned it with pyctures of a thousand fashions. In thentrance of this caue they haue two grauen *Zemes*, wherof the one is called *Binthaitel*, and the other *Marohu*. Beyng demaunded why they had this caue in so great reuerence, they answered earnestly, because the sunne and the moone came fyrst out of the same to geue lyght to the worlde: they haue religious concourse to these caues, as we are accustomed to goe on Pylgrimage to Rome, or Vaticane, Compostella, or Hierusalem, as most holy & head places of our religion. They are also subiect to another kynde of superstition: for they thynke that dead folkes walke in the night, and eate the fruite called *Guannaba*, vnknowen vnto vs, & somewhat like vnto a Quinse: affyrmyng also that they are cõuersant with lyuyng people, euen in theyr beddes, and to deceiue women in takyng vpon them the shape of men, shewyng them selues as though they woulde haue to do with them: but when the matter commeth to actual deede, sodaynely to vanishe away. If any do suspect that a dead body lyeth by him, whẽ he feeleth any strange thyng in the bed, they say he shalbe out of doubt by feelyng of the belly thereof: affyrmyng that the spirites of dead men may take vpon them al the members of mans body, sauing only the nauel. If therfore by the lacke of ỹ nauel he do perceiue that a dead body lyeth by him, the feelyng is immediatly resolued. They beleeue verily, that in the nyght, and oftentimes in theyr iourneys, and especiallye in common and high wayes, dead men do meete with the lyuyng: Agaynst whom, yf any man be stowte and out of feare, the fantasie vanysheth incontinentlye: but yf anye feare, the fantasye or vision dooth so assaulte hym and strycke hym with further feare, that manye are thereby astonyshed, and haue the lymmes of theyr bodyes taken. The inhabitauntes beyng demaunded of whom they had those vayne superstitions, they aunswered, that they were lefte them of theyr forefathers, as by discent of inheritaunce, and that they haue had

A holy caue.

The original of the sunne and moone.

Walkyng spirites.

A remedie agaynst walkyng spirites.

had the same before the memorie of man, composed in certayne rymes and songues, whiche it was lawful for none to learne, but only the kynges sonnes, who committed the same to memorye, because they had neuer any knowledge of letters. These they syng before the people on certayne solemne and festuall dayes, as most religious ceremonies: whyle in the meane tyme they play on a certaine instrument made of one whole peece of wood, somewhat holowe lyke a tymbrel. Theyr priestes and diuines (whom they cal *Boitios*) instructe them in these superstitions: These priestes are also phisitions, deuysyng a thousande craftes and subtilties howe to deceiue the symple people whiche haue them in great reuerence: for they perswade them that the *Zemes* vse to speake with them familiarlye, and tel them of thinges to come. And yf any haue ben sycke, and are recouered, they make them beleue that they obteyned theyr health of the *Zemes*. These *Boitii* binde them selues to muche fastyng, and outwarde cleanlynesse, and pourgynges, especially when they take vpon them the cure of any prince, for then they drynke the powder of a certaine herbe, by whose qualitie they are driuen into a fury, at whiche time (as they say) they learne many thinges by reuelation of the *Zemes*. Then puttyng secretely in theyr mouthes, eyther a stone, or a bone, or a peece of flesshe, they come to the sicke person, commaundyng al to depart out of that place, except one or two, whom it shal please the sycke man to appoynt: this done, they goe about hym three or foure tymes, greatly deformyng theyr faces, lyps, and nosthils, with sundry fylthy gestures, blowing, breathyng, and suckyng the forehead, temples, and necke of the patient, whereby (they say) they drawe the euyl ayre from him, and sucke the disease out of his vaynes: then rubbyng hym about the shoulders, thyghes, and legges, and drawyng downe theyr handes close by his feete, holdyng them yet faste togeather, they runne to the doore beyng open, where they vnclose and shake theyr handes, affyrmyng that they haue driuen away the disease, and that the pacient shall shortly be perfectlye restored to health. After this, commyng behynde hym, he conueigheth a peece of flesshe out of his owne mouth lyke a iuggeler, and sheweth it to the sycke man, saying, Beholde, you haue eaten to muche, you shal nowe be whole, because I haue

Priestes and diuines. Phisitions.

Ignorance is nourished with superstition.

A powder of marueylous effect.

A strange maner of curyng.

Angry gods.

taken this from you. But yf he entende yet further to deceiue the patient, he perſwadeth hym that his *Zemes* is angry, eyther because he hath not buylded hym a chappell, or not honoured hym religiouſly, or not dedicated vnto hym a groue or garden. And if it ſo chaunce that the ſycke perſon dye, his kynſfolks, by witchcrafte, enforce the dead to confeſſe whether he dyed by naturall deſteny, or by the negligẽce of the *Boitius*, in that he had not faſted as he ſhoulde haue done, or not miniſtred a conuenient medicine for the diſeaſe: ſo that if this phiſition be founde fautie, they take reuenge of hym. Of theſe ſtones or bones whiche theſe *Boitii* cary in theyr mouthes, yf the women can come by them, they keepe them religiouſly, beleeuyng them to be greatly effectuall to helpe women trauaylyng with chylde, and therefore honour them as they do theyr *Zemes*. For diuers of the inhabitantes honour *Zemes* of diuers faſhions: ſome make them of wood, as they were admonyſhed by certayne viſions appearing vnto them in the woods: Other, whiche haue receiued aunſwere of them among the rockes, make them of ſtone and marble. Some they make of rootes, to the ſimilitude of ſuche as appeare to them when they are geatheryng the rootes called *Ages*, whereof they make theyr bread, as we haue ſayd before. Theſe *Zemes* they beleue to ſend plentie & fruitfulnes of thoſe rootes, as the antiquitie beleued ſuch fayries or ſpirites as they called *Dryades*, *Hamadryades*, *Satyros*, *Panes*, and *Nereides*, to haue the cure & prouidence of the ſea, woods, ſprynges, and fountaynes, aſſignyng to euerye thing their peculier goddes: Euen ſo do thinhabitantes of this Iſlande attribute a *Zemes* to euery thyng, ſuppoſyng the ſame to geue eare to theyr inuocations. Wherefore, as often as the kyngs aſke counſel of theyr *Zemes* as concernyng their warres, increaſe of fruites, or ſcarcenes, or health and ſickneſſe, they enter into the houſe dedicate to theyr *Zemes*, where, ſnuffing vp into theyr noſthyrls the pouder of the herbe called *Cohobba* (wherwith the *Boitii* are dryuen into a furie) they ſay that immediatly they ſee the houſes turned topſye turuie, and men to walke with theyr heeles vpward, of ſuch force is this pouder, vtterly to take away al ſence. As ſoone as this madneſſe ceaſſeth, he embraceth his knees with his armes, holdyng downe his head. And when he hath remayned thus a whyle aſtonyſhed, he lyfteth vp his head

They make the dead to ſpeake.

Fayries or ſpirites of the gentiles, much like to the papiſtes.

The pouder of the herbe Cohobba.

head, as one that came newe out of ſleepe: and thus lookyng vp toward heauen, fyrſt he fumbleth certaine confounded wooꝛdes with hym ſelfe, then certayne of the nobilitie oꝛ cheefe gentlemen that are about him (foꝛ none of the common people are admitted to theſe myſteries) with loude voyces geue tokens of reioycing that he is returned to them from the ſpeach of the *Zemes*, demaundyng of hym what he hath ſeene. Then he openyng his mouth, doateth that the *Zemes* ſpake to hym duryng the tyme of his traunce, declaryng that he had reuelations either concerning victoꝛie oꝛ deſtruction, famine oꝛ plentie, health oꝛ ſyckeneſſe, oꝛ whatſoeuer happeneth fyrſt on his tongue. Nowe (moſt noble Pꝛince) what neede you hereafter to marueyle of the ſpirite of *Apollo* ſo ſhakyng his Sibylles with extreme furie: you had thought that the ſuperſtitious antiquitie had perylhed. But nowe wheras I haue declared thus muche of the *Zemes* in generall, I thought it not good to let paſſe what is ſayde of them in particuler. They ſay therefoꝛe that a certayne kyng called *Guamaretus*, had a *Zemes* whoſe name was *Corochotum*, who (they ſay) was oftentimes woont to deſcend from the hygheſt place of the houſe where *Guamaretus* kept hym faſt bound. They affirme, that the cauſe of this his breakyng of his bandes and departure, was eyther to hyde hym ſelfe, oꝛ to goe ſeeke foꝛ meate, oꝛ els foꝛ the acte of generation: and that ſometymes beyng offended that the kyng *Guamaretus* had ben negligent and ſlacke in honouring hym, he was woont to lye hyd foꝛ certayne dayes. They ſay alſo, that in the kynges byllage there are ſometyme chyldꝛen boꝛne hauyng two crownes, whiche they ſuppoſe to be the chyldꝛen of *Corochotum* the *Zemes*. They fayne likewyſe, that *Guamaretus* being ouercome of his enimies in battayle, and his billage with the pallace conſumed with fyꝛe, *Corochotus* brake his bands, and was afterwarde founde a furlong of, ſafe and without hurte. He hath alſo another *Zemes* called *Epileguanita*, made of wood, in ſhape lyke a foure footed beaſt: who alſo is ſayde, often tymes to haue gonne from the place where he is honoured, into the wooddes. As ſoone as they perceiue hym to be gone, a great multitude of them geather togeather to ſeeke him, with deuout prayers: and when they haue founde hym, byng hym home religiouſly on theyꝛ ſhoulders to the chappel dedica-

Secrete myſteries.

Reuelations.

The ſpirite of Apollo.

The Sibylles.

Childꝛen with two crownes.

Wandering images.

ted

ted vnto hym. But they complayne, that sence the commyng of the Christian men into the Iland, he fled for altogeather, and coulde neuer sence be founde, wherby they diuined the destruction of theyr countrey. They honoured an other *Zemes* in the lykenes of a woman, on whom wayted two other lyke men, as they were mynisters to her. One of these, executed thoffice of a mediatour to the other *Zemes*, which are vnder the power and commaundement of this woman, to raise wyndes, cloudes, and rayne. The other is also at her commaundement a messenger to the other *Zemes*, which are ioyned with her in gouernaunce, to geather togeather the waters which fall from the hygh hylles to the valleies, that being loosed, they may with force bruste out into greate floodes, and ouerflowe the countrey, yf the people do not geue due honoure to her Image. There remayneth yet one thing worthy to be noted, wherwith we will make an end of this booke. It is a thing well knowen, and yet freshe in memory among the inhabitantes of the iland, that there was somtime two kings (of the which one was the father of *Guarionexius*, of whom we made mention before) which were woont to absteyne fyue daies togeather continualy from meate & drinke, to know somewhat of their *Zemes* of thinges to come, and that for this fasting beyng acceptable to their *Zemes*, they receyued answere of them, that within few yeeres there shoulde come to the ilande a nation of men couered with apparell, which should destroy al the customes and ceremonies of the iland, and eyther slay al theyr children, or bring them into seruitude. The common sort of the people vnderstode this oracle to be ment of the Canibales, & therfore when they had any knowledge of theyr comming, they euer fled, and were fully determined neuer more to aduenture the battayle with them. But when they saw that the Spanyardes had entered into the Ilande, consultyng among them selues of the matter, they concluded that this was the nation whiche was ment by thoracle. Wherin, theyr opinyon deceyued them not, for they are nowe all subiect to the Chrystians, all such beyng slayne as stoberely resysted: Nor yet remayneth there anye memorye of theyr *Zemes*, for they are all brought into Spayne, that we myght be certyfyed of theyr illusions of euyll spyrites and Idolles, the which you your selfe (most noble Prynce) haue

A woman Zemes of great power. Mediatours.

A marueylous illusion of the deuyll.

The idolles abolyshed.

haue seene and felt when I was present with you. I let passe many thynges because you put me in remembrance that to morowe you take your iorney towarde your countrey, to bryng home the queene your aunt, whom you accompanyed hyther at the commaundement of kyng Frederike your vncle. Wherfore I byd you farewell for this time, desyrying you to remember your *Martyr*, whom you haue compelled in the name of the kyng your vncle, to geather these fewe thynges out of a large feelde of hystories.

The tenth and last booke of the fyrst Decade, as a conclusion of the former bookes: wrytten to *Inacus Iopez Mendocius*, Countie of *Tendilla*, & viceroy of *Granata*.

At the fyrst begynning and newe attempte, when *Colonus* had taken vpon hym the enterpryse to searche the Ocean sea, I was earnestly moued and required by the letters of certaine of my frendes and noble men of Rome, to wryte those thinges as shoulde happen. For they whispered with great admiration, that where as there were many newe landes founde, and nations which liued naked and after the lawe of nature, they could heare no certentie therof, being greatly desyrous of ỹ same. In this meane time had fortune ouerthrowne *Ascanius* (his brother *Lodouike* being cast out of Millane by the frenchmen) whose auctoritie would not suffer me to be idle, but euer to haue my pen in hand. To him I wrote the two first bookes of this decade, beside many other of my hid cõmentaries which you shal see shortly: but fortune dyd no lesse withdraw my minde from wryting, then disturbe *Ascanius* from power. As he was tossed with contrary stormes, and ceassed to perswade me: euen so slacked my feruentnesse to enquire any further, vntil the yere of Christ. 1500 when the Court remained at *Granata* where you are viceroy: At which tyme, *Lodouike* the Cardinal of *Aragonie*, nephew to king Frederike by his brothers syde (beyng at *Granata* with the quene *Parthenopea* the sister of our Catholique kyng) brought me king Frederikes letters, whereby he exhorted me to finishe

Millane in the handes of the frenchmen.

the

the other bookes which folowed the two eppſtell bookes, which I wryte to *Aſcanius*: For they both acknowledged that they had the coppe of al that I wrytte to cardinall *Aſcanius*. And albeit that euen then I was ſicke (as you knowe) yet tooke I the burden vppon me, and applyed my ſelfe to wryting. I haue therfore choſen theſe fewe thynges, out of a greate heape of ſuch as ſeemed to me moſt worthy to be noted among the large wrytynges of the aucthoures and ſearchers of the ſame. Wherfore, foraſmuch as you haue endeuored to weſt out of my handes the whole example of all my woorkes, to adde the ſame to the innumerable volumes of your lybrarie, I thought it good nowe to make a breefe reherſall of thoſe thynges which were done from that yeare of a thouſand and fiue hundred, euen vnto this yeare which is the tenth from that: For I entend to wryte more largely of theſe thynges heareafter, if god graunt me lyfe. I had written a whole booke by it ſelfe of the ſuperſtytions of the people of the iland, ſuppoſyng therwyth to haue accomplyſhed the whole Decade conſiſting of ten bookes. But I haue added this to the tenth as a perpendyculer lyne, and as it were a backe guide or rerewarde to the other: So that you may knytte the fyrſt tenth to the nynth, & impute this to occuppe the place of the tenth to fyll vp the Decade. This order haue I appoynted, leſt I ſhoulde be compelled often times to wryte ouer the whole woorke, or ſend you the ſame defaced with blottes and interlyning. But now let vs come to our purpoſe. The ſhyppe maiſters and mariners ran ouer many coaſtes during theſe ten yeares: But euer folowed ſuch as were fyrſt found by *Colonus*. For raſyng continually alonge by the tract of *Paria*, which they beleue to be part of the firme land or continent of eaſt India, ſome of them chaunced vppon certaine new landes towarde the eaſt, and ſome towarde the weſt, in which they founde both gold and frankenſence. For they brought from thence manye iewells and ouches of golde, and greate plentie of frankenſence, which they had of the people of thoſe countreyes, partlye for exchaunge of ſome of our thynges, and partlye by force, ouer commyng them by warre. Yet in ſome places, although they be naked, they ouercame our men, and ſlewe whole armyes. For they are exceedyng fyerce, and vſe venemous arrowes, and

The hiſtory folowyng, contepneth the actes of ten yeeres.

Paria part of the fyrme lande of Eaſt India.

Golde & Frankencenſe.

The fiercenelſe of the naked people.

long

long ſtaues lyke iauelens, made hard at the ende with fire. They founde many beaſtes, both creepyng and foure footed, much dyfferyng from ours, varyable and of ſundrye ſhapes innumerable: yet not hurtfull, except Lions, Tigers, and Crocodiles. This I meane in ſundry regions of that greate lande of *Paria*, but not in the ilandes: no not ſo muche as one, for all the beaſtes of the ilandes, are meeke and without hurte, except men, which (as wee haue ſayde) are in many ilandes deuourers of mans fleſhe. There are alſo dyuers kyndes of foules. And in many places battes of ſuch bygnes, that they are equall with turtle doues. Theſe battes, haue oftentymes aſſalted men in the night in theyr ſleepe, and ſo bytten them with theyr venemous teeth, that they haue ben therby almoſt dryuen to madnes, in ſo much that they haue ben compelled to flee from ſuch places, as from rauenous Harpies. In an other place, where certaine of them ſlept in the night ſeaſon on the ſands by the ſea ſyde, a monſter commyng out of the ſea, came vpon one of them ſecretelye, and caryed hym away by the myddeſt out of the ſyght of his fellowes, to whom he cryed in vayne for helpe, vntyl the beaſt leapt into the ſea with her pray. It was the kynges pleaſure that they ſhoulde remayne in theſe landes, and buylde townes and fortreſſes: whereunto they were ſo well wyllyng, that diuers profered them ſelues to take vpon them the ſubduyng of the lande, makyng great ſuite to the kyng that they myght be appoynted thereto. The coaſt of this tracte is exceedyng great and large, and the regions and landes thereof extende marueylous farre, ſo that they affirme the continent of theſe regions with the Ilandes about the ſame, to be thryſe as bygge as al Europe, beſide thoſe landes that the Portugales haue founde ſouthwarde, whiche are alſo exceedyng large. Therfore doubtleſſe Spayne hath deſerued great prayſe in theſe our dayes, in that it hath made knowen vnto vs ſo many thouſandes of *Antipodes* whiche lay hid before, and vnknowen to our forefathers: and hath thereby miniſtred ſo large matter to wryte of, to ſuche learned wyttes as are deſyrous to ſet foorth knowledge to the commoditie of men: to whom I opened a way when I geathered theſe things rudelye togeather as you ſee: the whiche, neuertheleſſe I truſte you wil take in good part, aſwell for that I can not adourne my

A man deuoured of a monſter of the ſea.

Note the largeneſſe of the new Ilandes.

Antipodes.

my rudeneſſe with better veſture, as alſo that I neuer toke penne in hande to wryte lyke an hyſtoriographer, but only by epiſtles ſcribeled in haſte, to ſatiſfie them, from whoſe commaundementes I myght not drawe backe my foote. But nowe I haue digreſſed yenough, let vs nowe therefore returne to *Hiſpaniola*. Our men haue founde by experience, that the bread of the Iſlande is of ſmal ſtrength to ſuche as haue ben vſed to our bread made of wheate, and that theyr ſtrengthes were muche decayed by vſyng of the ſame: wherefore the kyng hath of late commaunded that wheate ſhoulde be ſowen there in diuers places, and at ſundry tymes of the yeere: It groweth into holow reedes, with few eares, but thoſe very bygge and fruitefull. They fynde the lyke ſoftneſſe and delicateneſſe to be in hearbes, whiche growe there to the height of corne. Neat or cattel, become of bygger ſtature, and exceedyng fat, but theyr fleſhe is more vnſauerie, and theyr bones (as they ſay) eyther without marow, or the ſame to be very watery ſhe: but of hogges and ſwyne, they affirme the contrary, that they are more wholſome, and of better taſte, by reaſon of certayne wylde fruites whiche they eate, beyng of much better nouriſhment then maſte. There is almoſt none other kynde of fleſhe commonly ſolde in the market. The multitude of hogges are exceedyngly encreaſed, and become wylde as ſoone as they are out of the ſwyneheardes keepyng. They haue ſuche plentie of beaſtes and foules, that they ſhal hereafter haue no neede to haue any brought from other places. The increaſe of al beaſtes grow bigger then the broode they came of, by reaſon of the rankenes of the paſture, although theyr feeding be only of graſſe, without eyther barley or other grayne. But we haue ſayd yenough of *Hiſpaniola*. They haue nowe founde that *Cuba* (which of long tyme they thought to haue ben firme lande, for the great length thereof) is an Iſlande: yet is it no maruayle that the inhabitants them ſelues tolde our men when they ſearched the length therof, that it was without ende. For this nation beyng naked, and content with a lytle, and with the limittes of theyr owne countrey, is not greatly curious to knowe what theyr neyghbours doo, or the largeneſſe of theyr dominion, nor yet knewe they yf there were any other thyng vnder heauen, beſyde that whiche they walked on with theyr feete. *Cuba* is from the Eaſt into

The nature of the place, altereth the formes and qualities of thynges.

Plentie of beaſtes and foule.

Cuba is an Iſlande.

into the West, muche longer then *Hispaniola*, and in breadth from the North to the South, muche lesse then they supposed at the fyrst: for it is very narowe in respect of the length, and is for the most part very fruitefull and pleasaunt. Eastwarde, not farre from *Hispaniola*, there lyeth an Iland lesse then *Hispaniola* more then by the halfe, whiche our men called *Sancti Iohannis*, beyng in manner square, in this they founde exceedyng ryche golde mynes: but beyng nowe occuppyed in the golde mynes of *Hispaniola*, they haue not yet sent labourers into the Iland. But the plentie and reuenue of golde of al other regions, geue place to *Hispaniola*, where they geue them selues in manner to none other thyng then to geather golde, of whiche worke this order is appointed. To euery such wittie and skilful man as is put in trust to be a surueyour or ouerseer of these workes, there is assigned one or more kings of the Iland, with their subiects. These kings accordyng to theyr league, come with theyr people at certayne tymes of the yeere, and resort euery of them to the golde myne to the whiche he is assigned, where they haue al manner of dyggyng or mining tooles delyuered them, and euery king with his men, haue a certayne rewarde alowed them for theyr labour. For when they depart from the mynes to sowyng of corne, and other tyllage (wherunto they are addict at certaine other tymes, lest theyr foode should faile them.) they receiue for their labour, one a ierkin, or a dublet, another a shyrt, another a cloke or a cap: for they nowe take pleasure in these thyngs, and goe no more naked as they were woont to doo. And thus they vse the helpe and labour of the inhabitauntes, both for the tyllage of theyr ground, and in theyr golde mynes, as though they were theyr seruantes or bondemen. They beare this yoke of seruitude with an euyll wyl, but yet they beare it: they cal these hyred labourers, *Anaborias*: yet the kyng dooth not suffer that they shoulde be vsed as bondemen, and only at his pleasure, they are set at libertie, or appoynted to worke. At suche tyme as they are called togeather of theyr kynges to worke (as souldiers or pyoners are assembled of theyr centurions) many of them stele away to the mountaynes and wooddes, where they lye lurkyng, beyng content for that tyme to lyue with wylde fruites, rather then take the paynes to labour. They are docible and apte to learne, and haue

The discription of Cuba.

The Iland of Burichena, of S. Johannis. Golde mynes.

Tyllage.

They abhorre labour.

They are docible.

haue nowe vtterly forgotten theyre olde ſuperſtitions. They beleue godly, and beare well in memory ſuch thynges as they haue learned of our fayth. Theyr kyngs children are brought vp with the chiefeſt of our men, and are inſtructed in letters and good maners. When they are growen to mans age, they ſende them home to theyr countreyes to be example to other, and eſpecially to gouerne the people, yf theyr fathers be dead, that they may the better ſet forth the Chriſtian religion, and keepe theyr ſubiectes in loue and obedience. By reaſon wherof, they come now by faire meanes & gentel perſwaſions, to the mines which lye in two regions of the ilande, about thyrtie myles diſtaunt from the cytie of *Dominica*, wherof the on is called *Sancti Chriſtophori*: and the other beyng diſtant aboute fourſcore and tenne myles, is called *Cibaua*, not farre from the cheefe hauen called *Portus Regalis*. Theſe regions are very large, in the which in many places here and there, are founde ſomtyme euen in the vpper cruſt of the earth, and ſomtyme among the ſtones, certayne rounde pieces or plates of golde, ſometime of ſmale quantytie, and in ſome places of great wayght: in ſo much that there hath byn founde rounde pieces of three hundred pounde weyght, and one of three thouſande, three hundred and tenne pounde weyght, the whiche (as you harde) was ſent whole to the kyng in that ſhyp in the which the gouernour *Boadilla* was commyng home into Spaine, the ſhyp with all the men beyng drowned by the way, by reaſon it was ouer laden with the weyght of gold & multitude of men, albeit, there were no then a thouſande perſons which ſaw and handeled the piece of gold. And wheras here I ſpeake of a pounde, I do not meane the common pounde, but the ſumme of the ducate of gold, with the coyne called *Triens*, which is the third part of a pounde. which they call *Peſus*. The ſumme of the weight hearof, the Spanyardes call *Caſtelanum Aureum*. All the gold that is digged in the mountaines of *Cibaua* and Port Regale, is caried to the tower of Conception, where ſhoppes with al thinges appertayning are redy furniſhed to fine it, melt it, and caſte it into wedges. That doone, they take the kynges portion therof, which is the fyfte parte, and ſo reſtore to euery man his owne which he gotte with his labour. But the gold which is founde in ſaynt Chriſtophorus myne

The kynges children.

The two cheefe golde mynes of Hiſpauiola.

A coſtly ſhyp wracke.

Peſus.

The fynyng and diſtributing of gold.

and

and the regions there about, is carped to the shoppes which are in the vyllage called *Bonauentura*. In these two shops, is moulten peerely aboue three hundred thousand pound wayght of gold. Yf any man be knowen deceytfullye to keepe backe any portion of golde, whereof he hath not made the kynges officers priuie, he forfeyteth the same for a fyne. There chaunceth among them oftentymes many contentions and controuersies, the whiche vnlesse the magistrates of the Ilande do fynyshe, the case is remoued by appellation to the hygh counsayle of the court, from whose sentence it is not lawfull to appeale in al the dominions of Castyle. But let vs nowe returne to the newe landes, from whence we haue digressed. They are innumerable, diuers, and exceedyng fortunate. Wherefore the Spanyardes in these our dayes, and theyr noble enterpryses, do not geue place eyther to the factes of *Saturnus*, or *Hercules*, or anye other of the auncient prynces of famous memory, which were canonized among the goddes, called *Heroes*, for theyr searchyng of newe landes and regions, and bryngyng the same to better culture and ciuilitie. Oh God, howe large & farre shal our posteritie see the Christian religion extended? howe large a campe haue they now to wander in, whiche by the true nobilitie that is in them, or mooued by vertue, wyll attempt eyther to deserue lyke prayse among men, or reputation of well doyng before God? What I conceiue in my mynde of these thynges, I am not able to expresse with penne or tongue. I wil now therfore so make an end of this perpendiculer conclusion of the whole Decade, as myndyng hereafter to search and geather euery thyng particularly, that I may at further leysure wryte the same more at large. For *Colonus* the Admiral, with foure ships, and a hundred, threescore, and ten men, appoynted by the kyng, discouered in the yeere of Christe. 1520. the lande oueragaynst the West corner of *Cuba*, distant from the same about a hundred and thirtie leagues: in the myddest of whiche tracte, lyeth an Ilande called *Guanassa*. From hence he directed his voyage backwarde toward the East, by the shore of that coast, supposyng that he shoulde haue founde the coastes of *Paria*, but it chaunced otherwise. It is sayde also that *Vincencius Agnes* (of whom we haue spoken before) and one *Iohannes Daiz* (with diuers other, of whose voyages I haue as yet no certayne

Three hundred thousand weight of gold molten peerely in Hispaniola.

The newe landes.

Enlargyng of the Christian religion.

The original of true nobilitie.

1502

The Ilande of Guanassa.

The voyage of Iohannes Diaz.

knowledge) haue ouerrunne those coastes: but yf God graunte me lyfe, I trust to knowe the trueth hereof, and to aduertise you of the same. Thus fare ye well.

The ende of the fyrst Decade.

The fyrst booke of the seconde Decade, to *Leo* Bishop of Rome, the tenth of that name, of the supposed continent or firme lande.

SInce the tyme that *Galeatius Butrigarius* of *Bononie*, and *Iohannes Cursius* of Florence (most holy father) came to the Catholique kyng of Spayne, the one of your holinesse ambassage, and the other for the affayres of his common wealth, I was euer for the moste parte in theyr companye, and for theyr vertues and wysedome had them in great reuerence. And whereas they were greatlye geuen to studie, and continuall reuolting of diuers auctours, they chaunced vpon certayne bookes, negligently let slyppe out of my handes, entreatyng of the large landes and regions hytherto lying hyd, and almost West *Antipodes*, founde of late by the Spanyardes. Yet being allured and delyted with the newnesse and straungenesse of the matter, although rudely adourned, they commended the same, therewith earnestly desyryng me in theyr owne names, and requiring me in the name of your holynesse, to adde hereunto al such thynges as were founde after that tyme, and to geue them a copie therof, to sende to your holynesse, that you myght thereby vnderstande, both howe great commodities is chaunced to the progenie of mankynde, as also encrease of the millitant congregation in these our dayes, by the fortunate enterpryses of the kynges of Spayne. For lyke as rased and vnpaynted tables, are apte to receiue what fourmes soeuer are fyrst drawen thereon by the hande of the paynter, euen so these naked and simple people, doo soone receyue the customes of our religion, and by conuersation of our men, shake of theyr fierce and native barbarous

West Antipodes.

The encrease of the Christian congregation.

barbarousnesse. I haue thought it good therfore to satisfie the request of these wyse men, especially vsyng thaucthoryty of your name, wherunto not to haue obeyed, I shoulde esteeme my selfe to haue committed a heynous offence. Wherfore I wyll nowe briefly rehearse in order, what hyd coastes the Spanyardes ouerran, who were thauthours therof, where they rested, what further hope they brought, and finallye what greate thynges those tractes of landes do promyse in time to come. In the declaration of my decade of the ocean, which is nowe prynted and dysperſed throughout Chrystendome vnwares to me, I described howe *Christophorus Colonus* founde those ilandes wherof wee haue spoken, and that turnyng from thence towarde the left hande southward, he chaunced into greate regions of landes, and large seas, dystant from the Equinoctiall lyne, onely from fyue degrees to tenne: where he founde hyde ryuers and exceeding hygh mountaynes couered with snowe, and harde by the sea bankes, where were manye commodious and quyet hauens. But *Colonus* being now departed out of this lyfe, the kyng beganne to take care, how those lands might be inhabited with Christian men, to thincrease of our fayth: Wheruppon he gaue lycence by his letters patentes to al such as would take the matter in hand, and especially to two, wherof *Diego Nicuesa* was one, & the other was *Alphonsus Fogeda*. Wherfore about the Ides of December, *Alphonsus* departing fyrst with three hundred souldiers from the ilande of *Hispaniola* (in the which we sayd the Spaniardes had builded a cytie, & planted theyr habitation) & saylyng in maner ful south, he came to one of the hauens found before, which *Colonus* named *Portus carthaginis*, both because of the iland standyng agaynste the course of the streame, and also that by reason of the largenesse of the place and bendyng sydes, it is much lyke to the hauen of Spayne called *Carthago*. The inhabytantes call the Ilande *Codego*, as the Spanyardes cal the Ilande of theyr hauen *Scombria*. This region is called of the inhabitantes *Caramairi*, in the whiche they affyrme both the men and women to bee of goodly stature, but naked. The men haue theyr heare cutte rounde by theyr eares, but the women were it long, both the men and women are very good archers. Our men founde certayne trees in this prouince, which bore great plenty of sweete

Of landes distant from the Equinoctiall, from fyue degrees to ten.

The death of Colonus.

A generall licence.

The nauigation of Alphonsus Fogeda.

The region of Caramairi.

Apples whiche turne into wormes.
A tree whose shadowe is hurtful.

apples,but hurtful, for they turne into woormes when they are eaten. Especially the shadowe of the tree is contagious, for such as sleepe vnder it any tyme, haue theyr heades swolne, and lose their sight: but if they sleepe but a while, theyr sight commeth agayne after a fewe dayes. This porte is distant foure hundred, fyftie,& sixe myles from that port of *Hispaniola* whiche the Spanyardes call *Beata*, in the whiche also they furnishe them selues when they prepare anye voyage to seeke other newe landes. When *Fogeda* had entred into the hauen, he enuaded, slue, and spoyled the people, whom he founde naked and scattered: for they were geuen him for a pray by the kynges letters patentes, because they had ben before tyme cruell agaynst the Christians, and coulde neuer be allured to permytte them quietlye to come within theyr dominions. Here they founde golde,but in no great quantitie,nor yet that pure: they make of it certayne brest plates and brooches whiche they weare for comelynesse. But *Fogeda* not content with these spoyles, bysyng certayne captiues, which he had taken before, for guydes, entred into a byllage twelue myles dystant from the sea syde further into the lande, into the which they were fled when he fyrst enuaded. Here he found a naked people,but apte to warre: for they were armed with targettes,shieldes,long swoordes made of wood, and bowes with arrowes typt with bone,or hardened with fyre. As soone as they had espyed our men,they with theyr ghestes whō they had receiceyued,assayled them with desperate myndes,beyng therto more earnestly prouoked,beholdyng the calamitie of these whiche fled vnto them,by the violence done to theyr women and chyldren, in the spoyle and slaughter. In this conflyct our men had the ouerthrowe: in the which, one *Iohannes de Lacossa*(being in auctoritie next vnto *Fogeda* the captayne, and also the fyrste that geathered gold in the sandes of *Vraba*)was slaine with fiftie souldiers: for these people infecte their arrowes with the deadlye poyson of a certayne herbe. The other with theyr captayne *Fogeda* beyng discomfited, fledde to the shyppes. Whyle they remayned thus in the hauen of *Carthago*, sorowful and pensiue for the losse of theyr companions, the other captayne *Diego Nicuesa*, (whom they left in *Hispaniola*,preparyng hym selfe towarde the voyage in the hauen *Beata*) came to them with fyue shippes,

Warlyke people.

Arrowes infected with poyson.

The nauigation of Diego Nicuesa.

and

and seuen hundred fourescore and sixteene men. For the greater number of souldyers folowed *Nicuesa*, bothe because free lybertye was geuen them to choose which of the cappytaynes them lyst, and also that by reason of his age, he was of greater aucthorytie: But esspetially because the rumoure was that *Beragua* being by the kyngs commission appoynted to *Nicuesa*, was rycher in golde then *Vraba* assygned to *Alphonsus Fogeda*. Therfore, at the arrpual of *Nicuesa*, they consulted what was best to be doone: and determyned fyrste to reuenge the deathe of theyr felowes. Wheruppon, settyng theyr battayle in araye, they marched in the nyght towarde them whiche slue *Cossa* with his companyons. Thus stealyng on them vnwares in the laste watche of the nyght, and encompassyng the byllage where they lay, consystyng of a hundred houses and more, hauyng also in it thryse as many of theyr neyghbours as of them selues, they set it on fyre, with diligent watche that none myght escape. And thus in short time they brought them and theyr houses to ashes, and made them paye the raunsome of blood with blood: for of a great multitude of men and women, they spared only fyre chyldren, all other beyng destroyed with fyre or swoord, except fewe whiche escaped prluily, they learned by these reserued chyldren, that *Cossa* and his felowes were cut in peeces, and eaten of them that slue them. By reason whereof, they suppose that these people of *Camairi* tooke theyr original of the *Caribes*, otherwyse called *Canibales*. Here they founde some golde among the ashes. For the hunger of golde dyd no lesse incourage our men to aduenture these perils and labours, then dyd the possessyng of the landes. These thinges thus finished, and the death of *Cossa* and his felowes reuenged, they returned to the hauen. After this, *Fogeda* whiche came fyrst, fyrst lykewyse departyng with his armie to seeke *Vraba*, committed to his gouernaunce, sayled by an Ilande called *Fortis*, lying in the mydway betweene *Vraba* and the hauen of *Carthago*: into the whiche descending, he founde it to be an Ilande of the Canibales, bryngyng with hym from thence two men and seuen women, for the residue escaped. Here he founde in the cotages of them that fledde, a hundred, fourescore, and tenne drammes of golde, caste and wrought in dyuers fourmes. Saylyng forwarde from hence, he came to the

The regions of Vraba and Beragua.

The Spanyardes reuenge the death of theyr companions.

A great slaughter.

Canibales.

The hunger of golde.

The Ilande Fortis.

Wrought golde.

East coastes of *Vraba*, whiche the inhabitauntes call *Carihana*, from whence the Caribes or Canibales of the Ilandes are sayd to haue theyr name and originall. Here he began to builde a fortresse, and a byllage neere vnto the same, therein intendyng to place theyr fyrst habitation. Shortly after, beyng instructed by certayne captyues, that there was about twelue myles further within the lande, a certayne byllage called *Tiruſi*, hauyng in it a ryche golde myne, he determined to destroy the billage, to the which when he came, he founde the inhabitantes redy to defende theyr ryght, and that so stoutlye, that encounteryng with them, he was repulsed with shame and domage: for these people also vse bowes and venemous arrowes. Within a fewe dayes after, beyng enforced for lacke of bittualles to inuade another billage, he hym selfe was strycken in the thygh with an arrowe. Some of his felowes say, that he was thus wounded of one of the inhabitauntes whose wyfe he had ledde away captiue before. They say also that he had fyrst frendlye commuued with *Fogeda* for redeeming of his wife, and had appoynted a day to bring a portion of golde for her raunsome, and that he came at the day assigned, not laden with golde, but armed with bowes and arrowes, with eyght other confederate with hym, which had ben before partakers of the iniuries done to them fyrst at the hauen of *Carthago*, and afterward at the burnyng of the byllage, in reuenge whereof, they had desperately consecrated them selues to death: But the matter beyng knowen, the captayne of this conspiracie was slayne of *Fogeda* his companions, and his wyfe deteyned in captiuitie. *Fogeda* also through the malicyousnesse of the venime, consumed and was dried vp by lytle & litle. While these things chaunced thus, they espied *Nicuesa* the other captayne, to whom *Beragua* the region of the West syde of *Vraba* was assigned to inhabite. He gaue wynd to his sayles to take his voyage toward *Beragua*, the day after that *Fogeda* departed out of the hauen of *Carthago*. He with his armie that he brought with hym, coasted euer along by the shore, vntyll he came to the gulfe *Coiba*, whose kynges name is *Careta*. Here he founde theyr language to be in maner nothyng lyke vnto that of *Hiſpaniola*, or of the hauen of *Carthago*: whereby he perceyued that in this tracte, there are many languages differyng from theyr owne borderers. *Nicuesa*

Nicuesa.

The gulfe Coiba.

departyng from *Coiba*, went to the prouince of Lieuetenauntshyp of *Fogeda* his companion. Within a fewe dayes after, he hym selfe entryng into one of those marchaunt shyppes whiche the Spanyardes call *Carauelas*, commaunded that the bigger vessels should folow farre behinde. He tooke with hym two smal shyppes commonly called Bergandines or Bzigandines. I haue thought it good in al the discourse of these bookes, to vse the common names of thinges, because I had rather be playne then curious, especially forasmuche as there do dayly aryse many newe thynges vnknowen to the antiquitie, whereof they haue left no true names. After the departure of *Nicuesa*, there came a shyppe from *Hispaniola* to *Fogeda*, the captayne wherof, was one *Barnardino de Calauera*, who had stolne the same from *Hispaniola* with threescore men, without leaue or aduice of the Admiral and the other gouernours. With the vyttualles which this shyppe brought, they refreshed them selues, and somewhat recouered theyr strengthes, muche weakened for lacke of meate. *Fogeda* his companions whyspered and muttered agaynst hym daylye more and more, that he fedde them foorth with vayne hope: for he had tolde them that he left *Anciſus* in *Hispaniola* (whom he chose by the kinges commission to be a iudge in causes, because he was learned in the law) to come shortly after him with a shyp laden with vyttualles, and that he marueyled that he was not come many dayes synce. And herein he sayd nothing but trueth: for when he departed, he left *Anciſus* halfe redye to folowe hym. But his felowes supposyng that al that he had sayde of *Anciſus* had ben fayned, some of them determined priuily to steale away the two Bzigandines from *Fogeda*, and to returne to *Hispaniola*. But *Fogeda* hauyng knowledge hereof, preuented theyr deuice: for leauyng ỹ custodie of the fortresse with a certayne noble gentleman called *Francisco Pizarro*, he him selfe thus wounded, with a fewe other in his compayne, entred into the shyppe wherof we spake before, and sayled directly to *Hispaniola*, both to heale the wounde of his thygh, yf any remedie myght be found, and also to knowe what was the cause of *Anciſus* tarying: leauyng hope with his felowes (whiche were nowe brought from three hundred to threescore, partly by famine, and partly by warre) that he woulde returne within the space of xv. dayes, prescribyng

Barnardino de Calauera.

Fogeda returneth to Hispaniola.

Famine.

also a condition to *Pizarro* and his companions, that it should not be imputed to them for treason, to depart from thence yf he came not agayne at the day appoynted, with vyttuales, and a newe supplye of men. These .xv. dayes beyng nowe past, wheras they coulde yet heare nothyng of *Fogeda*, and were dayly more and more oppressed with sharpe hunger, they entred into the two Brigandines which were left, and departed from that land. And as they were nowe saylyng on the mayne sea towarde *Hispaniola*, a tempest sodaynely arysyng, swalowed one of the Brigandines with all that were therein. Some of theyr felowes afterwarde, that they playnely sawe a fyshe of huge greatnesse, swimmyng about the Brigandine (for those seas bryng foorth great monsters) and that with a stroke of her tayle, she broke the rudder of the shyppe in peeces, whiche faylyng, the Brigandine being dryuen about by force of the tempest, was drowned not farre from the Iland called *Fortis*, lying betwene the coastes of the hauen *Carthago* and *Vraba*. As they of the other Brigandine would haue landed in the Ilande, they were dryuen backe with the bowes and arrowes of the fierce barbarians. Proceeding therefore on theyr voyage, they mette by chaunce with *Anciſus*, betwene the hauen of *Carthago*, and the region of *Cuchibacoa* in the mouth of the riuer whiche the Spanyardes called *Boium gatti*, that is, the house of the catte, because they sawe a catte fyxte in that place: *Boium*, in the tongue of *Hiſpaniola*, is a house. *Anciſus* came with a shyppe laden with al thynges necessarie, both for meate, and drynke, and apparell, bryngyng also with hym an another Brigandine. This is he for whose commyng the captayne *Fogeda* looked for so long. He loosed anker from *Hiſpaniola* in the Ides of September: and ỹ fourth day after his departure, he espyed certayne hygh mountaynes, the whiche for the abundance of snow which lieth there continually in the tops therof, the Spanyards called *Serra Neuata*, when *Colonus* the fyrst fynder of those regions passed by the same. The fift day he sayled by *Os Draconis*. They which were in the Brigandine, tolde *Anciſus* that *Fogeda* was returned to *Hiſpaniola*: but *Anciſus* supposyng that they had fained that tale, commaunded them by thauctoritie of his commission to turne backe agayne. The Brigandiners obeyed & folowed him: yet made they humble suite vnto hym that he

A Brigandine drowned with the stroke of a fyshe.

The region of Cuchibacoa.

Serra Neuata.

Os Draconis.

he woulde graunt them that with his fauour they myght eyther goe agayne to *Hispaniola*, or that he hym selfe would bring them to *Nicuesa*: and that they woulde for his gentlenesse, declared towarde them in this behalfe, rewarde hym with two thousande drammes of golde: for they were ryche in golde, but poore in bread. But *Anciſus* assented to neyther of theyr requestes, affyrmyng that he myght by no meanes goe any other way, then to *Vraba* the prouince assigned to *Fogeda*. Whereupon, by theyr conduct, he tooke his voyage directly towarde *Vraba*. But nowe let it not seeme tedious to your holynesse, to heare of one thyng woorthy to be remembred, whiche chaunced to this Lieuetenant *Anciſus* as he came thyther: for he also cast anker in the coastes of the region of *Caramairi*, whiche we sayde to be famous, by reason of the hauen of *Carthago*, and of the goodly stature, strength, and beautie both of men and women beyng in the same. Here he sent certayne to goe alande on the shore both to fetch fresh water, & also to repayre the ship boate which was sore bruised. In this meane tyme, a great multitude of the people of the countrey, armed after theyr manner, came about our men, as they were occupyed about theyr busyneſſe, and stoode in a redyneſſe to fyght, for the space of three dayes continually, duryng whiche time, neyther durst they set vpon our men, nor our men assaile them. Thus both parties keepyng theyr aray, stoode styll three whole dayes, the one gasyng on the other. Yet al this tyme our men applyed theyr woorke, placyng the shyppwryghtes in the myddest of theyr armie. As they stoode thus amased, two of our company went to fyll theyr water pottes at the mouth of the ryuer neere vnto them both, where sodenly there came forth agaynst them a captayne of the barbarians with tenne armed men, whiche inclosed them, and with terrible countenance bent theyr arrowes against them, but shot them not of. One of our men fledde, but the other remayned, callyng his felowe agayne, and rebukyng hym for his fearefulneſſe. Then he spake to the barbarians in theyr owne language, whiche he had learned beyng conuersaunt with the captiues that were caryed from thence long before. They marueylyng to heare a stranger speake in theyr natiue tongue, put of theyr fiercenesse, and fell to frendly communication, demaundyng who were the captaynes of that company whiche

Riche in golde, and poore in bread.

were

were aryued in theyr lande. He aunswered that they were strangers passing by, and that he marueyled why they would attempt to dryue them from theyr coastes, and disturbe their shyps: arguyng them of follie and crueltie, and further threatnyng their ruine and destruction, except they woulde bse them selues more frendely towarde them. For he aduertised them that there woulde shortlye come into theyr lande armed men, in number like vnto the sandes of the sea, and that to theyr vtter destruction, not only yf they resysted them not, but also except they receiued them, and entertayned them honourably. In the meane time, *Anciſus* was enfourmed that his men were deteyned: wherefore suspectyng some deceyte, he brought foorth all his target men, for feare of theyr venemous arrowes: and settyng them in battel araye, he marched forwarde towarde them whiche stayed his men. But he whiche communed with the barbarians, geuyng hym a signe with his hande to proceede no further, he stayed, and callyng to hym the other, he knewe that all was safe: for the barbarians profered hym peace, because they were not they whom they suspected them to haue ben, meanyng by *Fogeda* & *Nicueſa*, who had spoyled the vyllage standyng there by the sea syde, and caryed away many captiues, and also burnt another vyllage further within the lande. And therefore (as they sayde) the cause of theyr commyng thyther, was to reuenge those iniuries, yf by any meanes they coulde, yet that they woulde not exercise theyr weapons agaynst the innocent: for they sayd, it was vngodly to fyght agaynst any, not beyng prouoked. Laying apart therefore theyr bowes and arrowes, they entertayned our men gentelly, and gaue them great plentie of salted fyshe, and bread of theyr countrey, and filled theyr vessels with Syder made of their countrey fruites and seedes, not inferior to wine in goodnesse. Thus *Anciſus* hauing entred into frendship, and made a league of peace with thinhabitantes of *Caramairi*, which were before sore prouoked by other captaynes, he lanched from that lande, and directed his course to *Vraba* by the Islande *Fortis*, hauing in his shippe a hundred and fyftie freshe men, whiche were substitute in the place of suche as were dead: also twelue Mares, and manye swine, and other beastes both males and females for encrease. Lykewyse, fyftie peeces of ordinaunce, with great multi-

The vse of targets agaynst venemous arrowes.

The barbarians haue respect to iustice.

Salted fyshe.

Wine of fruites and seedes.

Artyllerie.

tude

tude of targettes, swoordes, iauelyns, and suche other weapons for the warres, but all this with euil speede, and in an euil houre: for as they were euen nowe entryng into the hauen, the gouernour of the shyppe whiche sate at the helme, stroke the shyppe vpon the sandes, where it was so fast enclosed and beaten with the waues of the sea, that it opened in the myddest, and all lost that was therein, a thyng surelye miserable to beholde: for of all the vyttualles that they had, they saued only twelue barrelles of meale, with a fewe cheeses, and a lytle bysket bread, for al the beastes were drowned, and they them selues escaped hardly and halfe naked, by helpe of the Brigandine and ship boate, carying with them only a fewe weapons. Thus they fell from one calamitie into another, beyng nowe more carefull for theyr lyues then for golde. Yet beyng brought alyue and in health to that lande whiche they so greatly desyred, they coulde do no lesse then to prouide for the susteynyng of theyr bodyes, because they coulde not lyue only by ayre: and whereas theyr owne fayled, they must needes lyue by other mens. Yet among these so many aduersities, one good chaunce offered it selfe vnto them: for they founde, not farre from the sea syde, a groue of Date trees, among the which, and also among the reeke or weedes of the marishes, they espyed a multitude of wylde boores, with whose flesshe they fed thē selues wel certayne dayes. These they say to be lesse then ours, and with so short tayles, that they thought they had ben cut of. They differ also from ours in theyr feete: for theyr hinder feete are whole vndiuided, and also without any hooke. But they affirme that they haue proued by experience, theyr flesshe to be of better taste and more wholsome then ours. During this time, they fed also of Dates, and the rootes of young Date trees, whiche they eate likewise in Ciuile and *Granata*, where they call them *Palmitos*, of ỹ leaues wherof they make beesomes in Rome. Sometymes also they eate of the apples of that region, whiche haue the taste of pruines, and haue also stones in them, and are but lytle and of redde colour: I suppose them to be of that kinde, wherof I ate in the citie of *Alexandria* in Egypt, in the moneth of Aprill, the trees whereof, the Iewes that dwell there, beyng learned in the lawe of Moses, affyrme to be the Cedars of Libanus, whiche beare olde fruites and newe all the yeere, as

Ancilus shyp wracke.

A groue of date trees.

Wylde boores.

Apples of a straunge kynde.

Cedars of Libanus.

as doth the orange tree. These apples are good to be eaten, and haue a certayne sweetenesse myxte with a gentyll sharpnesse, as haue the fruites called *Sorbes*. Thinhabytantes plant these trees in theyr orchyardes and gardens, and noryshe them with greate diligence as we do cheries, peaches, and quinses. This tree in leaues, heyght, and trunke, is very lyke vnto the tree that beareth the frupte called *Zizipha*, which the Apothecaries call *Iuiuba*. But whereas now the wylde boxes began to fayle them, they were agayne enforced to consulte and prouyde for the tyme to come: Whereuppon with theyr whole armye, they entered further into the land. The Canibales of this prouynce, are most expert archers. *Anciſus* had in his companye, a hundred men. They mette by the way with only three men of thinhabitantes, naked, and armed with bowes & venomous arowes, who without all feare, assayled our men fyercesly, wounded manye, and slue manye, and when they emptyed theyr quiuers, fledde as swyftely as the wynde: For (as we haue saide) they are exceding swyfte of foote by reason of theyr loose gooing from theyr chyldes age, they affyrme that they lette slyp no arrowe out of theyr bowes in vayne. Our men therfore returned the same way that they came, muche more vnfortunate then they were before, and consulted among them selues to leaue the land, especialy because the inhabytantes had ouerthrowne the fortresse which *Fogeda* buylded, and had burnt thyrtie houses of the vyllage, as soone as *Pizarrus* and his company lefte of *Fogeda*, and forsaken the land. By this occasion therfore, being dryuen to seeke further, they had intelligence that the west syde of that goulfe of *Vraba*, was more fruitfull & better to inhabite. Wherfore, they sent the one halfe of theyr men thither with the brigandine, and left the other neere to the sea syde on the east part. This gulfe, is fourteene myles in breadth, and howe muche the further it entereth into the fyrme lande, it is so much the narower. Into the gulfe of *Vraba*, there fall many ryuers, but one (as they saye) more fortunate then the ryuer of *Nilus* in Egypt. This ryuer is called *Darien*, vpon the bankes whereof, being very fruitfull of trees and grasse, they entended to plante theyr newe colonye or habitation. But the inhabytantes marueylyng at the brigandyne being bigger then theyr canoas, and specially at the sayles therof,

Men of desperats boldenesse.

The gulfe of Vraba.

The great riuer of Darien.

therof, fyrst sent away theyr chyldren and weakeste sort of theyr people with theyr baggage and houshould stuffe, and assembled all suche togeather both men and women, as were meete for the warres. Thus beyng armed with weapons and desperate mindes, they stoode in a redyneste to fyght, and taryed the comming of our men vpon a lytle hyll, as it were to take the aduauntage of the grounde: our men iudged them to be about fiue hundred in number. Then *Anciſus* the captayne of our men, and Lieutenaunt in the steede of *Fogeda*, settyng his men in order of battayle aray, and with his whole company kneeling on his knees, they all made humble prayers to GOD for the victorie, and a vowe to the image of the blessed virgin whiche is honoured in Ciuile, by the name of *Sancta Maria Antiqua*, promysyng to sende her many golden gyftes, and a straunger of that countrey: also, to name the vyllage *Sancta Maria Antiqua* after her name: lykewyse to erecte a temple called by the same name, or at the least to dedicate the king of that prouince his pallace to that vse, if it should please her to assist them in this dangerous enterpryse. This done, al the souldiers toke an oth, that no man should turne his backe to his enimies. Then ỹ captayne commaunding them to be in a redyneste with theyr targets and iauelyns, and the trumpetter to blowe the battayle, they fiercely assayled theyr enimies with a larome: but the naked barbarians, not long able to abyde the force of our men, were put to flight, with theyr kyng and captayne *Cemaccus*. Our men entred into the vyllage, where they founde plentie of meate, such as the people of the countrey vse, sufficient to assuage theyr present hunger, as bread made of rootes, with certayne fruites vnlyke vnto ours, whiche they reserue for store, as we doo Chestnuttes. Of these people, the men are vtterly naked, but the women, from the nauel downeward are couered with a fyne cloth made of gossampine cotton. This region is vtterly without any sharpeneste of wynter: for the mouth of this ryuer of *Darien*, is onlye eyght degrees distaunt from the *Equinoctiall* lyne, so that the common sorte of our men, scarcely perceyue any dyfference in length betweene the day and myght all the whole yeere: but because they are ignorant in astronomie, they can perceyue no small dyfference. Therefore we neede not muche passe if the degree differ some-

The souldiers make an othe.

The barbarians are dyuers to fyght.

The riuer of Darien, but vii. degrees from the Equinoctiall lyne.

what

what from theyr opinion, forasmuche as the vyfference can not be great. The day after that they aryued at the lande, they sayled along by the ryuer, where they founde a great thycket of reedes, continuyng for the space of a myle in length, supposing (as it chaunced in deede) that the borderers thereabout whiche had fled, had eyther lyen lurkyng there, or els to haue hid theyr stuffe among those reedes: Whereupon, armyng them selues with theyr targets, for feare of the people lying in ambushe, they searched the thycket diligently, and founde it without men, but replenyshed with housholde stuffe and golde. They founde also a great multitude of shetes, made of the silke or cotton of the gossampine tree: lykewyse diuers kyndes of vessels & tooles made of wood, and many of earth: also many brest plates of golde, and ouches wrought after theyr manner, to the summe of a hundred & two pound weight: for they also take pleasure in the beautie of golde, and worke it very artificially, although it be not the pryce of thyngs among them as with vs. They haue it out of other regions, for exchaunge of such thynges as theyr countrey bringeth forth: for such regions as haue plentie of bread and gossampine, lacke golde, and suche as bryng forth golde, are for the most part rough with mountaynes and rockes, and therefore barren: and thus they exercise marchandies without the vse of money. Reioysyng therefore with double gladnesse, aswel in that they sawe great lykenesse of golde, as also that fortune had offered them so fayre and fruiteful a countrey, they sent for theyr felowes whom they had left before in the East syde of the gulfe of *Vraba*. Yet some say, that the ayre is there vnwholsome, because that part of the region lyeth in a lowe valley, enuironed with mountaynes and marysshes.

Golde founde in a thycket of reedes.

Brest plates of golde.

The golden regions are for the most part barren.

The seconde booke of the seconde Decade, of the supposed continent.

I Haue described to your holynesse where *Fogeda* with his companye (to whom the large tractes of *Vraba* was assigned to inhabite) entended to fasten theyr foote. Let vs nowe therefore leaue them of *Vraba* for a whyle, and returne agayne to *Nicuesa*, to whom

whom the gouernaunce and Lieutenauntshyp of the moste large prouince of *Beragua* (beyng the West syde of the gulfe of *Vraba*) was appoynted. We haue declared howe *Nicuesa*, departyng with one Carauel and two Brigandines, from *Vraba* the iurisdiction of his frend & companion *Fogeda*, directed his course Westwarde to *Beragua*, leauing the bygger shyppes somewhat behind hym, to folowe hym a farre of, but he tooke this deuice in an euyl houre, for he both lost his felowes in the nyght, and went past the mouth of the riuer *Beragua*, whiche he cheefely sought. One *Lupus Olanus* a Cantabrian, and gouernour of one of the great shyppes, had the conduct of one of the Brigandines: he commyng behynde, learned of the inhabitauntes, whiche was the way Eastwarde to the gulfe of *Beragua*, ouerpassed and left behynde of *Nicuesa*. *Olanus* therfore directyng his course toward the East, met with the other Brigandine, which had also wandered out of the way by reason of the darkenes of the night. The gouernour of this Brigandine, was one *Petrus de Vmbria*. Thus both beyng glad of their meetyng, they consulted what was best to be done, and whiche way they coulde coniecture their gouernour had taken his voyage. After deliberation, they iudged that *Nicuesa* coulde no more lacke some to put hym in remembrance of *Beragua*, then they them selues were mindful hereof, hoppyng also to fynde hym there. They sayled therefore towarde *Beragua*, where they founde within xvi. myles distant, a ryuer whiche *Colonus* named *Lagartos*, because it nourysheth great Lysards, whiche in the Spanishe tongue are called *Lagartos*. These Lysards are hurtful both vnto man and beast, and in shape much like vnto the Crocodiles of the ryuer *Nilus* in Egypt. In this ryuer they founde their companions and felowes of their errour, lying at anker with the great shyppes, whiche folowed behynde by the gouernours commaundement. Here the whole assemblie beyng careful and disquieted by reason of the gouernours errour, after consultation, by the aduice of the captaynes of the Brigandines, who had rased neere vnto the coastes of *Beragua*, they sayled directly thyther. *Beragua*, in the language of the inhabitants of the same prouince, is as much to say, as the golden riuer. The region it selfe is also called by the same name, takyng name of the ryuer. In the mouth of this ryuer, the greatest vesselles

Lupus Olanus

Petrus de Vmbria.

The ryuer Lagartos.

The golden ryuer of Beragua.

cast anker, and conueyghed all theyr victuales and other necessaries to lande with theyr shyp boates, and elected *Lupus Olanus* to be theyr gouernour in steede of *Nicuesa* whom they had losse. By thaduyce therfore of *Olanus* and the other vnder cayptaines, that all hope of departure myght be taken from the souldyers which they had now brought thyther, and to make them the more wylling to inhabite that lande, they vtterly forsooke and caste of those shyppes beyng nowe rotten for age, and suffered them to be shaken and brooled of the surges of the sea. Yet of theyr soundeste plankes, wyth other newe, made of the trees of that Region (which they saye to be exceeding bigge and hygh) they framed a new carauell shortelye after, whiche they myght vse to serue for theyr necessitie. But *Beragua* was founde by the vnfortunate destenye of *Petrus de Vmbria*. For hee, beyng a man of prompt wit and apt forwardnesse to attempte thinges (in which sometyme fortune will beare a stroke notwithstanding our prouidence) tooke vppon hym thaduenture to searche the shore, to thintent to fynde a way for his felowes where they myght beste come aland. For this purpose, he chose hym .xii. maryners, and went aboorde the shyp boate whiche serued the greatest shyppes. The flowyng of the sea, raged and rored there, with a horryble whurling, as we reade of the daungerous place of *Scylla* in the sea of Cicilie, by reason of the houge & ragged rockes reaching into the sea, from whiche the waues rebounding with vyolence, make a great noyse and roughnesse on the water, which roughnesse or reflowing, the Spaniardes call *Resacca*. In these daungers wretched *Vmbria* wrestled a while, but in short space, a waue of the sea almoste as bygge as a mountayne, reboundyng from the rockes, ouerwhelmed the boate, and deuoured the same with the men, euen in the sight of their felowes: So that of them all, only one escaped by reason he was expert in swimming. For getting holde of the corner of a rocke, and sustenyng the rage of the sea vntyll the next day when it wared caulme, and the shore was dyre by the fall of the water, he escaped and resorted to his companye. But *Vmbria* with the other eleuen, were vtterlye caste awaye. The residue of the companye, durst not committe them selues to the shyppe boates, but went alande with theyr brygantines. Where remayning a fewe dayes, and saylyng

The enterpryse & death of Petrus de Vmbria

The daungerous place of Scilla in the sea of Cicile.

along

along by the ryuer, they founde certayne vyllages of the inhabi-
tauntes, which they call *Mumu*. Here they began to builde a for-
treſſe, and to ſowe ſeedes after the manner of theyr countrey, in
a certayne vale of fruiteful grounde, becauſe in other places the
region is barren. As theſe thyngs were thus doing in *Beragua*,
one of theyr companye ſtanding vpon the top of a high rocke of
eſpeciall, and lyfting his eyes towarde the Weſt, began to
crye, Lynnen ſayles, lynnen ſayles. And the neerer it drewe to-
warde hym, he perceiued it to be a ſhyp boate, commyng with
a lytle ſayle: yet receiued they it with muche reioycing, for it
was the fyſher boate of *Nicueſa* his Carauel, and of capacitie to
cary only fyue men, and had nowe but three in it, whiche had
ſtolne it from *Nicueſa*, becauſe he refuſed to geue credite to them
that he had paſſed *Beragua*, and left it behinde him Eaſtwarde.
For they ſeeyng *Nicueſa* and his felowes to conſume daylye by
famine, thought that they would prooue fortune with that boate,
yf theyr chaunce myght be to fynde *Beragua*, as in deede it was.
Debatyng therefore with theyr felowes of theſe matters, they
declared how *Nicueſa* erred and loſt the Carauel by tempeſt, and
that he was nowe wanderyng among the maryſhes of vnknow-
en coaſtes, full of miſerie and in extreme penurie of all thynges,
hauyng nowe lyued for the ſpace of threeſcore and tenne dayes,
only with herbes and rootes, & ſeldome with fruites of the coun-
trey, contented to drynke water, and yet that oftentymes fay-
lyng, becauſe he was inſtant to trauayle Weſtwarde by foote,
ſuppoſyng by that meanes to come to *Beragua*. *Colonus* the fyrſt
fynder of this mayne lande, had coaſted along by this tracte, and
named it *Gracia Dei*, but thinhabitantes cal it *Cerabaro*. Through
this region, there runneth a riuer, whiche our men named *Sancti*
Matthei, diſtant from the Weſt ſyde of *Beragua*, about an hun-
dred and thyrtie myles. Here I let paſſe the name of this riuer,
and of manye other places by the names whiche thinhabitantes
vſe, becauſe our men are ignorant thereof. Thus *Lupus Olanus*
the conductor of one of the ſhyps of *Nicueſa*, and nowe alſo vice
Lieuetenaunt in his ſteede, after that he had receyued this
information of the Maryners, ſent thyther a Brigandine
vnder theyr guydyng. Theſe Maryners therefore, whiche came
in the fyſher boate, founde *Nicueſa*, and brought hym to the

The miſerable caſe of Nicueſa

The riuer of S. Matthei.

The riotousnesse of Nicuesa.

place where *Olanus* lay, whom at his comming he cast in prison, and accused hym of treason, because he vsurped the authoritie of the Lieuetenauntshyp, and that for the desyre he had to beare rule and be in authoritie, he tooke no care of his errours: also that he behaued him selfe negligently, demaundyng furthermore of hym, what was the cause of his so long delay. Lykewyse he spake to al the vnder officers sharpely, and with a troubled mind, and within fewe dayes after, commaunded them to trusse vp theyr packes, and make them redy to depart. They desyred him to quyet hym selfe, and to forbeare them a whyle, vntyl they had reaped the corne that they had sowen, whiche woulde shortly be rype: for all kynde of corne wareth rype there euery fourth moneth after it is sowen. But he vtterly denyed to tarye anye whyt, but that he woulde foorthwith depart from that vnfortunate lande, and plucked vp by the rootes all that euer was brought into the gulfe of *Beragua*, and commaunded them to direct theyr course towarde the East. After they had sayled about the space of sixteene myles, a certaine young man, whose name was Gregorie, a Genues borne, and of a chylde brought vp with *Colonus*, called to remembraunce that there was a hauen not farre from thence: and to proue his sayinges true, he gaue his felowes these tokens, that is, that they shoulde fynde vpon the shore, an anker of a lost shyppe halfe couered with sande, and vnder a tree next vnto the hauen a spryng of cleare water. They came to the lande, founde the anker and the spryng, and commended the wytte and memorie of the young man, that he onlye among manye of the Maryners which had searched those coastes with *Colonus*, bore the thyng so well in mynde. This hauen *Colonus* called *Portus Bellus*. Where as in this voyage for lacke of vyctualles, they were sometymes enforced to goe alande, they were euyl entreated of thinhabitantes: by reason whereof, theyr strengthes were so weakened with hunger, that they were not able to keepe warre against naked men, or scarcely to beare their harnesse on theyr backes: and therefore our men lost twentie of theyr companions, which were slayne with venemous arrowes. They consulted to leaue the one halfe of theyr felowes in the hauen of *Portus Bellus*, & the other part *Nicuesa* toke with hym towarde the East, where about twentie and eyght myles from

Corne wareth ryppe euerye fourth moneth

The commendation of a young man brought vp with Colonus.

Portus Bellus.

Weakenesse of hunger.

Por-

Portus Bellus, he entended to buylde a fortresse harde by the sea syde, vpon the poynt or cape, whiche in tyme past *Colonus* named *Marmor*, but they were so feeble by reason of long hunger, that theyr strength serued them not to susteyne suche labour, yet he erected a lytle towre, able to resyst the fyrst assaulte of the inhabitauntes: this towre he called *Nomen Dei*. From the tyme that he left *Beragua*, what in the iourney among the sandie playnes, then also for hunger while he buylded the towre, of the fewe whiche remayned alyue, he lost two hundred. And thus by litle and lytle, the multitude of seuen hundred, fourescore, and fyue men, was brought nowe to scarcelye one hundred. Whyle *Nicuesa* lyued with these fewe miserable men, there arose a contention among them of *Vraba*, as concernyng the Lieuetenantshyppe: for one *Vascus Nunnez*, by the iudgement of al men, trustyng more to his strength then wit, styrred vp certayne light felowes agaynst *Anciſus*, saying that *Anciſus* had not the kyngs letters patentes for that office, and that it was not sufficient that he was authorised by *Fogeda*, and therefore forbode that he should execute the office of the Lieuetenauntshyp, and wylled them to chooſe certayne of theyr owne companye, by whose counsayle and authoritie they myght be gouerned. Thus being diuided into factions, by reason that *Fogeda* theyr captayne came not agayne, whom they supposed to be nowe dead of his venemous wound, they contended whether it were best to substitute *Nicuesa* in his place. The wyſest sort, suche as were familier with *Nicuesa*, & could not beare the insolencie of *Vascus Nunnez*, thought it good that *Nicuesa* shoulde be sought out throughout all those coastes: for they had knowledge that he departed from *Beragua*, because of the barrennesse of the grounde, and that by the example of *Anciſus*, and suche other as had made shypwracke, it were possible that he myght wander in some secrete place, and that they coulde not be quiet in theyr myndes, vntyl they knewe the certayntie whether he with his felowes were aliue or dead. But *Vascus Nunnez*, fearyng lest at the commyng of *Nicuesa*, he shoulde not be had in authoritie among his felowes, sayd they were mad men to thynke that *Nicuesa* lyued, and although he were alyue, yet that they had no neede of his helpe: for he auouched that there was none of his felowes, that were not

Cape Marmor.

Nomen Dei.

The nauigation of Roderigus Colmenaris.

as meete to rule as *Nicuesa*. Whyle they were thus reasonyng to and fro, one *Rodericus Colmenaris* aryued in those coastes with two great shyppes, hauyng in them threescore freshe men, with great plentie of vyttualles and apparell. Of the nauigation of this *Colmenaris*, I entend to speake somewhat more. He therfore departed from the hauen of *Hispaniola*, called *Beata* (where they prepare and furnyshe them selues whiche make any voyage into these landes) about the Ides of October, in the yeere. 1510. and landed the.ix. of Nouember in a region in the large prouince of *Paria*, founde by *Colonus* betwene the hauen *Carthago*, and the region of *Cuchibachoa*. In this voyage, what by the roughnesse of the sea, and fiercenesse of the barbarians, he suffered many incommodities: for when his freshe water fayled, he sayled to the mouth of a certayne riuer which thinhabitantes cal *Gaira*, beyng apt to receiue shippes. This riuer had his course from the toppe of an exceedyng hygh mountayne couered with snowe, hygher then the whiche, al the companions of this captayne *Rodericus* say, that they neuer sawe: And that by good reason, yf it were couered with snowe in that region, which is not past ten degrees distant from the *Equinoctial* lyne. As they began to draw water out of theyr shyp boate, a certayne kyng made towarde them, apparelled with vestures of gossampine cotton, hauyng twentie noble men in his company apparelled also: which thyng seemed straunge to our men, and not seene before in those parties. The kynges apparell hong loose from his shoulders to his elbowes, and from the gyrdle downewarde, it was much lyke a womans kyrtle, reaching euen to his heeles. As he drewe necre towarde our men, he seemed frendly to admonyshe them to take none of the water of that ryuer, affyrmyng it to be vnwholsome for men, and shewed them that not farre from thence, there was a ryuer, of good water. They came to the ryuer, and endeuouryng to come neere the shore, they were driuen backe by tempest. Also the burbuling of the sand, declared the sea to be but shalow there. They were therefore enforced to returne to the fyrste ryuer where they myght safely cast anker. This kyng layde wayte for our men: for as they were fyllyng theyr barrelles, he set on them with about seuen hundred men (as our men iudged) armed after theyr manner, although they were naked: for

An exceedyng high mountayne couered with snowe.

Apparelled men.

for only the kyng and his noble men were apparelled. They tooke away the shyppboate, and broke it in manner to chips: so fiercely assaylyng our men with theyr venemous arrowes, that they slue of them fourtie and seuen, before they coulde couer them selues with their targets. For that poyson is of such force, that albeit the woundes were not great, yet they dyed therof immediatly, for they yet knewe no remedie agaynst this kynde of poyson, as they after learned of the inhabitauntes of *Hispaniola*: for this Ilande bryngeth fooryth an hearbe which quencheth and mortifieth the violent poyson of the hearbe, wherwith theyr arrowes are infected, so that it be ministred in tyme. Yet of our companye whiche went for water, seuen escaped that conflycte, and hydde them selues in a hollowe tree, lurkyng there vntyll nyght, yet escaped they not the handes of theyr enimies: for the shyppe departed from thence in the nyght season, and left them there, supposyng that they had ben slayne. Thus by manye suche peryls and daungers (which I lyghtly ouerpasse, because I wyll not be tedious to your holynesse) he aryued at the length at the hauen of *Vraba*, and cast anker at the East syde thereof, from whence not long before, our men departed to the West syde, by reason of the barrennesse of that soyle. When he had continued a whyle in the hauen, and sawe no man styrryng, maruepled at the scilence of the places (for he supposed there to haue found his felowes) he could not coniecture what this should meane: and thereupon began to suspect that eyther they were dead, or that they had changed the place of theyr habitation. To knowe the certaynties hereof, he commaunded all the great ordinaunce, and other small gunnes whiche he had in his shyppes, to be charged, and fyers to be made in the night vpon the toppes of the rockes. Thus the fyers beyng kyndled, he commaunded al the gunnes to be shot of at one instant, by the horrible noyse whereof, the gulfe of *Vraba* was shaken, although it were .xxiiii. myles distant, for so brode is the gulfe. This noyse was heard of theyr felowes in *Dariena*, and they aunsweared them agayne with mutual fyers. Wherefore, by the folowyng of these fyers, *Colmenaris* brought his shippes to the West syde. Here those wretched and miserable men of *Dariena*, whiche nowe through famyne and feebleneſſe, held theyr weerie soules in theyr teeth,

Spaniardes slayne with venemous arrowes.

A remedie agaynst venemous arrowes.

The hauen of Vraba.

redy to depart from theyr bodyes, by reason of the calamities whiche befel vnto them after *Anciſus* shipwracke, lifting vp their handes to heauen, with the teares running downe theyr cheekes both for ioy and sorow, embraced *Rodericus* and his felowes with such kinde of reioycyng, as theyr present neceſſitie seemed to require: for whereas they were before his commyng, without victuals, and almoſt naked, he brought them abundance of meate, drinke, and apparel. It reſteth now (moſt holy father) to declare what came of the diſſention among them of *Vraba*, as concerning the gouernance after the loſſe of theyr captaynes.

The thirde booke of the seconde Decade, of the suppoſed continent.

ALl the cheefe officers in *Beragua*, and suche as were moſt politike in counsayle, determined that *Nicueſa* should be sought out, yf by any meanes he coulde be founde. Wherupon they tooke from *Anciſus* the gouernour, refusyng the comming of *Nicueſa*, a Brigandine whiche he made of his owne charges: and agreed, agaynſt both the wyl of *Anciſus*, and the maiſter of fence *Vaſchus Nunnez*, that *Nicueſa* should be sought forth to take away the stryfe as touching the gouernment. They elected therefore *Colmenaris* (of whom we spake before) to take this matter in hande, willing him to make diligent searche for *Nicueſa* in those coaſtes where they suppoſed he erred: for they hearde that he had forſaken *Beragua*, the region of an vnfruiteful ground. They gaue him therfore commaundement to bring *Nicueſa* with hym, and further to declare vnto him that he should do right good ſeruice to come thyther, in takyng away the occaſion of theyr seditions. *Colmenaris* tooke the thyng vpon hym the more gladly, becauſe *Nicueſa* was his very frende, ſuppoſyng his commyng with victualles ſhoulde be no leſſe thankefull to *Nicueſa* and his company, then it was to them of *Vraba*. Furnishyng therefore one of his owne ſhyppes which he brought with hym, and alſo the Brigandine taken from *Anciſus*, he fraygted the

the same with part of the vittuals and other necessaries which he brought with hym before from *Hispaniola* to *Vraba*. Thus coursyng along by al the coastes and gulfes neere thereabout, at the length, at the poynt called *Marmor*, he founde *Nicuesa*, of al lyuyng men most infortunate, in manner dyed vp with extreme hunger, fylthy and horrible to beholde, with only threescore men in his company, left aliue of seuen hundred. They al seemed to him so miserable, that he no lesse lamented theyr case, then yf he had found them dead. But *Colmenaris* comforted his frend *Nicuesa*, and embracyng hym with teares and cheareful words, releeued his spirites, and further encouraged hym with great hope of better fortune, declaryng also that his comming was looked for, and greatlye desyred of all the good men of *Vraba*, for that they hoped that by his authoritie, theyr discorde and contention shoulde be finished. *Nicuesa* thanked his frende *Colmenaris* after suche sorte as his calamitie required. Thus they tooke shyp together, and sailed directly to *Vraba*. But so variable and vnconstant is the nature of man, that he soone groweth out of vse, becommeth insolent and vnmyndfull of benefites after to muche felicitie: for *Nicuesa* after thus many teares and weepyngs, after diuers bewaylynges of his infortunate destenye, after so many thankesgeuyng, yea after that he had fallen downe to the ground and kyssed the feete of *Colmenaris* his sautour, he began to quarel with hym before he came yet at *Vraba*, reprouing hym & them al for the alteration of the state of thynges in *Vraba*, and for the gatheryng of golde, affyrmyng that none of them ought to haue layde hande of anye golde without the aduice of hym or *Fogeda* his companyon. When these sayinges and suche lyke, came to the eares of them of *Vraba*, they so styrred vp the myndes of *Anciſus* Lieuetenaunt for *Fogeda*, and also of *Vaſchus Nunnez* of the contrary part, agaynst *Nicuesa*, that shortly after his aryuall with his threescore men, they commaunded hym with threatnyng to depart from thence: but this pleased not the better sort. Yet fearyng lest tumult should be among the people, whom *Vaſchus Nunnez* had styrred to factions, the best part was fayne to geue place to ỹ greatest. This wretched man therfore *Nicuesa* thus drowned in miseries, was thrust into the Brigandine whiche he him selfe brought, and with him only seuenteene men, of

Nicuesa is founde in a miserable case.

Insolencie ofte muche felicitie.

his threescore whiche remayned alyue. He tooke shippe in the Calendes of Marche, in the yeere. 1511. intendyng to goe to *Hispaniola* to complayne of the rashnesse of *Vaschus Nunnez*, and of the violence done to hym by *Anciſus*: But he entred into the Brigandine in an vnfortunate houre, for he was neuer seene after. They suppose that the Brigandine was drowned with al the men therein. And thus vnhappie *Nicuesa* fallyng headlong out of one misery into another, ended his life more miserably then he lyued. *Nicuesa* being thus vylely reiected, and theyr vyttuals consumed which *Colmenaris* brought them, falling in maner mad for hunger, they were enforced lyke rauening woolues seekyng theyr pray, to inuade suche as dwelt about theyr confynes. *Vaschus Nunnez* therfore, their new captaine of their owne election, assemblyng togeather a hundred and thirtie men, and settyng them in order of battayle after his swoordplayers fashion, puffed vp with pryde, placed his souldiers as pleased hym, in the forewarde and rerewarde, and some, as partizens, about his owne person. Thus assosiatyng with hym *Colmenaris*, he went to spoyle the kynges which were borderers therabout, and came fyrst to a region about that coast called *Coiba* (whereof we made mention before) imperiously and with cruell countenance commaundyng the kyng of the region, whose name was *Careta* (of whom they were neuer troubled as often as they passed by his dominions) to geue them vyttualles. But *Careta* denyed that he coulde geue them any at that tyme, alleagyng that he had oftentymes ayded the Christians as they passed by those coastes, by reason whereof, his store was nowe consumed: also that by the meanes of the continuall warre whiche he kept euer from his childes age with a kyng whose name was *Poncha*, borderyng vpon his dominion, he and his familie were in great scarcenesse of al thynges. But *Vaschus* woulde admyt none of these excuses, and thereupon tooke *Careta* prisoner, spoyled his village, and brought him bounde with his two wyues and children, and all his familie to *Dariena*. With this kyng *Careta*, they found three of the felowes of *Nicuesa*, the which whē *Nicuesa* passed by those coastes to seeke *Beragua*, fearing punishment for theyr euil desertes, stole away from the shippes lying at anker: And when the nauie departed, committed them selues to the mercie of *Careta*, who

The death of Nicuesa.

Famine enforceth them to fal to spoylyng.

Careta kyng of Coiba.

Kyng Careta is taken and spoyled.

who entertayned them very frendly. They had nowe ben there eighteene monethes, and were therefore as vtterly naked as the people of the countrey. Duryng this tyme, the meate of thinhabitantes seemed vnto them delicate dishes & princely fare, especially because they enioyed the same without any stryfe for mine and thyne, whiche two thynges moue and enforce men to suche harde shyftes and miseries, that in lyuyng they seeme not to lyue. Yet desyred they to returne to theyr olde cares, of suche force is education and naturall affection towarde them with whom we haue ben brought vp. The vyttuals which *Vaschus* brought from the vyllage of *Careta*, to his felowes left in *Dariena*, was rather somewhat to asswage theyr present hunger, then vtterly to take away theyr necessitie. But as touching *Anciſus*, beyng Lieuetenaunt for *Fogeda*, whether it were before these thyngs, or after, I knowe not: but this I am sure of, that after the reiectyng of *Nicuesa*, many occasions were sought against *Anciſus* by *Vaschus* and his factionaries. Howsoeuer it was, *Anciſus* was taken, and cast in pryson, and his goodes confiscate: the cause hereof was (as *Vaschus* alleaged) that *Anciſus* had his commission of the Lieuetenauntshyp of *Fogeda* only, whom they said to be now dead, and not of the kyng, saying that he woulde not obey anye man that was not put in office by the kyng him selfe by his letters patentes. Yet at the request of the grauest sort, he was somewhat pacified, and dealt more gentelly with hym, hauyng some compassion on his calamities, and thereupon commaunded him to be loosed. *Anciſus* beyng at libertie, tooke shyppe to depart from thence to *Hiſpaniola*: but before he had hoysed vp his sayle, al the wisest sort resorted to him, humblye desyryng hym to returne agayne, promysyng that they woulde doo their diligence, that *Vaschus* being reconciled, he myght be restored to his full authoritie of the Lieuetenauntshyp: but *Anciſus* refused to consent to theyr request, and so departed. Yet some there were that murmured that God and his angels shewed this reuenge vpon *Anciſus*, because *Nicuesa* was reiected through his counsayle. Howe so euer it be, the searchers of the newe landes fall headlong into ruine by theyr owne follie, consumyng them selues with ciuile discorde, not weighing so great a matter, nor employing theyr best endeuour about the same, as the woorthynesse

Maine & thine the seedes of all mischeefe.

Anciſus, Lieuetenant for Fogeda, is cast in pryson.

Anciſus taketh his voyage to Hiſpaniola.

The reuenge of God.

The inconueniences of discorde.

neſſe of the thyng requireth. In this meane tyme, they determined all with one agreement, to ſende meſſengers into *Hiſpaniola* to the yong Admiral and viceroy, ſonne and heyre to *Chriſtophorus Colonus* the fynder of theſe landes, and to the other gouernours of the Iſlande (from whom the newe landes receiue theyr ayde and lawes) to ſignifie vnto them what ſtate they ſtoode in, and in what neceſſitie they liued, alſo what they had founde, and in what hope they were of greater thyngs, if they were furniſhed with plentie of vyttualles and other neceſſaries. For this purpoſe they elected, at the aſſignement of *Vaſchus*, one *Valdiuia*, being one of his faction, and inſtructed by hym agaynſt *Anciſus*, and to be aſſyſtant with hym, they appoynted one *Zamudius* a Cantabrian, ſo that commaundement was geuen to *Valdiuia* to returne from *Hiſpaniola* with vittuals, & *Zamudius* was appoynted to take his voyage into Spayne to the kyng. They toke ſhip both togeather with *Anciſus*, hauyng in mind to certifie the king howe things were handled there, much otherwiſe then *Zamudius* information. I mee ſelfe ſpake with both *Anciſus* & *Zamudius* at their comming to the court. Whyle they were occupied about theſe matters, thoſe wretched men of *Dariena* looſed *Careta* the king of *Coiba*, vpon condition that he ſhoulde ayde them in their warres agaynſt his enimie and theyrs, kyng *Poncha*, borderyng vpon his dominions. *Careta* made a league with them, promiſing that as they paſſed by his kingdome, he woulde geue them all things neceſſarie, & meete them with an armie of men, to goe forward with them to the battaile againſt *Poncha*. Theyr weapons are neyther bowes nor bemomed arrowes, as we ſayde thinhabitauntes to haue, whiche dwel eaſtward beyonde the gulfe. They fyght therefore at hande with long ſwordes (whiche they call *Macanas*) made of wood, becauſe they haue no Iron. They vſe alſo long ſtaues lyke iauelyns, hardened at the endes with fyre, or typt with bone, alſo certayne ſlynges and dartes. Thus after the league made with *Careta*, both he and our men had certayne dayes appoynted them to tyll theyr grounde and ſowe theyr ſeedes. This done, by the ayde of *Careta*, and by his conduction, they marched towarde the pallace of *Poncha*, who fled at theyr comming. They ſpoyled his byllage, and mitigated theyr hunger with ſuch vyttuals as they founde there: yet coulde they

King Poncha.

Swordes of wood.

King Careta conſpireth with the Spaniards agaynſt kyng Poncha.

not

not helpe theyr felowes therewith, by reason of the farre distance of the place, although they had great plentie: for the village of *Poncha* was more then a hundred myles dystant from *Dariena*, whereas was also none other remedie, but that the same shoulde haue ben caryed on mens backes to the sea syde, beyng farre of, where they left theyr shyppes in the whiche they came to the village of *Careta*. Here they founde certayne poundes weight of gold, grauen & wrought into sundry ouches. After the sackyng of this village, they resorted toward the shyps, intending to leaue the kynges of the inlande untouched at this tyme, and to inuade only them which dwelt by the sea coastes. Not farre from *Coiba*, in the same tracte, there is a region named *Comogra*, and the king thereof called *Comogrus*, after the same name. To this kyng they came fyrst next after the subuertion of *Poncha*, and founde his pallace situate in a fruiteful playne of .xii. leagues in breadth, at the rootes of the further syde of ỹ next mountaynes. *Comogrus* had in his courte a certaine noble man of neere consanguitie to kyng *Careta*, whiche had fled to *Comogrus* by reason of certayne dissentions which was betweene *Careta* & hym, these noble men, they cal *Iura*. This *Iura* therefore of *Coiba*, met our men by the way, and conciled *Comogrus* to theim, because he was wel knowen to our men, from the tyme that *Nicuesa* passed fyrst by those coastes. Our men therfore went quietly to the pallace of *Comogrus*, beyng distant from *Dariena* thirtie leagues by a plaine way about the mountaynes. This kyng *Comogrus* had seuen sonnes, young men, of comely fourme and stature, which he had by sundry wyues. His pallace was framed of postes or proppes made of trees fastened together after a strange sort, and of so strong building, that it is of no lesse strength then walles of stone. They whiche measured the length of the flooze thereof, founde it to be a hundred and fyftie paces, and in breadth, fourescore foote, beyng rooked and paued with marueylous arte. They founde his storehouse furnished with abundance of delicate victuals, after the manner of theyr countrey, and his wyne seller replenished with great vesselles of earth and also of wood, fylled with their kinde of wine and syder, for they haue no grapes: but lyke as they make theyr bread of those three kindes of rootes called *Iucca*, *Agis*, and *Maizium* (whereof we spake in the fyrst Decade) so

The region of Comogra, distant from Dariena. xxx. leagues.

Kyng Comogrus.

The kynges pallace.

Wine & syder.

make

make they they wyne of the fruites of Date trees, and Syder of other fruites and seedes, as do the Almaynes, Fleminges, Englyshemen, & our Spanyardes which inhabite the mountaines, as the *Vascons* and *Asturians*: lykewyse in the mountaynes of the Alpes, the *Noricians*, *Sweuians*, and *Heluecians*, make certayne drynkes of barley, wheate, hoppes, and apples. They say also that with *Comogrus* they dronke wines of sundry tastes, both whyte and blacke. But nowe you shal heare of a thyng more monstrous to beholde. Entryng therefore into the inner partes of the pallace, they were brought into a chamber hanged about with the carkasses of men, tyed with ropes of gossampine cotton. Beyng demaunded what they meant by that superstition, they answered that those were the carcasses of the father, graundfather, & great graundfather, with other the auncetours of they kyng *Comogrus*, declaryng that they had the same in great reuerence, and that they tooke it for a godly thyng to honour them religiously, and therefore apparelled euery of the same sumptuously with gold and precious stones, according vnto they estate. After this sorte dyd the antiquitie honour they *Penates*, whiche they thought had the gouernance of they lyues. Howe they dyde these carcasses vpon certaine instrumentes made of wood, lyke vnto hurdells, with a soft fyre vnder the same, so that only the skinne remayneth to hold the bones togeather, we haue described in the former Decade. Of *Comogrus* his seuen sonnes, the eldest had an excellent natural wyt. He therefore thought it good to flatter and please this wanderyng kinde of men (our men I meane) liuing only by shiftes and spoyle, lest being offended, and seeking occasions against him & his familie, they should handle hym as they dyd other which sought no meanes how to gratifie them: Wherefore, he gaue *Vaschus* and *Colmenaris* foure thousande ounces of golde artificially wrought, and also fiftie statues, whiche he had taken in the warres: for suche, eyther they sell for exchaunge of other thynges, or otherwyse vse them as them listeth, for they haue not the vse of money. This golde with as muche more which they had in another place, our men weighed in the porche of *Comogrus* his palace, to separate the fift parte thereof, whiche portion is due to the kynges Exchequer: for it is decreed, that the fyft part of both golde, pearles, and

pretious

Blacke wine.

The carcasses of men dyed.

The distribution of golde.

precious stones, shoulde be assigned to the kynges treasurers, and the residue to be diuided among them selues by composition. Here as brabblyng and contention arose among our men about the diuidyng of golde, this eldest sonne of kyng *Comogrus* beyng present, whom we prayse for his wysedome, commyng somewhat with an angrye countenaunce towarde hym whiche held the ballaunces, he stroke them with his fyste, and scattered all the golde that was therein about the porche, sharpelye rebukyng them with woordes in this effecte. What is the matter, you Christian men, that you so greatly esteeme so lytle portion of golde more then your owne quietnesse, whiche neuertheless you entende to deface from these fayre ouches, and to melt the same into a rude masse. Yf your hunger of golde be so insatiable, that onlye for the desyre you haue thereto, you disquiete so manye nations, and you your selues also susteyne so many calamities and incommodities, lyuyng lyke banished men out of your owne countrey, I wyll shewe you a region flowyng with golde, where you may satisfie your rauenyng appetites: But you must attempt the thing with a greater power, for it standeth you in hand by force of armes to ouercome kings of great puissaunce, and rigorous defendours of theyr dominions. For beside other, the great kyng *Tumanama* wyll come foorth agaynst you, whose kyngdome is most riche with golde, and distant from hence only syxe sunnes, that is, syxe dayes: for they number the dayes by the sunne. Furthermore, or euer you can come thither, you muste passe ouer the mountaynes inhabited of the cruell Canibales, a fierce kynde of men, deuourers of mans flesshe, lyuyng without lawes, wanderyng, and without Empire: for they also beyng desyrous of golde, haue subdued them vnder theyr dominion, whiche before inhabited the golde mynes of the mountaynes, and vse them lyke bondemen, vsyng theyr labour in dyggyng and woorkyng their golde in plates and sundry images, lyke vnto these whiche you see here: for we do no more esteeme rude golde vnwrought, then we do cloddes of earth, before it be fourmed by the hande of the woorkeman to the similitude eyther of some vessell necessarie for our vse, or some ouche beautifull to be worne. These thynges doo we receyue of them for exchaunge of other of

Young Comogrus his oration.

The hunger of golde.

A region flowing with golde.

Kyng Tumanama.

Canibales.

The golde mines of the mountaynes.

Vnwrought golde not esteemed.

our

our thynges, as of pryſoners taken in warre, whiche they buye to eate, or for ſheetes and other thynges parteynyng to the furniture of houſholde, ſuche as they lacke whiche inhabite the mountaynes, and eſpecially for vittualles, whereof they ſtande in great neede, by reaſon of the barrennes of the mountaines. This iourney therefore muſt be made open by force of men, and when you are paſſyng ouer theſe mountaynes (poyntyng with his finger towarde the ſouth mountaynes) you ſhal ſee another ſea, where they ſayle with ſhyppes as bygge as yours (meanyng the Caraueles) vſyng both ſayles and oares as you doo, although the men be naked as we are: all the way that the water runneth from the mountaynes, and al that ſyde lying towarde the South, bryngeth fourth golde abundauntly. As he ſayd theſe wordes, he poynted to the veſſelles in whiche they vſe to ſerue theyr meate, affyrmyng that kyng *Tumanama*, and all the other kyngs beyond the mountaynes, had ſuch & al other theyr houſehold ſtuffe of golde, and that there was no leſſe plentie of gold among thoſe people of the South, then of Iron with vs: for he knewe by relation of our men, whereof our ſwordes and other weapons were made. Our captaynes marueylyng at the oration of the naked young man (for they had for interpreters thoſe three men whiche had ben before a yeere and a halfe conuerſaunt in the court of kyng *Careta*) pondered in theyr mindes, and earneſtly conſydered his ſayinges, ſo that his raſhneſſe in ſcatteryng the golde out of the ballaunces, they turned to myrth and vrbanitie, commendyng his dooyngand ſaying therin. Then they aſked hym frendly, vpon what certaine knowledge he ſpake thoſe thynges, or what he thought beſt herein to be done, yf they ſhould bring a greater ſupply of men? To this young *Comogrus*, ſtaying a whyle with him ſelfe, as it were an Oratour preparing hym ſelfe to ſpeake of ſome graue matter, and diſpoſing his body to a ieſture meete to perſwade, ſpake thus in his mother tongue, Geue eare vnto me, O you Chriſtians. Albeit that the greedie hunger of golde hath not yet vexed vs naked men, yet do we deſtroy one another by reaſon of ambition and deſyre to rule. Hereof ſpryngeth mortal hatred among vs, and hereof commeth our deſtruction. Our predeceſſours kept warres, and ſo dyd *Comogrus* my father, with princes beyng borderers about him.

Abundance of golde.

Houſholde ſtuffe of golde.

Naked people tormented with ambition.

In

In the whiche warres, as we haue ouercome, so haue we ben ouercome, as doth appeare by the number of bondmen among vs, which we toke by the ouerthrowe of our enimies, of the whiche I haue geuen you fyftie. Lykewyse at another tyme, our aduersaries hauyng the vpper hande agaynst vs, ledde awaye many of vs captiue, for suche is the chaunce of warre. Also, among our familiers (whereof a great number haue ben captiues with them) beholde here is one whiche of long time led a payneful lyfe in bondage vnder the yoke of that kyng beyonde the mountaynes, in whose kyngdome is such abundance of gold. Of hym, and suche other innumerable, and lykewyse by the resort of free men on theyr side commyng to vs, and agayne of our men resortyng to them by safe conduct, these thynges haue ben euer as well knowen vnto vs, as our owne possessions: but that you may be the better assured hereof, and be out of al suspection that you shall not be deceiued, make me the guyde of this voyage, byndyng me fast, and keepyng me in safe custodie to be hanged on the next tree, yf you fynde my sayinges in anye poynt vntrue. Folowe my counsayle therefore, and sende for a thousande Christian men apt for the warres, by whose power we may, with also the men of warre of *Comogrus* my father, armed after our manner, inuade the dominions of our enimies: where both you may be satisfied with golde, and we for our conductyng and aydyng you in this enterpryse, shall thinke our selues abundantly rewarded, in that you shal helpe to deliuer vs from the iniuries and perpetuall feare of our enimies. After these woordes, this prudent young *Comogrus* helde his peace, and our men mooued with great hope and hunger of golde, began agayne to swalowe downe theyr spyttle.

A vehement perswasion.

A token of hunger.

The fourth booke of the seconde Decade, of the supposed continent.

After that they had taryed here a fewe dayes, and baptised *Comogrus*, with all his familie, and named hym by the name of Charles, after the kyng of Spayne, they returned to theyr felowes in *Dariena*, leauyng with hym the hope of the thousande

Kyng Comogrus is baptised with his familie.

lande souldiers, whiche his sonne required to passe ouer those mountaynes towarde the South sea. Thus entryng into the vyllage whiche they had chosen to inhabite, they had knowledge that *Valdiuia* was returned within sixe monethes after his departure, but with no great plentie of vyttualles, because he brought but a smal shyppe: yet with hope that shortly after, there shoulde be sent them abundance of vyttualles, and a newe supplye of men. For young *Colonus* the Admiral, and viceroy of *Hispaniola*, and the other gouernours of the Ilande, acknowledged that hytherto they had no respect to them of *Dariena*, because they supposed that *Anciſus* the Lieuetenaunt had safely arryued there with his shyppe laden with vyttualles: wylling them from henceforth to be of good cheare, and that they shoulde lacke nothyng hereafter, but that at this present tyme they had no bigger ship wherby they myght send them greater plentie of necessaries by *Valdiuia*. The vyttuals therfore which he brought, serued rather somwhat to mitigate theyr present necessitie, then to satisfie theyr lacke. Wherefore, within a fewe dayes after *Valdiuia* his returne, they fel agayne into lyke scarcenesse: especially forasmuche as a great storme and tempest whiche came from the hygh mountaynes, with horrible thunder and lyghtnyng in the moneth of Nouember, brought with it suche a flooode, that it partly caryed away, and partly drowned al the corne and seedes which they had sowen in the moneth of September, in a fruitefull grounde before they went to kyng *Comogrus*. The seedes whiche they of *Hispaniola* call *Maizium*, and they of *Vraba* call *Hobba*, whereof they make theyr bread, whiche also we sayde to be rype thryse euery yeere, because those regions are not bytten with the sharpenesse of wynter by reason of theyr neerenesse to the Equinoctial lyne. It is also agreeable to the principles of natural philosophie, that this bread made of *Maizius* or *Hobba*, shoulde be more wholsome for the inhabitauntes of those countreys then bread made of wheate, by reason that it is of easier digestion: for whereas colde is wantyng, the natural heate is not dryuen from the outwarde partes into the inwarde partes and precordials, whereby digestion is muche strengthened. Beyng therefore thus frustrate of the increase of theyr seedes, and the kynges neere about them, spoyled of both vyttualles

Horrible thunder and lyghtnyng in the moneth of Nouember.

and

and golde, they were enforced to seeke their meate further of, and therwith to signifie to the gouernours of *Hispaniola* with what great necessitie they were oppressed, and what they had learned of *Comogrus* as concernyng the Regions towarde the South, willyng them in consideration thereof, to aduertise the kyng to send them a thousande souldiers, by whose helpe they myght by force make waye through the mountaynes, diuidyng the sea on both sydes, if they coulde not bryng the same to passe quietly. The same *Valdiuia* was also sent on this message, carying with hym to the kynges treasurers (hauing their office of receipt in *Hispaniola*) three hundred poundes weyght of golde, after eyght ounces to the pounde, for the fyft portion due to the kynges exchequer. This pound of eight ounces, the Spaniardes call *Marcha*, whiche in weight amounteth to fyftye peeces of golde called *Castellani*, but the Castilians call a pounde *Pesum*. We conclude therefore, that the summe hereof, was .x v. thousand of those peeces of gold called *Castellani*. And thus is it apparent by this accompt, that they receiued of the barbarous kinges, a thousande and fyue hundred poundes, of eyght ounces to the pounde: all the whiche they founde readye wrought in sundrye kyndes of ouches, as cheynes, bracelets, tablets, and plates, both to hang before their brestes, and also at their eares, and nosethryls. *Valdiuia* therfore tooke shypping in the same Caranell in the which he came last, and returned also before the thyrde day of the Ides of January, in the yeere of Christe M. D. XI. What chaunced to hym in this voyage, we wyll declare in place conuenient. But let vs now returne to them whiche remayned in *Vraba*. After the dismissyng of *Valdiuia*, beyng pricked forwarde with outragious hunger, they determined to searche the inner partes of that gulfe in sundry places. The extreeme angle or poynt of the same gulfe is distant from the enterance thereof, about fourescore myles. This angle or corner, the Spaniardes call *Culata*. *Vaschus* hym selfe came to this poynt with a hundred men, coasting along by the gulfe with one brygandine and certayne of the boates of those regions, whiche the Arabians call *Vru*, lyke vnto them whiche thinhabitauntes of *Hispaniola* call *Canoas*. From this poynt, there falleth a ryuer from the East into the gulfe, ten times bigger then the ryuer of *Dariena*, which al-

so falleth into the same. Saylyng along by the ryuer about the space of thyrtie myles(for they cal it niene leagues) and somewhat enclynyng towarde the ryght hande Southwarde, they founde certayne byllages of thinhabitauntes,the kyng whereof was called *Dabaiba*. Our men also were certified before, that *Cemacchus* the kyng of *Dariena*, whom they put to flyght in the battayle,fledde to this *Dabaiba*, but at the commyng of our men, *Dabaiba* also fledde. It is thought that he was admonyshed by *Cemacchus*, that he shoulde not abyde the brunte of our men. He folowed his counsayle,forsooke his billages,and left all thynges desolate: yet our men founde heapes of bowes and arrowes, also muche housholde stuffe,and many fyshyng boates. But those marysshe groundes were neyther apt for sowyng of seedes, or plantyng of trees, by reason whereof, they founde there fewe suche thynges as they desyred, that is, plentie of byttualles: for the inhabitauntes of this region haue no bread, but such as they geat in other countreys neare about them by exchange for their fysshe, onlye to serue theyr owne necessitie: yet founde they in the houses of those whiche fledde, golde wrought and grauen,amountyng to the summe of seuen thousande of those peeces,whiche we sayde to be called *Castellani*: also certaine Canoas,of the whiche they brought away two with them, and great plentie of theyr household stuffe,with certaine bundels of bowes & arrowes. They say,that from the marysshes of that riuer, there come certayne battes in the nyght season,as bygge as turtle doues,inuadyng men, and bytyng them with a deadly wounde, as some of them testifie whiche haue ben bytten of the same. I mee selfe communing with *Anciſus* the Lieuetenant whom they reiected, and among other thynges asking hym of the venemous byting of these battes, he tolde me that he hym selfe was bytten by one of them on the heele, his foote lying vncouered in the nyght, by reason of the heate in sommer season, but that it hurte hym no more,then if he had ben bitten by any other beast not venemous. Other say,that the byting of some of them is venemous:yet that the same is healed incontinently, yf it be washed with water of the sea. *Anciſus* tolde me also, that the venemous woundes made by the Canibales arrowes infected with poyson, are healed by washing with water of the sea, and also by cauterisyng

Marysshe grounde.

Anciſus bitten of a Batte.

with whot irons, and that he had experience thereof in the region of *Caribana*, where many of his men were so wounded. They departed therefore from the poynt of the gulfe of *Vraba*, not wel contented, because they were not laden with victualles. In this theyr returne, there arose so great a tempest in that wyde gulfe, that they were enforced to cast into the sea al the houshold stuffe, whiche they tooke from the poore wretches whiche liued only by fyshyng. The sea also swalowed vp the two boates that they tooke from them, wherewith the men were lykewyse drowned. The same tyme that *Vaschus Nunnez* attempted to searche the poynt of the gulfe towarde the south, euen then by agreement, dyd *Rodericus Colmenaris* take his voyage toward ỳ mountaines by the east, with threescore men, by the riuer of the other gulfe. About fourtie myles distant from the mouth of the other ryuer, (for they cal it twelue leagues) he founde certayne vyllages situate vpon the bankes of the ryuer, whose *Chiui* (that is) kyng, they cal *Turui*. With this kyng dyd *Colmenaris* yet remayne, when *Vaschus* after his returne to *Dariena*, saylyng by the same ryuer, came to hym. Here refreshyng theyr whole companye with the vittuals of this *Turui*, they departed from thence togeather. Other fourtie myles from hence, the ryuer encompasseth an Iland inhabited with fyshermen. In this, because they sawe great plentie of trees whiche beare *Cassia fistula*, they named the Iland *Cannafistula*. They found in it. lx. villages of ten cotages apeece. On the ryght syde of the Iland there runneth another riuer, whose chanel is of deapth sufficient to beare Brigandines. This riuer they called *Ruum Nigrum*, frõ the mouth wherof, about. xb miles distant, they found a towne of fiue. C. houses seuered, whose *Chebi* (that is) kyng, was called *Abenamachei*. They al forsooke theyr houses, as soone as they heard of our mens commyng: but when they saw that our men pursued them, they turned againe, & ran vpon them with desperate mindes, as men dryuen from their owne possessions. Theyr weapons are swoords of wood, & long staues lyke iauelins, hardened at the ende with fyre: but they vse neyther bowes nor arrowes, nor any other of the inhabitauntes of the West syde of the gulfe. The poore naked wretches were easyly dryuen to flyght with our weapons. As our men followed them in the chase, they tooke the kyng *Abenamachei*, and

A tempest.

King Turui.

The Iland of Cannafistula.

certaine of his noble men. A common souldier of ours, whom the kyng had wounded, commyng to hym when he was taken, cut of his arme at one stroke with his swoorde: but this was done vnawares to the captaynes. The number of the Christian men whiche were here, was about an hundred and fyftie: the one halfe whereof the captaynes left here, and they with the residue rowed vp the riuer agayne, with twelue of the boates of those regions, whiche they cal *Vru*, as they of *Hispaniola* cal them *Canoas* as we haue sayde. From the ryuer of *Riuus Niger*, and the Ilande of *Cannafistula*, for the space of threescore and ten myles, leauyng both on the right hande and on the left, many riuers falling into it bygger then it selfe, they entred into one, by the conductyng of one of the naked inhabitauntes, beyng appoynted a guyde for that purpose. Vppon the banke of this ryuer next vnto the mouth of the same, there was a kyng called *Abibeiba*, who because the region was ful of maryshes, had his pallace buylded in the toppe of a hygh tree, a new kind of buildyng, and seldome seene: but that lande bryngeth forth trees of such exceeding height, that among theyr branches a man may frame large houses: as we reade the lyke in diuers auctours, howe in many regions where the Ocean sea riseth and ouerfloweth the lande, the people were accustomed to flee to the hygh trees, and after the fall of the water, to take the fyshe left on the lande. This maner of buyldyng, is to lay beames crosse ouer the branches of the trees, fast bounde togeather, and thereupon to rayse theyr frame, strongly made agaynst wynde and weather. Our men suppose that they builde theyr houses in trees, by reason of the great floods and ouerflowyng of riuers, whiche oftentymes chaunce in those regions. These trees are of suche heyght, that the strength of no mans arme, is able to hurle a stone to the houses buylded therein. And therfore do I geue the better credit to Plinie, and other auctours, whiche write that the trees in some places in *India* are so high by reason of the fruitefulnes of ỹ ground, abundance of water, and heate of the region, that no man is able to shoote ouer them with an arrowe: and by iudgement of all men, it is thought that there is no fruitefuller grounde vnder the sunne, then this is whereof we nowe entreate. Our men measuryng manye of these trees, founde them to be of suche

King Abibeiba dwelleth in a tree.

The ryssyng of the Ocean sea.

Trees of marueilous height.

Plinie.

Fruitefull grounde.

suche bignes, that seuen men, yea sometimes eight, holdyng hande in hande with theyr armes stretched foorth, were scarsely able to fathame them about: yet haue they theyr cellers in the grounde, well replenyshed with such wynes wherof we haue spoken before. For albeit that the vehemencie of the winde is not of power to cast downe those houses, or to breake the branches of the trees, yet are they tossed therewith, and swaye somwhat from syde to syde, by reason whereof, the wyne shoulde be muche troubled with mouuing. All other necessarye thinges, they haue with them in the trees. When the kyng or any other of the noble men, dyne or suppe in these trees, theyr wynes are brought them from the cellers by theyr seruauntes, whiche by meanes of exercise, are accustomed with no lesse celeritie to runne vp and downe the staires adherente to the tree, then doo our wayting boyes vppon the playne grounde fetche vs what wee call for from the cobbarde beside our dyning table. Our men therefore came to the tree of kyng *Abibeiba*, and by thinterpretoures called hym foorth to communication, geuing hym signes of peace, and thereuppon wylling hym to come downe. But he denyed that he woulde come out of his house, desyring them to suffer hym to lyue after his fashion: but our men fell from fayre woordes to threatning, that except he woulde descende with all his familie, they woulde eyther ouerthrowe the tree, or elles set it on fyre. When he had denied them agayne, they fell to hewing the tree with theyr axes. *Abibeiba* seeing the chippes fall from the tree on euery syde, chaunged his purpose, and came downe with only two of his sonnes. Thus after they had entreated of peace, they communed of geatheryng of golde. *Abibeiba* answeared that he had no golde, and that he neuer had any neede therof, nor yet regarded it any more then stones. But when they were instante vppon hym, he sayde vnto them, If you so greatly desyre golde, I wyll seeke for some in the next mountaynes, and bryng it vnto you: for it is plentifully engendred in those mountaynes. Then he appointed a daye when he woulde bring this golde. But *Abebeiba* came neyther at the day, nor after the day appointed. They departed therfore from thence well refreshed with his victuals and wyne, but not with golde as they hoped: yet were they enfourmed the like by *Abibeiba* and

Abibeiba, the kyng of the tree, yeeldeth to Valschus.

Golde no more esteemed then stones.

his dictionaries as concernyng the golde mynes and the Canibales, as they hearde before of kyng *Comogrus*. Sayling yet further about thyrtie myles, they chaunced vpon certayne cotages
Canibales. of the Canibales, but vtterly voyde without men or stuffe: for when they had knowledge that our men wandered in the prouinces neere about them, they resorted to the mountaynes, carying all theyr goodes and stuffe with them.

The fyfte booke of the seconde Decade, of the supposed continent.

IN the meane tyme whyle these thynges were done along by the shores or bankes of the ryuer, a certayne Decurian, that is, a captayne ouer tenne, of the companye of those which *Vaschus* and *Colmenaris* had left for a garryson in *Riuo Nigro*, in the dominion of kyng *Abinamachei*, whether it were that he was compelled through hunger, or that his fatal day was nowe come, he attempted with his souldiers to searche the countreys neere thereabout, and entred into the vyllage of a king called *Abraiba*. This captaynes name was *Raia*, whom *Abraiba* slue with two of his felowes, but the residue fledde. Within a fewe dayes after, *Abraiba* hauyng compassion on the calamitie of his kynsman and neyghbour *Abenamacheius*, beyng driuen from his owne possessions (whose arme also we sayd before that one of the souldiers cut of at the riuer of *Riuo Nigro*) and now remaynyng with *Abraiba*, to whom he fled by stealth after he was taken, went to *Abibeiba* thinhabitour of the tree, who had nowe likewyse forsaken his countrey for feare of our men, and wandered in the desolate mountaynes and woods. When he had therfore founde hym, he spake to hym in this effect, What thyng is this, oh vnfortunate *Abibeiba*? or what nation is this that so tormenteth vs, that we can not enioy our quiet libertie? howe long, howe long I say, shall we suffer theyr crueltie? were it not much better for vs to dye, then to abide suche iniuries and oppressions as you, as *Abinamacheius* our kinsman, as *Cemacchus*, as *Careta*, as *Poncha*, as I and other prynces of our order doo sustayne? Can anye thyng be more intollerable, then to see our wyues, our

our chyldren, and our subiectes, to be ledde away captiues, and our goodes to be spoyled euen before our faces: I take the gods to witnesse, that I speake not so much for mine owne part, as I do for you, whose case I lament: for albeit they haue not yet touched me, neuertheles by the example of other, I ought to thinke that my destructiõ is not farre of. Let vs therfore (if we be men) trye our strength, & prooue our fortune agaynst them which haue dealt thus cruelly with *Abenamacheius*, and driuen him out of his countrey, let vs set on them with al our power, and vtterly destroy them. And if we can not slay thẽ al, yet shal we make them afraide either to assayle vs agayne, or at the least diminishe their power: for whatsoeuer shal befall, nothyng can chaunce worse vnto vs then that which we nowe suffer. When *Abibeiba* heard these words, & such other lyke, he condescended to do in al things as *Abraiba* woulde require: whereupon they appoynted a day to bryng theyr conspiracie to passe, but the thyng chaunced not accordyng to their desyre: for of those whiche we sayd to haue passed to the Canibals, there returned by chaunce to *Riuus Niger*, the night before the day appoynted to worke their feate, thirtie men, to the ayde of them whiche were left there, yf any sedition should rise as they suspected. Therfore at the dawning of the day, the confederate kyngs, with fyue hundreth of theyr ditionaries armed after theyr maner, besieged the village with a terrible alarome, knowyng nothing of the newe men whiche came thither the same nyght. Here our target men came forth against them, and first assayled them a farre of with theyr arrowes, then with theyr pykes, and last with theyr swordes: but the naked seelye soules, perceiuyng a greater number of theyr aduersaries then they looked for, were soone dryuen to flyght, and slayne for the most parte lyke scatteryng sheepe. The kynges escaped, they slue many, and tooke many captiues, whiche they sent to *Dariena*, where they vsed them for labourers to tyll and sowe theyr grounde. These thynges thus happyly atchyued, and that prouince quieted, they returned by the ryuer to *Dariena*, leauyng theyr thyrtie men for a garrison, vnder the gouernance of one *Furatado* a captayne. This *Furatado* therfore, sent from *Riuo Nigro*, where he was appoynted gouernour, xx. of his felowes, and one woman, with xxiiii. captiues, to *Vaschus* and his companye, in

When good pennough yf they had iron.

Captiues.

A garryson of thirtie men.

one of the byggest *Canoas* of that prouince. As they rowed downe by the ryuer, there came sodenly ouerthwart the ryuer agaynst them foure great *Canoas*, which ouerthrewe theyr boate, and slue as many of them as they coulde come by, because they were vnprepared, suspecting no such thyng. Our men were all drowned and slaine, except two, which hid them selues among certeyne fagottes that swamme on the water, in the whiche they laye lurkyng, and so escaped to theyr felowes in *Dariena*: who by them beyng aduertysed hereof, beganne to cast theyr wyttes what this thyng myght meane, being no lesse solicitate for them selues, then meditatyng in what daunger theyr felowes had ben in *Riuo Nigro*, except by good fortune, those thirtie newe men whiche were sent to them, had come to the village the nyght before the conspiracie shoulde haue ben wrought. Consultyng therefore what was best to be doone herein, at the length with diligent searchyng, they had intelligence that fyue kynges, that is to wytte, *Abibeiba* the inhabitour of the tree, and *Cemaccus* dryuen from his village which our men nowe possessed, *Abraiba* also and *Abenamacheius*, kynsemen, with *Dabaiba* the kyng of the fysher men, inhabyting the corner of the gulfe whiche we called *Culata*, were al assembled to conspire the Christian mens destruction at a daye assigned: whiche thyng had surely come to passe, if it had not ben otherwyse hyndered by Gods prouidence. It is therefore ascrybed to a myracle, and truely not vnworthyly, if we waye howe chaunce detected and bewrayed the counsayle of these kynges. And because it is worthy to be heard, I wyll declare it in fewe woordes. *Vascus Nunnez* therefore, who rather by power then by election, vsurped the gouernance in *Dariena*, beyng a maister offence, and rather a rashe royster then a politike captaine (although fortune somtime fauoureth fooles) among many women whiche in diuers of these regions he had taken captiue, had one, which in fauour and beutie excelled all other. To this woman her brother often tymes resorted, who was also dryuen out of his countrey with king *Cemacchus*, with whom he was very familyer, and one of his cheefe gentelmen. Among other communication whiche he had with his syster whom he loued entierly, he vttered these woordes, My deare and welbeloued syster, geue eare to my sayinges, and keepe most secretelye

Eighteene Spanyardes slayne and drowned.

The kinges which conspired the death of the Christians.

A straunge chaunce.

Women can keepe no counsayle.

that

that whiche I wyll declare vnto you, yf you desyre your owne wealth and myne, and the prosperitie of our countrey and kynsefolkes. The insolencie and crueltie of these men whiche haue dryuen vs out of our possessions, is so intollerable, that the princes of the lande are determyned no longer to susteyne theyr oppressions. By the conducting therefore of fyue kynges (whiche he named in order) they haue prepared a hundred great *Canoas*, with fyue thousande men of warre by lande and by sea, with victuals also in the village of *Tichiri*, sufficient to mantayne suche an army: declaryng further, that the kynges by agreement, had diuyded among them the goodes and heades of our men, and therefore admonyshed her, at the day appoynted by some occasion to conueigh her selfe out of the way, lest she shoulde be slayne in the confusion of the battayle: For the souldier victourer, is not woont to spare any that commeth in his rase. And thus shewing his syster the day assigned to the slaughter, he departed. But the young woman (for it is the swoorde that women feare, and obserue more then the grauitie of *Cato*) whether it were for the loue or feare that she had to *Vaschus*, forgetting her parentes, her kynsfolkes, her countrey, and all her freendes, yea and al the kynges into whose thrones *Vaschus* had thruste his swoorde, she opened al the matter vnto hym, and concealed none of those thinges which her vndiscrete brother had declared to her. When *Vaschus* therfore had hearde the matter, he caused *Fuluia*, (for so had they named her) to sende for her brother, who came to her immediatly, was taken, & enforced to tel the whole circumstances of the matter: wherupon he playnely confessed, that king *Cemacchus* his lord and maister, sent those foure Canoas to the destruction of our men, and that these new conspiracies were attempted by his counsaile: likewise that *Cemacchus* sought the destruction of *Vaschus* himselfe, when he sent him .xl. men, vnder pretence of frendshyp, to tyll and sowe his grounde, after the maner of the countrey, geuing them in cõmaundement to slay *Vaschus* at *Marris*, whither he resorted to comfort his labourers, as the maner is of al good husbandes, yet durst they at no time execute their lordes commaundement vpon hym, because *Vaschus* came neuer among them a foote or vnarmed, but was accustomed to ryde to them in harnesse with a iauelyn in his hande, and a swoord

An armie of an hundred Canoas, and fyue. M. men.

Triumph before victorie.

Affection corrupteth true iudgement.

The conspiracie of the kyngs is detected.

Kyng Cemacchus conspireth the death of Vaschus.

& swoorde by his syde. Wherfore *Cemacchus* being frustrate of his particuler counsayle, tooke this last thing in hande, to his owne destruction and his neighbours: for the conspiracie being detected, *Vascus* called threescore and tenne souldiers, commaunding them to folowe hym, but declared nothing vnto them whither he went, or what he entended to do. He went forwarde therfore fyrst toward *Cemacchus*, which lay from hym only tenne myles: but he had knowledge that he was fledde to *Dabaiba*, the kyng of the marysshes of *Culata*. Yet searching his village, he founde a noble man, a ruler vnder hym, and also his kynsman, whom he tooke prysoner, with many other of his familiers and frendes both men and women. The same houre that he set forwarde to seeke for *Cemacchus*, *Rodericus Colmenaris* rowed vp the ryuer with foure of theyr byggest *Canoas*, and threescore men, by the conduction of the maydes brother who brought hym to the village of *Tichiri*, in ỹ which we said al their vittuals to remaine which were prepared for theyr armye. *Colmenaris* therfore sacked the village, and possessed all their vittuals, and wine of sundry colours, likewise tooke the gouernour thereof prisoner, and hanged him on the tree in whiche he dwelt him selfe, commaundyng hym to be shotte through with arrowes in the syght of thinhabitantes, and with hym foure other rulers to be hanged on gibbets, to the example of other rebelles. This punyshment thus executed vppon the conspiratours, stroke the hartes of all thinhabitantes of the prouince with such feare, that there is not nowe a man that dare styre his fynger agaynst the wrath of our men. They lyue nowe therefore quietly, and the other kyngs by theyr example do the gladyer lyue in subiection, with lesse offence bearyng the yoke which they can by no meanes shake of.

Vascus pursueth the kings with threescore and ten men.

Colmenaris sacketh the vyllage of Tichiri.

Fyue rulers hanged & shot through with arrowes.

The syxte booke of the seconde Decade, of the suppосed continent.

THese thynges thus fynyshed, assembling al theyr company togeather, they determined with one consent, that a messenger shoulde foorthwith be sent to *Hispaniola* (from whence they haue theyr lawes and ayde) to declare the whole order of al these affayres, fyrste

fyll to the Admiral and gouernour of the Ilande, and afterward to the Kyng of Spayne, and to perſwade hym to ſende thoſe thouſande men whiche young *Comogrus* ſayde to be expedient to paſſe ouer the mountaynes, lying betwene them and the golden regions toward the South. *Vaſchus* hym ſelfe dyd greatlye affect this embaſſage: but neither would the reſidue of his felowes electe hym therto, nor his factionaries ſuffer hym to departe, aſwell for that thereby they thought they ſhould be left deſolate, as alſo that they murmured, that if *Vaſchus* ſhould once go from them, he woulde neuer returne to ſuche turmoyles and calamities, by the example of *Valdiuia* and *Zamudius*, who had ben now abſent ſence the moneth of Ianuary, in ſo much that they thought they woulde neuer come agayne: but the matter was otherwyſe then they tooke it, as I wyll ſhewe in his place, for they were periſhed. At the length after many ſcrutinies, they elected one Iohn *Quicedus*, a graue man, wel in yeeres, and treaſourer of the kynges Exchequer in thoſe prouinces: they had conceiued a good opinion of this *Quicedus*, that all thynges ſhoulde be well brought to paſſe by his meanes, aſwell for his wyſdome, as alſo that they were in good hope of his return, becauſe he had brought his wife with hym to thoſe regions, whom he left with his felowes for a pledge of his comming againe. When they had thus elected *Quicedus*, they were againe of diuers opinions whom they might ioyne with him for aſſiſtance, affirming that it were a daungerous thing to committe ſo weightie a matter to one mans handes, not that they miſtruſted *Quicedus*, but becauſe the life of man is fraile, & the change of the ayre perillous, eſpecially to them, hauyng now of long time ben accuſtomed to the temperature neere vnto the *Equinoctial*, if they ſhould be compelled to returne to ỹ North, with alteration of ayre & diet. They thought it therfore good to appoynt a companion to *Quicedus*, that if by chaunce the one ſhould faile, thother might remaine, & that if they both eſcaped, the king ſhould geue ỹ better credit to the relation of both. After long conſultation therfore, they choſe *Rodericus Colmenaris*, a man of good experience, of whom we haue oftentimes made mention: for from his youth he had trauailed ouer al *Europe* by lande and by ſea, and was preſent at the doynges of al things in Italie agaynſt the Frenche men, of whoſe returne alſo, they had

Iohan. Quicedus is ſent to Spayne.

had no smal hope, because he had many farmes, and had tylled and sowne much grounde in *Dariena*, by the increase wherof, he myght get much gold by selling the same to his felowes. He left therfore the charge of al his affayres in *Dariena* with his partner *Alphonsus Nunnez*, a iudge of the lawe, who also was lyke to haue ben chosen procuratour of this voyage before *Colmenaris*, yf one had not put them in remembrance that he had a wife at *Matritis*, fearing lest being ouercome with her teares, he woulde no more returne. *Colmenaris* therfore, a free man, & at libertie, being associate assystant with *Quicedus*, they tooke shyppyng together in a Brigandine, the fourth day of the Calendes of November, in the yeere of Christe. 1512. In this voyage, beyng tossed with sundry tempestes, they were by the violence of the winde cast vpon the West coastes of that large Iland, which in the fyrst Decade we called *Cuba*, supposed to haue ben firme land. They were sore oppressed with hunger, for it was nowe three monethes synce they departed from theyr felowes: by reason whereof, they were enforced to take lande, to proue what ayde they coulde get among the inhabitauntes. Theyr chaunce therefore was to arryue in that part of the Ilande, where *Valdiuia* was dryuen aland by tempest. But oh you wretched men of *Dariena*, tary for *Valdiuia*, whom you sent to prouide to helpe your necessities, prouyde for your selues rather, and trust not to them whose fortune ye knowe not. For when he arryued in *Cuba*, the inhabitantes slue hym with al his felowes, and left the Caruel wherin they were carryed, torne in peeces, and halfe couered with sande on the shore, where *Quicedus* and *Colmenaris* fynding the fragmentes thereof, bewayled theyr felowes mysfortune: but they founde none of theyr carcasses, supposyng that they were eyther drowned, or deuoured of the Canibales, which oftentimes make incursions into that Ilande to hunt for men. But at the length, by two of the Ilande men which they had taken, they had knowledge of *Valdiuia* his destruction, and that the inhabitauntes the more greedily attempted the same, for that they had heard by the babblyng of one of his felowes, that he had great plentie of golde: for they also take pleasure in the beautie of golde, whiche they fourme artificially into sundry ouches. Thus our men stricken with penfiuenesse for the cruell destenie of theyr felowes,

A wife is a hinderaunce.

The death of Valdiuia.

Hurt of vnpyshnesse of the tongue.

and

and in bayne seekyng reuenge for theyr iniuries, determined to forsake that vnfortunate lande, departyng from those couetous naked barbarians, with more sorowe and necessitie then they were in before. Or euer they had passed the South syde of *Cuba*, they fel into a thousande mysfortunes, and had intelligence that *Fogeda* arryued therabout, leadyng a miserable lyfe, tossed and turmoyled with tempestes, and vexed with a thousande perplexities: so that departyng from thence almost alone, his felowes beyng for the most part al consumed with maladies and famine, he came with much difficultie to *Hispaniola*, where he dyed by force of the poyson of his venemous wounde which he had receiued in *Vraba* as we haue sayde before. But *Ancisus* elected Lieutenant, sayled by al those coastes with much better fortune: for as he hym selfe tolde me, he founde prosperous wyndes in those parties, and was wel enterteyned of thinhabitantes of *Cuba*, but this specially in the dominion of a certayne kyng whose name was *Commendator*: for wheras he desyred of the Christian men whiche passed by, to be baptised, demaundyng the name of the gouernour of the Ilande next vnto *Hispaniola*, beyng a noble man, and a knyght of the order of *Galatraua*, of whiche order, all are called *Commendatores*, this kings desyre was to be named after him. Kyng *Commendator* therefore frendly receiued *Ancisus*, & gaue him great abundance of al thinges necessarie. But what *Ancisus* learned of theyr religion during the tyme of his remaynyng there, I haue thought good to aduertise your holynesse. You shal therfore vnderstande, that certayne of our men saylyng by the coastes of *Cuba*, left with kyng *Commendator* a certayne poore Mariner beyng diseased, who in short space recouerynge his health, and hauyng nowe somewhat learned theyr language, began to growe into great estimation with the kyng and his subiectes, insomuche that he was oftentimes the kynges Lieutenant in his warres agaynst other princes his borderers. This mans fortune was so good, that al thynges prospered well that he tooke in hande: and albeit that he were not learned, yet was he a vertuous and well meanyng man, accordyng to his knowledge, and dyd religiously honour the blessed virgin, bearyng euer about with him her picture fayre paynted vpon paper, and sowed in his apparel neere vnto his brest, signifyng vnto the kyng,

The calamities and death of Fogeda.

Maladies and famine.

The prosperous voyage of Ancisus.

A king of Cuba baptised by the name of Commendator.

A marueylous hystorie howe God wrought myracles by the simple faith of a Mariner.

Be not rashe in iudgement.

kyng, that this holynes was the cause of al his victoryes: perswading him to doo the like, and to cast away all his *Zemes*, which were none other then the similitudes of euill spirites, most cruell enimies and deuourers of our soules, and to take vnto him the holy virgin and mother of God to be his patronesse, if he desyred all his affayres aswel in warre as in peace to succeede prosperously: also that the blessed virgyn woulde at no tyme fayle hym, but be euer redye to helpe him and his, if they woulde with deuout hartes call vppon her name. The maryner had soone perswaded the naked nation, and thereuppon gaue the king (who demaunded the same) his pycture of the virgin, to whom he buylded and dedicated a chapell and an alter, euer after contemning and reiecting his *Zemes*. Of these *Zemes* made of gossampine cotton, to the similitudes of spirites walking in the nyght, which they oftentimes see, and speake with them familyerly, we haue spoken sufficiently in the nyenth booke of the first Decade. Furthermore, accoyding to the institution of this maryner, when the sonne drayweth towarde the fall, this king *Commendator* with al his famyly, both men and women, resoyt daylye to the saide chapell of the virgin Marie, where kneeling on theyr knees, and reuerently bowing downe theyr heades, holdyng theyr hands ioyned together, they salute the image of the virgin with these wooyrdes, *Aue Maria, Aue Maria*, foy fewe of them can rehearse any moye wooyrdes of this prayer. At *Ancisus* his being there, they tooke hym and his felowes by the handes, and ledde them to this chapell with reioysing, saying that they woulde shewe them marueylous thinges. When they were entred, they poynted with theyr fyngers to the Image of the virgyn, al to be set and hanged about with ouches and iewels, and many earthen pottes, fylled some with sundyr meates, and some with water, roundc about all the tabernacle: foy these thinges they offer to the image in the steede of sacrifice, accoyding to theyr olde superstition towarde theyr *Zemes*. Being demaunded why they dyd thus, they answered, Lest the image should lacke meate, if perhaps it should be a hungred: foy they most certainly beleue that images may hunger, and that they doo eate & dyinke. But what ayde and helpe they confesse that they haue had of the godly power of this image, that is of the blessed virgyn, it is

A Chappell buylded to the pycture of the virgin Marie.

One superstitious religion turned into an other, holdeth stil many thinges of the first.

a thing woorthy to be heard, and most assuredly to bee taken for a trueth: for by the report of our men, there is such feruent godly loue and zeale in these simple men toward the holy virgin, that to them being in the daunger of warre agaynst theyr enimies, they doo in maner (yf I may so terme it) compel her to descende from heauen to helpe them in theyr necessities. For such is the goodnes of God, that he hath left vnto men in maner a pryce whereby we may purchase hym with his holy angels & sayntes, that is to witte, burnyng loue, charitie, and zeale. Howe therfore can the blessed virgin at any time be absent from them which call for her helpe with pure faith and feruent loue? *Commendator* him selfe, with al his noble men and gentelmen, doo testifie with one voyce, that in a fought battayle in the whiche this maryner was capitaine, bearing with him this picture of the virgin Marie, the *Zemes* of theyr enimies turned their backes, and trembled in the presence of the virgins image, and in the sight of them all: for euerye of them bryng theyr *Zemes* to the battaile, hoping by theyr helpe to obteine the victorie. Yea they say further, that during the time of the battaile, they saw not only an Image, but a liuely woman clothed in fayre and white apparel, ayding them against theyr enimies: which thing also the enimies them selues acknowledged, confessyng that on the contrary part, she appeared to them shakyng a scepter in her hande with threatenyng countenance, whiche caused theyr hartes to shake and faint for feare: but after that this Maryner departed from them, being taken into a shyppe of certayne Christians passyng by those coastes, *Commendator* declared that he with al his subiectes, continually obserued his institutions: insomuch that beyng at contention with another prince, whiche of theyr *Zemes* were most holy and of greatest power, the matter grewe to such extremitie, that they tryed it with hande strokes: and that in all these attemptes, the blessed virgin neuer fayled hym, but was euer present in the brunt of the battayle, and gaue hym easie victorie with a smal power of men, against a maine armie of his enimies. Beyng demaunded with what woordes they cryed vpon the virgin Mary when they assayled theyr enimies, they answered that they had learned no other woordes of the Maryners doctrine, but *Sancta Maria adiuua nos. Sancta Maria adiuua nos*, That is, holy

Zeale without knowledge is neuer godly.

Marke this blyndnesse.

This ignorance is to be lamented.

The deuil dissembleth to keepe his in blyndnesse still.

A notable lye of a papistical heretike.

One blasphemie vpon another.

Mary

Marie helpe vs, holy Marie helpe vs, and this also in the Spanishe tongue: for he had left these woꝛdes in the mouthes of all men. Whyle they murthered and destroyed them selues thus on both sydes, they fell to entreatie of peace, and agreed to trye the matter, not hande to hande by combatte of certayne chosen foꝛ both parties, as the maner was among the Romanes and diuers other nations in the old tyme, oꝛ by any sleight oꝛ policie, but that two young men shoulde be chosen, foꝛ eche partie one, with theyꝛ handes bounde faste behynde them in the playne fyelde, bothe parties beyng swoꝛne to acknowledge that *Zemes* to be the better, which fyꝛst looseth the bandes of the young man which stoode bounde foꝛ the tryall of his religion. Thus diuidyng them selues, and placyng the sayd young men befoꝛe them in the syght of them all, with theyꝛ handes fast bounde by theyꝛ enimies, the contrary parte called fyꝛst on theyꝛ *Zemes* (that is the deuyl, to whose similitude theyꝛ Images are made) who immediately appeared in his lykenesse aboute the young man that stoode bounde in the defence of Satans kyngdome. But as soone as *Commendator* with his companye cryed *Sancta Maria adiuua nos, Sancta Maria adiuua nos*, foꝛthwith there appeared a fayꝛe virgin clothed in whyte, at whose pꝛesence the deuyl vanquished immediatly. But the virgin, hauing along rod in her hande, & putting the same on the bandes of the young man that stoode foꝛ *Commendator*, his handes were loosed immediatly in the syght of them all, and his bandes found about the handes of hym that stoode foꝛ the other partye, insomuch that they them selues founde hym double bounde. But foꝛ all this, were not the enimies satisfyed, quarelling that this thyng was done by some sleyght oꝛ deuise of man, & not by the power of the better *Zemes*. And thereuppon requyꝛed, foꝛ thaduoydyng of all suspection, that there myght be eyght graue and sage men appoynted, foꝛ eche side foure, which should bynde the men in the syght of them all, and also geue iudgement whether the thing were done without craft oꝛ guyle. Oh pure simplicitie and constant fayth: oh golden and blessed confidence. *Commendator* and his familiers, doubted not to graunt theyꝛ enimies theyꝛ requeste, with lyke fayth wherewith the diseased woman obteyned health of the fluxe of her blood, and wherby Peter feared not to walke on the sea

The deuyll appeareth in his lykenesse.

What likenesse.

A strange myracle not to be credited.

Another myracle.

Wise men.

Math. xiiii. This is another matter.

sea at the syght of his maister Christ. These young men therfore were bounde in the presence of these eight graue men, and were placed within theyr lystes in the syght of both parties. Thus vpon a signe geuen, when they called vpon theyr *Zemes*, there appeared in the sight of them al, a deuil with a long taile, a wide mouth, great teeth, and hornes, resemblyng the similitude of the image whiche the kyng beyng enimie to *Commendator* honored for his *Zemes*. As the deuyl attempted to loose the bandes of his client, the blessed virgin was immediatly present as before at the cal of *Commendator* & his subiects, & with her rodde loosed the bandes of her supplyant, whiche were agayne likewyse founde fast tyed about the handes of hym that stoode for the contrarye part. The enimies therfore of *Commendator*, being stricken with great feare, and amased by reason of this great myracle, confessed that the *Zemes* of the virgin was better then theyr *Zemes*: for the better proofe whereof, these pagans being borderers to *Commendator*, whiche had euer before ben at continuall warre and enmitie with hym, when they had knowledge that *Anciſus* was arryued in those coastes, they sent Ambassadours vnto hym, to desire him to sende them priestes, of whom they might be baptised: wherupon he sent them two which he had there with hym at that present. They baptised in one day an hundred and thyrtie of thinhabitantes, sometime enimies to *Commendator*, but nowe his frendes, and ioyned with hym in aliance. All suche as came to be baptised, gaue the priestes of theyr owne liberalitie, either a cocke or a henne, but no capons, for they can not yet skill howe to carue theyr cocke chickens to make them capons. Also certayne salted fishes, and newe fyne cakes made of theyr bread: likewise certayne foules franked and made fatte. When the priestes resorted to the shyppes, syre of these newe baptised men accompanyed them laden with vittuals, wherewith they ledde a ioyful Easter: for on the Sunday, two dayes before saynt *Lazarus* day, they departed from *Dariena*, and touched at that tyme only the cape or angle of *Cuba*, neere vnto the Eaſt syde of *Hispaniola*. At the request of *Commendator*, *Anciſus* left with him one of his companye, to the intent to teache hym and his subiectes, with other his borderers, the salutation of the angell, whiche we cal the *Aue Maria*: for they thynke them selues to be so much

The deuyl appeareth againe

The virgin Mary in her owne person ouercommeth the deuyl.

The priestes reward.

Why name you Capons?

the more beloued of the blessed virgin, as they can rehearse the more woordes of that prayer. Thus *Anciſus* takyng his leaue of kyng *Commendator*, directed his course to *Hiſpaniola*, from which he was not farre. Shortly after, he tooke his voyage to Spayne, and came to *Valladoleto* to the kyng, to whom he made greeuous complaynt of the insolencie of *Vaſchus Nunnez*, insomuche that by his procurement the kyng gaue sentence agaynst hym. Thus muche haue I thought good (most holy father) whereof to aduertise your holynesse, as concernyng the religion of these nations, not only as I haue ben enstructed of *Anciſus* (with whom I was dayly conuersaunt in the Court, and vsed hym familiarlye) but also as I was enformed of diuers other men of great authoritie, to the intent that your excellencie may vnderstande howe docible this kynd of men are, and with what facilitie they may be allured to embrace our religion: but this can not be done sodenly, yet we haue great cause to hope that in short time they wyl be al drawen by litle and litle, to the Euangelical lawe of Christe, to the great encrease of his flocke. But let vs nowe returne to the messengers or procuratours as concernyng the affayres of *Dariena*.

Anciſus voiage to Spayne.

Anciſus complayneth of Vaſchus.

Marke to whō this fayned myraculous storie was written.

The seuenth booke of the seconde Decade, of the supposed continent.

FRom *Dariena* to *Hiſpaniola*, is eyght dayes saylyng, and sometimes lesse with a prosperous winde: yet *Quicedus* and *Colmenaris* the procuratours of *Dariena*, by reason of tempestes & contrary windes, could scarcely sayle it in a hundred dayes. When they had taryed a fewe dayes in *Hiſpaniola*, and had declared the cause of the commyng to the Admirall and the other gouernours, they toke shipping in two marchant shippes, beyng redy furnyshed, whiche were also accustomed to sayle to and fro betweene Spayne and the Ilande of *Hiſpaniola*. They departed from *Dariena* (as we sayde before) the fourth day of the Calends of Nouember, in the yere of Christ. 1512. and came not to the court before the Calendes of May in the yeere folowyng, beyng the yeere of Christ. 1513. At their commyng to the court,

Ioban-

Iohannes Fonseca (to whom at the beginnyng the charge of these affayres was committed, whom also for his faythfull seruice towarde the kyng, your holynesse created general Commissarie in the warres agaynst the Moores) receiued them honourably, as men commyng from the newe worlde, from naked nations, and landes vnknowen to other men. By the preferment therefore of the Bysshop of *Burges*, *Quicedus* and *Colmenaris* were brought before the kyng, and declared their legacie in his presence. Suche newes and presentes as they brought, were dilectable to the kyng and his noble men, for the newnesse and strangenesse thereof. They also soiourned with me oftentymes. Their countenaunces do declare the intemperatnesse of the ayre and region of *Dariena*, for they are yelowe, lyke vnto them that haue the yelowe gaundies, and also swolne: but they ascribe the cause hereof, to the hunger whiche they sustayned in tymes past. I haue ben aduertised of the affayres of this newe worlde, not only by these procuratours of *Dariena*, and *Anciſus*, and *Zamudius*, but also by conference with *Baccia* the lawyer, who ran ouer a great part of those coastes: lykewyse by relation of *Vincentius Annez*. the patrone of the shyps, and *Alphonſus Nignus*, both being men of great experience, and wel trauailed in those parties, beside many other, of whom we haue made mention in other places, for there came neuer any from thence to the court, but tooke great pleasure to certifie me of al thynges, eyther by worde of mouth or by wrytyng. Of many thynges therefore whiche I learned of them, I haue geathered such as to my iudgment seme most worthy to satisfie them that take delyte in histories. But let vs nowe declare what folowed after the commyng of the procuratours of *Dariena*. Therfore, before their arrywal, there was a rumor spred in the court, that the cheefe gouernours and Lieuetenantes *Nicuesa* and *Fogeda*, also *Iohannes de la Cossa* (a man of such reputation, that by the kinges letters patentes he was named the great maister of the kyngs shyppes) were al perysshed by mischaunce: and that those fewe whiche yet remayned alyue in *Dariena*, were at contention and discorde among them selues, so that they neither endeuoured their diligence to allure those symple nations to our fayth, nor yet had regarde to searche the natures of those regions. In consyderation whereof, the kyng was de-

The procuratours of Dariena are honourably receiued at the court.

The great maister of the kings ships.

termined to sende a newe captayne thyther, which should restore and set al thynges in good order, and put them out of aucthoritie whiche had vsurped the Empire of those prouinces without the kynges speciall commaundement. To this office, was one *Petrus Arias* assigned, a man of great prowesse, and a citizen of *Segouia*, but when the procuratours of *Dariena* had publyshed in the courte howe great a matter it was, and of what moment, many laboured earnestly to the kyng, to take the office out of his handes: but the Bishop of *Burges*, beyng the kyngs cheefe chaplayne, and one of the Commissioners appoynted by hym in these matters, beyng aduertised hereof, came immediatly to the king, and spake to hym in this effect: May it please your hyghnesse to vnderstande (most catholique prynce) that wheras *Petrus Arias*, a man of valiant courage and great seruice, hath offred him selfe to aduenture his life in your maiesties affaires, vnder vncertayne hope of gayne, and most certayne perils, yet that notwithstandyng, some other haue ambiciously maliced his felicitie and preferment, laboring for the office wherto he is elected. It may please your grace herein, so to shew him your fauour, and permit hym to enioy his sayde office, as your maiestie do knowe hym to be a woorthy and meete man for the same, hauyng in tyme past had great experience of his prowesse and valyantnesse, aswel in behauyng him selfe, as orderyng his souldiers, as your hyghnesse may the better consyder, yf it shal please you to call to remembraunce his dooynges in the warres of Aphryca, where he shewed him selfe both a wise Captaine, and a valiant souldier. As concernyng his manners and vsages otherwayes, they are not vnknowen to your maiestie, vnder whose wyng he hath of a chylde ben brought vp in the Courte, and euer founde faythfull toward your highnesse. Wherfore, to declare my opinion, vnder your graces fauour (whom it hath pleased to appoynt me a Commissioner in these affayres) I thynke it were vngodly that he shoulde be put from his office at the suite of any other, especially beyng thereto mooued by ambition and couetousnesse, who perchaunce would prooue them selues to be the same men in the office, if they should obteyne it, as they now shew them selues in the ambitious desyryng of the same. When the Bishop had sayd these woordes, the kyng confirmed the election of *Petrus Arias*, in

more

Petrus Arias is elected gouernour of Dariena.

The oration of the Bysshop of Burges, in the defence of Petrus Arias.

The warres of Aphryca.

more ample manner then before, wyllyng the byshop to appoynt hym a thousande and two hundred souldiers at his charges, makyng hym a warrant to the officers of his Exchequer, to delyuer hym money in prest for the same purpose. *Petrus Arias* therfore beyng thus put in office, and aucthorised by the kinges letters patentes vnder his brode seale, chose a great number of his souldiers in the court, and so departed from *Valladoleto*, about the Calends of October, in the yere. 1513. and sayled first to Ciuile, beyng a very ryche citie, and wel replenished with people, where by the kynges magistrates, he was furnyshed with men and vyttualles, and other necessaries parteynyng to so great a matter: for the kyng hath in this citie erected a house, seruyng only for the affayres of the Ocean, to the whiche al they that goe or come from the newe landes and Ilandes, resorte to geue accomptes, aswel what they cary thyther, as what they bryng from thence, that the kyng may be truely answered of his custome of the fyft part, both of golde and other thynges, as we haue sayde before. This house they cal the house of the Contractes of *Indi*. *Petrus Arias* founde in Ciuile aboue two thousand young men, whiche made great suite to goe with hym, lykewyse no smal number of couetous olde men, of the whiche, many offered them selues to goe with him of their owne charges without the kings stipende. But lest the ships shoulde be pestered with to great a multitude, or lest vittuals shoulde fayle them, the libertie of free passage was restrayned. It was also decreed that no stranger myght passe without the kynges licence. Wherefore I doo not a lytle maruayle at *Aloisius Cadamustus* a Uenetian, and wryter of the Portugales voyages, that he was not ashamed to wryte thus of the Spanyardes nauigations: we went, we sawe, we dyd: whereas he neuer went, nor any Uenetian sawe, but he stole certayne annotations out the three first bookes of my fyrst Decade, wrytten to Cardinal *Ascanius* & *Arcimboldus*, supposyng that I would neuer haue publyshed the same. It myght also happen that he came by the copie therof at the hand of some ambassadour of Uenice, for I haue graunted the copie to many of them, & was not daungerous to forbyd them to communicate the same to other. Howe so euer it be, this honest man *Aloisius Cadamustus* feared not to chalenge vnto hym the fruite of another mans labour.

A house in Ciuile appoynted to the affayres of India.

Perularia.

The Portugales inuentions.

Of the inuentions of the Portugales (whiche surely are wonderful) whether he haue written that which he hath seene (as he saith) or likewise bereaued other men of the iust commendations of theyr trauayles, I wyl not iudge, but am content to let hym lyue after his manner. Among the company of these souldiers, there were none embarked but such as were licẽced by the king, except a few Italians, Genues, who by frendshyp and suite were admitted for the Admiralles sake young *Colonus*, sonne and heyre to *Christophorus Colonus*, the fyrst fynder of those landes. *Petrus Arias* therfore toke shipping in the riuer *Betis* (now called *Guadalqueuir*) running by the citie of Ciuile, about the begynnyng of the yeere of Christ. 1514. But he loosed anker in an euyl houre, for such a tempest folowed shortly after his departure, that it rent in peeces two of his ships, and so tossed the other, that they were enforced to heaue ouerboorde part of theyr byttualles to lyghten them. All suche as escaped, sayled backe agayne to the coastes of Spayne, where, beyng newly furnyshed and refreshed by the kyngs officers, they went forward on theyr voyage. The maister Pylote of the gouernours shyp, was *Iohannes Vesputius* a Florentine, the neuiew of *Americus Vesputius*, who left him as it were by discent of inheritance, the experience of the Maryners facultie, and knowledge of the sea, carde, and compasse. But we were aduertised of late by certayne whiche came from *Hispaniola*, that they had passed the Ocean with more prosperous winde: for this marchaunt shyppe commyng from *Hispaniola*, founde them landing at certaine Ilands neere therabout. But in the meane time, whyle my importunate callers on, *Galeaceus Butrigarius*, and *Iohannes Cursius*, men studious by al meanes to gratifie your holynesse, ceassed not to put me in remembrance that they had one in a redines to depart into Italy, & taried only to cary with him vnto your holines these my fayre *Nereides*, although rudely decked, lest I shoulde bestow much tyme in vayne, I haue let passe many things, & wil reherse only such as seeme in my iudgement moste worthy memory, although somwhat disordered, as occasion hath serued. So it is therefore, that this *Petrus Arias* hath a wife named *Helisabetha Boadilla*, beyng niese by the brothers syde to the marques of *Boadilla*, whiche rendred the citie of *Segouia* to Fernando and Helisabeth princes of Spayne, at suche time as the

The nauigation of Petrus Arias.

A shipwracke.

Americus Vesputius.

A notable example of a valiant woman.

Portu-

Portugales inuaded the kingdome of Castile, by reason wherof, they were encouraged fyrst to resyst, and then with open warre to assayle and expulse the Portugales, for the great treasure whiche kyng Henry brother to queene Helisabeth had geathered togeather there. This marquesse, while she liued, did euer shewe a manly and stoute mynde, both in peace and warre, so that by her counsayle, many noble thinges were brought to good effecte in Castile: vnto this noble woman the wyfe of *Petrus Arias* was niese by her brothers syde. She, folowyng the magnanimitie of her aunt, perceiuyng her husband nowe furnyshyng hym selfe to depart to the vnknowen coastes of the newe worlde, and those large tractes of lande and sea, spake these wordes vnto hym: My most deare and welbeloued husbande, we ought not nowe to forgeat that from our young yeeres we haue ben ioyned togeather with the yoke of holy matrimonie, to thintent that we shoulde so lyue togeather, and not asunder, duryng the tyme of our natural lyfe: wherefore for my part, to declare my affection herein, you shal vnderstande, that whither soeuer your fatall destenie shall dryue you, eyther by the furious waues of the great Ocean, or by the manyfolde and horrible daungers of the lande, I wyl surely beare you company: there can no peryll chaunce to me so terrible, nor any kynde of death so cruell, that shal not be muche easyer for me to abyde, then to liue so farre separate from you. It were muche better for me to dye, and eyther to be cast into the sea, to be deuoured of the fyshes, or on the lande to the Canibales, then with continual mournyng and bewaylyng, to liue in death, and dye lyuyng, whyle I consume in lookyng rather for my husbandes letters, then for hym selfe. This is my ful determination, not rashly, nor presently excogitate, nor conceiued by the lyght phantasie of womans brayne, but with long deliberation and good aduisement. Nowe therefore choose to whether of these two you wyll assent, eyther to thrust your swoorde in my throte, or to graunt me my request. As for the children which god hath geuen vs as pledges of our inseparable loue (for they had foure sonnes, and as many daughters) shall not stay me a moment: let vs leaue vnto them such goodes and possessions as haue ben left vs by our parentes and freendes, whereby they may lyue among the worshyppfull of theyr order:

The wyfe of Petrus Arias.

for other thynges I take no care. When this noble matrone of manly vertue had finished these wordes, her husbande seeyng the constant mynde of his wyfe, and her in a redynesse to do according to her wordes, had no hart to denye her louyng petition, but embracing her in his armes, commended her intent, and consented to her requeste. She folowed hym therfore, as did *Ipsicratea* her *Mithridates*, with her heare hangyng loose about her shoulders: for she loued her husband, as dyd *Halicarnassea* of *Caria* hers, being dead, and as dyd *Artemisia* her *Mausolus*. We haue also had aduertisment since theyr departure, that she (beyng brought vp as it were amõg soft fethers) hath with no lesse stoute courage susteyned the rorynges and rages of the Ocean, then dyd eyther her husbande, or any of the Maryners brought vp euen among the sourges of the sea. But to haue sayde thus muche hereof, this shall suffise: let vs nowe speake of other thynges no lesse worthy memorie. Therfore, wheras in the first Decade we haue made mention of *Vincentius Annez Pinzonus*, ye shal understand, that he accõpanied *Christophorus Colonus* the Admiral in his first voyage, and afterwarde made an other voyage of his owne charges with only one shyppe. Agayne, the fyrst yeere after the departyng of the Captaynes *Nicuesa* and *Fogeda*, he ran ouer those coastes from *Hispaniola*, and searched al the South syde of *Cuba*, from the East to the West, and sayled rounde about that Iland, whiche to that day, for the great length thereof, was thought to haue ben part of the continent or firme land, although some other say that they dyd the lyke. *Vincentius Annez* therefore, knowyng nowe by experience that *Cuba* was an Ilande, sayled on further, and found other landes Westwarde from *Cuba*, but suche as the Admiral had first touched. Wherfore, beyng in manner encompassed with this newe lande, turning his course towarde the left hande, and rasing the coastes of that lande by the East, ouerpassing also the mouthes of the gulfes of *Beragua*, *Vraba*, and *Cuchibachoa*, he arryued at the region whiche in the first Decade we called *Paria* and *Os Draconis*, and entred into the great gulfe of freshe water, which *Colonus* discouered, beyng replenyshed with great abundance of fyshe, and famous by reason of the multitude of Ilandes lying in the same, beyng distant Eastwarde from *Curiana* about an hundred and thirtie myles, in the which tracte,

are

are the regions of *Cumana* and *Manacapana*, whiche also in the firt booke of the fyrst Decade we sayd to be regions of the large prouince of *Paria*, where many affyrme to be the greatest plentie of the best pearles, and not in *Curiana*. The kynges of these regions (whom they cal *Chiacones*, as they of *Hispaniola* cal them *Cacici*) beyng certified of the comming of our men, sent certayne spyes to enquire what new nation was arryued in theyr coastes, what they brought, and what they would haue, and in the meane tyme furnyshed a number of theyr *Canoas* (whiche they call *Chichos*) with men armed after theyr manner: for they were not a lytle astonyshed to beholde our shippes with the sayles spread, whereas they vse no sayles, nor can vse but small ones yf they would, by reason of the narowneste of theyr Canoas. Swarmyng therefore about the shyppe with theyr Canoas (whiche we may wel cal *Monoxyla*, because they are made of one whole tree) they feared not to shoote at our men, beyng yet within their shyppes, and keepyng them selues vnder the hatches, as safely as yf they had ben defended with stone walles. But when our men had shotte of certayne peeces of ordinaunce agaynst them, they were so discomfited with the noyse and slaughter thereof, that they droue them selues to flyght. Being thus disparcled, our men chased them with the ship boate, toke many, and slue many. When the kynges heard the noyse of the gunnes, and were certified of the losse of theyr men, they sent ambassadours to *Vincentius Agnes* to entreate of peace, fearyng the spoyle of theyr goodes, and destruction of theyr people, yf our men should come alande in theyr wrath and furie. They desyred peace therefore, as coulde be coniectured by theyr signes and poyntynges: for our men vnderstoode not one woord of theyr language. And for the better proofe that they desyred peace, they presented our men with three thousande of those weyghtes of gold that the Spanyardes call *Castellanum Aureum*, whiche they commonly call *Pesum*. Also a great barrel of wood ful of moste excellent masculine Frankencense, weighing about two thousande and sixe hundred poundes weight, after eight ounces to the pounde: whereby they knewe that that lande brought foorth great pleutie of Frankencense, for there is no entercourse of marchaundies betweene the inhabitauntes of *Paria* and the Sabeans, being so farre

Plentie of pearles.

The vse of gunnes.

Great abundance of gold & frankencense, *Olibanum*.

Sabea is a rosstrey in Arabia, which bringeth foorth Frankencense.

farre distant, wheras also they of *Paria* knowe nothing without theyr owne coastes. With the golde and Frankencense whiche they presented to our men, they gaue them also a great multitude of theyr peacockes, both cockes and hennes, dead and alyue, aswel to satisfie theyr present necessitie, as also to carry with them into Spayne for encrease, lykewyse certayne carpettes, couerlettes, table clothes, and hangyngs, made of Gossampine silke, finely wrought after a strange deuice, with pleasant and variable colours, hauyng golden belles, and such other spangles and pendauntes, as the Italians call *Sonaglios*, and the Spanyardes *Cascaueles*, hangyng at the purses therof. They gaue them furthermore speakyng poppyngayes of sundry colours, as many as they woulde aske: for in *Paria* there is no lesse plentie of poppyngayes, then with vs of doues or sparows. Thinhabitants of these regions, both men & women, are apparelled with vestures made of gossampine cotton, the men to the knees, and the women to the calfe of the legge. The fashion of theyr apparel is simple and playne, muche lyke vnto the Turkes: but the mens is double, and quilted, like that which the Turkes vse in the warres. The princes of *Paria* are rulers but for one yeere: but theyr auctoritie is no lesse among the people both in peace and warre, then is thauctoritie of other kyngs in those regions. Their villages are builded in compasse, along by the bankes of al that great gulfe. Fyue of theyr princes came to our men with theyr presentes, whose names I thought woorthy to be put in this historie, in remembrance of so notable a thing, *Chiaconus Chiauaccha* (that is, the prince of *Chiauaccha*, for they cal princes or kings *Chiaconus*) *Chiaconus Pintiguanus*, *Chiaconus Chamailaba*, *Chiaconus Polomus*, and *Chiaconus Potto*. The gulfe beyng first found of the Admiral *Colonus*, they cal *Baia Natiuitatis*, because he entred into the same in the day of ỹ natiuitie of Christ, but at that time he only passed by it without any further searchyng, and *Baia* in the Spanyshe tong, signifieth a gulfe. Whē *Vincentius* had thus made a league with these princes, folowyng his appoynted course, he founde many regions toward ỹ East, desolate by reason of diuers floods and ouerflowyngs of waters: also many standyng pooles in diuers places, and those of exceeding largenesse. He ceassed not to folowe this tracte, vntyl he came to the poynt or cape of that

Rulers for one peere.

The great gulfe of Paria.

most long lande. This poynt seemeth as though it would inuade the mount *Atlas* in *Aphrica*: for it prospecteth towarde that part of Aphrike, which the Portugales cal *Caput bonæ Sperantiæ*. The poyntes or capes of the mount *Atlas*, are rough and sauage, neere vnto the sea. The cape of *Bona Speranza*, goeth thyrtie and foure degrees of the South pole, called the pole Antarctike, but that poynt only seuen degrees. I suppose this lande to be that, whiche I fynde in olde wryters of Cosmographie to be called the great Ilande Atlantike, without any further declaryng eyther of the situation, or of the nature thereof.

The great Iland Atlantike.

The eight booke of the seconde Decade, of the supposed continent.

When Iohn the king of Portugale liued, whiche was predecessour to him that nowe raigneth, there arose a great contention betweene the Castilians and the Portugales, as concernyng the dominion of these newe founde landes. The Portugales, because they were the fyrst that durst attempt to searche the Ocean sea synce the memorie of man, affirmed that al the nauigations of the Ocean, ought to parteyne to them only. The Castilians argued on the contrary part, that whatsoeuer God by the ministration of nature hath created on the earth, was at the begynnyng common among men, and that it is therefore lawful to euery man to possesse such lands as are voyde of Christian inhabitours. Whyle the matter was thus vncertaynelye debated, both parties agreed that the controuersie shoulde be desyded by the byshop of Rome, and plighted fayth to stande to his arbitrement. The kyngdome of Castile was at that tyme gouerned by that great queene *Helisabeth* with her husband: for the Realme of Castile was her dowrie. She also and the kyng of Portugale, were colyn germanes of two systers, by reason whereof, the dissention was more easyly pacified. By the assent therfore of both parties, Alexander the bishop of Rome, the .vi. of that name, by thaucthoritie of his leaden bull, drewe a right lyne from the North to the South, an hundred leagues Westwarde, with-

Contention betweene the Castilians & Portugales for the newe landes.

The bishop of Rome diuideth the landes.

without the paralels of those Ilandes whiche are called *Caput Viride*, or *Cabouerde*, within the compasse of this lyne (although some denye it) falleth the poynt of this lande whereof we haue spoken, whiche they cal *Caput Sancti Augustini*, otherwyse called *Promontorium Sancti Augustini*, that is, saint Augustines cape or poynt: and therefore it is not lawful for the Castilians to fasten foote in the begynnyng of that land. *Vincentius Annez* therefore departed from thence, beyng aduertised of the inhabitantes, that on the other syde of the hygh mountaynes towarde the South, lying before his eyes, there was a region called *Ciamba*, whiche brought forth great plentie of golde. Of certayne captiues whiche he tooke in the gulfe of *Paria* (whiche certaynely pertayneth to the dominion of Castile) he brought some with him to *Hispaniola*, and left them with the young Admirall to learne our language: but he hym selfe repayred to the court, to make earnest suite to the kyng, that by his fauour he myght be gouernour of the Iland of *Sancti Iohannis* (otherwise called *Burichena*, being distant from *Hispaniola* only .xxv. leagues) because he was the fyrst finder of golde in that Ilande. Before *Vincentius* made suite for this office, one Don Christopher, a Portugale, the sonne of the countie of *Camigna*, was gouernour of the Iland, whom the Canibales of the other Ilandes slue, with al the Christian men that were in the same, except the Bishop and his familiers, whiche fled and shyfted for them selues, forsakyng the churche and al the ornamentes thereof: for your holynesse hath consecrated fiue bishops in these Ilands, at the request of the most catholique king. In *Sancto Dominico* the chiefe citie of *Hispaniola*, *Garsia de Padilla*, a reguler Fryer of the order of saint Frauncis, is bishop. In the towne of Conception, doctor *Petrus Xuares* of *Deza*, and in the Ilande of saint Iohn or *Burichena*, *Alphonsus Mansus* a licenciate, being both obseruantes of the institution of saint Peter. The fourth is Fryer Barnarde of *Mesa*, a man of noble parentage, borne in *Toledo*, a preacher, & bishop of the Ilande of *Cuba*. The fift is *Iohannes Cabedus*, a fryer preacher, whom your holynesse annoynted minister of Christe, to teache the Christian fayth among the inhabitantes of *Dariena*. The Canibales shal shortlye repent them, and the blood of our men shalbe reuenged, and that the sooner, because that shortly after they had committed

The golden regio of Ciamba.

The Ilande of S. Iohannis.

Fyue byshops of the Ilande made by the bishop of Rome.

this

this abominable slaughter of our men, they came agayne from theyr owne Ilande of *Sancta crux* (otherwise called *Ay Ay*) to the Ilande of *Sancti Iohannis*, and slue a kyng whiche was a freende to our men, and ate hym, and al his family, vtterly subuertyng his village, vpon this occasion, that violating the law of hostage, he had slayne seuen Canibales whiche were left with hym by composition to make certayne Canoas, because the Ilande of *Sancti Iohannis* beareth greater trees, and apter for that purpose, then doth the Iland of *Sancti crux*, the cheefe habitatiõ of the Canibales. These Canibales yet remaynyng in the Iland, certaine of our men saylyng from *Hispaniola*, chaunced vpon them. The thyng beyng vnderstoode by the interpretours, our men quarelling with them, and calling them to accompt for that mischeuous deede, they immediatly directed theyr bowes and venemous arrowes against them, and with cruell countenances threatned them to be quiet, lest it shoulde repent them of theyr commyng thyther. Our men fearyng theyr venemous arrowes (for they were not prepared to fyght) gaue them signes of peace. Beyng demaunded why they destroyed the byllage, and where the king was with his familie, they answered, that they rased the vyllage, and cut the kyng with his familie in peeces, and ate them in the reuenge of theyr seuen woorkmen: and that they had made faggottes of theyr bones, to cary them to the wiues and children of theyr slayne woorkemen, in wytnesse that the bodyes of theyr husbandes and parentes lay not vnreuenged, and therewith shewed the faggottes of bones to our men, who beyng astonyshed at theyr fiercenesse and crueltie, were enforced to dissemble the matter, and holde theyr peace, quarellyng no further with them at that tyme. These and suche other thynges doo dayly chaunce, the whiche I do let passe, lest I should offende the eares of your holynesse with such blooddy narrations. Thus haue we sufficiently digressed from the regions of *Beragua* and *Vraba*, beyng the cheefest fundations of our purpose. We wyll now therfore entreate somewhat of the largenesse and deapth of the ryuers of *Vraba*: also declare both what they and the landes which they runne through do byng foorth: lykewyse of the greatnesse of the lande from the East to the West, and of the breadth thereof from the South to the North, and what theyr opinion and hope

The Canibales of the Iland of Sancta Crux.

The ryuers of Vraba.

hope is of thynges yet vnknowen in the same. We wil therefore begyn at the newe names, wherwith the Spanyardes haue named these prouinces, synce they were vnder the dominions of the Christians.

The nienth booke of the second Decade, of the supposed continent.

Eragua therfore they called *Castella Aurea*, that is, golden Castile, and *Vraba* they named *Andalusia noua*, that is, newe Andalusia. And lyke as of many Ilandes whiche they subdued, they chose *Hispaniola* for the cheefe place of theyr habitation: so in the large tracte of *Paria*, they appoynted theyr colonie or biding place in the two regions of *Vraba* and *Beragua*, that al suche as attempt any voyages in those coastes, may resort to them, as to safe portes to be refreshed when they are weerie or dryuen to necessitie. Al our seedes and plantes do now marueylously encrease in *Vraba*, lykewyse blades, settes, slippes, graffes, suger canes, and suche other as are brought from other places to those regions, as also beastes and foules, as we haue sayd before: O marueylous fruitefulnesse. Twentie dayes after the seede is sowen, they geather rype cucumbers, and such lyke, but Colwoortes, Beetes, Lettuse, Borage, are rype within the space of ten dayes. Gourdes, Melones, and Pompions, within the space of .xxviii. dayes. *Dariena* hath many natiue trees and fruites, of diuers kinds, with sundry tastes, & holsome for the vse of men, of the which I haue thought it good to describe certaine of the best. They nourysshe a tree whiche they call *Guaiana*, that beareth a fruite muche resemblyng the kinde of Citrones which are commonly called Limones, of taste somwhat sharpe, myxt with sweetenes. They haue also abundance of nuts of pinetrees, and great plentie of Date trees, which beare fruites bigger then the Dates that are knowen to vs, but they are not apt to be eaten for theyr to much sowrenesse. Wilde & barren Date trees grow of them selues in sundry places, the branches wherof they vse for beesomes, and eate also the buddes of the same. *Guarauana*, being lygher and bygger then the orange tree, bryngeth forth a great fruite

The fruitfulnesse of Vraba.

The fruitefulnes of Dariena

fruite as bygge as pome Citrons. There is another tree much like to a chestnut tree, whose fruite is like to the bigger sorte of fygs, beyng holsome and of pleasant taste. *Mameis*, is another tree that bringeth forth fruite as bygge as an orange, in taste nothing inferior to the best kindes of Melones. *Guananala*, beareth a fruite lesse then any of the other, but of sweete sauour like spice, and of delectable taste. *Houos* is another tree, whose fruite both in shape and taste is muche lyke to prunes, but somewhat bygger: they are surely perswaded that this is the *Myrobalane* tree. These growe so abundantly in *Hispaniola*, that the hogges are fedde with the fruite therof, as with mast among vs. The hogges like this kynde of feedyng so wel, that when these fruites ware ripe, the swineheards can by no meanes keepe them out of the woods of these trees, by reason whereof, a great multitude of them are become wilde. They also affirme, that in *Hispaniola* swines flesh is of muche better taste and more wholsome then mutton: for it is not to be doubted, but that diuers kindes of meates doo engender sundry tastes and qualities in such as are nourished therwith. The most puissant prince *Ferdinandus*, declared that he had eaten of another fruite brought from those landes, being full of scales, with keyes, much lyke a pineapple in fourme and colour, but in tendernes equal to melow pepons, and in taste exceedyng al garden fruites: for it is no tree, but an yearbe, much like vnto an archichoke, or *Acantho*: The king him selfe gaue the cheefest commendation to this. I haue eaten none of these fruits: for of a great number which they brought from thence, only one remayned vncorrupted, the other being putrified by reason of the long voyage. Al suche as haue eaten of them newly geathered in their natiue soyle, do marueylously commende theyr sweetenesse and pleasaunt taste. They dygge also out of the grounde certayne rootes growyng of them selues, whiche they call *Betatas*, muche lyke vnto the nauie rootes of Millane, or the great puffes or mushromes of the earth. Howsoeuer they be dressed, eyther fryed or sodde, they geue place to no suche kynde of meate in pleasant tendernes. The skinne is somwhat tougher then eyther the nauies or mushromes, and of earthy colour, but the inner meate therof is very white: These are nourished in gardens, as we sayd of *Iucca* in the first Decade. They are also eaten rawe,

Swynes flesshe of better taste & more holsome then mutton.

Fruites putrified on the sea.

Betatas.

and

and haue the taste of rawe chestnuts, but are somewhat sweeter. We haue spoken sufficiently of trees, hearbes, and fruites, we wyl nowe therefore entreate of thynges sencitiue. The landes and desolate pastures of these regions, are inhabited and deuoured of wylde and terrible beastes, as Lions, Tygers, and suche other monsters as we nowe knowe, and haue ben described of olde auctours in tyme past. But there is specially one beast engendred here, in which nature hath endeuoured to shewe her cunnyng: This beast is as bygge as an Oxe, armed with a long snoute lyke an Elephant, and yet no Elephant, of the colour of an oxe, and yet no oxe, with the hoofe of a horse, and yet no horse, with eares also muche lyke vnto an Elephant, but not so open, nor so much hangyng downe, yet muche wyder then the eares of any other beast. Of the beast which beareth her whelpes about with her in her second belly as in a purse (beyng knowen to none of the olde wryters) I haue spoken in the fyrst Decade, which I doubt not to haue come to the handes of your holynesse. Let vs nowe therefore declare what resteth of the floodes and ryuers of *Vraba*. The riuer of *Dariena* falleth into the gulfe of *Vraba*, with a narow chanel, scarcely able to beare the Canoas or Lighters of that prouince, and runneth by the village where they chose they dwellyng place, but the ryuer in the corner of the gulfe whiche we sayde that *Vaschus* passed by, they founde to be .xxiiii. furlonges in breadth (which they call a league) and of exceedyng deapth, as of two hundred cubits, fallyng into the gulfe by diuers mouthes. They say that this riuer falleth into the gulfe of *Vraba*, lyke as the ryuer *Ister* (otherwyse called *Danubius*, and *Danowe*) falleth into the sea Pontike, and *Nilus* into the sea of Egypt, wherefore they named it *Grandis*, that is, great: whiche also they affyrme to nourysshe many and great Crocodiles, as the old wryters testifie of *Nilus*, and especially as I haue learned by experience, hauyng sayled vp and downe the riuer of *Nilus*, when I was sent Ambassadour to the Souldane of Alcayr, at the commaundement of the most catholique kyng. What I may therefore geather out of the wrytynges of so many learned auctours as concernyng the riuer of *Nilus*, I knowe not: for they say that nature hath geuen two ryuers of that name to water the lande, whether they wyl them to spryng out of the mountaynes of the

Lions and Tygers.

A strange beast.

The ryuers of Vraba.

A league is .xxiiii. furlonges.

Danubius.

A Crocodile is muche lyke a Neute, but of exceedyng bygnesse.

moone

moone or the sunne, or out of the tops of the rough mountaines of *Ethiopia*, affyrmyng one of the same to fall into the gulfe of Egypt toward the North, and the other into the south Ocean sea. What shal we say in this place? Of that *Nilus* in Egypt there is no doubt. The Portugales also which sayle by the coastes of the Ethiopians called *Nigritæ*, and by the kyngdome of *Melinda*, passyng vnder ỹ Equinoctial lyne, among theyr marueylous inuentions haue found another toward the South, and earnestly affirme the same to be also deriued from the mountaynes of the moone, and that it is another chanel of *Nilus*, because it bringeth forth Crocodiles, whereas it hath not ben read before time, that any other riuer nourished Crocodiles sauing only *Nilus*. This riuer the Portugales cal *Senega*. It runneth through the region of the *Nigritas*, beyng very fruiteful toward the North shore, but on the South syde sandie and rough. Crocodiles are also engendred herein. What shal we then say of this thirde? yea I may wel say the fourth: for I suppose them also to be Crocodiles, whiche *Colonus* with his company found, armed with scales as hard as shelles, in the ryuer called *Delagartos*, wherof we haue made mention before. Shal we say that these ryuers of *Dariena* also and *Vraba*, haue theyr original from the mountaynes of the moone, whereas they spryng out of the next mountaynes, and can by no meanes haue the same original with *Nilus* in Egypt, or that in *Nigrita*, or els that in the kyngdome of *Melinda*, from whence so euer they are deryued, whereas these other (as we haue sayde) spring out of the next mountaynes, which diuide another South sea, with no great distance from the North Ocean. Wherefore, it appeareth by experience of such as haue trauailed the world in our tyme, that other waters beside the riuer of *Nilus* in Egypt, may lykewyse bryng forth Crocodiles. In the Maryshes also and fennes of the regions of *Dariena*, are founde great plentie of Phesantes and Peacockes (but not of variable colours) with manye other kyndes of byrdes and foules vnlyke vnto ours, aswel apt to be eaten, as also to delyte the eares of men with pleasaunt noyse. But our Spanyardes, because they are ignoraunt in fowlyng, take but fewe. Also innumerable popingayes of sundry kyndes are founde chattering in the groues of those fennie places. Of these there are some equall to Ca-

The Portugales nauigations.

pons in bygnesse, and some as lytle as sparowes. But of the diuersitie of poppyngayes, we haue spoken sufficiently in the fyrste Decade: for in the rase of this large lande, *Colonus* hym selfe brought and sent to the courte a great number of euery kynde, the whiche it was lawfull for all the people to beholde, and are yet dayly brought in like manner. There remayneth yet one thyng moste woorthy to be put in hystorie, the whiche, I had rather to haue chaunced into the handes of *Cicero* or *Liuie*, then into myne: for the thyng is so marueylous in my estimation, that I synde my wytte more entangled in the discription hereof, then is sayde of the henne when she seeth her young chycken inwrapped in towe or flaxe. The breadth of that lande from the North Ocean to the south sea, is only sixe dayes iourney, by relation of the inhabitauntes. The multitude therfore and greatnesse of the riuers on the one syde, and on the other syde the narownesse of the lande, bryng me into suche doubt howe it can come to passe, that in so lytle a space of three dayes iourney, measuryng from the high toppes of those mountaynes, I doo not vnderstande howe so many and so great ryuers may haue recourse vnto this North sea: for it is to be thought, that as many do flow toward thinhabitants of the south. These riuers of *Vraba* are but small, in comparison of many other in those coastes: for the Spanyardes say, that in the tyme of *Colonus*, they found and passed by an other riuer after this, whose gulfe fallyng into ỹ sea, they affirme to be litle lesse then a hundred myles in the fyrst coastes of *Paria*, as we haue sayde elsewhere: for they say, that it falleth from the toppes of high mountaynes with so swyft and furious a course, that by the violence and greatnesse thereof, it dryueth backe the sea, although it be rough & enforced with a contrary wynd. They al affirme lykewyse, that in al the large tracte therof, they felt no sowre or salt water, but that all the water was freeshe, sweete, and apt to be drunke. Thinhabitauntes call this ryuer *Maragnonum*, and the regions adiacent to the same, *Mariatambal*, *Camamorus*, and *Paricora*: besyde those riuers whiche I haue named before, as *Darien*, *Grandis*, *Dabaiba*, *Beragua*, *Sancti Mathei*, *Boius gatti*, *Delagartos*, & *Gaira*, they which of late haue searched those coastes, haue founde many other. Deliberatyng therfore with me selfe, from whence these mountaynes, beyng so narowe

A philosophical discourse as concerning thoriginal of springes and ryuers.

The breadth of the lande at Vraba, from the North Ocean to the South sea.

narowe and neare vnto the sea on both sydes, haue suche great holowe caues or dennes of such capacitie, and from whence they are sylled, to cast fooryth suche abundance of water: hereof also asking them the opinions of the inhabitauntes, they affirme them to be of diuers iudgementes herein, alleaging fyrst the greatnes of the mountaynes to be the cause, whiche they say to be verye high, whiche thyng also *Colonus* the first fynder thereof affirmeth to be true, addyng thereunto that the paradise of pleasure is in the tops of those mountaynes whiche appeare from the gulfe of *Paria & Os Draconis*, as he is fully perswaded. They agree therefore that there are great caues within these mountaynes, but it resteth to consyder from whence they are sylled. If therfore al the riuers of freshe waters, by the opinion of many, do so flowe out of the sea, as dryuen and compelled through the passages or pores of the earth, by the ponderous weyght of the sea it selfe, as we see them breake fooryth of the sprynges, and directe theyr course to the sea agayne, then the thyng is lesse to be marueyled at here, then in other places: for we haue not read that in any other place, two suche seas haue enuironed any lande with so narowe lympttes: for it hath on the rvght syde the great Ocean, where the sunne goeth downe on the left hande, and another on the other syde where the sunne ryseth, nothyng inferiour to the fyrste in greatnesse, for they suppose it to be myxte and ioyned as al one with the sea of East India. This lande therfore beyng burdened with so great a weyght on the one syde, & on the other, (yf this opinion be of any value) is enforced to swalowe vp such deuoured waters, and agayne to cast fooryth the same in open spryinges and streames. But yf we shall denye that the earth drayweth humours of the sea, and agree that all fountaynes or spryinges are engendred of the conuersion or turnyng of ayre into water, distilling within the holow places of the mountaines (as the most part thinke) we wyll geue place rather to thauctoritie of them whiche stycke to those reasons, then that our sense is sattisfied of the ful trueth thereof. Yet do I not repugne, that in some caues of mountaynes, water is turned into ayre: for I mee selfe haue seene, howe in the caues of manye mountaynes in Spayne, in manner showres of rayne do fall continually, and that the water geathered by this meanes, doth sende fooryth

The sea.

The lande enclosed with two seas.

Conuersion of ayre into water in the caues of mountaynes.

certayne riuers by the sydes of the mountaynes, wherewith all suche trees as are planted on the steepe or foote of the mountaynes, as vines, olive trees, and suche other, are watered, and this especially in one place: as the right honorable Lodouike the Cardinal of Aragonie, most obsequious to your holynesse, and two other bishops of Italy, whereof the one is *Siluius Pandonus*, and the other an Archbishop (whose name and title I do not remember) can beare me witnesse: for when we were togeather at *Granata*, lately deliuered from the dominion of the Moores, and walked for our pastyme to certaine pleasant hilles (by the whiche there ranne a fayre ryuer) while Cardinal Lodouike occupied hym selfe in shootyng at byrdes whiche were in the bushes neere vnto the ryuer, I & thother two bishops determined to clime the mountaynes, to searche the original and spryng of the ryuer: for we were not farre from the toppes thereof. Folowyng therfore the course of the ryuer, we founde a great caue, in which was a continual fal of water, as it had ben a showre of rayne, the water whereof, fallyng into a trenche made with mans hande, encreaseth to a ryuer, and runneth downe by the sydes of the mountaynes. The lyke is also seene in this famous towne of *Valladoleto* (where we nowe soiourne) in a certaine greene close, not past a furlong distant from the walles of the towne. I graunt therefore, that in certayne places, by conuersion of the ayrie deawe into water, within the caues of suche mountaynes, many springes and riuers are engendred: but I suppose that nature was not sollicitate to bryng foorth suche great floods by this so small industrie. Two reasons therfore do sounde best to my iudgement: wherof the one is, the often fal of rayne: the other, the continual autume or spryng tyme which is in those regions, being so neere vnto the Equinoctial, that the common people can perceiue no difference betweene the length of the day and the nyght throughout all the yeere, where as these two seasons are more apt to engender abundance of rayne, then eyther extreme wynter, or feruent sommer. An other reason in effect much like vnto the fyrst, is this: If the sea be ful of poores, and that by the poores therof, being opened by the south wyndes, we shal consent that vapours are lyfted vp, whereof the watery cloudes are engendred, this lande must needes be moysted with moe showres then anye o-

The often fal of rayne, and continuall spryng tyme.

The Equinoctiall.

The pores of the sea, and the south wynde.

ther

eher, yf it be as narowe as they say, and enuironed with two mayne seas collaterally beatyng on the same: howsoeuer it be, I can not but geue credite to the repoyt of suche woythy men as haue recourse to those regions, and can no lesse then declare the same, albeit it may seeme incredible to some ignoyant persons, not knowing the power of nature, to whom, Plinie was perswaded, that nothing was impossible. We haue therefoye thought it good to make this discourse by the way of argument, lest on the one syde, men of good learnyng and iudgement, and on the other syde, suche as are studious to finde occasions of quarellyng in other mens wyytynges, shoulde iudge vs to be so vndiscrete, lightly to geue credite to euery tale, not being consonant to reason: but of the foyce and great violence of those freshe waters, whiche repulsyng the sea, make so great a gulfe (as we haue sayde) I thynke the cause thereof to be the great multitude of floods and riuers, whiche beyng geathered togeather, make so great a poole, and not one ryuer, as they suppose. And foyasmuch as the mountaines are exceeding high and steepe, I thinke the violence of the fall of the waters to be of suche foyce, that this conflict betweene the waters, is caused by thimpulsion of the poole, that the salt water can not enter into the gulfe. But here perhaps some wyll marueyle at me, why I should marueyle so muche hereat, speakyng vnto me scoynefully, after this manner: Why doth he so marueyle at the great riuers of those regions? Hath not Italie his *Eridanus*, named the kyng of ryuers of the old wyters? Haue not other regions also the lyke? as we reade of *Tanais*, *Ganges*, and *Danubius*, which are sayde so to ouercome the sea, that freshe water may be drawen fourtie myles within the same. These men I would satisfie with this answere. The famous ryuer of *Padus* in Italie (whiche they nowe call *Po*, and was of the Greekes called *Eridanus*) hath the great mountaynes called *Alpes*, diuiding Fraunce, Germanie, and Pannonie, from Italie, lying at the backe therof, as it were bulwarkes agger, full of moysture, and with a long tracte receiuyng *Ticinum*, with innumerable other great ryuers, falleth into the sea Adriatike. The lyke is also to be vnderstoode of the other. But these ryuers (as our men were enfourmed by the kynges) fall into the Ocean sea with larger and fuller channels neere hande,

The fludde Eridanus.

and some there are whiche affirme this lande to be very large in other places, although it be but narowe here. There commeth also to my remembraunce another cause, the whiche although it be of no great force, yet do I entende to wyte it. Perhaps therefore the length of the lande reachyng farre from the East to the West, if it be narowe, may be a helpe hereunto: for as we reade, that the ryuer *Alpheus* passeth through the holowe places vnder the sea, from the citie of *Elis* in *Peloponeso*, and breaketh forth at the fountayne or spryng *Arethusa* in the Iland of *Sicillia*, so is it possible that these mountaines may haue such long caues parteynyng vnto them, that they may be the receptacles of the water passing through the landes beyng farre distant, and that the same waters commyng by so long a tracte, may in the way be greatly encreased, by the conuersion of ayre into water, as we haue sayde. Thus much haue I spoken freely, permitting both to them which do frendly interprete other mens dooyngs, and also to the malitious scorners, to take the thing euen as them lysteth, for hytherto I can make no further declaration hereof, but when the trueth shalbe better knowen, I wil do my diligence to commit the same to wryting. Nowe therfore, forasmuch as we haue spoken thus muche of the breadth of this lande, we entende to describe the length and fourme of the same.

The ryuer Alpheus.

Longe caues in the mountaines.

The tenth booke of the seconde Decade, of the supposed continent.

That lande reacheth foorth into the sea, euen as doth Italy, although not lyke the legge of a man, as it doth. But nowe I compare a Pigmean or a dwarfe, to a Giant: for that part thereof whiche the Spanyardes haue ouer runne, from the sayd East poynt which reacheth towarde the sea Atlantike, (the ende not beyng yet founde towarde the West) is more then eyght tymes longer then Italie. And by what reason I am moued to say eyght tymes, your holynesse shall vnderstande. From the tyme therefore that I fyrste determined to obeye theyr requestes, who wylled me fyrst in your name to wryte these thynges

The length and fourme of the Iland.

thinges in the Latine tongue, I did my endeuour that al things myght come fooyth with due tryal and experience: whereupon I repayred to the Bishop of *Burges*, beyng the cheefe refuge of this nauigation. As we were therfoye secretely togeather in one chamber, we had many instruments parteining to these affaires, as globes, and many of those maps whiche are commonly called the shipmans cardes, oy cardes of the sea. Of the which, one was drawen by the Portugales, wherunto *Americus Vesputius* is said to haue put to his hande, beyng a man most expert in this facultie, and a Florentine borne, who also vnder the stipende of the Portugales, had sayled towarde the South pole many degrees beyonde the Equinoctiall. In this carde we founde the first front of this lande to be bygger then the kynges of *Vraba* had perswaded our men of theyr mountaynes. To another, *Colonus* the Admiral, while he yet lyued, and searched those places, had geuen the beginning with his owne handes: whereunto *Bartholomeus Colonus* his brother and Lieuetenaunt had added his iudgement, for he also had sayled about those coastes. Of the Spanyardes lykewyse, as many as thought them selues to haue anye knowledge what parteyned to measure the land & the sea, drewe certayne cardes in parchment as concernyng these nauigations. Of all other, they moste esteeme them whiche *Iohannes de la Cossa* the companion of *Fogeda* (whom we sayde to be slayne of the people of *Caramairi* in the hauen of *Carthago*) and another expert pylote called *Andreas Moralis*, had set fooyth. And this aswel for the great experience which they both had (to whom these tractes were aswel knowen as the chambers of theyr owne houses) as also that they were thought to be cunninger in that part of Cosmographie, which teacheth the discription and measuring of the sea. Conferring therfore al these cardes togeather, in euery of the whiche was drawen a lyne, expressing not the myles, but leagues, after the maner of the Spanyardes, we tooke our compasses, & began to measure the sea coastes after this order. From that poyne or fronte whiche we sayde to be included within the lyne parteyning to the Portugales iurisdiction, beyng drawen by the paralelles of the Ilandes of *Cabouerde*, but a hundred leagues further towarde the West (whiche they haue nowe also searched on euery syde) we founde three hundred leagues to the

Cardes of the sea.

The carde of Americus Vesputius.

The carde of Colonus.

The carde of Iohannes de la Cossa.

The carde of Andreas moralis.

The maner of measuring the cardes.

entraunce of the riuer *Maragnonum*: and from thence to *Os Draconis*, seuen hundred leagues, but somwhat lesse by the discription of some, for they doo not agree in al poyntes exquisitely. The Spanyards wyl that a league conteyne foure myles by sea, and but three by lande. From *Os Draconis*, to the cape or poynt of *Cuchibacoa*, whiche being passed, there is a gulfe on the left hande, we measured three hundred leagues in one Carde, & much thereabout in another. From this poynt of *Cuchibacoa*, to the region of *Caramairi*, in whiche is the hauen *Carthago* (whiche some cal *Carthagena*) we found about a hundred & seuentie leagues. From *Caramairi* to the Iland *Fortis*, fyftie leagues. From thence to the gulfes of *Vraba*, among the whiche is the byllage called *Sancta Maria Antiqua*, where the Spanyards haue appoynted theyr habitation, only .xxiii. leagues. From the ryuer of *Vraba* in the prouince of *Dariena*, to ỹ riuer of *Beragua*, where *Nicuesa* had intended to haue fastened his foote, if God had not otherwyse decreed, we measured a hundred and thirtie leagues. From *Beragua*, to that riuer, which we said of *Colonus* to be called *Sancti Matthei*, in the which also *Nicuesa* loosing his Carauel, wandered in great calamities, we founde in our Cardes only a hundred and fourtie leagues: Yet many other whiche of late tyme haue come from these partes, haue described many mo leagues in this tract from the ryuer of *Sancti Matthei*, in whiche also they place diuers ryuers, as *Aburema*, with the Iland called *Scutum Catebe*, lying before it, whose kyngs name is *Facies combusta*. Likewise another ryuer called *Zobraba*, after that, *Vrida*, and then *Duraba*, in the which golde is founde. Furthermore, many goodly hauens, as *Cerabaro* and *Hiebra*, so called of the inhabitauntes. And thus yf your holynesse wyll conferre these numbers togeather, you shall fynde in this accompt, a thousand, fyue hundred, twentie and fiue leagues, which amount to fyue thousande & seuen hundred miles, from the poynt of *Sancti Matthei*, whiche they cal *Sinum perditorum*, that is, The gulfe of ỹ lost men. But we may not leaue here: for after this, one *Astur Ouetensis*, otherwyse named *Iohannes Dias de Solis*, borne in *Nebrissa* (whiche bryngeth foorth many learned men) sayling from this riuer towarde the West, ouerranne many coastes and leagues, but the middest of that shore bendeth towarde the North, and is not therefore directly placed in order

* leagues.

The nauigation of Iohannes Dias.

with

with the other, yet may we geather by a diameter or right lyne, about thyee hundred leagues. Hereby may you geather what is the length of this lande, but of the breadth, perhaps we shal hereafter haue further knowledge. Let vs nowe speake somewhat of the varietie of the degrees of the eleuation of the pole starres. This lande therefore, although it reache foorth from the East into the West, yet is it crooked, and hath the poynt bendyng so towarde the South, that it looseth the syght of the North pole, and is extended beyonde the Equinoctial lyne seuen degrees towarde the South pole: but the poynt hereof, parteyneth to the iurisdiction of the Portugales, as we haue sayde. Leauing this poynt, and saylyng towarde *Paria*, the North starre is seene againe, for is so much the more lifted vp, in how much the region euclineth more towarde the West. The Spanyardes therfore haue diuers degrees of eleuations, vntyll they come to *Dariena*, being theyr cheefe station and dwelling place in those landes: for they haue forsaken *Beragua*, where they founde the North pole eleuate .viii. degrees, but from hence, the land doth so much bend towarde the North, that it is there in manner equal with the degrees of the strayghtes of Hercules pyllers, especially yf we measure certaine landes founde by them toward the North syde of *Hispaniola*, among the which there is an Iland about thyee. C. and .xxv. leagues frō *Hispaniola*, as they say which haue searched the same, named *Boiuca*, or *Agnaneo*, in the which is a continuall spring of running water, of such marueilous vertue, that ỹ water thereof being dronke, perhaps with some diet, maketh olde men young agayne. And here must I make protestation to your honestie, not to thynke this to be sayde lyghtly or rashly, for they haue so spread this rumour for a trueth throughout al the courte, that not onlye al the people, but also many of them whom wysedome or fortune hath diuided from the common sort, thynke it to be true: but yf you shal aske my opinion herein, I wyl answere, that I wyll not attribute so great power to nature, but that God hath no lesse reserued this prerogatiue to hym selfe, then to searche the hartes of men, or to geue substaunce to priuation, (that is) beyng, to no beyng, except we shall beleeue the fable of *Colchis* of *Eson* renouate, to be as true as the wrytynges of *Sibylla Erythrea*, Albeit perhaps the scooles of Philitions

The eleuation of the pole.

The iurisdiction of the Portugales.

Hercules pyllers.

The Iland Boiuca or Agnaneo.

The renouation of age.

A water of marueilous vertue.

and

and natural philosophers, wyll not muche stycke to affyrme, that by the vse of certayne secrete medicines and dyet, the accidentes of age (as they cal them) may be long hydden and deferred, whiche they wyl to be vnderstoode by the renouation of age. And I haue sayde thus much of the length and breadth of these regions, and of the rough and hugious mountaynes, with theyr waterye caues, also of the diuers degrees of that lande, I thinke it sufficient. But I thought it not good to let passe what chaunced to these miserable men among theyr generall calamities. I remember that when I was a chylde, me thought my bowelles grated, and that my spirites were marueylously troubled for very pitie, when I read in the poete Virgyl, howe *Achemenides* was left of *Vlysses* vpon the sea bankes among ỹ giantes called *Cyclopes*, where for the space of many dayes from the departyng of *Vlysses*, vntyl the comming of *Eneas*, he eate none other meate, but only berries and hawes. But our vnfortunate Spanyards, whiche folowed *Nicuesa* to inhabite *Beragua*, would haue esteemed hawes & berries for great delicates. What should I heare speake of the head of an asse bought for a great pryce, and of such other extremities as men haue suffered in townes besieged: After that *Nicuesa* had determined to leaue *Beragua* for the barrennesse of the soyle, he attempted to searche *Portum Bellum*, and then the coastes of the poynt called *Marmor*, yf he myght there fynde a place more fortunate to inhabite. In this meane tyme, so greeuous famine oppressed his souldiers, that they neyther abstained frō eating of mangie dogges, which they had with them, aswel for theyr defence as for huntyng (for in the warre agaynst the naked people, dogges stoode them in great steade) nor yet sometyme from the slaine inhabitauntes: for they found not there any fruitful trees, or plentie of foules, as in *Dariena*, but a barren ground, and not meete to be inhabited. Here certaine of the souldiers made a bargayne with one of their felowes for the pryce of a leane dogge, who also was almost dead for hunger: they gaue the owner of the dogge many of those peeces of gold which they cal *Pesos*, or golden Castellans. Thus agreeing of the pryce, they flayed the dogge to be eaten, and cast his mangie skinne, with the bones of the head hangyng thereto, among the bushes. The day folowyng, a certayne footeman of theyr companye, chaun-

The accidentes of age may be hydden.

Extreme hunger.

This was at the siege of Hierusalem.

Many dogges eaten.

A mangie dog deare solde.

ced

ced to fynde the skynne being nowe full of maggottes and stynkyng. He brought it home with hym, sodde it, and eate it. Many resorted to hym with theyr dysshes for the brothe of the sodde skynne, profering hym for euerye dysshefull a piece of golde. An other founde two toades, and sodde them, which a sycke man bought of hym for two fine shurtes, curiously wrought of lynnen intermyxed with golde. Certayne other wanderyng about to seeke for vittuals, found in a pathway in the myddest of a feelde, a dead man, of the inhabitantes, which had ben slaine of his owne company, and was nowe rotten and stynkyng. They drewe hym a syde, dismembred hym secretely, rosted hym, and ate hym, therewith asswagyng theyr hunger, as yf they had ben fedde with pheasauntes. One also, whiche departing from his companions in the nyght season, went a fyshyng among the reedes of the marysshes, lyued only with slyme or mudde for the space of certayne dayes, vntyl at the length creepyng, & almost deade, he founde the way to his felowes. And thus these miserable men of *Beragua*, vexed with these and suche other affections, were brought from the number of seuen hundreth, threescore and ten souldiers, scarsely to fourtie, beyng nowe also added to the company of them in *Dariena*. Fewe were slayne of thinhabitauntes, but the residue consumed by famine, breathed out theyr wery soules, openyng a way to the newe landes for suche as shal come after them, appeasyng the fury of the barbarous nations, with the price of theyr blood. Consyderyng therfore, after these stormes, with what ease other men shall ouerrunne and inhabite these landes, in respect to the calamities that these men haue suffered, they shall seeme to goe to bryde feastes, where all thynges are redy prepared agaynst theyr commyng. But where *Petrus Arias* arryued with the kynges nauie and newe supply of men, to this houre I knowe no certantie. What shal chaunce heareafter, I wyl make diligent inquisition, if I shal vnderstand this to be acceptable to your holynes. Thus I byd you farewel: from the courte of the most Catholyke kyng, the daye before the nones of December, in the yeere of Christ. 1514.

Broth of a mangie dogs skynne.

Toades eaten.

A dead man eaten.

Note.

Petrus Arias whō the Spaniardes call Pedrarias.

The

The fyrst booke of the thyrde Decade, to the Bishop of Rome *Leo* the tenth.

IWas determined (most holye father) to haue closed vp the gates to this new worlde, supposyng that I had wandered farre ynough in the coastes thereof, whyle in the meane time newe letters were brought me from thence, whiche caused me agayne to take my penne in hande: for I receiued letters not only from certayne of mine acquayntance there, but also from *Vaschus Nunnez*, whom we sayde by the confidence of his owne power with his confederates, to haue vsurped the gouernance of *Dariena*, after the reiecting of *Nicuesa* and *Anciſus*, Lieutenauntes. By his letter, wrytten after his warlyke maner, we vnderstande that he hath passed ouer the mountaynes, diuidyng the Ocean, knowen to vs, from the other mayne sea on the south side of this lande, hitherto vnknowen. His epistle is greater then that called *Capreenſis de Seiano*. But we haue geathered out of that and other, only such thynges as we thought most worthy to be noted. *Vaschus* so behaued hym selfe in these affayres, that he dyd not only pacifie the kynges displeasure conceiued agaynst him, but also made hym so fauourable and gracious good lorde towarde hym, that he rewarded him and his companions with many honorable gyftes and priuileges for theyr attempts. Wherefore, I desyre your holynesse to encline your attentyue eares, & to consyder with a ioyful minde what they haue brought to passe in these great enterpryses: for this valiaunt nation (the Spanyardes I meane) haue not only with great paynes and innumerable daungers subdued, to the Christian empire, infinite hundredes and legions, but also myriades of men.

Vaschus Nunnez, gouernor of Dariena.

The new south Ocean.

Commendation of the Spanyardes.

Vaschus Nunnez therfore, whether it were that he was impacient of idlenes, (for a valiant mynde can not rest in one place, or be vnoccupyed) or lest any other shoulde preuent him in so great a matter (suspectyng the newe gouernour *Petrus Arias*) or being mooued by both these causes, and especially for that the kyng had taken displeasure with hym for suche thynges as he had done before, tooke the aduenture vppon hym, with a fewe men to bryng that to passe,

A valiant mynd can not be pole.

passe whiche the sonne of kyng *Comogrus* thought coulde hardly haue ben done with the ayde of a thousande men, whereof *Petrus Arias* was appoynted captaine for the same purpose. Assembling therfore certayne of the olde souldiers of *Dariena*, and manye of those whiche came lately from *Hispaniola*, allured by the fame of greater plentie of golde, he geathered an armie of a hundred fourescore and tenne men. Thus beyng furnyshed, and redye to take his voyage by sea, whyle the wynde serued hym, he departed from *Dariena* with one Brigandine, and ten of their boates whiche they call Canoas, as we haue sayde. Fyrst therfore arriuing in the dominion of *Careta* kyng of *Coiba*, and frende to the Christians, and leauyng his shyppe and boates there, he made his deuout prayers to almightie God, and therewith went forwarde on his iourney by lande towarde the mountaynes. Here he fyrst entred into the region of kyng *Poncha*, who fledde at his commyng, as he had done before. But *Vaschus* sent messengers to hym by the conduct of certayne of *Careta* his men, promysing hym frendshyp & defence agaynst his enimies, with many other benefites. *Poncha* thus entised with fayre speache and frendlye profers, both of our men, and of the Caretans, came to our men gladly and wyllyngly, making a league of frendshyp with them. *Vaschus* enterteyned him very frendly, and perswaded him neuer thereafter to stande in feare. Thus they ioyned handes, embraced, and gaue great gyftes the one to the other, to knytte vp the knotte of continuall amitie. *Poncha* gaue *Vaschus* a hundred and ten poundes weight of golde, of that pounde whiche the Spaniardes call *Pesum*. He had no greater plentie of golde at this tyme, by reason he was spoyled the yeere before, as we haue said. *Vaschus* to recompence one benefite with another, gaue him certayne of our thynges, as counterfayte rynges, Christal stones, copper chaynes, & bracelets, haukes belles, lookyng glasses, and suche other fine stuffe. These thynges they set muche by, & greatly esteeme: for suche thynges as are strange, are euery where counted precious. He gaue also to *Poncha* certayne axes to fell trees, whiche he accepted as a princely gyfte, because they lacke Iron, and al other mettals except golde: by reason wherof, they are enforced with great labour to cutte their trees to buylde their houses, and specially to make their boates holowe, without

Vaschus his voyage toward the golden mountaynes.

Careta kyng of Coiba.

King Poncha.

Strange thinges are counted precious.

Lacke of Iron.

A stone in the steede of Iron.

without instrumentes of Iron, with certayne sharpe stones, whiche they fynde in the ryuers. Thus *Vaschus*, leauyng all thynges in safetie behinde hym, marched forwarde with his armie toward the mountaines, by the conduct of certaine guides and labourers which *Poncha* had geuen him, aswel to leade hym the way, as also to cary his baggages, and open the strayghtes through the desolate places and craggie rockes ful of the dennes of wylde beastes: for there is seldome any entercourse of buying and sellyng betweene these naked people, because they stande in neede of fewe thynges, and haue not the vse of money: but yf at any tyme they exercise any barteryng, they doo it but neere hande, exchangyng golde for houshold stuffe, with their confines, which somwhat esteme ẏ same for ornament when it is wrought.

Superfluities hynder libertie.

Other superfluities they vtterly contemne, as hynderaunces of theyr sweete libertie, forasmuche as they are geuen only to play and idlenes. And for this cause ẏ high wayes which lye betwene theyr regions, are not muche worne with manye iourneyes, yet haue theyr scoutes certayne priuie markes, wherby they knowe the way the one to inuade the others dominions, and spoyle and infest them selues on both sydes with mutual incursions priuily in the nyght season. By the helpe therefore of theyr guides and

Carpenters.

labozers, with our Carpenters, he passed ouer the horrible mountaynes, and many great ryuers lying in the way, ouer the which

Brydges.

he made brydges, either with pyles or trunks of trees. And here doo I let passe many thynges whiche they suffered for lacke of necessaries, being also in maner ouercome with extreme labour, lest I shoulde be tedious in rehearsing thinges of small value. But I haue thought it good not to omyt suche dooynges as he had with the kynges by the way. Therefore or euer he came to the toppes of the high mountaynes, he entred into a region cal-

The region of Quarequa.

led *Quarequa*, and mette with the king thereof called by the same name, with a great bande of men armed after theyr manner, as with bowes and arrowes, long and brode two handed swoordes made of wood, long staues hardened at the endes with fyre, dartes also and slynges. He came proudely and cruellye agaynst our men, and sent messengers to them to bydde them stande and proceede no further, demaundyng whyther they went, and what they had to doo there? Herewith he came

foorth

foorth and shewed hym selfe, beyng apparelled with al his nobilitie, but the other were al naked. Then approching towarde our men, he threatned thē, with a Lions countenance, to depart from thence, except they woulde be slayne euery mothers sonne. When our men denyed that they woulde goe backe, he assayled them fiercely, but the battayle was soone finished: for assoone as they heard the noyse of the hargabusies, they beleeued that our men caryed thunder and lyghtnyng about with them. Many also beyng slayne and sore wounded with quarrels of crossebowes, they turned theyr backes and fledde. Our men folowing them in the chase, hewed them in peeces, as the Butchers doo flesshe in the shambles, from one an arme, from another a legge, from hym a buttocke, from another a shoulder, and from some the necke from the bodye at one stroke. Thus, syxe hundred of them, with theyr kyng, were slayne lyke bruite beastes. *Vaschus* founde the house of this kyng infected with moste abominable and vnnaturall lechery: for he founde the kynges brother, and many other young men in womens apparell, smoothe and effeminately decked, whiche by the report of suche as dwelt about hym, he abused with preposterous venus. Of these about the number of fourtie, he commaunded to be geuen for a pray to his dogges: for (as we haue sayd) the Spanyardes vse the helpe of dogges in theyr warres agaynst the naked people, whom they inuade as fiercely and rauenyngly, as yf they were wilde boores or Hartes: insomuche that our Spanyardes haue founde theyr dogges no lesse faythful to them in al dangers and enterprises, then dyd the Colophonians or Castabalences, whiche instituted whole armies of dogges, so made to serue in the warres, that beyng accustomed to place them in the forefronte of the battayles, they neuer shronke or gaue backe. When the people had heard of the seuere punyshment whiche our men had executed vpon that fylthy kynde of men, they resorted to them as it had ben to Hercules for refuge, by violence bryngyng with them all suche as they knewe to be infected with that pestilence, spyttyng in theyr faces, and crying out to our men to take reuenge of them, and ryddе them out of the worlde from among men, as contagious beastes. This stynkyng abomination had not yet entred among the people, but was exercised onlye by

kyng Quarequa is dyuen to flyght.

Hargabusies.

Crossebowes

vi. C. Barbarians are slaine

The vse of dogges in the warre agaynst the naked Barbarians.

Natural hatred of vnnatural sinne.

I wouldo al men were of this opinion.

by the noble men and gentlemen. But the people lyfeyng vp theyr handes & eyes toward heauen, gaue tokens that God was greeuously offended with suche vyle deedes, affyrmyng this to be the cause of theyr so many thunderynges, lyghtnyng, and tempestes, wherewith they are so often troubled, and of the ouerflowyng of waters which drowne theyr sets and fruites, whereof famyne and diuers diseases ensue, as they symply and faythfully beleue, although they knowe none other GOD then the sunne, whom only they honour, thinkyng that it doth both geue and take away, as it is pleased or offended: Yet are they very docible, and easie to be allured to our customes and religion, if they had any teacher. In theyr language there is nothyng vnpleasaunt to the eare, or harde to be pronounced, but that all theyr woordes may be wrytten with latine letters, as we sayde of the inhabitauntes of *Hispaniola*. It is a warlyke nation, and hath ben euer hytherto molestous to theyr borderers: but the region is not fortunate with fruiteful grounde, or plentie of golde. Yet is it full of great barren mountaynes, beyng somewhat colde by reason of their height, and therefore the noble men and gentlemen are apparelled, but the common people liue content only with the benefites of nature. There is a region not past two dayes iourney distant from *Quarequa*, in whiche they founde only blacke Moores, and those exceedyng fierce and cruel. They suppose that in tyme past certayne blacke Moores sayled thyther out of *Ethiopia* to robbe, and that by shypwracke or some other chaunce, they were dryuen to those mountaynes. The inhabitaunts of *Quarequa* lyue in continual warre and debate with these blacke men. Here *Vascbus* leauing in *Quarequa* many of his souldiers (which by reason they were not yet accustomed to such trauayles and hunger, fel into diuers diseases) tooke with hym certayne guides of the Quarequatans, to conduct hym to the toppes of the mountaynes. From the pallace of kyng *Poncha*, to the prospect of the other south sea, is only sixe dayes iourney, the which neuertheless, by reason of many hinderances & chaunces, and especially for lacke of vittuals, he coulde accomplishe in no lesse then .xxv. dayes. But at the length, the seuenth day of the Calendes of October, he beheld with woonderyng eyes the toppes of the hygh mountaynes, shewed vnto hym by the guides

The haruest is great, and the woorkemen but fewe.

Warlyke people.

The higher, the colder.

A region of blacke Moores

Diseases of change of ayre and dyet.

The south sea.

of *Quarequa*, from the whiche he myght see the other sea so long looked for, and neuer seene before of any man commyng out of our worlde. Approching therfore to the toppes of the mountaynes, he commaunded his armye to stay, and went hym selfe alone to the toppe, as it were to take the fyrst possession thereof. Where, fallyng prostrate vppon the grounde, and rayslng hym selfe agayne vpon his knees, as the maner of the Christians is to praye, lyftyng vp his eyes and handes towarde heauen, and directyng his face towarde the newe founde south sea, he powred foorth his humble and deuout prayers before almightie God, as a spirituall sacrifyce with thankes gyuing, that it pleased his diuine maiestie, to reserue vnto that day the victorie and prayse of so great a thyng vnto hym, beyng a man but of smal wyt and knowledge, of lytle experience, and base parentage. When he had thus made his prayers after his warlike maner, he beckned with his hande to his companions, to come to hym, shewyng them the great mayne sea heretofore vnknowen to thinhabitants of Europe, Aphrike, and Asia. Here agayne he fell to his prayers as before, desyring almyghtie God (and the blessed virgin) to fauour his beginnynges, and to geue hym good successe to subdue those landes, to the glory of his holy name, and encrease of his true religion. All his companions dyd lykewyse, and praysed God with loude voyces for ioy. Then *Vascus*, with no lesse manlye corage then Hannibal of Carthage shewed his souldiers Italye, and the promontories of the Alpes, exhorted his men to lyft vp theyr hartes, and to beholde the lande euen nowe vnder theyr feete, and the sea before theyr eyes, whiche shoulde bee vnto them a full and iust rewarde of theyr great labours and trauayles nowe ouerpassed. When he had sayde these woordes, he commaunded them to raise certaine heapes of stones, in the stede of alters, for a token of possession. They descendyng from the toppes of the mountaynes, least suche as myght come after hym shoulde argue hym of lying or falshood, he wrote the kyng of Castels name here and there, on barkes of the trees, both on the ryght hande and on the left, and raysed heapes of stones all the way that he went, vntyll he came to the region of the next kyng towarde the south, whose name was *Chiapes*. This kyng came foorth agaynst hym with a great multitude of men, threatnyng

Prayer.

God rayseth the poore from the dounghyl

Hannibal of Carthage.

King Chiapes.

A battaple.

Chiapes is dri-uen to flyght.

Vaschus sendeth for kyng Chiapes.

Chiapes submitteth hym selfe to Vaschus.

and forbyddyng him not only to passe through his dominions, but also to goe no further. Hereupon *Vaschus* set his battayle in aray, and exhorted his men (beyng nowe but fewe) fiersly to assayle theyr enemies, and to esteeme them no better then dogges meate, as they shoulde be shortly. Placing therefore the hargabusiers and masties in the forefroont, they saluted kyng *Chiapes* and his men with such alarome, that when they hard the noyse of the gunnes, saw the flames of fire, and smelt the sauour of brimstone (for the wynde blewe towardes them) they drone them selues to flyght, with such feare lest thunderboultes and lyghtnynges folowed them, that many fell downe to the ground, whom our men pursuing, fyrst keepyng theyr order, and after breakyng theyr aray, slue but fewe, and tooke manye captyue: For they determined to vse no extremitie, but to pacyfie those regions as quietly as they myght. Enteryng therfore into the pallace of kyng *Chiapes*, *Vaschus* commaunded many of the captyues to be loosed, wyllyng them to search out theyr kyng, and to exhort hym to come thither: and that in so doyng, he woulde be his frend, and profer hym peace, besyde many other benefites: But if he refused to come, it shoulde turne to the destruction of hym and his, and vtter subuertion of his countrey. And that they myght the more assuredly do this message to *Chiapes*, he sent with them certayne of the guides whiche came with hym from *Quarequa*. Thus *Chiapes*, beyng persuaded aswell by the Quarequans, who coulde coniecture to what end the matter woulde come, by therperience whiche they had seene in them selues and theyr kyng, as also by the reasons of his owne men, to whom *Vaschus* had made suche frendly promises in his behalfe, came fourth of the caues in the whiche he lurked, and submitted hym selfe to *Vaschus*, who accepted hym frendly. They ioyned handes, embraced the one the other, made a perpetuall league of frendship, and gaue great rewardes on both sydes. *Chiapes* gaue *Vaschus* foure hundred poundes weyght of wrought golde, of those poundes whiche they call *Pesos*, and *Vaschus* recompenced hym agayne with certayne of our thynges. Thus beyng made frendes, they remayned togeather a fewe dayes, vntyll *Vaschus* souldiers were come, whiche he left behynde hym in *Quarequa*. Then callyng vnto hym the

the guydes and labourers whiche came with hym from thence, he rewarded them liberally, and dismissed them with thankes. Shortly after, by the conduct of *Chiapes* hym selfe, and certayne of his men departyng from the toppes of the mountaynes, he came in the space of foure dayes to the bankes of the newe sea: where assemblyng al his men togeather, with the kynges scribes and notaries, they addicted all that mayne sea with all the landes adiacent thereunto, to the dominion and Empire of Castile. Here he left part of his souldiers with *Chiapes*, that he myght the easelier search those coastes. And takyng with hym niene of theyr lyghters made of one whole tree (whiche they call *Culchas*, as thinhabitantes of *Hispaniola* cal them *Canoas*) & also a bande of fourescore men, with certeyne of *Chiapes* men, he passed ouer a great riuer, and came to the regiõ of a certeine king, whose name was *Coquera*. He attempted to resyst our men as dyd the other, and with lyke successe: for he was ouercome and put to flight. But *Vaschus*, who entended to winne him with gentelnes, sent certeyne Chiapeans to hym, to declare the great power of our men, howe inuincible they were, howe mercifull to such as submit them selues, also cruell and seuere to such as obstinetly withstand them: Promisyng hym furthermoze, that by the frendship of our men, he might be wel assured by the example of other, not only to liue in peace and quietnes hym selfe, but also to be reuenged of the iniuries of his enimies: Wyllyng hym in conclusion so to weigh the matter, that yf he refused this gentlenes profered vnto hym by so great a victourer, he should or it were long learne by feelyng, to repent hym to late of that peryll whiche he myght haue auoyded by hearyng. *Coquera* with these woydes and examples, shaken with great feare, came gladly with the messengers, bryngyng with him. 650. *Pesos* of wrought golde, whiche he gaue vnto our men. *Vaschus* rewarded hym likewise, as we sayd before of *Poncha*. *Coquera* beyng thus pacified, they returned to the pallace of *Chiapes*, where, visityng theyr companions, and restyng there a whyle, *Vaschus* determined to search the next great gulfe, the whiche, from the furthest reachyng thereof into the lande of theyr countryes, from the enteraunce of the mayne sea, they say to be threescore myles. This they named saint Michaels gulfe, whiche they say to be full of in-

A gulfe of threescore myles. Saint Michaels gulfe.

habited Ilandes and hugious rockes. Entryng therefore into the niene boates of *Culchas*, wherewith he passed ouer the ryuer before, hauyng also with him the same companye of fourescore whole men, he went forwarde on his purpose, although he were greatly disswaded by *Chiapes*, who earnestly desyred him not to attempt that voyage at that tyme, affirming ỳ gulfe to be so tempestious and stormie three monethes in the yeere, that the sea was there by no meanes nauigable, and that he had seene many *Culchas* deuoured of whirlepooles, euen before his eyes. But inuincible *Vaschus*, impacient of idlenesse, and voyde of all feare in Gods cause, aunswered, that God and his holy saintes would prosper his enterpryses in this case, forasmuche as the matter touched God, and the defence of the Christian religion, for the mayntenance wherof, it shoulde be necessarie to haue abundance of ryches and treasure, as the sinewes of warre against the enimies of the fayth. Thus vsyng also the office both of an oratour and preacher, and hauyng perswaded his companions, he launched from the lande. But *Chyapes*, lest *Vaschus* shoulde anythyng doubt of his faythfulnesse towarde him, profered hym selfe to goe with hym whyther soeuer he went, and woulde by no meanes assent that *Vaschus* shoulde depart from his palace, but that he woulde bryng hym on the way, and take part of his fortune. Therfore, assoone as they were now entred into the maine sea, such sourges & conflyctes of water arose agaynst them, that they were at theyr wittes endes, whither to turne them, or where to rest. Thus being tossed and amased with feare, the one looked on the other with pale & vnchearefull countenances, but especially *Chiapes* and his company, who had before tyme with theyr eyes seene the experience of those ieopardies, were greatly discomforted (yet as God woulde) they escaped all, and landed at the next Ilande, where, makyng fast theyr boates, they rested there that nyght. Here the water so encreased, that it almost ouerflowed the Ilande. They say also, that the South sea doth so in manner boyle and swel, that when it is at the highest, it doth couer many great rockes, whiche at the fal thereof, are seene farre aboue the water. But on the contrarye parte, all suche as inhabite the North sea, affyrme with one voyce, that it scarcelye ryseth at any tyme a cubite aboue the bankes, as

The manly corage and godly zeale of Vaschus

Ryches are the synewes of warre

The faythfulnes of kyng Chiapes.

A tempest on the sea.

The increasing of the South sea.

The North Ocean.

as they also confesse whiche inhabite the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, and other Ilandes situate in the same. The Ilande therefore being nowe dyre by the fall of the water, they resorted to theyr boates, which they founde al ouerwhelmed, & ful of sande, and some sore bruised with great ryftes, and almost lost by reason theyr cables were broken: suche as were bruised, they tyed faste with theyr gyrdles, with slyppes of the barkes of trees, and with tough and long stalkes of certayne hearbes of the sea, stoppyng the ryftes or chynkes with grasse, according to the present necessitie. Thus were they enforced to returne backe agayne, lyke vnto men that came from shypwracke, beyng almost consumed with hunger, because theyr vyttualles were vtterly destroyed by tempest. The inhabitauntes declared that there is hearde all the yeere horrible roryng of the sea among those Ilandes, as often as it ryseth or falleth, but this most especially in those three monethes in the whiche it is most boysterous, as *Chiapes* tolde *Vaschus* before, meanyng (as they coulde coniecture by his wordes) October, Nouember, and December: for he signified the present moone, & the two moones folowyng, countyng the monethes by the moones, whereas it was nowe October. Here therefore refreshing him selfe and his souldiers a whyle, and passyng by one vnprofitable kyng, he came to another, whose name was *Tumaccus*, after the name of the region, beyng situate on that syde of the gulfe. This *Tumaccus* came forth agaynst our men, as dyd the other, and with lyke fortune: for he was ouercome, dryuen to flyght, and many of his men slayne. He him selfe was also sore wounded, but yet escaped. *Vaschus* sent certayne messengers of the Chiapians to hym, to returne, and not to be afrayde: but he coulde be nothing moued, neyther by promises, nor threatninges: yet when the messengers were instant, and ceassed not to threaten death to him and his familie, with the vtter desolation of his kyngdome, if he persisted in that obstinacie, at the length he sent his sonne with them, whom *Vaschus* honourably enterteynyng, apparellyng hym gorgiously, and geuyng him many gyftes, sent him to his father, wyllyng hym to perswade hym of the puissaunce, munificence, liberalitie, humanitie, and clemencie of our men. *Tumaccus* beyng mooued by this gentlenesse declared towarde his sonne, came with hym

Hard shyft in necessitie.

The region Tumacca.

Kyng Tumaccus is dryuen to flyght.

the thyrde day, bryngyng nothyng with hym at that tyme. But after that he knewe that our men desyred golde and pearles, he sent for syxe hundred and fourteene *Pesos* of golde, and two hundred and fourtie of the byggest and fayrest pearles, besyde a great number of the smallest sort. Our men marueyled at the byggenes and fayrenes of these pearles, although they were not perfectly whyte, because they take them not out of the sea muscles, except they fyrst rost them, that they may the easelyer open them selfe, and also that the fyshe may haue the better tast, whiche they esteeme for a delicate and princely dysshe, and set more therby, then by the pearles them selues. Of these thynges I was enfourmed of one *Arbolantius*, beyng one of *Vaschus* companions, whom he sent to the kyng with many pearles, and certayne of those sea muscles. But when *Tumaccus* sawe that our men so greatly regarded the beautie of the pearles, he commaunded certayne of his men to prepare them selues to go a fyshyng for pearles: Who departing, came agayne within foure dayes, bringyng with them twelue pounde weight of orient pearles, after eight ounces to the pounde. Thus reioycing on both parties, they embraced, and made a league of continual frendshyp. *Tumaccus* thought hym selfe happie that he had presented our men with such thankefull gyftes, and was admitted to theyr frendshyp: and our men thinkyng them selues happie and blessed that they had founde such tokens of great ryches, swalowed downe theyr spyttle for thyrst. At all these dooinges, kyng *Chiapes* was present, as a wytnes and companion. He also reioyced not a litle, aswell that by his conductyng he sawe that our men shoulde bee satisfied of theyr desyre, as also that by this meanes he had declared to the next kyng his borderer and enimie, what frendes he had of our men, by whose ayde he myght lyue in quietnes, and be reuenged of his aduersarie, if neede shoulde so requyre. For (as we haue sayde) these naked kynges infest them selues with greeuous warres, onely for ambition and desyre to rule. *Vaschus* bosteth in his epistle, that he learned certayne marueylous secretes of *Tumaccus* hym selfe, as concernyng the great ryches of this lande, wherof (as he sayth) he would vtter nothyng at this present, forasmuche as *Tumaccus* tolde it hym in his eare. But he was enfourmed of both the kynges, that there is an

Golde and pearles.

Muscles of the sea.

Fyshyng for pearles.

The thyrst of golde.

Ambition among naked men.

Ilande

Ilande in that gulfe, greater then any of the other, hauyng in it but onely one kyng, and hym of so great power, that at suche tymes of the yeere as the sea is calme, he inuadeth theyr dominions with a great nauie of *Culchas*, spoylyng and cariyng away for a praye all that he meeteth. This Ilande is distant from these coastes, only twentie myles: So that the promontories or poyntes thereof, reachyng into the sea, may be seene from the hylles of this continent. In the sea neere about this Ilande, sea muscles are engendred, of such quantitie, that many of them are as brode as bucklers. In these are pearles founde (beyng the hartes of those shell fysshes) oftentymes as bygge as beanes, somtymes bygger then Olyues, and suche as sumptuous *Cleopatra* myght haue desyred. Although this Ilande be so neere to the shore of this firme lande, yet is the begynnyng thereof in the mayne sea, without the mouth of the gulfe. *Vaschus* beyng ioyful and mery with this rych communication, fantasyng nowe in maner nothing but princes treasures, beganne to speake fierce and cruell woordes against the tyrant of that Ilande, meanyng hereby to wynne the myndes of the other kynges, and bynde them to hym with a neerer bonde of frendeshyp. Yet therefore raylyng further on hym with spytefull and approbrious woords, he swore great othes, that he woulde forthwith inuade the Ilande, spoylyng, destroying, burnyng, drownyng, and hangyng, sparyng neyther swoorde nor fyre, vntyll he had reuenged theyr iniuries: and therewith commaunded his *Culchas* to be in a redynes. But the two kynges, *Chiapes* and *Tumaccus*, exhorted hym frendly to deferre this enterprise, vntil a more quiet season, bycause that sea was not nauigable without great danger, beyng nowe the begynnyng of November: Wherein the kynges seemed to saye true. For as *Vaschus* hym selfe wryteth, great roring of the sea was heard among the Ilands of the gulfe, by reason of the ragyng and conflict of the water. Great ryuers also, descendyng from the toppes of the mountaynes the same tyme of the yeere, and ouerflowyng theyr bankes, dryuyng downe with theyr violence great rockes and trees, make a marueylous noyse. Lykewise the furie of the South and Northeast wyndes, associate with thunder and lyghtnyng at the same season, dyd greatly molest them. Whyle the wether was fayre,

A kyng of great power.

Byg pearles.

Cleopatra, queene of Egypt, resolued a pearle in vineger & dranke it. Price fiue thousande pounde of our money.

they were vexed in the night with colde, and in the day tyme the heat of the Sonne troubled them, wherof it is no marueyle, forasmuche as they were neere vnto the Equinoctial line, although they make no mention of the eleuation of the pole, for in suche regions, in the nyght the Moone and other colde planettes, but in the day the Sonne and other hotte planettes, doo cheefely exercyse theyr influence, although the antiquitie were of an other opinion, supposyng the Equinoctiall circle to bee vnhabitable and desolate, by reason of the heate of the Sonne, hauyng his course perpendicularly or directly ouer the same, except a fewe of the contrary opinion, whose assertions the Portugales haue at these dayes by experience proued to be true: for they sayle yeerely to thinhabitantes of the south pole, beyng in maner *Antipodes* to the people called *Hyperborei* vnder the North pole, and exercise marchaundize with them. And here haue I named *Antipodes*, forasmuche as I am not ignorant that there hath ben men of singuler witte and great learnyng, whiche haue denyed that there is *Antipodes*, that is, suche as walke feete to feete. But it is most certaine, that it is not geuen to any one man to knowe all thynges, for euen they also were men, whose propertie is to erre, and be deceiued in many thynges. Neuertheless, the Portugales of our tyme, haue sayled to the fyue and fyftie degree of the south pole: where, compassyng about the poynt therof, they myght see throughout all the heauen about the same, certeyne shynyng whyte cloudes here and there among the starres, lyke vnto them which are seene in the tract of heauen called *Lactea via*, that is, the mylke whyte way. They say, there is no notable starre neare about that pole, lyke vnto this of oures, which the common people thynke to be the pole of it selfe (called of the Italians *Tramontana*, and of the Spanyardes *Nortes*) but that the same falleth beneath the Ocean. Whē the Sonne descendeth from the myddest of the exilaree of the worlde from vs, it ryseth to them, as a payre of ballances, whose weyght enclinyng from the equall payse in the myddest towarde eyther of the sydes, causeth the one ende to ryse as much as the other falleth. When therfore it is Autumne with vs, it is spryng tyme with them, and sommer with vs, when it is wynter with them. But it suffiseth to haue sayde thus much of strange matters. Let vs nowe there-

The starres about the south pole.

A similitude declaryng Antipodes.

fore

foze returne to the hiſtoꝛie, and to our men.

The ſeconde booke of the thyrde Decade.



Aſchus by thaduice of king *Chiapes* and *Tumaccus*, determined to deferre his voyage to the ſayde Iſlande, vntyll the next ſpꝛyng oꝛ ſommer, at which tyme, *Chiapes* offered him ſelfe to accompany our men, and ayde them therin al that he myght. In this meane tyme, *Vaſchus* had knowledge that theſe kynges had nettes and fyſhyng places in certeyne ſtations of that ſea neare vnto the ſhoꝛe where they were accuſtomed to fyſhe foꝛ ſea muſcles, in the which pearles are engendꝛed, and that foꝛ this purpoſe they had certeyne dyuers oꝛ fyſſhers, exerciſed from theyꝛ youth in ſwimmyng vnder the water. But they doo this onely at certeine tymes when the ſea is calme, that they may the eaſlier come to ỹ place where theſe ſhel fiſhes are wont to lye: foꝛ the bygger that they are, ſo much lye they the deeper & neerer to ỹ bottome: but the leſſer, as it were daughters to thother, are neerer the bꝛimme of the water: likewiſe the leaſt of al, as it were their nieſes, are yet neerer to the ſuperficial part therof. To them of the byggeſt ſoꝛt whiche lye loweſt, the fyſſhers deſcende the depth of thꝛee mens heyght, and ſomtyme foure, but to the daughters oꝛ nieſes, as their ſucceſſion, they deſcende only to the mydde thygh. Somtimes alſo, after that the ſea hath ben diſquieted with vehement tempeſtes, they fynde a great multitude of theſe fiſhes on the ſandes, beyng dꝛyuen to the ſhoꝛe by the violence of the water. The pearles of theſe, which are founde on the ſande, are but lytle, the fyſhe it ſelfe, is moꝛe pleaſaunt in eatyng, then are our oyſters, as our men repoꝛt: But perhaps hunger, the ſweete ſauſe of all meates, cauſed our men ſo to thynke. Whether pearles be the hartes of ſea muſcles (as Ariſtotle ſuppoſed) oꝛ the bꝛyth oꝛ ſpawne of their intrals (as *Plinie* thought) oꝛ whether they cleaue continually to the rockes, oꝛ wander by companies in the ſea by the guyding of the eldeſt, whether euery fyſhe bꝛyng foꝛth one pearle oꝛ moꝛe, at one bꝛyth, oꝛ at dyuers: alſo whether

The maner of of fyſhyng foꝛ pearles.

whether they be fyled from the rockes wherunto they cleaue, or may be easely pulled away, or otherwyse fall of by them selues when they are come to theyr full grouth: Lykewyse whether pearles be harde within the shel, or soft, our men haue as yet no certayne experience, but I trust or it be long to knowe the trueth hereof: for our men are euen nowe in hand with the matter. Also, as soone as I shall be aduertised of the aryuall of *Petrus Arias* the captayne of our men, I wyll desire hym by my letters to make diligent search for these thynges, and certifie me therof in all poyntes. I knowe that he wyll not be slacke or omit any thyng herein, for he is my verye freende, and one that taketh great pleasure in consideryng the woykes of nature. And surely it seemeth vnto me vndecent, that we shoulde with silence ouerslyp so great a thyng, which aswel in the olde tyme, as in our dayes, hath and yet doth, drawe both men and women to the immoderate desire of superfluous pleasure. Spayne therfore shalbe able hereafter with pearles to satisfie the greedy appetyte of such as in wanton pleasures are lyke vnto *Cleopatra* and *Asopus*: So that from henceforth we shall neyther enuie nor reuerence the nice fruitefulnesse of *Stoidum*, or *Taprobana*, or the red sea. But let vs now returne to our purpose. *Vaschus* therfore determined with the fyshers of *Chiapes*, to proue what myght be doone in his fishe pooles or stations of sea muscles. *Chiapes* to shewe hym selfe obedient to *Vaschus* his request, although the sea were boysteous, commaunded thyrtie of his fyshers to prepare them selues, and to resort to the fishyng places. *Vaschus* sent onely sixe of his men with them, to beholde them from the sea bankes, but not to commit them selues to the daunger of the sea. The fishyng place was distant from the pallace of *Chiapes* about tenne myles. They durst not aduenture to dyue to the bottome, by reason of the furie of the sea: Yet of the muscles whiche lye hyghest, and of such as were dryuen to the shore by the violence of the water, they brought syxe great fardelles in the space of a fewe dayes. The pearles of these were but lyttle, about the bygnesse of small fytches: yet verye fayre and beautifull, by reason that they were taken newely out of the fyshe, beyng yet rawe. And that they should not be reproued of lying, as

Petrus Arias.

Wanton and superfluous pleasures.

The fyshyng place of kyng Chiapes.

concerning

concernyng the bygnesse of these sea muscles, they sent many of them into Spayne to the kyng, with the pearles, the fyshe beyng taken out: We thynke verily that there may in no place bygger be founde. These shel fyshes therefore beyng thus founde here in so many places in that sea, and gold in maner in euery house, doo argue the ryche treasurie of nature to be hydde in those coastes, forasmuche as great ryches haue ben founde, as it were in the litle fynger of a giauntes hande. What then may we thynke of the whole hande of the giaunt (for hytherto they haue onlye benne in hande with the confines of *Vraba*) when they shall haue throughlye searched all the coastes and secretes of the inner partes of all that large lande? But *Vaschus* contented with these signes, and ioyfull of his good successe in these enterpryses, determined by another way to returne to his felowes in *Dariena*, where also they haue golde mynes, about tenne myles from the byllage. He gaue therefore kyng *Chiapes* leaue to depart, and to folowe hym no further, counsaylyng hym to continue faythful vnto the christian king his lord and maister. Thus embracing the one the other, & ioyning handes, *Chiapes* departed with teares, declaring the good minde which he bore to our men. *Vaschus* leauing his sicke men with *Chiapes*, went forward on his iourney with the residue, hauyng also with hym for guides three of *Chiapes* Maryners. He conueyghed his armie ouer a great riuer, into the dominion of a certayne king called *Teaocha*, who beyng aduertised of the commyng of our men, of whose famous actes he had hearde muche before, was very glad thereof, and entertayned them honourably, so that for a token of his frendly affection toward them, he gaue *Vaschus* twentie pounds weight of wrought golde, after eyght ounces to the pounde: also two hundred bygge pearles, but not fayre, by reason they were taken out of the muscles after they had ben sodden. After they had ioyned hands, *Vaschus* recompenced him with certayne of our thinges: lykewyse rewarding his guides the seruantes of *Chiapes*, he dismissed them with commendations to their lord. King *Teaocha*, at the departure of our men from his pallace, dyd not only appoynt them guides to conduct them in the way, but also gaue them certayne slaues, in the steede of beastes to cary their vittuals, because they should passe through many desartes, barren and rough

Gold in maner in euery house. The ryche treasury of nature.

The golde mynes of Dariena.

King Teaocha entertayneth Vaschus frendly.

Twenty pound weyght of wrought gold.

Deſartes ful of wylde beaſtes.

rough mountaynes and terrible woods ful of Tigers and Lions. He ſent alſo one of his ſonnes with theſe ſlaues, lading them with ſalted and dryed fiſhe, & bread of thoſe regions, made of the rootes of *Maizium* and *Iucca*. He alſo commaunded his ſonne not to depart from our men, vntil he were licenſed by *Vaſchus*. By theyr conductyng therfore, *Vaſchus* came to the dominion of an other kyng, whoſe name was *Pacra*, a cruel tyrant, feareſull to the other kynges his borderers, and of greater power then any of them. This tyrant, whether it were that his giltie conſcience, for his miſcheuous actes, put him in feare that our men woulde reuenge the ſame, or that he thought him ſelfe inferiour to reſiſt them, fled at their comming. *Vaſchus* writeth, that in theſe regions in the moneth of Nouember, he was ſore afflicted with great heate and intollerable thirſt, by reaſon that ſide of the mountaynes hath little water: Inſomuche that they were in daunger to haue periſhed, but that certayne of thinhabitantes ſhewed them of a ſpring, which was in ỳ ſecret place of a wood, whither *Vaſchus* with all ſpeede ſent two quicke & ſtrong young men of his companions, with theyr gourdes, and ſuch water veſſels as *Teaocha* his men brought with them. Of thinhabitantes, there durſt none depart from theyr company, becauſe the wyld beaſtes do ſone inuade naked men: For in thoſe mountaines, and eſpecially in the woods neare vnto the ſpring, they ſay that they are ſomtimes taken out of theyr houſes in the night, except they take good heede that the doores be well ſparde. It ſhal not be from my purpoſe heere to declare a particuler chaunce, before I enter any further in this matter. They ſay therfore, that the laſt yeere the region of *Dariena* was no leſſe infeſted and troubled with a fierſe Tiger, then was *Calidonia* in tyme paſt with a wild Boore, and *Nemea* with a horrible Lion. For they affyrme that for the ſpace of ſyxe whole monethes, there paſſed not one nyght without ſome hurt doone: ſo that it kylled nyghtly eyther a Bullocke, a Mare, a Dogge, or a Hogge, and ſometymes euen in the hygh wayes of the village: For our men haue nowe great heardes of cattayle in thoſe regions. They ſay alſo, that when this Tyger had whelpes, no man myght ſafely goe forth of his doores, becauſe ſhee ſpared not men, yf ſhee mette fyrſte with them. But at the length,

Dryed fyſhe.

Kyng Pacra a tyrant.

Great heate in the moneth of Nouember.

Hurt by wylde beaſtes.

A Tyger.

Calidonia is a forreſt in Scotlande.

Nemea is a wood in Greece.

Tigers whelpes.

lengthe, neceſſitie enforced them to inuent a policie howe they myght be reuenged of ſuche bloodſhed. Searchyng therfore dilygently her footeſteppes, and folowyng the pathe whereby ſhe was accuſtomed in the nyght ſeaſon to wander out of her denne to ſeeke her praye, they made a great trenche or pyt in her walke, coueryng the ſame with hurdels, whereupon they caſte parte of the earth, and diſpearſed the reſydue. The dogge Tyger chaunced fyrſt into this pitfall, and fel vpon the poyntes of ſharpe ſtakes, and ſuch other engins as were of purpoſe fyxed in the bottome of the trench. Beyng thus wounded, he roared ſo terrybly, that it grated the bowels of ſuche as harde hym, and the wooddes and mountaynes neare about rebounded the noyſe of the horryble crye. When they perceiued that he was layde faſt, they reſorted to the trenche, and ſlue hym with ſtones, dartes, and pykes. With his teethe and clawes he brake the dartes into a thouſande chyppes. Beyng yet dead, he was fearefull to all ſuch as behelde hym: what then thynke you he woulde haue doone beyng alyue and looſe? One *Iohannes Lediſma* of Ciuile, a neare frende to *Vaſcus*, and one of the companions of his trauayles, tolde me that he hym ſelfe dyd eate of the fleſhe of that Tyger, and that it was nothyng inferiour to beefe in goodnes. Beyng demaunded howe they knewe it to be a Tyger, forаſmuch as none of them had euer ſeene a Tyger: they anſweared that they knewe it by the ſpottes, fiercenes, agilitie, and ſuche other markes and tokens wherby auncient writers haue deſcribed the Tyger. For ſome of them had before tyme ſeene other ſpotted wylde beaſtes, as Libardes and Panthers. The dogge Tiger beyng thus kylled, they folowyng the traſe of his ſteppes towarde the mountaynes, came to the denne where the bytche remayned with her two young ſuckyng whelpes. But ſhe was not in the denne at their commyng. They fyrſt caryed away the whelpes with them. But afterwardes, fearyng leſt they ſhoulde dye becauſe they were young, entendyng when they were bygger to ſend them into Spaine, they put cheynes of iron about their neckes, and caryed them agayne to their denne: whither returnyng within a fewe dayes after, they founde the denne emptie, and they cheynes not remoued from their place. They ſuppoſe that the damme in her furye tore them in peeces, and caryed

Thus the Egiptians take Crocodiles

The dogge tyger taken.

The roryng of the tyger.

Tigers fleſh eaten.

The bitche tyger.

Tigers whelpes.

A ſtraunge thyng.

caryed them away, leſt any ſhoulde haue the fruition of them. For they playnely affirme, that it was not poſſible that they ſhoulde be looſed from the chaynes alyue. The ſkynne of the dead Tyger ſtuffed with dyre hearbes and ſtrawe, they ſent to *Hiſpaniola*, to the Admiral, and other of the cheefe rulers, from whom the newe landes receiue their lawes and ſuccour. It ſhall at this tyme ſuffiſe to haue written thus muche of the Tygers, as I haue learned by repoꝛt of them which both ſuſteyned domage by their rauenyng, and alſo handled the ſkynne of that whiche was ſlayne. Let vs nowe therfoꝛe returne to king *Pacra*, from whom we haue digreſſed. When *Vaſchus* had entred into the houſes foꝛſaken of *Pacra*, he ſent meſſengers to reconcile him, as he had doone the other kynges. At the firſt he refuſed to come: but after threatnynges he came, with thꝛee other kynges in his company. *Vaſchus* writeth, that he neuer ſawe a moꝛe monſtruous & defourmed creature, and that nature hath only geuen hym humane ſhape, and otherwyſe to bee woꝛſe then a bruite beaſt, with maners accoꝛdyng to the liniamentes of his body. He abuſed, with moſt abominable lechery, the daughters of foure kynges his boꝛderers, from whom he had taken them by violence. Of the fylthy behauiour of *Pacra*, of his crueltie, and iniures doone by hym, many of the other kyngs made greeuous complayntes to *Vaſchus*, as vnto a hygh Iudge, and iuſt reuenger: moſt humbly beſeechyng hym to ſee ſuche thynges punyſhed, foꝛaſmuche as they tooke hym foꝛ a man ſent of God foꝛ that purpoſe. Herebyppon *Vaſchus*, aſwell to wyn their good wylles, as alſo to ſhewe an example of terrour to ſuch as vſed lyke faſhions, commaunded that this monſtrous beaſt, with the other thꝛee kynges whiche were ſubiecte to hym, and of lyke conditions, ſhoulde be geuen foꝛ a pꝛay to his fyghtyng dogges, and their toꝛne carkaſes to bee burned. Of theſe dogges whiche they vſe in the warres, they tell marueylous thynges: foꝛ they ſay, that they runne vppon thinhabitauntes, armed after their maner, with noo leſſe fiercenes, then if they were Hartes oꝛ wylde Bores, if the Spaniardes doo but onely poynt towarde them with theyꝛ fyngers: Inſomuche that oftentymes they haue had no neede to dꝛyue their enemyes to flyght with ſwoꝛdes oꝛ arrowes, but haue doone

Kyng Pacra.

Naturall hatred of vice.

Foure kynges deuoured of dogges.

The vſe of dogges in warre againſt naked men.

the

the ſame only with dogges, placed in the foꝛefront of theyꝛ battayle, and lettyng them ſlyppe with theyꝛ watche wooꝛde and pꝛiuie token: whereupon the barbarians ſtrycken with feare, by reaſon of the cruell countenances of theyꝛ maſties, with theyꝛ deſperate boldeneſſe, and vnaccuſtomed howlyng and barkyng, haue diſparckled at the firſt onſette, and bꝛake theyꝛ array. Yet it chaunceth otherwyſe when they haue any conflycte agaynſt the Canibales, and the people of *Caramairi*: foꝛ theſe are fiercer and moꝛe warlyke men, alſo ſo expert archers, that they can moſte certaynely direct theyꝛ venemous arrowes agaynſt the dogges, with ſuche ſeleritie as yf they were thunderboltes, by reaſon whereof, they ſometymes kyll many of them. Thinhabitauntes of theſe mountaynes doo not keepe warre with bowes and arrowes, but vſe only *Macanis*, that is, certayne long and bꝛode ſwooꝛdes made of wood, alſo ſlynges, long pykes, and dartes, hardened at the endes with fyꝛe. Whyle kyng *Pacra* yet lyued, no man coulde knowe of hym, neyther by fayꝛe meanes noꝛ by fowle, where he had the golde whiche was founde in his houſe: foꝛ our men founde in his iewell houſe fiftie poundes weyght of golde. Beyng therfoꝛe demaunded where he had it, he aunſwered, that they which geathered the ſame in thoſe mountaynes in his fathers dayes, were all dead, and that ſence he was a chylde, he neuer eſteemed golde moꝛe then ſtones: Moꝛe then this they coulde not geat of hym. By this ſeuere punyſhment executed vpon *Pacra*, *Vaſchus* concyled vnto hym the myndes of all the other kynges of that pꝛouince, and by this meanes it came to paſſe, that when he ſent foꝛ the ſycke men whiche he left behynde hym with kyng *Chiapes*, another kyng whiche was in the mydde way, (whoſe name was *Bononiama*) enterteyned them gentelly, and gaue them twentie pounde weight of pure wꝛought golde, beſyde great plentie of vittualles. And not this onlye, but alſo accompanyed them hym ſelfe, vntyll he had bꝛought them ſafely from his pallace, into the dominion of *Pacra*, where takyng eche of them by the ryght handes, he delyuered them to *Vaſchus* hym ſelfe, as a faythfull pledge committed to his charge, and therewith ſpake to *Vaſchus* in this effecte: Moſte myghtie and valyaunt victourer, beholde, I heere delyuer vnto you, your

The Canibales are expert archers.

Swoordes of wood.

Fiftie pound weight of gold.

Kyng Bononiama, frend to the chriſtians.

Wꝛought gold.

The oration of kyng Bononiama.

your companions in suche plight as I receiued them: wishyng that I had ben aswell able to gyue them health, as they were hartyly welcome to suche poore entertaynement as I was able to shewe them. For the fauoure and gentelnesse whiche I haue founde both in you and them, he shall rewarde you whiche sendeth thunderyng and lyghtnyng to the destruction of myscheuous men, and of his clemencye gyueth vnto good men plentie of *Iucca* and *Maizium* in due season. As he spake these woordes, he lyfted vp his handes and eyes towarde the Sonne, whom they honour as God. Then he spake further to *Vaschus*, saying, In that you haue destroyed and slayne our violent and proude enemies, you haue brought peace and quietnesse to vs and our familyes, and bounde vs for euer to loue and obey you. You haue so ouercome and tamed wylde monsters, that we thynke you to bee sent from heauen, for the punyshement of euyll men, and defence of innocentes, that vnder the protection of your myghtie swoorde, we maye hereafter leade our lyues without feare, and with more quietnesse geue thankes to the geuer of all good thynges, for his mercie shewed vnto vs in this behalfe. When the interpretoure had tolde *Vaschus* that the kyng *Bononiana* had sayde these woordes, and suche lyke, *Vaschus* rendered hym lyke thankes for his humanitie declared towarde our men, and rewarded hym as he had doone other in whom he founde lyke gentilnesse. *Vaschus* wryteth, that he learned manye thynges of this kyng as concernyng the great rychesse of these regions, but that he would at this present speake nothing thereof, and rehearseth the same, as thinges lyke to haue good successe. What this implicate *Hiperbole*, or aduauncement meaneth, I do not well vnderstand, but he plainly seemeth hereby to promise many great thynges. And suerly it is to be thought, that accordyng to his hope, great riches may be loked for. For they came in maner into none of thinhabitaunts houses, but that they founde in them eyther brestplates or curettes of golde, or elles golden ouches, iewels, or garlandes to weare about their heades, neckes, or armes. I coniecture therfore thus by a similitude of our houses: If among vs any man of great power were moued with the desyre to haue great plentie of Iron, and would enter into Italie with a mayne force, as

The sparke of the lawe of nature, is the lawe written in the hartes of men.

Great plenty of golde.

A similitude for the proofe of plentye of golde.

dyd

dyd the Gothes in tyme past, what abundance of Iron shoulde he haue in theyr houses, whereas he shoulde fynde in one place a fryingpan, in another a caldron, here a triuet, and there a spitte, and these in manner in euery poore mans house, with suche other innumerable? whereby any man may coniecture, that iron is plentifully engendred in suche regions where they haue so great vse thereof. Our men also perceiued, that the inhabitauntes of these regions do no more esteeme golde then we do iron, nor yet so much, after they sawe to what vse iron serued vs. Thus much haue I thought good to write to your holynesse, of suche thynges as I haue geathered out of the letters of *Vaschus Nunnez*, and learned by woorde of mouth of suche as were his companions in these affayres. As we receiue them, so we geue them vnto you. Tyme, whiche reuealeth al secretes, shal hereafter minister larger argument of wrytyng. They coulde at this tyme do no great thyng in searchyng the golde mynes, forasmuche as of a hundred, fourescore, and tenne men, which *Vaschus* brought with him from *Dariena*, there remayned only threescore and ten, or at the most fourescore, whose ayde he nowe vsed in these daungerous aduentures, leauing euer the crased men behynde hym in the kynges houses all the way that he went, but they moste especially fel into sundry diseases, whiche came lately from *Hispaniola*, for they were not able to abyde such calamities, as to lyue only contented with the bread of those regions, and wylde hearbes, without salt, drynkyng none other then riuer water, and that oftentymes eyther lackyng, or vnholsome, where as before theyr stomackes had ben vsed to good meates. But the olde souldiers of *Dariena*, were hardened to abyde all sorowes, & exceedyng tollerable of labour, heate, hunger, & watchyng, insomuche that merily they make theyr boast, that they haue obserued a longer & sharper Lent then euer your holynesse enioyned: for they say, that for the space of foure whole yeeres, they ate none other then hearbes and fruites, except nowe and then perhappes fyshe, and very seldome flesshe: yea, and that sometyme for lacke of all these, they haue not abhorred from mangie dogges and fylthy toades, as we haue sayde before. The olde souldiers of *Dariena*, I call those whiche fyrste folowed the captaynes *Nicuesa* and *Fogeda*, to inhabite the

Chaunge of dyet is daungerous.

Old souldiers.

A long lent.

lande, of the whiche nowe fewe were lyuyng. But let vs nowe omyt theſe thynges, and returne to *Vaſchus*, the vyctourer of the mountaynes.

The thyrde booke of the thyrde Decade.

WHen *Vaſchus* had remained thyrtie dayes in the palace of kyng *Pacra*, concilyng vnto him the mindes of the inhabitauntes, and prouidyng thynges neceſſarie for his companions. As he departed frō thence, by the conduct of certayne of kyng *Teaocha* his men, and came to the banke of the riuer *Comogrus*, wherof the region and kyng thereof, are named by the ſame name, he found the ſydes of theſe mountaynes ſo rude and barren, that there was nothyng apt to be eaten, but wilde rootes, and certayne vnpleaſaunt fruites of trees. Two kynges beyng neere of blood, inhabited this vnfortunate region, which *Vaſchus* ouerpaſſed with all ſpeede, for feare of hunger. One of theſe poore kynges was named *Cotochus*, and the other *Ciuriza*. He tooke them both with him, to guyde hym the way, and diſmiſſed *Teaocha* his men with vituals and rewards. Thus for the ſpace of three dayes, he wandered through many deſart woods, craggy mountaynes, & muddie mariſhes, ful of ſuche quamyres, that men are oftentimes ſwalowed vp in them, if they loke not ỹ more warely to their feete: alſo through places not frequented with reſort of men, and ſuche as nature had not yet opened to theyr vſe, foraſmuche as the inhabitauntes haue ſeldome entercourſe betweene them, but only by ſundry incurſions, the one to ſpoyle and deſtroy the other: beyng otherwyſe contented to lyue onlye after the lawe of nature, without al worldly toyle for ſuperfluous pleaſures. Thus entryng at the length into the territorie of another kyng, whoſe name was *Bechebuea*, they founde all thynges voyde and in ſcilence: for the kyng and his ſubiectes were al fledde to the woods. When *Vaſchus* ſent meſſengers to fetche hym, he dyd not onlye at the fyrſt ſubmit hym ſelfe,

Comogrus.

Two poore kynges.

Deſartes.

selfe, but also promise his ayde, with all that he myght make: Protestyng furthermore, that he fledde not for feare that our men woulde doo them iniurie, but that he hyd hym selfe for verye shame and greefe of mynde, for that he was not able to receiue them honorablye, accordyng vnto theyr dignitie, because his store of vitayles was consumed. Yet in a token of obedience and frendeshyppe, he sent our men many vesselles of golde, desyring them to accepte them as the gifte of a frend, whose good wyll wanted not in greater thynges, if his abilitie were greater. By whiche woordes, the poore man seemed to insinuate that he had ben robbed, and otherwyse cruelly handled of his borderers, by reason whereof, our men were enforced to depart from thence more hungerly then they came. As they went forwarde therefore, they espyed certayne naked men commyng downe from a hyll towarde them. *Vaschus* commaunded his armye to stay, and sent his interpretours to them, to knowe what they woulde haue. Then one of them, to whom the other seemed to geue reuerence, spake in this effect.

Vessells of golde.

Our lorde and kyng *Chirisus*, greeteth you well, wyllyng vs to declare that he harde of your puissaunce and vertue, whereby you haue subdued euyll men, and reuenged the wronges doone to innocentes: For the whiche your noble factes and iustyce, as he doth honour your fame, so woulde he thynke hym selfe most happie, if he myght receiue you into his palace. But, forasmuch as his fortune hath ben so euyll (as he imputeth it) that beyng out of your way, you haue ouerpassed hym, he hath sent you this golde, in token of his good wyll and frendshyppe toward you. And with these woordes he deliuered to *Vaschus* thirtie dishes of pure golde, addyng hereunto, that when so euer it shoulde please hym to take the paynes to come to theyr kyng, he shoulde receaue greater gyftes. He declared further, that a kyng whiche was their borderer and mortall enimie, was very ryche in golde, and that in subduyng of hym, they shoulde both obtayne great rychesse, and also delyuer them from dayly vexations: whiche thyng myght easily be doone by their helpe, because they knewe the countrey. *Vaschus* put them in good comfort, and gaue them for rewarde certayne Iron axes, whiche they more esteemed then great heapes of gold. For they haue

kyng Chirisus sendeth Vaschus xxx. dysches of pure golde.

Axes of Iron more esteemed then any golde.

they haue lytle neede of golde, hauyng not the vse of pestiferous money: but he that may geat but one axe or hatchet, thynketh hym selfe richer then euer was *Crassus*. For euen these naked men, doo perceiue that an axe is necessarie for a thousande vses, and confesse that golde is desyred only for certayne vayne and effeminate pleasures, as a thyng whiche the lyfe of man may lacke without any inconuenience: for our gluttony and superfluous sumptuousnesse hath not yet corrupted them. By reason whereof, they take it for no shame to lacke coboordes of plate, whereas the pryde and wantonnesse of our tyme, doth in maner impute it to vs for ignominie, to be without that, whereof by nature we haue no neede. But theyr contentation with the benefites of nature, doth playnely declare, that men may leade a free and happye lyfe without tables, table clothes, carpets, napkyns, and towels, with such other innumerable, wherof they haue no vse, except perhaps the kynges furnysh theyr tables with a fewe golden vessels. But the common people dryue away hunger with a peece of theyr bread in the one hand, and a peece of broyled fyshe, or some kynde of fruite in the other hand: for they eate flesh but seldome. When theyr fyngers are imbrued with any ounctuous meates, they wype them eyther on the soles of theyr feete, or on theyr thyghes, ye and sometimes on the skyns of theyr priuie members, in the steede of a napkyn: and for this cause do they oftentymes washe themselues in the riuers. Our men therfore went forwarde laden with gold, but sore afflicted with hunger. Thus they came at the length to the dominion of kyng *Pocchorrosa*, who fled at their commyng. Here for the space of thyrtie dayes, they fylled their emptye bellies with bread of the rootes of *Maizium*. In the meane tyme, *Vaschus* sent for *Pocchorrosa*, who beyng allured with promises and fayre wordes, came and submmitted hym selfe, bryngyng with hym for a present fyfteene poundes weighe of wrought golde, and a fewe slaues: *Vaschus* rewarded hym as he had doone other before. When he was mynded to depart, he was aduertised, that he shoulde passe through the dominion of a certayne kyng, whose name was *Tumanama*. This is he whom the some of kyng *Comogrus* declared to be of so great power, and fearefull to all his borderers, and with whom many

Plenty of gold and scarcenesse of meate.

many of *Comogrus* familiars had ben captyue, but our men now perceyued that they measured his power by theyr owne: For theyr kynges are but gnattes (compared to Elephantes) in respect to the power & policie of our men. Our men were also ensourmed by such as dwelt neare about *Tumanama*, that his region was not beyond the mountaynes as they supposed, nor yet so ryche in golde as young *Comogrus* had declared: Yet consulted they of his subduing, whiche they thought they myght the easelier bryng to passe, because *Pocchorrosa* was his mortal enemie, who most gladly promised them his aduice and ayde herein. *Vaschus* therfore, leauyng his sicke men in the vyllage of *Pocchorrosa*, tooke with hym threescore of his most valyant souldiers, and declared vnto them, howe kyng *Tumanama* had often tymes spoken proude and threatnyng wordes agaynst them: Lykewyse that it nowe stood them in hand of necessitie to passe through his dominion, and that he thought it best to set vpon hym vnwares. The souldiers consented to his aduice, and exhorted hym to geue the aduenture, promising that they would folow hym, whyther soeuer he went. They determined therfore to goe two dayes iourney in one day, that *Tumanama*, not knowyng of theyr sodayne commyng, myght haue no leysure to assemble an army: and the thyng came to passe euen as they had deuised. For in the first watche of the nyght, our men, with the *Pocchorrosians*, inuaded the village and pallace of *Tumanama*, where they tooke hym prysoner, suspectyng nothyng lesse. He had with hym two young men, whiche he abused vnnaturally, also fourescore women, whiche he had taken violently from diuers kynges: lykewyse, a great number of his gentlemen & subiectes were taken straglyng in other vyllages neere about his pallace. For theyr houses are not adherent togeather as ours be, because they are oftentymes troubled with vehement whirlewyndes, by reason of the sodayne chaunges and motions of the ayer, caused by the influence of the planettes, in the equalitie of the day and nyght, beyng there in maner both of one length throughout all the yeere, forasmuch as they are neere vnto the Equinoctiall line, as we haue sayde before. Theyr houses are made of trees, couered, and after theyr maner thatched with the stalkes of certayne rough hearbes. To the pallace

A good policie.

The cause of vehement windes neere the Equinoctiall.

of *Tumanama*, was only one house adherent, and that euen as bygge as the pallace it selfe. Eyther of these houses were in length a hundred and twentye paces, and in breadth fiftie paces, as our men measured them. In these two houses the kyng was accustomed to muster his men, as often as he prepared an army. When *Tumanama* therfore was thus taken captiue, with all his Sardanapanicall familie, the *Pocchorrosians* bragged and threatened hym, beyng now bound, that he shoulde shortly be hanged: the other kynges also his borderers, reioyced at his mysfortune. Whereby our men parceyued that *Tumanama* was no lesse troublesome to his neyghbours, then was *Pacra* to the kynges of the south syde of the mountaynes. *Vaschus* also the better to please them, threatened hym greeuously, but in deede entended no euyll towards hym. He spake therfore sharply vnto hym with these woords: Thou shalt now suffer punishment thou cruell tyrant, for thy pryde and abhominations. Thou shalt knowe of what power the Christians are, whom thou hast so contemned, and threatned to drawe by the heare of theyr heades to the next ryuer, and there to drowne them, as thou hast oftentimes made thy vaunt among thy naked slaues: But thou thy selfe shalt fyrst feele that, whiche thou hast prepared for others. And heerewith commaunded hym to be taken vp: Neuertheless geuyng a pryuie token of pardon to them whiche layde handes on hym. Thus vnhappy *Tumanama*, fearyng and beleeuyng that *Vaschus* had ment in ernest as he commaunded, fell prostrate at his feete, and with teares desired pardon: Protesting that he neuer spake any suche woordes, but that perhaps his noble men in theyr drunkennesse had so abused theyr tongues, whiche he coulde not rule: For theyr wynes, although they be not made of grapes, yet are they of force to make men drunken. He declared furthermore, that the other kynges his borderers had of malice surmised such lyes of hym, enuying his fortune, because he was of greater power then they, most humbly desyryng *Vaschus*, that as he tooke hym to be a iust victourer, so to geue no credite vnto theyr vniust and malicious complayntes: Addyng heereunto, that if it woulde please hym to pardon hym, not hauyng offended, he woulde bryng hym great plenty of golde. Thus laying his ryght hande on his breast, he

Vaschus his Woordes to King Tumanama.

Oderunt quem metuunt.

he swore by the Sonne, that he euer loued and feared the Christians sence he fyrst heard of theyr fame and victoryes : especyally when he harde say, that they had *Michanas*, that is, swordes sharper then theyrs, and suche as cutte in peeces all thinges that come in theyr wayes . Then directyng his eyes towarde *Vaschus*, who had his swoorde in his hand, he spake thus, Who (except he were out of his witte) dare lyft vp his hande agaynst this swoorde of yours, wherewith you are able with one strooke to cleaue a man from the head to the nauell ? Let no man therfore persuade you (O most myghtye victourer) that euer such woordes proceeded out of my mouth . As *Tumanama* with trembling spake these woordes, therwith swalowyng downe the knot of death, *Vaschus* seemed by his teares to be moued to compassion , and speakyng to hym with chearfull countenance, commaunded hym to be loosed . This doone, he sent immediatly to his pallace for thyrtye poundes weyght of pure golde, artificyally wrought into sundry ouches, whiche his wyues and concubines vsed to weare . Also the thyrde daye folowyng, his noble men and gentlemen, sent threescore poundes weyght of gold for theyr fine and raunsome. *Tumanama* beyng demaunded where they had that gold: he answeared, that it was not geathered in his dominions, but that it was brought his auncestours from the riuer *Comogrus* towarde the south , But the *Pocchorrosians* and other his enemies sayde that he lyed, affirmyng that his kyngdome was ryche in golde. *Tumanama* on the contrary part, instantly protested that he neuer knewe any golde myne in all his dominions: yet denied not but that there hath sometymes been found certayne small graynes of golde, to the geathering whereof, he neuer had any regard, because they could not get it without great & long labour. While these things were doing, the sicke men which *Vaschus* had left in the village of *Pocchorrosa*, came to hym the .viii. day of the Calendes of January, in the yeere of Christ. M.D.XIII. bryngyng with them certayne labourers from the kynges of the south, with sundrye instrumentes to dygge the grounde, and geather gold. Thus passing ouer the day of the natiuitie of Christ without bodylye labour, vpon Saynt Stephens day he brought certayne miners to the syde of a hyll, not farre distant from the pallace

xxx. pounde weight of wrought gold.

Threescore poundes weight of gold.

They abhorre labour.

of *Tumanama*, where (as he sayth) he perceyued by the coloure of the earth, that it was lyke to bryng fooyth golde. When they had dygged a pyt, not past a hand breadth and a halfe, and syfted the earth thereof, they founde certayne small graynes of golde, no bygger then lintell seedes, amountyng to the weyght of twelue graynes, as they proued with theyr balances of assaie, before a notarie and wytnesse, that the better credite myght bee geuen thereto. Whereby they argued, that the rychenesse of that land was agreeable to the report of the borderers, although *Vaschus* coulde by no meanes cause *Tumanama* to confesse the same. They suppose that he nothyng esteemed so small a portion: but other say, that he denyed his countrey to be fruiteful of golde, least by reason thereof, the desyre of golde myght intyse our men to inhabyte his kyngdome, as in deede the seely kyng was a prophet in so thynkyng. For they chose that and the region of *Pocchorrosa* to inhabite, and determyned to buylde townes in them both, if it should so please the kyng of Castile: aswel that they myght be baptyng places and victailyng houses for suche as shoulde iourney towarde the south, as also that both the regions were fruiteful, and of good ground to beare fruites and trees. Intendyng nowe therefore to depart from thence, he tryed the earth by chaunce in an other place, where the colour of the ground, with certayne shynyng stones, seemed to be a token of golde, where causyng a small pyt to be dygged, litle beneath the vpper crust of the earth, he founde so muche golde, as weyghed the peece of golde whiche the Spaniardes call *Castellanum aureum*, and is commonly called *Pesus*, but not in one graine. Reioycyng at these tokens, in hope of great riches, he bad *Tumanama* to be of good comfort, promysyng hym that he woulde be his freende and defender, so that he troubled not any of the kynges, whiche were frendes to the Christians: He also perswaded hym to geather plentie of golde. Some say that he ledde away all *Tumanama* his women, and spoyled hym, least he shoulde rebell. Yet he delyuered his sonne to *Vaschus*, to be brought vp with our men, to learne theyr language and religion, that he myght heareafter the better vse his helpe, aswell in all thynges that he shoulde haue to doo with our men, as also more politikely rule, and obtayne the loue of his owne subiectes.

The coloure of the golden earth, and a triall of the same.

Tokens of great plentie of golde.

subiectes. *Vaschus* at this tyme fell into a vehement feuer, by reason of excesse of labour, immoderate watchyng, and hunger, insomuche that departyng from thence, he was fayne to be borne vpon mens backes in sheetes of gossampyne cotton: lykewyse also manye of his souldiers, which were soo weake, that they could nother go nor stande. To this purpose they vsed the helpe of thinhabitantes, who shewed them selues in all thynges wyllyng and obedient. Also some of them whiche were somwhat feeble, and not able to trauayle, although not greeuously sycke, were led by the armes, vntyll they came to the dominion of kyng *Comogrus*, a great frende to the Christians, of whom we haue largely made mention before. At *Vaschus* commyng thyther, he founde that the olde kyng was dead, and his sonne (whom we so praysed for his wysedome) to reigne in his steade, and that he was baptised by the name of Charles. The palace of this *Comogrus*, is situate at the foote of a stiepe hyll well cultured, hauyng toward the south a playne of twelue leagues in breadth, and very fruitefull. This playne they call *Zauana*. Beyond this, are the great and hygh mountaynes, whiche diuide the twaseas, whereof we haue spoken before. Out of the stiepe hylles, spryngeth the ryuer *Comogrus*, whiche runneth through the sayde playne to the hygh mountaynes, receauyng into his chanel by their valleys, all other ryuers, and so falleth into the south sea: It is distant from *Dariena*, about threescore and tenne leagues towarde the west. As our men therefore came to these parties, kyng *Comogrus* (otherwyse called Charles by his christian name) met them ioyfully, and entertayned them honorably, geuyng them their fyll of pleasaunt meates and drynkes: He gaue also to *Vaschus* twentie pounde weight of wrought golde. *Vaschus* recompensed hym with thynges whiche he esteemed muche more, as axes, and sundry kyndes of carpenters tooles: also a souldiours cloke, and a fayre shurt, wrought with needle woorke. By these gyftes, *Comogrus* thought hym selfe to be halfe a God among his borderers. *Vaschus* at his departyng from hence, earnestly charged *Comogrus*, and the other kynges, to remayne faythful and obedient to the christian kyng of Castile, if they desyred to lyue in peace and quietnesse, and that they shoulde hereafter more diligently

Feeblenesse of hunger and watchyng.

The riuer Comogrus.

gently apply them selues to the geatheryng of golde, to be sent to the great chrystian *Tiba* (that is) kyng: Declaryng further, that by this meanes, they shoulde both get them and their posteritie a patrone and defender agaynst their enimyes, and also obtayne great abundaunce of our thynges. These affayres thus happely atchiued, he went forward on his voyage to the palaice of kyng *Poncha*, where he found foure young men, which were come from *Dariena*, to certifie hym that there were certayne shyppes come from *Hispaniola* laden with vyttayles, and other necessaries. Wherfore takyng with hym twentie of his most lusty souldiers, he made hast to *Dariena*, with long iorneys: leauyng the residue behynd him, to folowe at theyr leysure. He writeth, that he came to *Dariena* the. xiiii. Ca. of Fe. An. 1514. The date of his letter is: From *Darena*, the. iiii. day of March. He writeth in the same letter, that he had many sore conflictes, & that he was yet neyther wounded, or lost any of his men in the battayle: and therefore in all his large letter, there is not one leafe without thankes geuyng to almyghty God for his delyuery, and preseruation from so many imminent peryls. He attempted no enterprise, or toke in hand any voyage, without thinuocation of God and his holy sayntes. Thus was *Vaschus Balboa* of a vyolent Goliath, turned into *Heliseus*, and from *Anteas* to *Hercules*, the conquerour of monsters. Beyng therefore thus turned from a rashe royster, to a polytike and discrete captayne, he was iudged woorthy to be aduaunced to great honour: By reason whereof, he was both receiued into the kynges fauour, and thereupon created the generall or Lieuetenaunt of the kynges army in those Regions. Thus muche haue I geathered both by the letters of certayne my faythfull frendes beyng in *Dariena*, and also by woorde of mouth of suche as came lately from thence. If your holynes desyre to knowe what I thynke herein, suerly, by suche thynges as I haue seene, I beleeue these thynges to be true, euen so thorder and agreeyng of *Vaschus* and his companions warrelyke letters, seeme to confirme the same. The Spanyarde therefore shall not neede hereafter, with vndermynyng the earth with intollerable labour, to breake the bones of our mother, and enter many myles into her bowels, and with innumerable daungers cut in sunder whole

Vaschus returneth to Dariena.

The good fortune of Vaschus.

Flatteryng fortune, looke his death in the booke of the Iland lately found

The earth is our generall mother.

whole mountaynes, to make away to the courte of infernal *Pluto*, to bryng from thence wycked gold, the seede of innumerable meschceues, without the whiche, notwithstandyng we may nowe scarcelye leade a happye lyfe, sith iniquitie hath so preuayled, and made vs slaues to that, whereof we are lordes by nature: The Spaniarde (I say) shall not neede with such trauayles and difficultie, to dygge farre into the earth for gold, but shall fynde it plentifully, in maner in the vpper crust of the earth, or in the sandes of ryuers dryed vp by the heat of sommer, onely washyng the earth softly from the same, and shall with lyke facilitie geather plentie of pearles. Certaynly the reuerent antiquitie (by all the Cosmographers assent) obteyned not so great a benefyte of nature, nor yet aspired to the knowledge hereof, bycause there came neuer man before out of our knowen worlde, to these vnknowen nations, at the least with a power of men by force of armes, in maner of conquest: wheras otherwyse nothyng can be gotton here, forasmuche as these nations are for the most part seuere defenders of theyr patrimonies, and cruell to straungers, in no condition admitting them otherwise then by conquest, especially the fierce Canibales or Caribes. For these wylie hunters of men, geue them selues to none other kynde of exercyse, but onely to manhuntyng, and tyllage, after theyr maner. At the commyng therefore of our men into theyr regions, they looke as surely to haue them fall into their snares, as if they were hartes or wylde boyes: and with no lesse confydence, licke their lippes secretly, in hope of their praye. If they get the vpper hande, they eate them greedyly: if they mystrust them selues to be the weaker part, they trust to theyr feete, and flee swifter then the wynde. Agayne, yf the matter be tryed on the water, aswel the women as the men can dyue and swymme, as though they had ben euer brought vp and fedde in the water. It is no marueyle therefore, yf the large tract of these regions haue ben hitherto vnknowen. But nowe sith it hath pleased God to discouer the same in our tyme, it shall become vs to shewe our naturall loue to mankynde, and duetie to God, to endeuour our selues to bryng them to ciuilitie and true religion, to thincrease of Christes flocke, to the confusion of Infidels and the Deuyll theyr father, who delyteth in our destruction, as he hath doone

The rout of infernal Pluto.

Manhunters.

The fiersnesse of the Canibales.

Our duty to god, and naturall loue to mankinde.

from

doone from the begynnyng. Bythe good succeſſe of theſe fyrſt fruites, our hope is that the Chriſtian religion ſhall ſtretch forth her armes very farre, whiche thyng ſhoulde the ſooner come to paſſe, yf all men to theyr power, eſpecially Chriſtian prynces (to whom it cheefely parteyneth) woulde put theyr handes to the plough of the lordes vineyarde: The harueſt ſurely is great, but the woorkemen are but fewe. As we haue ſayde at the begynnyng, your holyneſſe ſhal hereafter nourythe many myriades of broodes of chyckens vnder your wynges. But let vs nowe returne to ſpeake of *Beragua*, beyng the Weſt ſyde of *Vraba*, and firſt found by *Colonus* the Admiral, then vnfortunately gouerned by *Diego Nicueſa*, and nowe left in maner deſolate, with the other large regions of thoſe prouinces, brought from theyr wylde and beaſtly rudeneſſe, to ciuilitie and true religion.

The office of Chriſtian princes. The harueſt is great.

The fourth booke of the thyrde Decade.

I Was determined (moſte holy father) to haue proceeded no further herein, but ỹ one fyery ſparke, yet remaynyng in my minde, would not ſuffer me to ceaſſe. Whereas I haue therfore declared how *Beragua* was fyrſt founde by *Colonus*, me thynke I ſhould commit a haynous crime, if I ſhoulde defraud the man of the due commendations of his trauayles, of his cares and troubles, and finally of the daungers & peryls whiche he ſuſteyned in that nauigation. Therfore in the yeere of Chriſt 1502. in the. 6. day of the Ides of May, he hoyſed vp his ſayles, and departed from the Ilandes of *Gades*, with foure ſhyppes, of fyftie or threeſcore tunne a peece, with a hundred, threeſcore, and ten men, and came with proſperous wynde to the Ilandes of *Canariæ*, within fyue dayes folowyng. From thence, arryuyng the .16. day at the Ilande of *Dominica*, being the cheefe habitation of the Canibales, he ſailed from *Dominica* to *Hiſpaniola* in fiue other dayes. Thus within the ſpace of. 26. dayes, with proſperous wynde, and by the ſwyfte fall of the Ocean from the Eaſt to the Weſt, he ſayled from Spayne to *Hiſpaniola*, whiche

The fourth nauigation of Colonus the Admiral.

courſe

courſe is counted of the mariners, to be no leſſe then a thouſand and two hundred leagues. He taryed but a whyle in *Hiſpaniola*, whether it were wyllyngly, or that he were ſo admoniſhed of the Vice Roy. Directyng therefore his voyage from thence toward the weſt, leauyng the Ilandes of *Cuba* and *Iamaica* on his ryght hand towarde the north, he wryteth that he chaunced vpon an Ilande more ſouthwarde then *Iamaica*, whiche thinhabitantes call *Guanaſſa*, ſo flowryſhyng and fruitefull, that it might ſeeme an earthlye Paradyſe. Coaſtyng along by the ſhores of this Iland, he mette two of the Canoas, or boates of thoſe prouinces, whiche were drawne with two naked ſlaues agaynſt the ſtreame. In theſe boates was caryed a ruler of the Iland, with his wyfe and chyldren, all naked. The ſlaues ſeeyng our men a lande, made ſignes to them with proud countenaunce in theyr maiſters name, to ſtand out of the way, and threatned them, if they woulde not geue place. Their ſymplenes is ſuch, that they neyther feared the multitude, or power of our men, or the greatnes and ſtraungenes of our ſhyppes. They thought that our men woulde haue honoured theyr maiſter with lyke reuerence as they dyd. Our men had entelligence at the length, that this ruler was a great marchant, which came to the marte from other coaſtes of the Ilande: for they exercyſe bying and ſellyng by exchaunge with their confines. He had alſo with hym good ſtore of ſuche ware as they ſtand in neede of, or take pleaſure in: as laton belles, raſers, knyues, and hatchettes made of a certayne ſharpe yellowe bryght ſtone, with handles of a ſtrong kinde of wood: alſo many other neceſſary inſtrumentes, with kytchen ſtuffe, and veſſelles for all neceſſary vſes: lykewyſe ſheetes of goſſampine cotton, wrought of ſundrie colours. Our men toke hym pryſoner, with al his family, but *Colonus* commaunded hym to be looſed ſhortly after, and the greateſt part of his goodes to bee reſtored, to wynne his frendſhyppe. Beyng here inſtructed of a land lying further toward the ſouth, he tooke his voyage thyther. Therfore litle more then tenne myles diſtant from hence, he founde a large land, whiche thinhabitants called *Quiriquetana*, but he named it *Ciamba*. When he went a lande, and commaunded his chaplaine to ſay maſſe on the ſea bankes, a great confluence of the naked inhabitantes flocked thi-

From Spaine to Hiſpaniola a thouſande and two hundred leagues.

Simple people

A great marchaunt.

ther,

Gentle people. ther, symply and without feare, bringyng with them plenty of meate and freshe water, marueylyng at our men, as they had ben some straunge miracle. When they had presented theyr gifies, they went somwhat backward, and made lowe curtesy after theyr maner, bowyng their heades and bodyes reuerently. He recompensed their gentilnes, rewardyng them with other of our thynges, as counters, brasslettes, and garlands of glasse, and counterfet stones, lookyng glasses, needelles, and pynnes, with suche other trashe, whiche seemed vnto them pretious marchandize. In this great tracte, there are two regions, whereof the one is called *Tuia*, and the other *Maia*. He writeth, that all that lande is very fayre and holsome, by reason of the excellent temperatnesse of the ayre: And that it is inferiour to no land in fruitefull ground, beyng partly full of mountaynes, and partly large playnes: also replenyshed with many goodly trees, holsome hearbes, continuyng greene, and flourishyng al the whole yeere. It beareth also very many holly trees, and pyneaple trees. Also vii. kyndes of date trees, whereof some are fruitefull, and some baren. It bryngeth fourth likewyse of it selfe *Pelgoras*, and wilde vines, laden with grapes, euen in the wooddes among other trees. He sayth furthermore, that there is such abundaunce of other pleasunt and profitable fruites, that they passe not of vines. Of one of those kindes of date trees, they make certayne long and brode swoordes, and dartes. These regions beare also gossampyne trees here and there commonly in the woods. Lykewise *Mirobalanes* of sundry kyndes, as those which the phisitians call *Emblicos*, and *Chebulos*: *Maizium* also, *Iucca*, *Ages*, and *Battatas*, lyke vnto those which we haue sayd before to be founde in other regions in these coastes. The same nourysheth also Lions, Tygers, Hartes, Roes, Goates, and dyuers other beastes. Lykewyse sundry kyndes of byrdes and foules: among the whiche they keepe onely them to franke and feede, which are in colour, bygnes, and tast, muche lyke vnto our Pehennes. He sayth that thinhabitantes are of hygh and goodly stature, well lymmed and proportioned, both men and women, coueryng theyr priuy partes with fyne breeches of gossampyne cotton, wrought with diuers colours. And that they may seeme the more comely and beautifull (as they take it)

The regions of Tuia & Maia.

Seuen kyndes of date trees.

Wilde vines.

Mirobalanes.

Byrdes and foules.

People of goodly stature.

ſe) they paynt theyr bodies redde and blacke, with the iuice of certayne apples, whiche they plant in theyr gardens for the ſame purpoſe. Some of them paynt theyr whole bodyes, ſome but part, and other ſome drawe the portitures of hearbes, floures, and knottes, euery one as ſeemeth beſt to his owne phantaſie. Theyr language differeth vtterly, from theyrs of the Ilandes neere about them. From theſe regions, the waters of the ſea ran with as full a courſe towards the Weſt, as if it had byn the fall of a ſwift riuer. Neuertheleſſe he determined to ſearche the Eaſt partes of this land, reuoluyng in his minde that the regions of *Paria* & *Os draconis* with other coaſtes founde before towards the Eaſt, ſhoulde be neere there about, as in deede they were. Departyng therfore from the large region of *Quiriquetana*, the .xii. day of the calendes of September, when he had ſayled thyrtie leagues, he found a ryuer, within the mouth whereof he drewe freſhe water in the ſea: where alſo the ſhore was ſo cleane without rockes, that he founde grounde euery where, where he myght aptly caſt anker. He writeth, that the ſwift courſe of the *Ocean* was ſo behement and contrary, that in the ſpace of fourtie dayes, he coulde ſcarcely ſayle threeſcore and tenne leagues, and that with much difficultie, with many fetches and compaſſynges, fyndyng him ſelfe to be ſome tymes repulſed and dryuen farre backe by the violent courſe of the ſea, when he woulde haue taken lande towarde the euening, leaſte perhaps wanderyng in vnknowen coaſtes in the darckneſſe of the nyght, he myght be in daunger of ſhyppwracke. He writeth, that in the ſpace of eyght leagues, he found three great and fayre ryuers, vpon the banckes whereof there grewe reedes bygger then a mannes thygh. In theſe riuers was alſo great plenty of fyſhe, and great Tortoyſes: Lykewyſe in many places, multitudes of Crocodyles lying in the ſande, and panyng to take the heate of the ſonne: beſyde, dyuers other kyndes of beaſtes, wherunto he gaue no names. He ſayeth alſo, that the ſoyle of that lande is verye diuers and variable, beyng ſomewhere ſtonye and full of rough and craggie promontories, or poyntes reachyng into the ſea, and in other places as fruitefull as may be. They haue alſo diuers kynges and rulers. In ſome places they call a kyng *Cacicus*; in other places they

They poynt theyr bodyes.

The ſwyft courſe of the ſea from the Eaſt to the Weſt.

Freſhe water in the ſea.

Fayre ryuers. Great reedes.

Great Tortoyſes.

they call hym *Quebi*, and somewhere *Tiba*. Such as haue behaued them selues valyantlye in the warres agaynst theyr enemies, and haue theyr faces full of scarres, they call *Cupras*, and honour them as the antiquitie dyd the gods whiche they called *Heroes*, supposed to be the soules of suche men, as in theyr lyfe tyme excelled in vertue and noble actes. The common people they call *Chiui*, and a man, they call *Homem*. When they say in theyr language, take man, they say *Hoppa home*. After this, he came to an other ryuer apt to beare great shippes, before the mouth whereof, lye foure smal Ilandes, full of flowryshyng and fruitfull trees: these Ilandes he named *Quatuor tempora*. From hence, sayling toward the East for the space of .xiii. leagues, styl against the violent course of the water, he found twelue other small Ilandes, in the which, because he founde a new kind of fruites, much like vnto our Lemonds, he called them *Limonares*. Wanderyng yet further the same way for the space of .xii. leagues, he founde a great hauen entryng into the lande, after the maner of a gulfe, the space of three leagues, and in maner as brode, into ỹ which fel a great riuer. Here was *Nicuesa* lost afterward, when he sought *Beragua*, by reason whereof, they called it *Rio de los perdidos*, that is, the ryuer of the lost men. Thus *Colonus* the Admiral, yet further continuyng his course agaynst the furye of the sea, founde manye hygh mountaynes, and horrible valleys, with dyuers ryuers and hauens, from all the which (as he sayth) proceeded sweete sauours, greatly recreatyng and comfortyng nature: Insomuche that in al this long tract, there was not one of his men diseased, vntyll he came to a region whiche thinhabitantes call *Quicuris*, in the whiche is the hauen called *Cariai*, named *Mirobalanus* by the Admirall, bycause the *Mirobalane* trees are native in the regions thereabout. In this hauen of *Cariai*, there came about two hundred of thinhabitantes to the sea syde, with euerye of them three or foure dartes in theyr handes, yet of condition gentle yenough, and not refusyng straungers. Their commyng was for none other purpose, then to knowe what this newe nation meant, or what they brought with them. When our men had geuen them sygnes of peace, they came swymmyng to the shyppes, and desyred to barter with them by exchaunge. The Admiral, to allure

Quatuor tempora.

The region of Quicuri.

The hauen of Cariai or Mirobalanus

assure them to frendshyppe, geue them many of our thynges: But they refused them, suspecting some discept thereby, bycause he would not receiue theirs. They wrought all by sygnes: for one vnderstoode not a woord of the others language. Suche gyftes as were sent them, they left on the shore, and woulde take no part thereof. They are of suche ciuilitie and humanitie, that they esteeme it more honorable to geue, then to take. They sent our men two young women, beyng virgines, of commendable fauour, and goodly stature, sygnifying vnto them, that they myght take them away with them, if it were their pleasure. These women, after the maner of their countrey, were couered from their ancles somwhat aboue their priuye partes, with a certayne cloth made of gossampine cotton, but the men are all naked. The women vse to cut their heare: but the men let it growe on the hynder part of their heades, and cut it on the fore part. Their long heare, they bynde vp with fyllettes, and wynde it in sundry rowles, as our maydes are accustomed to do. The virgines whiche were sent to the Admirall, he decked in fayre apparell, and gaue them many gyftes, and sent them home agayne. But lykewyse all these rewardes and apparel they left vppon the shore, bycause our men had refused their giftes. Yet tooke he two men away with hym (and those very wyllyngly) that by learnyng the Spanyshe tongue, he myght afterward vse them for interpretours. He considered that the tractes of these coastes were not greatly troubled with vehement motions, or ouerflowynges of the sea, forasmuche as trees growe in the sea not farre from the shore, euen as they doo vppon the bankes of ryuers: the whiche thyng also other do affirme, whiche haue lately searched those coastes, declaryng that the sea ryseth and falleth but litle therabout. He sayth furthermore, that in the prospect of this land, there are trees engendred euen in the sea, which after that they are growen to any height, bend downe the toppes of theyr braunches into the ground: whiche embrasyng them, causeth other braunches to spring out of the same, and take roote in the earth, bryngyng foorth trees in theyr kynd successiuely, as dyd the fyrst root from whence they had theyr originall, as do also the settes of vines, when onely both the endes thereof are put into the grounde. Plinie in the twelfth

Ciuile and humane people

Trees growing in the sea after a strange sort.

Plinie.

booke of his natural hiſtorie maketh mention of ſuche trees, deſcribyng them to be on the lande, but not in the ſea. The Admiral wryteth alſo, that the lyke beaſtes are engendred in the coaſtes of *Cariai*, as in other prouinces of theſe regions, and ſuch as we haue ſpoken of before: Yet that there is one founde here in nature muche differyng from the other. This beaſt is of the bygneſſe of a great Monkey, but with a tayle much longer and bygger, it lyueth in the wooddes, and remoueth from tree to tree in this maner: Hangyng by the tayle vppon the braunche of a tree, and geatheryng ſtrength by ſwaying her body twyſe or thryſe to and fro, ſhe caſteth her ſelfe from branche to branche, and ſo from tree to tree, as though ſhe flewe. An archer of ours hurt one of them, who, perceiuyng her ſelfe to be wounded, leapt downe from the tree, and fiercely ſet on him whiche gaue her the wound, in ſo much that he was fayne to defend hym ſelfe with his ſwoorde. And thus by chaunce, cuttyng of one of her armes, he tooke her, and with much a do brought her to the ſhyppes, where within a while ſhe waxed tame. Whyle ſhe was thus kept and bounde with cheynes, certayne other of our hunters had chaſed a wylde Boze out of the maryſhes neere vnto the ſea ſyde: for hunger and deſyre of flelhe, cauſed them to take double pleaſure in huntyng. In this meane tyme other which remayned in the ſhyppes, goyng a lande to recreate them ſelues, tooke this Monkie with them, who, aſſoone as ſhe had eſpyed the Boze, ſet vp her bryſtels, and made towarde him. The Boze lykewyſe ſhooke his briſtels, and whet his teeth. The Monkie furiouſly inuaded the Boze, wrappyng her tayle about his body, & with her arme, reſerued of her victourer, helde him ſo faſt about the thzote, that he was ſuffocate. Theſe people of *Cariai*, vſe to dzie the dead bodyes of theyr princes vppon hurdels, and ſo reſerue them inuolued in the leaues of trees. As he went forwarde, about twentie leagues from *Cariai*, he founde a gulfe of ſuche largenes, that it contayned .xii. leagues in compaſſe, in the mouth of this gulfe was foure litle Ilandes, ſo neere togeather, that they made a ſafe hauen to enter into the gulfe: This gulfe is the hauen whiche we ſayde before to be called *Cerabaro* of thinhabitantes. But they haue nowe learned, that only the land of the one ſyde therof, lying on the ryght hande

A ſtrange kynd of Monkeys.

A Monkey fyghteth with a man.

A conflyct betwene a Monkey and a wyld Boze.

The bodyes of kynges dryed and reſerued.

at

at the enteryng of the gulfe, is called by that name, but that on the left fyde, is called *Aburema*. He fayth that all this gulfe is full of fruitefull Ilandes, wel replenished with goodly trees, and the grounde of the fea to be very cleane without rockes, and commodious to caft anker: lykewyfe the fea of the gulfe to haue great abundance of fyfhe, and the lande on both the fydes to bee inferyor to none in fruitfulnes. At his fyrft arryuyng, he efpyed two of thinhabitantes, hauyng cheynes about theyr neckes, made of ouches (whiche they call *Guauines*) of bafe golde, artificially wrought in the fourmes of Eagles, and Lions, with dyuers other beaftes, and foules. Of the two Cariaians whiche he brought with hym from *Cariai*, he was enfourmed that the regions of *Cerabaro* and *Aburema* were rych in golde, and that the people of *Cariai* haue al theyr gold from thence for exchaunge of other of theyr thynges. They tolde hym alfo, that in the fame regions there are fiue villages, not farre from the fea fyde, whofe inhabitants apply them felues onely to the geathering of gold. The names of thefe villages are thefe, *Chirara, Puren, Chitaza, Iureche, Atamea*. All the men of the prouince of *Cerabaro*, go naked, & are painted with diuers colours. They take great pleafure in wearing garlandes of floures, and crownes made of the clawes of Lions & Tygers. The women couer only theyr priuie partes with a fyllet of goffampine cotton. Departing from hence, & coafting ftyll by the fame fhore for the fpace of xviii. leagues, he came to another ryuer, where he efpyed about three hundred naked men in a company. When they fawe the fhyppes drawe neare the lande, they cryed out aloude, with cruel countenaunces, fhakyng theyr wooden fwoordes, and hurlyng dartes, takyng alfo water in theyr mouthes, and fpouting the fame agaynft our men: whereby they feemed to infinuate, that they woulde receiue no condition of peace, or haue ought to do with them. Here he commaunded certayne pieces of ordinaunce to be fhot of towarde them, yet fo to ouerfhoote them, that none myght be hurt thereby: For he euer determined to deale quietly & peaceably with thefe newe nations. At the noyfe therefore of the gunnes, and fyght of the fyre, they fel downe to the grounde, and defyred peace. Thus enteryng into further frendfhyp, they exchaunged theyr cheynes and ouches of

Crownes of beaftes clawes.

Spytefull people.

Gunnes make peace.

golde, for glasses, and haukes belles, and suche other marchandies. They vse drummes or tymbrels made of the shelles of certaine sea fyshes, wherewith they encorage them selues in the warres. In this tract are these seuen ryuers, *Acateba, Quareba, Zobroba, Aiaguitin, Vrida, Duribba, Beragua*, in all the whiche, golde is founde. They defende them selues agaynst rayne and heat with certayne great leaues of trees, in the steade of clokes. Departyng from hence, he searched the coastes of *Ebetere*, and *Embigar*, into the whiche fall the goodly ryuers of *Zoboran* and *Cubigar*: And here ceasseth the plentie and fruitfulnes of gold, in the tract of fiftie leagues, or there about. From hence, only three leagues distant, is the rocke whiche in the vnfortunat discourse of *Nicuesa* we sayde was called of our men *Pignonem*, but of thinhabitantes the Region is called *Vibba*. In this tract also, about syxe leagues from thence, is the hauen whiche *Colonus* called *Portus Bellus* (wherof we haue spoken before) in the region which thinhabitants cal *Xaguaguara*. This region is very populous, but they goe all naked. The kyng is paynted with blacke colours, but all the people with redde. The kyng and seuen of his noble men, had euery of them a litle plate of golde hangyng at theyr nosethyrlles, downe vnto theyr lyppes: and this they take for a comely ornament. The men inclose theyr priuie members in a shell, and the women couer theyrs with a fyllet of goslampine cotton, tyed about theyr loynes. In theyr gardens they norysshe a fruite muche lyke the nut of a pine tree, the which (as we haue sayde in an other place) groweth on a shrubbe, muche lyke vnto an hartichoke, but the fruite is much softer, and meate for a kyng: also certayne trees whiche beare gourdes, whereof we haue spoken before: this tree they call *Hibuero*. In these coastes they met sometymes with Crocodiles lying on the sandes, the whiche when they fled, or tooke the water, they left a very sweete sauoure behynde them, sweeter then muske or *Castoreum*. When I was sent ambassadoure for the catholyke kyng of Castile, to the Soltane of Babylon, or Alcayre in Egypt, thinhabitantes neere vnto the ryuer of *Nilus* tolde me the lyke of theyr female Crocodiles, affyrmyng furthermore, that the fat or shewet of them, is equall in sweetnes with the pleasaunt gummes of Arabie. But the Admirall was nowe at

Seuen golden ryuers

Note wher the plentie of gold endeth

Crocodiles of sweet sauour.

Egypt or Babylon in Egypt.

the

the length enforced of neceſſitie to depart from hence, aſwell for that he was no longer able to abyde the contrarie and violent courſe of the water, as alſo that his ſhyppes were dayly more and more putrified, and eaten through with certayne wormes, which are engendred of the warmeneſſe of the water in al thoſe tractes, neere vnto the Equinoctiall line. The Uenetians call theſe wormes *Biſſas*. The ſame are alſo engendred in two hauens of the citie of *Alexandria* in Egypt, and deſtroy the ſhyppes if they lye long at anker. They are a cubit in length, and ſomewhat more, not paſſing the quantitie of a fynger in bigneſſe. The Spanyſh mariner calleth this peſtilence *Broma*. *Colonus* therfore, whom before the great monſters of the ſea could not feare, now fearyng this *Broma*, being alſo ſore vexed with the contrary fall of the ſea, directed his courſe with the *Ocean* toward the weſt, and came firſt to the riuer *Hiebra*, diſtant only two leagues from the riuer of *Beragua*, becauſe that was cõmodious to harborowe great ſhyps. This region is named after the riuer, and is called *Beragua* the leſſe, becauſe both the riuers are in the dominion of the kyng whiche inhabiteth the region of *Beragua*. But what chaunced vnto hym in this voyage on the ryght hand and on the left, let vs now declare. While therfore *Colonus* the Admiral remayned yet in the riuer *Hiebra*, he ſent *Bartholomeus Colonus* his brother, and Liefetenaunt of *Hiſpaniola*, with the ſhyp boates, and threeſcore and eyght men, to the riuer of *Beragua*, where the kyng of the region, beyng naked, and paynted after the maner of the countrey, came towards them, with a great multitude of men waytyng on hym, but all vnarmed and without weapons, geuyng alſo ſignes of peace. When he approched neerer, and entred communication with our men, certayne of his gentlemen, neereſt about his perſon, remembryng the maieſtie of a kyng, and that it ſtoode not with his honour to bargayne ſtandyng, tooke a great ſtone out of the riuer, waſhyng and rubbing it very decently, and ſo put it vnder hym, with humble reuerence. The kyng thus ſittyng, ſeemed with ſignes and tokens, to inſinuate that it ſhould be lawful for our men to ſearch and viewe al the riuers within his dominion. Wherfore, the fyrſt day of the Ides of Febꝛuary, leauing his boates with certayne of his company, he went by land a foote, from the

Shyppes eaten with wormes.

Alexandria in Egypt.

Yowe the kyng of Beragua entertayned the Lieuetenant.

Their reuerẽce to their kyng.

bankes of *Beragua*, vntyll he came to the ryuer of *Duraba*, which he affirmeth to be rycher in gold then eyther *Hiebra* or *Beragua*: For gold is engendred in all ryuers of that land, insomuch that among the rootes of trees growing by the bankes of the ryuers, and among the stones left of the water, and also whereseuer they dygged a hole or pyt in the grounde, not past the deapth of a handefull and a halfe, they founde the earth, beyng taken out therof, myxte with golde: whereuppon he determyned to fasten his foote there, and to inhabit. Whiche thing the people of the countrey perceiuing, and smellyng what inconuenience and mischiefe myght thereof ensue to their countrey, if they should permit straungers to plant theyr inhabitations there, assembled a great armie, and with horrible outcryes assayled our men (who had now begun to build houses) so desperatly, that they were scarcely able for to abyde the fyrst brunt. These naked Barbarians at theyr fyrst approche, vsed onely slynges and dartes: but when they came neerer to hande strokes, they fought with theyr woodden swoordes, whiche they cal *Macha-nas*, as we haue sayde before. A man would not thynke what great malice and wrath was kyndled in theyr hartes agaynst our men, and with what desperate myndes they fought for the defence of theyr libertie, whiche they more esteeme then lyfe or riches: For they were now so voyde of al feare, and contemning death, that they neyther feared long bowes or crosse bowes, nor yet (which is moste to be marueyled) were any thyng discouraged at the terrible noyse of the gunnes, shotte of from the shyppes. They retyred once: but shortly after encreasyng theyr number, they returned more fiercely then at the fyrste. They would haue ben contented to haue receiued our men frendly as straungers, but not as inhabitours. The more instant that our men were to remayne, so much the greater multitude of borderers flocked togeather dayly, disturbyng them both nyght and day, sometymes on the one syde, and sometymes on the other. The shyppes lying at anker neare vnto the shore, warded them on the backe halfe: but at the length they were fayne to forsake this lande, and returne backe the same way by the whiche they came. Thus with much difficultie & daunger they came to the Iland of *Iamaica*, lying on the south side of *Hispaniola* & *Cuba*, with theyr

Slynges and dartes.

Libertie more esteemed then ryches.

The Spanyardes are dryuen to flyght.

theyr shyppes as full of holes as syues, and holes so eaten with wormes, as though they had been bored through with wymbles. The water entred so fast at the ryftes and holes, that yf they had not with the paynfull labour of theyr handes emptied the same as fast, they were lyke to haue perysshed: where as yet by this meanes they arryued at *Iamaica*, although in manner halfe dead. But theyr calamitie ceassed not heere: For as fast as theyr shyppes leaked, theyr strength diminished, so that they were no longer able to keepe them from sinkyng. By reason whereof, fallyng into the handes of the Barbarians, and inclosed without hope of departure, they led theyr lyues for the space of tenne monethes among the naked people, more miserablie then euer dyd *Achemenides* among the Giauntes, called *Ciclopes*, rather lyuyng, then beyng eyther contented or satisfied with the strange meates of that Ilande, and that onely at suche tymes as pleased the Barbarians to geue them part of theyrs. The deadly enmitie and malice whiche these barbarous kynges beare one agaynst an other, made greatly with our men: For at suche tymes as they attempted warre agaynst theyr borderers, they woulde sometymes geue our men part of theyr bread, to ayde them. But how miserable and wretched a thyng it is to liue onely with bread gotten by beggyng, your holynesse may easly coniecture: especially where al other accustomed foode is lackyng, as wyne, oyle, flesshe, butter, cheese, and mylke, wherwith the stomackes of our people of Europe haue euer been norished, euen from theyr cradels. Therfore as necessitie is subiect to no law: so doth it enforce men to attempt desperate aduentures, and those ỳ sooner, which by a certayne nobilitie of nature, do no further esteeme lyfe then it is ioyned with some felicitie. *Bartholomeus Colonus* therfore, intendyng rather to proue what God woulde do with hym and his companyons in these extremities, then any longer to abyde the same, commaunded *Diegus Mendez* his stewarde, with two guides of that Ilande, whom he had hyred with promises of great rewardes at theyr returne, to enter into one of theyr Canoas, and take theyr voyage to *Hispaniola*. Beyng thus tossed on the sea to and fro from rocke to rocke, by reason of the shortnesse and narownesse of the Canoa, they arryued at the length at the last corner of *Hispa-*

A miserable case.

Necessitie hath no lawe.

Howe farre life is to be esteemed

niola, beyng distant from *Iamaica* fourtie leagues. Here his guydes departyng from hym, returned agayne to *Colonus*, for the rewardes whiche he had promised them: but *Diegus Mendez* went on forward a foote, vntyll he came to the citie called *Sanctus Dominicus*, beyng the chiefe & head citie of the Ilande. The offycers and rulers of *Hispaniola*, beyng enfourmed of the matter, appoynted hym two shyppes, wherewith he returned to his maister and companions. As he founde them, so came they to *Hispaniola*, very feeble, and in maner naked. What chaunced of them afterwarde, I knowe not as yet. Let vs now therefore leaue these particulers, and speake somwhat more of generals. In al those tracts, whiche we sayd here before to haue been founde by *Colonus* the Admiral, both he hym selfe writeth, and all his companions of that voyage confesse, that the trees, hearbes, and fruites, are flowryshyng and greene all the whole yeere, and the ayre so temperate & holesome, that of al his companie there neuer fel one man sycke, nor yet were vexed eyther with extreme colde or heate, for the space of fyftie leagues, from the great hauen of *Cerabaro*, to the ryuers of *Hiebra* and *Beragua*. Thinhabitantes of *Cerabaro*, and the nations whiche are betwyxt that & the sayde ryuers, applie not them selues to the geatheryng of gold, but only at certayne tymes of the yeere, and are very expert and cunnyng herein, as are our myners of syluer and Iron. They knowe by long experience in what places golde is most abundantly engendred: as by the colour of the water of the ryuers, and such as fall from the mountaynes, and also by the colour of the earth and stones. They beleeue a certayne godly nature to be in golde, forasmuche as they neuer geather it, except they vse certayne religious expiations or purgyng, as to abstayne from women, and all kyndes of pleasures, and delicate meates and dyinkes, during all the tyme that their golden haruest lasteth. They suppose that men do naturally liue and die as other beastes do, and therfore honour none other thyng as God: Yet do they pray to the Sonne, and honour it when it ryseth. But let vs nowe speake of the mountains, and situation of these landes. From all the sea bankes of these regions, exceedyng great and hygh mountaynes are seene towarde the South, yet reaching by a continual tract from the East into the west,

Sanctus Dominicus.

Landes founde by Colonus.

Themperat regions and holsome ayre.

Expert miners

A godly nature in golde.

Golden haruest

Hygh and great mountaynes.

west, by reason wherof, I suppose that the two great seas (wherof I haue spoken largely before) are deuided with these mountaynes, as it were with bulwarkes, least they shoulde ioyne and repugne, as Italie diuideth the sea called *Tirrhenum*, from the sea Adriatike, whiche is nowe commonly called the gulfe of Uenice. For whiche way so euer they sayled from the poynt called *Promontorium S. Augustini* (whiche parteyneth to the Portugales, and prospecteth against the sea Atlantike) euen vnto *Vraba* and the hauen *Cerabaro*, and to the furthest landes founde hitherto westward, they had euer great mountaynes in syght, both neere hande, and also farre of, in all that long rase. These mountaynes were in some place smooth, pleasaunt, and fruitfull, full of goodly trees and hearbes, and somwhere hygh, rough, ful of rockes, and barren, as chaunceth in the famous mountayne of *Taurus* in *Asia*, and also in dyuers coastes of our mountaynes of *Apennini*, & such other of like bygnesse. The rydgies also of these mountaynes are diuided with goodly and fayre valleys. That part of the mountaynes which includeth the limittes of *Beragua*, is thought to be hygher then the cloudes, insomuch that (as they say) the tops of them can seldome be seene for the multitude of thicke cloudes whiche are beneath the same. *Colanus* the Admiral, the fyrst fynder of these regions, affirmeth that the toppes of the mountaines of *Beragua*, are more then fiftie myles in heyght. He sayth furthermore, that in the same region at the rootes of the mountaynes the way is open to the south sea, & compareth it as it were betwene Uenice and *Genua*, or *Ianua*, as the Genues wyl haue it called, whiche fable that theyr citie was builded of *Ianus*. He affirmeth also, that this land reacheth forth toward the south, and that from hence it taketh the begynning of breadth: lyke as from the Alpes, out of the narowe thygh of Italie, we see the large and mayne landes of Fraunce, Germanie, and Pannonie, to the Sarmatians and Scithians, euen vnto the mountaynes and rockes of Riphea, and the frosen sea, and embrase therewith, as with a continuall bonde, al Thracia, and Grecia, with all that is included within the promontorie or poynt of *Malea*, and *Hellespontus* southwarde, and the sea *Euxinus*, and the marysshes of *Meotis* in *Scithia* northwarde. The Admiral supposeth, that on the left hande, in saylyng towarde the west, this

lande

Tirrhenum is nowe called Tuscane.

The mountaynes of Beragua higher then the cloudes.

Mountaynes of fiftie myles heyght.

Janus otherwise called Japhet the son of Noe.

By this coniecture, the way shoulde open to Cathai by the Hiperboreans.

lande is ioyned to *India*, beyonde the ryuer of *Ganges*, and that on the ryght hande towarde the Nayth, it is extended to the frosen sea, beyonde the Hyperboreans and the Nayth pole: So that both the seas (that is to meane that south sea which we sayd to bee founde by *Vascbus*, and our Ocean) shoulde ioyne and meete in the corners of that lande, and that the waters of these seas do not onely inclose and compasse the same without diuision, as Europe is inclosed with the seas of *Hellespontus*, and *Tanais* with the frosen Ocean, and our sea of *Tyrrhenum* with the Spanyshe seas: But in my opinion, the vehement course of the Ocean toward the west, doth signifie the let that the sayd two seas shoulde not so ioyne togeather, but rather that that lande is adherent to the firme landes towarde the Nayth, as we haue sayde before. It shall suffice to haue sayde thus muche of the length hereof: Let vs nowe therefore speake somwhat of the breadth of the same. We haue made mention before howe the south sea is diuided by narowe limittes from our Ocean, as it was proued by therperience of *Vaschus Nunnez* and his companions, which fyrst made open the way thyther. But as dyuersly the mountaynes of our Alpes in Europe are somwhere narowe, and in some place brode: euen so, by the lyke prouidence of nature, this land in some part therof reacheth farre in breadth, and is in other places coarcted with narowe limittes from sea to sea, with valleys also in some places, whereby men may passe from the one syde to the other. Where we haue described the regions of *Vraba* and *Beragua* to be situate, these seas are diuided by small distaunce: Yet ought we to thynke the region, whiche the great ryuer of *Maragnonus* runneth through, to be very large, if we shall graunt *Maragnonum* to be a ryuer, and no sea, as the freshe waters of the same ought to perswade vs. For in suche narowe caues of the earth, there can be no swalowyng gulfes of suche bygnesse as to receiue or noorysshe so great abundance of water. The lyke is also to be supposed of the great ryuer of *Dabaiba*, whiche we sayde to be from the corner of the gulfe of *Vraba*, in some place of fourtie fathomes depth, and somwhere fiftie: also three myles in breadth, and so to fall into the sea. We must needes graunt, that the earth is brode there, by the which the ryuer passeth from the high mountaines of *Dabaiba*

Looke the nauigation of Cabote. Deca. iii. lib. vi.

The great riuer Maragnonus.

The great riuer Dabaiba, or sancti Johannes.

from

from the East, and not from the west. They say that this ryuer consisteth and taketh his encrease of foure other ryuers, fallyng from the mountaynes of *Dabaiba*. Our men call this ryuer *Flumen S. Iohannis*. They say also that from hence it falleth into the gulfe of *Vraba* by seuen mouthes, as dooth the ryuer of *Nilus* into the sea of Egypt: Lykewyse that in the same region of *Vraba*, there are in some places narowe streyghtes, not passing fyftene leagues, and the same to be sauage, and without any passage, by reason of dyuers marysshes and desolate wayes, whiche the Latines call *Lamas*, but the Spanyardes accordyng to theyr varietie call them *Tremedales*, *Trampales*, *Cenegales*, *Sumideros*, & *Zabondaderos*. But before we passe any further, it shall not be greatly from our purpose to declare from whence these mountaynes of *Dabaiba* haue theyr name, accordyng vnto thantiquities of thinhabitantes. They sayd that *Dabaiba* was a woman, of great magnanimitie and wysedome among theyr predecessours in olde tyme, whom in her lyfe all thinhabitantes of those prouinces dyd greatly reuerence, and beyng dead, gaue her diuine honour, and named the region after her name, beleeuyng that she sendeth thunder and lyghtnyng, to destroy the fruites of the earth yf she be angred, and to sende plentie if shee be well pleased. This superstition hath been persuaded them by a craftie kynde of men, vnder pretence of religion, to thintent that they myght enioy suche gyftes and offeringes as were brought to the place where she was honoured. This is sufficient for this purpose. They say furthermore, that the marysshes of the narowe land, whereof we haue spoken, bring forth great plentie of Crocodiles, Dragons, Battes, and Gnats, beyng very hurtfull. Therefore whensoeuer they take any iourney towarde the south, they go out of the way toward the mountaynes, and eschewe the regions neere vnto those perylous fennes or marysshes. Some thynke that there is a valley lying that way that the ryuer runneth, which our men cal *Rio de los perdidos*, that is, the ryuer of the lost men (so named by the misfortune whiche there befell to *Nicuesa* and his company) and not farre distant from the hauen *Cerabaro*, whiche diuideth those mountaines toward the south. But let vs now finishe this booke with a fewe other thinges woorthy to be noted. They say therefore,

The riuers haue theyr increase from the sprynges of the mountaynes. The ryuer of Nilus in Egypt.

Marysshes and desolate wayes.

A superstitious opinion of the originall of the mountaynes of Dabaiba.

Dragons and Crocodiles in the marysshes.

The hauen Cerabaro.

Twentie golden ryuers.

foꝛe, that on the ryght hand and left hande from *Dariena* there are twentye ryuers, in all the whiche great plentye of golde is found. Beyng demaunded what was the cause why they brought no greater aboundance of golde from thence: they answeared, that they lacked miners, and that the men whiche they tooke with them from Spayne thyther, were not accustomed to labour, but foꝛ the most part brought vp in the warres. This land seemeth also to promise many precious stones: Foꝛ beside those which I sayde to be founde neere vnto *Cariai* and *Sancta Martha*, one *Andreas Moralis*, a pilot (who had trauayled those coastes with *Iohannes de la Cossa* whyle he yet lyued) had a precious Diamonde, whiche he bought of a naked young man in the region of *Cumana*, in the prouince of *Paria*. This stone was as long as two ioyntes of a mans myddle fynger, and as byg as the fyrst ioynt of the thumbe, beyng also paynted on euery syde, consisting of eyght squares, perfectly fourmed by nature. They say that with this they made scarres in anuylles and hammers, and brake the teeth of fyles, the stone remayning vnperyshed. The young man of *Cumana*, woꝛe this stone about his necke among other ouches, & solde it to *Andreas Moralis* foꝛ fyue of our counterfect stones, made of glasse, of diuers colours, wherewith the ignoꝛant young man was greatly delyted: They found also certayne Topases on ỹ shoꝛe. But the estimation of golde was so farre entred into the heades of our men, that they had no regarde to stones. Also the most part of the Spanyardes, do laugh them to scoꝛne which vse to weare many stones, specially such as are common, iudging it to be an effeminate thyng, and moꝛe meete foꝛ women then men. The noble men onely, when they celebꝛate solemne mariages, oꝛ set fooꝛth any triumphes, weare cheynes of golde, beset with precious stones, and vse fayꝛe apparel of silke, embꝛodered with golde, intermixt with pearles and precious stones, and not at other tymes. They thynke it no lesse effeminate foꝛ men to smel of the sweete sauours of Arabie, and iudge hym to be infected with some kynde of fylthy lechery, in whom they smel the sauour of muske oꝛ *Castoreum*. But lyke as by one apple taken from a tree, we may perceiue the tree to be fruiteful, and by one fyshe taken in a ryuer, we may knowe that fyshe is ingendꝛed in the same: euen so, by a litle golde, and by one stone,

Precious stones.

A precious Diamond of exceeding bignes.

Topalis.

we

we ought to consyder that this lande bringeth foorth great plentie of golde, and precious stones. What they haue founde in the porte of *Sancta Martha*, in the region of *Cariai*, when the whole nauie passed thereby vnder the gouernaunce of *Petrus Arias* and his company, with certayne other of the kynges officers, I haue sufficiently declared in his place. To be short therefore, al thynges do so flourishe, growe, encrease, and prosper, that the last are euer better then the fyrst. And surely to declare my opinion herein, whatsoeuer hath heretofore ben discouered by the famous trauayles of *Saturnus* and *Hercules*, with suche other whom the antiquitie for their heroical factes honoured as gods, seemeth but litle and obscure, if it be compared to the Spanyardes victorious labours. Thus I bydde your holynesse farewell, desyryng you to certifie me howe you lyke these fyrst fruites of the *Ocean*, that beyng encouraged with your exhortations, I may the gladlyer, and with lesse tediousnesse, wryte suche thinges as shall chaunce hereafter.

The fyfth booke of the thyrde Decade.

ALL suche lyuyng creatures, as vnder the cyrcle of the moone bring foorth any thing, are accustomed by thinstincte of nature, as soone as they are delyuered of theyr byrth, eyther to close vp the matrice, or at the least to be quyet for a space: But our most fruitefull Ocean and newe worlde, engendreth and bryngeth foorth dayly new byrthes, wherby men of great wyt, and especially such as are studious of new and marueylous thynges, may haue somewhat at hand wherwith to feed theyr myndes. Yf your holynesse do aske to what purpose is all this: ye shal vnderstand, that I had scarsly finished the historie of such thynges as chaunced to *Vaschus Nunnez* and his companie in theyr voyage to the south sea, when sodenly there came new letters from *Petrus Arias* the new gouernour, whom the kyng had appoynted the yeere before with an army of men and a nauy of shyps to sayle to these newe landes. He signified by his letters,

letters, that he with his nauie and company arryued al safely. Furthermore, *Iohannes Cabedus* (whom your holinesse at the request of the most catholique kyng had created Bishop of that prouince of *Dariena*) and three other of the cheefe officers ioyned in commission to be his assystantes, as *Alfonsus de Ponte, Diegus Marques*, and *Iohannes de Tauira*, confyrmed the same letters, and subscribed them with theyr names. The nauigation therefore of *Petrus Arias*, was in this maner. The day before the Ides of Apryl, in the yeere of Christe. 1514. he hoysed vp his sayles, in the towne of saint *Lucar de Barrameda*, situate in the mouth of the ryuer *Bætis*, which the Spanyardes nowe cal *Guadalchebir*. The seuen Ilandes of *Canaria* are about foure hundred myles distant from the place where this riuer falleth into the sea. Some thynke that these are the Ilandes whiche the olde wryters dyd call the fortunate Ilandes: but other thynke the contrary. The name of these Ilandes are these. The two that appeare fyrst in sight, are named *Lanzelota* and *Fortisuentura*. On the backhalfe of these, lyeth *Magna Canaria* or *Grancanaria*. Beyond that is *Teuerif* and *Gomera* somewhat towarde the north from that. *Palma* and *Ferrea* lye behynde, as it were a bulwarke to al the other. *Petrus Arias* therfore, arriued at *Gomera* the eyght day after his departure, with a nauie of seuenteene shyps, & a thousand and fiue hundred men, although there were only a thousand and two hundred assigned hym by the kynges letters. It is sayd furthermore, that he left behynde hym more then two thousande, very pensiue and sighing that they also myght not be receiued, proferyng them selues to goe at theyr owne charges. He taryed xvi. dayes in *Gomera*, to the intent to make prouision of fuel and freshe water, but cheefely to repayre his shyppes, beyng sore broosed with tempestes, and especially the gouernours shyppe, which had lost the rudder: For these Ilandes are a commodious restyng place for al suche as intende to attempt any nauigations in that maine sea. Departing from hence in the Nones of May, he sawe no more lande vntyll the thyrde day of June, at the whiche he arryued at *Dominica* an Ilande of the *Canibales*, being distant from *Gomera* about eight hundred leagues. Here he remained foure dayes, makyng newe prouision of freshe water and fuell, duryng whiche tyme, he sawe no man, nor yet anye steppes

The nauigation of Petrus Arias.

The Ilande of Canarie.

Prouision of freshe water and fuel.

Reppes of men, but founde plenty of sea Crabbes and great Lisarts. From hence he sayled by the Ilandes of *Matinina* (otherwyse called *Madanino*) *Guadalupea* and *Galanta* (otherwyse called *Galana*) of al which we haue spoken in the fyrst Decade. He passed also thyough the sea of hearbes, or weedes, continuing a long tract: Yet neyther he, nor *Colonus* the Admiral (who fyrst found these Ilandes, and sayled thyough this sea of weedes) haue declared any reason how these weedes should come. Some thynke the sea to be verye muddye there, and that these weedes are engendred in the bottome thereof, and so beyng loosed, to ascende to the vppermost part of the water, as we see oftentymes chaunce in certayne standyng pooles, and sometymes also in great ryuers. Other suppose that they are not engendred there, but to be beaten from certayne rockes by the violence of the water in tempestes: And thus they leaue the matter in doubt. Neyther haue they yet any certayne experience whether they stycke fast and geue place to the shyppes, or wander loose vpon the water: But it is to be thought, that they are engendred there, for otherwyse they shoulde be dryuen togeather on heapes, by the impulsion of the shyppes, euen as a beasome geathereth the sweepynges of a house, and shoulde also let the course of the shyppes. The fourth day after that he departed from *Dominica*, the hyghe mountaynes couered with snowe (whereof we haue spoken in the seconde Decade) appeared vnto hym. They say that there the seas runne as swyftly towarde the west, as it were a ryuer fallyng from the toppes of hygh mountaynes, although they sayled not directly toward the west, but inclined somewhat to the south. From these mountaynes falleth the ryuer of *Gaira*, famous by the slaughter of our men, at such tyme as *Rodericus Colmenares* passed by those coastes, as we haue sayde before: Lykewyse many other fayre ryuers haue theyr original from the same mountaynes. This prouince (in the which is also the region of *Caramairi*) hath in it two notable hauens, of the which our men named the one *Carthago* or *Carthagena*, and thother *Sancta Martha*, the region wherof thinhabitants call *Saturma*. The port of *Sancta Martha*, is nerer to the mountaynes couered with snow, called *Montes Niuales*, for it is at the rootes of the same mountaines, but the hauen of *Carthago* is more westwarde,

The sea of hearbes.

These mountaines are called Montes Niuales, or Serra Nenata, Decade. ii. lib. i. and. ii.

Mountaynes couered with snowe.

westward, about fyftie leagues. He wryteth marueylous things of the hauen of *Sancta Martha*, whiche they also confirme that came lately from thence: Of the which young *Vesputius* is one, to whom *Americus Vesputius* his vncle (beyng a florentine borne) left the exact knowledge of the mariners facultie, as it were by inheritance after his death, for he was a very expert maister in the knowledge of his carde, his compasse, and the eleuation of the pole starre, with all that parteyneth therto. This young *Vesputius* was assigned by the kyng to be one of the maisters of the gouernours shyp, because he was cunnyng in iudging the degrees of the eleuation of the pole starre by the quadrant: For the charge of gouerning the rudder, was cheefly committed to one *Iohannes Serranus* a Spaniard, who had oftentymes ouerrunne those coastes. *Vesputius* is my very familier frende, and a wittie young man, in whose company I take great pleasure, and therfore vse hym oftentymes for my gheste. He hath also made many voyages into these coastes, and diligentlye noted suche thynges as he hath seene. *Petrus Arias* therfore wryteth, and he confirmeth the same, that thinhabitantes of these regions tooke theyr originall of the Caribbes or Canibales, as appeared by the desperat fyerснesse and crueltie which they oftentimes shewed to our men when they passed by theyr coastes. Suche stoutnesse and fortitude of mynde is naturallie engendred in these naked Barbariaus, that they feared not to assayle our whole nauy, and to forbyd them to come a lande. They fyght with venemous arowes, as we haue sayde before. Parceyuyng that our men contemned theyr threatnynges, they ranne furyously into the sea, euen vp to the breastes, nothyng fearyng eyther the bygnesse or multitude of our shyppes, but ceased not contynuallie, beyng thus in the water, to cast dartes, and to shoote theyr venemous arrowes as thycke as hayle: Insomuch that our men had byn in great daunger, yf they had not bin defended by the cages or pauisses of the shippes, and their targettes: Yet were two of them wounded, which died shortely after. But this conflict continued so sharp, that at the length our men were enforced to shoote of theyr greatest pieces of ordinaunce with hayleshoote: at the slaughter and terrible noyse wherof, the Barbarians beyng sore discomfited and shaken with feare, thynkyng

The stoutnes of the Barbariaus.

The Canibales fight in the water.

The vse of gunnes.

thynkyng the same to be thunder and lyghtnyng, turned theyr backes, and fledde amayne. They greatly feare thunder, because these regions are oftentimes vexed with thunder and lyghtnynges, by reason of the hyghe mountaynes, and neareneſſe of the same to the region of the ayre, wherein such fierie tempeſtes are engendred, whiche the philoſophers call *Meteora*. And albeit that our men had nowe dryuen theyr enimies to flyght, and sawe them diſparcled and out of order, yet doubted they, and were of diuers opinions, whether they ſhoulde purſue them, or not. On the one partie ſhame prycked them forwarde, and on the other ſyde, feare cauſed them to caſte manye perylles, eſpecially conſyderyng the venemous arrowes whiche theſe Barbarians can direct ſo certaynely. To depart from them with a drye foote (as ſayth the prouerbe) with ſo great a nauie, and ſuche an armye, they reputed it as a thyng greatly ſoundyng to theyr reproche and diſhonour. At the length therefore, ſhame ouercommyng feare, they purſued them, and came to land with theyr ſhip boates. The gouernour of the nauie, & alſo *Veſputius* do wryte, that the hauen is no leſſe then three leagues in compaſſe, beyng alſo ſafe without rockes, and the water therof ſo cleare, that a man may ſee pybble ſtones in the bottome twentie cubits deepe. They ſay lykewyſe, that there falleth two fayre ryuers of freſhe water into the hauen: but the ſame to be meeter to beare the Canoas of theſe prouinces, then any bygger veſſels. It is a delectable thyng to heare what they tel of the plentie and varietie, and alſo of the pleaſaunt taſt of the fyſhes, aſwell of theſe ryuers, as of the ſea therabout: By reaſon wherof they found here manye fyſher boates and nettes woonderfully wrought of the ſtalkes of certayne hearbes or weedes, dryed and tawed, and wreathed with cords of ſpunne goſſampyne cotton. For the people of *Caramairi*, *Gaira*, and *Saturma*, are very cunnyng in fiſheyng, and vſe to ſel fyſhe to theyr borderers, for exchaunge of ſuch thynges as they lacke. When our men had thus chaſed the Barbarians from the ſea coaſtes, and had now entred into theyr houſes, they aſſayled them with newe ſkyrmiſhes, eſpetially when they ſawe them fall to ſacking and ſpoylyng, and theyr wyues and chyldren taken captyue. Their houſeholde ſtuffe was made of great reedes, whiche growe on the ſea ban-

The generation of thunder and lyghtning.

Plentie of fyſh.

Cunning fyſhers.

kes, and the ſtalkes of certayne hearbes beaten, and afterwarde made harde. The flooꝛes thereof were ſtrewed with hearbes of

Tapiſtrie. ſundꝛy colours, and the walles hanged with a kynde of tapiſtry, artificially made of goſſampine cotton, and wꝛought with pictures of Lions, Tygers, and Eagles. The dooꝛes of theyꝛ houſes and chambers were full of dyuers kyndes of ſhelles, hangyng looſe by ſmall coꝛdes, that beyng ſhaken by the wynde, they myght make a certayne rattelyng, and alſo a whyſtelyng noyſe, by geatheryng the wynde in theyꝛ holowe places: foꝛ herein they haue great delyght, and impute this foꝛ a goodly oꝛnament. Dyuers haue ſhewed me many wonderfull thynges of

This is he whom Cardanus prayſeth. theſe regions, eſpecially one *Conzalus Fernandus Ouiedus*, beyng one of the magiſtrates appoynted in that office, which the Spanyardes call *Veedor*, who hath alſo hytherto entred further into the lande then any other. He affirmeth, that he chaunced vppon the fragment of a Saphire, bygger then the egge of a gooſe, and

Precious ſtones. The Smaradge is the true Hemerode. Another kynde of Amber is founde in Whales. that in certayne hylles where he trauayled with thirtie men, he founde many of the pꝛetious ſtones called Smaragdes, Calcidonnes, and Jaſpers, beſyde great peeces of Amber of the mountaines. He alſo, with diuers other, do affirme that in the houſes of ſome of the Canibales of theſe regions, they found the like pꝛecious ſtones, ſet in gold, and incloſed in tapſtry oꝛ arras (if it may ſo be called) wherewith they hang theyꝛ houſes. The ſame land

Golde and Braſile. Marchaſites are ſtoꝛyes of mettals, by the colours whereof, the kyndes of mettals are knowen. bꝛyngeth foꝛth alſo many woodes of bꝛaſile trees, and great plentie of golde, in ſo much that in maner in al places they founde on the ſea bankes, & on the ſhoꝛes, certayne marchaſites in token of golde. *Fernandus Ouiedus* declareth furthermoꝛe, that in a certayne region called *Zenu*, lying foureſcoꝛe and tenne myles from *Dariena* Eaſtwarde, they exerciſe a ſtraunge kynde of marchaundize: Foꝛ in the houſes of the inhabitantes, they founde great cheſtes and baſkets, made of the twigges and leaues of certayne trees apte foꝛ that purpoſe, being all ful of Graſſehoppers,

These Locuſtes burne the coꝛne with touching, and deuoure the reſidue. They are in India of three foote length. Grylles, Crabbes, oꝛ Creꝛyſhes, Snayles alſo, and Locuſtes, whiche deſtroye the fieldes of coꝛne, al well dꝛyed and ſalted. Beyng demaunded why they reſerued ſuche a multitude of theſe beaſtes: they anſweared, that they kept them to be ſolde to theyꝛ boꝛderers, whiche dwell further within the lande, and that foꝛ the exchange of theſe pꝛetious bꝛydes, and ſalted fyſhes, they re-

ceiued

ceiued of them certayne ſtrange thynges, wherein partly they take pleaſure, and partly vſe them for theyr neceſſary affayres. Theſe people dwell not togeather, but ſcattered here and there. Thinhabitantes of *Caramairi*, ſeeme to dwel in an earthly Paradiſe, theyr region is ſo fayre and fruitefull, without outragious heate, or ſharpe colde, with litle difference of the length of day and nyght throughout all the yeere. After that our men had thus ouerthrowen the Barbarians to flyght, they entred into a valley, of two leagues in breadth, and three in length, extendyng to certayne fruitefull mountaynes, full of graſſe, hearbes, and trees, at the rootes whereof, lye two other valleis towarde the ryght hande and the leaft, through eyther of the whiche runneth a fayre ryuer, wherof the ryuer of *Caira* is one, but vnto the other they haue yet geuen no name. In theſe valleys they found many fayre gardens, and pleaſaunt feeldes, watered with trenches, diſtributed in marueylous order, with no leſſe art then our Inſubrians and Hetrurians vſe to water their feeldes. Theyr common meate, is *Ages*, *Iucca*, *Maizium*, *Battata*, with ſuche other rootes and fruites of trees, and alſo ſuch fyſhe as they vſe in the Ilandes and other regions of theſe prouinces. They eate mans fleſhe but ſeldome, becauſe they meete not oftentymes with ſtrangers, except they goe forth of theyr one dominions with a mayne army, of purpoſe to hunt for men, when theyr rauenyng appetite prycketh them forwarde: For they abſtayne from them ſelues, and eate none but ſuche as they take in the warres, or otherwyſe by chaunce. But ſuerly it is a miſerable thyng to heare howe many myriades of men theſe fylthy and vnnaturall deuourers of mens fleſhe haue conſumed, and lefte thouſandes of moſt fayre and fruitefull Ilandes and regions deſolate without men: by reaſon whereof, our men founde ſo manye Ilandes, whiche for theyr fayrenes and fruitefulneſſe myght ſeeme to be certayne earthly Paradyſes, and yet were vtterly voyde of men. Hereby your holyneſſe may conſider howe pernitious a kynde of men this is. We haue ſayde before, that the Ilande named *Sancti Iohannis* (which thinhabitants cal *Burichena*) is next to *Hiſpaniola*. It is ſayde, that only the Canibales which dwel in the other Ilandes neere about this, as in the Ilande called *Hayhay* or *Sancta Crucis*, and in *Guadalupea* (otherwyſe called

Gardens.

Inſubryes are nowe called Lumbardes, and Hetruci, Tuſcans.

One myriade, is ten thouſande.

Queraqueiera, or *Carucuiera*) haue in our tyme violently taken out of the sayde Ilande of *Sancti Iohannis*, more then fyue thousande men to be eaten. But let it suffice thus muche to haue wandered by these monstrous bloodsuckers. We wyll nowe therfore speake somwhat of the rootes whereof they make theyr bread, forasmuche as the same shal hereafter be foode to Christian men, in steade of bread made of wheate, and in the steade of radyshe, with such other rootes as they haue been accustomed to eate in Europe. We haue oftentymes sayd before, that *Iucca* is a roote, whereof the best and most delicate bread is made, both in the firme lande of these regions, and also in the Ilandes: but howe it is tylled or husbanded, howe it groweth, and of how dyuers kyndes it is, I haue not yet declared. Therfore, when they entende to plant this *Iucca*, they make a hole in the earth, knee deepe, and rayse a heape of the earth taken out of the same, fashyonyng it lyke a square bedde, of niene foote breadth on euery syde, settyng twelue trunkes of these roots (beyng about a foote and a halfe long a peece) in euery of the sayd beddes, contaynyng three rootes of a syde, so layde a slope, that the endes of them ioyne in maner togeather in the center or middest of the bedde within the ground. Out of the ioyntes of the rootes, and spaces betwene the same, spryng the toppes and blades of newe rootes, whiche by litle and litle encreasyng, growe to the bygnes and length of a mans arme in the brawne, and oftentymes as bygge as the thygh: so that by the tyme of theyr full rypenes, in maner all the earth of the heape is conuerted into rootes. But they say that these rootes are not rype in lesse then a yeere and a halfe, and that the longer they are suffered to grow, euen vntyl two yeeres complete, they are so much the better, and more perfecte to make bread thereof. When they are taken fourth of the earth, they scrape them, and slyse them, with certayne sharpe stones, seruyng for the same purpose: And thus laying them betwene two great stones, or puttyng them in a sacke made of the stalkes of certaine tough hearbes and smal reedes, they presse them (as do we cheese or crabbes, to drawe out the iuice thereof) and so let them drye a daye before they eate them. The iuice or liquour they cast away: for (as we haue sayde) it is deadly poyson in the Ilandes. Yet is the iuice of

The manner of plantyng the roote Iucca.

Earth turned into rootes.

Howe bread is made of rootes

ſuche as growe in the firme land wholeſome, yf it be ſodde, as is the whey of our mylke. They ſay that there are many kyndes of this *Iucca*, wherof ſome are moze pleaſaunt and delicate then the other, and are therefoze reſerued as it were to make fyne Manchet foz the kynges owne table: But the Gentlemen eate of the meaner ſoꝛt, and the common people of the baſeſt. The fineſt they call *Cazabbi*, whiche they make rounde lyke cakes, in certayne preſſes, befoze they ſeethe it, oꝛ bake it. They ſay furthermoze, that there are lykewyſe diuers kyndes of the rootes of *Ages*, and *Battata*. But they vſe theſe rather as fruites, and dyſhes of ſeruice, then to make bread thereof, as we vſe Rapes, Radiſhes, Muſhromes, Nauies, Perſnippes, and ſuche lyke. In this caſe, they moſte eſpeciallye eſteeme the beſt kynde of *Battatas*, which in pleaſant taſte and tenderneſſe, farre exceedeth our Muſhromes. It ſhal ſuffiſe to haue ſayd thus much of rootes: We wyl nowe therefoze ſpeake of another kynde of their bread. We declared befoze, that they haue a kynde of grayne oꝛ Pulſe, muche lyke vnto *Panicum*, but with ſomewhat bygger graynes, which they beate into meale, vpon certaine great hollow ſtones, with the labour of theyꝛ handes, when they lacke *Iucca*, and of this is made the moze vulgar oꝛ common bread. It is ſowen thꝛyſe a yeere, ſo that the fruitefulneſſe of the ground may beare it, by reaſon of the equalitie of the tyme, whereof we haue ſpoken ſufficiently befoze. In theſe regions they founde alſo the grayne of *Maizium*, and ſundꝛy kyndes of fruites of trees, diligentlye planted, and wel huſbanded. The way betweene the regions of *Caramairi* and *Saturma*, is fayꝛe, bꝛoode, and ryght foꝛth. They founde here alſo ſundꝛy kyndes of water pottes made of earth, of diuers colours, in the whiche they both fetche and keepe freſhe water: Lykewyſe ſundꝛy kyndes of iugges, goderdes, dꝛynkyng cuppes, pottes, pannes, dyſhes, and platters, artificially made. When the gouernour had geuen commaundement by pꝛoclamation, that the inhabitauntes ſhould eyther obey the Chriſtian kyng, and embꝛace our religion, oꝛ els to depart out of theyꝛ countrey: they anſwered with venemous arrowes. In this ſkyrmyſhe, our men tooke ſome of them: whereof, clothyng the moſte parte in fayꝛe apparell, they ſent them againe to their owne company: But leading the reſidue to

Panicum is a grayne ſomewhat lyke mil: The Italians cal it Melica.

Ye meaneth the equal length of day and nyght, which is continually in regions vnder the Equinoctiall line.

the shyppes, to thintent to shewe them the power and magnificence of the chrystians, that they might declare the same to theyr companions, therby to wynne their fauour, they appareled them lykewyse, and sent them after theyr felowes. They affyrme, that in all the ryuers of these coast, they sawe great argumentes and tokens of golde. They founde here and there in their houses good store of Harts flesh, & Boyes flesshe, wherwith they fedde them selues delicately. They also haue great plentie of sundry kyndes of byrdes, and foules, whereof they bryng vp many in their houses, some for necessarye foode, and other for dayntie dyshes, as we do Hennes and Partriches. Our men hereby coniecture, that the ayre of these regions is very holsome, forasmuche as slepyng all nyght vnder the fyrmament on the bankes of the ryuers, none of them were at any tyme offended with reumes or headache, by reason of any noysome humour, or vapour proceedyng from the earth, ayre, or water. Our men furthermore founde there many great botomes of gossampyne cotton redy spunne, and fardelles of dyuers kyndes of fethers, whereof they make them selues crestes and plumes, after the maner of our men of armes: also certeine clokes, whiche they esteeme as most comely ornamentes. They founde lykewyse an innumerable multitude of bowes and arrowes. Thinhabitants also of these regions, in some places vse to burne the carkales of their princes when they are dead, and to reserue their bones buryed with spyces in certayne hylles. In other places, they onely dyre them, and imbawme them with spyces and sweete gummes, and so reserue them in sepulchers in theyr owne houses. Somewhere also, they dry them, spyce them, adourne them with precious iewelles, and ouches, and so reuerently place them in certayne tabernacles, made for the same purpose in theyr owne palaces. When our men had many of theyr tablets, bracelettes, collers, and suche other ouches (whiche they call *Guanines*) they founde them rather to be made of laton then of golde: whereby they suppose that they haue vsed to exchaunge theyr ware with some craftie straungers, whiche brought them those counterfeyt ouches, to defraude them of theyr golde: For euen our men perceiued not the decepte vntyll they came to the melting. Furthermore, certayne of our buyl-

Holsome ayre.

Gossampine Cotton. Fethers.

Bowes and arrowes.

Dead bodies reserued.

Gonzalus Quiredus sayeth, that they gylt maruaylously with the iuce of a certayne hearbe.

gred

ders wanderyng a litle way from the sea coastes, chaunced to fynde certayne peeces of white marble: whereby they thynke, that in tyme past some straungers haue come to those landes, whiche haue dygged marble out of the mountaynes, and lefte those fragmentes on the playne. There our men learned that the ryuer *Maragnonus* descendeth from the mountaynes couered with snowe, called *Montes Niuales*, or *Serra Nevata*, and the same to be encreased by many other ryuers, whiche fall into it throughout all the lowe and waterly regions, by the which it runneth with so long a tract from the sayd mountaynes into the sea, and this to be the cause of the greatnesse thereof. These thynges being thus brought to passe, the gouernour commaunded the trumpeter to blowe a retraite: Wheruppon they which were sent to lande (beyng fiue hundred in number) making a great shout for ioy of their victory, set them selues in order of battayle, and so keepyng their array, returned to the shyppes laden with spoyle of those prouinces, and shynyng in souldiers clokes of feathers, with fayre plumes and crestes of variable colours. In this meane tyme, hauyng repaired their shyppes, and furnyshed the same with all necessaries, they loosed anker the xvi day of the Calendes of July, directyng their course to the hauen of *Carthagena*, in the whiche voyage they destroyed and wasted certaine Ilandes of the Canibales, lying in the way, accordyng as they were commaunded by the kyng. But the swift course of the water deceiued both *Iohannes Sarranus* the chiefe Pilot of the gouernours shippe, and all the other, although they made their boste that they perfectly knewe the nature therof: For they affyrme, that in one night they were caried fourtie leagues beyond their estimation.

White marble.

The great riuer Maragnonus. This ioyneth with the mighty riuer called Flumen Amazonum, founde of late.

Clokes of fethers.

The swifte course of the water.

Fourtie leagues in one nyght.

The syxte booke of the thyrde Decade.

HEere must we somewhat digresse frō Cosmography, & make a philosophical discourse to searche the secrete causes of nature. For whereas they all affirme with one consent, that ỹ sea runneth there from the east to the west, as swiftely as it were a ryuer fallyng from hygh mountaynes, I thought it not

Sundry opinions why the sea runneth with so swyfte course from the East into the West.

good to let ſuche matter ſlyppe vntouched, The which whyle I conſyder, I am drawen into no ſmall ambiguitie and doubt, whyther thoſe waters haue theyr courſe, whiche flowe with ſo continuall a tract in circuite from the Eaſt, as though they fledde to the weſt, neuer to returne, and yet neyther the weſt thereby any whit the more fylled, nor the Eaſt emptied. If we ſhall ſay that they fall to theyr centre (as is the nature of heauie thynges) and aſſigne the Equinoctiall line to bee the centre (as ſome affyrme) what centre ſhall we appoynt to be able to receiue ſo great abundance of water? Or what circumference ſhall be founde wet? They whiche haue ſearched thoſe coaſtes, haue yet founde no lyke reaſon to be true. Many thynke that there ſhoulde bee certayne large ſtraightes or entrances in the corner of that great lande, whiche we deſcribed to be eyght tymes bygger then Italye, and the corner thereof to be full of gulfes, whereby they ſuppoſe that ſome ſtraygh-tes ſhoulde paſſe through the ſame, lying on the weſt ſyde of the Iſlande of *Cuba*, and that the ſayde ſtraygh tes ſhoulde ſwallowe vp thoſe waters, and ſo conuey the ſame into the weſt, and from thence agayne into our Eaſt Ocean, or north ſeas, as ſome thynke. Other wyll, that the gulfe of that great lande be cloſed vp, and the lande to reache farre towarde the north on the backe ſyde of *Cuba*, ſo that it embrace the north landes, whiche the froſen ſea encompaſſeth vnder the north pole, and that all the lande of thoſe coaſtes, ſhoulde ioyne togeather as one firme lande: Whereby they coniecture, that thoſe waters ſhoulde be turned about by the obiecte or reſiſtaunce of that land, ſo bendyng towarde the north, as we ſee the waters turned about in the crooked bankes of certayne ryuers. But this agreeth not in all poyntes. For they alſo whiche haue ſearched the froſen ſea, and ſayled from thence into the weſt, do lykewyſe affyrme, that thoſe north ſeas flowe continually towarde the weſt, although nothyng ſo ſwiftely. Theſe north ſeas haue ben ſearched by one Sebaſtian Cabot, a Venetian borne, whom beyng yet but in maner an infant, his parentes caryed with them into Englande, hauyng occaſion to reſort thither for trade of marchandize, as is the maner of the Venetians, to leaue no part of the worlde vnſearched to obtaine rycheſſe. He therfore furniſhed

two

The Equinoctial line.

Why al waters moue towarde the ſouth or Equinoctial, read *Cardanus de ſubtilit liber ii. de elementis.*

Straygbtes.

As by the ſtraygbt of Magelanus

The north landes.

The froſen ſea.

Sebaſtian Cabot.

two shyppes in England at his owne charges: And fyrst with thyee hundreth men, directed his course so farre towarde the north pole, that euen in the moneth of July he founde monstrous heapes of Isse swymming on the sea, and in maner continuall day lyght: Yet sawe he the lande in that tract free from Isse, whiche had ben moulten by heat of the Sonne. Thus seeyng suche heapes of Isse before hym, he was enforced to turne his sayles, and folowe the west, so coastyng styll by the shore, that he was thereby brought so farre into the south, by reason of the lande bendyng so muche southwarde, that it was there almost equall in latitude with the sea called *Fretum Herculeum*, hauyng the north pole eleuate in maner in the same degree. He sayled lykewyse in this tract so farre towarde the west, that he had the Iland of *Cuba* on his left hande, in maner in the same degree of longitude. As he traueyled by the coastes of this great lande (whiche he named *Baccallaos*) he sayth, that he founde the lyke course of the waters toward the west, but the same to runne more softly and gentelly, then the swifte waters whiche the Spanyardes founde in their nauigations southwarde. Wherefore, it is not onely more lyke to be true, but ought also of necessitie to be concluded, that betwene both the landes hitherto vnknowen, there shoulde be certayne great open places, wherby the waters should thus continually passe from the East into the west: whiche waters I suppose to be dryuen about the globe of the earth by the vncessaunt mouyng and impulsion of the heauens, and not to be swalowed vp and cast out agayne by the breathyng of *Demogorgon*, as some haue imagined, bycause they see the seas by increase & decrease, to flow & reflow. Sebastian *Cabot* hym selfe, named those landes *Baccallaos*, bycause that in the seas therabout he founde so great multitudes of certayne bygge fyshes, muche like vnto Tunnies (which thinhabitants cal *Baccallaos*) that they sometymes stayed his shyppes. He founde also the people of those regions couered with beastes skynnes: yet not without the vse of reason. He also sayth there is great plentie of Beares in those regions, whiche vse to eate fyshe: For plungeyng themselues into the water where they perceiue a multitude of these fyshes to lye, they fasten theyr clawes in theyr scales, and so drawe them to lande, and eate them: So that (as he sayth) the

The voyage of Sebastian Cabot from Englande to the frosen sea.

Demogorgon is the spirite of the earth.

People couered with beastes skynnes.

the Beares beyng thus satisfied with fyshe, are not noysome to men. He declareth further, that in many places of these regions, he sawe great plentie of laton among the inhabitauntes. *Cabot* is my very frend, whom I vse familierlye, and delyte to haue hym sometymes keepe me company in my owne house: For beyng called out of Englande by the commaundement of the catholique kyng of Castile, after the death of Henry kyng of Englande, the seuenth of that name, he was made one of our counsayle and assistaunce as touching the affayres of the new Indies, lookyng dayly for shyppes to be furnished for hym to discouer this hyd secret of nature. This voyage is appoynted to be begunne in Marche in the yeere next folowyng, beyng the yeere of Christ. 1516. What shall succeede, your holynesse shalbe aduertysed by my letters, yf God graunt me lyfe. Some of the Spaniardes denye that Cabot was the fyrst fynder of the lande of *Bacallaos*, and affirme that he went not so farre westewarde: But it shall suffice to haue sayde thus muche of the gulfes and strayghtes, and of Sebastian Cabot. Let vs nowe therfore returne to the Spaniardes. At this tyme, they let passe the hauen of *Carthago* vntouched, with al the Ilandes of the Canibales there aboute, whiche they named *Insulas Sancti Bernardi*, leauyng also behind theyr backes, al the region of *Caramairi*. Heere by reason of a sodayne tempest, they were caste vpon the Ilande *Fortis*, beyng about fyftie leagues distant from the enteraunce of the gulfe of *Vraba*. In this Iland, they founde in the houses of thinhabitantes, many baskettes made of certayne great sea reedes, ful of salt. For this Iland hath in it many goodly salt bayes, by reason wherof they haue great plentie of salte, which they sell to other nations for such thyngs as they stande in neede of. Not farre from hence, a great Curlew, as bygge as a Stoyke, came flying to the gouernours shyp, and suffered her selfe to be easely taken, whiche beyng carryed aboute among all the shyppes of the nauie, dyed shortly after: They sawe also a great multitude of the same kynde of foules on the shore a farre of. The gouernours shyppe, whiche we sayd to haue lost the rudder, beyng now sore broosed, and in maner vnprofytable, they left behynde, to folowe at leasure. The nauie arryued at *Dariena* the twelfth day of the Calendes of July, and the gouernours

The Ilandes of the Canybales.

The Ilande Fortis.

Salte.

A strange thyng

uernours shyppe (beyng voyde of men) was dryuen alande in the same coastes within foure dayes after . The Spanyardes whiche now inhabited *Dariena*, with theyr Captayne and Lieuetenaunt *Vaschus Nunnez Balboa* (of whom we haue largelye made mention before) beyng certifyed of the arriuall of *Petrus Arias* and his companye, went fourth three myles to meete him, and receiued him honorably, and religiously with the psalme *Te deum laudamus*, geuyng thankes to god by whose safe conduct they were brought so prosperously thyther to al theyr comfortes. They receyued them gladly into theyr houses builded after the maner of those prouinces. I may wel cal these regions, Prouinces, *a Procul Victis* (that is) such as are ouercome farre of, forasmuche as our men do now inhabite the same, al the barbarous kynges and Idolatours beyng ejected. They entertayned them with such cheare as they were able to make them: as with the fruites of those regions, and new bread, both made of rootes, and the graine *Maizium*. Other delicates to make vp the feast, were of theyr own store, which they brought with them in theyr ships, as poudred flesh, salted fyshe, and bread made of wheat : for they brought with them many barrelles of wheate meale for the same purpose. Heere may your holynesse, not without iust cause of admiration, beholde a kynges nauye and great multitude of Christians, inhabiting not only the regions situate vnder the cycle of heauen, called *Tropicus Cancri*, but also in maner vnder the Equinoctiall line, contrary to the opinion of the olde wryters, a fewe excepted. But after that they are nowe mette together, let vs further declare what they determined to do. Therfore, the day after that ỹ naule arriued, there assembled a company of Spanyards thinhabitours of *Dariena*, to the nũber of foure hundred and fiftie men. *Petrus Arias* the gouernour of the nauy, and his companye, conferred with them both priuilie and openlye of certayne articles, whereof it was the kynges pleasure he shoulde enquire : and most especially as concernyng suche thynges wherof *Vaschus* the fyrst fynder and Admirall of the South sea, made mention in his large letter sent from *Dariena* to Spayne. In this inquisition they founde al thyngs to be true whereof *Vaschus* had certified the king by his letters, and thereupon concluded, that in the dominions of *Comogra*, *Pocchorrosa* & *Tumanama*,

How Vaschus receiued the newe gouernour.

Habitable regions vnder the Equinoctiall line.

Where the new gouernour planteth his habitation.

Tumanama at the assignement of *Vaschus*, certayne fortresses shoulde be erected forthwith, to thintent there to plant theyr colonie or habitation. To the better accomplyshment hereof, they sent immediatly one *Iohannes Aiora*, a noble young gentleman of *Corduba*, and vnder Lieuetenant, with foure hundred men, and foure Carauels, and one other lytle shyp. Thus departyng, he sayled fyrst directly to the hauen of *Comogrus*, distant from *Dariena* about twentie and fyue leagues, as they wryte in theyr last letters. From hence, he is appoynted to send a hundred and fyftie of his foure hundred, towarde the South, by a newe and ryghter way founde of late, by the whiche (as they say) it is not past twentie and syxe leagues from the pallace of kyng *Comogrus* to the entraunce of the gulfe of *Sancti Michaelis*. The residue of the foure hundred shal remayne there, to be an ayde and succour to al such as shall iorney to and fro. Those hundred and fyftie whiche are assigned to go southward, take with them for interpretours certain of our men, which had learned the soothern language of the bondmen which were geuen to *Vaschus* when he ouerranne those regions, and also certayne of the bondemen themselues which had nowe learned the Spanyshe tongue. They say that the hauen of *Pocchorrosa* is only seuen leagues distant from the hauen of *Comogrus*. In *Pocchorrosa* he is assigned to leaue fyftie men, with the lightest ship, which may be a passinger betwene them: that like as we vse post horses by land, so may they by this currant shyp, in short space certifie the Lieuetenaunt and thinhabitours of *Dariena* of such thynges as shal chaunce. They entend also to build houses in the region of *Tumanama*. The pallace of kyng *Tumanama*, is distant frō *Pocchorrosa* about twenty leagues. Of these foure hundred men, beyng of the olde souldiers of *Dariena*, & men of good experience, fyftie were appointed to be as it were Decurians, to guide and conduct the new men from place to place to do theyr affayres. When they had thus set all thynges in order, they thought it good to aduertyse the kyng hereof, and therwith to certyfye hym, that in those prouinces there is a kyng named *Dabaiba*, whose dominion is verye ryche in gold: but the same to be yet vntouched by reason of his great power. His kyngdome ioyneth to the second great ryuer, named *Dabaiba* after his name, whiche falleth into the sea

A passinger shyp.

Decurians are officers deuided into tennes &c.

The gold mines of Dabaiba.

sea out of the corner of the gulfe of *Vraba*, as we haue largely declared before. The common report is, that all the land of his dominions is ryche in gold. The pallace of kyng *Dabaiba* is fyftie leagues distant from *Dariena*. The inhabitantes saye, that from the pallace, the gold mynes reache to the borders on euery syde. Albeit our men haue also golde mynes not to be contemned, euen within three leagues of *Dariena*, in the whiche they geather golde in many places at this present: Yet do they affirme greater plentye to be in the mynes of *Dabaiba*. In the bookes of our fyrst fruites, written to your holynesse, we made mention of this *Dabaiba*, wherein our men were deceyued, and mystooke the matter: For where they founde the fyshermen of kyng *Dabaiba* in the marishes, they thought his region had been there also. They determined therfore to send to kyng *Dabaiba*, three hundred choyse young men, to be chosen out of the whole army, as most apt to the warres, and well furnyshed with all kyndes of armour and artyllerie, to the intent to go vnto hym, and wyll hym, eyther frendly and peaceably to permit them to inhabite part of his kyngdome, with the fruition of the golde mynes, or els to byd hym battayle, and dryue hym out of his countrey. In theyr letters, they oftentymes repeate this for an argument of great ryches to come, that they in a maner dygged the ground in no place, but found the earth myxt with sparkes and small graynes of golde. They haue also aduertised the kyng, that it shalbe commodious to place inhabitours in the hauen of *Sancta Martha*, in the region of *Saturma*, that it may be a place of refuge for them that sayle from the Ilande of *Dominica*, from the whiche (as they saye) it is but foure or fyue dayes saylyng to that hauen of the region of *Saturma*, and from the hauen, but three dayes saylyng to *Dariena*. But this is to be vnderstoode in goyng, and not in returnyng. For the returnyng from thence is so laborious and difficulte, by reason of the contrary course of the water, that they seeme as it were to ascende hyghe mountaynes, and stryue agaynste the power of *Neptunus*. This swyft course of the sea towards the west, is not so violent to them whiche returne to Spayne from the Ilandes of *Hispaniola* and *Cuba*, although they also do labour agaynst the fall of the Ocean: The cause whereof is, that the sea is

An errour.

The region of Saturma.

The Ilande of Dominica.

Difficult saylyng agaynst the course of the sea.

heere

heere very large, so that the waters haue theyr full scope. But in the tract of *Paria*, the waters are constrayned togeather by the bendyng sydes of that great land, and by the multitude of Ilandes lying agaynst it, as the lyke is seene in the strayghtes or narrow seas of Scicile, where the violent course of the waters cause the daungerous places of *Scilla* and *Caribdis* by reason of those narrowe seas which conteyne *Ionium*, *Libicum*, and *Tirrhenum*. *Colonus* the fyrste fynder of these regions, hath left in wryting, that saylyng from the Ilande of *Guanassa*, and the prouinces of *Iaia*, *Maia*, and *Cerabaro*, beyng regions of the west marches of *Beragua*, he founde the course of the water so vehement and furious agaynst the foreparte of his shyp, whyle he sayled from those coastes towarde the East, that he coulde at no time touche the grounde with his soundyng plummet, but that the contrary violence of the water woulde beare it vp from the bottome: He affyrmeth also, that he coulde neuer in one whole day, with a meetely good wynde, wynne one myle of the course of the water. And this is the cause why they are oftentymes enforced to sayle fyrst by the Ilandes of *Cuba* and *Hispaniola*, and so into the mayne sea towarde the North, when they returne to Spayne, that the North wyndes may further theyr voyage, whiche they can not bryng to passe by a direct course: But of the motions of the Ocean sea to and fro, this shal suffise. Let vs nowe therefore rehearse what they wryte of *Dariena*, and of theyr habitation there, whiche they cal *Santta Maria Antiqua*, planted on the sea bankes of *Dariena*. The situation of the place, hath no natural munition or defence, and the ayre is more pestiferous then in *Sardus*. The Spanishe inhabitours are al pale and yelowe, lyke vnto them whiche haue the yelowe iaundies: which neuertheless commeth not of the nature of the region, as it is situate vnder the heauen. For in many regions beyng vnder the selfe same degree of latitude, hauing the pole of the same eleuation, they fynd hollsome & temperate ayre, in such places where as the earth bryngeth foorth fayre sprynges of water, or where hollsome riuers runne by bankes of pure earth without mudde: but most especially where they inhabite the sides of the hyls, and not the valleys. But that habitation whiche is on the bankes of the ryuer of *Dariena*, is situate in a deepe valley, and enuironed on

The daungerous straightes of Scylla and Charibdis.

The vehement course of the sea from the east to the west.

on euery syde with hygh hylles: By reason wherof, it receyueth the Sonne beames at noonetyde dyrectly parpendicular ouer theyr heades, and are therefore sore vexed by reflection of the beames, both before, behynde, and from the sydes. For it is the reflection of the sonne beames whiche causeth feruent heate, and not theyr accesse or neerenesse to the earth, forasmuche as they are not passyble in themselues, as doth manifestly appeare by the snowe lying contynually vnmoulten vpon certayne hygh mountaynes, as your holynesse knoweth ryght well. The sonne beames therfore fallyng on the mountaynes, are reflected downwarde into the valley, by reason of the obiect of the declining sydes of the hylles, as it were the fall of a great round stone, rowled from the toppe of a mountayne. The valley therefore receyueth both those beames whiche fall directly thereon, and also those whiche are reflected downewarde from euery syde of the mountaynes. Theyr habitation therefore in *Driena*, is pernicious and vnholsome, onely of the particuler nature of the place, and not by the situation of the region as it is plased vnder the heauen, or neare to the sonne. The place is also contagious by the nature of the soyle, by reason it is compassed about with muddy and stynkyng marishes, the infection whereof is not a lytle encreased by the heate. The vyllage it selfe is in a marishe, and in maner a standyng puddle, where, of the droppes fallyng from the handes of the bondemen, whyle they water the pauementes of theyr houses, Toades are engendred immediately, as I my selfe saw in an other place the droppes of that water turne into flees in the sommer season. Furthermore, wheresoeuer they dygge the grounde the deapth of a handful and a halfe, there springeth out vnholsome and corrupt water, of the nature of the ryuer, whiche rumeth through the deepe and muddye chanell of the valley, and so falleth into the sea: Nowe therfore they consult of remouyng theyr inhabitations. Necessitie caused them fyrst to fasten theyr foote heere, because that they whiche fyrst arryued in those landes, were oppressed with suche vrgent hunger, that they had no respect to chaunge the place, although they were thus vexed by the contagion of the soyle and heate of the Sonne, beside the corrupt water, and infectious ayre, by reason of venemous vapours, and exhalati-

By what meanes the Sonne beames are cause of feruent heate.

The pernitious ayre of Darrena.

Toades and Flees engendred of drops of water.

Necessitie hath no lawe.

ons

ons ryſyng from the ſame. An other great incommoditie was, that the place was deſtitute of a commodious hauen, beyng three leagues diſtant from the mouth of the gulfe: The way is alſo rough and difficult to bryng vyttayles and other neceſſaries from the ſea. But let vs nowe ſpeake ſomewhat of other particuler thynges whiche chaunced. Therefore ſhortly after that they were arryued, there happened many thynges whereof they had no knowledge before. A certayne well learned phiſition of Ciuile, whom partly the auctoritie of the Biſhop of *Dariena*, and partly the deſyre of golde, had allured to thoſe landes, was ſo ſcarred with lyghtnyng in the nyght ſeaſon, lying in bedde with his wyfe, that the houſe and all the ſtuffe therein beyng ſet on fyre and burnt, he and his wyfe beyng both ſore ſcorched, ranne forth crying, and almoſt naked, hardely eſcapyng the daunger of death. And an other tyme, as certayne of them ſtoode one the ſhore, a great Crocodile ſodenly caryed away a maſty of a yeere and a halfe olde, as a kyte ſhoulde haue ſnatched vp a chicken: and this euen in the preſence of them all, where the miſerable dogge cryed in vayne for the helpe of his maiſter. In the nyght ſeaſon they were tormented with the bytyng of Battes, which are there ſo noyſome, that if they byte any man in his ſleepe, they put hym in daunger of lyfe, onely with drawyng of blood: In ſo muche that ſome haue dyed thereof, fallyng as it were into a conſumption through the maliciouſneſſe of the venemous wounde. If theſe Battes chaunce to fynde a cocke or a henne abrode in the nyght ſeaſon, they byte them by the combes, and ſo kyl them. They alſo whiche went laſt into theſe regions, do wryte, that the lande is troubled with Crocodiles, Lions, and Tygers: but that they haue nowe deuiſed artes and ingens howe to take them. Lykewyſe that in the houſes of theyr felowes, they founde the hydes and caſes of ſuche Lions and Tygers as they had kylled. They wryte furthermore, that by reaſon of the rankeneſſe and fruitefulneſſe of the grounde, kyne, ſwyne, and horſes, doo maruelouſly increaſe in theſe regions, and growe to a muche bygger quantitie then they whiche were of the fyrſt broode. Of the exceedyng hyghneſſe of the trees with theyr fruites, of the garden hearbes, fruites, plantes, and ſeedes, whiche

A houſe ſet on fyre with lightnyng.

A dogge deuoured of a Crocodile.

Tanquam canis de Nilo.

The bytyng of Battes.

Lions and Tygers.

Beaſtes waxe higher in theyr kynde.

whiche our men brought from Spayne, and sowed and set the same in these regions: lykewyse of the Hartes and other foure footed beastes both tame and wylde, also of dyuers kyndes of foules, byrdes, and fyshes, they wryte euen as we haue declared in the decades before. *Careta*, the kyng of the region of *Cioba*, was with them for the space of three dayes: whom when they had frendly entertayned, and shewed hym the secrete places of theyr shyppes, their Horses also, with theyr trappers, bardes, and other furnimentes, beside many other thynges whiche seemed straunge to hym, and had further delyted his mynde with the harmony of theyr musycal instrumentes, & geuen hym many rewardes, they dismysted hym halfe amased with to muche admiration. He signifyed vnto them, that there are trees in that prouynce, of the plankes whereof if shyppes were made, they shoulde be safe from the woormes of the sea, whiche they call *Bromas*. Howe these woormes gnawe and corrode the shyppes, we haue declared before. Our shyppes are greatly troubled with this plague, if they lye long in the hauens of these regions. But they affyrme that the wood of this tree is so bytter, that the woormes wyll not taste thereof. There is also an other tree peculyar to these landes, whose leaues if they onely touche the bare in any place of a mans body, they cause great blysters, and those so malitious, that except the same be foorthwith healed with salte water or fastyng spyttle, they do incontinently engender deadly paynes. They say lykewyse, that the sauour of the wood is present poyson, and that it can no whither be caried without daunger of lyfe. When thinhabitantes of the Ilande of *Hispaniola* had oftentymes attempted to shake of the yoke of seruitude, and coulde neuer bryng the same to passe, neyther by open warre, nor yet by priuie conspiracies, they were determined in the nyght season to haue kylled our men in theyr sleepe with the smoke of this wood: But when the Christian men had knowledge hereof, they compelled the poore wretches to confesse theyr intent, and punyshed the chiefe auctours of the deuice. They haue also a certayne hearbe with the sauour wherof they are preserued from the hurt of this venemous wood, so that they may

Note.

Bromas or Bissa are wormes which destroy shyppes.

A venemous tree.

Perhaps their venemous arrowes are made of this wood.

A preseruatiue against poison.

beare it safely . Of these small thinges it shall suffyce to haue sayde thus much. They looke dayly for many greater thinges to certifie vs of from the Ilandes of the south sea: For at such tyme as the messenger whiche brought our letters departed from thence, *Petrus Arias* prepared an expedition to that ryche Iland which lyeth in the mouth of the gulfe called *Sinus S. Michaelis*, and reacheth into the south sea, being also left vntouched of *vaschus*, by reason that the Sea was at that tyme of the yeere sore troubled with tempestes, as we haue further declared in *Vaschus* his byage to the south . Wee looke therefore dayly for greater thinges then are hitherto passe : For they haue now taken in hande to subdue many other prouinces, which we suppose to be eyther very ryche, or to bryng foorth some straunge worckes of nature . *Iohannes Diaz Solisius* of *Nebrissa* (of whom we haue made mention before) is sent by the froont of the cape or poynt of *Sancti Augustini* (which reacheth seuen degrees beyonde the Equinoctial lyne, and parteyneth to the dominion of the Portugales) to thintent to ouerrunne the south syde, from the backe halfe of *Paria, Cumana, Cuquibacca*, with the hauens of *Carthago*, and *Sancta Martha*, of *Dariena* also, and *Beragua*, that more perfect and certayne knowledge may be had of those tractes . Furthermore, one *Iohannes Poncius* was sent foorth with three ships, to destroye the Canibales, both in the lande and Ilandes there about: aswell that the nations of the more humane and innocent people may at the length lyue without feare of that pestiferous generation, as also the better and more safely to searche the secretes and rychesse of those regions. Many other lykewyse were sent dyuers and sundry wayes, as *Gasper Badaiocius* to search the West parts, *Franciscus Bexerra*, to sayle by the corner of the gulf, and *Valleius*, to passe by the mouth or entraunce thereof to the East coastes of the gulf, to searche the secretes of that lande, in the which *Fogeda* with his company had of late begunne to plant their habitation, and had buylded a fortresse and a vyllage. *Badaiocius* departed fyrst from *Dariena*, with fourescore souldiours wel appoynted, whom *Lodouicus Mercado* folowed with fyftye: To *Bezerra* were also fourscore assigned, and threescore and tenne to *Valleius* . Whether they shall arryue at safe and commodious hauens, or fall into vnfortunate stations, he onely knoweth whose

The Ilandes of the south sea.

The rich Iland called Dites.

Cap. sancti Augustini. Of the euill successe of these viages, reade decade, 3. Liber. 9.

An expedition to destroy the Canibales.

Looke decade. 3. Lib. 9.

whose prouidence ruleth all : for as for vs men wee are included within the knowledge of thinges after they haue chaunced. Let vs now therefore come to other matters.

The seuenth booke of the third decade.

PEtrus *Arias* the gouernour of the supposed continent, was scarsly entred into the mayne sea with his nauye, onwarde on his vyage to *Dariena*, but I was aduertised that one *Andreas Moralis* a pilot, who had oftentymes ouerrunne the coastes of these new seas, and the Ilandes of the same, was come to the court to sell such marchaundies as he brought with him from thence. This man had diligently searched the tracte of the supposed continent, and especially thinner regions of the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, whereunto he was appointed by his brother *Nicolaus Ouandus* (the gouernour of the Ilande, and chiefe Commendator of the order of the knyghtes of *Alcantara*) bycause he was a wytty man, and more apt to search suche thinges then any other : so that with his owne handes he drewe faire cardes and tables of such regions as he discouered. Wherein as he hath been founde faythfull of such as haue since had better tryall hereof, so is he in most credite amongst the best sorte. He therefore resorted to me, as all they are accustomed to doe which returne from the Ocean. What I learned of him and dyuers other, of thinges heretofore vnknowen, I will now declare. The beginnyng of this narration, shalbe the particular description of the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, forasmuch as it is the heade, and as it were, ỹ principall marte of all the liberalitie of the Ocean, & hath a thousand & againe a thousand, faire, pleasant, beautiful, & ryche *Nereides*, which lye about it on euery syde, adournyng this their ladie & mother, as it were an other *Tethis* the wyfe of *Neptunus*, enuyroning her about, & attẽdyng vpon her as their queene & patronesse,

The nauigations of Andreas Moralis.

A particular description of the Ilande of Hispaniola.

Nereides are nymphes of the sea, he meaneth Ilandes, Tethis the wyfe of Neptunus & goddesse of the sea.

troneſſe. But of theſe *Nereiades* (that is to ſaye, the Ilandes placed about her) we wyll ſpeake moze hereafter. Let vs in the meane tyme declare ſomewhat of the Ilande whiche our men named *Margarita Diues* (whiche the Spanyardes call *De las perlas*) beyng nowe well knowen, and lying in the ſouth ſea in the gulfe called *Sinus Sancti Michaelis* (that is) ſaint Michaels gulfe. This Ilande hath preſently brought to our knowledge many ſtraunge and woonderfull thynges, and promiſeth no ſmall hope of greater thynges in tyme to come. In this is founde great plentie of pearles, ſo fayze and great, that the ſumptuous queene *Cleopatra* myght haue ſeemed to weare them in her crownes, chaynes, and braſlettes. Of the ſhelfyſhes wherein theſe are engendered, we wyll ſpeake ſomewhat moze in thend of this narration. But let vs nowe returne to *Hiſpaniola*, moſt lyke vnto the earthly paradyſe. In the deſcription hereof, we wyll begynne of the impoſition of dyuers names, then of the fourme of the Ilande, temperate ayze, and beneficial heauen, and finally of the deuiſion of the regions. Therefoze for the righter pronunciation of the names, your holyneſſe muſt vnderſtande, that they are pronounced with thaccent, as you may knowe by the verge ſet ouer the heddes of the vowels, as in the name of the Ilande *Matinino*, where the accent is in the laſt vowell, and the lyke to be vnderſtoode in all other names. They ſaye therefoze, that the fyrſt inhabitours of the Ilande were tranſpozted in theyr *Canoas* (that is, boates made of one whole peece of wood) from the Ilande of *Matinino*, beyng lyke banyſhed men dryuen from thence by reaſon of certayne contrary factions and deuiſyons among them ſelues, lyke as we reade howe *Dardanus* came from *Corytho*, and *Teucrus* from *Creta* into Aſia, and that the region where they placed their habitation, was afterward called *Troianum*. The like we reade howe the Tyrians and Sidonians arriued with their naule in *Libya* by the fabulous conduction of *Dido*. Theſe Matinians in like maner being banyſhed from their owne countrey, planted their fyrſt habitation in that parte of the Ilande of *Hiſpaniola*, which they call *Cahonao*, vppon the banke of the ryuer named *Bahaboni* as is redde in the begynnyng of the Romanes that *Eneas* of Troy arryued in the region of Italy, called *Latium*, vppon the bankes of the ryuer of Tiber.

Great pearles.

Hiſpaniola like vnto the earthly paradiſe

The fyrſt inhabitours of Hiſpaniola.

Within

Within the mouth of the ryuer of *Bahaboni*, lyeth an Iſlande, where it is ſayde that thinhabitantes buylded theyr fyrſt houſe, whiche they named *Camoteia*. This houſe they conſecrated ſhortly after, and honoured the ſame reuerently, with continual gyftes and monumentes, euen vntyll the commyng of our men, lyke as the Chriſtians haue euer religiouſly honoured Ieruſalem the fountayne and originall of our fayth: As alſo the Turkes attribute the lyke to the citie of *Mecha* in Araby, and the inhabitantes of the fortunate Iſlandes (called the Iſlandes of Canarie) to *Tyrma*, buylded vppon a hygh rocke, from the whiche many were wont with ioyfull myndes and ſonges to caſt them ſelues downe headlong, beyng perſwaded by theyr prieſtes that the ſoules of all ſuch as ſo dyed for the loue of *Tyrma*, ſhoulde thereby enioye eternall felicitie. The conquerours of the Iſlandes of Canarie, founde them yet remaynyng in that ſuperſtition euen vntyll our tyme, nor yet is the memory of theyr ſacrifyces vtterly worne away: the rocke alſo reſerueth the olde name vnto this daye. I haue alſo learned of late, that there yet remayneth in the Iſlande ſome of the faction of *Betanchor* the Frencheman, and fyrſt that brought the Iſlandes to good culture and ciuilitie, beyng thereto lycenced by the kyng of Caſtile, as I haue ſayde before. Theſe do yet (for the moſt part) obſerue both the language and maners of the Frenche men, although the heyres and ſucceſſours of *Betanchor*, had ſolde the two ſubdued Iſlandes to certayne men of Caſtile: Yet thinhabitours whiche ſucceded *Betanchor*, and buylded them houſes, and encreaſed their families there, do contynue to this day, and lyue quietly and pleaſauntly with the Spanyardes, not greeued with the ſharpe colde of Fraunce. But let vs nowe returne to thinhabitantes of *Matinino* and *Hiſpaniola*.

Ieruſalem.

Mecha.

The Iſlandes of Canarie.

Betanchor a frenchman.

The Iſland of *Hiſpaniola* was firſt named by the firſt inhabitours *Quizqueia*, and then *Haiti*: and this not by chaunce, or at the pleaſure of ſuche as diuiſed theſe names, but of credulitie and beleefe of ſome great effecte. For *Quizqueia*, is as muche to ſay as, A great thyng, and that ſo great, that none may be greater. They interprete alſo, that *Quizqueia* ſygnifieth, large, vniuerſall, or all, in lyke ſignification as the Greekes named theyr god called *Pan*, bycauſe that for ỹ greatnes therof, theſe ſimple ſoules

The firſt names of Hiſpaniola.

supposed it to bee the whole worlde: and that the Sonne beames gaue lyght to none other worlde, but onely to this Ilande, with the other adiacent about the same, and thereupon thought it most woorthy to be called great, as the greatest of all other knowen to them. *Haiti* is as muche to saye by interpretation, as, rough, sharpe, or craggie. But by a figuratiue speache called denomination (whereby the whole is named by part) they named the whole Ilande *Haiti* (that is) rough: Forasmuche as in many places the face of this Ilande is rough, by reason of the craggie mountaynes, horrible thicke wooddes, and terribly darke and deepe valleys, enuironed with great & high mountaynes, although it be in manye other places exceedyng beautifull and flowryshyng. Heere must we somewhat digresse from thorder we are entred into. Perhappes your holynesse will maruell by what meanes these symple men shoulde of so long continaunce beare in mynde suche principles, wheras they haue no knowledge of letters. So it is therefore, that from the beegynnyng, theyr princes haue euer been accustomed to commit theyr children to the gouernaunce of their wise men, whiche they call *Boitios*, to be instructed in knowledge, and to beare in memorie such thynges as they learne. They geue themselues chiefly to two thynges: As generally, to learne thoriginall and successe of thynges, and perticularly, to rehearse the noble factes of theyr graundefathers, great graundefathers, and auncestours, alwell in peace as in warre. These two thynges they haue of olde tyme composed in certayne myters and ballettes in theyr language. These rymes or balleites, they call *Areitos*. And as our mynstrelles are accustomed to syng to the Harpe or Lute, so do they in lyke maner syng these songes, and daunce to the same, playing on Timbels made of shels of certaine fishes: These Tymbels they call *Maguei*. They haue also songes and ballettes of loue, and other of lamentations and mournyng, some also to encourage them to the warres, with euery of them theyr tunes agreeable to the matter. They exercyse them selues muche in daunceyng, wherein they are very actyue, and of greater agilitie then our men, by reason they geue them selues to nothyng so muche, and are not hyndered with apparell, whiche is also the cause of theyr swiftenesse of foote. In theyr ballets lefte them of theyr auncestours, they haue prophecies

Their maner of learnyng.

Ballets and rymes.

Singyng and daunceyng. Songes of loue and mournyng.

of

of the commyng of our men into theyr countrey. These they syng with mournyng, and as it were with gronyng, bewayle the losse of their libertie and seruitude. For these prophesies make mention that there shoulde come into the Iland *Maguacochios*, that is, men clothed in apparell, and armed with suche swoordes as shoulde cut a man in sunder at one stroke, vnder whose yoke their posteritie shoulde be subdued. And here I do not maruell that theyr predecessours coulde prophecye of the seruitude and bondage of their succession (if it be true that is sayd) of the familiaritie they haue with spirites, whiche appeare to them in the nyght, whereof we haue largely made mention in the nienth booke of the fyrst decade, where also we haue entreated of their Zemes (that is) their Idoles, and Images of deuylles whiche they honoured. But they saye that since these Zemes were taken away by the Christians, the spirites haue no moze appeared. Our men ascribe this to the signe of the crosse, wherwith they defende them selues from suche spirites: For they are nowe all cleansed and sanctified by the water of baptisme, whereby they haue renounced the deuyl, andare consecrated the holy members of Christ. They are vniuersally studious to knowe the boundes and limittes of their regions & kingdomes, and especially their *Mitani* (that is) noble men: so that euen they are not vtterly ignozant in the surueying of theyr landes. The common people haue none other care then of settyng, sowyng, and plantyng. They are most expert fyshers, by reason that throughout the whole yeere, they are accustomed dayly to plunge them selues in the ryuers, so that in maner they lyue no lesse in the water then on the lande. They are also geuen to huntyng: For (as I haue sayd before) they haue two kindes of foure footed beastes, whereof the one is, litle Cunnes, called *Vtias*, and other Serpentes, named *Iuannas*, much lyke vnto Crocodils, of eyght foote length, of most pleasaunte tast, and lyuyng on the lande. All the Ilandes nooryshe innumerable byrdes and foules: as Stockdoues, Duckes, Geese, Hearons, beside no lesse number of Popingiais then Sparowes with vs. Euery kyng hath his subiectes diuided to sundrye affaires: as some to huntyng, other to fyshyng, & other some to husbandrye. But let vs nowe returne to speake further of the names. We haue sayde that

Prophesies.

Note.

Their familiaritie with spirites.

The deuyl is driuen away by baptisme.

Surueyers.

Serpentes.

A Crocodile is muche lyke to our Ewte or Lyserte.

Cipanga.

Quizqueia and *Haiti*, were the olde names of this Iſlande. The whole Iſlande was alſo called *Cipanga*, of the region of the mountaynes aboundyng with golde: lyke as our auncient poetes called all Italy *Latium*, of part thereof. Therefore as they called *Auſonia* and *Heſperia*, Italy: euen ſo by the names of *Quizqueia*, *Haiti*, and *Cipanga*, they vnderſtode the whole Iſlande of *Hiſpaniola*. Our men dyd fyrſt name it *Iſabella*, of queene Heliſabeth, whiche in the Spanyſhe tounge is called *Iſabella*, and ſo named it of the fyrſt Colonie where they planted their habitation, vpon the banke neere vnto they ſea on the North ſyde of the Iſlande, as we haue further declared in the fyrſt decade. But of the names, this ſhal ſuffyſe. Let vs nowe therfore ſpeake of the fourme of the Iſlande. They whiche fyrſt ouerran it, deſcribed it vnto me to be lyke vnto the leafe of a Cheſtnut tree, with a gulfe towarde the weſt ſyde, lying open agaynſt the Iſlande of *Cuba*. But the expert ſhypmaiſtier *Andreas Moralis*, brought me the fourme thereof ſomewhat differyng from that. For from both the corners, as from the Eaſt angle and the Weſt, he deſcribed it to be indented & eaten with many great gulfes, and the corners to reache fourth very farre, and placeth manye large and ſafe hauens in the great gulfe on the Eaſt ſyde: But I truſt ſhortly ſo to trauayle further herein, that a perfect carde of the perticular deſcription of *Hiſpaniola* may be ſent vnto your holyneſſe. For they haue nowe drawne the Geographicall deſcription therof in cardes, euen as your holyneſſe hath ſeene the fourme and ſituation of Spayne and Italy, with theyr mountaynes, valleyes, riuers, cities, and colonies. Let vs therefore without ſhamfaſtneſſe compare the Iſland of *Hiſpaniola* to Italy, ſomtyme the head and queene of the whole worlde. For if we conſyder the quantitie, it ſhalbee founde litle leſſe, and muche more fruitefull. It reacheth from the Eaſt into the Weſt, fyue hundred and fourtie myles, accordyng to the computation of the later ſearchers, although the Admiral ſomewhat increaſed this number, as we haue ſayde in the fyrſt decade. It is in breadth ſomewhere almoſt three hundred myles, and in ſome places narower, where the corners are extended: But it is ſurely muche more bleſſed and fortunate then Italie, beyng for the moſt part thereof ſo temperate and flowryſhyng, that it is

Italy called Latium.

Iſabella.

The fourme of the Iſlande of Hiſpaniola.

A particuler carde of Hiſpaniola.

Hiſpaniola compared to Italie.

The temperature of Hiſpaniola.

it is neyther vexed with sharpe colde, nor afflicted with immoderate heate. It hath both the steyinges or conuersions of the Sonne (called *Solstitia*) in maner equall with the Equinoctial, with litle difference betwene the length of the day and the nyght throughout all the yeere. For on the south syde, the day ascendeth scarcely an houre in length aboue the nyght, or contrarywyse. But the difference is more on the north syde: Yet are there some regions in the Ilande in the whiche the colde is of some force. But your holynesse must understande this to be incident by reason of ỹ obiect or neerenes of the mountaynes, as we wyll more largely declare hereafter: Yet is not this colde so pearsyng or sharpe, that thinhabitantes are molested with snowe or bytyng frost. In other places, the Ilande enioyeth perpetuall spryng tyme, and is fortunate with continuall sommer and haruest. The trees florysshe there all the whole yeere, and the medowes continue alway greene. All thynges are exceedyng fortunate, and growe to great perfection. Howe wonderfully all garden hearbes and fruites do encrease, so that within the space of fyrtene dayes after the seede is sowne, all hearbes of small steames, as lettisse, borage, radish, and suche other, come to theyr full rypenesse, and also howe hearbes of the bygger sort, as Gourdes, Melons, Cucumbers, Pompons, Sitrons, and such other, come to theyr perfection in the space of thyrtie dayes, we haue sufficiently, declared elswhere. Of the beastes transported out of Spayne thyther, we haue sayde howe they growe to a muche greater kynde: insomuch that when they fall into communication of the oxen or kyne, they compare them in bygnesse to Elephantes, and swyne to Mules: but this somewhat by an excessiue kynde of speache. We haue also made mention howe theyr swynes flesshe is more sauourye and of farre better and of more pleasaunt tast, and more holsome then ours, by reason that they are fedde with the fruites of Mirobalane trees, and other pleasaunt and nourishing frutes of that countrey, whiche growe there of them selues, as do with vs Beeches, Holly, and Okes. Vines woulde also prosper there with marueylous encrease, if they had any regarde to the plantyng thereof. The lyke encrease commeth of wheate, if it be sowen vpon the mountaines, where the cold is of some strength: but not

The Equinoctiall.

Cold accidental. and not by the situation of the region.

Perpetuall spring and sommer.

Marueilous fruitfullnesse.

Beastes.

Oxen and swine of exceedyng bignesse.

Swine fed with Mirobalanes.

in

in the same playnes, by reason of to much fatnesse and rankenesse of the grounde. It is in maner incredible to heare, that an eare of wheate shoulde be bygger then a mans arme in the brawne, and moze then a spanne in length, bearyng also moze then a thousand graynes, as they all confesse with one voyce, and earnestlye affyrme the same with othes. Yet they say that the bread of the Iland called *Cazabbi*, made of the roote of *Iucca*, to be moze holsome, because it is of easier digestion, and is cultured with lesse labour, and greater encrease. The residue of the tyme which they spend not in settyng and plantyng, they bestowe in geathering of golde. They haue nowe such plenty of foure footed beastes, that Hoxses and oxe hydes, with sheepe skynnes, and goate skynnes, and such other, are brought from thence into Spayne: so that now the daughter in many thynges helpeth and succoureth her mother. Of the trees of brasyle, spyces, the grayne which colloureth scarlet in bright shyning red, mastix, gossampyne cotton, the precious metall called *Electrum*, and such other commodities of this Iland, we haue spoken sufficiently before. What therfore can chaunce moze happye vnto man vppon the earth, then there to lyue where he neede not to be dryuen to close chaumbers with sharpe colde or fayntyng heate, nor yet in winter eyther to be laden with heauy apparrel, or to burne the shinnes with continual sittyng at the fyre, which thynges make men olde in short tyme, by resoluing the naturall heate, whereof a thousand diseases ensue. They also affirme the ayre to be very healthfull, and the waters and ryuers to be no lesse holsome, as they which haue their contynuall course through the earth of the golden mynes. For there is in maner no ryuers, no mountaynes, and but fewe playnes, that are vtterly without golde. But let vs nowe at the length come to the particuler description of the inner partes of this blessed Iland. We haue before declared how it is in maner equally diuided with foure great ryuers, descendyng from hygh mountaynes, whereof that whiche runneth towards the East, is called *Iunna*, as that towards the West is named *Attibunicus*, the thyrde is *Nabiba* or *Haiba*, which runneth Southward, the fourth is called *Iache*, & falleth toward the North. But this shypmaister hath brought an other description, obserued of the inhabitauntes from the beginnyng.

An eare of wheat as bigge as a mans arme in the brawne.

Great plentie of cattayle.

Incommodities of intemperate regions

Holsome ayre and water.

Golde euery where.

Let

Let vs therfore diuide the whole Iland into fiue partes, cal-
lyng the regions of euery prouince by theyr olde names: and fi-
nally make mention of such thyngs as are worthy memory in
euery of them. The beginning of the Ilande on the East syde, is
conteyned in the prouince named *Caizcimu*, so named for that in
theyr language *Cimu* signifieth the front or beginning of anye
thyng. After this, foloweth the prouince of *Huhabo*, and then
Caihabo, the fourth is *Bainoa*. *Guaccaiarima* conteyneth the west
corner. But the last saue one, *Bainoa* is of larger boundes then
the three other. *Caizcimu* reacheth from the fyrst front of the Is-
land to the ryuer *Hozama*, which runneth by the citie of saint The citie of S. Dominick.
Dominicke. But towarde the North syde, it is ended at the
rough mountaynes of *Haiti*. *Hubaho*, is encluded within the
mountaynes *Haiti* and the ryuer *Iaciga*. *Cæiabo* the thyrd pro-
uince, conteineth al that lyeth between *Cubabo* and *Dahatio*, euen
vnto the mouth of the ryuer of *Iaccha* or *Iache* (one of the
foure which diuide the Iland equally) & ascendeth to the moun-
taynes of *Cibaua*, where the greatest plenty of gold is found, out
of the which also the ryuer *Demahus* spryngeth: and ioining with
the spryngs of the ryuer of *Naiba* (beyng an other of the foure
which diuideth the Iland toward the south sea) falleth to an o-
ther banke of the riuer of saint Dominick. *Bainoa*, beginneth at
the confines of *Caiabi*, and reacheth euen vnto the Iland of *Cahi-
ni*, which lyeth neare vnto the sea bankes of the North syde of the
Iland, where we sayde that they erected ỳ first colonie or habita-
tion. The prouince of *Guaccaiarima*, occupieth the remanent to-
ward the west: this they named *Guaccaiarima*, because it is the Of prouinces diuided into regions.
extreeme or vttermost part of the Iland. For *Iarima* in theyr lan-
guage, signifieth the tayle or end of any thing, and *Gua*, is an ar-
ticle which they vse oftentimes in the names of things, and espe-
cially in the names of theyr kinges, as *Guarionexius* & *Guaccana-
rillus*. In the prouince of *Cazium*, are these regions, *Higuei*, *Gua-
nama*, *Reyre*, *Xagua*, *Aramana*, *Arabo*, *Hazoa*, *Macorix*, *Caiacoa*,
Guaiagua, *Baguauimabo*, & the rough mountaines of *Haiti*. Here
let vs speake somwhat of their aspirations, which they vse other-
wise then the Latines do. It is to be noted that there is no aspira-
tion in their vowels, which hath not the effect of a consonant. So
that they pronounce theyr aspirations more vehemently then

we

we do the consonant .f. Yea, all suche woꝛdes as in theyꝛ tongue are aspirate, are pꝛonounced with lyke bꝛeath and spirite as is f. sayyng that heerin the neather lippe is not moued to the vppermost teeth. With open mouthes and shakyng theyꝛ bꝛeastes they bꝛeath out these aspirations, *ha, he, hi, ho, bu,* as the Hebꝛues and Arabians are accustomed to pꝛonounce theyꝛs. I fynde also that the Spanyardes vse the lyke vehemencie in the aspirations of those woꝛdes which they haue receyued of the Mooꝛes & Arabians which possessed Spaine, and continued there many yeeres, as in these woꝛdes *Almohadda*, which signifieth a pyllow oꝛ boulster, also *Almohaza*, that is a hoꝛse combe: with diuers such other woꝛdes, which they speake in maner w̄ panting bꝛeastes, and behement spirite. I haue thought it good to rehearse these thyngs, because among the Latines it oftentimes so chaunceth, that only the accent oꝛ aspiration, chaungeth the signification of the woꝛde, as *hora*, foꝛ an houre, and *ora*, foꝛ the plurale number of this woꝛde *os*, whiche signifieth the mouth: also *ora*, whiche signifieth regions oꝛ coastes. The lyke also chaunceth in ẏ diuersitie of ẏ accent, as *occido* I kil, & *occido* I fal: euen so in the language of these simple men, there are many thynges to be obserued. But let vs now returne to the discription. In the pꝛouince of *Hubabo*, are these regions, *Xamana, Canabacoa, Cubabo*, with many other, the names wheꝛof I haue not yet learned. The pꝛouince of *Cubabo*, conteyneth these regions, *Migua* and *Cacacubana*. The inhabitauntes of this region, haue a peculier language much differing from the common language of the Iland, and are called *Maioriexes*. There is also an other regton called *Cubana*, whose language differeth from the other. Lykewyse the region of *Baiohagua*, hath a diuers tongue. There are also other regions, as *Dahabon, Cybabo*, and *Manababo*. *Cotoy* is in the middle of the Iland. By this runneth the riuer *Nizaus*, and the mountaines called *Mathaitin, Hazua*, & *Neibaymao*, confine w̄ the same. In the pꝛouince of *Bainoa*, are ẏ regions of *Maguana, Iagohaiucbo, Baurucco, Dabaiagua*, & *Attiburi*, so named of the riuer: also *Caunoa, Buiaici, Dababonici, Maiaguariti, Atiei, Maccazina, Guahabba, Anniuici, Marie, Guaricco, Amaguei, Xaragua, Yaguana, Azuei, Iacchi, Honorucco, Diaguo, Camaie*, & *Neibaimao*. In *Guaccaierima* ẏ last pꝛouince, these regions are conteined *Mauicarao, Guabagua, Taque-*

The pꝛonunciation of the Hebꝛues and Arabians.

The Mooꝛes and Arabians possessed Spayne.

How the aspiration chaungeth the signification of woꝛds.

Diuers languages in the Iland.

Taquenazabo, Nimaca, Baiona the lesse, *Cabaini, Iamaici, Manabaxao, Zauana, Habacoa*, and *Ayquiora*. But let vs entreate somewhat of the particulers of the regions. In the prouince of *Caizcimu*, within the great gulfe of the beginning, there is a great caue in a hollow rocke vnder the roote of a high moũtayne, about two furlonges from the sea, the entry of this caue is not muche vnlyke the dooꝛes of a great temple, beyng very large, and turning many wayes. *Andreas Moralis* the shypmaister, at the commaundement of the gouernour, attempted to search the caue with the smalest vessels. He sayeth that by certayne priuie waies many ryuers haue concourse to this caue, as it were a syncke oꝛ chanel. After therperience hereof, they ceassed to marueyle whither other riuers ranne, which comming fourscoꝛe and ten miles were swalowed vp, so that they appeered no moꝛe, noꝛ yet fell into the sea by any knowen wayes. Nowe therefoꝛe they suppose that ryuers swalowed vp by the hollowe places of that stony mountayne, fall into this caue. As the shypmaister entred into the caue, his shyp was almost swalowed. Foꝛ he sayth, that there are many whyꝛlepooles and ryssinges oꝛ boylynges of the water, whiche make a violent conflict and hoꝛrible roꝛyng, one encounteryng the other: also many huge holes and hollowe places, so that what on the one syde with whirlpooles, and on the other syde with the boylyng of the water, his shyppe was long in maner tossed vp and downe like a ball. It greatlye repented hym that he had entred, yet knew he no way how to come foꝛth. He now wandꝛed in darknesse, aswell foꝛ the obscureneſſe of the caue into the which he was farre entred, as also that in it were thicke clouds, engendꝛed of the moist vapours proceeding of the conflict of the waters, which continually fal with great violence into the caue on euery syde. He compareth the noyse of these waters, to the fal of the famous ryuer *Nilus* from the mountains of Ethiope, they were also deafe, that one coulde not heare what an other saide. But at the length with great daunger and feare, he came foꝛth of the caue, as it had been out of hell. About threescoꝛe myles distant from the cheefe citie of sainct Dominicke, there are certayne hygh mountaynes, vpon the toppes whereof is a lake oꝛ standing poole inaccessible, neuer yet seene of them which came latelye to the Ilande, both by reason of the roughnesse

Riuers deuoured of caues.

Whirlepooles, and conflict of waters.

Cloudes in the caue.

The Cataracts of Nilus.

A standing poole in the top of a high mountayne.

roughneſſe of the mountaynes, and alſo for that there is no pathe or open way to the toppes of the ſame. But at the length the ſhypmaiſter beyng conducted thyther by one of the kynges, aſcended to the toppes of the mountaynes, and came to the poole. He ſayth that the colde is there of ſome force: and in token of wynter, he founde fearne and bramble buſhes, whiche two growe only in colde regions. Theſe mountaines, they call *Ymizui Hibabaino*. This poole is of freſhe water three myles in compaſſe, and well replenyſhed with diuers kyndes of fyſhes. Many ſmall riuers or brookes fall into it. It hath no paſſage out, bycauſe it is on euery ſyde enclоſed with the toppes of mountaynes. But let vs nowe ſpeake of an other poole, whiche may well be called a ſea in the mydlande, and be compared to the Caſpian or Hircanian ſea in the ſyme lande of *Aſia*, with certayne other lakes and pooles of freſhe water.

Fearne and bramble buſhes, growe only in colde regions.

The Caſpian and Hircanian ſea.

The eyght booke of the thyrde decade.



The prouince of *Bainoa* beyng thyſe as bigge as the three fyrſt, that is, *Caizcimu*, *Vhabo*, and *Caibabo*, includeth a valley named *Caiouani*, in the whiche there is a lake of ſalt, ſower, and bytter water, as we reade of the ſea called *Caſpium*, lying in the firme lande betwene *Sarmatia* and *Hircania*. We haue therefore named it *Caſpium*, although it bee not in the region of *Hircania*. It hath manye ſwalowyng gulfes, by the whiche, both the water of the ſea ſpryngeth into it, and alſo ſuche as fall into it from the mountaynes are ſwalowed vp. They thynke that the caues thereof, are ſo large and deepe, that great fyſhes of the ſea paſſe by the ſame into the lake.

A great lake of ſoure and ſalte water.

Sea fyſhes in lakes of the mydlande.

Among theſe fyſhes, there is one called *Tiburonus*, whiche cutteth a man in ſunder by the myddeſt at one ſnap with his teeth, and deuoureth hym. In the ryuer *Hozama*, runnyng by the cheefe citie of ſaint Dominicke, theſe *Tiburoni* do ſometymes come from the ſea, and deuoure many of thinhabitauntes: eſpecially ſuche as do dayly ploonge them ſelues in the water, to thintent

The deuouring fyſhe called Tiburonus.

tent to keepe their bodyes very cleane. The ryuers whiche fall into the lake, are these . From the Northe syde *Guanicabon*: From the Southe, *Xaccoei*: from the East, *Guannabo*: And from the West, *Occoa* . They saye that these ryuers are great and continuall, and that besyde these, there are .xx. other small ryuers whiche fall into this *Caspium*. Also on the Northe syde within a furloug of the lake, there are aboue twoo hundreth springes, occupying lykewyse about a furlong in circuite, the water wherof is colde in sommer, freshe also, and holsome to be dronke. These springes make a ryuer that can not bee waded ouer, which neare at hande ioynyng with the other, falleth into the lake. Here must we staye a whyle . The kyng of this region founde his wyfe praying in a Chapell buylded by the Christians within the precincte of his dominion, and requyred her company to satisfie his fleshely lust. His wyfe reproued him, and put him in remembraunce to haue respecte to the holy place. The wordes which she spake to him were these, *Teitoca, Teitoca*, which is as muche to say, as, be quyet, be quyet. *Techeta cynato guamechyna*: That is, God will be greatly angry. *Guamechyna*, signifyeth God, *Techeta* greatly, *Cynato* angrye . But the husbande halyng her by the arme, sayde , *Guaibba*, that is, goe, *Cynato macabuca guamechyna* : That is, What is that to me if God be angry? And with these wordes as he profered her violence, sodeinly he became dumme and lame. Yet by this myracle being stryken with repentaunce, he euer after ledde a relygious lyfe, insomuche that from thencefoorth he would neuer suffer the Chapell to bee swepte or decked with any other mans hande . By the same myracle, many of thinhabitauntes, and all the Christians being moued, resorted deuoutly to the Chapell. They take it in good parte that the kyng suffered the reuenge of that reproche . Let vs now returne to *Caspium* . That salte lake is tossed with stormes and tempestes , and oftentymes drowneth small shyppes or fyssher boates , and swaloweth them vp with the maryners : In so muche that it hath not been hearde of, that any man drowned by shyppewracke, euer plunged vp againe, or was caste on the shore, as commonly chaunceth of the dead bodyes of suche as are drowned in the sea. These tempestes, are the daintie banquets of the *Tiburones*.

The ryuers that fall into the lake Caspium.

CC. springes within the space of a furlong.

A myracle.

The Indian language.

A kyng stryken dumme and lame by a myracle.

Such as are drowned in the lake are not cast vp againe.

This

This *Caſpium*, is called *Hagueigabon*. In the myddeſt hereof, lyeth an Iſland named *Guarizacca*, to the which they reſort when they go a fiſhyng: but it is now cultured. There is in the ſame playne, an other lake next vnto this, whoſe water is myxte of ſalt and freſh, and is therfore neyther apt to be dzunke, nor yet to be refuſed in vrgent neceſſitie: This conteyneth in length twentie and fyue myles, and in breadth eyght myles, in ſome places alſo niene or ten. It receyueth many ryuers, which haue no paſſage out of the ſame, but are ſwalowed vp as in the other. Water ſpryngeth out of the ſea into this alſo: but in no great quantitie, which is the cauſe that it is ſo commyxt. In the ſame prouince towards the weſt ſyde, there is an other lake of freſhe water, not farre diſtaunt from *Caſpius*: this the inhabitauntes call *Iainagua*. The ſame ſalte lake hath on the North ſyde thereof, an other named *Guaccaa*: this is but lytle, as not paſt thzee or foure myles in breadth, and one in length, the water of this may well be dzunke. On the South ſyde of the ſalt lake, there lyeth an other named *Babbareo*, of thzee myles in length, and in maner rounde. The water of this is freſhe, as of the two other. This lake, becauſe it hath no paſſage out, nor yet any ſwalowyng gulfes, conueyeth the ſuperfluous waters to the ſea, if it be encreaſed with ỹ ſtreames which fal ſometymes more abundantly from the mountaynes: this is in the region of *Xamana* in the prouince of *Bainoa*. There is an other called *Guaniba*, lying betwene the Eaſt and the South, neere vnto the ſyde of *Caſpius*: this is ten myles in length, and almoſt round. There are furthermore many other ſmall ſtandyng pooles or lakes diſparſed here and there in the Iſland, whiche I wyll let paſſe, leſt I ſhoulde be tedious in remaynyng to long in one thyng. I wyll therefore make an ende with this addition, that in all theſe great plentie of fyſhe and foule is nouryſhed. All theſe lakes lye in a large playne, the whiche from the Eaſt reacheth into the Weſt a hundreth and twentie miles, being of breadth .xviii. miles where it is naroweſt, and .xxv. where it is largeſt. Lookyng toward the Weſt, it hath collaterally on the left hande the mountaines of *Daiguani*, and on the ryght hande, the mountaines of *Gaigua*, ſo called of the name of ỹ vale it ſelfe. At the rootes of the mountaynes

A lake of ſalt & freſhe water.

A lake of freſhe water.

A lake of ten myles in length.

A playne of a hundred and twenty myles

mountaynes of *Caigua* towarde the Noyth syde, there lyeth an o-ther vale much longer and larger then that before named: For it conteineth in length almost two hundreth myles, and in breadth thirtie where it is largest, and about. xx. where it is narowest. This vale in some parte thereof, is called *Maguana*, in an o-ther place, *Iguaniu*, and els where, *Hathathiei*. And forasmuch as we haue here made mention of this parte of the vale named *Ha-thathiei*, we will somewhat digresse from the discourse of this de-scription, and entreate of a thing so straunge and marueilous, that the lyke hath not been hearde of. So it is therefore, that the kyng of this region named *Caramatexius*, taketh great pleasure in fyshing. Into his nettes chaunced a young fyshe, of the kynde of those huge monsters of the sea which thinhabitours call *Ma-nati*, not founde I suppose in our seas, nor knowne to our men be-fore this tyme. This fyshe is foure footed, and in shape lyke vnto a Tortoyse, although shee be not couered with a shell, but with scales, and those of such hardnesse, & couched in such order, that no arrow can hurte her. Her scales are beset & defended with a thou-sande knobbes, her backe is playne, and her head vtterly lyke the head of an Oxe. She lyueth both in the water, & on the lande, shee is slowe of mouyng, of condition meeke, gentle, associable, and louing to mankynde, and of a marueilous sense or memorie, as are the Elephant and the Delphyn. The kyng norished this fysh certeine dayes at home with the bread of the countrey, made of the roote of *Iucca* & *Panycke*, & with such other rootes as men are accustomed to eate: For when shee was yet but young, hee cast her into a poole or lake neare vnto his palace, there to be fed with hande. This lake also receiueth waters, and casteth not the same foorth againe. It was in tyme paste called *Guaurabo*: but is now called the lake of *Manati*, after the name of this fyshe, which wandered safely in the same for the space of .xxv. yeeres, and grewe exceeding byg. Whatsoeuer is written of the Del-phines of Baian or Arion, are muche inferior to the doonges of this fyshe, whiche for her gentle nature they named *Matum*, that is, gentle, or noble. Therefore whensoeuer any of the kynges familyers, especially such as are knowne to her, resorte to the bankes of the lake, and call *Matum, Matum*, then she (as mynde-full of such benefites as shee hath receyued of man) lifteth vp her

A plaine of two hundred myles in length.

The marueylous fyshe Manati.

A monster of the sea fedde with mans hande.

Matum.

A fyshe carryeth men ouer the lake.

head, and commeth to the place whither shee is called, and there receyueth meate at the handes of such as feede her . If any desirous to passe ouer the lake, make signes and tokens of theyr intent, shee boweth her selfe to them, therewith as it were gentelly inuityng them to amount vppon her, and conueyeth them safely ouer . It hath been seene, that this monstrous fyshe hath at one tyme safely caryed ouer tenne men singing and playing.

A marueilous thing.

But if by chaunce when she lyfted vp her head shee espyed any of the Christian men, she would immediatly plunge downe againe into the water, and refuse to obey, bycause shee had once receyued iniury at the handes of a certayne wanton young man among the Christians, who had cast a sharpe darte at her, although shee were not hurte, by reason of the hardenesse of her skynne, being rough, and full of scales and knobbes, as we haue sayde: Yet dyd shee beare in memorie thiniurie shee susteyned, with so gentle a reuenge requityng thingratitude of him, which had delt with her so vngentelly. From that day whensoeuer shee was called by any of her familiers, she would fyrst looke circumspectly about her, least any were present apparelled after the maner of the Christians . She would oftentymes play and wrestle vppon the banke with the kynges chamberlens, and especially with a young man whom the kyng fauoured well, being also accustomed to feede her . Shee would bee sometymes as pleasaunt and full of play as it had been a moonkey or marmaset, and was of long tyme a great comfort and solace to the whole Iland: For no small confluence aswell of the Christians as of thinhabitantes, had dayly concourse to beholde so straunge a myracle of nature, the contemplation whereof was no lesse pleasaunt then wonderfull . They say that the meate of this kynde of fyshe, is of good taste, and that many of them are engendred in the seas thereabout . But at the length, this pleasaunt playfelowe was lost, and caryed into the sea by the great ryuer *Attibunicus*, one of the foure which diuide the Iland: For at that tyme there chaunced so terrible a tempest of wynde, and rayne, with suche floods ensuing, that the lyke hath not lightly been heard of. By reason of this tempest, the ryuer *Attibunicus* so ouerflowed the bankes, that it filled the whole vale, and myxt it self with all the other lakes: at which tyme also, this gentle *Matum* & pleasaunt

The ryuer Attibunicus.

compa-

companyon, folowing the vehement course and fall of the floods, was thereby restored to his olde moother and natyue waters, and since that tyme neuer seene agayne. Thus hauyng digressed sufficiently, let vs now come to the situation of the vale. It hath collaterally the mountaynes of *Cibaua* and *Caiguam*, which lyyng it to the South sea. There is an other vale beyonde the mountaynes of *Cibaua* towarde the North, this is called the vale of *Guarionexius*, bycause that before the memorie of man, the predicessours & auncestours of kyng *Guarionexius*, to whom it is descended by ryght of inheritaunce, were euer the Lordes of the whole vale. Of this kyng, wee haue spoken largely in the fyrst narration of the Ilande in the fyrst Decade. This vale is of length from the East to the West, a hundred and fourescore myles, and of breadth from the South to the North, thirtie myles where it is narowest, and fiftie where it is brodest. It beginneth from the region *Canobocoa* by the prouinces of *Huhabo* and *Caiabo*, and endeth in the prouince of *Bainoa*, and the region of *Mariena*: it lyeth in the myddest betweene the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, and the mountaynes of *Cahonai* & *Caxacubuna*. There is no prouince nor any region, which is not notable by the maiestie of mountaynes, fruitfulnesse of vales, pleasauntnesse of hylles, and delectableuesse of playnes, with abundance of faire ryuers running thyrough the same. There are no sides of mountaynes or hylles, no ryuers, which abound not with golde and delycate fyshes, except only one ryuer, which from thyriginal thereof, with the syrynges of the same breakyng foorth of the mountaynes, commeth out salt, and so continueth vntill it perysh: This ryuer is called *Babuan*, and runneth thyrough the myddle of the region *Maguana*, in the prouince of *Bainoa*. They suppose that this ryuer hath made it selfe a way vnder the grounde, by some passages of playster, or salte earth: for there are in the Ilande manye notable salte bayes, whereof we will speake more heereafter. Wee haue declared howe the Ilande is diuided by foure ryuers, and fyue prouinces. There is also an other partition, which is this, The whole Ilande consisteth of the toppes of foure mountaynes, whiche diuide it by the myddest from the East to the West: in all these is abundaunce of nooryshyng moysture, and great plentie of golde, of the caues also of the which, the waters

The great vale of Guarionexius.

Golde in all mountaynes, and golde and fyshe in all ryuers.

Salte bayes.

The ryuers haue their increase from the caues of the mountaynes.

of all the riuers (into the which the caues emptie them selues) haue theyr originall and increase. There are lykewyse in them horryble dennes, obscure and darke vales, and myghtie rockes of stone. There was neuer any noysome beast founde in it, nor yet any rauenyng foure footed beast: no Lion, no Beare, no fierce Tigers, no crafcie Foxes, nor deuouring Woolfes. All thinges are blessed and fortunate, and now more fortunate, for that so many thousandes of men are receyued to bee the sheepe of Christes flocke, all theyr gemes and Images of deuylles being reiected

The hurtfull or ryming beast de Ilande.

The authours excuse.

and vtterly out of memorie. If I chaunce now and then in the discourse of this narration to repeate one thing dyuers tymes, or otherwyse to make digression, I must desyre your holynesse therewith not to bee offended: For whyle I see, heare, and wryte these thinges, mee seemeth that I am heerewith so affected, that for very ioy I feele my mynde stirred as it were with the spirite of Apollo, as were the Sibilles, whereby I am enforced to repeate the same agayne: especially when I consider howe farre the amplitude of our religion spreadeth her wynges. Yet among these so many blessed and fortunate thinges, this one greeueth mee not a lyttle: that these simple poore men, neuer brought vp in labour, doe dayly perysh with intollerable trauayle in the golde mynes, and are thereby brought to such desperation, that many of them kyll them selues, hauyng no regarde to the procreation of chyldren: insomuche that women with chylde, perceyuing that they shall bryng foorth suche as shalbe slaues to the Christians, vse medecines to destroy theyr conception. And albeit that by the kynges letters patentes it was decreed that they should be set at libertie: yet are they constrayned to serue more then seemeth conuenient for free men. The number of the poore wretches is wonderfully extenuate, they were once reckened to bee aboue twelue hundred thousand heades: but what they are now, I abhorre to rehearse. We will therfore let this passe, and returne to the pleasures of *Hispaniola*.

By what meanes the people of the Ilande are greatly consumed.

The pleasures of Hispaniola.

In the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, which are in maner in the myddest of the Ilande, in the prouince of *Caiabo* (where we sayde to bee the greatest plentie of natyue golde) there is a region named *Cotobi*, situate in the cloudes, enuironed with the toppes of hygh mountaynes, and well inhabited: it consisteth of a playne

The region of Cotobi, situate in the cloudes.

of

of.xxv.myles in length, and.xv.in breadth. This playne is hygher then the toppes of other mountaynes : so that these mountaynes may seeme to bee the chiefe progenitours of the other. This playne suffereth alterations of the foure tymes of the yere, as the Spring, Sommer, Autumne, and wynter . Heere the hearbes ware wythered, the trees loose theyr leaues, and the medowes become hoare : the whiche thinges (as wee haue sayde) chaunce not in other places of the Ilande, where they haue onely the Spring and Autumne . The soyle of this playne bryngeth foorth fearne and bramble bushes, bearyng blacke berries, or wylde raspes, which two are tokens of colde regions : Yet is it a fayre region, for the colde thereof is not very sharpe, neyther doeth it afflicte thinhabitantes with frost or snowe. They argue the fruitfulnesse of the region by the fearne, whose stalkes or steames are bygger then a speare or Iauelyn . The sydes of those mountaynes are ryche in golde, yet is there none appoynted to dygge for the same, bycause it shalbe needefull to haue apparelled myners, and such as are vsed to labour : For thinhabitants lyuyng contented with little, are but tender, and can not therefore away with labour, or abyde any colde. There are two ryuers which runne through this region, and fall from the toppes of the present mountaynes : One of these is named *Comoiayxa*, whose course is towarde the West, and falleth into the chanell of *Naiba* : the other is called *Tirecotus*, which rumyng towarde the East, ioyneth with the ryuer of *Iunna* . In the Ilande of *Creta* (now called Candie) as I passed by in my legacie to the Soldane of Alcayr or Babylon in Egypt, the Venetians tolde mee, that there lay such a region in the toppes of the mountaynes of *Ida*, whiche they affirme to bee more fruitefull of wheate corne then any other region of the Ilande : But forasmuch as once the Cretences rebelled against the Venetians, and by reason of the streight and narrow way to the toppes thereof, long defended the region with armes against thaucthoritie of the Senate, and at the length, being forewerped with warres, rendred the same, the Senate commaunded that it should be left desarte, and the streightes of thentraunces to be stopped, least any should ascend to the region without their permission. Yet in the yeere of Christ M. D. ii. licence was graunted to the husbande men to tyll

A plaine in the toppes of mountaynes.

The hygher, the colder.

Moderate colde in the mountaynes.

Golde.

Thinhabitantes of Hispaniola can abyde no labour nor colde.

The Ilande of Creta or Candie, under the dominion of the Venetians.

and manure the region, on such condition, that no such as were apte to the warres myght enter into the same . There is also an other region in *Hispaniola*, named *Cotoby*, after the same name : this diuideth the boundes of the prouinces of *Vbabo* and *Caiabo*. It hath mountaynes, vales, and playnes : but bycause it is barren, it is not muche inhabited : Yet is it richest in golde, for the originall of the abundaunce of golde beginneth herein, insomuch that it is not geathered in small graines and sparkes, as in other places : but is founde whole, massie, and pure, among certaine softe stones, and in the baynes of rockes, by breakyng the stones whereof, they folowe the baynes of golde. They haue founde by experience, that the bayne of golde is a lyuing tree, and that the same by all wayes that it spreadeth and springeth from the roote by the softe poyes and passages of the earth, putteth foorth branches, euen vnto the vppermost parte of the earth, and ceasseth not vntill it discouer it selfe vnto the open ayre : at which tyme, it sheweth foorth certaine beautifull colours in the steede of floures, rounde stones of golden earth in the steede of fruites, and thynne plates in steede of leaues . These are they which are disparcled throughout the whole Ilande by the course of the ryuers, eruptions of the springes out of the mountaynes, and violent falles of the flooddes : For they thincke that such graines are not engendred where they are geathered, especially on the dyre land, but otherwise in the riuers . They say that the roote of the golden tree extendeth to the center of the earth, and there taketh nourishment of increase. For the deeper þ they dygge, they fynde the trunkes thereof to be so much the greater, as farre as they may folowe it for abundaunce of water springing in the mountaines . Of the branches of this tree, they fynde some as small as a thread, & other as bygge as a mans fynger, accordyng to the largenesse or straightnesse of the ryftes and clyftes. They haue sometymes chaunced vpon whole caues, susteyned & borne vp as it were with golden pyllers, and this in the wayes by the which the branches ascende : the which beyng fylled with the substaunce of the trunke creepyng from beneath, the branche maketh it selfe waye by whiche it maye passe out . It is oftentymes diuided by encountryng with some kynde of harde stone : Yet is it in other clyftes noorished by the exhalations and

Pure and massie golde in the region of Cotoby.

The baine of golde is a lyuing tree.

These colours of floures are called Marchasites.

The roote of the golden tree.

The branches of the golden tree.

Caues susteyned with pyllers of golde.

The stones of the golde mynes.

and vertue of the roote. But nowe perhaps you will aske mee what plentie of golde is brought from thence. You shall therfore vnderstand, that onely out of *Hispaniola*, the summe of foure hundred, and sometymes fyue hundred thousande ducates of golde is brought yeerely into Spayne: as may be geathered by the fyfth portion due to the kynges Excheker, which amounteth to the summe of a hundred and fourescore, or fourescore and tenne thousande Castellanes of golde, and sometymes more. What is to be thought of the Ilande of *Cuba* and *Sancti Iohannis* (otherwise called *Burichena*) being both very rych in golde, we will declare further hereafter: to haue sayde thus much of golde, it shall suffyse. We will now therefore speake somewhat of salt, wherewith wee may season and reserue suche thinges as are bought with golde. In a region of the prouince of *Bainoa*, in the mountaynes of *Daiaguo*, about twelue myles distant from the salt lake, called *Caspius*, there are salte bayes in the mountaynes, in a maner as harde as stones, also clearer and whyter then cristall. There are lykewyse such salt bayes, which grow wonderfully in *Laletania* (now called *Cataloma*) in the territorie of the duke of *Cadona*, the chiefe ruler in that region: but suche as knowe them both, affyrme that these of *Bainoa* are most notable. They say also, that this can not bee cleft without wedges and beetelles of Iron: But that of *Laletana* may easly bee broken, as I my selfe haue prooued. They therefore compare this to suche stones as may easily bee broken, and the other to marble. In the prouince of *Caizimu*, in the regions of *Iguanama*, *Caiacoa*, and *Guariagua*, there are spryinges whose waters are of marueylous nature, being in the superficiall or vppermost parte freshe, in the myddest myxte of salte and freshe, and in the lowest parte salte and soure. They thincke that the salt water of the sea issueth out softly, and the freshe to spryng out of the mountaynes: The one falleth downe, and the other ryseth, and are not therefore so vniuersally myxte, whereby the one may vtterly corrupte thother. If any man laye his eare to the grounde neere to any of these spryynges, hee shall perceyue the grounde there to bee so hollow, that the reboundyng noyse of a horseman commyng, may bee heard for the space of three myles, and a footeman one myle. In the last region toward the South, named *Guaccaiarima*, in the

What golde is brought yerely from Hispaniola into Spayn

Salt of the mountaynes, very harde and cleare.

Salt as harde as stones.

Spryinges of salt, freshe, and lower water.

Hollow caues in the grounde.

Certaine wyld men lyuing in caues and dennes.

lordshyp of *Zauma*, they say there are certaine wylde men, which lyue in the caues and deimes of the mountaynes, contented onely with wylde fruites : these men neuer vse the company of any other, nor will by any meanes become tame. They lyue without any certayne dwellyng places, and without tyllage or culturyng of the grounde, as wee reade of them which in olde tyme lyued in the golden age. They say also that these men are without any certayne language : They are sometymes seene, but our men haue yet layde handes on none of them. If at anye tyme they come to the syght of men, and perceyue any makyng towarde them, they flee swifter then a Harte : Yea, they affyrme them to bee swifter then Grehoundes. What one of these solitarie wanderers dyd, it is worth the hearyng. So it is, that our men hauyng granges adioyning neere vnto the thicke woods, certaine of them repaired thither in the moneth of September, in the yeere. M. D. xiiii. in the meane tyme, one of these wylde men came leapyng out of the wood, & approchyng somewhat towarde them with smyling countenaunce, sodeinly snatched vp a chylde of theyrs, being the sonne of the owner of the grange, which he begot of a woman of the Ilande : Hee ranne away with the chylde, and made signes to our men to folowe hym : Many folowed, aswell of our men, as of the naked inhabitantes, but all in vayne. Thus when the pleasaunt wanderer perceyued that the Christians cealled to pursue hym, hee left the chylde in a crosse way by the which the swyneheardes were accustomed to dryue the swyne to theyr pasture. Shortly after, a swyneheard founde the chylde, and brought him home to his father, yet tormenting him selfe for sorowe, supposing that wylde man to haue been one of the kynde of the Canibales, and that his sonne was now deuoured. In the same Ilande they geather pytch, which sweateth out of the rockes, being muche harder and sourer then the pytche of the tree, and is therefore more commodious to calke or defende shyppes agaynst the wormes called *Bromas*, whereof wee haue spoken largelye before. This Ilande also bryngeth foorth pytche in two kyndes of trees, as in the Pyne tree, and an other named *Copeia*. I neede not speake of the Pyne tree, bycause it is engendred and knowne in maner euery where. Let vs therefore speake somewhat of

Men without a certayne language.

Men as swift as Grehounds

A wylde man runneth away with a chylde.

Pitch of the rocke.

Pitch of two kyndes of trees The Pyne tree.

the

the other tree called *Copeia*. Pitche is lykewyse geathered of it, as of the Pyne tree, although some say that it is geathered by distyllyng or droppyng of the wood when it is burnt. It is a straunge thyng to heareof the leafe thereof, and howe necessary prouision of nature is shewed in the same. It is to be thought that it is the tree, in the leaues whereof the Chaldeans (beyng the fyrst fynders of letters) expressed theyr myndes before the vse of paper was knowen. This leafe is a spanne in breadth, and almost rounde. Our men wryte in them with pynnes or nedles, or any suche instrumentes made of metall or wood, in maner as well as on paper. It is to be laughed at, what our men haue perswaded the people of the Ilande as touchyng this leafe. The symple soules beleeue, that at the commaundement of our men, leaues do speake and disclose secretes. They were brought to this credulitie by this meanes. One of our men dwellyng in the citie of *Dominica*, the cheife of the Ilande, delyuered to his seruaunt (beyng a man borne in the Ilande) certayne rosted Connies (whiche they call *Vtias*, beyng no bygger then myse) wyllyng him to cary the same to his frende, whiche dwelt further within the Ilande. This messenger, whether it were that he was thereto constrayned through hunger, or entysed by appetite, deuoured three of the Connies by the way. He to whom they were sent, wrote to his freende in a leafe howe many he receyued. When the maister had looked a whyle on the leafe in the presence of the seruaunt, he sayde thus vnto hym, Ah sonne, where is thy fayth? Coulde thy greedie appetite preuayle so muche with thee, as to cause thee to eate the Connies committed to thy fidelitie? The poore wretche trembling and greatly amased, confessed his faulte, and therewith desyred his maister to tell hym howe he knewe the trueth thereof. This leafe (quod he) whiche thou broughtest me, hath tolde me all. Then he further rehearsed vnto hym the houre of his commyng to his frende, and lykewyse of his departyng when he retourned. And thus they merely deceyue these seely soules, and keepe them vnder obedience: insomuche that they take our men for Goddes, at whose commaundement leaues do disclose suche thynges as they thynke most hyd and secrete. Both the sydes of the leafe receyueth the fourmes

The tree Copeia.

The leafe of a tree in the stede of paper.

They beleeue that leaues do speake.

A prettie storie.

Ignorance causeth admiration.

of

The leafe wherein they wyte.

of letters, euen as dooth our paper. It is thycker then double parchement, and marueylous tough. Whyle it is yet flozyshyng and newe, it sheweth the letters whyte in greene, and when it is dzye, it becommeth whyte and harde, lyke a table of wood, but the letters were yelowe: It dooth not corrupt oz putrify, noz yet looseth the letters though it bee wet, noz by any other meanes, except it be burnt. There is an other tree named *Xagua*, the iuice of whose soure apple, beyng of a darke redde coloure, stayneth and coloureth whatsoeuer is touched therewith, and that so fyrmely, that no washyng can take it away foz the space of twentie dayes. When the apple is full rype, the iuice looseth that strength. The apple is eaten, and of good tast. There is an hearbe also, whose smoke (as we haue rehearsed the lyke before of a certayne wood) is deadly poyson. On a tyme when the kynges assembled togeather, and conspired the destruction of our men, where as they durst not attempt thinterpryse by open warre, theyr deuise was, priuilye to lay many bundels of those hearbes in a certayne house, whiche shortly after they intended to set on fyre, to thintent that our men, makyng hast to quench the same, myght take theyr death with the smoke thereof: But, theyr purposed practyse beyng bewrayed, the aucthours of the deuise were punyshed accordyngly. Nowe (most holy father) forasmuche as your holynesse wryteth, that whatsoeuer we haue wrytten of the newe worlde, dooth please you ryght well, we wyll rehearse certayne thynges out of order, but not greatly from our purpose. Of the settyng the rootes of *Maizium*, *Ages*, *Iucca*, *Battatas*, and such other, beyng their common foode, and of the vse of the same, we haue spoken sufficiently before: But by what meanes they were fyrst applyed to the commoditie of men, we haue not yet declared. We nowe therefore entende to entreate somewhat hereof.

A strange coloure of the iuice of an apple.

An hearbe whose smoke is poyson.

The

The nienth booke of the thyrd Decade.



The kyndes of fruites wherewith thinhabitauntes lyued fyrst.

They say that the fyrst inhabitours lyued contented with the rootes of Dates, and Magueans, which is an hearbe, much lyke vnto that which is commonly called Sengrene or Dypin: also the rootes of Guaiegans, which are rounde and great, muche lyke vnto puffes ꝑ of earth or mushromes. They dyd lykewyse eate *Guaieros*, lyke vnto Persnips, *Cibaios*, lyke Nuttes, *Cibaioes* and Macoanes, like vnto Onions, with diuers other such rootes. They say that after many yeeres, a certaine *Boition*, that is, a wyse old man, saw vppon the bankes syde a bush lyke vnto fenell, & transplanting the roote therof, brought it from wyldenesse to a better kynde, by noorysshing it in gardens. This was the begynning of *Iucca*, which at the fyrst was deadly poison to al such as did eate therof rawe. But for as muche as they parceyued it to be of pleasaunt tast, they determined many wayes to proue the vse therof, and at the length founde by experience, that beyng sodde, or fryed, it was lesse hurtful: by whiche meanes also, they came to the knowledge of the venome lying hyd in the iuise of the roote. Thus by dryng, salting, seasoning, and otherwyse temperyng it, they brought it to theyr fyne bread, whiche they call *Cazabbi*, more delectable and holsome to the stomacke of man then bread made of wheate, because it is of easyer digestion. The same is to be vnderstood of other rootes, and the grayne of *Maizium*, which they haue chosen for theyr chiefe meate among the seedes of nature, as we reade howe *Ceres* the daughter of *Saturnus*, geathered wheate and barley (with suche other corne as are now most in vse among men) in Egypt, of certayne graynes taken out of the mudde dryuen from the mountaynes of Ethiopia by thincrease of the riuer *Nilus*, & left in the playne at such tyme as *Nilus* resorted agayne to his chanell. For the which fact, we reade that the antiquitie gaue diuine honour to *Ceres*, who fyrst noorysshed and increased suche chosen seedes.

Necessitie the mother of al aries.

The fyne bread Cazabbi, made of the rootes of Iucca.

How Ceres fyrst founde wheate and barly in Egypt.

There

There are innumerable kyndes of *Ages*, the varietie wherof, is knowen by theyr leaues and flowers. One kynde of these, is called *Guanaguax*, this is white both within and without. An other named *Guaraguei*, is of violet colour without, and white within. The other kyndes of *Ages*, they call *Zazaueios*, these are redde without and white within. *Squiuetes*, are whyte within and without. *Tunna*, is altogeather of violet coloure. *Hobos* is yelowe both of skynne and inner substaunce. There is an other named *Atibunieix*, the skynne of this is of violet coloure, and the substaunce white. *Aniguamar*, hath his skynne also of violet coloure, and is white within. *Guaccaracca*, hath a white skynne, and the substaunce of violet colour. There are many other, which are not yet brought to vs. But I feare me lest in the rehearsall of of these. I shal prouoke the spurres of malicious persons against me, which wyl scorne these our doynges, for that we haue wytten of many such small thynges, to a prince occupied in suche weyghtie affayres, as vnto your holynesse, vpon whose shoulders resteth the burden of the whole Christian worlde. But I would aske of these malicious enuyers of other mens trauayles, whether Plinie and such other famous writers, when they directed and decicated such thyngs to kynges and princes, entended only to profite them to whom they consecrated the fruite of theyr knowledge. They sometimes intermixt famous things with obscure things, light with heauie, and great with small, that by the furtheraunce of princes, theyr vniuersall posteritie might enioye the fruition of the knowledge of thyngs. At other times also beyng entent about perticular things, and desirous of new things, they occupied them selues in searchyng of perticular tractes and coastes, with such thynges as nature brought foorth in the same, by this meanes to come the better to more absolute and vniuersall knowledge. Let them therfore contemne our doyng, and we wyl laugh to scorne, not theyr ignoraunce and slouthfulnesse, but pernicious curiousnesse: and therewith hauyng pytie of theyr frowarde dispositions, wyll commit them to the venemous Serpentes of whom enuye tooke his fyrst originall. It shall in the meane tyme abundauntly content vs, that these thynges doo please your holynesse, and that you do not dispyse our symple vestures, wherewith we haue onely weaued togea-

The rootes of Ages.

The aucthours excuse.

Plinie.

togeather, and not adourned, geathered, and not described, such maruelous thynges, in the garnyshyng whereof, nature hath sufficiently shewed her cunnyng. Our desyre is none other herein, but for your sake to doo our endeuoure that these thynges may not perysshe: let euery man take hereof what lyketh hym best. Of the sheepe or Bullocke solde in the market, nothyng remayneth in the euenyng, because the shoulder pleaseth one, the legge an other, and the necke an other: yea some haue most phantasie to the bowels, and some to the feete. Thus hauyng penough wandered, let vs returne to our purpose, and declare with what wordes they salute the kynges chyldren when they are fyrst borne, and howe they applye the begynning of their liues to the end, and why their kinges are called by many names. Therefore when the kyng hath a sonne borne, suche as dwell neare about his pallace or village, repayre to the queenes chamber, where one saluteth the newe borne chylde with one name, and an other with an other name. God saue thee thou shynyng lampe, sayth one: An other calleth hym, bryght and cleare: Some name hym the victourer of his enimies: and other some, the puissaunt conquerour descended of blood royall, and bryghter then gold: with dyuers other suche vayne names. Therefore lyke as euery of the Roman emperours was called *Adiabenicus*, *Parthicus*, *Armenicus*, *Dacicus*, *Gothicus*, and *Germanicus*, according to the titles of their parentes and aunceslours: euen so by thimposition of names inuented by other kinges, *Beuchicus Anacacoa* the lord of the region of *Xaragua* (of whom and of the wyse woman *Anachaona* his syster, we haue spoken largly in the first Decade) was called by all these names folowyng, *Tureigua Hobin*, whiche is asmuche to saye as, a kyng shynyng as bryght as laton, *Starei*, that is, bryght, *Huibo*, hyghnesse, *Duiheynequen*, a ryche flood. With all these names, and more then fourtie other suche, dooth kyng *Beuchius* magnifie hym selfe as often as he commaundeth any thing to be doone, or causeth any proclamation to be made in his name. If the cryer by negligence leaue out any of these names, the kyng thynketh it to sounde greatly to his contumely and reproche: The lyke is also of other. Howe fondely they vse them selues in makyng theyr testamentes, we wyll nowe declare. They leaue thinheritaunce of their kyngdomes to theldest

By what names they salute the kyngs children when they are borne.

The names and tytles of the Romane Emperours.

Howe they make theyr testamentes.

sonnes

sonnes of theyr eldest systers. If she fayle, to theldest of the seconde syster, and so of the thyrde if the seconde also fayle: For they are out of doubte that those chyldren come of theyr blood, but the chyldren of theyr owne wyues, they counte to be not legitimate. If there remayne none of theyr systers chyldren, they leaue thinheritaunce to theyr brothers: and if they fayle, it descendeth to theyr owne sonnes. Last of all, if all these faile, they assigne it to the woorthiest, as to him that is of greatest power in all the Ilandes, that he may defende theyr subiectes from their auncient enimies. They take as many wyues as them lysteth. They suffer the best beloued of the kynges wyues and concubines to be buryed with hym. *Anachaona* the syster of *Beuchius* the kyng of *Xaragua*, being a woman of such wisedome and cunnyng, that in makyng of rhymes and balattes she was counted a prophetisse among the best, commaunded, that among all the wyues and concubines of the kyng her brother, the fayrest (whose name was *Guanahattabenechina*) shoulde be buried alyue with hym, and two of her waytyng maydes with her: She would surely haue appointed diuers other to that offyce, if she had not been otherwyse perswaded by the prayers of certayne fryers of saint Fraunces order, whiche chaunced then to be present. They saye that this *Guanahattabenechina* had none in all the Ilande comparable to her in beautie. She buryed with her all her iewels, and twentie of her best ornamentes. Their custome is, to place besyde euery of them in their sepultures, a cuppe full of water, & a portion of the fyne bread of *Cazabbi*. In *Xaragua*, the region of this kyng *Beuchius*, and in *Hazua*, part of the region of *Caiabo*, also in the fayre vale of salt and freshe lakes, and lykewyse in the region of *Yaquino* in the prouince of *Bainoa*, it rayneth but seldome: In al these regions are fosses or trenches made of olde tyme, whereby they conueye the waters in order to water theyr fieldes, with no lesse art then do thinhabitours of newe Carthage, and of the kingdome of *Murcien* in *Spartaria* for the seldome fall of rayne. The region of *Maguana*, diuideth the prouince of *Bainoa* from *Caiabo*, and *Zauana* from *Guaccaiarima*. In the deepe vales, they are troubled with rayne more often then nedeth. Also the confines of the chiefe citie, named saint Dominike, are moister thē is necessary. In other places, it raineth moderatly

So dyd great Alexander.

The kynges wyues & concubines are buryed with hym.

They burye theyr iewels with them.

A dreame of an other lyfe after this.

Where it rayneth but seldome.

Where it rayneth much.

moderatly. There are therfore in the Iland of *Hispaniola*, diuers and variable motions of the elementes, as we reade the lyke of many other regions. Of theyr colonies or mantions which the Spaniardes haue erected in this Iland, we haue spoken sufficiently before. They haue since that tyme builded these villages, *Portus platæ*, *Portus Regalis*, *Lares*, *Villanoua*, *Azuam*, and *Salus terra*. Hauing sayde thus much of the Iland of *Hispaniola*, the mother and lady of the other Ilandes, and as it were *Tethys* the most beautifull wyfe of *Neptunus* the god of the sea, let vs nowe entreate somewhat of her Nymphes and fayre *Nereides*, which wayte vppon her, and adourne her on euery syde. We wyll therfore begyn at the nearest, called the newe *Arethusa*, so named of the fountaine *Arethusa* in the Iland of Sicilie. This is famous by reason of a spring, but otherwyse vnprofitable. Our men named it of late *Duas Arbores*, because it hath onlye two trees growing in it: neere vnto the which is a fountayne that commeth from the Iland of *Hispaniola*, through the secrete passages of the earth vnder the sea, and breaketh foorth in this Inde, as the ryuer *Alpheus* in *Achaia* runneth vnder the sea from the citie of *Elde*, and breaketh foorth in ỹ Iland of Sicilie in the fountayne *Arethusa*. That the fountayne of this newe *Arethusa*, hath his originall from the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, it is manifest heereby, that the water issuyng out of the fountayne, bryngeth with it the leaues of many trees whiche growe in *Hispaniola*, and not in this Iland. They saye that the fountayne hath his originall from the ryuer *Yiamiroa*, in the region of *Guacaiarima*, confinyng with the lande of *Zauana*. This Ilande is not past a myle in circuite, and commodious for fishermen. Directly towards the East (as it were the porter keepyng the entrye to *Tethys*) lieth the Ilande of *Sancti Iohannis* (otherwyse called *Burichena*) whereof we haue spoken largely before: this aboundeth with golde, and in fruitefull soile is equall with her mother *Hispaniola*: in this are many colonies or mansions of Spaniardes, which apply them selues to geatheryng of golde. Towards the west on the North syde, great *Cuba* (for the longnesse thereof, long supposed to be continent or fyrme lande) wardeth our *Tethys* on the backe halfe. This is much longer then *Hispaniola*, and from the East to the west, is diuided in the myddest

Variable motions of the Elementes.

The colonies and villages whiche the Spaniardes haue builded.

The other Ilandes about Hispaniola.

The Iland of Arethusa.

A spring running vnder the sea from Hispaniola to Arethusa.

The Ilande of Sancti Johannis.

The Ilande of Cuba.

middeſt with the circle called *Tropicus Cancri*. *Hiſpaniola* and the other lying on the South ſyde of this, are encluded almoſt in the mydde ſpace betweene the ſayde Tropike and the Equinoctiall line, which many of the olde wryters ſuppoſed to be vnhabitable and deſart, by reaſon of the feruent heate of the Sonne in that clyme, as they coniectured: but they were deceyued in theyr opinion. They affirme that rycher golde mynes are founde in *Cuba*, then in *Hiſpaniola*. They ſay alſo that euen now whyle I wryte theſe thynges, there is golde geathered togeather redy to the meltyng, amountyng to the quantitie of a hundred and foure-ſcore thouſand Caſtellans of golde, an argument ſurely of great rycheſſe. *Iamaica* is more towards the South then theſe, and is a pleaſaunt and fruitful Iſlande, of ſoyle apt for corne, graffes, and ſettes, it conſiſteth of onely one mountayne: the inhabitantes are warrelyke men, and of good wyt, *Colonus* compared it to Scicilie in bygneſſe. They whiche of late ſearched it more exactly, ſay that it is ſomewhat leſſe, but not muche. It is thought to be without golde and precious ſtones, as the lyke was ſuppoſed of *Cuba* at the begynning. The Iſlande of *Guadalupea* (fyrſt named *Caraqueira*) lying on the South ſyde of *Hiſpaniola*, is foure degrees nearer the Equinoctiall. It is eaten and indented with two gulfes (as we reade of great Britanie, nowe called England, and Calidonia, nowe called Scotland) beyng in maner two Iſlandes. It hath famous Portes. In this they founde that gumme whiche the Apothecaries call *Animæ Album*, whoſe fume is holſome agaynſt reumes and heauineſſe of the head. The tree whiche engendreth this gumme, beareth a fruite much like vnto a Date, beyng a ſpanne in length. When it is opened, it ſeemeth to conteyne a certayne ſweete meale. As our huſbandmen are accuſtomed to reſerue Cheſtnuts, and ſuch other harde fruites, all the winter, ſo do they the Dates of this tree, beyng muche lyke vnto a Fygge tree. They founde alſo in this Iſlande, Pyne trees, of the beſt kynde, and ſuch other dayntie dyſhes of nature, whereof we haue ſpoken largelye before: Yea they thynke that the inhabitauntes of other Iſlandes, had theyr ſeedes of ſo many pleaſaunt fruites from hence. For the Canibales, beyng a wylde and wandering people, and ouerrunnyng all the countreye about them, to

Habitable regions vnder the Equinoctial.

The riche golde mines of Cuba.

The Iland of Iamaica.

The Iland of Guadalupea.

England and Scotland

The gum called Anime album.

Dates.

Pine trees.

The Canibales.

to hunte for mans flesshe, were accustomed to bryng home with them whatsoeuer they founde straunge or profytable in anye place: They are intractable, and will admit no straungers. It shall therefore bee needefull to ouercome them with great power: For as well the women as men, are experte archers, and vse to inuenome theyr arrowes. When the men go foorth of the lande a man huntyng, the women manfully defend their coastes agaynst suche as attempt to inuade the same. And hereby I suppose it was thought, that there were Ilandes in the Ocean, inhabited onely with women, as *Colonus* the Admiral him selfe perswaded mee, as I haue sayde in the fyrst Decade. This Ilande hath also fruitefull mountaynes and playnes, and notable ryuers. It nourysheth hony in trees, and in the caues of rockes, as in *Palma* one of the Ilandes of *Canarie*, hony is geathered among the bryers and bramble bushes. About .xviii. myles Eastward from this Ilande, lyeth an Ilande which our men named *Desiderata*, beyng .xx. myles in circuite, and verye fayre. Also about tenne myles from *Guadalupea* towarde the South, lyeth the Ilande of *Galanta*, beyng thirtie myles in circuite, and plaine: It was so named for the neatenesse and beautifulnesse therof. Nyene myles distant from *Guadalupea* towarde the East, there are sixe small Ilandes, named *Todos Sanctos*, or *Barbata*: these are full of rockes, & barren, yet necessary to be knowen to such as vse to trauayle the seas of these coastes. Agayne, from *Guadalupea* .xxv. myles towarde the North, there is an Ilande named *Monsserratus*, conteynyng in circuite fourtie myles, hauyng also in it a mountayne of notable heyght. The Ilande named *Antiqua*, distante from *Guadalupea* thirtie myles, is about fourtie myles in circuite. *Diegus Colonus* the sonne and heyre of *Christiphorus Colonus*, tolde me that his wyfe (whom he lefte in the Ilande of *Hispaniola* at his comming into Spayne to the courte) did wyte vnto him, that of late among the Ilandes of the Canibales, there is one founde which aboundeth with golde. On the lefte syde of *Hispaniola* towarde the South, neere vnto the hauen *Beata*: there lyeth an Ilande named *Portus Bellus*: they tell marueilous thinges of the monsters of the sea about this Ilande, and especially of the Tortoyses, for they say that they are bygger then great rounde targettes. At suche tyme as the

Whereby it was thought that there were Ilandes of women.

Hony in trees and rockes.

The Ilande Desiderata.

The Ilande Galanta.

The Ilandes of Todos Sanctos, or Barbata.

The Ilande Monsserratus

The Ilande Antiqua.

The Ilande Portus Bellus

Great Tortoyses.

The generation of Tortoyses.

heate of nature moueth them to generation, they come fooyth of the sea, and makyng a deepe pyt in the sande, they lay thyee oy foure hundyed egges therein. When they haue thus emptied theyr bagge of conception, they put as muche of the sande agayne into the pyt, as may suffyse to couer the egges, and so resoyte agayne to the sea, nothyng carefull of theyr succession. At the day appoynted of nature to the pyocreation of these beastes, there creepeth out a multitude of Toytoyses, as it were pysmares swarmyng out of an ant hyll: and this onely by the heate of the Sunne, without any helpe of theyr parentes. They say that theyr egges are in maner as bygge as Geese egges. They also compare the flesshe of these Toytoyses, to bee equall with beale in taste. There are beyde these, innumerable Ilandes, the whiche they haue not yet searched, noy yet is it greatly necessary to syft this meale so fynely. It may suffyse to bnderstande that there are large landes, and many regions, which shall heereafter receyue our nations, tounges, and maners, and therewith embyase our religion. The *Troyans* dyd not sodeinly replenyshe Asia, the *Tyrians* Libya, noy the *Greekes* and *Phenices* Spayne. As touchyng the Ilandes whiche lye on the Noyth syde of *Hispaniola*, I haue let passe to speake: Foy albeit they are commodious foy tyllage and fyshyng, yet are they lefte of the Spanyardes as pooye and of small value. We will nowe therefoye take our leaue of this olde *Tethis*, with her moyst and watery Nymphes, and receyue to our new acquayntance the beautifull lady of the South sea, rychly crowned with great pearles, the Ilande of *Dites* beyng ryche both in name and in treasure. In my Epistle booke which I sent vnto your holynesse this last yeere, I declared howe *Vaschus Nunnez Balboa*, the Captayne of them which passed ouer the daungerous mountaynes toward the South sea, learned by repoyt, that in the pyospecte of those coastes there laye an Ilande aboundyng with pearles of the greatest soyt, and that the kyng thereof was ryche, and of great power, infestyng with warres the other kynges his boyderers, and especially *Chiapes* and *Tumacchus*: Wee declared further, howe at that tyme it was left vntouched by reason of the ragyng tempestes which troubled that South sea thyee monethes in the yeere. But

The Egges of Toytoyses.

Innumerable Ilandes.

Troyans.
Tyrians.
Greekes.
Phenitians.
The Noyth Ilandes.

The Ilandes of the south sea.

The Ilande of pearles.

it

It is now better knowne to our men, who haue now also brought that fierce kyng to humanitie, and conuerted him from a cruell Tyger, to one of the meeke sheepe of Christes flocke, sanctifyed with the water of baptisme, with all his family and kyngdome. It shall not therefore bee from our purpose to declare, by the gouernaunce of what captaines, or by what meanes these thinges were so happyly atchyued.

Wylde beastes must be tamed with the rod.

The tenth booke of the thyrde Decade.

AT the arryuall of *Petrus Arias* the newe gouernour of *Dariena*, he gaue commaundement that one *Gasper Moralis* should take in hande the expedition to the Iland of *Dites*. He therfore tooke his byage first to *Chiapes* and *Tumacchus* kings of the South, whom *Vaschus* before had conciled and left friends to the Christians. They friendly and magnifically entertayned our men, who prepared them a nauie of the kyngs boates to passe ouer into this Ilande, which they call *Dites*, & not *Margarita* or *Margaritea*, although it abounde with pearles, which in the latin tonge are called *Margaritæ*. For they first called an other by this name, which lyeth next to the mouth of *Os Draconis* in the region of *Paria*, in the which also is found great plenty of pearles. *Gasper* brought with him onely .lx. armed men to the Ilande, for that hee could conuey ouer no greater number, by reason of the smalnesse and narownes of their boates or barkes, which they call *Culchas*, made of one whole peece of timber, as we haue sayd before. The kyng of ỹ Iland came fooryth agaynst them fiercely, w̃ cruell and threatning countenance, & with a great bande of armed men, crying in maner of a larome, & in token of the battaile, *Guazzauara, Guazzauara*, which is as much to say as, battayle against ỹ enemy, & is (as it were) a watch word to giue thonset: wherwith also they threw their darts, for they haue not thuse of bowes. They were so obstinate & desperate, that they assailed our men w̃ foure *Guazzauaras*, that is, battayles At the length our men with certaine of *Chiapes* and *Tumacchus* men (being olde enemies to this kyng of the Ilande) got the vpper hande, by reason they assayled

An expedition to the Ilande of Dites in the south sea.

The Ilande of Margaritea.

Os Draconis, Paria.

A conflict.

the kyng sodeinly and vnawares. Yet was he determined to assemble a greater power, and once agayne to attempt the fortune of warre, but that he was otherwyse perswaded by the kynges his borderers, whiche counselled him to geue ouer, and submit him selfe, sometyme by thexample of them selues & other, threatnyng the destruction of his flouryshyng kyngdome, and otherwhyles declaryng vnto him the humanitie and gentlenesse of our men, by whose friendshyp hee might obteyne honour and quietnesse to him and his: willyng him furthermore to consider, what chaunced vnto them which the yeere before resisted and aduentured the hasarde of the battayle, as dyd these kynges, *Poncha, Pocchorrosa, Quarequa, Chiapes,* and *Tumacchus*, with such other. By these persuasions, the kyng submitted him selfe, and came friendly to our men, whom he conducted to his palace, which they say to bee marueylously adourned and princelyke. As soone as they entred into the pallace, hee brought foorth a basket of curious workemanshyp, and full of pearles, which he gaue them. The summe of these pearles amounted to the weight of a hundred and ten poundes, after. viii. vnces to the pounde: being agayne rewarded of our men, with such tryfles as they brought with them of purpose, as garlandes of Christall, and glasse, and other counterfet stones of dyuers colours, with lookyng glasses also, and laton belles, and especially two or three Iron hatchets (whiche they more esteeme then great heapes of golde) hee thought him selfe abundantly recompenced. They laugh our men to scorne, that they will depart with so great and necessarie a thing for any summe of golde: affyrmyng an ape or hatchet to bee profitable for many vses of men, and that golde serueth onely for wanton pleasures, and not to be greatly necessary. Beyng therefore ioyfull and glad of the friendship of our men, he tooke the captayne by the hande, and brought him with certayne of his familiars to the hyghest towre of his palace, from whence they might prospecte the mayne sea: then castyng his eyes about him on euery syde, and lookyng towarde the East, he sayde vnto them, Beholde, heere lyeth open before you the infinite sea, extended beyonde the sunne beames: then turnyng hym towarde the South and West, he signified vnto them that the lande which laye before their eyes, the toppes of whose great mountaynes they

The kyng of the Ilande of Bites submitteth him selfe.

The kynges pallace.

A hundreth and ten pounde weight of pearles.

Axes and hatchets more esteemed then golde.

The kynges wordes.

they myght see, was exceedyng large : then commyng some- Ilandes ryche in golde and pearles.
what neerer, hee sayde, Beholde these Ilandes on the ryght hande and on the left, which all obey vnto our empyre, and are ryche, happye, and blessed, if you call those landes blessed whiche abounde with golde and pearle . We haue in this Ilande litle plentie of golde: but the deepe places of all the seas about these Ilandes are full of pearles, whereof you shall receyue of mee as many as you will requyre, so that yee persist in the bonde of friendshyp which you haue begunne . I greatly desyre your friendshyp, and woulde gladly haue the fruition of your thinges, whiche I set muche more by then millions of pearles : You shall therefore haue no cause to doubt of any vnfaythfulnesse or breache of friendshyp on my behalfe. Our men gaue hym lyke friendly wordes, and encouraged him with many fayre promyses to doe as hee had sayde. When our men were now in a readynesse to depart, they couenaunted with him to paye yeerely to the great kyng of Castyle a hundred pounde weyght of pearles . Hee gladly agreed to C. pounde weyght of pearles yeerely for a tribute.
theyr request, and tooke it for no great thyng, nor yet thought him selfe any whit the more to become tributarie. With this kyng they founde suche plentie of Hartes and Cunnies, that Plentie of Hartes and Cunnies.
our men, standyng in theyr houses, myght kyll as many as them lyst with their arrowes . They lyue heere very pleasauntly, hauyng great plentie of all thinges necessary. This Iland is scarsely sixe degrees distant from the Equinoctiall lyne . They haue the same maner of bread, made of rootes and the graine of *Maxium*, and wyne made of seedes and fruites, euen as they haue in the region of *Comogra*, and in other places, aswell in the Ilandes, as in the firme lande. This kyng is now baptised, with all his family and subiectes. His desyre was, at his baptisme, to bee named *Petrus Arias*, after the name of the gouernour. When our men departed, he accompanied them to the sea syde, and furnyshed them with boates to returne to the continent. Our men diuided the pearles among them, reseruyng the fift portion to bee delyuered to thoffycers of the kynges Exchekar in those parts. They say that these pearles were maruelous precious, faire, orient, & exceeding byg: insomuch that they brought many with them bygger then hasell nuttes. Of what pryce & va- Wyne of fruits and seeds. The kyng is baptised. The fyft part of pearles due to the kyng. Byg pearles.

A pearle for a Pope.

lue they myght bee, I consider by one pearle the which *Paulus*, predicessour to your holines, bought at the second hand of a marchant of Uenice for foure & fourtie thousand ducates: Yet among those which were brought from this Ilãd, there was one bought euen in *Dariena*, for a thousand & two hundred Castellans of gold: this was almost as byg as a meane walnut, & came at ỳ length to the handes of *Petrus Arias* the gouernour, who gaue it to that noble and faythfull woman his wyfe, of whose maner of departure with her husbande, we haue made mention before. We must then needes thinke that this was very precious, whiche was bought so deare among such a multitude of pearles, where they were not bought by one at once, but by poundes, and at the least by ounces. It is also to be thought that the Uenecian marchaunt bought his for no great summe of money in the East partes: But he solde it the dearer, for that he chaunced to lyue in those lasciuious and wanton dayes, when men were giuen to such nyse and superfluous pleasures, and met with a marchant for his purpose. But let vs now speake somewhat of the shelfyshes, in the which pearles are engendred . It is not vnknowne to your holynesse, that Aristotle, and Plinie his folower, were of dyuers opinions as concernyng the generation of pearles . But these Indians, and our men, rest onely in one assertion, not assentyng to them in any other : as, eyther that they wander in the sea, or, that they moue at any tyme after they are borne . They will therefore that there be certayne greene places, as it were meadowes, in the bottome of the sea, bringing forth an hearbe much lyke vnto Tyme, and affyrme that they haue seene the same, and that they are engendred, norysshed, and growe therein, as wee see thincrease and succession of Dysters to grow about them selues: Also that these fyshes delyghteth not in the conuersation or company of the sea dogges, nor yet to bee contented with onely one, two, or three, or at the most foure pearles, affyrmyng that in the fyshyng places of the kyng of this Ilande, there was founde a hundred pearles in one fyshe, the whiche *Caspar Moralis* the captayne him selfe, and his companions, diligently numbred : For it pleased the kyng at their beyng there, and in their presence, to commaunde his dyuers to goe a fyshyng for those kynde of fyshes . They compare the matri-

Apyse and superfluous pleasures.

Dyuers opinions of the generation of pearles.

Hearbes in the bottome of the sea.

A hundred pearles in one shell fyshe.

An other pearle of great price.

ces

ces of these fyshes, to the places of conception in Hennes, in the whiche theyr egges are engendred in great multitudes and clusters, and beleue that these fyshes bryng foorth theyr bryth in lyke maner. For the better proofe whereof, they say that they founde certayne pearles commyng foorth of their matrices, as beyng nowe come to the tyme of theyr full ryppenesse, and moued by nature to come out of theyr moothers wombe, openyng it selfe in tyme conuenient: lykewyse, that within a whyle after, they sawe other succeede in lyke maner. So that to conclude, they sawe some commyng foorth, and other some yet abydyng the tyme of theyr perfection: which beyng complete, they also became loose, and opened the matrice. They perceyued the pearles to bee inclosed in the myddest of theyr bellyes, there to bee nourished and increase, as an infant sucking his moothers pappes within her wombe, before hee moue to come foorth of her priuie places. And if it chaunce any of these shelfyshes to bee founde scattered in the sande of the sea (as I my selfe haue seene Dysters disparcled on the shores in dyuers places of the Ocean) they affyrme that they haue been violently dryuen thither from the bottome of the sea by force of tempestes, and not to haue wandered thither of them selues: But, that they become whyte by the clearenesse of the morryng deawe, or ware yelowe in troubled weather, or otherwyse that they seeme to reioyce in fayre weather and cleare ayre, or contrarywyse, to bee as it were astonyshed and dymme in thunder and tempestes, with suche other: the perfect knowledge hereof, is not to bee looked for at the handes of these vnlearned men, whiche handle the matter but grossely, and enquyre no further then occasion serueth. Yet doe they affyrme by theyr experience and industrie of the dyuers, that the greatest pearles lye in the deepest places, they of the meane sort hygher, and the least hyghest of all, and neerer to the brymme of the water: And say therfore, that the greatest doe not wander, but that they are created, nourished, and increase in the deepest places of the sea, whyther fewe dyuers (and that but seeldome) dare aduenture to diue so deepe to geather them, aswell for feare of the sea crabbes, whiche wander among these pearle fyshes to feede of them, and for feare of other monsters of the sea, as also least their breath should fayle them in to long

The matrice of the pearle fyshe.

The bryth of pearles.

Where the biggest, meane, and least pearls are engendred.

Sea crabbes.

The sea muscles wherein pearles are engendred.

remayning in the water: And this they say to bee the cause why the oldest (& therfore byggest) sea muscles inhabite ỹ deepest places, from whence they are not lightly moued by tempestes. Furthermore, how much the bygger & older these fyshes are, they say that in their larger matrices, the greater number & bigger pearles are founde, & that for this cause there are fewer founde of the byggest sort. They thinke also, that when they first fall from their fyshes in the deepe places, they are deuoured of other fyshes, bycause they are not yet hearde. Againe, the smallest differ from the byggest in a certaine swelling or impostumation, which ỹ Spaniardes call a tympany: For they deny that to be a pearle which in olde muscles cleaueth faste to the shell, but that it is a wart, which being rased from the shell with a fyle, is rounde & bygbt but onely of one syde, and not precious, being rather of the nature of the fysbe it selfe, then of a pearle. They confesse that they haue seene certayne of these muscles cleauyng on rockes, yet these but fewe, and nothyng worth. It is also to bee thought, that the pearle fyshes or sea muscles which are founde in India, Arabia, the redde sea, or Taprobana, are ruled in suche order as the aforenamed famous aucthours haue written: For their opinion herein is not vtterly to bee reiected, forasmuch as they were learned men, and trauayled long in the searchyng of these thinges. But wee haue nowe spoken sufficiently of these sea fyshes, and of their egges, which the fonde nyseneſſe and wantonneſſe of men haue made deerer then the egges of hennes or geese. Let vs therefore entreate somewhat of other particular thinges, which are come to our knowledge of late. Wee haue elswhere largely described the mouthes of the gulfe of *Vraba*, with sundry and variable regions diuided with the manifolde gulfes of that sea: But as concernyng the West coastes, in the which our men haue buylded houses, and planted their habitations on the bankes of *Dariena*, I haue no newe matter to wryte. Yet as touchyng the East partes of the gulfe, I haue learned as followeth. They say that the vniuersall lande of the East region of the gulfe, from the corner thereof farre reachyng into the sea, and from the extreme or vttermoste mouth of the same, receyuyng the waters of the sea whiche fall into it, euen vnto *Os Draconis* and *Paria*, is by one generall name called *Cari-*

The regions of the East syde of the gulfe of Vraba.

bana.

bana, of the *Caribes* or Canibales whiche are founde in euery region in this tract: But from whence they had theyr perticuler originall, and howe, leauyng theyr native soyle, they haue spredde theyr generation so farre, lyke a pestiferous contagion, we wyll nowe declare. Therefore from the fyrst front reachyng foorth into the sea (in whose tract we sayde that *Fogeda* fastened his foote) towarde the corner, about niene myles distant, there lyeth a village of *Caribana*, named *Futeraca*: three myles distant from this, is the village of *Vraba*, of the whiche it is thought that the whole gulfe toke his name, bycause this village was once the head of the kyngdome. About syxe myles from this, is *Feti*: Niene myles from *Feti*, is *Zerema*: And about twelue myles from this, *Sorache*. Our men founde all these villages full of people, al the whiche gyue themselues onely to manhuntyng: Insomuche that if they lacke enimies agaynst whom they may keepe warre, they exercise crueltie agaynst them selues, and eyther slaye the one the other, or els dryue the vanquyshed to flyght. Whereby it is apparant, that by these theyr continuall warres, and dryuyng the one the other out of theyr countreys, this infection hath gone so farre, not onely on the fyrme lande, but also into the Ilandes. I was also aduertised of an other thyng, the whiche to my iudgement seemeth woorthy to be put in memorye. One *Coruales*, a iudge in causes of lawe among the Spanyardes of *Dariena*, sayth, that on a tyme walkyng abrode with his booke in his hande, he met by the way with a fugityue, whiche had fledde from the great landes lying farre towarde the west, and remayned here with a Kyng with whom he was entertayned. When this man perceyued the lawyer lookyng on his booke, marueylyng thereat, he came runnyng vnto hym, and by interpretours of the kyng whom he serued, spake thus vnto hym, Haue you also bookes, wherein you may reserue thynges in perpetual memory? and letters, whereby you may declare your mynde to suche as are absent? And herewith desyred that the booke myght be opened vnto hym, supposyng that he shoulde therein haue founde the letters of his owne countrey: But when he sawe them vnlyke, he sayde further, that in his countrey there were cities fortified with walles, and gouerned by lawes, and that the people

The region of Caribana.

The original of the Canibales.

The villages of Caribana.

Manhunters.

Bookes: Loke in the beginnyng of the booke of the landes lately founde.

Circumcised people.

people also vsed apparell: but of what religion they were, I dyd not learne. Yet had our men knowledge both by the woordes and signes of this fugitiue, that they were circumcised. What nowe thynke you hereby (most holy father?) Or what do you diuine may come hereof, when tyme shall subdue all these vnder your throne? Let vs nowe entermyngle certayne small thynges among these great matters. I haue not thought good to pretermit that which chaunced to *Iohannes Solisius*, who, to searche the South syde of the supposed continent, departed with three shyppes from the port *Ioppa* (not farre distant from the Ilandes of *Gades* or Cales in the Ocean) the fourth day of the Ides of September, in the yeere .M.D.xv. or what successe *Iohannes Pontius* had, whom the newe gouernour *Petrus Arias* appoynted to banquyshe and destroy the Caribes or Canibales, deuourers of mans flesshe: also to what ende the voyages of the other captaines came, which were sent foorth diuers waies at the same tyme, as *Gonzalus Badaiocius*, *Franciscus Bezarra*, and *Valleius*, *Iohannes Solicius* tooke the matter in hand in an euyll houre. He sayled beyond the point of saint Augustine (which they cal *Cabo.S. Augustini*) toward the South side of the supposed continent beyond the Equinoctial line. For (as we haue said before) that poynt reacheth Southwarde to the seuenth degree of the South pole, called the pole Antartike. He proceeded in that voyage syxe hundred leagues, and found the lande from the poynt to extende so farre towarde the South beyonde the Equinoctial, that he came to the thirtieth degree of ỳ South pole. As he sayled thus forwarde, hauyng nowe on his backe halfe the starres named *Caput Draconis*, (that is, the Dragons head) and the regions of *Paria* lying northwarde from hym, & prospectyng towarde the pole Artyke, he chaunced to fall into the handes of the filthy Canibales: For these craftie foxes seemed to make signes of peace, when in theyr myndes they conceyued a hope of a dayntie banquet, & espying their enimies a farre of, began to swalowe theyr spettle, as their mouth watered for greedines of theyr pray. As vnhappy *Solisius* descended, with as many of his company as coulde enter into the boate of the byggest shyppe, sodenly a great multitude of thinhabitantes burst foorth vppon them, and slue them euery man with clubbes, euen in the syght of theyr felowes.

What chaunced to the Capitaynes whiche the gouernour sent dyuers wayes.

Looke decade iii. liber. vi.

The viage of Johannes Solisius.

Cab. S. Augustini.

John Solisius is slayne of the Canibales.

The fyrenes of the Canibales.

felowes. They caried away the boate, and in a moment broke it all to fytters, not one escaping. Theyr furie not thus satisfied, they cut the slayne men in peeces, euen vppon the shore, where theyr felowes myght behold this horrible spectacle from the sea. But they beyng stricken with feare through this example, durst not come foorth of their shyppes, or deuise how to reuenge the death of theyr Captayne and companyons. They departed therefore from these vnfortunate coastes, and by the way ladyng theyr shyppe with brasell, returned home agayne with losse, and heauie cheare. Of these thynges I was aduertised of late by theyr owne letters. What they haue els doone, I shall haue more perticular knowledge hereafter. *Iohannes Pontius* was also repulsed by the Canibales in the Iland of *Guadalupea*, beyng one of the chiefe Ilandes of theyr habitation. For when they sawe our men a farre of on the sea, they lay in ambushe, sodenly to inuade them when they shoulde come alande. Our men sent foorth a fewe foote men, and with them theyr Laundresses to washe theyr shertes and sheetes: For from the Iland of *Ferrea*, beyng one of the Ilandes of Canarie (euen vnto this Iland, for the space of foure thousand and two hundred myles) they had seene no land, where they myght fynde any fresh water, forasmuche as in all this large space the Ocean is without Ilandes. At theyr commyng therefore to lande, the Canibales assayled them, caried away the women, and put the men to suche distresse, that fewe of them escaped. By reason whereof, *Pontius* beyng greatly discomfited, durst not inuade the Canibales, fearyng theyr venomed arrowes, which these naked manhunters can direct most certaynely. Thus good *Pontius* fayling of his purpose, was fayne to geue ouer the Canibales, whom (being safe & vnder the house roofe) he threatned to vanquish and destroy. Whyther he went from thence, or what new thyngs he founde, I haue as yet no further knowledge. By these myshortunes, *Solisius* lost his lyfe, & *Pontius* his honour. Let vs nowe speake of an other, whose enterpryse came to lyke purpose the same yeere. *Iohannes Aiora*, borne in the citie of *Corduba*, a man of noble parentage, sent in steade of the Lieuetenant (as we haue saide) more couetous of gold, then careful of his charge, or desirous of prayse for well deseruing, sought occasions of quarelyng agaynst

Brasyle.

Iohannes Pontius is repulsed by the Canibales.

The voyage of Iohannes Aiora.

Looke Decade iii. liber vi.

agaynst the kynges, and spoyled many, violentlye extoryng gold of them agaynst ryght & equitie: and further, handeled them so extremely, that of frendes they became most cruel enemies, insomuch that they ceassed not with desperat myndes, by al meanes they coulde, to slay our men openly or priuilie. By reason whereof it is come to passe, that where before they bartered quietly, exchanging ware for ware, they are nowe fayne to do all thynges by force of armes . When he had thus exacted a great quantitie of golde of them (as it is sayde) he fled priuilye, and tooke away a shyp with hym by stealth, as the common rumour goeth, nor yet hytherto haue we hard whyther he went, or where he is arryued. Some suspect that *Petrus Arias* the gouernour should consent to his departure, because this *Iohannes Aiora*, is brother to *Gonsalus Aiora*, the kynges historiographer, a man both learned, and expert in the discipline of warre, and so much the gouernours frend, that these two among a fewe, may be counted examples of rare amitie . I my selfe also am greatly bounde vnto them both, and haue long enioyed their frendshyp: yet shall I desire them both to pardon me in declaring my phantasie heerein, that in al the turmoyles and tragical affayres of the Ocean, nothyng hath so muche displeased me, as the couetousnesse of this man, who hath so disturbed the pacifyed myndes of the kynges.

The lewde behauiour of Iohn Aiora.

Nowe among these troublous chaunces, let vs rehearse the variable fortune of *Gonsalus Badaiocius*, and his fellowes, whose prosperous begynninges, ended with vnfortunate successe. *Gonsalus* therfore in the moneth of May, in the yeere of Christ. 1515. departed from *Dariena* with fourscore armed men, directing his voyage toward the South, and resting in no place vntyll he came to the region of *Cerabaro* , which our men named *Gratia Dei*, distaunt from *Dariena* about a hundred and fourscore myles: for they call it threescore leagues. He spent certaine daies heere in idlenesse: for he coulde neither by fayre meanes, nor by foule, allure the kyng of the region to come to hym. Whyle he lay thus idelly, there came to hym other fyftie men, sent from *Dariena* vnder the gouernaunce of captayne *Lodouicus Mercado*, who departed from *Dariena* in the calendes of May, to the intent to searche the inner partes of those regions . When they met togeather , they determined, after consultation , to passe

The variable fortune of Gonsalus Badaiocius.

Cerabaro. Decade. iii. li. iiii.

ouer

ouer the mountaynes lying towarde the South, euen vnto the South sea lately founde. Beholde nowe a wonderfull thyng, that in a lande of suche marueylous longitude in other places, they founde it here to be onely about fyftie myles distant to the South sea: for they count it .xvii. leagues, as the maner of the Spanyardes is to recken, and not by myles: Yet saye they that a league consysteth of three myles by lande, and foure by sea, as we haue noted before. In the toppes of the mountaynes and turnyng of the waters, they founde a kyng named *Iuana*, whose kyngdome is also named *Coiba*, as is the region of king *Careta*, of whom we haue made mention elswhere. But for as muche as the region of this *Iuana*, is rycher in golde, they named it *Coiba Dites*, that is, *Coiba* the rych: For, whersoeuer they dygged the grounde, whether it were on the dry lande, or in the wet chanelles of the ryuers, they founde the sande, whiche they cast fourth, myxt with golde. *Iuana* fledde at the commyng of our men, and coulde neuer be brought agayne. They spoyled all the countrey neare about his palace: yet had they but litle golde, for he had caryed all his stuffe with hym. Here they founde certayne slaues, marked in the faces after a straunge sorte: For with a sharpe pryncke made eyther of bone, or els with a thorne, they make holes in theyr faces, and foorthwith sprinkling a powder thereon, they moiste the pounced place with a certayne blacke or redde iuice, whose substaunce is of suche tenacitie and clammines, that it wyll neuer weare away: They brought these slaues away with them. They say that this iuice is of suche sharpenesse, and putteth them to suche payne, that for extreme doloure they haue no stomacke to theyr meate certayne dayes after. The kynges whiche take these slaues in theyr warres, vse theyr helpe in seekyng for golde, and in tyllage of the grounde, euen as doo our men. From the pallace of *Iuana*, folowyng the course of the water about tenne myles towarde the South, they entred into the dominion of an other kyng, whom our men named the olde man, bycause he was olde, not passyng of his other name. In the region of this kyng also, they founde golde in all places, both on the lande, and in the ryuers. This region is very fayre, and fruitefull, and hath in it many famous ryuers, Departyng

The South sea.

A league contayneth foure myles by sea and but three by lande.

The golden region Coiba Dites.

Sande myxt with golde.

Howe theyr slaues are marked in the face.

Golde.

A fruitefull regiõ left desolate by ciuile discorde.

from hence, in fyue dayes iourney they came to a lande lefte desolate: They suppose that this was destroyed by ciuile discorde, forasmuche as it is for the most parte fruitefull, and yet not inhabited. The fyfth day, they sawe two men commyng a farre of: these were laden with bread of *Maizium*, whiche they caryed on theyr shoulders in sackes. Our men tooke them, and understoode by them that there were two kynges in that tract, the one was named *Periquete*, who dwelt neere vnto the sea, the others name was *Totonoga*. This *Totonoga* was blynde, and dwelt in the continent. The two men which they met, were the fyshers of *Totonoga*, whom he had sent with certayne fardelles of fyshe to *Periquete*, and had agayne receyued bread of hym for exchaunge: For thus do they communicate theyr commodities one with an other by exchaunge, without the vse of wycked mony. By the conductyng of these two men, they came to kyng *Totonoga*, dwellyng on the West syde of saint Michaels gulfe, in the South sea. They had of this kyng the summe of syxe thousand Castellans of golde, both rude, and artificially wrought. Among those groumes of rude or natyue golde, there was one founde of the weyght of two Castellans, whiche argued the plentifull rychenesse of the grounde. Folowyng the same coast by the sea syde towarde the West, they came to a kyng, whose name was *Taracuru*, of whom they had golde, amountyng to the weyght of eyght thousande *Pesos*. We haue sayde before that *Pesus* is the weyght of a Castelane, not coyned. From hence they went to the dominion of this kynges brother, named *Pananome*, who fledde at their commyng, and appeared no more afterwarde. They say that his kyngdome is ryche in golde. They spoyled his pallace in his absence. Syxe leagues from hence, they came to another king, named *Tabor*. From thence they came to the kyng of *Cheru*. He frendly entertained our men, and gaue them foure thousand *Pesos* of golde. He hath in his dominion many goodly salt bayes: the region also aboundeth with golde. About twelue myles from hence, they came to another king called *Anata*, of whom they had xv. thousande *Pesos* of golde, whiche he had gotten of the kynges his borderers, whom he had vanquished by warre. A great part of this gold was in rude fourme, bycause it was molten when he-

Syxe thousand Castellans of golde.

kyng Taracuru.

Foure thousand pesos of gold.

Salte.

see

set the kinges houses on fyre whom he spoyled. For they robbe and slay the one the other, sackyng & fyryng theyr villages, and wastyng theyr countreyes. They keepe warre barbarously, and to biter destruction, executyng extreeme crueltie agaynst them that haue the ouerthrowe. *Gonsalus Badaiocius*, with his felowes, wandred at libertie, vntyll they came to this kyng, and had geathered great heapes of golde of other kynges. For, what in bracelettes, collers, earerynges, brest plates, helmettes, and certaine barres wherewith women beare vp theyr brestes, they had geathered togeather in gold the summe of fourscore thousand Castellans, which they had obtayned partly by exchange for our things where they founde the kynges theyr frendes, & otherwise by forcyble meanes where they founde the contrary. They had gotten also fourtie slaues, whose helpe they vsed both for cariage of their victualles and baggagies, in the steede of Moyles or other beastes of burden, & also to releeue such as were sick and forweeried by reason of theyr long iourneies and hunger. After these prosperous voyages, they came by the dominion of kyng *Scoria*, to the palace of a kyng named *Pariza*, where (fearyng no suche thing) *Pariza* enclosed them with a great armie, and assayled them straggelyng and vnwares, in such sort that they had no leasure to put on theyr armure. He slue and wounded about fyftie, and put the residue to flyght. They made suche hast, that they had no respect eyther to the golde they had geathered, or to theyr slaues, but left all behynde them. Those fewe that escaped, came to *Dariena*. The opinion of all wyse men, as concernyng the variable and inconstant chaunces of fortune in humane things were false, if all thynges shoulde haue happened vnto them prosperously. For such is the nature of this blynde goddesse, that she oftentymes delyteth in the ouerthrowe of them whom she hath exalted, and taketh pleasure in confounding hygh thynges with lowe, and the contrary. We see this order to be immutable, that who so wyl apply hym selfe to geather rootes, shal sometymes meete with sweete Lyquerisse, and other whyles with sowre Cockle. Yet wo vnto *Pariza*: for he shall not long sleepe in rest. The gouernour him selfe was of late determined with three hundred & fiftie choise souldiers to reuenge the death of our men: but where as he by chaunce fel sicke, his power went forwarde

Theyr maner of warre.

Gonsalus Badaiocius hath the ouerthrowe and is spoiled of great riches of gold.

The inconstancie of fortune.

forwarde vnder the conducting of his Lieuetenaunt *Gaspar Spinosa*, a Iudge in cases of lawe in *Dariena*. At the same tyme other were sent foorth to the Iland of *Dites*, to exact the portion of pearles limited to the kyng for his tribute. What shal succeede, time wyl bring to our knowledge. The other two attempted thinhabitauntes beyond the gulfe *Franciſcus Bezerra*, paſſyng ouer the corner of the gulfe, & the mouthes of the riuer of *Dabaiba*, with two other captaines, and a hundred and fiftie ſouldiers wel appoynted, went to make warre vpon the Canibales, euen in *Caribana* they owne cheefeſt dominion, towards the village of *Turufy*, wherof we haue made mention before in the commyng of *Fogeda*. They brought alſo with them diuers engins of warre, as three peeces of ordinaunce, whoſe ſhot were bygger then egges: lykewyſe fourtie archers, and .xxv. hagbutters, to the entent to reach the Canibales a farre of, & to preuent they venomed arrowes: But what became of him & his company, or where they arriued, we haue yet no perfect knoweledge. Certayne which came of late from *Dariena* to Spaine reported, that at they departure they of *Dariena* ſtoode in great feare leſt they alſo were toſſed with ſome miſfortune. The other captaine *Valleius* obteyned the fore part of the gulfe, but he paſſed ouer by an other way then did *Bezerra*, for he tooke the beginning of *Caribana*, & *Bezarra* the end: *Valleius* returned againe. But of the three ſcore and ten men which he conueighed ouer with hym, he left fourtie and eight ſlayne among the Canibales. Theſe are the newes which they bryng that came laſt from *Dariena*. There came to me the day before the Ides of October in this yeere 1516. *Rodericus Colmenares* (of whom we haue made mention before) & one *Franciſcus Delapuente*. This *Franciſcus* was one of the vnder captaines of this band, whoſe cheefe captaine was *Gonſalus Badaiocius*, who hardly eſcaped the handes of king *Pariza*. Theſe two captaines therfore, *Rodericus* & *Franciſcus*, who departed from *Dariena* immediatly after ỹ miſfortune which befel to *Badaiocius* & his company, do both affirme, the one, that he hath hard, & the other, that he hath ſeene, that in the South ſea there are diuers Ilandes lying weſtward from the Iland of *Dites*, and Sainct Michaels gulfe, in many of the which are trees engendred & nouriſhed, which bring foorth ỹ ſame arromatical fruites as

The expedition of Fraunces Bezarra againſt the Canibales.

Gunnes.

Valleius repulſed of his enemies.

The Ilands of the South ſea.

In this ſea lye the Ilandes of Mollucca, moſt fruitfull of ſpyces.

as doeth the region of *Collacutea*. This lande of *Collacutea*, with the regions of *Cochinus* and *Camemorus*, are the chiefe marte places from whence the Portugales haue their spices: And hereby doe they coniecture, that the lande where the fruitfulnesse of spice beginneth, should not be farre from thence, insomuche, that many of them which haue ouerrunne those coastes, do onely desire that leaue may be graunted them to searche further, and that they will of their owne charges frame and furnysh shyppes, and aduenture the byage to seeke those Ilandes and regions. They thinke it best that these shippes should be made and prepared, euen in sainct Michaels gulfe, and not to attempt this byage by sainct Augustines point, which way were both long and difficult, and full of a thousande daungers, and is sayde to reache beyonde the fourtieth degree of the pole Antartike. The same *Franciscus*, being partener of the trauayles and daungers of *Gonsalus*, saith, that in ouerrunning those landes, he founde great heardes of Hartes and wylde Boyes, and that he tooke many of them by an arte which thinhabitantes taught him: which was, to make pittes or trenches in their walkes, and to couer the same with boughes: By this meanes also they deceyue all other kyndes of wylde & foure footed beastes. But they take foules after ẏ same maner that we do: As stocke doues, w̄ an other tame stocke doue brought vp in their houses. These they tye by a stryng, and suffer them to flee a litle among the trees: to the which as other birdes of their kynde resort, they kill them with their arrowes. Otherwyse they take them with nettes, in a bare place purged from trees & bushes, & scattering certayne seedes round about ẏ place, in ẏ middest wherof they tye a tame foule or byrd, of the kynde of them which they desyre to take: In lyke maner doe they take Popingiayes and other foules. But they say that Popingiayes are so simple, that a great multitude of them wyll flee euen into the tree in whose boughes the fouler sitteth, and swarme about the tame chatteryng Popingiay, sufferyng them selues to bee easily taken: For they are so without feare of the sight of the fouler, that they tary whyle he cast the snare about their neckes, the other beyng nothyng feared heereby, though they see him drawe them to him with the snare, and put them in the bagge which hee hath about him for the same purpose. There is an

Collacutea.

Cochinus and Camemorus, from whence the Portugales haue their spices.

Ye meaneth by the streight of Magellanus.

Howe they take Hartes and wylde Boyes.

Stocke doues.

Their maner of foulyng.

Popingiayes are easily taken

A straunge kynde of foulyng.

other kynde of foulyng, heeretofore neuer hearde of, and pleasant to consider. Wee haue declared before howe that in certayne of the Ilandes, and especially in *Hispaniola*, there are dyuers lakes or standyng pooles: In some of these (being no deeper then men may wade ouer them) are seene great multitudes of water foules: as well for that in the bottome of these lakes there growe many hearbes and weedes, as also that by reason of the heate of the Sunne, pearsyng to the naturall place of generation and conception, where being doubled in force by reflection, and preserued by moyster there, are engendred of the slymenesse of the earth and water, and by the prouidence of the vniuersall creator, innumerable little fyshes, with a thousand sundry kyndes of frogges, wormes, gnattes, flyes, and such other. The foules which vse these lakes, are of dyuers kyndes: as Duckes, Geese, Swannes, sea Mewes, Gulles, and such other. We haue sayde also, that in theyr Orchardes they noryshe a tree which beareth a kynde of great Gourdes. Of these Gourdes therfore, well stopped least any water should enter in at theyr ryftes, & cause them to sinke, they cast many in the shalowe pooles, where, by theyr continuall wanderyng and wauerynge with the motions of the wynde and water, they put the foules out of suspection & feare: the fouler in the meane tyme, disguising him selfe as it were with a visour, putteth a great gourde on his head, much lyke to a helmet, with two holes neere about his eyes, his face and whole head beside being couered therewith: and thus entreth hee into the poole euen vnto the chynne. For being from theyr infancie exercised in swymmyng, and accustomed to the waters, they refuse not to continue therein a long space: the foules thynking this Gourde to bee one of the other that swymme vppon the water, the fouler goeth softly to the place where hee seeth the greatest flocke of foules, and with waggyng his head, counterfeyting the mouyng of the wauerynge Gourdes, draweth neare to the foules, where softly puttyng foorth his ryght hande, he sodainly snatcheth one by the legges, and plungeth her into the water, where hee putteth her into a bagge whiche hee hath with hym of purpose: The other foules supposyng that this dyued into the water of her owne motion to seeke for foode (as is theyr maner) are nothyng moued hereby, but goe forwarde on their

Fyshes and wormes engendred of slyme.

Foules.

Gourdes of the tree.

way

way as before, vntyll they also fall into the same snare. I haue heere for this cause entred into the declaration of theyr maner of huntyng and foulyng, that by these more pleasaunt narrations, I may somewhat mittigate and asswage the horrour conceyued in your stomake by the former rehearsal of theyr bloody actes and cruell maners. Let vs nowe therefore speake somewhat agayne of the newe and later opinions, as concernyng the swyft course of the sea towarde the West about the coastes of *Paria*, also of the maner of geatheryng of golde in the golde myne of *Dariena*, as I was aduertised of late: and with these two quiet and peaceable thinges, we will make an ende of the tragicall affayres of the Ocean, and therewith byd your holynesse farewell. So it is therfore, that *Andreas Moralis* the pilot, and *Ouiedus* (of whom wee haue made mention before) repayred to mee, at my house in the towne of Matrite. As we met thus togeather, there arose a contention betweene them two, as concernyng this course of the Ocean. They both agree, that these landes and regions parteynyng to the dominion of Castile, doe with one continual tract & perpetual bond, embrase as one whole firme lande or continent, all the mayne lande lying on the North side of *Cuba*, & the other Ilands, being also Northwest both from *Cuba* & *Hispaniola*: Yet as touching the course of the water, they varry in opinion. For *Andreas* wil that this violent course of water be receiued in the lappe of the supposed continent, which bendeth so much, and extendeth so farre towarde the North, as wee haue sayde: and that by the obiect or resistance of the lande, so bending and crookyng, the water should as it were rebounde in compasse, and by force thereof bee driuen about the North syde of *Cuba*, and the other Ilands, excluded without ỹ circle called *Tropicus Cancri*, where the largenes of ỹ sea may receiue the waters falling from the narow streames, & therby represse that inordinate course, by reason that the sea is there very large and great. I can compare his meanyng to nothing more aptely, then to the swyft streame commyng fourth of a myll, and fallyng into the myll poole: For in all such places where waters runne with a violent fall through narowe chanelles, and are then receyued in large pooles, they are sodeynly disparcled, and theyr violence broken: So that whereas before they seemed of suche force as

Later opinions of the swyft course of the Ocean toward the West.

The continent or firme lande.

to ouerthrowe all thinges beyng in theyr way, it can not then be perceyued which way they runne. The Admirall him selfe *Diegus Colonus*, sonne and heyre to *Christipborus Colonus*, the fyrst fynder of these landes (who had nowe in commyng and going, foure tymes passed through these seas) being demaunded of me what he founde or perceyued in saylyng too and fro: answered, that there was muche difficultie in returnyng the same way by the which they goe. But whereas they fyrst take the way by the mayne sea towarde the North, before they directe theyr course to Spayne, he sayth that in that tract hee felt the shyppe sometymes a lyttle dryuen backe by the contrary course of the water: Yet supposeth that this chaunceth onely by the ordinary flowyng and reflowyng of the sea, and the same not to bee enforced by the circumflection or course of the water, reboundyng in compasse as wee haue sayde: But thinketh rather, that this mayne lande or supposed continent, should somewhere bee open: and that the sayde open place, should bee as it were a gate, entrie, or streyght, diuyding the North partes of that lande from the South, by the which also the Ocean runnyng towarde the West, may by the rotation or impulsion of the heauens, bee dryuen about the whole earth. *Ouiedus* agreeth with *Andreas Moralis* as touchyng the continuall adherence and closenesse of the sayde continent: Yet neyther that the waters should so beate agaynst the bendyng backe of the West lande, or bee in such sort repulsed and dryuen into the mayne sea: But sayth, that he hath diligently considered, that the waters runne from the deepest and myddest of the mayne sea, towarde the West: Also, that saylyng neere vnto the shore with small bessels, hee founde the same waters to returne againe towarde the East, so that in the same place they runne togeather with contrary course, as we oftentymes see the lyke to chaunce in ryuers, where by the obiect of the bankes, dyuers whirlepooles and turnynges aryse in the water. By reason whereof, if any chaffe, strawe, wood, or any other thyng of lyght substance be cast in any such places in ryuers, it foloweth, that all suche as runne with the water in the myddest of the chanell, proceede well forwarde, but suche as fall into the bendyng gulfes and indented margentes of the crooked bankes, are caryed ouerthwart the chanell, and so wander about vntyll they

The vyages of Diegus Colonus.

The viage from the new lands to Spain

The contrary course of waters.

they meete with the full and directe course of the ryuer. Thus haue we made you partener of suche thinges as they haue giuen vs, and written their ryuers opinions: We will then giue more certayne reason, when more certayne trueth shalbe knowne. We must in the meane tyme leane to opinions, vntill the day come appointed of God to reueale this secrete of nature, with the perfect knowledge of the pointe of the pole starre. Hauyng sayde thus muche of the course of the Ocean, a briefe declaration of the golde mynes of *Dariena*, shall close vp our Decades, and make an ende of our trauayles. Wee haue sayde, that niene myles distant from *Dariena*, are the sydes of the hylles and the drye playnes in the whiche golde is geathered, both on the drye lande, and also on the bankes, and in the chanelles of ryuers. Therefore to all suche as are wyllyng to geather golde, there is of ordinarie custome appointed to euery man by the suruoyers of the mynes, a square plotte of grounde, conteynyng twelue pases, at the arbitrement of the chooser, so that it be not grounde alredy occupyed, or left of other. The portion of grounde being thus chosen (as it were assigned of the augures to buylde a temple) they inclose their slaues within the same, whose helpe the Christians vse in tyllyng of their grounde, and geatheryng of golde, as we haue sayde. These places appointed vnto them, they keepe as long as them lyst: and if they perceyue tokens of little golde, they requyre an other plot of grounde of twelue pases to be assigned them, leauyng the first in common: And this is thorder which the Spaniardes inhabiting *Dariena* obserue in geatheryng of golde. I suppose also, that they vse the lyke order in other places: Howbeit, I haue not yet enquired so farre. It hath been prooued, that these twelue pases of grounde, haue yelded to their choosers the summe of fourescore Castellanes of golde. And thus leade they theyr lyues in fulfillyng the holy hunger of golde. But the more they fyll their handes with fyndyng, the more increaseth theyr couetous desyre. The more woodde is layde to the fyre, the more furiously rageth the flame. Insaciable couetousnesse is no more diminished with increase of rychesse, then is the drinesse of the dropsye satisfyed with drynke. I let passe many thinges, whereof I intende to wryte more largely in tyme conuenient, if I shall in the meane season vn-

The poynt of the pole starre.

The golde mynes of Dariena, and the maner of geatheryng golde.

Our incloſers would haue no ſuch commens

Auri ſacra Fames.

The dropſie of couetouſneſſe.

derstande these to bee acceptable vnto your holynesse: my duetie and obseruaunce to whose auctoritie, hath caused mee the gladlier to take this labour in hande. The prouidence of the eternall creatour of all thinges, graunt your holynesse many prosperous yeeres.

Here endeth the three bookes of the Decades.

Of Cuba, Hispaniola, and other Ilands

in the VVest Indies seas: and of the maners of the inhabitauntes of the same.

Booke Decade 3. Liber. 10.



Haue partlye declared before in my Decades, howe certaine fugitiues which came out of the large West landes, arriued in the confines of *Dariena*, and howe that marueiling at the bookes of our men, they declared that they sometime dwelt in regions whose inhabitantes vsed such instruments, & were

Cities fortifyed with walles.

ruled by politike lawes: Also that they had cities fortified with walles, and faire pallaces, with streates well paued, & common places whither marchauntes resorte, as to the burse or streate: These landes, our men haue now founde. Therefore who were thauctors hereof, or what successe they had herein, who so desireth to knowe, with the conditions of straunge regions, and the maners of the people, let him giue diligent attendaunce to suche thinges as folow. Of the Ilande of *Cuba* (now called *Fernandina*, lying next vnto *Hispaniola* on the West syde, and yet somewhat so bending towarde the North, that the circle called *Tropicus Cancri* diuideth it in the myddest, whereas *Hispaniola* is distant from the Tropike, and declinyng certayne degrees towarde the Equinoctiall line) we haue spoken somewhat before. In this Ilande of *Fernandina*, there are now sixe townes erected, wherof the chiefe is named *Santiago*, of S. Iames, the patrone of the Spaniards. In this, there is native gold found, both in ỹ mountaines

The Ilande of Cuba or Fernandina.

and

and ryuers: by reason wherof they are dayly occupied in geathering & digging the same. But shortly after that I had finished my sayd bookes, three Spaniards ỳ were the most auncient citizens of *Cuba*, as *Franciscus Fernandes* of *Corduba*, *Lupus Ocho*, & *Christophorus Morantes*, determined to seeke new lands, as the myndes of the Spaniards are euer vnquiet & giuen to attempt great enterpzises. They furnished, at their owne charges, three of those shyppes which they call Carauels, and hauing first lycence of *Diegus Velasquen* the gouernour of the Ilande, they departed with a hundzed and ten men from the West angle of *Cuba*: For this angle is most commodious to relieue shippes, & to make pzouision for freshe water & fuell. Thus they sayled continually sixe dayes and a halfe betwene the west & the South, contented onely with the sight of the heauen & the water, during which tyme, they suppose that they sayled not past threescore and sixe myles: For they lay at anker all nyght, wheresoeuer the fallyng of the Sunne tooke the day lyght from them, least by wanderyng in vnknowen seas, they myght chaunce to bee cast vppon rockes or sandes: But at the length they chaunced vppon a great Ilande, named *Iucatana*, whose beginnyng thinhabitauntes call *Eccampi*. Our men went to the citie, standyng on the sea syde, the which, for the bygnesse thereof, they named *Cayrus*, or Alcair, thinhabitauntes wherof enterteined them very friendly. When they were entred into the citie, they marueyled to behelde the houses buylded lyke Towzes, magnificall temples, streates well paued, and great exercise of bying and sellyng by exchaunge of ware for ware. Their houses are either built of stone, or of bzicke and lyme, and artificially wzought. To the first pozches of theyz houses, and fyrst habitations, they ascend by ten or twelue stayzes: they are couered either with tyles, slates, reades, or stalkes of certayne hearbes, they gratified the one the other with mutuall gyftes. The Barbarians gaue our men many bzooches and iewelles of golde, very fayze, and of cunnyng wozkemanshyp: our men recompensed them with vestures of sylke and wooll, counterfeyte stones, of coloured glasse and chzystall, Haukes belles of laton, and suche other rewardes, whiche they greatly esteemed for the straungenesse of the same: they set nought by lookyng glasses, bycause they haue certayne stones muche bzyghter.

The Spaniards of Cuba attempt new vpages.

The West angle of Cuba.

Note.

The Ilande of Iucatana. A great citie well buylded.

Temples.

Humane people.

Cunnyng artificers.

Apparelled people.

This nation is apparelled after a thousande fashions, with vestures made of gossampyne cotton or bombage, of dyuers coloures. The women are couered from the girdle to the heele, hauyng dyuers fashions of vailes about their heades and brestes, with great cautell least any part of their legges or feete be seene: they resorte muche to their temples, vnto the whiche the chiefe rulers haue the wayes paued from their owne houses: they are Idolatours, and circumcised, they occupie their maner of exchaunging with muche fidelitie: they vse to adourne the heares of their heades. Being demaunded by thinterpretours, of whom they receyued their circumcision: they answered, that there once passed an exceedyng fayre man by their coastes, who left them that in token to remember him. Other say, that a man brighter then the Sunne, went among them, and executed that office: but there is no certayntie heereof. When our men had remayned there certayne dayes, they seemed to bee molestous to thinhabitantes, accordyng to the common saying, The longer a ghest tarryeth, the worse is his entertaynement: The which thyng our men perceyuyng, they made the more hast away. Being therefore prouided of all thinges necessary, they tooke their viage directly towarde the West, by the prouince which thinhabitauntes call *Comi*, and *Maiam*. They ouerpassed these regions, takyng onely freshe water and fuell in the same. The Barbarians, both men, women, and children, flocked to the sea syde, astonyshed greatly to beholde the huge bygnesse of the shyppes. Our men marueyled in maner no lesse to view their buyldinges, and especially their temples situate neare vnto the sea, and erected after the maner of towres. Thus at the length hauyng sayled about a hundred and ten myles, they thought it good to lay Anker in a prouince named *Campechium*, whose chiefe towne consisteth of three thousande houses. Thinhabitantes came swimmyng to the shippes, marueylyng exceedingly at the maner of saylyng, and at the sayles and other tackelynges: But when they hearde the thunder of the gunnes, sawe the smoke, and smelte the sauour of brimstone and fyre, they supposed that thunderbolts and lyghtnynges had been sent from God. The kyng receyued our men honourably, and brought them into his pallace: where hee feasted them well, after his maner. They are accus-

Circumcised Idolaters.

Campechium. A towne of three thousand houses.

tomed

med to eate flesshe, and haue great plentie of beastes and foules, as Peacockes, and other, whiche they francke and feede in theyr houses: also dyuers kyndes of wylde foules of the mountaynes, wooddes, and waters: lykewyse Partriches, Quailes, Turtle dooues, Duckes, and Geese. Of beastes, they haue Connies, Woolues, Lions, Tigers, Foxes, wylde Booyes, Hartes, and Hares. After this banquet, the kyng with his trayne and famylie brought our men into a brode crosse way, where many streates do meete: In this, they shewed them as it were a great and high alter, buylded foure square of marble, compacte togeather partly with the tough cleye of Babilon called *Bitumem*, and partly with small stones, it had on euery syde foure stayres: Upon the altare was an Image of a man made of marble, and fast by it the images of two beastes of vnknowen shape, which seemed as though they woulde with panyng mouth haue torne in sunder the belly of the mans Image. On the other syde stoode a great Serpent, compact of the sayde tough cleye and small stones: This Serpent beyng in length .xlvii. foote, and of the bygnesse of a large Oxe, seemed to deuour a Lion of marble, and was al besparcled with freshe blood. Harde by the altare, were three postes fastned in the grounde, the which three other trauersed, and were susteyned with stones. In this place offenders were put to death, in token wherof they sawe innumerable arrowes stayned with blood, some scattred, some lying on heapes, & some broken: also a great number of mens bones, lying in a court or yarde neere vnto this funestal place, their houses are here also buylded of lyme and stone: They named this kyng *Lazarus*, because they arriued at this lande on saint *Lazarus* day. Departing from hence, and directing their course stil toward the West, for the space of .xb myles, they came to a prouince named *Aquanil*, whose chiefe towne is called *Mosco*, and the king therof *Cupoton*. He beheld our men with a frowarde countenaunce, and sought occasion to do thē some priuy mischiefe, while they sought for freshe water: For he made signes vnto them, that on the further syde of the next hyl they should fynde springes of water, entending to haue assailed them in that narowe passage: But by the colouring of theyr forheades (as they are accustomed in theyr warres) and by the bearing of theyr bowes & other weapons, our men

Plentie of beastes and foules.

Theyr Idoles and Idolatry.

Houses of lime and stone.

The prouince Aquanil.

Mosco.

men perceyued theyr wylynes, and refused to go any further: Yet a thousande of the Barbarians assayled them vnwares, and vnprepared: by reason whereof, they were put to flyght, and dyuers of them slayne in the chase. Many that fledde towarde the shyppes, were entangled in the mudde and maryshes neere vnto the shore: Twentie and two were slayne with arrowes, and the residue for the most part wounded. *Franciscus Fernandes* the gouernour of the nauie, receyued in this conflicte three and thirtie woundes, and in maner none escaped without hurt: If they had gone to the hyllies whiche were appoynted them, they had ben slaine euery man. They therfore that escaped, returned to the Ilande of *Fernardina*, from whence they came, where they were receyued of theyr felowes with heauie cheare.

The Spanyardes are put to flyght, and many slayne.

But when *Diegus Velasquen* the gouernour of the Ilande, had intelligence hereof, he immediatly furnyshed a newe nauie of foure Caraueles, with three hundreth men: Of this nauie he appointed *Iohn Grisalua*, his nephue, to be ỹ gouernour, & assigned for vnder captaynes, *Alphons Auila, Frannces Montegio*, and *Peter Aluarado*: For the pylot he assigned *Antonie Alamino*, who had the regiment of the fyrst nauie. They attempted the same viage agayne, but declined somwhat more towarde the South, about threescore and tenne myles. Before they sawe any lande, they espyed a towre a farre of, by the viewe whereof, they came to an Ilande named *Cozumella*, from the whiche they smelt sweete sauours proceedyng with the wynde, before they approched to the lande by the space of three myles. They founde the Ilande to be xlb. myles in circuitie, it is playne, and of maruelous fruitefull soyle, there is also golde in it, but it is not engendred there, but brought thither from other regions: It aboundeth with hony, fruites, and hearbes, and hath also great plentie of foules, and foure footed beastes. Theyr order and maner of lyuyng, is in al thynges lyke vnto theyrs of *Iucatana*: lykewyse theyr houses, temples, streates, and apparell. In many of theyr houses, are great poastes of marble, after the maner of our buyldyng. They found there, the fundations of certayne olde towres ruinate, and one especially with .xviii. stayres ascendyng to it, after the maner of solemne temples. They marueyled greatly at our shyppes and maner of saylyng. At the fyrst, they would admit no straungers:

An other expedition.

The Ilande of Cozumella.

Sweete sauoures.

A fruitefull Ilande.

Towres and temples.

gers: but shortly after, receiued them gentlye. Theyr cheife ruler (whom our men supposed to bee a priest) led them vp to the toppe of the towre, where they erected a banner, and addicted the Ilande to the dominion of the kyng of Castyle, namyng it *Sancta Crux*, because they entred into the same in the nones of Maye, being then the feast of the holye crosse. They saye that it was called *Cozumella*, of kyng *Cozumellaus*, whose auncestours were the fyrst that inhabited the Ilande. In the towre they found many chambers furnished with Images, made both of earth and marble to the similitude of Beares: these they cal vpon with a houling and lamentable songue, perfuming them with sweete odours, and otherwyse honouring them as theyr domesticall goddes: they are also circumcised. The kyng was in fayre apparell, made of gossampine cotton, curiously wrought: he was lame on the one foote, by reason that as he once exercised hym selfe in swymmyng, a deuouryng fyshe called *Tuberon*, byt of all the toes of one of his feete: he entreated our men very frendly, and made them great cheare. After they had been heere three dayes, they departed: and saylyng styll towards the West, they espied great mountaynes a farre of, but as they drewe neare, they perceyued it to be the Ilande of *Iucatana*, being distant from *Cozumella* only fyue myles. Directyng therfore theyr course towards the south syde of *Iucatana*, they compassed it on that syde which lyeth nearest to be supposed continent: yet coulde they not saile round about it, by reason of the multitude of rocks, shalowe places, and shelfes of sande. Then *Alaminus* the pilot turned his sayles to the North syde, whereof he had better knowledge. Thus at the length, they came to the towne *Campechium*, and kyng *Lazarus*, with whom they had been that attempted the fyrst voyage the yeere before. At the fyrst, they were gentlye receiued, and required to resort to the towne: but shortly after, they repented that they had bydden them, and thereupon willed them to stay about a stones cast from the towne, and to proceede no further. When our men desired that they myght make prouision for freshe water before theyr departure, they assigned them to a certayne well whiche they had left behynde them, declaring further, that it shoulde be lawfull for them to take water there, or els no where. Our men rested that nyght in the feelde adioynyng

Cozumella named Sancta Crux,

Idles lyke Beares.

Idolatry.

Gentle people.

Iucanata but fyue myles from Cozumella.

The Barbarians make resistance.

adioyning to the well: the whiche thyng the Barbarians ſuſpectyng, aſſembled an army of thꝛee thouſand men, and encamped not farre from them. Both partes paſſed a way the nyght without ſleepe: they, fearyng leſt our men ſhoulde bꝛeake into the towne: and our men, leſt the Barbarians ſhoulde inuade them ſodenly, on the one part with Trumpettes, and on the other ſyde with the noyſe of Tymbꝛels, kept them ſtyll wakyng that were diſpoſed to ſleepe. At the ſpꝛyng of the day, the Barbarians appꝛoched to our mens campe, and called foꝛ the interpꝛetours of *Cuba*, whoſe language is much agreable vnto theirs. They had deuiſed to lyght a Toꝛche of franckenſence, and to place the ſame betweene both the armies, to the intent that yf our men dyd not depart befoꝛe the Toꝛche were conſumed, to ſtand to theyꝛ peryll. The Toꝛche was waſted, and the matter came to hand ſtrokes. They ſlue only one of our men with an arrowe, becauſe his Target failed him: but many were wounded. After this conflict, our men reſoꝛted to theyꝛ oꝛdinaunce, whiche they had planted neere vnto the wel. When they had diſcharged certayne peeces, the Barbarians fled backe into the towne, and our men were of fierſe and greedie courrage to haue purſued them, but that *Griſalua* the gouernour would not ſuffer them. From thence they pꝛoceeded to the laſt ende of *Iucatana*, which they founde to reach moꝛe then two hundꝛed myles from the Eaſt to the Weſt. Here they founde a commodious hauen, and named it *Portus deſideratus*. From hence they ſailed to other landes, & came to the region next to *Iucatana* Weſtward, which they doubt whether it be an Iland, oꝛ part of the fyꝛme lande, but thinke it rather to be annexꝛ to ỹ contin̄ēt: in this there is a gulfe, whiche they ſuppoſe to be incompaſſed with both the landes: but of this there is no certentie. The inhabitauntes call this region *Caluacam*, oꝛ otherwiſe *Oloan*. They found here alſo a great riuer, whiche by his violent courſe and fall, dꝛiueth freſhe water two myles into the ſea: this they called *Griſalua*, after the name of the gouernour. The Barbarians marueylyng at the huge greatneſſe and mouing of our ſhyps, came ſwarmyng on the bankes of both ſydes the riuer, to the number of ſyxe thouſande men, armed with targettes and bꝛeſt plates of golde, bowes and arrowes, bꝛode ſwoꝛdes of heauie wood, and long iauelyns hardened

A conflict.

The length of Iucatana.

The region of Caluacam, oꝛ Oloan.

The riuer Griſalua.

Targets and bꝛeſt plates of golde,

ned at the endes with fyre. Thus standyng in battayle raye to defende theyr coastes, and with proude countenaunces forbyddyng our men to come alande, both parties watched all that nyght in armes. In the dawne of they daye, our men espyed about a hundred Canoas (whiche we haue sayde to bee theyr boates) full of armed men. Here also, the language of thinterpretours of *Cuba* agreed well yenough with theirs. When they had admitted the peace profered them by thinterpretours, al the Canoas staied, except one which approched towarde the shyppes. A certayne ruler that was in this Canoa, demaunded of our men what they sought in other mens landes. They answeared, Gold, and that for permutation of other ware, and not of gift, or violently. The *Canoa* returned, and the ruler certified the king hereof, who came gladly to the shippes. When he had saluted the gouernor, he called his chamberlaine vnto him, commaundyng hym to bryng his armur, and other ornamentes of gold, wherewith he armed *Grisalua* from the toppe of the head, to the sole of the foote: insomuche that what so euer any man of armes, armed at all partes, is among vs accustomed to weare of Iron or steele when he commeth into the fielde, all such kynde of furnitures made of golde, and wrought with woonderfull art, the kyng gaue to the gouernour. He recompenced hym with vestures of sycke, cloth, lynnen, and other of our thynges. In the begynnyng of this *Iucatana*, when they sayled to *Cozumella*, they chaunced vpon a *Canoa* of fishermen, to the number of nyne, fyshyng with hookes of golde: they tooke them all prysoners. One of them was knowen to this kyng, who promysed the day folowyng, to send the gouernour as much gold for his raunsome, as the man hym selfe waighed. But the gouernour denied that he could release hym, without the consent of his felowes, and therefore kept hym styll, to proue what he coulde further knowe of hym. Departyng from hence, and saylyng styll westwarde, they founde a great gulfe, in the which three small Ilandes were situate: Of these, they went to the byggest. But oh abhominable crueltie, oh most corrupted myndes of men, and diuilyshe impietie. Let euery godly man close ỳ mouth of his stomake, lest he be disturbed. They offer young chyldren of both kyndes to their Idoles of marble & earth. Among their Idoles of marble, there standeth

Armur of gold.

Expert artificers.

Fyshehokes of golde.

The Ilandes of Sacrifice.

Chyldren sacrificed to Idols.

Theyr Idoles of marble.

standeth a Lion, hauyng a hole through the necke, into the whiche they poure the blood of the miserable sacrifyce, that it may from thence runne downe into a syncke of marble. Let vs nowe declare with what ceremonies they sacrifice the blood of these poore wretches. They cut not their throtes, but open the very brestes of these seelye soules, and take out their hartes yet pantyng, with the hot blood whereof, they annoynt the lippes of their Idoles, and suffer the residue to fall into the syncke: This doone, they burne the harte and bowels, supposyng the smoke thereof to be acceptable to their goddes. Of their Idoles, one is made to the shape of a man, bowyng downe his head, and lookyng towarde the syncke of blood, as it were acceptyng the offeryng of the slayne sacrifyce. They eate the fleshe of the armes, thyghes, and legges, especially when they sacrifice an enimie taken in the warres. They founde a streame of concealed blood, as though it had runne from a boocchery. For this mischeuous purpose, they bring these wretches from the next Ilandes. They sawe also innumerable heades, and trunkes of bodies thus mangled, besyde many other yet remainyng whole, and couered with certayne mattes. All the tractes of these regions abound with gold and pretious stodes. One of our men wandryng in the Ilande, chaunced to fynde two water pottes of alabaster, artificially wrought, and full of litle stones of dyuers colours. They say also that they founde a stone of the value of two thousande Castellans of golde, which the sent to the gouernour. This Iland they named the Iland of sacrifice. Thinhabitauntes are circumcised. There are also other Ilands situate about this *Coluacana*, or *Galuacam*, the which are inhabited onely with women, lyuing without the companye of men, after the maner of the *Amazones*. But they that ponder the matter more wysely, thynke them rather to be certayne women whiche haue vowed chastitie, and professed a solitarie life, as the Nunnes do with vs, or as the virgins called *Vestales*, or *Bonæ Deæ*, were accustomed to do among the gentiles in olde tyme. At certayne tymes of the yeere, men of the other Ilandes resorte vnto them, not for thintent of generation, but moued with pitie, to helpe them to dresse their gardens, and tyll their grounde. The reporte goeth lykewyse, that there are other Ilandes of corrupt

Golde and precious stones.

A stone of great price.

Ilandes of women.

rupt women, to whom men resort for carnall copulation, and that they cut of one of the pappes of theyr women childzen, lest it shoulde hynder theyr shootyng: also that they keepe only the women childzen, and send away the men childzen. Our men therefore drewe neare to the shore of *Colnacana*, where they quietly exercised marchandies with thinhabitantes. The king gaue them a great Pot of golde: also bzaselettes, chaynes, bzooches, with many other iewels, and all of golde. Our men agayne on the other part satisfied hym with such stuffe as they had done other before. Heere would they gladly haue planted a new colonie or habitation, but that the gouernour woulde not permit them, wherat they grudged not a litle. The houses and other edifices of this prouince, are builded lyke vnto Towzes. It hath also fyfteene great townes in it. Of these they affyrme, that they haue seene some consistyng of more then twentie thousand houses, not ioyning togeather, but disseuered with courtes and gardens. They haue also certayne large market places, encompassed with walles, and streates wel paued: likewise fornaces & ouens, made of lime and bzicke: furthermore al sortes of handie crafties men, and very cunning artificers. This kynges name was *Potanchanus*, and the region is called *Palmaria*. The towne where the kyng keepeth his court, conteyneth .xv. thousand houses. When they receyue any straungers, & make a league of frendship with them, they are accustomed with a knyfe made of a sharp stone to let them selues blood in the tongue, hande, arme, or some other part of the bodie, and this euen in the syght of them whom they admit to frendship, in token that they are redy to shed theyr blood in theyr frendes causes. Theyr priestes profesle a vertuous lyfe, and lyue vnmaried. What it is to haue doto w̄ women, no man knoweth before he be maried. Fornication and adulterie (which seldome chaunceth among them) they count abhomination. The women are of marueilous chastitie. Euery noble man, after that he haue had one wife, may haue as many concubines as hym lysteth: but a maried woman taken in adulterie, is solde of her husband, but this onely to the prince, at whose handes it shal be lawfull for her kynsfolke to redeme her. It is not lawefull for suche as are not maried, to syt at the same table with them that are maried, or to eate of the same dyshe, or drynke of the same cup.

Golde.

Houses lyke Towzes.

xv. great townes in the prouince of Colnacana.

Townes of .xx. thousand houses.

The region of Palmaria.

A token of frendshyp.

Priestes.

Chastitie.

The punishment of adulterie.

Mariage is honoured.

In

Fasting.

In the moneth of August and September, they absteyne. xxvb. dayes, not onely from flesshe, whereof they haue great plentie, but also from fysshe, and all other thynges that lyue by blood, and duryng these dayes, lyue onely with hearbes and fruites. They recken twentie dayes to the moneth, and twentie monethes to the yeere. Our men consumed certayne dayes heere very pleasauntly. When they departed, coasting stil by the same shore, they came to an other kyng, whom they named *Ouandus*. When he had intelligence that our men desired gold, he brought forth certaine plats of molten gold. But when the gouernour signified vnto hym by the interpretours, that he desired great plentie of that metall, the day folowing he brought him a mans image of gold, beyng a cubite in length: also a fanne of golde, and an Idole of one of his domestical gods, of curious woorkmanshyp: likewyse garlandes of stones of sundrye colours, with many brest plates, brooches, and other kyndes of ornamentes, and all of golde. He gaue hym furthermore abundaunce of delicate meates, well salted, and powdred with spices. When he had required our men to come alande, he commaunded his seruauntes with all speede to prepare a great multitude of braunches of trees, and to wayte vppon our men to his pallace. As they went thus in order, some behynde, and some before, on both sydes, they seemed so to shadow our men with bowes, as though they had gone in a continuall arbour. The kyng hym selfe hauyng a Septer in his hande, dyd set them in theyr arraye, and some tyme stryke suche as were negligent in bearyng theyr bowes. They shewed them selues obedient in all thynges, and with graue countenaunce humbled them selues to receyue his stryppes. When he was demaunded where he had suche plentie of golde: he poynted with his fynger to the next mountaynes, and to the riuers descendyng from the same. They are so accustomed to the riuers, and exercised in swymmyng, that it is all one to them to lyue in the water and on the lande. When they desire to geather golde, they plunge them selues in the riuers, and bryng from the bottome therof both theyr handes full of sande, whiche syftyng from hande to hande, they geather out the graynes of golde. And by this meanes in the space of two houres, they fyll a reede as bygge as a mans fynger. Of the sweete

Kyng Quandus.

Idoles, iewels and ouches of golde.

Gold in mountaynes and riuers.

Theyr maner of geathering golde.

Sweete sauours.

sauours

fauours of these lands, many thinges might be spoken, the which bycause they make rather to the effeminatyng of the myndes of men, then for any necessary purpose, I haue thought best to omit them. The kyng also gaue the gouernour a young virgine, of twelue yeeres of age, adourned with ryche and fayre iewelles. Of the stones whiche hee had of this kyng, one was valued at two thousande Castellanes of golde. Thus at the length they departed from this kyng, laden with golde and precious stones. *Grisalua* the gouernour, sent one of the Caranelles to his vncle *Diego Velasquen*, gouernour of the Ilande of *Cuba*, with messengers to delyuer him the golde, iewelles, and other ornaments, the residue in the meane tyme styll folowed the tracte towarde the West. One of them in the whiche *Frauncis Montegius* the vnder gouernour was caryed sayled harde by the shore, and the other two kepte aloofe within prospecte of the lande. Thinhabitauntes of these coastes also, no lesse marueylyng at the shyppes then dyd the other, came with twelue Canoas to *Montegius*, desyryng him by thinterpretours to come a-lande, promysyng in the name of theyr kyng, that hee should bee honourably entertayned. But *Montegius* answered, that hee coulde not assent to theyr request, bycause his companions were so farre from him: Yet dyd hee gyue them certayne of our thinges, straunge vnto them, and thankes for their gentleneſſe. Shortly after, espying a great towne, they directed their course thither. Thinhabitauntes prohibyted them to come a-lande, and came forth agaynst them with bowes and quiuers full of arrowes, broad swoordes made of heauy wood, and Iauelins hardned at the ende with fyre. They shot at our men a farre of, and our men discharged certayne peeces of ordinaunce against them. The Barbarians astonished at the noyse of the gunnes fled amayne, and desyred peace. Here our mens vitayles began to fayle them, and theyr shyppes were brooled with long viages. Hauyng therefore founde and done these thinges whereof wee haue spoken, *Grisalua* returned to the Ilande of *Fernandina* well contented, but so were not his companions. We muste nowe diuerte somewhat from this matter, and speake of an other nauigation: and from thence will wee returne to these landes whiche our men haue founde. So it is therefore, that

A stone of great price.

Other viages from Cuba or Fernandina.

Diegus Velasquen, the gouernour of the Ilande of *Fernandina*, about the same tyme that he had sent foorth this nauie of foure Carauelles, he prepared an other nauigation of onely one Carauell, and one brygantine, with fourtie and fyue men. These exercised violent handes against thinhabitauntes of those regions where they arryued, thynkyng that they myght forceably drawe them to the dyggyng of golde, bycause they were Caffranite Idolaters and circumcised. There are at the sea syde not farre from the suppoſed continent, many litle Ilandes, of moſt fortunate and fruitefull soyle, whereof three are thus named, *Guanapan*, *Guanguan*, and *Quitilla*. Out of one of these (which they named *Santa Marina*) they violently caryed away three hundred men & women, which they thrust into the Carauell, and returned immediatly to *Fernandina*, leauyng the brigantine with .xxb. of theyr felowes, to thintent to hunt for more men. The hauen where the Carauell fyrst arryued, is called *Carenas*, beyng distant from the angle of *Cuba*, and the chiefe citie of *Santiago*, two hundred and fyftie myles: For this Ilande of *Cuba*, is very long, reachyng in length from the East to the West, and situate directly vnder the circle called *Tropicus Cancri*, as we haue sayd before. Nowe shall you heare howe fortune sought the reuenge of these poore wretches. Therfore as their keepers went aland, and few remained in the Carauel, they perceiuing occasion ministred whereby they myght recouer their libertie, sodeinly snatched vp our mens weapons, and slue sixe of them which yet remained in the Carauell, whyle the residue leapte into the sea. And by this meanes the Barbarians possessed the Carauell whiche they had soone learned to rule, and thus returned to their owne countreys. But they sayled fyrst to the nexte Ilande, where they burnt the Carauel, and caryed away the weapons with them. From hence they conueyed them selues to their owne countreys with the Canoas of this Ilãd. There in lyke maner they priuily assailed them that were left with the brigantine, and slue many of them also: The residue that escaped, fledde to the brigantine, where they bewayled theyr felowes deathes, and counted theyr owne escape a victorie. On the shore not farre from the place where they suffered this mischfortune, there is a tree, in the toppe whereof they set vp a crosse, and graued this inscription in the barke of

Many Ilands betweene Cuba and the fyrme lande.

Santiago the chiefe citie of Cuba.

The Barbarians slay the Spaniardes with theyr owne weapons

the

the tree, *Vannuis Aldarieci*. There is a ryuer named *Darien*, on the banke whereof standeth the chiefe citie of the supposed continent. The gouernour therefore hauyng intelligence heereof, sent with all speede two shippes of warre well furnished, to the ayde of them that were left: but they were wyse to late. Yet folowing the viewe of the crosse, they came to the shore, and red the letters grauen on the tree, but durst not attempt fortune. Thus with all they hardie souldiers departyng from hence with dispayre, they sayled to the nexte Ilande, out of the whiche they caryed away by violence fyue hundred men and women, supposyng lykewyse that they myght lawfully so doe, bycause they were Idolaters and circumcised: But the lyke chaunce happened vnto them when they landed at *Fernandina*. For the Barbarians, espying opportunitie, set vppon the Spanyardes in one of the shyppes with theyr owne weapons, and slue theyr keepers: the residue that escaped, castyng them selues into the sea, swamme to the next Carauell, and with theyr felowes assayled the Carauell that was taken from them. This conflicte was so sharpe, that for the space of foure houres, it was doubtfull whether parte should obteyne the victorie. The Barbarians both men and women fought very fiercely, aswell to recouer their libertie, as also to holde fast the praye which they had gotten: But in fine, the Spanyardes had the vpper hande, by reason they were more experte in handlyng of theyr weapons, & rulyng of their Carauell. The Barbarians beyng thus ouercome, leapt into the sea, but the Spanyardes tooke them agayne with the shyppe boates. About a hundred of the Barbarians perished, being partly drowned, and partely slayne with the swoorde, and but fewe of the Spanyardes. These thinges thus pacified, the residue of the Barbarians were caryed to the towne of *Sanctiago*, and condemned to labour in the golde mynes. Shortly after they made out a newe viage to an other of the Ilandes, which lye there about so thicke, that they commonly call the number of them *Archipelagus*, as they in our sea of *Ionicum* are called *Symplegades*. Here our men were cruelly handled, and as many of them as came a-lande eyther slayne or wounded. This Ilande they named *Florida*, bycause they arryued there on Easter day, whiche the Spaniards call the florishyng day of the resurrection. They say

The chiefe citie of the supposed continent.

The Spanyardes are slaine againe with their owne weapons.

The Barbarians are slayne and put to flyght.

A multitude of Ilandes.

Archipelagus.

An other viage

xxvi. Ilandes about Hispaniola & Cuba.

also that in this tracte they sawe.xxvi. Ilandes, which *Colonus* had ouerpassed, and the same so to lye about *Hispaniola* and *Cuba*, as though they warded them from the furie of the Ocean. In many of these they founde natiue golde, of lyke goodnesse to that which is founde in *Granatum*. Thinhabitauntes also weare many iewelles, and haue many Images of theyr domesticall goddes, made both of golde artificially wrought, and also of wood gylted. *Frauncis Cheregatus* brought one of theyr Idols with him, wherby may bee considered of what wytte and aptnesse they are. It is a marueylous thyng to see what maner of rasers they haue, made of certayne yelowe stones, cleare and transparent lyke vnto chrystall, with these they shaue and carue, as though they were made of fyne steele : When the edges are blunt with long exercyse, they sharpen them not with a whetstone, or powder, or any other stone, but temper them onely with water. They haue also a thousande kyndes of instrumentes or tooles, and such other thinges of fyne deuice, which were to long to rehearse. Let vs therefore returne from whence wee haue digressed, as to *Cozumella*, *Iucatana*, *Coluacana*, or *Olloa*, being all landes lately founde, and so rych, fruitfull, and pleasaunt, that they may in maner bee compared to the earthly Paradyse. Therefore, after that it was knowen to our men of howe great moment these tractes were, the Spaniards which inhabited the Ilande of *Cuba*, *Annunstus* being the gouernour of the Ilande, furnished a new naue of ten Carauelles, and fyue hundred men, with two small brigantines, as it were in the steade of lyght horsemen, or forerunners, whose ayde they myght vse as scoutes, to search the wayes for daunger of rockes and shalow sandes or shelfes. They shipte also certayne horses, as fyue stoned horses, and.xxvi. mares, apt for the warres. For theyr generall gouernour and Admirall of the nauy, they elected *Fernando Cortesius*, who at ỹ tyme was ỹ chief ruler of the citie of *Santiago*. For vnder Capitaynes, they appoynted *Alfons Portucareius*, *Francis Montegius*, *Alfons Auila*, *Alueradó Spatense*, *Iohn Velasquen*, and *Diegus Ordassus*. They styll folowed the same wynde, from the last angle of *Cuba* towarde the West. Assoone as *Francis Fernandes* of *Corduba*, and then *Iohn Grisalua* came within prospecte of the Ilande of Sacrifyces (whereof wee haue made mention before) sodeinly a tempest of

Images of golde.

Rasers of stone.

Instruments and tooles.

Landes lyke vnto the earthly Paradyse.

An other vyage of ten Caranels and fyue hundred men.

Horses and mares.

Fernando Cortesius.

contrary

contrary wynde prohibited them to take lande, and droue them backewarde to *Cozumella*, lying on the East syde of *Iucatana*: this Ilande hath onely one hauen, named sainct Johns porte, and hath in it onely syxe townes: also none other water then in welles and cesternes, bycause it lacketh ryuers and sprynges by reason it is playne, conteynyng onely. xlv. myles in circuite. At the commyng of our men, thinhabitauntes fledde to the thicke woods, and forsooke theyr townes for feare: Our men entred into theyr houses, where they founde plentie of vittayles, and many ornamentes parteynyng to the furnyshyng of theyr houses, as hanginges and carpettes of dyuers colours, sheetes also of gossampine cotton (whiche they call *Amaccas*) and muche apparell. They haue furthermore innumerable bookes, of the which with many other thinges sent to our newe Emperour, wee will speake more largely heereafter. The souldiers wandered about the Ilande, and viewed all thinges diligently, keepyng themselues styll in battayle raye, least they myght bee sodeinly inuaded. They founde but a fewe of thinhabitauntes, and onely one woman in theyr company. By thinterpretours of *Cuba*, and other which the Spaniardes tooke first from *Iucatana*, they perswaded the woman to call the kynges that were absent. They came gladly, and made a league of friendshyp with our men, whereby they were restored to theyr houses, and a great parte of their stuffe. They are circumcised Idolatours, and sacrifyce children of both kyndes to their *Zemes*, which are the Images of their familiar and domesticall spirites, whiche they honour as goddes. When I enquired of *Alaminus* the pilot, also of *Francis Montegius*, and *Portucarerius*, from whence they had the children they offered in sacrifyce: they answered, that they bought them in the Ilandes thereabout, by exchaunge for golde and other of their trafycke: For in all this so large a space of land, the deuilyshe anxietie for the desyre of wicked money, hath not yet oppressed thinhabitauntes. They say the same also of the Ilandes lately founde, whereof two are named *Destam* and *Sestam*, whose inhabitants go naked, and for scarcenesse of children, sacrifice dogges, which they nourysshe aswell for that purpose, as also to eate, as wee doe Cunnies: these dogges are dumme, & can not barke, hauing snoutes lyke vnto Foxes. Suche as they destinate

The Ilande of Cozumella.

Carpettes and sheetes.

Innumerable bookes.

Circumcised Idolaters.

They Sacrifyce Children.

The Ilandes of Destam and Sestam.

The sacrifice of dogges.

to eate, they gelde while they are whelpes, whereby they ware very fat in the space of foure monethes. They reserue all the bytches for increase, and but fewe dogges. Our men diswaded them from these superstitions, declaryng howe they were abhominable, and detested of God. They were soone perswaded, and desyred a lawe which they myght folowe. Our men therfore declared vnto them, that there was onely one God, which made heauen and earth, the giuer of all good thinges, beyng of one incomprehensyble substaunce, vnder triplicitie of person. Assoone as they heard these wordes, they broke their *Zemes*, and pared, scraped, and washed the pauements and walles of their temples. Our men gaue them a paynted picture of the blessed virgine, which they placed reuerently in their temple, & about it a crosse, to be honoured in the remembraunce of God and man, and the saluation of mankynde. They erected also an other great crosse of wood in the toppe of the temple, whyther they oftentymes resorte togeather to honour the Image of the virgine. Thinhabitauntes signifyed by thinterpretours, that in the Ilande of *Iucatana*, not farre from them, there were seuen Christians captiues, which in tyme past were driuen thither by tempest. The Ilande of *Cozumella*, is onely fyue myles distant from *Iucatana*. The gouernour *Cortesius* being aduertised hereof, furnished two Carauels with fiftie men, willing them incõtinent to direct their viage thither, & to make search for these mẽ. They tooke wᵗ them iii. interpretors of *Cozumella* (whose lãguage agreeth wᵗ theirs) with letters to the Christians if any might be founde. He further declared vnto them, howe goodly a matter they should bryng to passe, if they coulde bryng away any of them: For hee no wayes doubted but that by their information, he should be fully certified of the commodities of all those tractes, & the maners of thinhabitauntes. Thus they departed, with commaundement to returne within the space of six dayes. But when they had remayned there now. viii. dayes, & heard no word of their Cozumellane interpretours, whom they had sent alande with the message and letters, our men returned to *Cozumella* without them, suspectyng that they were either slaine, or deteyned. And where as the whole nauie was now determined to depart from *Cozumella*, but that they were hyndered by contrary wynde, they sodeinly espied towarde

They are soone perswaded to our religion.

This people leauing one kynde of Idolatry be taught another.

An other viage

the

the west a Canoa comming from *Iucatana*, and in it one of the Christian captiues (named *Hieronimus Aquillaris*) who had lyued seuen yeeres in that Ilande: With what ioye they embraced the one the other, the chaunce may declare. They were no lesse desyrous to heare, then he to tell of the mysfortune which befell to him and his companions. And heere it shall not bee greatly from my purpose, briefely to rehearse howe the thing chaunced. In my Decades I haue made mention of a certayne noble man named *Valdiuia*, whom the Spanyardes which inhabited *Darien-na* in the supposed continent of the gulf of *Vraba*, sent to the Iland of *Hispaniola* to *Colonus* the Admirall and viceroy, with the residue of the Senate and counsaile there (to whom partayneth the redresse and ordering of all thinges in these new landes) to signifie vnto them in what extreme necessitie and penurie they lyued. Unhappy *Valdiuia* therefore, taking this matter in hande in an euyll houre, was with a sodeine and violent whirlewynde driuen vppon certayne quicksandes, in the prospecte of the Ilande of *Iamaica*, lying on the South syde of *Hispaniola* and *Cuba*. These blynde and swalowyng sandes, the Spaniardes call vypers, and that by good reason, bycause in them many shyppes are entangled, as the Lisertes are implycate in the tayles of the vypers. While the Carauell thus wrestled with the water, it was so burst in sunder, that *Valdiuia* with thirtie of his felowes could scarcely with much difficultie discende into the shyp boate: where without ores, and without sayles, they were caryed away by the violence of the water. For (as we haue sayd before in our Decades) the seas doe runne there continually with a violent course toward the West. They wandered thus .xiii. dayes, not knowing whither they went, nor yet fyndyng any thing to eate. Famine consumed seuen of them, which were cast into the sea to feede the fyshes. The residue lykewyse, in maner consumed by sampne, and fallyng from one calamitie into an other, were dryuen to *Iucatana*, and fell into the handes of a cruell kyng, who slue *Valdiuia* the gouernour, with certayne of his felowes: and when he had fyrst sacrifyced them to his *Zemes*, shortly after hee ate them, with his friendes of that conspiracie. For they eate onely their enemies & straungers, & doe otherwise absteyne from mans flesh. In this meane tyme, while *Hieronimus Aquillaris*,

Aquillaris. viii. yeeres captiue in the Ilande of Iucatana.

Valdiuia.

The shipwracke of Valdiuia.

The quicke sandes called vypers.

The course of the sea toward the West.

Valdiuia is sacrificed to Idoles.

How Aquillaris escaped.

with syre of his felowes, were reserued to be sacrifyced the thyrde day, they brake theyr bandes, escaped the handes of that cruell Tyrant, and fledde to an other kyng beyng his enimy, who receyued them, yet onely as bondmen. It is a straunge thyng to heare of the moother of this *Aquillaris*: For as soone as shee hearde that her sonne was fallen into the handes of the nations that eate mans flesshe, shee fell madde incontinent: so that whensoeuer after, shee sawe any meate roastyng at the fyre, or onely redy spytted to laye to the fyre, shee ceassed not to crye out in this maner, O mee most wretched moother, beholde the members of my sonne. But to returne to our purpose. When *Aquillaris* had now receyued the gouernours letter, sent by the Cozumellane messengers, hee declared to the kyng his maister (whose name was *Taxmarus*) what was theyr errande thither, and wherefore they were sent: vsyng in the meane tyme many large discourses, interpressyng the great power and magnificence of theyr kyng, who had of late arryued in those coastes: also of theyr humanitie and gentlenesse towarde theyr friendes and such as submitted them selues to them, & againe their rigour and fiercenesse agaynst suche as stubbernly eyther contemned them, or denyed their requestes. With these wordes he brought *Taxmarus* into such feare, that the maister was now fayne to desyre his seruaunt so to handle the matter, that they myght quietly enter into his dominion as his friendes, and not as his enemies. *Aquillaris* promised in their behalfe ỳ they should not onely come in peace, but also to ayde him against his enemies if neede should so require. Wherevpon he dismissed *Aquillaris*, & with him three of his familiers and companions. Thus they sayled togeather from *Cozumella* to *Iucatana*, to the ryuer which they had founde before in the fyrst viage thither, by the gouernance of *Alaminus* the pilot. They founde the mouth of the ryuer stopped with sand, as we reade of the ryuer of *Nilus* in Egypte, when the wyndes (called *Etesti*) blow in summer, and especially in the canicular dayes. Therefore where as they could not enter into the ryuer with the biggest vesselles (although it be otherwyse apte to receyue great shyppes) the gouernour caused two hundred men to bee set alande with the Brigantines and shyppe boates, wylyng *Aquillaris* to offer peace to thinhabitauntes. They demaunded

Kyng Taxmarus.

The mouth of a ryuer stopped with sande.

maunded what our men requyred. *Aquillaris* aunſweared, bittayles. There was a longe ſpace of ſande by the ſyde of the towne, whyther they wylled them to reſoꝛt, pꝛomyſyng to bꝛyng them bittayles thyther the day folowyng. Our men went, and they came, accoꝛdyng to theyꝛ pꝛomiſſe, and bꝛought with them eyght of theyꝛ Hennes, beyng as bygge as Peacockes, of bꝛownyſhe coloure, and not inferiour to Peacockes in pleaſaunt taſt. They bꝛought alſo as muche bꝛead made of *Maizium* (whiche is a grayne not muche vnlyke vnto panyke) as woulde ſcarcely ſerue tenne hungry men, and herewith deſyꝛed them to depart. But when they perceyued that our men made no haſt away, immediately there came a great company of armed men towarde them, demaundyng what they had to do thus to wander in other mens landes. Our men made anſweare by *Aquillaris*, that they deſyꝛed peace, bittayles, and golde, foꝛ exchange of other thynges. They anſweared againe, that they woulde nother peace noꝛ warre with them, but thꝛeatned them to auoyde the land, except they would be deſtroyed euery man. Our men ſayd that they woulde not depart, without ſufficient bittayles to mayntayne theiꝛ ſouldyers. They appoynted the day folowyng to bꝛyng them moꝛe bittayles, but they bꝛoke pꝛomiſe: Yet perceyuing the ſeconde day that our men were encamped on the ſande, and had repoſed there that nyght, they bꝛought them as much moꝛe bittayles, and commaunded them in the name of theyꝛ kyng to departe. Our men ſayde that they were deſyꝛous to ſee the towne, and to haue yet moꝛe ſtoꝛe of bittayles. The Barbarians denyed theyꝛ requeſt, and therewith departed, whiſperyng and mutteryng among them ſelues. In the meane tyme our men were ſtyll ſo oppꝛeſſed with hunger, that they were enfoꝛced to ſeeke foꝛ meate. The gouernour theꝛefoꝛe ſent his vnder captaynes to lande with a hundꝛed and fyftie men. As they went diſperſed in dyuers companyes about the villages of the countrey, the Barbarians met with one of theyꝛ bandes, and put them to great diſtreſſe: But when theyꝛ felowes, being not farre from them, heaꝛde the noyſe of theyꝛ alarome, they came with al poſſible haſte to theyꝛ reſcue. The gouernour on the other ſyde, placing his oꝛdinaunce in the bꝛygantines & ſhippe boates, appꝛoched to the ſhoꝛe, with

Turky Hens.

A conflicte.

the

the reſydue of his ſouldiers. The Barbarians lykewyſe, beyng redy furnyſhed to the battayle, came runnyng to the ſea ſyde, to diſturbe them, that they ſhoulde not come alande, and with theyr arrowes wounded many a farre of vnprepared. The gouernoure diſcharged about .xx. peeces of ordinaunce agaynſt them: With the ſlaughter and terrible thunder wherof, and with the flame of the fyre, and ſmell of the brimſtone, they were ſo aſtonied, and put to ſuch feare, that they fled and diſparcled lyke wylde beaſtes: whom our men purſuing, entred into the towne, which thinhabitantes forſoke in maner for feare of their owne men, whō they ſawe ſo diſmaide. On the banke of this ryuer there is a towne of ſuch portentous biggnes as I dare not ſpeake, but *Alanimus* the pilot, ſayth that it contayneth in circuite fyue hundred myles, and that it conſiſteth of .xxb. thouſande houſes: Some make it ſomwhat leſſe, but they all agree that it is exceedyng great and notable. The houſes are diuided with gardens, and are buylded of lyme and ſtone, very artificiall, and of cunnyng woorkemanſhip. To theyr haules, chambers, parlers, or other places of habitation, they aſcend by tenne or twelue ſtayres, and haue certayne ſpaces betwene euery houſe: ſo that it is not lawfull for any to lade his neyghbours wales with rafters or beames. Theyr houſes are ſeparate one from an other by the ſpace of thyree houſes, and are for the moſt parte couered with reede and thatche, and many alſo with ſlate or other ſtone. The Barbarians them ſelues confeſſed that they were that day fourtie thouſande men at the battayle, which were vanquiſhed of a fewe, by reaſon of the newe and vnknowen kynde of feyght with gunnes and horſes. For the gouernour had vnbarked .xvi. horſes, which were alſo at the battayle, and ſo fyercely aſſayled the Barbarians on the backehalfe, that they brake theyr array, and ſcattered them as it had ben flockes of ſheepe, ouerthrowing, woūding, & killing them on euery ſyde: Which thing the ſeely wretches ſo imputed to a miracle, that they had not ẏ power to occupie their weapones. For whereas before they had neuer ſeene any horſes, they thought that ẏ man on horſebacke and the horſe had ben all one beaſte, as the antiquitie dyd fable of the monſter *Centaurus*. Our men poſſeſſed the towne .xxii. dayes, where they made good cheare vnder couert, whyle

The Barbarians are put to flyght.

The great towne of Potanchana or Victoria. A towne of xxb. thouſande houſes.

Gunnes and horſes.

The men and the horſe. thought to be one beaſt.

whyle the owners of the houses lay vnder the fyrmament, and durst not assayle our men, who had placed them selues in the stroungest part of the towne, where some kept contynual watch (lest the Barbarians shoulde sodenly inuade them) whyle other gaue them selues to rest and sleepe. The inhabitauntes call this towne *Potanchana*: but our men for the victorie which they obteyned here, named it *Victoria*. It is a marueilous thyng to consider, the greatnesse, magnificence, & fineness of the building of certayne palaces they haue in the countrey, to the which they resort somtymes for theyr solace and pastyme. These are curiously builded with many pleasaunt diuises, as galeries, solars turrettes, portals, gutters, with chambers boorded after the maner of our waynescot, and well floored. Foure of our Spaniardes went into one of them, of such greatnesse, that they wandred in the same for the space of foure houres before they coulde fynde the way out. At the length by the interpretours, and certayne captiues, our men sent for the kyng, and suche rulers as were next vnder hym in authoritie, wyllyng them to submyt them selues, and to come into the towne vnarmed: geuyng the messengers further in commaundement, to certifie them that in theyr so doyng, they woulde commune with them as concerning conditions of peace, and restore them theyr towne. They came gladly, and entred euery man into his owne house, vpon condition, that they shoulde euer thereafter abstayne from such ceremonies and horrible sacrifices of mans flesh, to deuils, the mortal enemies to mankinde, whose Images they honoured, & to direct the eyes of theyr myndes to Christ our God, ỹ maker of heauen and earth, who was borne into this worlde of a virgin, and suffred death on the crosse for the redemption of mankynde, and finally to protesse them selues subiectes to the Christian kyng of Spayne. They promised both, and were instructed as farre as the shortnesse of tyme woulde permit. Beyng thus restored, they recompensed our men with many rewardes, supposyng suche men to be sent from heauen, whiche beyng so fewe in number, durst attempt battayle agaynst so great a multitude. They gaue our men also certayne golde, and twentie slaues. Departyng therefore from hence, and coasting styll along by the same shore, they came agayne to the gulfe whiche *Alaminus* the

Palaces of marueilous byggnes and well buylded.

They receyue our religion.

pilot

pilot founde before vnder *Grisalua*. This they named *Bian Sancti Iohannis*, that is, Saint Johns gulfe, for *Bian* in the Spanishe tounge signifieth a gulfe. Heere the inhabitantes resorted to them peaceably. About a myle from the shore, was a towne of a thousand and fyue hundred houses situate vpon a hyll. They profered our men halfe the towne, if they would dwel with them for euer. This perhaps they dyd the rather, eyther fearyng the example of the inhabitantes of *Potanchana*, the fame whereof myght haue come to theyr eares, or els hopyng that vnder the shadowe of suche valiaunt men, they myght obteyne ayde and succour agaynst theyr enemies and borderers. For (as I haue sayde before) they destroy one an other with contynuall warre, for the desire to enlarge theyr dominions. Our men refused perpetuall habitation, and accepted theyr frendly proffer for a tyme. As they came alande, the people folowed them on euerye syde with bowes in theyr handes, whiche they helde ouer our mens heades, to defend them from the rayne, as though they had walked in a continuall arbour. Heere they encamped. And lest the residue left in the shyps shoulde in the meane tyme waxe slouthfull with Idlenesse, the gouernour gaue commaundement to *Alaminus* the pilot, and *Francis Montegius*, to searche the West partes of that land, while he releeued the weeried souldiers, and healed such as were wounded. To them that went forward on this viage, he assigned two brigantines with fyftie men. Vnto this gulfe, the course of the water was gentle enough and moderate: but when they had sailed a litle further toward the West, they founde the sea running with so swift a course, as if it were a great riuer fallyng from the toppes of hygh mountaynes, insomuch that in a short space of tyme it caried them fiftie myles from theyr felowes. When they were now entred into this violent streame of water, they saw on their left hande a large plaine sea, which met with the course of the other waters falling from the West. And lyke as two great riuers that runne contrarye waies, make a vehement conflict where they meete: so seemed the waters comming from the South, to resyst these waters, as enemies that had entred into the ryght or possession of an other: On the contrary part, they sawe the lande reachyng farre both on the left hande and on the ryght. In this stryfe be-

A towne of a thousand and fyue hundred houses.

Another voiage of two brigantines and fyftie men.

Where the sea runneth swyftly from the East to the West.

A conflict betweene the waters comming from the West and from the South.

tweene

twene the waters, they were so tossed on both sydes, and entangled with whirlepoles, that they long wrestled without hope of lyfe. At the length, with muche difficultie turnyng the stemmes or forpartes of theyr shyppes agaynst the streame from whence they came, and labouryng all that they myght with theyr oxes and sayles, they coulde scarsely ouercome the rage of the water, insomuche that where as they thought that they had in one nyght sayled two myles, they founde that they were dryuen backe foure myles: Yet at the length with gods helpe, they ouercame this daungerours conflycte. They spent xxii. dayes in this litle space of sea: And when they were nowe returned to theyr felowes, declared vnto them that that ende was the lande of *Coluacana*, whiche they adiudged to be part of the supposed continent. The lande whiche they sawe a farre of before theyr face, they suppose eyther to be annexed to our continent, or to be ioyned to the large North regions called *Baccalaos*, whereof we haue made mention in our Decades, in the voiage of Sebastian Cabote. This matter is yet doubtefull: but we trust it shall once be better knowen. While *Alaminus* and *Montegius* searched these secretes, the kyng of the prouince (whose name was *Multoxumam*) sent our men, by one of his chiefe officers (beyng also his Lieuetenaunt of the sayde towne) many ryche and goodly presentes of golde, syluer, and precious stones, set and wrought after a marueylous straunge deuice, and with no lesse cunnyng workemanshyp. Heere they determined to sende messengers to our newe Emperour, to knowe his pleasure, that they myght in this prouince plant a newe colonie or habitation: and this dyd they without the aduise of *Diegus Velasquen* the gouernour of the Iland of *Cuba*, or *Fernandina*, who fyrst sent them forth, with commaundement to returne agayne after they had searched these regions, and obtayned plentie of golde. While they consulted herof, they were of diuers opinions: but the most part alleaged that in this case it was not requisite to make the gouernour of theyr counsayle, forasmuch as ỹ matter shoulde be referred to a higher Iudge, as to the king of Spaine hym self. When they were thus agreed, they receyued vittayles of the gentle king of the prouince, and assigned the place of their colonie twelue myles from the saide towne, in a fruiteful & holsome soile.

A dangerous and paynesul vyage.

The lande of Coluacana.

The lande of Baccalaos or Baccalearum.

Sych presentes of golde and pretious stones.

A newe colonie.

For

For theyr generall gouernoure, they elected *Corteſius* the gouernour of the nauie, agaynſt his wyll as some saye. For other magiſtrates to gouerne the citie which they intended to builde, he chose *Portucarerius* and *Montegius*, of whom we haue made mention before: They chose also certayne messengers to sende to the kyng by the conduction of *Alaminus* the pilot: Furthermore, foure of the princes of this prouince, offered them selues wyllyngly to go with our men into Spayne, to thintent to see our landes, and that kyng whose power is so great, and whose auctoritie reacheth so farre: They brought lykewyse two women with them, whiche serued and obeyed them in all thinges, after the maner of their countrey. The people of this nation is of browne or yelowysshe colour. Both the men and the women haue pendauntes of gold & pretious stones hanging at their eares: The men also bore theyr neather lippes full of holes, from the vppermoſt part of the lippe, euen vnto the neathermoſt part of the gumme. At these they hang certayne rynges, and plates of golde and syluer, fastned to a smal and thynne plate, lying within betwene the lip & the gumme. At the biggeſt hole in the middeſt of the lippe, there hangeth a rounde plate of syluer, as brode as the coyne called a Carolyne, & as thicke as a mans finger. I do not remember that euer I sawe any thyng that seemed more fylthy in myne eye: Yet do they thynke that there is nothyng more comly vnder the circle of the moone, whereby we may see howe vainely mankynde wandereth in his owne blyndneſſe. The Ethiopian thincketh the blacke colour to be fayrer then the white, and the white man thinketh otherwiſe. They that are powled, thynke that more decent then to weare a bushe, and they that weare beardes, iudge it a deformitie to be shauen. As appetite therfore moueth, and not as reaſon perſwadeth, men runne after vanities, and euery prouince is ruled by theyr owne ſenſe, as writeth saint Jerome. From whence they haue their gold, we haue spoken ſufficiently before. But as our men marueyled where they had theyr syluer, they shewed them certayne high mountaines, which are continually couered w snowe, sauing that at certaine times of the yeere the only toppes are seene bare, bicause the snow is there molten, by reaſon of ỹ thicke and warme cloudes. The plaines therfore, or milde, ſofte, & pleaſaunt mountaynes,

This Corteſius hath written a booke of theſe thynges.

They weare rynges and plates at theyr lyppes.

The dyuers phantaſies of men.

Syluer.

taines, seeme to bring foorth golde, and the rough craggie mountaynes with theyr colde valleyes, are the places where syluer is engendred. They haue also Laton, whereof they make such Males and Hammers as are vsed in the warres, dygging Mattockes also, and Spades: for they haue neyther Iron nor steele. But let vs nowe speake of the presentes sent into Spayne to the kyng: and fyrst of the bookes. These procuratours therefore of the newe colonie of the prouince of *Coluacana*, among other their presentes, brought also a great number of bookes, the leaues whereof are made of the inner rindes or barkes of trees, thinner then eyther that of the Elme or of ỳ Salowe: these they smeere or anoynt with the pitche of molten *Bitumem*, and whyle they be soft, extend them to what fourme them lysteth: When they bee cold and harde, they rubbe them ouer with a certayne playster. It is to be thought, that they beate the playster into fyne floure, and so temperyng it with some byndyng moysture, to make a crust therewith vppon the leaues, whereon they wryte with anye sharpe instrument, and blot the same agayne with a spunge or some suche other thyng, as marchaunt men and noble mens stewards are accustomed to do with their wryting tables made of the woodde of figge trees. The leaues of theyr bookes are not set in order after the maner of ours, but are extended many cubittes in length. The matters whiche they wryte, are contayned in square tables, not lose, but so bound togeather with the tough & flexible clay called *Bitumem*, that they seeme lyke wooden tables whiche had been vnder the handes of cunnyng Bookbynders. Which way so euer the booke lieth open, there are two leaues seene, and two sydes wrytten, with as many lying vnder them, except the booke be vnfolded in length. For vnder one leafe there are many leaues ioyned togeather. The fourmes of theyr letters are nothyng lyke vnto ours, but are muche more crooked and entangled, lyke vnto fyshhookes, knottes, snares, starres, syles, vyse, and suche other, muche lyke vnto the Egyptian letters, and wrytten in lines lyke vnto ours. Heere and there betweene the lines, are pictured the shapes of men, and diuers beastes, and especyally the Images of kynges, and other noble men: Whereby it is to be thought, that in such bookes, the factes of theyr kinges are conteined, as we see the lyke among vs, how our printers expresse the summe of

Note where golde and syluer are engendred.

I thinke this Laton to be some kynde of pure Copper, or els Copper that holdeth golde. For Laton is an artificial metall, and hath no natural myne.

Theyr bookes.

Theyr letters.

What is conteyned in theyr bookes.

of hiſtoryes in pictures, that men may therby be the more allured to bye ſuche bookes. The coueringes of theyr bookes are alſo artificially wrought, and paynted. When they are ſhut, they ſeeme to differ nothing from ours in fourme. In theſe bookes are furthermore comprehended theyr lawes, rytes of ceremonies and ſacrifyces, annotations of Aſtronomie, accomptes, computations of tymes, with the maner of graffyng, ſowing, and other thynges parteynyng to huſbandry. They begyn the yeere from the goyng downe of the ſeauen ſtarres, called *Vergiliæ*, or *Pleiades*, and count theyr monethes accordyng to the mones. They name a moneth, *Tona*, of the Moone, for in theyr language they call the Moone *Tona*. They recken the dayes by the ſonnes: therefore as many dayes as they name, they ſaye, ſo manye ſonnes, the Sonne in theyr tongue, is called *Tonatico*. They diſtribute the yeere (without any reaſon why) into twentie monethes, and the moneth into as many dayes. The temples which they frequent, they adourne with golden hangynges, and other ornamentes of golde and ſyluer, with precious ſtones intermyxt. At the ſpryng of the day, they perfume theyr temples with frankenſence, and make theyr prayers before they take in hand any other buſyneſſe. But oh horrible crueltie: for the inhabitantes of al theſe tractes alſo, do ſacrifice children to their Idoles, in lyke maner as we haue ſayde before. At ſuche tyme as the ſeedes lye in the grounde, and when the corne begynneth to ſhewe forth the eare, they deſtinate to theyr *Zemes* ſuche bondmen as they haue bought, or ſuch captyues as they haue taken in the warres, which they ſacrifice after that they haue made them great cheare, and decked them in precious apparell. Alſo before they ſacrifice theſe poore wretches, they leade them about the towne, whyle al the people ſalute them humbly and reuerently, affyrmyng that in ſhort ſpace they ſhalbe receyued into the company of the gods. They honour theyr *Zemes*, with an other ſharpe kynde of deuotion: for they let them ſelues blood, eyther in the tongue, lips, eares, legges, thyghes, or breſt, which they take in theyr handes, and hurle it vp towards heauen, ſo that with the fall thereof the pauement of the temple is all ſparcled with blood, whereby they thynke that theyr goddes are well pleaſed. From the newe colonie (called *Villa Ricca*) niene myles

Temples richely adourned.

Prayer.

They ſacrifice children and captiues.

A wrong way to heauen.

Bloody gods.

Villa Ricca.

myles distant, there is a towne of xv. thousande houses, whiche thinhabitauntes call *Cemobal*, but our men named it *Siuilla*. The kyng of this towne had fyue men which he reserued to be sacrifyced, whom when our men would haue delyuered, the kyng made humble request to them, saying that if they tooke away such men as hee had consecrated to bee offered to the goddes, they should bryng vtter destruction to him and all his kyngdome : For if our sacrifyces (sayde hee) doe ceasse, our *Zemes* will take such displeasure with vs, that they will suffer our corne, graffes, and fruites, to bee consumed of wormes, scorched with drouth, destroyed with flooddes, or blasted with lyghtnyng. Our men perceyuyng his earnestnesse heerein, thought it best to choose the least euyll, perceyuyng that it was yet no tyme to disquiet theyr myndes, and therefore suffered them to exercyse their accustomed ceremonies. And although theyr priestes promise them immortall glorie, eternall felicitie, and perpetuall conuersation with the goddes after the stormie dayes of this lyfe, yet doe they with heauy countenaunces giue eare to their promises, and had rather bee set at libertie. Their priestes are named *Quines*, in the plurall number, and *Quin* in the singular : they leade a pure and chast lyfe, and are honoured of the people with feare and reuerence. They make fagottes of the bones of their enemies which they haue taken in the warres, and hang vp the same at the feete of theyr *Zemes*, as tokens of the victories obteyned by their fauour. To these they adde certaine titles and superscriptions, as testimonies of the same. This is straunge and woorthy to be noted, that when their children are a yeere olde, the priestes in their temples with deuout ceremonies and murmuryng wooordes, powre water in forme of a crosse vpon their heades with a cruet, whereby they seeme to baptise them : Neyther doe they, as the Iewes and Turkes, thinke their temples polluted if any of a straunge religion bee present at their sacrifyces and other solemnities. We haue now spoken sufficiently of theyr bookes, temples, and superstitions : Let vs nowe therefore come to the other presentes whiche were brought to the kyng. Among these, there were two broade and rounde plates (whiche some haue named the Images of the Sunne and Moone) the one of siluer, and the other of golde,

Siuilla Nous.

The force of an olde errour.

Theyr priests chast.

Faggotes of bones.

A figure of baptisme.

The presentes sent into Spayne to the kyng.

Two Images of golde and siluer.

in largeneſſe and roundneſſe muche lyke to the ſtones of handemylles: yet but thynne, and in maner both of one circumference, that is, xxviii. ſpannes in circuite. That of golde is of the weyght of thꝛee thouſande and viii. hundꝛed Caſtellanes, where as we haue ſayd beforꝛe ẏ a Caſtellane is a coyne of golde which weygheth moꝛe then a Ducate by a trient, that is, the thyꝛde parte of a pounde. In the center of this, was the Image of a kyng of halfe a cubite long, ſyttyng in a trone, and apparelled to the knee lyke vnto a mawmet, with ſuche countenaunce as our paynters are wont to paynte fayꝛies oꝛ ſpꝛites: about the Image, were the ſhapes of trees and floures, ſo that it ſeemed to ſitte as though it had been in a feelde. The other of ſyluer, was made to the ſame ſimilitude, beyng alſo in maner of the ſame weyght, and both of pure mettall. They bꝛought lykewyſe certayne graynes of rude golde (that is, ſuche as was neuer molten) about the bygneſſe of Fytches, oꝛ the puiſe called Lintels, in token of plentie of natiue golde: Alſo two cheynes of golde, whereof the one conteyned.viii. lynkes, in the which were ſet two hundꝛed, thꝛeeſcoꝛe, and two fayꝛe and cleare redde ſtones, and yet no rubies, furthermoꝛe a hundꝛed foureſcoꝛe and thꝛee greene ſtones, and yet no emerodes: Neuertheleſſe, theſe are in lyke eſtimation with them, as the other are with vs. At the edge of this cheyne, there hang.xxvii. golden belles, hauyng betweene euery of them foure iewels of pꝛecious ſtones incloſed in golde, at euery of the which in lyke maner hang certayne ſpangles of golde. The other cheyne conſiſteth onely of foure golden lynkes, beſet rounde about with a hundꝛed and two redde ſtones, and a hundꝛed thꝛeeſcoꝛe & twelue greene ſtones, with.xxvi. golden belles, curiouſly wꝛought and placed in comely oꝛder. In the bery myddeſt of the cheyne, are ten great pꝛecious ſtones incloſed in gold, at the which alſo hang a hundꝛed golden pendauntes, of cunnyng wooꝛkemanſhyppe.

Two cheynes of golde marueylouſly beſet with pꝛecious ſtones and iewelles.

Buſkyns. They bꝛought furthermoꝛe twelue paire of lether buſkynnes of diuers colours, ſome imbꝛodered with golde, and ſome with ſiluer, with plates and iewels of golde and pꝛecious ſtones incloſed, and at euery of them certayne golden belles: Alſo certayne myters, beſet with pꝛecious ſtones of dyuers colours, among the whiche ſome are blewe lyke vnto Saphires. Of

Myters.

creſtes,girdles, and fannes made of feathers, I wot not what I ſhould ſay : but ſurely,if euer the wyttes and inuentions of men haue deſerued honour or commendation in ſuche artes, theſe ſeeme moſt wooꝛthy to bee had in admiration. I doe not marueile at golde and pꝛecious ſtones , but am in maner aſtonyſhed to ſee the wooꝛkemanſhyp excell the ſubſtaunce : Foꝛ I haue with woonderyng eyes beheldе a thouſande fourmes and ſimilitudes, of the whiche I am not able to wyte, and in my iudgement I neuer ſawe any thyng whoſe beautie myght ſo allure the eyes of men . As they marueyled at the naturall beautie of the feathers of our peacockes and pheaſantes, ſo dyd we no leſſe marueyle at the artificiall beautie of ſuche thinges as they make of fethers and quilles,impaled with golde : Foꝛ I ſawe in many of theyꝛ wooꝛkes, all maner of natiue colours,euen in the quilles, whereof they make ſuch inſtrumentes . They bꝛought alſo two helmettes, garnyſhed with pꝛecious ſtones of a whitiſhe blewe colour : One of theſe is edged with belles and plates of golde, and vnder euery bell two knobbes of golde : the other, beſyde the ſtones wherewith it is couered,is lykewyſe edged with.xxv. golden belles and knobbes, and hath on the creſt a greene bird, with the feete,byll,and eyes, of golde: Alſo foure ſpeares, much lyke vnto troute ſpeares, oꝛ yeele ſpeares, the wood whereof is all couered with quilles of diuers colours, marueylouſly wreathed with golden wyers,and plates intermyxte: Euery of theſe ſpeares haue thꝛee pikes,whoſe edges oꝛ teeth are all of pꝛecious ſtones,made faſt with wyers of golde . Of lyke wooꝛkemanſhip they bꝛought a great ſcepter, beſet with pꝛecious ſtones & belles of golde : alſo a bꝛaſelet of golde, and ſhooes made of a Hartes ſkynne,ſowed and imbꝛodered with golden wyers, with a white ſole beneath : Furthermoꝛe a glaſſe of a bꝛyght blewe ſtone, and an other of white,both encloſed in golde : Lykewyſe a pꝛecious ſtone, of the kynde of them that are called *Sphinges*, incloſed in golde: Furthermoꝛe the head of a great Liſarte,two great ſhelles, two Duckes,the ſhapes of diuers other birds,foules,and fyſhes, and all of maſſie golde : Furthermoꝛe,xxiiii. rounde and ſquare targettes, ſhieldes,and buckelers of golde, and fyue of ſyluer: Alſo a triple crowne of plates and wyers of golde, marueylouſly wꝛeathed with quilles and feathers of diuers colours, hauyng

How can we then call them beaſtly or Barbarous?

If they had chaunged theyꝛ golde foꝛ our Iron, they had not ſo ſoone been ſubdued.

Quylles.

Helmets.

A bꝛyd.

Speares.

A ſcepter.

A bꝛaſelet.

Shooes.

Glaſſes.

Bꝛyds, foules, and fyſhes, of golde.

A crowne of golde.

on the front a plate of golde, on the which is grauen the Image of the Idole *Zemes*. About this Image, hang foure other plates, lyke crosses of golde, in the which are grauen the heades of diuers beastes, as Lions, Tigers, Woolues, and suche other. They brought also the similitudes of certayne beastes, made some of roddes or twygges, and some of woodde, with the beastes owne skynnes thereon, and garnyshed with collers of laton belles: Lykewyse diuers sheetes, weaued of gossampyne cotton of sundry colours, whereof two are rychly frynged with golde and precious stones, and three other with quilles and feathers intermyxte with gossampine cotton of sundry colours, and checkered lyke the panes of a chest boorde: Some are on the one side, of blacke, white, and redde colours, and on the other syde plaine, without any varietie: Other some are wrought in lyke maner with variable colours, with a wheele or circle of blacke in the myddest, intermyxte with shyning fethers, and sparkes of golde lyke starres: They brought also cloth of Aras or Verdure, of marueylous workemanshyppe: Lykewyse a souldiers cloake, such as their princes weare in the warres, with certayne priuye coates of fence, and sundry tirements partepnyng to their heads, with also many such other thinges, more beautiful to the eye then ryche or precious, whereof to entreate particulerly, it should be more tedious then profytable. I let passe heere also to speake of many particuler nauigations, and of the trauailes and daungers which they sustayned in the same, with the monsters and secretes of nature they sawe, which are all conteyned in the regysters of our Senate of the affayres of India, out of the which I haue selected these fewe annotations, such as seemed to mee most meete to bee published. Notwithstandyng these ryche and goodly presentes, yet were they that brought them, and also *Coriesius* the gouernour of the naule, and auctour of erecting their newe colonie in those remote regions, adiudged by the Senate to haue done agaynst ryght and equitie, in that they attempted the same without thaduice of the gouernour of the Iland of *Cuba*, who sent them forth by the kyngs auctoritie, wheras they dyd other thinges beside their commission, yea although they went to the kyng, not first knowing his pleasure whom the kyng had substitute his Lieue-

Images of beastes.

Sheetes.

Cloth of Arras.

A souldyers cloake.

Registers of thaffayres of India.

Thauctoritie of the Lieuetenaunt.

Lieuetenaunt in that Ilande: insomuch that by his procuratour, he accused them before the Senate as fugitiue theeues and traytours. They on ẏ other part alleaged, ẏ they had done the kyng better seruice then he, & that they had shewed sufficient obedience, in appealyng to the kyng as the hygher Iudge. But the gouernour required by the vertue of his commission, & the kinges letters pattents, ẏ they myght be beheaded for their disobedience against him, whom they knewe to bee authorised by the kyng. They agayne replied, that they had not offended the kyng, but rather deserued rewarde for their great daungers and trauailes. Both the reward and punishment were deferred, and a day appointed when both parties should be heard. Let vs nowe therefore come to the Spanyardes of *Dariena*, thinhabitours of the gulfe of *Vraba*, in the supposed continent. Wee haue sayde before, that *Dariena* is a ryuer runnyng towarde the West syde of the gulfe of *Vraba*: On the banke of this ryuer, the Spanyardes planted their first colonie or habitation, after they had vanquished kyng *Chemaccus*: this colonie they named *Sancta Maria Antiqua*, by reason of a bowe which they made to the virgine Marie in the tyme of the battaile against *Chemaccus*. To these (as wee haue made mention in the ende of our Decades) was *Petrus Arias* sent with a thousand and two hundred men, at the request of *Vaschus Nunnez Balboa*, who was then the gouernour of *Dariena*, and the first that found and discouered the large South sea heretofore vnknowne. We haue also declared, how at the arriuall of *Petrus Arias* the newe gouernour, hee diuided his armie into Centurions, that is, captaines ouer hundreds, whom hee sent foorth dyuers wayes. What tragedies folowed heereof, I will absolue in fewe wordes, bycause all are horrible and vnpleasaunt: For since we fynyshed our Decades, there hath been none other then kyllyng, sleying, murderyng, and accusing. The kyng made *Vaschus* gouernour but duryng his pleasure. His courage was such, and his factes so notorious, that hee could not long abyde the hautynes of *Petrus Arias*. To bee breefe, their fallyng out and discorde, confounded all thinges. *Iohn Cacedus* the pulpit fryer of the order of sainct Frances, dyd his vttermost endeuour to make them friendes, promysyng vnto *Vaschus*, the daughter of *Petrus Arias* to wyfe: But no meanes could be founde how these

The Spanyardes of Dariena.

Sancta Maria Antiqua.

Petrus Arias whom the Spanyardes name Pediarias.

This sea the Spanyardes call Mardelser.

Contention betweene Vaschus and Petrus Arias.

two, whiche boze the chiefe rule, myght bee bzought to agree-
ment. At the length the matter grew to such extremitie, that *Pe-*
Petrus Arias commaundeth that Vaschus be put to death. *trus Arias* fyndyng occasion of quarellyng agaynst *Vaschus*, sent
processe to the magistrates of the towne, whereby he commaun-
ded them to strangle *Vaschus*, and fyue other which were chiefe
captaines vnder him, alleagyng that they and their confederates
conspired to rebell in the South sea, and that *Vaschus* him selfe
for that intent had buylded and furnished foure shippes, to search
the south coastes of the supposed continent: also, that to his three
hundred souldiers and companions which hee had with him, he
Vaschus is accused. should speake wordes of this effecte as foloweth. My friendes,
and felowes of my long paynes and trauayles, howe long shall
wee bee subiecte to the commaundement of other, syth we haue
bydden the brunt, and ouercome thinterprise for the whiche
this newe gouernour was sent with so great a multitude? Who
can any longer abyde his pryde and insolencie? Let vs there-
fore folowe these coastes whyther so euer fortune shall dryue vs,
and among these so many pleasaunt and fruitfull prouinces of
this large lande, let vs choose one, in the whiche wee maye
with libertie spende that portion of our lyues which yet remay-
neth. Who can fynde vs, or shalbe able to profer vs violence?
When these or the lyke wordes were declared to *Petrus Arias*,
hee sent to the South partes for *Vaschus*, wyllyng him by the
vertue of his commission to repayre to him foorthwith. *Vaschus*
obeyed, and at his comming was cast in prison: yet constantly
denying that euer hee entended any such thyng. Witnesses were
brought agaynst him, and his wordes rehearsed from the begyn-
Vaschus is put to death. ning: To conclude, hee was iudged woorthy death, and was
put to execution. And this is the rewarde wherewith the blynde
goddesse oftentymes recompenseth such as haue sustayned great
Petrus Arias. trauayles and daungers, to bee hyghly in her fauour. *Petrus*
Arias leauyng hys wyfe in *Dariena*, embarked him selfe in
the shippes left of *Vaschus*, to thintent to search those coastes:
But whether hee bee returned or not, wee haue yet no certayne
knowledge. He hath also his fortune. Yet is there an other go-
Lapus Sosa. uernour assigned, whose name is *Lapus Sosa*, the viceroye of
the Ilandes of *Canarie*. What fortune *Petrus Arias* may haue
if he returne, let good men iudge. There was nothing done vnder

him

him woorthy glorie. Some thynke that hee was at the beginnyng to slacke and negligent in his office, and not seuere in correctyng errours and misorders. But we will leaue him, and rehearse somewhat whereof we haue been lately informed, as touchyng the great and deepe ryuer of *Dabaiba*, the whiche for the greatnesse and largenesse thereof, our men named *Grandis*, that is, great, as we haue noted in our Decades. This ryuer falleth into the furthest corner of the gulfe of *Vraba* by seuen portes or mouthes, as doth the ryuer of *Nilus* into the Egyptian sea, whose large description you may also reade in our Decades. That the mountaynes on euery syde about this ryuer are ryche in golde, wee haue learned by thinformation of thinhabitauntes, of whom wee made diligent inquisition. *Vaschus*, and beside him other gouernours and Lieuetenauntes, haue fouretymes entred into this ryuer with theyr armies in battayle array, and with dyuers kyndes of shippes, fyrst for the space of fourtie myles, then fyftie, and at the last fourescore, and at an other tyme also ouerthwarte the ryuer. Oh shamefull chaunce, and detestable cowardnesse of our men. A naked nation encountryng with them that had apparell, the armed against the vnarmed, had the ouerthrow in maner in all conflictes, and were either all slayne or wounded. They vse inuenomed arrowes, and are such experte archers, that if they espy any place of theyr enimie bare or vnarmed, they will not lyghtly fayle to stryke him there. They vse also many dartes, which in the tyme of the battayle they hurle so thicke a farre of, that they take the lyght of the sunne from theyr enemies as it were with a cloude. They haue lykewise brode & long swoordes, made of a heauy and harde kynde of wood, wherewith they fight fiercely neare at hand. *Vaschus* him selfe receiued many woundes in encountryng with them. And thus by reason of the fiercenesse of these Barbarians, the ryuer of *Dabaiba* is yet left vnsearched. Wee will nowe speake somewhat more of the Ilande of *Hispaniola* (which the Spanyardes call *Spagnuola*) the mother and chiefe of all other landes or Ilands wherof we entended to write. In it the Senate is now restored, and fyue Iudges assigned to giue lawes to all thinhabitauntes of those tractes. But in short tyme, they shall ceasse geathering of gold, although there bee great plentie, by reason they shall lacke labourers and myners,

The great ryuer of Dabaiba or Grandis.

The gulfe of Vraba.

The ryche mountaynes of Dabaiba.

Fierce & warlyke people.

Dartes.

Swoordes of heauy wood.

Hispaniola.

Oniedus wryteth that there are now fyue monasteries.

ners, forasmuch as thinhabitauntes whose helpe they vsed heerein, are brought to a small number, consumed partely by warre, and many more by famine that yeere that they dygged vp the rootes whereof they made theyr best bread, and lefte of sowyng their grayne of *Maizium*, which is their common foode, supposing hereby to haue dryuen our men out of the Ilande, who had victayles sent them from Spayne. A great number of them also dyed of new and straunge diseases, which in the yeere of Christ a thousande fyue hundred and eightiene, consumed them lyke rotten sheepe. And (to say the trueth) our mens vnsaciable desyre of golde, so oppressed these poore wretches with extreme labour and toyle, where as before they lyued pleasauntly and at libertie, gyuen onely to playes and pastymes, as daunsyng, fyshyng, foulyng, and huntyng of little Cunnies, that many of them perysshed euen for very anguysshe of mynde, the which (with theyr vnaccustomed labour) are thinges of them selues sufficient to engender many newe diseases. But the kyng and the Senate haue nowe determyned, that they bee reduced to a people, and to gyue them selues onely to increase, and tyllage of the grounde: and that onely suche as are bought or taken out of other regions, be appoynted to labour in the gold mynes. But it shall suffyse to haue sayde thus muche of the pestiferous hunger of golde: therfore I wil speake of other matters. It is a marueylous thyng to consider how all thinges increase and prosper in this Ilande. There are nowe. xxviii. suger presses, wherewith great plentie of suger is made. The canes or reedes wherein the suger groweth, are bygger and hygher then in any other place, and are as bygge as a mans arme in the brawne, and hygher then the stature of a man, by the halfe. This is more wonderfull, that where as in Valentia in Spayne (where a great quantitie of suger is made yeerely) where so euer they applye them selues to the great increase thereof, yet doeth euery roote bryng forth not past fyue, or syxe, or at the most seuen of those reedes: whereas in *Hispaniola* one roote beareth twentie, and oftentymes thirtie. Foure footed beastes and cattayle, are marueylously increased in this Ilande. And albeit that the rauenyng hunger of golde hath hitherto greatly hyndered our men from tyllage of the grounde, yet is there great plen-

tie

Newe and straunge diseases.

The suger of Hispaniola.

Suger of Valentia.

A token of marueylous fruitfulnes.

eye of wheate, whiche prospereth so well, that it yeeldeth some tyme a hundred folde, and this especially on the hylles or rydges of the mountaynes prospectyng towarde the North: Uines doo also encrease here with no lesse fruitefulnesse. What shoulde I speake of the trees that beare *Cassia fistula*, brought fyrst into this Ilande from the other Ilandes neere vnto the supposed Continent, as we haue noted in our Decades? There is nowe suche plentie hereof, that after a fewe yeeres we shall haue a pounde of the pryce that we paye nowe for an ounce. Of the Brasyle, and Mirobalane trees, with other innumerable prerogatiues and benefytes which nature hath plentifully geuen to this blessed Ilande, we haue spoken sufficiently in our Decades. Yet haue I thought good to repeate parte of the same, because I thynke that the wittes of many readers haue diuerted from the weight of great affaires, to the recreation of such pleasaunt thynges: And yet do not such thinges as are sauerie, engender tediousnesse, so that a pretious matter beadiourned with a pretious vesture.

Wheat.

Wines.

Cassia Fistula.

Brasyle.

Mirobalanes.

A breefe rehearsal of the contentes

of the bookes of the fyrst Decade, and so folowyng of all the other Decades.

Folio .8.

IN the fyrst booke is declared howe *Christophorus Colonus*, otherwyse called *Columbus*, persuaded *Fernando* and *Elizabeth* pyinces of Spayne, to further his attempt in searchyng newe and vnknowen landes in the West Ocean. Also of the .vii. Ilandes of *Canaria*, by whom they were found and conquered.

Howe *Colonus* founde the Ilandes of *Hispaniola*, and *Cuba*, and of the fierce people called *Canibales* or *Caribes*, which are accustomed to eate mans flesh.

Of the rootes called *Ages*, *Iucca*, and the grayne *Maizium*, whereof the people of the Ilandes made theyr bread.

Of the golde found in the sandes of ryuers, & of the Serpents which are without hurt: also of turtle doues, ducks, & popingaies.

Of Mastix, and Aloe, with dyuers fruites and trees vnknowen to vs, and of the fruitefulnesse of the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, which the Spanyardes call *Spagnuola*.

Of the seconde viage of *Colonus* into these regions, and howe he was furnished with .xvii. shyppes, and a thousande and two hundred souldiers, with all kynde of artillarie, artificers, and grayne to sowe: and of the tree from the which water droppeth continually into a trenche made by mans hande.

The contentes of the seconde booke. Fol. 12.

HOwe *Colonus* departing from the Ilandes of *Canarie*, sayled viii. hundred & twentie leagues in .xxi. daies, & came to *Dominica* an Iland of the *Canibales*: & of the fragrant sauoure of spices whiche proceded from the Ilandes.

Of the Ilandes of *Galanta* or *Galana* and *Guadalupea*, and of the trees which beare that kynd of cotton which the Italians call *Bombasine*, and the Spanyardes *Algadon*.

Of dyuers kyndes of Popingiayes, and of the Ilande of *Matinino* or *Madanino*, beyng inhabited onely with women: also of dyuers other fruitefull Ilandes, and of a conflicte whiche the Spanyardes had with the Canibales.

Of

Of certayne Ilandes in the whiche are ſeene the mynes of metals and precious ſtones, and of the fruitfull and populous Iland called *Burichena*, or *Boriquen*, or *Inſula. S. Iohannis*.

Howe all the Admirals men whiche at his fyrſt viage he left in *Hiſpaniola*, were ſlaine in his abſence by the rebellion of *Guacanarillus*, kyng of the region of *Xamana*: and of the free kynde of lyfe whiche they leade that haue not the vſe of money.

Of the ſeuen maydens which ſwam three miles in the ſea, and of the maner of geathering of gold in the ſands of riuers.

The contentes of the thyrd booke. Fol. 17.

A Particuler diſcription of the Iland of *Hiſpaniola*, whiche *Colonus* thynketh to be *Ophir*, from whence kyng *Salomon* had his great ryches of golde.

Of the marueylous fruitfulneſſe of *Hiſpaniola*, and of the ſuger canes growyng there.

Of the golden regions of *Cipanga* or *Cibaua*, & of the ryuers in whoſe ſandes is founde great plentie of golde.

Of certayne graynes of gold of exceeding great quantitie.

Of wilde vines of pleſaunt taſte, and of graſſe which in foure dayes groweth as hygh as wheate.

Of the Ilande of *Iohanna* or *Cuba*, being the end of the Eaſt and the Weſt, and of the fruitfull & populous Iland of *Iamaica*.

How the Admirall thought that he had layled about the loweſt Hemiſphere or half circle of the earth, and of a ſecrete of Aſtronomie touching the ſame matter.

Howe the Admirall gaue names to ſeuen hundred Ilandes, and paſſed by three thouſand vnnamed.

Of certaine ſerpentes like vnto Crocodiles of eight foote long, whoſe fleſh is delicate to be eaten, and of certayne trees whiche beare Gourdes.

Of the riuer whoſe water is very hotte, and of the huntyng fyſhe which taketh other fyſhes.

Of great abundaunce of Tortoyſes as bygge as targets, and of a fruitfull mountayne well inhabited.

Of dogges of deformed ſhape and dumbe, and of white and thicke water.

Of woods of Date trees, and Pyneapple trees, and of certayne people apparelled lyke whyte fryers.

Of

Of certaine trees which beare spices, and of Cranes of exceedyng bygnesse.

Of stocke doues of more pleasaunt taste then partriches.

An oration of a barbarous gouernour as touching the immortalitie of the soule: Also of the rewarde of vertue, and punishment of vice.

A similitude of the golden worlde, and of prouision without care.

Howe the Admirall fell sicke by reason of to muche watcheyng, and of a sedition whiche rose among the Spaniardes in the Islande of *Hispaniola*.

The Contentes of the fourth booke. Fol. 25.

HOw the kynges of the Islande of *Hispaniola*, were by the Spaniardes mysbehauiour prouoked to rebellion, and howe the Admirall sent for them.

Howe kyng *Counaboa* the Lorde of the house of gold, that is, of the mountaines of *Cibaua*, conspired the Admirals death, and how he with his familie were taken prisoners.

Of a great famine that chaunced in the Islande of *Hispaniola*, and howe the Admirall builded certayne fortresses.

Of a peece of rude gold waygbing twentie vnces, and of the myne of the rich metall called *Electrum*.

Of the mountayne in the whiche is founde great plentie of *Amber* and *Orpement*: and of the woodes of Brasyle trees.

Howe the inhabitantes are put to theyr tribute, and how the nature of ỹ Region disposeth the maners of the people.

How the brother of kyng *Caunaboa* came agaynst the Admirall with an armie of fyue thousand naked men, and howe he was taken, and his armie put to flyght.

Of the fruitfull vale *Magona*, in the sandes of whose ryuers is founde great plentie of golde: and of certayne whirlewindes and tempests.

How the Admirall sent foorth his brother *Bartholomeus Colonus* with an armie of men to searche the golde mynes, and of the Fosses which he founde to haue been dygged in old tyme.

The Contentes of the .v. booke Fol. 27. *for* 29.

HOwe the Lieuetenaunt builded a fortresse in the golde mines, and prepared instrumentes for the purging and fining

myng of the golde.

Howe certayne ſhyppes laden with vittayles, came from Spayne: And howe the Lieuetenannt ſent the kynges whiche rebelled, with thꝛee hundꝛed captiues into Spayne.

Howe the Liefetenaunt remoued his habitation, and buylded a foꝛtreſſe whiche he called ſaint Dominickes towꝛe, alſo howe he paſſed ouer the ryuer Naiba, and entred into the wooddes of Bꝛaſyle trees.

Howe the great kyng *Beuchius Anacauchoa*, frendelye entertayned the Lieuetenaunt, and bꝛought hym to his pallace, where the kynges wyues and concubines receyued hym honoꝛably with pompes and triumphes.

Of the foꝛtreſſes whiche were erected in Hiſpaniola, and howe the Lieuetenaunt exacted tribute of the kynges whiche rebelled agayne.

Howe the Lieuetenaunt ſet vppon the kynges vnwares in the nyght ſeaſon, and tooke .xiiii. of them pꝛyſoners.

Howe kyng *Guarionexius*, captayne of the conſpiracie, was pardoned, and howe he perſuaded the people to obedience.

Howe kyng *Beuchius Anacauchoa*, ſent meſſengers to the Lieuetenaunt to repayꝛe to his pallace, where he founde .xxxii. kyngs redy with theyꝛ tributes: And howe the queene Anacaona entyſed hym to eate of the Serpentes fleſhe.

Howe the Serpentes fleſhe is pꝛepared to be eaten, and how delicate meate theyꝛ egges are if they be ſodden.

Howe queene *Anacauchoa*, ſyſter to kyng *Beuchius Anacauchoa*, entertained ỳ Liefetenant, & gaue him much houſhold ſtuffe, and many veſſels of Hebene wodd artifically wꝛought & carued.

Howe kyng *Anacauchoa* and the queene his ſyſter went aboꝛde the Lieuetenantes ſhyppe, and howe greatly they were amaſed to beholde the furniture theroſ.

Howe *Roldanus Xeminus* a Spanyarde, rebelled in the Lieuetenauntes abſence, by whoſe myſdemeanour alſo kyng *Guarionexius* was pꝛouoked to a newe conſpiracie, and with hym *Maiobanexius* the kyng of the mountaynes.

The contentes of the ſyxt booke. Foli. 35.

THe thyꝛd viage of Colonus, & howe he diuerted from his accuſtomed raſe by the Ilandes of Canarie to the Iland of

Madera,

Madera, for feare of certayne frenche pirates and rouers.

Of the .xiii. Ilandes whiche in olde tyme were called *Hesperides*, and are nowe called the Ilandes of *Caput Viride*, or *Cabouerde*. Also of the Toxtoyles of the Ilande of *Bonauista*, wherewith the leper is healed.

Howe the Admiral found contagious ayre and extreme heate neere the Equinoctial, where the north pole was eleuate onely fyue degrees, and howe saylyng from thence westwarde, he founde the starres placed in other order, and the sea rysyng as it were the backe of a mountayne.

Howe the Admiral saylyng westwarde, and neuer passyng out of the clyme or paralels of Ethiope, founde a temperate Region, and people of goodly corporature: and what difference is betwene the natures of Regions beyng vnder one paralele and one eleuation of the pole.

Of the Ilandes of *Puta* and *Margarita*, and of the swyfte course or fall of the Ocean from the East to the West.

Of the gulfe called *Os Draconis*, and of the conflicte betwene the freshe water and the salte.

Of a sea of freshe water, and a mountayne inhabited onely with Monkyes and Marmasettes.

Of the fayre, ryche, and large region of *Paria*, and howe frendly thinhabitantes entreated the Admirall and his men.

Also of pleasaunt wyne made of dyuers fruites, and of great abundaunce of pearles and golde.

Of the regions of *Cumana*, *Manacapana*, & *Curiana*, being regiõs of ỹ large prouince of *Paria*, & of ỹ sea of hearbes or weeds.

A certayne secrete as touchyng the pole starres, and the eleuation of the same, also of the roundnesse of the earth.

Of the mountaynes of *Paria*, in the toppes wherof *Colonus* earnestly affirmeth the earthly paradise to be situate, and whether *Paria* be parte of the firme land or continent of *India*.

The contentes of the .vii. booke. Fol. 39.

HOwe *Roldanus Xeminus* with his confederates, accused the Admirall to the kyng, and howe he pourged hym selfe, and accused them.

Howe kyng *Guarionexius* rebelled agayne, and with hym kyng *Maiobannexius*: also howe they with other kynges came

came agaynſt the Lieuetenaunt with an armie of eyght thouſande naked and paynted *Ciguauians*: alſo two rare examples of frendſhyp and faythfulneſſe in barbarous pꝛinces.

Howe *Colonus* the Admirall and the Lieuetenant his bꝛother were ſent bound into Spayne, and newe officers appoynted in theyꝛ pꝛaces.

The contentes of the eight booke. Fol. 43.

THe nauigation of *Petrus Alphonſus* from Spayne to *Paria*, where in the region of *Curiana*, he had in ſhoꝛt ſpace .xv. ounces of pearles, & great plenty of victuals, foꝛ haukes belles, pinnes, lokyng glaſſes, and ſuch other tryfles.

Of certayne coniectures whereby *Paria* is thought to be part of the fyꝛme land, & of the golden region of *Cauchieta*, where in the moneth of Nouember the ayꝛe is temperate and not colde.

How *Alphonſus* had a conflict with the Canibales, and how they are accuſtomed to inuade other countreys.

Of great abundaunce of ſalt in the region of *Haraia*, and how the dead bodies of theyꝛ pꝛinces are dꝛyed, reſerued, and religiouſly honoured.

Howe *Alphonſus* at his returne to Spayne from *Curiana*, bꝛought with him thꝛeſcoꝛe & ſixteene pounde weyght of peatles, whiche he bought foꝛ our tryfles, amountyng only to the value of fyue ſhillynges.

The contentes of the nienth booke. Fol. 47.

THe nauigation of *Vincentius Pinzonus* and *Aries Pinzonus*, and howe they ſayled beyond the Equinoctiall line, loſt the ſyght of the noꝛth ſtarre, and founde the ſtarres in other oꝛder.

Howe *Vincentius* paſſing the Equinoctial toward the South pole, founde fierce and warlyke people of great ſtature, and of the ſea of freſhe water.

Howe *Vincentius* directing his courſe towarde the Noꝛthweſt from the Equinoctiall, recouered the ſyght of the Noꝛthpole, and by the regions of *Mariatambal*, *Camomorus*, and *Peri-cora*, came to the fayꝛe and rych pꝛouince of *Paria*, and to the regions of *Os draconis*, *Cumana*, *Manacapana*, *Curiana*. *&c.*

A coniecture that *Paria* (wherby is ment that mayne lande nowe called *America*) ſhoulde be part of the fyꝛme lande oꝛ con-

tinent

tinent of Iudia, beyonde the riuer of *Ganges* & no Iland, and of the exceeding great riuer *Maragnonus* replenished with Ilandes.

Of *Borioſtomea* and *Spirioſtomea*, the mouthes of the famous ryuer of *Dunabius* called in old tyme *Iſter*, and of the commodities of the regions and Ilandes about *Paria*: also of the woods of Brasile trees.

Of many fruitfull Ilandes wasted and left desolate by reason of the Canibales crueltie, and of the trees of *Caſſia Fiſtula*: also of other trees of exceeding bygneſſe.

The discription of a certayne monstruous beast, and howe *Vincentius* lost two of his shyps by tempest.

Howe *Vincentius* at his returne to Spaine, brought with hym Cinamome, Ginger, and certayne precious stones called Topales: And of the nauigations of certayne other inhabitantes of the towne of *Palos*.

Of the precious medicine called *Animæ Album*, and of the diuers superstitions of the inhabitauntes of *Hiſpniola*: also of theyr Idolatrie, and howe they honour the Images of deuylles, whiche they call *Zemes*.

The Contentes of the tenth booke. Fol. 54.

OF great plentie of gold, pearles, and frankensence, founde in the regions of *Paria*, and of innumerable beastes in shape differyng from ours.

Howe the Spaniardes proffered them selues to conquere the new founde landes, beyng in largeneſſe thryse as great as Europe, beſyde the South landes parteynyng to the Portingales, and howe the nature of the place altereth the fourmes and qualities of thynges.

Of the Ilande of *Cuba*, and of the golde mynes of the Ilande of *Sancti Iohannis*, otherwyse called *Burichena*, or *Buchena*. Also of the ryche gold mynes of Hiſpaniola, and of the order of worckyng in the same.

Of the two chiefe golde mynes of *Hiſpaniola*, and of a peece of golde weighing three thousande three hundred and ten poumde weyght.

How the gold is fined and distributed. and howe that only in the melting shops of the two golden mines of Hiſpaniola, is molten yeerely aboue three hundred thousand poumde weight of gold.

Howe

Howe thenterpyses of the Spanyardes are not inferiour to thactes of *Saturnus* or *Hercules*, and howe the Admirall discouered the lande ouer agaynst the West coyner of *Cuba*, and the Ilande of *Guanassa*.

The Contentes of the bookes of the seconde Decade.

The contentes of the fyrst booke. Fol.57.

HOw after the death of *Colonus* the Admirall, the kyng gaue free lycence to all such as would attempt any vyages, and of the nauigations of *Diego Nicuesa*, and *Alphonsus Fogeda*.

Of the Ilande *Codego* and the region of *Caramairi*, and of certayne sweete apples which turne into wooymes when they are eaten, whose trees are also contagious.

How *Alphonsus Fogeda*, the Lieuetenaunt of *Vraba*, encoūtring with the Barbarians, had the ouerthowe, and howe in this conflicte fyftie of his men were slayne, with *Iohannes de la Cossa* their captayne.

Howe *Fogeda*, and *Nicuesa* the Lieuetenaunt of *Beragua*, reuenged the death of theyr companyons, and howe *Fogeda* came to the Ilande *Fortis* and the regyon of *Caribana*, where he was repulsed from the golde mynes by the fiercenesse of the Barbarians, vsyng arrowes infected with poyson.

Howe *Fogeda* was wounded in the thygh with a venemous arrowe, and his men almost consumed with famyne.

Howe a Bygantyne was drowned with the stroke of a Fyshe: and of the nauigation of *Anciſus* from *Hiſpaniola* to *Vraba*.

Of the lamentable shypwracke of *Anciſus*, and of the Date trees and wylde Boyes which he founde.

Of the fruites or apples of the trees called *Cedars* of Libane, which beare olde fruites and new all the yeere.

Howe onely thyee of the Canibalies with their bowes and inuenomed arrowes assayled *Anciſus* with a hundred of his men, in which conflict they wounded and slue many: also, of their swiftnesse of foote.

Of the great ryuer of *Dariena*, and howe *Anciſus* encountred with fyue hundred of thinhabitauntes of the gulfe of *Vraba*, and put them to flyght: alſo, how he founde great plentie of wrought golde and houſholde ſtuffe in a thycket of reedes.

The contentes of the ſecond booke. Fol. 63.

HOwe *Nicueſa* loſt his felowes in the darke nyght, and went paſt the mouth of the ryuer *Beragua* which he ſought, & howe the captaynes of the other ſhyppes conſulted howe to fynde him: alſo, of the ryuer *Lagartos* in the which great Liſartes are found, much lyke vnto the Crocodiles of *Nilus*.

Howe the captaynes forſooke theyr ſhyppes, that the ſouldyers myght bee without hope of departure, and of the miſerable chaunce of *Petrus de Vmbria* and his felowes.

By what chaunce *Nicueſa* was founde, and of the calamities which he and his company ſuſteyned: alſo, of the region of *Gracia Dei* or *Cerabaro*, and of the ryuer of *Sanſti Matthei*.

Howe *Nicueſa* cauſed them to remoue theyr habitation from *Beragua* to point *Marmor*, where he buylded a fortreſſe, and how his men by warre and famyne, were conſumed from ſeuen hundred and odde, to ſcarſely one hundred.

Howe one *Vaſchus Nunnez* vſurped thauctoritie of the Lieuetenauntſhyp of *Vraba* in thabſence of *Fogeda*, and of the nauigation of *Rodericus Colmenaris* from *Hiſpaniola* to *Vraba*.

Of the ryuer *Baira* diſcendyng from the toppe of a high mountayne couered with ſnow, and how *Rodericus Colmenaris* in a conflicte agaynſt the Barbarians, loſt xlvii. of his men, by reaſon of theyr inuenomed arrowes.

Of the force of the poyſon wherewith the Barbarians infecte theyr arrowes, and a remedie for the ſame: alſo, howe *Colmenaris* by gunſhot and kyndlyng fyers on the high toppes of the rockes, came to the Spanyardes, left deſolate in *Dariena*.

The contentes of the thyrd booke. Fol. 67.

HOwe *Nicueſa* was ſought foorth to acquiet the contentions of *Vraba*, and howe he was agayne reiected.

Howe *Vaſchus Nunnez* inuaded, tooke pryſoners, and ſpoyled the kynges borderyng about the region of *Vraba*, and howe

Anciſus

Anciſus Lieuetenaunt for *Fogeda* was cast in pryſon, and afterwarde ſet at libertie.

Howe *Anciſus* tooke his viage from *Vraba* to Spayne, to accuſe *Vaſchus*, who alſo at the ſame tyme ſent *Valdiuia*, aſwell to ſpeake in his defence, as alſo to certifie the kyng of their doyngs.

Howe kyng *Careta* conſpired with the Spanyardes agaynſt kyng *Poncha*, whom they put to flyght, and ſpoyled his village.

Howe kyng *Comogrus* friendly entertayned the Spanyardes, and brought them to his pallace, where he ſhewed them the dryed carkaſes of his aunceſtours reſerued, and ſumptuouſly apparelled, and how the kynges elder ſonne gaue *Vaſchus* and *Colmenaris* foure thouſande ounces of wrought golde, and fyftie ſlaues: alſo, a wyttie oration which he made to the Spanyardes, wherin he certifyed them of a countrey exceedyng rych in golde. &c.

The contentes of the fourth booke. Fol. 72.

OF horryble thunder & lyghtnyng in the moneth of Nouember, and of grayne which wareth rype thryſe a yeere: alſo, howe digeſtion is ſtrengthened by outwarde colde.

Howe *Valdiuia* is ſent agayne into *Hiſpaniola*, to moue the gouernour and counſayle there to ſende into Spayne to the kyng for a ſupplie of a thouſande ſouldyers, to make way to the golden mountaynes, and howe he caryed with him the kynges portion, that is, the fyft part of golde and other thinges.

Howe *Vaſchus* inuaded the kynges inhabytyng the regions about the gulfe of *Vraba*, and howe he put kyng *Dabaiba* to flyght, in whoſe village hee founde wrought golde, amountyng to the weyght of ſeuen thouſande Caſtellans.

Of Battes as byg as Turtle dooues, which ſometyme byte men in the nyght in theyr ſleepe, whoſe byting is alſo venomous, but is healed with water of the ſea, or by cauterization, as are alſo the woundes of venomous arrowes.

Of the Ilande of *Cannafiſtula*, and a towne of fyue hundred houſes, whoſe kyng *Abenamachei* was taken, and his arme cutte of in the fyght.

Of trees of exceedyng bygneſſe and heyght, and howe kyng *Abibeiba* had his pallace in the toppe of a tree, from the which he was inforced to diſcend and entreate of peace.

The contentes of the fyfth booke. Fol.75.

HOwe kyng *Abraiba* slue a captayne of the Spanyardes, and caused the kynges to rebell: also, how they were put to flight, and many of theyr men slayne.

Of fyue kynges which attempted a newe conspiracie with a hundred great Canoas, and fyue thousande men, and howe theyr intent was bewrayed by a woman, and preuented: also, howe *Rodericus Colmenaris* sacked the village of *Tichiri*, & hung the kyng thereof, with foure of his chiefe rulers, and commaunded them to be shotte through with arrowes.

The contentes of the sixt booke. Fol.77.

HOwe *Vaschus* with his confederates, sent *Iohannes Quicedus* and *Colmenaris* from *Dariena* to *Hispaniola*, and from thence to Spayne to the kyng, for a thousand men to passe ouer the mountaynes to the golden regions, and what miseries they susteyned in that viage: also of the death of *Valdiuia*, *Zamudius*, and *Fogeda*.

Of the prosperous viage of *Anciſus*, and howe God wrought miracles by the simple fayth of a mariner: also, how God respecteth thinfancie of fayth for zeales sake, and howe one religion turned into another, holdeth styll many thinges of the fyrst.

Howe many of the Barbarians were baptised by reason of the miracles, and howe they rewarded the priestes by whom they were baptised.

Howe *Anciſus* shortly after his arryuall in Spayne, resorted to the court, and made his complaynt to the kyng of thinsolencie of *Vaschus*, wherevppon the kyng gaue sentence against him, and how apt the Barbarous nations are to embrase the Christian fayth.

The contentes of the seuenth booke. Fol.81.

HOwe *Quicedus* and *Colmenaris* the procuratours of *Dariena*, were honourably entertayned at the court, and brought to the kynges presence, and howe theyr complexion was chaunged by alteration of the ayre.

Howe *Petrus Arias*, a noble man, was elected gouernour and Lieuetenaunt of *Dariena*, and howe other of the court laboured for the same office: also, howe the bishop of *Burges* spake to the kyng in his behalfe.

Howe *Petrus Arias* had a thousande and two hundred soul-

dyers.

oyers appoynted him at the kynges charges, and of the kynges custome house in the citie of *Ciuile*, called the house of the contractes of *India*.

Howe a great number of Spanyardes profered them selues to goe at theyr owne charges, and of a restraint made that no straunger myght passe without the kyngs licence: also, how the aucthour reproueth *Aloisius Cadamustus*, a wryter of the Portugales viages.

Howe *Petrus Arias* shortly after his departure from *Ciuile*, lost two of his shippes, and was dryuen backe agayne by tempest, and howe beyng newly furnyshed, he passed the Ocean with more prosperous wyndes.

The thyrd viage of *Vincentius Pinzonus*, and howe he came to the regions of *Paria*, where encountryng with thinhabitauntes, he put them fyrst to flyght, but after fallyng to intreatie of peace, they gaue him great plentie of golde, and abundaunce of masculine frankensence, with dyuers other princely presentes.

Of the great multitude of Popingiayes whiche are in the region of *Paria*, and howe thinhabitours are apparelled: also, of the fyue kynges that made a league of friendshyp with *Vincentius*.

Howe *Vincentius* sayled Eastwarde by the tracte of the region of *Paria*, vntyl he came to the povnt of that long lande, which the aucthour supposeth to be the great Ilande *Atlantike*, wherof the olde wryters make mention. *Cap. 5. August.*

The contentes of the viii. booke. Fol. 86.

A Contention betweene the *Castilians* and *Portugales*, as concernyng the diuision of the new founde landes, and howe the controuersie was fynished by the bishop of Rome.

Howe *Don Christopher* the gouernour of the Ilande of *Sancti Iohannis*, was slayne by the Caniballes, and the bishop put to flyght: also, of the other bishops of the Ilandes.

Howe the Caniballes of the Ilande of *Sancta Crux*, slue and ate a kyng, with certayne of his men, beyng friendes to the Christians, and made faggottes of theyr bones, and howe quarellyng with our men, they put them to silence.

The contentes of the .ix. booke. Fol.87.

Of the marueylous fruitfulneſſe of the regions of *Beragua*, *Vraba*, and *Dariena*, and of the dyuers kyndes of trees and fruites: alſo, of the pleaſaunt taſte of ſwynes fleſhe, beyng fedde with the fruites of *Mirobalane* trees.

Of Lions and Tygers, and other wylde beaſtes, and of a beaſt of ſtraunge fourme.

Of the ryuers of the gulfe of *Vraba*, as the ryuer of *Dariena* and *Rio Grandis*, and howe the great ſerpentes called *Crocodiles*, are founde in other ryuers beſyde *Nilus* in Egypt: alſo, howe thaucthour of this booke was ſent Ambaſſadour to the *Soldane* of *Alcayr* in Egypt.

Of the Portugales nauigations, and of the ryuer *Senega* found by them to bee a chanell of *Nilus*: alſo, of the multitude of byrds and foules being in the maryſhes of *Dariena*.

A phyloſophicall diſcourſe of thoriginall and generation of ſpryngs and ryuers, and of the breadth of the lande diuydyng the North and South Ocean.

Of the great ryuer *Maragnonus*, and of the earthly Paradyſe, and how ſprings are engendred by cõuertion of ayre into water.

Of the often fall of rayne vnder the Equinoctiall line, and of the pores of the ſea opened by the South wyndes.

Of the great ryuers of *Tanais*, *Ganges*, *Danubius*, and *Eridanus*, famous to the olde wryters, and howe certayne ryuers runnyng through the caues of the earth, breake foorth into ſpryngs a farre of.

The contentes of the .x. booke. Fol.91.

HOwe the newe founde landes diſcouered by the Spanyards in the Weſt Ocean, are eyght tymes bygger then *Italie*, beſyde that which the Portugales poſſeſſe, and of the cardes of the ſea drawen by *Colonus* and *Americus Veſputius*.

The order of meaſuryng the lande, and howe a league conteyneth foure myles by ſea, and but three by lande.

The Nauigation of *Iohannes Dias*, and of the ſundry eleuations of the pole ſtarre.

Of the Iſlande of *Boiuca* or *Agnaneo*, and of the ſpryng whoſe water being drunke, cauſeth olde men to looke young.

How *Nicueſa* and his ſouldyers were ſo oppreſſed with famyne,

mine, that they were dryuen to eate mangie dogges, Toades, and dead men, and howe a broth made of a dogge skynne, was solde for many peeces of golde.

The Contentes of the bookes of the thyrd Decade.

The contentes of the fyrst booke. Fol.94.

Of the desperate aduenture and good fortune of *Vaschus*, and howe with a hundred fourescore and ten men, hee brought that to passe for the which *Petrus Arias* was sent with a thousand and two hundred freshe souldyers.

Howe Iron serueth for more necessary vses then golde, and howe superfluities hynder libertie.

Howe *Vaschus* in one conflicte slue sixe hundred Barbarians with theyr kynges, and howe he founde the house of kyng *Quarequa* infected with vnnaturall lechery, commaundyng that the kyng and fourtie such as he kept for that purpose, should bee gyuen for a pray to his dogges which he vsed to serue in the warres agaynst these naked people.

Of a region of blacke Moores, and howe *Vaschus* came to the toppes of the mountaynes, where gyuyng thankes to God, hee beheelde the newe South Ocean, neuer before seene nor knowne to men of our world.

Howe *Vaschus* put kyng *Chiapes* to flyght, and after made a league of friendshyp with him, and how the kyng gaue him .iiii. hundred poundes weyght of wrought golde.

Howe kyng *Coquera* was put to flyght, who also being receyued to friendshyp, gaue *Vaschus* sixe hundred and fyftie poundes weyght of wrought golde.

Of the gulfe called *Sinus. S. Michaelis*, beyng full of inhabited Ilandes, and of the manly courage and godly zeale of *Vaschus*: also, of the rysyng and fallyng of the South sea.

Howe kyng *Tumacchus* beyng dryuen to flyght and afterwarde reconciled, gaue *Vaschus* sixe hundred and fourtiene peeses of golde, and two hundred and fourtie of the greatest and fayrest pearles, and howe the kyng caused his men to fyshe for pearles.

Of the Ilande called *Margarita Diues*, and of the abundance of fayre and great pearles founde therein.

Of habitable regions vnder the Equinoctiall line, and of the Portugales nauigations to the *Antipodes*, inhabityng the fyue and fyftie degree of the South pole: also, a declaration of *Antipodes*, and of the starres about the South pole.

The contentes of the seconde booke. Fol. 101.

OF the maner of fyshyng for pearles, and of the three kyndes thereof: also, dyuers other questions concernyng pearles.

Of the multitude of the shell fyshes wherein pearles are ingendred and founde in maner in all places in the South sea, and of abundaunce of golde founde almost in euery house: also, howe the treasurie of nature is in those coastes, and of the golde mynes of *Dariena*.

Howe kyng *Teaocha* gaue *Vaschus*. xx. poundes weyght of wrought golde, and two hundred pearles: also, of deserts full of wylde beastes, and howe *Vaschus* was troubled with great heate in the moneth of Nouember.

Howe a dogge Tyger was taken, and his whelpes tyed in cheynes and torne in peeces: also, how *Vaschus* gaue. iiii. kynges to his dogges to be deuoured.

Of the vse of dogges in theyr warres, and of the fiercenesse of the Caniballes.

How kyng *Bononiana* fauoured the Christians, & gaue *Vaschus* xx. pound weyght of wrought golde: also, his oration to *Vaschus*.

A similitude prouyng great plentie of golde in the regions of the South sea, and of the trauayles which olde souldyers are able to sustayne.

The contentes of the thyrd booke. Fol. 105.

HOwe kyng *Buchibuea* submitted him selfe to *Vaschus*, & sent him certayne vesselles of golde: also, how kyng *Chiorisus* sent him. xxx. dyshes of pure golde.

Howe Iron serueth for more necessary vses then golde: also, an example of the lyfe of our fyrst parentes.

Howe kyng *Pocchorrosa* submitted hym selfe, and gaue *Vaschus* fyftiene pounde weyght of wrought golde: also, how *Tumanama* the great kyng of the golden regions towarde the South sea, is taken prysoner: lykewyse howe he gaue *Vaschus*

ebus .xxx. pounde weyght of pure and wrought golde, and his noble men .lx. pounds weyght of golde.

Of the cause of vehement wyndes neere vnto the Equinoctiall lyne, and of the coloure of the earth of the golden mynes.

Of the large and fruitefull playne of *Zauana*, and of the ryuer *Comogrus*: also howe kyng *Comogrus*, baptised by the name of Charles, gaue *Vaschus* .xx. pounde weyght of wrought golde.

Of the good fortune of *Vaschus*, and howe he was turned from *Goliath* to *Elizeus*, & from *Anteus* to *Hercules*, & with what facilitie the Spaniardes shall hereafter obtayne great plentie of golde and pearles.

Of the Spanyardes conquestes, and fiercenesse of the *Canibales*: also an exhortation to Christian princes to set forwarde Christes religion.

The contentes of the fourth booke .Fol. 110.

THe fourth viage of *Colonus* the Admiral from Spayne to *Hispaniola*, and to the other Ilandes and coastes of the firme lande: also of the flowrishyng Ilande *Guanassa*.

Of the seuen kyndes of Date trees, wylde vines, and Mirobalanes: also of bydes and foules.

Of people of goodly stature whiche vse to paynt theyr bodyes, and of the swyfte course of the sea from the east to the west: also of freshe water in the sea.

Of the large regions of *Paria*, *Os Draconis*, and *Quiriquetana*, and of great Cottoyses and reedes: also of the foure fruitefull Ilands called *Quatuor Tempora*, and .xii. Ilands called *Limonares*.

Of sweete sauoures and holsome ayre, and of the region *Quisuri*, and the hauen *Cariai* or *Mirobalanus*: also of certayne ciuil people.

Of trees growyng in the sea after a straunge sort, and of a straunge kynde of Monkyes, whiche inuade men, and feyght with wylde Boyes.

Of the great gulfe of *Cerabaro* replenished with many fruitefull Ilandes, and of the people whiche weare cheynes of golde made of ouches, wrought to the similitude of dyuers wylde beastes and foules.

Of fyue villages whose inhabitauntes geue them selues onely to geatheryng of golde, and are paynted, vsyng to weare

garlandes

garlandes of Lions and Tygers clawes : also of seuen ryuers, in al the which is founde great plentie of golde, and where the plentie of gold ceasseth.

Of certayne people whiche payne theyr bodyes, and couer theyr priuie members with shelles, hauyng also plates of gold hangyng at theyr nosethyrlles.

Of certayne wormes, whiche beyng engendred in the seas neere about the Equinoctial, eate holes in the shyppes, and howe the Admirals shyppes were destroyed by them.

Howe the king of *Beragua* entertayned the Lieuetenaunt, and of the great plentie of golde in the ryuer of *Duraba*, and in al the regions there about, also in rootes of trees and stones, and in maner in al ryuers.

Howe the Lieuetenaunt and his company woulde haue erected a colonie besyde the ryuer of *Beragua*, & was repulsed by thinhabitauntes.

Howe the Admiral fel into the handes of the Barbarians of the Iland of *Iamaica*, where he liued miserably the space of tenne monethes, and by what chaunce he was saued and came to the Ilande of *Hispaniola*.

Of holsome regions, temperate ayre, and continual spryng al the whole yeere : also of certayne people which honour golde religiously, duryng theyr golden haruest.

Of the mountaynes of *Beragua*, beyng fyftie myles in length, and higher then the cloudes : also the discription of other mountaynes and regions thereabout, comparyng the same to Italy.

Colonus his opinion as touchyng the supposed continent and ioynyng of the north and south Ocean : also of the breadth of the sayde continent or firme lande.

Of the regions of *Vraba* & *Beragua*, and the great ryuer *Maragnonus*, and the ryuer of *Dabaiba* or *Sancti Iohannis* : also of certayne marysshes and desolate wayes, and of Dragons and Crocodiles engendred in the same.

Of .xx. golden ryuers about *Dariena*, and of certayne precious stones, especially a Diamonde of marueylous byggnesse bought in the prouince of *Paria*.

Of the heroical factes of the Spanyardes, and howe they contemne effeminate pleasures ; also a similitude prouing great

plentie

plentie of golde and precious stones.

The contentes of the fyft booke. Fol. 119.

The nauigation of *Petrus Arias* from Spayne to *Hispaniola* and *Dariena*, and of the Ilandes of *Canarie*: also of the Ilands of *Madanino*, *Guadalupea*, and *Galanta*.

Of the sea of hearbes, & mountaynes couered with snow: also of the swyft course of the sea towards the West.

Of the ryuer *Gaira*, the region *Caramairi*, and the port *Cartha-go*, and *Sancta Martha*: also of *Americus Vesputius*, and his expert cunnyng in the knowledge of the carde, compasse, and quadrant.

How the Canibales assayled *Petrus Arias* with his whole nauie, and shot of theyr venomous arrowes euen in the sea, also of theyr houses and housholde stuffe.

How *Gonsalus Ouiedus* founde a Saphire bygger then a goose egge: also Emerodes, Calcidonies, Iaspers, and Amber of the mountaynes.

Of woods of Brasyle trees, plentie of gold, and marchasites of metals, founde in the regions of *Caramairi*, *Gaira*, and *Saturma*: also of a straunge kynde of marchaundies exercised among the people of *Zunu*.

That the region of *Caramairi* is lyke to an earthy Paradise, & of the fruitfull mountaynes and pleasaunt gardens of the same.

Of many goodly countreis made desolate by the fiercenesse of the Canibales, and of diuers kyndes of bread made of rootes: also of the maner of plantyng the roote of *Iucca*, whose iuise is deadly poyson in the Ilandes, and without hurt in the continent or fyrme lande.

Of certayne golden ryuers, Hartes, wylde Boores, foules, gossampine, whyte marble, and holsome ayre: also of the great ryuer *Maragnonus*, discending from the mountaynes couered with snowe, called *Serra Neuata*.

How *Petrus Arias* wasted certaine Ilands of the Canibales, & how by the swyft course of the sea, his shyps were caried in one night fourtie leagues beyonde thestimation of the best pilotes.

The contentes of the sixt booke. Fol. 124.

Of sundry opinions why the sea runneth with so swyft a course from the East to the West, and of the great gulfe of

the North part of the fyrme lande.

The viage of *Sebastian Cabot*, from England to the froſen ſea, and howe beyng repulſed with Iſe in the moneth of July, he ſayled farre Weſtwarde.

Of people apparelled with beaſtes ſkinnes, and how Beares take fyſhes in the ſea, and eate them.

How *Sebastian Cabot*, after that he had diſcouered the lande of *Baccallaos* or *Baccallearum*, was called out of Englande into Spayne, where he was made one of the aſſiſtaunce of the counſayle of the affayres of India, and of his ſecond viage.

Of the Iſlande *Fortis*, and howe a great foule as bygge as a Storke lyghted in the gouernours ſhyp: alſo howe he arryued at *Dariena* with the kinges naute.

Howe *Vaſchus* receyued the new gouernour, and of habitable regions vnder the Equinoctiall.

How *Petrus Arias* the new gouernour diſtributed his armie to conquere the South regions ryche in golde, and to erect new colonies in the ſame.

Of the ryche golde mynes of *Dabaiba*, and of the expedition agaynſt the kyng of that region.

Of the violent courſe of the ſea from the Eaſt to the Weſt, and of the difficult ſaylyng agaynſt the ſame.

Of the peſtiferous and vnhollome ayre of *Sancta Maria Antiqua* in *Dariena*, and how the Spaniardes were of neceſſitie enforced to plant theyr fyrſt colonie and habitation there.

The cauſe of the varietie of regions lying all vnder one degree or paralel, and by what meanes the Sonne beames are cauſe of feruent heate.

Of toades and flees engendred of droppes of water, and of a houſe ſet on fyre with lyghtnyng.

Of a Dogge deuoured of a Crocodyle, and of venemous byting of great Bats: alſo of Lions, Tigers, & other wilde beaſts.

How in theſe regions all foure footed beaſtes growe to a bigger quantitie then they which were of ỹ fyrſt broode: alſo of certayne trees of whoſe planckes if ſhyps be made, they are ſafe from the wormes called *Broma* or *Biſſas*.

Of a tree whoſe wood is preſent poyſon yf it be only borne about. and of an hearbe that is a preſeruatiue agaynſt the ſame.

Of

Of the ryche Ilandes of the south sea, and of certayne expeditions agaynst the Canibales.

The contentes of the .vii. booke, Fol. 130.

THe particuler description of the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, and of the ryche Iland called *Margaritea Diues*, lying in the South sea: also of the great abundaunce of bygge pearles founde in the same.

Howe the auctoure compareth *Hispaniola* to the earthly Paradyse, and howe it farre excelleth Italy in fertilitie and temperate ayre.

Of the fyrst inhabitours of *Hispaniola*, and of the Ilandes of *Canarie*.

Howe thinhabitauntes of *Hispaniola* in theyr songues and rhymes had certayne prophesies that apparelled men shoulde come to theyr countrey, and bryng them into seruitude, and of theyr familiaritie with spirites: also howe those spirites haue no more appeared to them since they were baptised.

Of theyr experteneſſe in swymmyng, and of theyr delicate Serpentes, bydes, foules, and Popingiays.

Of the fourme and situation of *Hispaniola* neere the Equinoctiall, and howe colde is in some place thereof accidentall, and not by the situation of the region.

Of the Oxen and Swyne of exceedyng bygnesse, and of eares of wheat as bygge as a mans arme in the brawne: also howe the Swyne are fedde with Mirobalanes. &c.

Of plentie of golde, Brasyle, Mastix, Gossampyne, *Electrum*, & of thincommodities of intemperate regions.

Of dyuers languages in the Ilande, and howe the prouinces are diuided into regions.

Howe *Andreas Moralis* sayled into a daungerous and darke caue within the rocke of a mountayne, and of, whole ryuers deuoured of suche caues: also of the conflyct of the waters.

Of a standyng poole in the toppe of an hygh mountayne: & how fearne and bramble bushes growe onely in colde regions

The Contentes of the .viii. booke, Fol. 135.

OF a great lake or standyng poole of sowre and salte water, and of the sea fyshes in the same in the myd lande of the Ilande: also of deuouryng fyshes called *Tiburoni*.

Of

Of the ryuers fallyng into the lakes, and of .CC. ſpryngs in the ſpace of a furlong.

A marueylous hyſtoryе of a kyng ſtryken dumbe and lame by a myracle, and of the Indian language.

Howe ſuche as are drowned in the lake, are neuer caſt vp agayne, and of the Iſlande *Guarizacca* in the myddeſt of a ſtandyng lake: alſo of a lake of freſhe water, and an other of ſalte and freſhe water.

Of a large playne of two hundred myles in length, and another of an hundred and twentie.

Of the marueilous fyſhe or monſter of the ſea, called *Manati*, or *Matum*, fedde with mans handes, and howe ſhe carryeth men ouer the lake.

Of the mountaynes, vales, hylles, playnes, and ryuers of *Hiſpaniola*, and howe golde is founde in all mountaynes, and golde and fyſhe in all ryuers.

Of ſalte bayes, and howe the ryuers haue theyr increaſe from the caues of the mountaynes: alſo howe there is no hurtefull beaſt in the Iſlande.

Of the pleaſures of *Hiſpaniola*, and of the region of *Cotohi* wel inhabited, & ſituate in a plaine in the toppes of mountaynes reachyng to the cloudes.

Of moderate colde in the mountaynes, and of fearne of marueylous bygneſſe.

Howe pure and maſſie golde is founde in the region of *Cotoy* or *Cotohi*, and that the baine of gold is a tyuyng tree: alſo of the rootes, branches, and floures of the ſame, and howe certayne caues are ſuſteyned with pyllers of golde.

What gold is brought yeerely from *Hiſpaniola* into Spaine, and of the ſalte of the mountaines, being as hard as ſtones, and cleare as cryſtall: alſo ſpryngs of ſalte, freſhe, & ſowre water.

Of certayne wylde men, lyuing in caues and dennes without any certaine language, and of their marueylous ſwiftnes a foote.

Of pytche of the rocke, and two kyndes of trees, and of the leafe of a tree vſed in the ſteede of paper: alſo howe thinhabitants thynke that the Chriſtians can make thoſe leaues ſpeake and diſcloſe all ſecretes.

Of a ſtrong coloure made of the iuice of a certayne apple,

and

and of the hearbe whose smoke is poyson.

The contentes of the nienth booke. Fol. 142.

OF the kindes of fruites wherewith the inhabitauntes of *Hispaniola* lyued fyrst, and how they came to the knowledge of *Iucca*: also how Ceres fyrst founde Wheate and Barley in Egypt.

Why theyr kynges are called by diuers names, and by what names they salute the kynges chyldren when they are borne.

How they make theyr testamentes, and how certayne of the kynges wyues and concubines are buried with them.

Of the variable motions of the elementes in *Hispaniola*, and where it rayneth but litle, and where muche.

Of the colonies and villages that the Spaniardes haue builded in *Hispaniola*, and of the other Ilandes about the same.

Of a spryng, whiche runnyng vnder the sea from *Hispaniola*, breaketh foorth in the Iland of *Arethusa*: also of the habitable regions vnder the Equinoctiall, and of the ryche golde mynes of the Ilande of *Cuba*.

Of the Gumme called *Animæ Album*, and of the *Canibales*, also wherby it was thought that there were Ilandes of women.

Of hony founde in trees and rockes, and of the generation of great Tortoyses, and of theyr egges.

The contentes of the tenth booke, Fol. 146.

OF the expedition agaynst the kyng of the Ilande *Dites*, in the South sea, and howe after foure conflictes, submitting hym selfe, he gaue our men an hundred & ten pounde weyght of great pearles: also howe he agreed to paye yeerely a hundred pounde weyght of pearles for a tribute.

Howe axes and hatchettes are more esteemed then golde, or pearles, and of great plentie of Hartes and Cunnies: also howe the kyng of *Dites* and his familie were baptised.

Of pearles of great pryse, and howe *Paule* the Bishop of Rome bought a pearle for foure and fortie thousand ducades.

Diuers opinions of the generation of pearles, and of a hundred pearles founde in one shel fyshe: also of the birth of pearles.

Of the regions of the East syde of the gulfe of *Vraba*, and of the originall of the *Canibales*.

Of certayne circumcised people which haue the knowledge of letters and vse of bookes, and what chaunced of the captaynes which *Petrus Arias* sent foorth diuers wayes : also howe *Iohn Solisius* was slayne of the Canibales, and of theyr fiercenesse.

Howe *Iohn Pontius* was repulsed of the Canibales, and of the lewde behauiour of *Iohn Aiora*.

Of the variable fortune of *Gonsalus Badaiocius*, and howe after he had geathered great ryches of gold, he had the ouerthrow, and was spoyled of all.

Of the golden region of *Coiba Dites*, and how theyr slaues are marked in the face.

Of the Ilandes of the South sea, and of the regions from whence the Portingales fetche theyr spyces.

Of a straunge kynde of fowlyng, and of the trees that beare Gourdes.

Of the later opinions as touching the swift course of the Ocean towarde the West, and of the continent or fyrme lande : also of the viage from the newe landes to Spayne.

Of the golde mynes of *Dariena*, and of the maner of geathering of golde in the same : also of the dropsie of couetousnesse which is not satisfied with ryches.

For the contentes of the booke of the Ilandes of the West Indies seas, reade the margent notes of the same.

FINIS.

R. E. To the Reader.

ALthough among dyuers which haue written of the Ocean and VVest Indies, there is none to be compared to Peter Martyr of Angleria, in declaryng by philosophicall discourses the secrete causes of naturall affectes, both as touchyng the lande, the sea, the starres, and other straunge workes of nature: yet forasmuch as of later dayes those countreys haue been better knowne and searched, and dyuers such particuler and notable thinges founde, as are conteyned in the histories of later writers, among the number of whom, Conzalus Ferdinandus Ouiedus (whom learned Cardanus compareth to the ancient writers) is doubtlesse the chiefe, I haue therefore thought good to ioyne to the Decades of Peter Martyr, certayne notable thinges which I haue geathered out of his booke, intituled the Summarie or abridgement of his generall hystorie of the west Indies, written in the firme lande of the same, in the citie of Sancta Maria Antiqua in Dariena (where he dwelt & was gouernor many yeeres) and dedicated to Themperours maiestie, as may appeare by the Epistle folowyng.

To the moſt hygh and myghtie prince Charles, the fyft of that name, Emperor of *Rome*, Kyng of Spaine, & of the two Cicilies, of both the ſydes of the ſtreyght of *Faro*, Kyng of *Hieruſalem* and *Hungarie*, Duke of *Burgonie*, and Earle of *Flaunders*, Lord and inheritour of the firme lande and Ilandes of the VVeſt Ocean. &c. *Gonzalus Ferdinandus Ouiedus*, his moſt humble ſeruaunt, wysheth health and perpetuall felicitie.

THe thinges which principally preſerue and mayntayne the woꝛkes of nature in the memoꝛies of men, are hyſtoꝛies and bookes compoſed of the ſame: among the whiche certes thoſe are eſteemed moſt true and autentyke, which haue been wꝛytten by wyttie and expert men, well traueyled in the woꝛld, as faythfull witneſſes of ſuch thinges as they haue partly ſeene, and been partly infoꝛmed by credible perſons. Of this mynde and opinion was Plinie, who better then any other aucthoꝛ hath wꝛitten in. xxxvii. bookes all that pꝛtayneth to the naturall hiſtoꝛie, conteyned all in one volume, dedicated to *Veſpaſian* Themperour: Wherin, as a pꝛudent hiſtoꝛiographer, he declareth ſuch thinges as hee had heard, attꝛibuting the ſecond authoꝛitie to ſuch as he had redde in aucthours that wꝛote beſoꝛe him: And thyꝛdly ioyned to the ſame hyſtoꝛie, ſuch thinges as he him ſelfe had ſeene, as moſt certayne teſtimonie. Whoſe example I folowyng, will in this my bꝛeefe ſummarie, reduce and repꝛeſent to your maieſties memoꝛie ſuch thinges as I haue ſeene in your Empyꝛe of the Weſt Indies, aſwell in the Ilandes as in the firme lande of the Ocean ſea, where I haue ſerued now moꝛe then twelue yeeres in the place of ſurueyer of the golde mynes, by the commaundement of the Catholyke kyng *Don Fernando*, the fyft of that name, and graundfather vnto your maieſtie, to whom God gaue great fame and glozie: Since whoſe death alſo I haue lykewyſe ſerued, and truſt

truste whyle the reste of my lyfe yet remayneth, to serue your maiestie, as shall please you to commaunde. As touchyng whiche thinges, and suche other lyke, I haue moze largely written in an hystozie begun assoone as my age was rype to take such matters in hande: Wherein furthermoze I haue made mention of suche thinges as haue chaunced in Spayne, from the yeere. 1494. vnto this tyme: addyng also therevnto suche thinges wooꝛthy memoꝛie, as I haue obserued in other realmes and pꝛouinces where I haue trauayled, and haue lykewyse particulerly wꝛytten the lyues and wooꝛthy actes of the catholyke Pꝛinces of famous memoꝛie *Don Ferdinando*, and Lady Elizabeth his wyfe, to theyꝛ last dayes. After whose fruition of heauenly Paradyse, I haue noted such thinges as haue chaunced in your most foꝛtunate succession: not omittyng particulerly to wꝛyte a large booke of suche thinges as haue seemed most wooꝛthy to bee noted, as touchyng your maiesties Indies. But foꝛasmuch as that volume remayneth in the citie of *San. Dominico*, in the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, where I dwell, and am placed in housholde, with wyfe, chyldꝛen, and familie, I haue bꝛought no moze with me of that my wꝛityng, then I beare in memoꝛie, determynyng (notwithstandyng) foꝛ your maiesties recreation, to make a bꝛeefe rehearsall of certayne notable thinges, wherof I haue moze largely entreated in my sayd generall hiſtoꝛie, and such as may seeme most wooꝛthy to be redde of your maiestie: Of the which, although a great parte haue been wꝛitten by other, who haue also seene the same, yet perhappes they are not so exactly and particulerly described as of mee, foꝛasmuche as in maner all that trauayle into these Indies haue greater respect to luker and gaynes, then diligently to search the woꝛkes of nature, wherevnto I haue ben euer naturally inclined, & haue therfoꝛe with all possible endeuour applyed myne eyes & intelligence to fynde the same. And this pꝛesent Summarie shall not be contrary oꝛ dyuers from my larger hiſtoꝛie, wherein (as I haue sayde) I haue moze amply declared these thinges: but shal onely moze bꝛeefely expꝛesse the effect thereof, vntyl such tyme as God shall restoꝛe me to myne owne house, where I may accomplyshe and fynyshe my sayde generall hystoꝛie. Wherevnto to gyue the fyꝛst pꝛinciple, I say, that *Don Christopher Colonus* (as it is well knowen) beyng the fyꝛst Admirall of

this *India*, discouered the same in the dayes of the Catholyke kyng *Don Ferdinando*, and the lady Elizabeth his wyfe, graundfather and graundmother vnto your maiestie, in the yeere. 1491. and came to *Barzalona* in the yeere. 1492. with the fyrst *Indians*, and other shewes and proofes of the great ryches and notice of this west Empire: The which gyft and benefite was suche, that it is vnto this day one of the greatest that euer any subiecte or seruaunt hath done for his prince or countrey, as is manifest to the whole worlde. And to say the trueth, this shall doubtlesse bee so commodious and profytable vnto the whole realme of Spayne, that I repute him no good Castilian or Spanyarde that doeth not recognise the same. And (as I haue sayde before) forasmuche as in my sayde generall historie I haue more largely intreated of these thinges, I intende at this present only briefely to rehearse certayne especiall thinges, the whiche surely are very fewe in respecte of the thousandes that myght be sayde in this behalfe. Fyrst therefore I will speake somewhat of the nauigation into these parties, then of the generation of the nations which are founde in the same, with theyr rytes, customes, and ceremonies: also of beastes, foules, byrdes, woormes, fyshes, seas, ryuers, sprynges, trees, plantes, hearbes, and dyuers other thinges, whiche are engendered both on the lande and in the water. And forasmuche as I am one of thorder and company of them that are appoynted to returne into these regions to serue your maiestie, if therefore the thinges conteyned in this booke shall not be distincte in suche order as I promised to performe in my greater woorke, I desyre your maiestie to haue no respect herevnto, but rather to consider the noueltie of such straunge thinges as I haue herein declared, whiche is the chiefe ende that moued mee to wryte: Protesting, that in this Summarie I haue written the trueth of suche thinges as came to my remembraunce, whereof not onely I my selfe can testifie, but also dyuers other worthy and credible men, which haue been in those regions, and are now present in your maiesties courte. And thus it shall suffyse to haue sayde thus much vnto your maiestie, in maner of a proheme vnto this present woorke, whiche I most humbly desyre your maiestie as thankefully to accept, as I haue written it faythfully.

Of

Of the ordinary nauigation from Spayne to the west Indies.



The nauigation which is commonly made from Spayne to the west *India*, is from *Siuile*, where your maiestie haue your house of contraction for those partes, with also your offycers therevnto partetayning, of whom the captaynes take theyr passeporte and lycence. The patrones of suche shippes as are appoynted to these viages, imbarke them selues at *San Luca di Barameda*, where the riuer *Cuadalchiber* entreth into the Ocean sea, and from hence they folow their course toward the Ilands of Canarie. Of these seuen Ilandes, they commonly touche two, that is, eyther *Grancanaria* or *Gomera*: and here the shyppes are furnyshed with freshe water, fuell, cheese, beefe, and suche other thinges, which may seeme requisite to bee added to suche as they bryng with them out of Spayne. From Spayne to these Ilandes, is commonly eyght dayes sayling, or little more or lesse, and when they are arryued there, they haue sayled two hundred and fyftie leagues, whiche make a thousand myles, accompting foure myles to a league, as is their maner to recken by sea. Departing from the sayd Ilands to folow their course, the shyppes tary. xxv. dayes, or a licle more or lesse, before they see the fyrst lande of the Ilandes that lye before that whiche they call *La Spagnuola* or *Hispaniola*, and the lande that is commonly fyrst seene, is one of these Ilandes which they call *Ogni santti Marigalante* (or *Galanta*) *La Desseada* (otherwise called *Desiderata*) *Matanino*, *Dominica*, *Guadalupea*, *San Christoual*, or some other of the Ilandes, wherof there are a great multitude lying about these aforesayde. Yet it sometymes so chaunceth, that the shyppes passe without the sight of any of the sayd Ilandes, or any other that are within that course, vntill they come to the Ilande of *Santti Iohannis*, or *Hispaniola*, or *Iamaica*, or *Cuba*, which are before the other. It may also chaunce that they ouerpasse all these lykewyse, vntyll they fall vppon the coastes

of the firme lande. But this chaunceth when the pilot is not well practised in this nauigation, or not perfect in the true carde. But makyng this viage with experte maryners (whereof there is nowe great plentie) one of the sayde fyrst Ilandes shall euer bee knowen. And from the Ilandes of Canarie to one of the fyrst of these, the distaunce is niene hundred leagues by sayling, or more, and from hence to the citie of sainct Dominike, which is in the Iland of *Hispaniola*, is a hundred and fyftie leagues: so that from Spayne hitherto, is a thousande and three hundred leagues. Yet forasmuche as sometymes the nauigation proceedeth not so directly, but that it chaunceth to wander euer on the one syde or on the other, we may well say that they haue now sayled a thousand and fyue hundred leagues, and more. And if the nauigation bee slow, by reason of some hynderaunce, it commonly chaunceth to be fynished in xxxv. or. xl. dayes: and this happeneth for the most parte, not accomptyng the extremes, that is, eyther of them that haue slowe passage, or of them that arryue in very short tyme: for we ought to consyder that which chaunceth most commonly. The returne from those partes to Spayne, is not fynished without longer tyme, as in the space of fiftie dayes, or a litle more or lesse. Neuertheless in this present yeere of. 1525. there came foure shyppes from the Ilande of *San Dominico*, to sainct *Luca* in Spayne, in. xxv. dayes: But (as I haue sayde) we ought not to iudge of that which chaunceth seldome, but of that which happeneth most ordinarily. This nauigation is very safe, and much vsed, euen vnto the sayde Iland. And from this to the firme land, the shyppes trauerse diuers wayes for the space of fyue, sixe, or seuen dayes saylyng, or more, accordyng to the partes or coastes whither they directe theyr viages, forasmuch as the sayde fyrme lande is very great and large, and many nauigations and viages are directed to dyuers partes of the same: Yet to the firme land, which is nearest to this Ilande, and lyeth directly agaynst *San Dominico*, the passage is finished in the tyme aforesayde. But it shalbe much better to remit all this to the carde of these nauigations, and the new Cosmographie, of the whiche no parte was knowne to Ptolome, or any other of the olde wryters.

Of

Of two notable thinges as touching the west Indies, and of the great rychesse brought from thence into Spayne.

After my vniuersall discription of the historie of the Indies, there commeth to my remembraunce two thinges chiefly to be noted as touchyng Thempire of these West Indies, pertaining to the dominion of your maiestie: and these, beside the other particulars whereof I haue sufficiently spoken, are to be considered as thinges of great importaunce. Whereof, the one is the shortnesse of the way, & with what expedition your maiesties shyppes may passe beyonde the mayne firme lande of these Indies, into the new South sea, called *Mare del Sur*, lying beyond the same, & this to thintent to come to the Ilandes where the spices grow, beside the other innumerable rychesse of ỳ kingdomes & seigniories which confine with the said sea, where are so many people & nations of dyuers tongues & maners. The other thing, is to consider howe innumerable treasures are entred into Spayne by these Indies, as well that which commeth dayly from thence, as also that is continually to be looked for, both of gold & pearle, & other marchaundies, which are first brought into this your realme of Spayne before they are seene of other nations, or traded into other realmes: Whereby not onely this your realme is greatly inriched, but also the benefite thereof redoundeth to the great profite of other countreys which are neare therevnto. A testimonie of this, are the double ducades which your maiestie haue caused to bee coyned, and are dispearsed throughout the whole worlde: But after they are once passed out of this your realme, they neuer returne againe, because they are the best currant money of the worlde. And therefore, if after they haue been in the handes of straungers, they chaunce to bee returned agayne into Spayne, they come disguised in an other habite, and are diminished of the goodnesse of their golde, with the stampe of your maiestie chaunged: So that if it were not for their suche defacynges in other realmes for the cause aforesayde, there should not bee founde so great quantitie of fyne golde of the coyne

of any prince in the world as of your maiesties: and the cause of all this, are your Indies.

Of the mynes of golde, and the maner of workyng in them.

THis particuler of the mynes of gold, is a thing greatly to bee noted, and I may much better speake hereof thē any other man, forasmuch as there are nowe. xii. yeeres past since I serued in the place of the surueier of ỹ melting shops parteyning to the gold mynes of ỹ firme land, and was the gouernour of the mynes of the Catholike kyng *Don Ferdinando*, after whose departure from this lyfe, I serued long in the same roome in the name of your maiestie: By reason wherof, I haue had great occasion to know how gold is found and wrought out of the mynes, and doe know ryght well ỹ this land is exceeding rych, hauing by my accompt, and by the labour of my Indians & slaues, geathered and fyned a great portion of the same, & may therfore the better affyrme this by testimony of sight. For I am well assured, that in no part of *Castilia del oro*, that is, golden Castile (otherwise called *Beragua*) no man coulde aske mee of the mynes of golde, but that I durst haue bounde my selfe to haue discouered them in the space of ten leagues of the countrey where it should haue been demaunded me, and the same to be very rych: for I was alowed all maner of charges to make search for the same. And although gold be found in maner euery where in these regions of golden Castile, yet ought we not in euery place to bestow the trauel & charge to geat it out, because it is of lesse quantitie and goodnesse in some place then in some. And the myne or beyne which ought to be folowed, ought to be in a place which may stand to saue much of ỹ charges of the labourers, and for the administration of other necessary thinges, that the charges may be recompenced with gaynes: for there is no doubt but that gold shalbe found more or lesse in euery place. And the golde whiche is founde in golden Castile, is very good, & of. xxii. caractes or better in fynesse. Furthermore, beside this great quantitie of gold, which I haue sayd to be found in the

mynes,

mynes, there is also from day to day found, or otherwyse gotton, great treasure of such wrought gold as hath ben in ỹ custodie of the subdued Indians & theyr kynges, aswel of such as they haue geuen for theyr fyne and raunsome, or otherwyse, as frendes to the Christians, besyde that whiche hath ben violently taken from the rebelles: but the greatest parte of the wrought golde whiche the Indians haue, is base, and holdeth somewhat of copper, of this they make brasslettes and chaynes, and in the same they close theyr iewels whiche theyr women are accustomed to weare, & esteemed more then al the richesse of the worlde. The maner howe golde is geathered, is this, eyther of such as is founde in *Zauana*, that is to saye in the playnes and ryuers of the champion countrey beyng without trees, whether the earth be with grasse or without, or of suche as is sometymes founde on the land without the ryuers in places where trees growe, so that to come by the same, it shalbe requisite to cut downe many and great trees. But after which so euer of these two maners it be founde, eyther in the ryuers or breaches of waters, or els in the earth, I wyl shewe howe it is founde in both these places, and howe it is separate and pourged. Therefore when the myne or beyne is discouered, this chaunceth by searchyng and prouyng in such places as by certaine signes and tokens do appeare to skylful men apte for the generation of golde, and to holde golde: and when they haue found it, they folowe the myne, and labour it, whether it be in the ryuer, or in the playne, as I haue sayde. And if it be founde on the playne, fyrst they make the place very cleane where they entende to dygge, then they dygge eyght or tenne foote in length, and as muche in breadth: but they goe no deeper then a spanne or two, or more, as shal seeme best to the maister of the myne, dyggyng equally, then they washe all the earth whiche they haue taken out of the sayde space, and if herein they fynde any golde, they folowe it, and if not, they dygge a spanne deeper, and washe the earth as they dyd before: and if then also they fynde nothyng, they continue in diggyng and washyng ỹ earth as before, vntyl they come to the harde rocke or stone: and if in fine they fynde no golde there, they folowe no further to seeke golde in that place, but goe to an other part. And it is to be vnderstoode, that when they haue

founde

founde the myne, they folowe it in dyggyng, in the same measure in leuell and deapth, vntyll they haue made an ende of all the myne whiche that place conteyneth, if it appeare to be riche. This myne ought to consyst of certayne feete or pases in length or breadth, accordyng to certayne orders determined, and within that compasse of earth, it is not lawefull for any other to digge for golde: And where as endeth the myne of hym that fyrste founde the golde, immediatly it is lawfull for any other man that wyll, with a staffe to assigne hym selfe a place by the syde of the same, inclosing it with stakes or pales as his owne. These mines of *Zauana* (that is, such as are found in the plaines) ought euer to be sought neare to some ryuer or brooke, or spryng of water, or dyke, or standyng poole, to thende that the golde may be washed, for the which purpose they vse the labour of certayne Indians, as they do other in dyggyng of the myne. And when they haue dygged out the myne, they fyll certayne trayes with that earth, whiche other Indians haue the charge immediatly to receyue at theyr handes, and to cary those trayes of earth to the water, where it may bee washed: Yet do not they that bryng it, washe it, but delyuer it to other, puttyng it out of theyr owne trayes into theyrs, whiche they haue redy in theyr handes to receyue it. These washers for the most part are the Indian women, because this woorke is of lesse paine and traueyle then any other. These women when they washe, are accustomed to syt by the water syde, with theyr legges in the water euen vp to the knees, or lesse, as the place serueth theyr purpose: and thus holdyng the trayes with earth in theyr handes by ỹ handles thereof, and puttyng the same into the water, they moue them rounde about, after the maner of syftyng, with a certayne aptnesse, in suche sorte that there entreth no more water into the trays then serueth theyr turne, and with the selfe same apte mouyng of theyr trays in the water, they euer auoyde the foule water with the earth out of the one syde of the vessell, and receyue in cleane water on the other syde thereof, so that by this meanes by litle and litle, the water washeth the earth as the lyghter substaunce of the trays, and the golde as the heauyer matter resteth in the bottome of the same, beyng rounde and holowe in the myddest lyke vnto a barbars basen: And when

all

all the earth is auoyded, and the gold geathered togeather in the bottome of the tray, they put it a part, and returne to take moze earth, whiche they washe contynually as before. And thus they that labour in this woozke, do geather dayly suche poztion of golde as shall please God to graunt to the Patrones of these Indians, and suche other as trauayle in the same. Furthermoze it is to be noted, that foz euery two Indians that washe, it is requisite that two other serue them to bzyng earth from the myne, and other two to bzeake the same small, and fyl theyz trayes therwith. Also besyde these labourers, it is necessarye that there be other people in the place where they woozke & rest in the night: these are suche as make theyz bread, and pzouide foz victuals, and other necessaries. So that to conclude, there are in al, fyue persons ozdinarilie assigned to euery tray of washers. There is an other manner of wozkyng the mynes, in ryuers oz bzookes of runnyng waters: and this is, that in auoydyng the water of his course, after that the beddes of the ryuers are dzye and vtterly emptied, they fynde golde among the bzeaches, clyftes, and ryftes of stones, and among all that is in the bottome of the chanell, and where naturally the ryuer runneth of greatest fozce: So that it chaunceth sometyme, that when the bedde of the ryuer is good and ryche, they fynde in it great quantitie of gold. And therfoze your Maiestie ought to vnderstand foz a general rule, as it appeareth in fact, that all golde is engendzed in the toppes and hyghest places of the mountaynes, and in continuance of tyme is by litle and litle bzought downe to the vales and playnes by shewzes of rayne, and the falles of spzynges, ryuers, and bzookes, hauyng theyz oziginall in the mountaynes, and discending from the same, notwithstandyng it is oftentymes founde in the playnes farre from the mountaynes. But when it chaunceth to be founde in great quantitie, it is foz the most part among the mountaynes, and in the ryuers, oz theyz bzaunches, moze then in any other part of the playne: and in these two maners it is commoly founde most abundantly. And foz the better pzoofe that golde is engendzed on hygh, and is bzought downe into the lowe places, I haue one great token therof, whiche causeth me to beleeue it foz certayne: and this is, to consyder that coles neuer putrifie noz

corrupt

corrupt vnder the grounde, if they be made of strong woodde. Wherby it chaunceth, that dyggyng the earth by the foldes or indented places of the mountaynes, or on the sydes, & breakyng a myne in the earth where it had been broken before, and hauing nowe dygged one or two or three Poles in measure, the myners founde certayne coles of wood vnder the same leuel where they founde golde, and this I say in the earth whiche was taken for a Virgin, that is to saye, such as had not before been opened for any myne: the whiche coles coulde not naturally be engendred there, or enter in by any meanes, but when the superficiall part of the earth was equal with the leuel where the coles were founde, it is like that the coles were left there by some occasion of fyre, and that they fastened there in tyme, and that afterwarde in long continuance of tyme, they were by litle and litle couered with the earth, whiche the often shewres of rayne washed from the mountaynes, so that by the course of yeeres the earth ouergrewe the coles vnto the sayd leuell & measure, which had before tyme been the superficial part of the earth, where the coles and golde were found togeather: whereby it may appeare that the golde was no more engendred there then were the coles, but brought thyther from the mountaynes by the falles of waters as we haue sayd, forasmuch as the mountaynes are the Matrices and bowels of all ryche metals. Further and beside this, I say that inhowe muche more the golde is gone farre from the naturall place of his generation to the place where it is founde, it is so much the more purified and fined, and of a better caract, and the nearer that it is founde to his proper myne or beyne where it is engendred, it is so much the baser, fouler, and more crude, and of a baser alay and caract, and doth wast so muche the more in meltyng, and remayneth more brickle. Sometymes there are founde graines of golde of great quantitie, and of great weyght aboue the earth, and sometymes also vnder the earth: And the greatest of all other that was founde to this day in the Indies, was that whiche was lost in the sea about the Ilande *Beata*, whiche weyghed three thousande and two hundred Castellans of gold, which are in value foure thousand a hundred thyrtie and eyght ducades of golde, whiche weigh one *Arroua* and seuen pounde, or thyrtie and two pounde, after twelue ounces

ces to the pounde, whiche make threescore and foure markes of golde. And I sawe in the yeere .1515. in the handes of *Mychel Passamonte* treasurer to your maiestie, two graines, of the whiche one wayed seuen poundes, which are .xiiii. markes, and are in value about threescore and fyue ducades of golde euery marke: the other was of .x. markes, whiche are fyue poundes of lyke value, and of very good golde of .xxii. caractes, and better: There are also founde many other great graynes, although not equall vnto these in bygnesse. And forasmuch as I haue spoken of gold, I haue thought good to declare somewhat howe the Indians can very excellently gylte suche vesselles of copper and base golde as they make: for they can geue them so fayre and glorysshyng a coloure, that al the masse which they gylt, appeareth as though it were golde of .xxii. caractes, and better. This colour they geue with a certayne hearbe, as though it were wrought by ỹ art of any goldsmith of Spayne or Italie, and woulde of them bee esteemed as a thyng of great ryches, and a secrete maner of gyldyng. And for as muche as I haue spoken sufficiently of the mynes of golde, I wyl nowe speake somewhat of copper, because I haue made mention thereof. This metal is founde in many of the Ilandes of the Indies, and also in the firme lande, and is founde dayly in great quantitie, holdyng somewhat of golde. But for the desyre that our men haue to golde, they nothyng esteeme the copper, although there myght great commoditie and profyt be had thereby, and also by other metals, whiche they nothyng regarde, except syluer, which is founde abundantly in that parte of the firme lande whiche is called newe Spaine. But of this it shal suffise to haue saide thus muche, because I haue more particulerly entreated of these thynges in my generall hystory of India.

A marke, is a pounde of viii. ounces summa .xvi .li. weyght .viii. ounces, after xii. ounces to the .li.

Of the maner of fyshyng for pearles.



The Indians exercise this kynde of fyshyng for the most part in ỹ coastes of the North in *Cubagua* and *Cumana*, and many of them which dwell in the houses of certayne particular lords in the Ilandes of *San Dominico* and *Sancti Iohannis*, resort to the Ilande of

Cubagua

Cubagua, for this purpose. Theyr custome is to go fyue, syxe, or seuen, or moxe in one of theyr *Canoas* or barkes, earely in the moxnyng to some place in the sea thereabout, where it appeareth vnto them that there should be great plentie of those shell fyshes (which some call Muscles, and some Dysters) wherein pearles are engendred, & there they plunge them selues vnder the water, euen vnto the bottome, sauyng one that remayneth in the *Canoa* or boate, which he keepeth styll in one place as neare as he can, lookyng for theyr returne out of the water: And when one of them hath ben a good whyle vnder the water, he ryseth vp, and commeth swymmyng to the boate, entryng into the same, and leauyng there al the Dysters which he hath taken and brought with hym (for in these are the pearles found) and when he hath there rested hym selfe a whyle, and eaten part of the Dysters, he returneth agayne to the water, where he remayneth as long as he can endure, and then ryseth agayne, and swymmeth to the boate with his pray, where he resteth hym as before, and thus continueth course by course, as do all the other in lyke maner, beyng al most expert swymmers and dyuers: and when the night draweth neare, they returne to the Ilande to theyr houses, and present all the Dysters to the maister or stewarde of the house of theyr lorde, who hath the charge of the sayde Indians, and when he hath geuen them somewhat to eate, he layeth vp the Dysters in safe custodie, vntyll he haue a great quantitie therof, then he causeth the same fysher men to open them, and they fynd in euery of them pearles, other great or small, two, or three, or foure, and sometymes fyue or syxe, and many small graines, accordyng to the liberalitie of nature. They saue the pearles both smal and great whiche they haue founde, and eyther eate the Dysters if they wyl, or cast them away, hauyng so great quantitie thereof, that they in maner abhorre them. These Dysters are of harde flesshe, and not so pleasaunt in eatyng as are ours of Spayne. This Ilande of *Cubagua* where this maner of fyshing is exercised, is in the North coaste, and is no bygger then the Ilande of Zeland. Oftentymes the sea increaseth greatly, and much more then ỹ fishers for pearles would, because where as the place is very deepe, a man can not naturally rest at the bottome,

by

by reason of the abundaunce of ayry substaunce whiche is in hym, as I haue oftentymes proued . For although he may by violence and force discende to the bottome, yet are his feete lyfted vp agayne, so that he can contynue no tyme there : and therefore where the sea is very deepe, these Indian fyshers vse to tye two great stones about them with a cord, on euery syde one, by the weyght whereof they discende to the bottome, and remayne there vntyll them lysteth to ryse agayne, at whiche tyme they vnlose the stones, and ryse vp at theyr pleasure. But this theyr apteneſſe and agilitie in swymmyng, is not the thyng that causeth men most to marueyle : but rather to consyder howe many of them can stande in the botome of the water for the space of one whole houre, and some more or lesse, accordyng as one is more apt heereunto then an other . An other thyng there is whiche seemeth to me very straunge : and this is, that where as I haue oftentimes demaunded of some of these Lordes of the Indians, yf the place where they are accustomed to fyshe for pearles, beyng but litle and narrowe, wyll not in short tyme be vtterly without Dysters, yf they consume them so fast. They all answered me, that although they be consumed in one part, yet if they goe a fyshyng in an other part, or an other coaste of the Ilande, or at an other contrary wynde, and contynue fyshyng there also vntyll the Dysters be lykewyse consumed, and then returne agayne to the first place, or any other place where they fished before, and emptied the same in lyke maner, they finde them agayne as full of Dysters as though they had neuer been fyshed. Wherby we may iudge, that these Dysters eyther remoue from one place to an other, as do other fishes, or els that they are engendred and encrease in certaine ordinarie places. This Iland of *Cumana* & *Cubagua*, where they fyshe for these pearles, is in the twelfe degree of the part of the laid coast which inclineth toward the North. Likewise pearles are founde and geathered in the South sea, called *Mare del Sur*, & the pearles of this sea are very big, yet not so big as they of the Iland of pearles, called *de las perlas*, or *Margaritea*, which the Indians cal *Terarequi*, lying in the gulfe of Sainct Michael, where greater pearles are founde, and of greater pryce, then in any other coast of the North sea.

Of this reade more largely in the decades.

in *Camana*, or any other part. I speake this as a trewe testimonie of syght, hauing been long in that South sea, and makyng curious inquisition to be certaynely enfourmed of al that parteyneth to the fyshyng of pearles. From this Ilande of *Terarequi*, there was brought a pearle of the fashyon of a Peare, weighing thyrtie and one Caractes, which *Petrus Arias* had among a thousand and so many poundes weyght of other pearles, whiche he had when captayne *Gaspar Morales* (before *Petrus Arias*) passed to the sayde Ilande in the yeere. 1515. whiche pearle was of great pryce. From the sayde Ilande also, came a great and very rounde pearle, which I brought out of the sea, this was as bygge as a smal pellet of a Stonebowe, and of the weyght of twentie and syx Caractes: I bought it in the citie of *Panama*, in the sea of *Sur*, and payde for it syx hundred and fyftie tymes the weyght therof of good golde, and had it three yeeres in my custodie, and after my returne into Spayne, sold it to the Earle of *Nansao* Marquesse of *Zenete*, great Chamberlayne to your Maiestie, who gaue it to the Marquesse his wyfe, the Lady *Mentia* of *Mendozza*. I thynke verily that this pearle was the greatest, fayrest, and roundest that hath been seene in those partes. For your maiestie ought to understand, that in the coaste of the sea of *Sur*, there are founde a hundred great pearles rounde after the fashyon of a Peare, to one that is perfectly rounde and great. This Ilande of *Terarequi*, which the Christians call the Ilande of pearles, and other call it the Ilande of Flowres, is founde in the eight degree on the South syde of the fyrme land, in the prouince of golden Castyle, or *Beragua*, and these are the coasts of the fyrme lande, where pearles are founde euen vnto this day: I understande also that there are pearles founde in the prouince and Ilandes of *Cartagenia*. And since your maiestie appoynted me a gouernour and captayne, I haue made further searche, and am aduertysed that pearles are founde in diuers other places, as about the Ilande of *Codego*, whiche lyeth agaynst the mouth of that port of the Ilande of *Cartagenia*, which the Indians cal *Coro*, the which Ilande and port are on the North syde, in the tenth degree of the coastes of the fyrme lande.

By the computation of Venice, foure grains make a Caract.

Of

Of the familiaritie which certayne of the Indians haue with the deuyll, and howe they receyue answere of him of thinges to come.

When the Indians begyn theyr battayle, or goe to any combat, or attempt any other great matter, they haue certayne elect men, whom they reuerendly esteeme, & call them *Tequinas*, which in theyr tounge is as much to say as maisters: notwithstandyng that they call euery man, that is cunnyng in any science, by the same name, as fyshers, foulers, hunters, or makers of nettes. These *Tequinas* therefore, they call the maisters of theyr aunsweres, because they speake with *Tuyra*, that is, the deuyll, and bryng them aunswere what he sayeth, eyther as touchyng such thinges as they haue to doe, or shall chaunce to them the day folowyng, or many dayes to come. For the deuyll, beyng so auncient an Astronomer, knoweth the tymes of thinges, and seeth howe they are naturally directed and inclyned, and maketh them beleeue that they come so to passe by his ordinaunce, as though he were the Lorde and mouer of all that is and shalbe, and that hee gyueth the day lyght, and rayne, causeth tempest, and ruleth the stations of tymes, gyuyng lyfe, or takyng away lyfe, at his pleasure: By reason whereof, the Indians beyng deceyued of hym, and seeyng also suche effectes to come certaynely to passe as hee hath tolde them before, beleeue hym in all other thinges, and honour him in many places with sacrifyces of the blood and lyues of men, and odoryferous spices: And when God disposeth the contrary to that whiche the deuyll hath spoken in oracle, whereby he is proued a lyer, he causeth the *Tequinas* to perswade the people that hee hath chaunged his mynd and sentence for some of their sinnes, or deuiseth some such lye as lyketh him best, beyng a skylful maister in such subtile and craftie deuises, to deceyue the simple and ignorant people, which hath small defence agaynst so mightie and craftie an aduersarie. And as they call the deuyll *Tuyra*, so doe they in many places call the Christians by the same name, thynkyng that they greatly honour them thereby, as in deede it is a name very fitte and

agreeable to many of them, hauyng layde aparte all honestie and vertue, lyuyng more lyke Dragons then men, among the se symple people.

Before thinhabitauntes of the Iland of *Hispaniola* had receiued the Christian fayth, there was among them a secte of men, whiche liued solitarily in the desartes and woods, & led theyr lyfe in silence and abstinence, more straightly then euer dyd the philosophers of Pithagoras secte, absteinyng in lyke maner from the eatyng of all thinges that lyue by blood, contented onely with such fruites, hearbes, and rootes, as the desartes and woods mynistred vnto them to eate: The professours of this secte were called *Piaces*. They gaue them selues to the knowledge of naturall thinges, and vsed certaine secrete magicall operations and superstitions, whereby they had familiaritie with spirites, which they allured into theyr owne bodyes at such tymes as they would take vppon them to tell of thinges to come, whiche they dyd in maner as foloweth. When any of the kynges had occasion to call any of them out of the desartes for this purpose, theyr custome was to sende them a portion of theyr fyne bread of *Cazabbi* or *Maizium*, and with humble request and suite to desyre them to tell them of suche thinges as they woulde demaunde. After the request graunted, and the place and day appoynted, the *Piaces* commeth, with two of his disciples waytyng on hym, whereof the one byngeth with him a vessell of a secrete water, and the other a litle syluer bell. When he commeth to the place, he sitteth downe on a rounde seate made for hym of purpose, where hauyng his disciples, the one standyng on the one hande, and the other on the other, euen in the presence of the kyng and certayne of his nobles (for the common people are not admitted to these mysteries) and turnyng his face towarde the desarte, he begynneth his inchauntment, and calleth the spirite with loude voyce by certayne names, whiche no man vnderstandeth but hee and his disciples. After he hath done thus a whyle, if the spirite yet deferre his commyng, hee dyynketh of the sayde water, and therewith waxeth hotte and furious, and inuerteth and turneth his inchauntment, and letteth him selfe blood with a thorne, marueilously turmoylyng him selfe, as wee reade of the furious Sybilles, not ceassyng vntyl the spirit be come: who at his comming entreth

entreth into him, and ouerthroweth him, as it were a greyhound should ouerturne a Squerell, then for a space, hee seemeth to lye as though hee were in great payne, or in a rapte, woonderfully tormentyng him selfe, duryng whiche agonie, the other disciple shaketh the siluer bell continually. Thus when the agonie is past, and he lyeth quietly (yet without any sense or feelyng) the kyng, or some other in his stead, demaundeth of him what he desireth to know: and the spirit answereth by the mouth of the rapte *Piaces*, with a directe and perfecte answere to all poyntes: Insomuche that on a tyme certayne Spanyardes beyng present at these mysteries with one of the kynges, and in the Spanyshe tounge demaundyng the *Piaces* of their shyppes which they looked for out of Spayne, the spirite answered in the Indian tounge, and tolde them what day and houre the shyppes departed from Spayne, how many they were, and what they brought, without fayling in any poynte. If he be also demaunded of the eclypse of the Sunne or Moone (which they greatly feare and abhorre) he giueth a perfect answere, and the lyke of tempestes, famin, plentie, warre or peace, and such other thinges. When all the demaundes are finished, his disciples call him aloude, ryngyng the siluer bell at his eare, and blowyng a certayne powder into his nosethrilles, whereby he is raysed as it were from a dead sleape, beyng yet somewhat heauy headed and faynte a good whyle after. Thus beyng agayne rewarded of the kyng with more bread, hee departeth agayne to the desartes with his disciples. But since the Christian fayth hath been dispearsed throughout the Ilande, these deuyllyshe practises haue ceassed, and they of the members of the deuyll, are made the members of Christ by baptisme, forsakyng the deuyll and his workes, with the vayne curiositie of desyre of knowledge of thinges to come, whereof for the most parte it is better to be ignorant, then with vexation to know that which can not be auoyded.

Furthermore, in many places of the firme lande, when any of the kynges dye, all his householde seruauntes, aswell women as men whiche haue continually serued him, kyll themselues, beleeuyng as they are taught by the deuyll *Tuyra*, that they whiche kyll them selues when the kyng dyeth, goe with him to heauen, and serue him in the same place and office as

they dyd before on the earth whyle hee lyued : and that all that refuse so to doe, when after they dye by theyr naturall death or otherwyse, theyr soules to dye with theyr bodyes, and to bee dissolued into ayre, and become nothyng, as doe the soules of Hogges, Bydes, Fyshes, or other bruute beastes: and that only the other may enioy the priuiledge of immortalitie for euer, to serue the kyng in heauen . And of this false opinion commeth it, that they which sowe corne, or set rootes for the kynges bread, and geather the same, are accustomed to kyll them selues, that they may enioy this priuiledge in heauen, and for the same purpose, cause a portion of the graine of *Maizium*, and a bundle of *Iucca* (whereof theyr bread is made) to be buryed with them in their graues, that the same may serue them in heauen, if perhappes there should lacke seedes to sowe, and therefore they take this with them, to begyn withall, vntil *Tuyra* (who maketh them all these fayre promises) prouyde them of greater quantitie. This haue I my selfe seene in the toppe of the mountaynes of *Guaturo*, where hauing in pryson the kyng of that prouince (who rebelled from thobedience of your maiestie) and demaundyng of him to whom parteyned those sepultures or graues which I sawe in his house: hee answered, that they were of certayne Indians which slue them selues at the death of his father . And because they are oftentimes accustomed to bury great quantities of wrought gold with them, I caused twoo graues to be opened, wherein was nothyng founde but a vessell full of the graine of *Maizium*, & a bundle of *Iucca*, as I haue sayde . And demaundyng the cause hereof, of the kyng and the other Indians: they answered, that they that were buryed there, were the labourers of the grounde, and men skylfull in sowyng of seedes, and makyng of bread, and seruauntes to the kynges father, and to the ende that their soules should not dye with theyr bodyes, they slue them selues at the death of the kyng theyr maister, to lyue with hym in heauen, and to the intent that they myght serue him there in the same office, they reserued that *Maizium* and *Iucca*, to sowe it in heauen . Wherevnto I answered them in this maner, Beholde howe your *Tuyra* deceyueth you, and howe all that hee teacheth you is false. You see howe in so long a tyme since they are dead, they haue not yet taken away this *Maizium* and *Iucca*,

which

which is nowe putrified and wooꝛth nothyng, and not lyke to bee sowen in heauen. To this the kyng replyed, saying, in that they haue not taken it away, noꝛ sowen it in heauen, the cause is, that they chaunced to fynde enough there, by reason whereof they had no neede of this. To this errour many thinges were sayd, which seemed of litle foꝛce to remoue him from his false opinion, and especially any such as at that age are occuppyed of the deuyl, whom they paynt of the selfe same fourme and colour, as hee appeareth vnto them in dyuers shapes and fourmes. They make also Images of golde, copper, and wood, to the same similitudes, in terrible shapes, and so variable, as the paynters are accustomed to paynt them at the feete of sainct Michaell tharchangell, oꝛ in any other place, where they paynte them of most hoꝛrible poꝛtiture. Lykewyse when the deuyll greatly intendeth to feare them, hee thꝛeatneth to sende them great tempestes, whiche they call *Furacanas*, oꝛ *Haurachanas*, and are so behement, that they ouerthꝛow many houses, and great trees. And I haue seene in mountaynes, full of many and great trees, that foꝛ the space of thꝛee quarters of a league the mountayne hath been subuerted, and the trees ouerthꝛowen, and plucked out of the earth with the rootes: a thing doubtlesse so fearefull and terrible to beholde, that it may verily appeare to bee done by the hande of the deuyl. And in this case the Chꝛistian men ought to consider with good reason, that in all places where the holy sacrament is reserued, the sayde tempestes are no moꝛe so outragious, oꝛ so perilous as they were wont to bee.

Doctrine not woꝛthy foꝛ a christian man.

Of the temperature of the regions vnder or neare to the burnt lyne, called *Torrida Zona*, or the Equinoctiall, and of the dyuers seasons of the yeere.



THe landes and regions that are neare about the clymes of the Equinoctiall lyne, are naturally hot, although they be otherwise temperate by the diuine pꝛouidence: & theꝛfoꝛe such flesh oꝛ fysh as is taken and kylled in these regions, can not be pꝛeserued from putrifaction, except it be rosted, sodden, oꝛ perboyld, the same day that it is kyld. And wheras I haue sayd, that

such regions are naturally hotte, and yet temperate by the prouidence of God, it is so in deede: and therefore not without cause the auncient auethours were of opinion, that the burnt lyne, or *Torrida Zona*, where passeth the lyne of the Equinoctiall, shoulde be vnhabitable, by reason the Sun hath greater dominion in that place, then in any other of the sphere, remaynyng continually betweene the two troppykes of Cancer and Capricorne: For when in these regions the earth is opened or dygged from the superficiall parte thereof to the deapth of a mans heyght, it is founde temperate, and within this space the trees and plants fasten and spread their rootes, and no deeper, extendyng the same as farre in breadth in the grounde as doe theyr braunches in the ayre, and enter no deeper into the grounde then I haue sayde, because that beneath the deapth of the sayde space of a mans heyght the earth is very hotte, the vpper part beyng temperate and very moyst, as well by reason of the abundaunce of water whiche falleth from heauen vpon that earth at certayne ordinarie seasons of the yeere, as also for the multitude of great ryuers, brookes, spryngs, and maryshes, whereby the myghtie and supreme Lord which made these landes, hath most prudently prouided for the preseruation of the same.

There are also many rough and hygh mountaynes, with temperate ayre, and pleasaunt, cleare, and moderate myghtes: of the whiche particularitie the auncient wryters hauyng no certayne knowledge, affirmed the said burnt line or *Torrida zona*, or Equinoctiall, to be naturally vnhabitable. As touching which thing I am able to witnesse the contrary by testimonie of syght and feelyng, as by most certayne senses, hauyng lyued many yeeres in these regions, by reason whereof better credite ought to be giuen to me, then to such as haue grounded their opinion onely vpon coniectures. And to speake further of the situation of these regions, you shall vnderstand that the coaste of the North sea, beyng in the gulfe of *Vraba*, and in the porte of *Dariena*, where the shyps arryue whiche come out of Spayne, is in the sixte degree and a halfe, and in the seuenth, and from sixe and a halfe, vnto eyght, except a small poynt which entreth into the sea towarde the North. That poynt which of this lande and new parte of the worlde lyeth most towarde the East, is the cape of sainct Augustine, which

is

is in the eyght degree: So that the sayd gulfe of *Vraba*, is distant from the Equinoctiall lyne, from a hundred & twentie, to a hundred and thirtie leagues, and three quarters of a league, after that accompte of .xvii. leagues and a halfe for euery degree from pole to pole: and thus for a litle more or lesse, goeth all the coast. By reason whereof, in the citie of *Santa Maria Antiqua* in *Dariena*, and in all that course of the foresayde gulfe of *Vraba*, at all tymes of the yeere the dayes and nyghtes are in maner of equall length: and if there bee any difference betweene them by reason of this small distance from the Equinoctiall, it is so litle, that in .xxiiii. houres, makyng a naturall day, it cannot bee perceyued but by the iudgement of speculatiue men, and suche as vnderstande the sphere: From hence the North starre is seene very lowe. And when the starres, whiche are called the guardens of the North starre, are vnder the Chariot, it can not be seene, because it is vnder the horizontall. And whereas I haue sayde before that it rayneth in these regions at certayne ordinarie tymes, it is so in deed: For it is wynter and summer there at contrary tymes to that which is in Spayne, where the greatest colde of frost and rayne is in December and January, and the greatest heate of sommer about saint Johns day at Mydsommer, or in the moneth of July: But in golden Castile or *Beragua*, it is contrary, for the sommer and tyme of greatest drought & without rayne, is at Christmas, and a moneth before, and a moneth after, & the tyme when it rayneth most, is about Mydsommer, and a moneth before, and a moneth after. And this season which they call wynter, is not for that it is any colder then, then at any other tyme of the yeere, or hotter at Christmas then at other seasons, the tyme in these regions being euer after one maner: but for that, that, in this tyme whiche they call wynter, the Sunne is hydde from theyr sightes, by reason of cloudes and rayne, more then at other times. Yet forasmuche as for the most part of the yeere they lyue in a cleare, open, and temperate ayre, they somewhat shrynke and feele a litle colde during the tyme of the sayde moyst and cloudy ayre, although it be not colde in deede, or at the least such colde as hath any sensible sharpenesse.

Of dyuers particuler thinges, as woormes, serpentes, beaſtes, foules, trees. &c.

MAny other thinges might be ſayd, and much differyng from theſe wherof I haue ſpoken. But to lette paſſe the multitude of thinges whiche are as variable as the power of nature is infinite, and to ſpeake of ſuch thinges as come chiefely to my remembraunce, as moſt worthie to be noted, I will firſt ſpeake of certayne litle and troublous beaſtes, which may ſeeme to bee engendred of nature to moleſt & vexe men, to ſhewe them & giue them to vnderſtand, how ſmall and vyle a thing may offende and diſquiet them, to thende that they may remember the principall end for the which they were created, that is, to know their maker and procurer of their ſaluation by the way whiche is open to all Chriſtian men, and all other which will open the eyes of theyr vnderſtandyng. And although the thinges whereof wee entende nowe to ſpeake, may ſeeme vyle and litle to be eſteemed, yet are they worthy to bee noted and conſidered, to vnderſtande the difference and variable workes of nature. So it is therefore, that whereas in many partes of the firme lande, by the whiche al well the Chriſtians as Indians doe trauayle, there are ſuche maryſhes and waters in the way, that they are fayne to go without breeches among the hearbes and weedes, by reaſon whereof, certaine ſmal beaſts or wormes (which they cal *Garapates*) much lyke vnto tykes, cleaue faſt to their legges. Theſe worms are as litle as the pouder of beaten ſalt, and cleaue ſo faſt, that they can by no meanes bee taken away, except the place bee noynted with oyle: and after that the legges be noynted a whyle with oyle, or the other partes where theſe litle tykes are faſtened, they ſcrape the place with a knyfe, and ſo take them away. But the Indians whiche haue no oyle, ſmoke them, and burne them with fyre, and abyde great paynes in takyng them away by this meanes. Of other litle beaſtes whiche trouble men, and are engendred in theyr heades or other partes of theyr bodyes, I ſay that the Chriſtian men which trauayle into theſe partes, haue them but ſeldome tymes, and that not paſt one or two, & this al-

so very seldome: For passyng by the lyne of the Diameter where the compasse maketh difference of saylyng by the wynde called *Greco*, (that is, Northeast) and *Magistral* (that is, southwest) whiche is in the course of the Ilandes of *Azori*, they sayle but a litle way folowyng our viage by the west, but that all the lyse whiche the Christians cary with them, or are engendred in theyr heades, or other places of theyr bodyes, dye and vtterly consume by litle and litle, and are not engendred in India, except in the heades of litle chyldren in those partes, aswell among the chyldren of the Christians whiche are borne there, as also among the naturall Indians, who haue them commonly in theyr heades, and sometymes in other partes of theyr bodyes, and especially they of the prouince of *Cueua*, whiche is a region contaynyng more then a hundred leagues in length, and embraseth the one and the other coast of the North sea, and of the East. When these Indians are infected with this fylthynesse, they dresse and cleanse one an other: And they that exercyse this, are for the most part women, who eate all that they take, and haue herein suche dexteritie by reason of theyr exercise, that our men can not lyghtly attayne therunto. There is also another thyng greatly to be consydered: and this is, howe the Christian men, beyng there cleane from this fylthynesse of India, aswell in theyr heades as the rest of theyr bodyes, yet when they returne to come agayne into Europe, and begyn to arryue in that place of the Ocean sea where we sayde before that these lyse dyed and forsoke them, sodenly in theyr repassyng by the same clyme (as though these lyse had taryed for them in that place) they can by no meanes auoyde them for the space of certayne dayes, although they change theyr shertes two or three times in a day: These lise are at ỹ fyrst as litle as nittes, and growe by litle and litle, vntyl they be of the byggenesse that they are in Spayne. This haue I oftentymes proued, hauyng nowe foure tymes passed the Ocean sea by this viage. Besyde these wormes and vermyn whereof we haue spoken, there is another litle myscheuous worme, whiche we may number among the kyndes of fleas, this pestilence the Indians call *Nigua*, and is muche lesse then a flea: it pearseth the flesh of a man, and so launseth or cutteth the same (whyle

in

in the meane tyme it can neyther be seene noꝛ taken) that from some it hath cut of theyꝛ handes, and from other theyꝛ feete, vntyll the remedy was founde to annoynt the place with oyle, and scrape it with a rasoꝛ. In the firme lande in golden Castyle oꝛ *Beragua*, there are many vipers lyke vnto them of Spayne: they that are bytten of them, dye in shoꝛt space, foꝛ fewe lyue to the fourth day, except pꝛesent remedy. Of these, some are of lesse kynde then other, and haue theyꝛ tayle somewhat rounde, and leape in the ayꝛe to assayle men, and foꝛ this cause, some call this kynde of vipers *Tyro*: theyꝛ bytyng is most venomous, and foꝛ the most parte incurable. One of them chaunced to byte an Indian mayde whiche serued me in my house, to whom I caused the Surgians to mynister theyꝛ oꝛdinary cure, but they coulde do her no good, noꝛ yet geat one dꝛoppe of blood out of her, but onely a yelowe water, so that she dyed the thyꝛde day foꝛ lacke of remedy, as the lyke hath chaunced to dyuers other: This mayde was of the age of .xiiii. yeeres, and spake the Spanyshe tongue as if she had been boꝛne in Castyle: she sayde that the viper whiche byt her on the foote, was two spannes long, oꝛ litle lesse, and that to byte her, she lept in the ayꝛe foꝛ the space of moꝛe then syꝛe pases, as I haue heard the lyke of other credible persons. I haue also seene in the firme lande a kynde of adders, very small, and of seuen oꝛ eyght foote long: these are so redde, that in the nyght they appeare lyke burnyng cooles, and in the day seeme as redde as bloodde, these are also venomous, but not so muche as the vipers. There are other muche lesse, and shoꝛter, and blacker: these come out of the ryuers, and wander sometymes farre on the lande, and are lykewyse venomous. There are also other adders of a russet colour: these are somewhat bygger then the viper, and are hurtful and venomous. There are lykewyse an other soꝛt of many colours, and very long: of these I sawe one in the yeere of Chꝛist .1515. in the Iland of *Hispaniola*, neere vnto the sea coastes, at the foote of the mountaynes called *Pedernales*, when this adder was slayne, I measure her, and founde her to be moꝛe then .xx. foote long, & somwhat moꝛe then a mans fyst in byggnesse: and although she had thꝛee oꝛ foure deadly woundes with a swoꝛde, yet dyed she not, noꝛ stonke the same

Vipers.

Adders.

same daye, insomuche that her blood contynued warme all that tyme. There are also in the Maryshes and desartes of the fyrme lande many other kyndes of Lysartes, Dragons, and other diuers kyndes of Serpentes, whereof I entende not heere to speake muche, because I haue more particulerly entreated of these thynges in my generall historie of the West Indies. Dragons.

There are also Spyders of marueylous byggenesse, and I haue seene some with the bodye and legges bygger then a mans hande extended euery waye, and I once sawe one of suche byggenesse, that only her bodye was as bygge as a Sparrowe, and full of that Laune whereof they make theyr webbes: this was of a darke russet coloure, with eyes greater then the eyes of a Sparowe, they are venomous, and of terrible shape to beholde. There are also Scorpions, and dyuers other such venomous wormes. Whereby we may see, that where as naturall causes and influence of the planettes are of strongest actiuitie, they ceasse not to engender and bryng forth both good and badde, accordyng to the dispotion of the matter, whiche they also doo partly dispose, as the philosophers affyrme. Furthermore in the fyrme lande, there are many Toades, beyng very noyous and hurtfull by reason of theyr great multitude, they are not venomous, they are seene in great abundaunce in *Darien*, where they are so bygge that when they dye in the tyme of drouth, the bones of some of them (and especialy the rybbes) are of suche greatnesse, that they appeare to be the bones of Cattes, or of some other beastes of the same byggenesse. But as the waters diminishe, and the moysture consumeth in the tyme of drouth (as I haue sayde) they also consume therewith, vntyl the yeere next folowyng when the rayne and moysture encrease, at whiche tyme they are seene agayne. Neuertheless, at this present there is no such quantitie of them, as was wont to be, by reason that as the lande is better cultured by the Christians, aswell by the fellyng of woodes and shrubbes, as also by the pasture of Kyne, Horses, and other beastes, so is it apparent that this poyson diminisheth daylye, whereby that region becommeth more holsome and pleasaunt: these Toades syng after three or foure sortes, for some of them syng pleasauntly, other lyke ours of Spayne, some also whystle, and other some make an Spiders

other

Other maner of noyse: they are lykewyse of diuers colowres, as some greene, some russet or gray, and some almost blacke, but of all sortes they are great and fylthy, and noyous by reason of theyr great multitude, yet are they not venemous as I haue sayde. There are also a straunge kynde of Crabbes, whiche come foorth of certayne holes of the earth, that they themselues make: the head and bodie of these make one rounde thyng, muche lyke vnto the hood of a Faulkon, hauyng foure feete commyng out of the one syde, & as many out of the other: they haue also two mouthes, like vnto a payre of small pinsers, the one bygger then the other, wherewith they byte, but doo no great hurt, because they are not venomous: theyr skynne and bodie is smooth, and thynne, as is the skynne of a man, sauyng that it is somewhat harder, theyr coloure is russet, or whyte, or blewe, and walke sydelong, they are very good to be eaten, insomuche that the Christians trauaylyng by the fyrme lande, haue been greatly nourysshed by them, because they are founde in maner euery where: in shape and fourme they are muche like vnto the Crabbe whiche we paynt for the signe Cancer, and like vnto those whiche are founde in Spayne in *Andalusia* in the ryuer *Guadalchiber*, where it entreth into the sea, and in the sea coastes there about, sauyng that these are of the water, and the other of the lande: they are sometymes hurtfull, so that they that eate of them dye, but this chaunceth only when they haue eaten any venomous thyng, or of the venomous apples wherewith the Canible archers poyson theyr arrowes, whereof I wyll speake hereafter, and for this cause the Christians take heede how they eate of these Crabbes, yf they fynde them neare vnto the sayd apple trees. Further more in these Indies, aswel in the fyrme lande, as in the Ilandes, there is founde a kynde of Serpentes, whiche they call .Y.V. *anas*, whiche some cal *Iuannas*, these are terrible and feareful to syght, and yet not hurtful, they are very delicate to be eaten, and it is not yet knowen whether they be beastes of the lande, or fyshes, because they lyue in the water, and wander in the wooddes, and on the lande: they haue foure feete, and are commonly bygger then Connies, and in some places bygger then Otters, with tayles lyke Lysartes or Eutes: theyr skynne is spotted, and of the same

Crabbes.

Serpentes called Iuanni.

kynd

kynde of smothnesse or bareneſſe, although of dyuers colours: vpon the rydge of theyr backes, they haue many long prickes, theyr teeth are very sharpe, and especially theyr fanges or dogge teeth, theyr thyghes are long and large, reachyng from theyr beardes to theyr breastes, of the lyke skynne to the residue of theyr bodyes: they are dumbe, and haue no voyce, or make any noyse, or crye, although they bee kept tyed to the foote of a cheste, or any other thyng, for the space of .xx. or .xxv. dayes, without any thyng to eate or drynke, except they geue them nowe and then a litle of the bread of *Cazabbi*, or some suche other thyng: they haue foure feete, and theyr fore feete as long as a mans fynger, with clawes lyke the clawes of a byrde, but weaker, and suche as can not grasple or take holde of any thyng: they are muche better to bee eaten then to beholde, for fewe that see them, wyll haue desyre to eate of them, by reason of theyr horrible shape, except suche as haue ben accustomed to the beastes of these regions, whiche are more horrible and feareful, as this is not, but onely in apparence: theyr flesshe is of muche better tast then the flesshe of Connies, and more holsome, for it hurteth none but onely suche as haue had the frenche pore, insomuche that if they haue been touched of that infirmitie, although they haue ben whole of long tyme, neuertheleſſe they feele hurte, and complayne of the eatyng of these *Iuannas*, as hath been oftentimes proued by experience. There are founde in the fyrme lande certayne byrdes, so litle, that the whole body of one of them is no bygger then the toppe of the byggest fynger of a mans hande, and yet is the bare body without the feathers not halfe so bygge: This byrde, besyde her litleneſſe, is of suche velocitie and swyftneſſe in fleeyng, that who so seeth her fleeyng in the ayre, can not see her flap or beate her winges after any other sort then do the Dorres, or humble bees, or Beetels: so that there is no man that seeth her flee, that would thynke her to be any other then a Dorre: they make their nestes accordyng to the proportion of their bygnes, and I haue seene that one of these byrdes with her nest put in a payre of golde weights, altogeather hath waide no more then .2. *Tomini*, which are in poise .24. graines, with the feathers, without the which she shoulde haue wayed somwhat lesse. And doubtleſſe when I con-

sider

sider the fyneneſſe of the clawes & feete of theſe byrdes, I knowe not whereunto I may better lyken them, then to the litle byrdes whiche the lymners of bookes are accuſtomed to paynte on the margent of churche bookes, and other bookes of diuine ſeruice. Theyr feathers are of many fayre colours, as golden, yelowe, and greene, beſyde other variable colours, theyr beake is very long for the proporcion of theyr bodies, and as fyne and ſubtile as a ſowyng nedle: they are very hardy, ſo that when they ſee a man clime ỹ tree where they haue their neſts, they flee at his face, & ſtryke hym in the eyes, commyng, goyng, and returnyng with ſuch ſwyftnes, that no man woulde lyghtly beleeue it, that hath not ſeene it: and certaynly theſe byrdes are ſo litle, that I durſt not haue made mention hereof, if it were not that diuers other which haue ſeene them as wel as I can beare witnes of my ſaying: they make their neſtes of flockes and heare of cotton, wherof there is great plentie in theſe regions, and ſerueth wel for theyr purpoſe. But as touchyng the byrdes, foules, and beaſtes of theſe Indies, becauſe they are innumerable, both litle and great, I intende not to ſpeake muche heere, becauſe I haue ſpoken more largely hereof in my generall hyſtorye of the Indies. There is an other kynde of beaſtes ſeene in the firme lande, whiche ſeemeth very ſtrange and marueylous to the Chriſtian men to beholde, and much differyng from al other beaſtes whiche haue ben ſeene in other partes of the world: theſe beaſtes are called *Bardati*, and are foure footed, hauyng their tayle and al the reſt of theyr bodyes couered onely with a ſkynne lyke the coperture of a barbed horſe, or the checkered ſkinne of a Liſarte or Crocodile, of coloure betweene white and ruſſet, inclynyng somwhat more to whyte. This beaſt is of fourme and ſhape muche lyke to a barbed horſe, with his barbes and flankets in al poynts, and from vnder that which is the barbe and coperture, the taile commeth forth, and the feete in theyr place, the necke alſo & the eares in theyr partes, and in fyne al thynges in lyke ſorte as in a barbed courſer: they are of the bygneſſe of one of theſe common dogges, they are not hurtfull, they are fylthy, and haue theyr habitation in certaine hillockes of earth, where dygging with their feete, they make theyr dens very deepe, & the holes thereof, in likemaner as do Connies, they are very excellent to be eaten, &

are

are taken with nettes, and some also kylled with Crosbowes: they are likewise taken oftentymes when the husbandmen burne the stubble in sowyng tyme, or to renue the herbage for Kyne and other beastes. I haue oftentymes eaten of theyr flesh, which seemeth to me of better tast then Kyddes flesh, and holsome to be eaten. And if these beastes had euer been seene in these partes of the worlde, where the fyrst barbed horses had theyr originall, no man woulde iudge but that the fourme and fashyon of the coperture of horses furnyshed for the warres, was fyrst deuised by the syght of these beastes. There is also in the fyrme lande an other beast, called *Orso Formigaro*, that is, the Ante beare. This beast in heare and coloure, is much lyke to the Beare of Spaine, and in maner of the same makyng, saue that he hath a muche longer snout, and is of euyll syght: they are oftentymes taken only with staues, without any other weapon, and are not hurtful, they are also taken with dogges, because they are not naturally armed, although they byte somewhat, they are founde for the most part about and neare to the hyllockes where are great abundaunce of Antes. For in these regions is engendred a certayne kynde of Antes, very litle and blacke, in the feeldes and playnes where as growe no trees, where by the instinct of nature these Antes separate them selues to engender farre from the Woodes for feare of these Beares, the which because they are fearefull, vyle, and vnarmed (as I haue sayde) they keepe euer in places full of trees, vntyll very famine and necessitie, or the great desire that they haue to feede on these Antes, cause them to come out of the woods to hunt for them: these Antes make a hillocke of earth to the heyght of a man, or somewhat more or lesse, and as byg as a great chest, & sometymes as byg as a Butte or a Hogshead, & as hard as a stone, so that they seeme as though they were stones, set vp to limit the endes & confines of certaine lands. Within these hillocks, made of most harde earth, are innumerable and infinite litle Antes, the whiche may be geathered by bushelles when the hyllocke is broken: the whiche when it is sometymes moysted by rayne, and then dryed agayne by the heate of the Sonne, it breaketh, and hath certayne small ryftes, as litle and subtyle as the edge of a knyfe, and it seemeth that nature hath geuen sense to these Antes to fynde

Beares.

Antes.

suche

suche a matter of earth, wherewith they may make the sayde hyllocke of suche hardnesse, that it may seeme a strong pauement made of lyme and stone: and whereas I haue proued and caused some of them to be broken, I haue founde them of such hardnesse, as yf I had not seene I could not haue beleeued, insomuch that they coulde scarcely be broken with pykes of Iron, so strong fortresses doo these litle beastes make for theyr sauegard against theyr aduersarie the Beare, who is chiefely nourished by them, and geuen them as an enimie, accordyng to the common prouerbe whiche sayeth, *Non e alcuna persona si libera, a chimanchi il suo Bargello*, that is, there is no man so free, that hath not his persecutor or priuie enimie. And here when I consyder the marueilous prouidence whiche nature hath geuen to these litle bodies, I cal to remembrance the wittie sentence of Plinie, where speakyng of such litle beastes, he sayeth thus, Why do we marueile at the Towrebearyng shoulders of Elephantes, and not rather where nature hath placed so many senses & such industrye in such litle bodies? Where is hearing, smelling, seeing, and feelyng, yea, where are the vaynes and arteries (without which no beast can lyue or moue) in these so litle bodies, whereof some are so small that theyr whole bodies can scarsly be seene of our eyes: What shall we then saye of the partes of the same? Yet euen among these there are many of such sagasitie and industry, as the like is not seene in beastes of greater quantitie, no nor yet in man, &c. But to returne to the history. This enimie whiche nature hath geuen to these litle beastes, vseth this maner to assayle them: When he resorteth to the hyllocke where the Antes lie hid as in theyr fortresse, he putteth his tongue to one of the ryftes whereof we haue spoken, being as subtile as the edge of a sword, and therewith contynuall lickyng, maketh the place moyst, the some and froth of his mouth beyng of suche propertie, that by contynuall lickyng the place, it enlargeth the ryft in such sort by litle and litle, that at the length he easely putteth in his tongue, whiche he hath very long and thynne, and muche disproportionate to his bodie, and when he hath thus made free passage for his tongue into the hyllocke, to put it easely in and out at his pleasure, then he thrusteth it into the hole as farre as he can reache, and so letteth it rest a good space, vntyll a great quantitie

tittle of the Antes (whose nature reioyceth in heate and moyster) haue laden his tongue, and as many as he can conteyne in the holownesse thereof, at which tyme hee sodeynly drayweth it into his mouth, and eateth them, and returneth agayne to the same practise immediatly, vntyll he haue eaten as many as him lysteth, or as long as he can reache any with his tongue. The flesshe of this beast, is filthy and vnsauery, but by reason of the extreme shyftes and necessitie that the Christian men were put to at theyr fyrst commyng into these partes, they were inforced to proue all thinges, and so fell to the eatyng of these beastes: but when they had found more delycate meates, they fel into hatred with this. These Antes haue thappearance of the place of theyr entraunce into the hyllocke, vnder the grounde, and this at so litle a hole, that it coulde hardely be founde, if certayne of them were not seene to passe in and out: but by this way the Beares could haue no suche power to hurte them as aboue at the sayde ryftes, as I haue sayde. There is an other strange beast, whiche by a name of contrary effecte, the Spanyardes call *Cagnuolo leggiero*, that is, the lyght dogge, whereas it is one of the slowest beastes in the worlde, and so heauy and dull in mouyng, that it can scarsely goe fyftie pases in a whole day: these beastes are in the firme lande, and are very strange to beholde for the disproportion that they haue to all other beastes, they are about two spannes in length when they are growne to theyr full byggenesse, but when they are very young, they are somewhat more grosse then long: they haue foure subtile feete, and in euery of them foure clawes lyke vnto byrdes, and ioyned togeather, yet are nother theyr clawes or their feete able to sustayne theyr bodyes from the grounde, by reason whereof, and by the heauynesse of theyr bodyes, they drawe theyr bellyes on the grounde: theyr neckes are hygh and streyght, and all equall lyke the pestle of a morter, which is altogeather equall euen vnto the toppe, without makyng any proportion or similitude of a head, or any difference except in the noddle, and in the toppes of theyr neckes: they haue very rounde faces muche lyke vnto Dwles, and haue a marke of theyr owne heare after the maner of a cyrcle, which maketh theyr faces seeme somewhat more long then large: they haue small eyes and rounde, and nostrylles lyke vnto Munkeys:

A strange beast which seemeth a kind of Cameleon.

they haue litle mouthes, and moue theyr neckes from one syde to an other, as though they were astonyshed: theyr chiefe desyre and delyghte is to cleaue and sticke fast vnto trees, or some other thyng whereby they may clyme aloft, and therefore for the most parte, these beastes are founde vppon trees, wherevnto cleauyng fast, they mount vp by litle and litle, staying them selues by theyr long clawes: the colour of theyr heare, is betweene russet and whyte, and of the proper colour of the heare of a Wesell: they haue no tayles, and theyr voyce is much differyng from other beastes, for they syng onely in the nyght, and that continually from tyme to tyme, syngyng euer syxe notes one hygher then an other, so fallyng with the same, that the first note is the hyghest, and the other in a baser tune, as if a man shoulde say *La, sol, fa, mi, re, vt,* so this beast sayeth, *Ha, ha, ha, ha, ha, ha*. And doubtlesse, it seemeth vnto mee, that as I haue sayde in the Chapter of the beast called *Bardati,* that those beastes myght bee the original and document to imbarbe horses: euen so, the fyrst inuention of musycke myght seeme by the hearyng of this beast, to haue the fyrst principles of that science, rather then by any other thyng in the worlde. But now to returne to the hystorie. I say that in a shorte space after this beast hath song, and hath pansed a whyle, shee returneth agayne to the selfe same song, and doeth this onely in the nyght, and not in the day: By reason whereof, and also because of her cuyll sight, I thynke her to bee a nyght beast, and the friende of darkenesse. Sometymes the Christian men fynde these beastes, and bryng them home to theyr houses, where also they creepe all about with theyr naturall slownesse, insomuch that nother for threatnyng or pryckyng they will moue any faster then theyr naturall and accustomed pase. And if they fynde any trees, they creepe thither immediatly, and mount to the toppe of the hyghest braunche thereof, where they remayne continually for the space of eyght, or tenne, or twentie dayes, without eatyng of any thyng, as farre as any man can iudge. And whereas I my selfe haue kept them in my house, I coulde neuer perceyue other but that they lyue onely of ayre, and of the same opinion are in maner all men of those regions, because they haue neuer seene them eate any thyng, but euer turne theyr heades and mouthes towarde

that

that parte where the wynde bloweth most, whereby may be consydered that they take most pleasure in the ayre. They byte not, nor yet can byte, hauyng very litle mouthes: they are not venomous or noyous any way, but altogeather brutyshe, and vtterly vnprofitable, and without commoditie yet knowen to men, sauyng onely to moue theyr myndes to contemplate the infynite power of God, who delyghteth in the varietie of creatures, wherby appeareth the power of his incomprehensible wysedome and maiestie, so farre to exceede the capacitie of mans vnderstanding.

Foules, and byrdes.

In these regions there are lykewyse founde certayne foules or byrdes, which the Indians call *Alcatraz*: these are muche bygger then Geese, the greatest parte of theyr feathers are of russet colour, and in some partes yelowe, theyr bylles or beakes are of two spannes in length, and very large neare to the head, and growyng small towarde the poynte, they haue great and large throtes, and are muche lyke to a foule which I sawe in Flaunders in Brusselles in your maiesties pallace, whiche the Flemynges call *Haina*: And I remember that when your maiestie dyned one day in your great hall, there was brought to your maiesties presence a Cauderne of water with certayne fyshes alyue, whiche the sayde foule dyd eate vp whole, and I thynke verily that that foule was a foule of the sea, because shee had feete lyke foules of the water, as haue also these *Alcatrazi*, which are lykewyse foules of the sea, and of suche greatnesse, that I haue seene a whole coate of a man put into the throates of one of them in *Panama*, in the yeere. 1521. And forasmuche as in that coast of *Panama*, there passeth and fleeth a great multitude of these *Alcatrazi*, beyng a thyng very notable, I wyll declare the maner heereof, as not onely I, but also dyuers other nowe present in your maiesties courte haue often tymes seene. Your maiestie shall therefore vnderstande, that in this place (as I haue sayde before) the sea of *Sur* ryseth and falleth two leagues and more from syxe houres to syxe houres: so that when it increaseth, the water of the sea arryueth so neare to the houses of *Panama*, as doeth our sea (called *Mare Mediteraneum*) in Barzalona, or in Naples: and when the sayd increasing of the sea commeth, there commeth also therewith suche a multitude of the smal fishes called Sardines, that it is so marueilous a thing to

Alcatraz.

Panama.

beholde, that no man would beleeue it that hath not seene it. Insomuch that the *Cacique* (that is) the kyng of that lande, at such tyme as I dwelt there, was bounde dayly, as he was commaunded by your maiesties gouernour, to bryng ordinarily three canoas or barkes full of the sayde Sardynes, and to vnlade the same in the market place, whiche were afterwarde by the ruler of the citie diuided among the Christian men, without any coste or charge to any of them: Insomuche that if the people had been a much greater multitude then they were, and as many as are at this present in *Toledo*, or more, and had none other thyng to lyue by, they myght haue been sufficiently susteyned by these Sardynes, beside the ouerplus which should haue remayned. But to returne to the foules, whereof we haue spoken. As the sea commeth, and the Sardynes with the same, euen so lykewyse come the sayde *Alcatrazzi* therewith, and flee continually ouer it, in such a multytude, that they appeare to couer the vpper parte or flooze of the water, and thus continue in mountyng and fallyng from the ayze to the water, and from the water to the ayze, duryng all the tyme of their fishing: and assoone as they haue taken any of these Sardines, they flee aboue the waters, and eate them incontinently, and sodeynly returne agayne to the water for more, continuing thus course by course without ceassyng: in lyke maner when the sea falleth, they folowe theyr fyshyng as I haue sayde. There goeth also in the company of these foules, an other kynde of foules, called *Coda inforcata*, (that is) the forked tayle, whereof I haue made mention before, & assoone as the *Alcatraz* mounteth from the water with her pray of the Sardynes, sodeynly this *Coda inforcata* gyueth her so many strokes, and so persecuteth her, that shee causeth her to let fall the Sardynes which shee hath in her mouth: the which assoone as they are falne, and before they yet touche the water, the *Coda inforcata* catcheth them euen in the fall, in suche sorte, that it is a great pleasure to beholde the combat betweene them all the day long. The number of these *Alcatrazzi* is suche, that the Christian men are accustomed to sende to certayne Ilandes and rockes which are neare about *Panama*, with theyr boates or barkes to take these *Alcatrazzi*, whyle they are yet young, and cannot flee, and kyll as many of them with staues as they will, vntyll they

they haue therewith laden theyr Barkes or Canoas: these young ones are so fat and well fedde, that they can not bee eaten, and are taken for none other intent, but onely to make grease for candles to burne in the nyght, for the whiche purpose it serueth very well, and gyueth a cleare lyght, and burneth easily. After this maner, and for this purpose, innumerable of them are kyld: & yet it seemeth that the number of them that fyshe for Sardynes doe dayly increase. There are other foules called *Passere sempie*, that is, simple sparowes: these are somewhat lesse then Seamewes, and haue theyr feete lyke vnto great Malardes, and stande in the water sometymes, and when the shyppes sayle fyftie or a hundred leagues about the Ilandes, these foules beholdyng the shyppes commyng towarde them, breake theyr flyght, and fall downe vpon the sayle yardes, masses, and cables thereof, and are so simple and folyshe, that they tary vntyll they may easily bee taken with mens handes, and were therfore called of the maryners simple sparowes: they are blacke, and vppon theyr blacke, haue theyr head and shoulders of feathers of a darke russet colour: they are not good to bee eaten, although the maryners haue sometymes been inforced to eate them. There is an other kynde of byrdes in the firme land, which the Christians call *Picuti*, because they haue very great beakes, in respecte of the litlenesse of theyr bodyes, for theyr beakes are very heauy, and waye more then theyr whole bodyes beside: these byrdes are no bygger then Quayles, but haue a muche greater bushement of feathers, insomuche that theyr feathers are more then theyr bodyes: theyr feathers are very fayre, and of many variable coloures, theyr beakes are a quarter of a yarde in length or more, and bendyng downe toward the earth, and three fyngers brode neare vnto the head: theyr tongues are very quylles, wherewith they make a great hyssyng: they make holes in trees with theyr beakes, in the which they make their neastes. And surely these byrdes are marueylous to beholde, for the great dyfference whiche they haue from all other byrdes that I haue seene, as well for theyr tongues (which are quylles as I haue sayd) as also for the strangenesse of their sight, & disproportion of their great beakes, in respect of the rest of their bodies. There are no byrdes found that prouide better for the safegard of

Passere sempie.

Picuti.

theyr young in the tyme of theyr breedyng, to be without daunger of wylde cattes, that they enter not into theyr neastes to destroy their egges or young, and this aswell by the strange maner of buyldyng their nestes, as also by theyr owne defence: and therfore when they perceyue that the cattes approche towarde them, they enter into theyr nestes, and holdyng theyr beakes towarde the entraunce of the same, stande at theyr defence, and so vexe the cattes, that they cause them to leaue their enterpryse. There are also other byrdes or sparowes, which the Christians by contrary effecte call *Matti*, that is fooles: Whereas neuertheless there is no byrde that sheweth more wyt and crafte in defendyng her young from peryl. These byrdes are litle, & in maner blacke, and somewhat bygger then our Thrushes, they haue certayne whyte feathers in theyr neckes, and the lyke sagasitie or sharpenesse of sense as haue the byrdes or Pyes called *Gazzuole*, they sildometymes lyght vppon the earth: they make theyr nestes in trees separated from other, because the wylde cattes (called *Mammoni*) are accustomed to leape from tree to tree, not discendyng to the grounde for feare of other beastes, except when they are enforced by thirst to come downe to drinke, at such times as they are sure not to bee molested, and for this cause doe not these byrdes make theyr nestes but in trees farre diuided from other, they make them of a cubite in length, or more, after the maner of bagges or litle sackes, large at the bottome, and growyng narower and narower towarde the mouth, whereby they are fastened, hauyng the hole whereat they enter into the sacke, of suche byggenesse as may onely suffyce to receyue them. And to the ende that the cattes may not deuour theyr young, if they chaunce to mount vppon the trees where they haue theyr nestes, they vse an other craft, which is, to make theyr nestes in thicke braunches of trees, and to defende the same with sharpe and strong thornes, implicate and set in suche order, that no man is able to make the lyke, so that the cattes can by no meanes put theyr legges into the hole of the neaste to take out the young byrdes, aswell for the sharpenesse of the thornes, as also for the deapth of the nestes, in the bottome wherof, the young birds rest without daunger of their enimie: for some of theyr nestes beyng

Folyshe sparowes.

three

three or foure spannes in length, the legge of the catte can not reache to the bottome thereof. They vse also an other pollicie, which is, to make many of theyr neastes in one tree, the which they doe for one of these two causes: that is, that eyther of theyr owne naturall disposition they are accustomed to goe in great multitudes, and reioyce in the company of theyr owne generation, as doe the byrdes whiche wee call Stares, or els to the intent that if it should so chaunce that the cattes shoulde clyme the trees where they make theyr neastes, they myght bee a greater company to resyst and molest the cattes, at whose approch they make a fearefull and terrible crye, whereby the cattes are put to flight. Furthermore, in the fyrme lande, and in the Ilandes, there are certayne byrdes called *Piche*, or *Gazzuole*, somewhat lyke vnto those which we call Woodwalles, or Woodpeckes, beyng lesse then ours of Spayne: these are altogeather blacke, and goe hoppyng and leappng, theyr beakes are also blacke, and of the same fashion as are the Popingiays beakes, they haue long tayles, and are somewhat bygger then Stares. There are other byrdes called *Pintadelli*, which are lyke vnto certayne greene byrdes, which the Italyans call *Fringuelli*, and are of seuen colours: these byrdes for feare of the cattes, are euer wont to make theyr neastes ouer the bankes of ryuers, or the sea, where the braunches of trees so reache ouer the water that with a litle weyght they may bowe downe to the water: theyr neastes are made so neare the toppes of the braunches, that when the cattes come thereon, the braunches bende towarde the water, and the cattes turne backe agayne for feare of fallyng: For although no beast in the worlde bee more malicious then this, yet whereas the most parte of beastes are naturally inclyned to swymme, this catte hath no maner of aptenesse therevnto, and is therefore soone drowned or strangeled in the water, and by a priuie sense of nature feareth the danger which he can not escape. These byrdes make their nestes in such sort, that although they be wette and filled with water, yet doe they so sodeynly ryse vp agayne, that the young byrdes are not thereby hurt or drowned. There are also many Nyghtyngales, and other byrdes which syng marueylously with great melodie and dyfference in

Cazzuole.

Pintadelli.

syngyng: these byrdes are of marueylous dyuers coloures the one from the other, some are altogeather yelow, and some other of so excellent, delectable, and hygh a colour, as it were a Rubye, other are also of dyuers and variable coloures, some of fewe coloures, and other some all of one colour, beyng all so fayre and beautifull, that in bryghtnesse and shynyng they excell all that are seene in Spayne, or Italy, or other prouinces of Europe: Many of these are taken with nettes, lyme twygges, and sprynges of dyuers sortes. Dyuers other sortes of great foules lyke vnto Eagles, and suche other as lyue of pray, are founde in the firme lande, of suche diuersitie, that it is in maner impossible to describe them all particularly: and forasmuche as I haue more largely intreated hereof in my generall hystorie of the Indies, I thynke it not requysite heere to make anye further mention of the same.

Great foules.

Of trees, fruites, and plantes.



Cocus.

Here is both in the firme lande and the Ilands, a certayne tree called *Cocus*, beyng a kynde of Date trees, & hauyng their leaues of the selfe same greatnesse as haue the date trees which beare dates, but dyffer much in their growing, for the leaues of this *Cocus* growe out of the trunkes of the tree, as doe the fingers out of the hand, wreathing them selues one within an other, & so spreading abrode: these trees are hygh, & are founde in great plentie in the coast of the sea of *Sur*, in the prouince of *Cacique Chiman*. These date trees bryng foorth a fruit after this sorte: being altogeather vnite as it groweth on the tree, it is of greater circumference then the head of a man, & from the superficial part to ỹ middest, which is the fruit, it is inuolued & couered with many webs much lyke vnto those hirds of tow which they vse in *Andalusia*. Of this towe or web, the East Indians make a certayne kynd of cloth, of three or foure sortes, and cordes for the sayles of shyppes: but in these Indies of your maiestie, they passe not for these cordes, or this cloth that may be made of the fruite of *Cocus*, by reason of the great plentie that they haue of the bombage

or

or cotton of the gossampine trees. The fruite which is in the myddest of the sayde towe, is (as I haue sayde) as bygge as a mans fyst, and sometymes twyse as bygge, and more: It is in fourme lyke vnto a walnutte, or some other rounde thyng, somewhat more long then large, and very harde, the rynde or barke hereof, is as thycke as the cyrcle of letters of a ryall of plate, and within, there cleaueth fast to the rynde of the nutte a carnositie or substaunce of coornel, of the thyckenesse of halfe a fynger, or of the least fynger of the hande, and is very whyte, lyke vnto a fayre Almonde, and of better taste and more pleasaunt. When this fruite is chewed, there remayne certayne crummes, as do the lyke of Almondes: Yet if it be swalowed downe, it is not vnpleasaunt. For although that after the iuice or moysture be gone downe the throte before the saide crummes be swalowed, the rest whiche is eaten, seeme somwhat sharpe or sower, yet doth it not so greatly offende ỹ taste, as to be cast away. Whyle this *Cocus* is yet freshe and newly taken from the tree, they vse not to eate of the said carnositie & fruite, but fyrst beating it very muche, and then straynyng it, they drawe a mylke thereof, much better and sweeter then is the mylke of beastes, and of much substaunce, the whiche the Christian men of those regions put in the tortes or cakes which they make of the graine of *Maizium* wherof they make theyr bread, or in other bread as we put bread in porrage: so that by reason of the sayde mylke of *Cocus*, the tortes are more excellent to be eaten without offence to the stomake: they are so pleasaunt to the taste, and leaue it aswell satisfyed as though it had been delyted with many delycate dyshes. But to proceede further, your maiestie shal vnderstande, that in the place of the stone or coornell, there is in the myddest of the sayde carnositie a voyde place, which neuerthelesse is full of a most cleare and excellent water, in suche quantitie as may fyll a great egge shell, or more, or lesse, accordyng to the byggenesse of the *Cacus*, the whiche water suerly, is the most substantiall, excellent, and precious to be dronke, that may be founde in the worlde: insomuch that in the moment when it passeth the palate of the mouth, and begynneth to go downe the throte, it seemeth that from the sole of the foote, to the crowne of the head, there is no parte of the bodye but that feeleth great comfort

I haue seene one of these fruites opened, the whiche when it was whole, if it were shaken the water was harde shogge therein as it were in a bottle, but in tyme it consumed and was partly congeled in to a saste substaunce.

comforte thereby : as it is doutleſſe one of the moſt excellent thynges that may be taſted vppon the earth, and ſuche as I am not able by wrytyng or tongue to expreſſe. And to proceede yet further, I ſay that when the meate of this fruite is taken from the veſſell thereof, the veſſell remayneth as fayre and neate as though it were pullyſhed, and is without of colour inclynyng towarde blacke, and ſhyneth or glyſtereth very fayre, and is within of no leſſe dilicateneſſe. Suche as haue accuſtomed to drynke in theſe veſſelles, and haue been troubled with the diſeaſe called the frettyng of the guttes, ſay that they haue by experience founde it a marueylous remedie agaynſt that diſeaſe, and that it breaketh the ſtone, and prouoketh urine. This fruite was called *Cocus*, for this cauſe, that when it is taken from the place where it cleaueth faſt to the tree, there are ſeene two holes, and aboue them two other natural holes, whiche altogeather do repreſent the geſture and figure of the cattes called *Mammoni*, that is, Munkeys, when they crye, which crye the Indians call *Coca*, but in very deede, this tree is a kinde of Date trees, and hath the ſame effecte to heale frettyng of the guttes, that Plinie deſcribeth all kynds of Date trees to haue. There are furthermore in theſirme lande, trees of ſuche byggeneſſe that I dare not ſpeake therof, but in place where I haue ſo many wytneſſes whiche haue ſeene the ſame as well as I. I ſaye therefore, that a league from *Dariena* or the citie of *Santta Maria Antiqua*, there paſſeth a ryuer very large and deepe, which is called *Cuti*, ouer the which the Indians had layde a great tree, ſo trauerſing the ſame, that it was in the ſteade of a bridge, the whiche I my ſelfe with dyuers other that are at this preſent in your maieſties court, haue oftentymes paſſed ouer. And foraſmuche as the ſaid tree had line long there, and by ỹ great weight therof was ſo ſhronke downewarde, and partly couered with water, that none coulde paſſe ouer it, but were wette to the knee, I beyng then in the yeere. 1522. the official or Iuſtice in that citie at your maieſties appoyntment, cauſed an other great tree to be layde in that place, whiche in lyke maner trauerſed the ryuer, and reached more then fyftie foote ouer the further ſyde : This tree was exceeding great, and reſted aboue the water more then two cubytes, in the fall, it caſt downe all ſuch other trees as

Great trees.

were

were within the reache thereof, and discouered certayne bynes, whiche were so laden with blacke grapes of pleasaunt taste, that they satysfied moze then fyftye persons whiche ate theyr fyl thereof. This tree in the thyckest part therof, was moze then syxteene spannes thycke, and was neuertheleſſe but litle in respect of many other trees whiche are founde in this prouince. For the Indians of the coaste and prouince of *Cartagenia*, make barkes or boates thereof (which they call *Canoas*,) of suche bygge nesse, beyng all one whole tree, that some conteyne a hundred men, some a hundred and thirtie, and some moze, hauyng neuertheleſſe such voyde space within the same, that there is left sufficient roome to passe to and fro throughout all the *Canoas*. Some of these are so large, beſyde the length, that they conteyne moze then ten or twelue spannes in breadth, and sayle with two sayles, as with the maister sayle and the tryncket, which they make of very good cotton. The greatest trees that I haue seene in these partes, or in any other regions, was in the prouince of *Guaturo*, the kyng wherof rebellyng from the obedience of your maiestie, was pursued by me, and taken prisoner: at whiche tyme I with my companye, passed ouer a very hygh mountayne, full of great trees, in the top whereof, we founde one tree, whiche had thyee rootes, or rather diuisions of the roote aboue the earth, in fourme of a tryangle, or treuet, so that betweene euery foote of this triangle or three feete, there was a space of twentie foote betweene euery foote, and this of such heyght aboue the earth, that a laden Cart of those wherewith they are accustomed to bryng home corne in the tyme of harnest in the kyngdome of *Toledo* in Spayne, myght easely haue passed through euery of those partitions or wyndowes which were betweene the three feete of the sayd tree. From the earth vpwarde to the trunke of the tree, the open places of the diuisions betweene these three feete, were of suche heyght from the ground, that a footeman with a Iauelin was not able to reache the place where the sayde feete ioyned togeather in the trunke or bodye of the tree, whiche grewe of great heyght in one peece, and one whole bodie, or euer it spread in braunches, whiche it did not before it exceeded in heyght the Towre of Sainct Romane in the citie of *Toledo*: from whiche heyght and vpward, it spread very great and strong braunches.

a marueplous tree.

Among

Among certayne Spaniardes whiche clymed this tree, I my selfe was one, and when I was ascended to the place where it begunne to spreade the braunches, it was a marueilous thyng to beholde a great countrey of suche trees towarde the prouince of Abrayme. This tree was easy to clyme, by reason of certayne *Besuchi*, (whereof I haue spoken before) which grew wreathed about the tree, in suche sort that they seemed to make a scalyng Ladder. Euery of the forsayd three feete whiche bore the bodie of the tree, was twentie spannes in thickenesse, and where they ioyned all togeather aboute the Trunke or bodie of the tree, the principall Trunke was more then fourtie and fyue spannes in circuite. I named the mountayne where these trees growe, the mountayne of three footed trees. And this whiche I haue now declared, was seene of all the companie that was there with me when (as I haue sayde before) I tooke kyng *Guaturo* prysoner in the yeere. 1522. Many thynges more myght heere be spoken as touching this matter, as also howe there are many other excellent trees founde of diuers sortes and dyfference, as sweete Cedar trees, blacke Date trees, and many other, of the whiche some are so heauye that they cannot floote aboue the water, but syncke immediatly to the bottome, and other agayne as lyght as a Corke. As touchyng all which thynges I haue written more largely in my generall historie of the Indies. And forasmuche as at this present I haue entred to entreat of trees, before I passe any further to other thynges, I wyll declare the maner howe the Indians kindle fyre, only with wood and without fire, the maner wherof is this. They take a peece of wood, of two spannes in length, as bygge as the least fynger of a mans hand, or as an arrowe well pullyshed, and of a strong kynde of wood which they keepe only for this purpose: and where they entend to kyndle any fire, they take two other peeces of wood, of the dryest and lyghtest that they can fynde, and bynde them fast togeather one with an other, as close as two fyngers ioyned: in the myddest or betweene these, they put the poynt of the fyrst litle staffe made of harde and strong wooddе, whiche they hold in theyr handes by the toppe thereof, and turne or rubbe it rounde about contynually in one place betweene the two peeces of wooddе which lye bounde togeather vppon the earth,

Kyndlyng of fyre without fyre.

which

whiche by that vncessant rubbyng and chafyng, are in shorte space kyndeled, and take fyre. I haue also thought good heare to speake somewhat of suche thynges as come to my remembraunce of certayne trees whiche are founde in this lande, and sometyme also the lyke haue been seene in Spayne. These are certayne putrifyed trunkes, whiche haue lyne so long rottyng on the earth, that they are very whyte, and shyne in the nyght lyke burnyng fyrebrandes, and when the Spanyardes fynde any of this woodde, and intende priuily in the nyght to make warre and inuade any prouince, when case so requyreth that it shalbe necessary to goe in the nyght, in such places where they knowe not the way, the formost Christian man whiche guydeth the way, associate with an Indian to directe hym therein, taketh a litle starre of the sayde woodde, whiche he putteth in his cappe, hangyng behynde on his shoulders, by the lyght whereof he that foloweth next to hym, directeth his iourney, who also in lyke maner beareth an other starre behynde hym, by the shynyng whereof the thyrde foloweth the same way, and in lyke maner do al the rest, so that by this meanes none are losse or straggle out of the way. And forasmuch as this lyght is not seene very farre, it is the better policie for the Christians, because they are not therby disclosed before they inuade theyr enimies. Furthermore as touchyng the natures of trees, one particuler thyng seemeth woorthy to be noted, whereof Plinie maketh mention in his naturall hystorye, where he sayth that there are certayne trees whiche contynue euer greene, and neuer lose theyr leaues, as the Bay tree, the Cedar, the Orange tree, & the Oliue tree, with such other, of the whiche in altogeather he nameth not past fyue or syxe. To this purpose, I say, that in the Ilandes of these Indies, and also in the tyme lande, it is a thyng of muche difficultie to fynde two trees that lose or cast theyr leaues at any tyme: For although I haue diligently searched to knowe the trueth hereof, yet haue I not seene any that lose theyr leaues, eyther of them whiche we haue brought out of Spayne into these regions, as Orange trees, Limons, Cedars, Palmes, or Date trees, and Pomegranate trees, or of any other in these regions, except onely *Cassia*, whiche loseth his leaues, and hath a greater

Putrified woodde shynyng in the nyght.

Plinie.

Trees whiche continue euer greene.

Cassia.

thyng

thyng appropriate to it selfe onely: whiche is, that whereas all other trees and plantes of India spreade theyr rootes no deeper in the earth then the deapth of a mans heyght, or somewhat more, not descendyng any further into the grounde, by reason of the great heate whiche is founde beneath that deapth, yet dooth *Cassia* pearse further into the ground, vntyll it fynd water: whiche by the Phylosophers opinion shoulde be the cause of a thynne and watery radicall moysture to suche thynges as dyawe theyr nouryshement thereof, as fat and vnctuous groundes with temperate heate, yelde a fast and firme moysture to suche thynges as growe in them, whiche is the cause that suche trees lose not theyr leaues, as the sayde thynne and watery the moysture is cause of the contrarie, as appeareth by the sayde effecte whiche is seene onely in *Cassia*, and none other tree or plant in all these parties.

A secrete thyng.

Radycall moysture.

Of Reedes or Canes.



Haue not thought it conuenient in the chapiture before, to speake of that wherof I intend nowe to intreate, of reedes or canes, to thintent that I woulde not myngle them with plantes or trees, being thinges of them selues woorthy to be particularly obserued. So it is therfore, that in the firme land there are many sorts of reedes, so that in many places they make their houses thereof, coueryng them with the toppes of the same, and makyng theyr walles of them in lyke maner, as I haue sayde before: and among these kyndes of reedes, there is one so great, that the canes therof are as bigge as a mans legge in ỹ knee, and three spanns in length from ioynt to ioynt, or more, insomuch that euery of them is of capacitie to contayne a litle bucket of water. In this kynde, there are founde some greater, and some lesse, of the whiche some they vse to make quyuers for arrowes. There is founde an other kynde, whiche suerly is marueylous, beyng litle bygger then a Iauelyn, the canes whereof are longer then two spannes: these reedes growe one farre from an other, as some tymes twentie or thirtie pases, and sometymes also two or three leagues: they growe in maner in all prouynces in the

Indies,

Indies, and growe neere to very hyghe trees, whereunto they leane, and creepe vp to the toppes of theyr braunches, whiche they imbrase, and discende agayne downe to the earth. Theyr canes are full of most cleare water, without any maner of tast or sauour, eyther of the canes, or of any other thyng, and suche as yf it were taken out of the freshest spryng in the worlde, nor yet is it knowen that euer it hurt any that dronke therof. For it hath oftentymes so chaunced, that as the Christian men haue trauayled in these regions in desolate wayes, where for lacke of water they haue been in great daunger to die for thirst, they haue escaped that peryl by reason that they founde the sayd reedes, of the water of whose canes they haue dronke a great quantitie, without any hurt thereof ensuing. Therfore when they fynde these in any place, they make water vessels of the canes thereof, and carry as many of them full of water as may suffice for one dayes iorney: and sometime they cary so many, that they take for euery man two or three quartes of water, which may serue them for many dayes, because it doth not corrupt, but remayneth styll freshe and good.

There are also certayne plantes, whiche the Christians call *Platani*. These are as hygh as trees, and become as byg in the trunke as the knee of a man, or more. From the foote to the toppe, they beare certayne long and large leaues, beyng more then three spannes in largenesse, & about ten or twelue in length: the whiche when they are broken of the wynde, the stalke remaineth whole in the myddest. In the myddest of this plant, in the highest part therof, there groweth a cluster with fourtie or fyftie platans about it, euery of them beyng a spanne and a halfe in length, and as byg as a mans arme in the small, or more, or lesse, accordyng to the goodnesse of the soyle where they growe: they haue a rynde not very thycke, and easye to be broken, beyng within altogeather ful of a substaunce lyke vnto the mary of the bone of an Oxe, as it appeareth when ỹ rinde or barke is taken from the same. This cluster ought to be taken from the plant, when any one of the platans begin to appeare yelowe, at which tyme they take it, and hang it in theyr houses, where all the cluster waxeth rype, with all his platans. This cluster is a very good fruite, and when it is opened, and the rynde taken *Platani.*

of,

Fygges. of, there are founde within it many good dyne Fygges, whiche beyng rosted, or stewed in an Duen, in a close pot, or some suche other thyng, are of pleasaunt tast, much lyke to the consetue of Hony: they putrifie not on the sea so soone as some other fruites do, but contynue fyfteene dayes and more, yf they be geathered somewhat greene: they seeme more delicate on the sea then on the land, not for that they any thing encrease in goodnesse on the sea, but because that whereas on the sea other thynges are lacking, whereof is plentie on the land, those meates seeme of best tast, whiche satisfie present necessitie. This trunke or lyrye which bryngeth foorth the sayd cluster, is a whole yeere in growing and brynging foorth fruite, in which tyme it hath put foorth rounde about it ten or twelue sprygges, as bygge as the fyrst or principall, and multiplieth no lesse then the principall in bringing foorth of clusters, with fruites lykewyse at theyr tyme, and also in bryngyng foorth other and many sprygges, as is sayde before. From the whiche sprygges or trunkes, as soone as the cluster of the fruite is taken away, the plant beginneth to dye and wyther, whiche then they take out of the grounde, because it doth none other then occupie it in vayne, and without profyte. They are so many, and do so marueylously encrease and multiplie, that it is a thyng in maner encredible. They are exceeding moyst, insomuch that when they are plucked vp from the place where they grow, there issueth foorth a great quantitie of water, aswel out of the plant, as out of the place where it grewe, in suche sort, that al the moysture of the earth farre about, myght seeme to be geathered togeather about the truncke or blocke of the sayd plant, with the fruites whereof, the Antes are so farre in loue, that they are seene in great multitudes in the braunches of the plantes: so that for the multitude thereof, it sometyme so chaunceth, that men are enforced to take away the plantes from theyr possession: these fruites are founde at al tymes of the yeere. There is also an other kinde of wilde plants that groweth in the feeldes, whiche I haue not seene but in the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, although they be founde in other Ilandes of the Indies: these they call *Tunas*. They growe of a Thistle full of thornes, and bryng foorth a fruite muche lyke vnto great Figges, whiche haue a crowne lyke Medlers, and are within

Tunas.

within of a hygh colour, with graynes and the ryhde lyke vnto a fygge: they are of good taste, and grow abundantly in the fieldes in many places: They worke a strange effecte in suche as eate them, for if a man eate two, or three, or more, they cause his vrine to bee of the very colour of blood, which thyng chaunced once to my selfe. For on a tyme as I made water, and sawe the colour of my vrine, I entred into a great suspition of my lyfe, beyng so astonyshed for feare, that I thought the same had chaunced to mee vpon some other cause, insomuche that surely my imagination myght haue done mee hurte, but that they which were with mee dyd comforte mee immediatly, declaryng the cause thereof, as they knew by experience, beyng auncient inhabitours in those regions. There groweth also an other plant, which the people of the countrey call *Bihaos*: this putteth foorth certayne streight branches, and very brode leaues, which the Indians vse for dyuers purposes: For in some places they couer theyr houses with the leaues thereof, couched and layde after the maner of thetche, wherevnto it serueth very well: Sometymes also when it rayneth, they cast these ouer theyr heades, to defende them from the water. They make also certayne chestes, which they call *Hauas*, weaued after a strange sorte, and intermyxt with the leaues of this *Bihaos*. These chestes are wrought in such sorte, that although it rayne vpon them, or they chaunce to fall into the water, yet are not suche thinges wet as are within them: they are made of the branches of the sayde *Bihaos*, with the leaues weaued togeather therewith: In these they keepe salte, and other subtile thinges. They vse them also for an other purpose, which is this: that fyndyng them in the fieldes at such tyme as they haue scarsenesse of victayles, they dyg vp the rootes of these plantes while they are yet young, or eate the plant it selfe, in that parte where it is most tender, which is from a foote vnder the grounde, where it is as tender and whyte as a reede or bulrushe. And forasmuche as wee are nowe come to the ende of this narration, it commeth to my remembraunce to make mention of an other thyng, which is not farre from my purpose: and this is, howe the Indians doe stayne or dye cloath of bombage cotton, or any other thyng whiche they intende to dye, of dyuers colours, as blacke, tawny, greene, blewe, yelow, and redde, which they doe with the barkes,

Bihaos.

Hauas.

Dying of cotton.

or ryndes, and leaues of certayne trees, which they know by experience to be good for this practise: and by this arte they make colours in suche perfection and excellencie, that no better can bee deuysed. But this seemeth a strange thyng, that they doe all this in one selfe same vessell: So that when they haue caused the sayde ryndes and leaues to boyle togeather, they make in the same vessell without any chaunge (as I haue sayde) as many colours as them lysteth: Whiche thing I suppose to come to passe, by the disposition of the colour which they haue fyrst gyuen to the thyng that they intende to dye or colour, whether it bee threed, webbe, or cloth, or any thing that they intende to colour.

A strange thyng.

Of venomous Apples, wherewith they poyson theyr arrowes.



The Apples wherewith the Indian Canballes inuenome theyr arrowes, growe on certaine trees couered with many branches and leaues, being very greene, and growing thicke. They are laden with abundance of these euyll fruites, and haue their leaues lyke the leaues of a peare tree, but that they are lesse and rounder: the fruit is much lyke the muscadel peares of the Ilande of Sicilie or Naples in fourme and bygnesse, and are in some partes steyned with redde spottes, and of very sweet sauour: these trees for the most parte, growe euer by the sea coastes, and neere vnto the water, and are so fayre and of pleasaunt sauour, that there is no man that seeth them, but will desyre to eate thereof, insomuche that if it may bee spoken of any fruite yet growyng on the earth, I woulde say that this was the vnhappy fruite whereof our fyrst parentes Adam and Eue tasted, whereby they both lost theyr felicitie, and procured death to them and theyr posteritie. Of these fruites, and of the great Antes whose byting causeth swellyng, (whereof I haue spoken elsewhere) and of the Eutes, or Lysartes, and vypers, and such other venomous thinges, the Canibals which are the cheefe archers

Note.

Caniballes archers.

archers among the Indians, are accustomed to poyson theyr arrowes, wherewith they kyll all that they wounde: These venomes they mingle togeather, and make thereof a blacke masse or composition, whiche appeareth lyke vnto very blacke pytch. Of this poyson I caused a great quantitie to be burnt, in *Sancta Maria Antiqua*, in a place two leagues and more within the lande, with a great multitude of theyr invenomed arrowes and other munition, with also the house wherein they were reserued: This was in the yeere. 1514. at suche tyme as the army arryued there with captayne *Pedrarias da villa*, at the commaundement of the Catholyke kyng *Don Ferdinando*. But to returne to the hystory. These Apples (as I haue sayde) growe neare vnto the sea. And whereas the Christians whiche serue your maiestie in these parties, suppose that there is no remedy so profytable for such as are wounded with these arrowes, as is the water of the sea, if the wound be much washed therwith, by which meanes some haue escaped, although but fewe: yet to say the trueth, albeit the water of the sea haue a certaine caustike quality against poyson, it is not a sufficient remedy in this case, nor yet to this day haue the Christians perceyued that of fyftie that haue been wounded, three haue recouered. But that your maiestie may the better consider the force of the venome of these trees, you shal further vnderstand, that if a man doe but repose him selfe to sleepe a litle whyle vnder the shadow of the same, he hath his head & eyes so swolne when he ryseth, that the eye lyddes are ioyned with the cheekes, and if it chaunce one droppe or more of the deawe of the sayde tree to fall into the eye, it vtterly destroyeth the syght. The pestilent nature of this tree is suche, that it can not be declared in fewe wordes. Of these, there groweth great plentie in the gulfe of *Vraba*, towarde the North coast, on the West and East syde. The wood of these trees when it burneth, maketh so great a stynke, that no man is able to abyde it, by reason it causeth so great a payne in the head.

Wherwith they inuenome theyr arrowes.

Petrus Arias.

The water of the sea.

The gulfe of Vraba.

Among other trees whiche are in these Indies, aswell in the Ilandes, as in the firme lande, there is an other kynde whiche they call *Xagua*, whereof there is great plentie: they are very hygh, and streyght, and fayre to beholde. Of these they vse to make pykes, and Iauelyns of dyuers lengthes and

Xagua.

bygneſſe: they are of a fayre colour, betweene ruſſet and whyte: this tree byngeth fooꝛth a great fruit as bygge as Papauer or Poppie, and muche lyke therebnto, it is bery good to bee eaten when it is rype. Out of this they get a bery cleare water, where-with they waſhe their legges, and ſometymes all theyr bodyes, when they feele theyr fleſhe weery, faynt, oꝛ looſe: the which water, beſyde that it hath a byndyng qualitie, it hath alſo this pꝛo-pertie, that whatſoeuer it toucheth, it ſteyneth it blacke by litle and litle, bntyll it bee as blacke as gete, which colour can not bee taken away in leſſe ſpace then tenne oꝛ twelue dayes: And if the nayle bee but touched therewith, it is ſo ſteyned that it can by no meanes bee taken away, bntyll it eyther fall of, oꝛ growe out, and bee clypped away by litle & litle, as I my ſelfe haue oftentymes ſeene by experience.

Hobi.
Some thinke theſe to be mi-robalanes.

There is an other kynde of trees which they call *Hobi*: theſe are bery great and fayꝛe, and cauſe holeſome ayꝛe where they growe, and a pleaſaunt ſhadowe, and are founde in great aboun-daunce: theyr fruit is bery good, and of good taſt and ſauour, and much lyke bnto certayne damſons oꝛ pꝛunes beyng litle and ye-lowe, but theyr ſtone is bery great, by reaſon whereof they haue but litle meate: theyr barke oꝛ rynde boyled in water, maketh a holeſome bathe foꝛ the legges, becauſe it byndeth and ſtayeth the looſeneſſe of the fleſhe, ſo ſenſibly that it is a marueyle to conſider. It is ſurely a holeſome and excellent bathe agaynſt ſuche faynt-neſſe, and is the beſt tree that may be founde in thoſe parties to ſleepe bnder: Foꝛ it cauſeth no heauineſſe of the head, as doe dy-uers other trees, which thyng I ſpeake, becauſe the Chꝛiſtians are muche accuſtomed in thoſe regions to lye in the fieldes. It is therefoꝛe a common pꝛactiſe among them, that whereſoeuer they fynde theſe trees, there they ſpꝛeade theyr mattreſſes and beddes wherein they ſleepe.

Date trees.

There are alſo a kynde of hygh Date trees, and full of thoꝛnes: the woodde of theſe is moſt excellent, beyng be-ry blacke, and ſhynyng, and ſo heauye that no parte thereof can ſwymme aboue the water, but ſynketh immediatly to the bottome. Of this woodde they make theyr arrowes and dar-tes, alſo Iauelyns, ſpeares, and pykes: and I ſay pykes, becauſe that in the coaſtes of the ſea of *Sur*, beyonde *Eſquegua*

Thinhabi-tauntes of the ſea of Sur.

and

and *Vracha*, the Indians vse great and long pykes, made of the wood of these Date trees. Of the same lykewyse they make clubbes, and swoordes, and dyuers other weapons: Also vesselles and housholde stuffe of dyuers sortes, very fayre and commodious. Furthermore of this wood the Christians vse to make dyuers musicall instrumentes, as Claricymballes, Lutes, Gitterns, and suche other, the which besyde theyr fayre shynyng colour lyke vnto gete, are also of a good sounde, and very durable, by reason of the hardnesse of the wood.

After that I haue sayde thus much of trees and plants, I haue thought good also to speake somewhat of hearbes. You shal therfore vnderstand, that in these Indies there is an hearbe much like vnto a yelow Lilie, about whose leaues there growe and creepe certayne cordes or lases, as the lyke is partly seene in the hearbe which we call lased sauery, but these of the Indies are much bigger, and longer, and so strong that they tye theyr hangyng beds thereby, whiche they call *Hamacas*, where of we haue spoken elsewhere: these cordes they call *Cabuia*, and *Henequen*, whiche are all one thyng, sauyng that *Henequen* is lesse and of a fyner substance, as it were line, and the other is grosser, lyke the weeke or twyst of hempe, and is imperfect in comparison to the other: they are of colour betweene whyte and yelow, lyke vnto abarne, and some also whyte. With *Henequen*, whiche is the most subtyle and fyne threede, the Indians sawe in sunder fetters, cheynes, or barres of Iron, in this maner: They moue the threed of *Henequen* vppon the Iron which they intende to sawe or cutte, drawyng the one hande after the other as doe they that sawe, puttyng euer nowe and then a portion of fyne sande vppon the threede, or on the place or parte of the Iron, where they continue rubbyng the sayde threed, so that if the threed be worne, they take an other, and continue in theyr worke as before, vntyll they haue cutte in sunder the Iron, although it be neuer so bygge, and cut it as if it were a tender thyng, and easy to be sawne.

An hearbe that beareth cordes.

Cabuia and Henequen.

A strange thyng.

And forasmuche as the leaues of trees may bee counted among hearbes, I will heere speake somewhat of the qualitie of the leaues of certayne trees whiche are founde in the Islande of *Hispaniola*. These trees are so full of thornes, that there is no tree or plant that seemeth more wylde and deformed: so that

Leaues.

I can not well determyne whether they be trees, or plantes: they haue certayne branches full of large and deformed leaues, which branches were fyrst leaues lyke vnto the other. As the branches made of these leaues grow foorth in length, there commeth other leaues of them: so that in fine it is a difficult thing to describe the fourme of these trees, except the same should be done by a paynter, wherby the eye might conceyue that wherein the tongue fayleth in this behalfe. The leaues of this tree are of suche vertue, that beyng well beaten and spred vppon a cloth, after the maner of a playster, and so layde to a legge or arme that is broken in many peeces, it healeth it in fyftiene dayes, & maketh it as whole as though it had neuer been broken: Duryng the tyme of this operation, it cleaueth so fast to the flesshe, that it can not without much difficultie be taken away, but assoone as it hath healed the sore, and wrought his operation, it looseth it selfe from the place where it was layde, as I my selfe, and dyuers other which haue proued it, know by experience.

A leafe of great vertue.

Of fyshes, and of the maner of fyshyng.

IN the sea coastes of the firme lande, there are dyuers & sundry kyndes of fishes, muche differing in shape & fourme. And although it be impossible to speake of all, yet will I make mention of some. And first to begin at Sardines, you shall vnderstand that there is found a kinde of these fishes very large and with red tayles, being a very delicate fyshe. The best kyndes of other fishes are these, *Moxarre*, *Diabace*, Byettes, *Dabaos*, Thornebackes, & Salmons: All these, and dyuers other which I doe not now remember, are taken in great quantitie in ryuers. There are likewise taken very good Crcupyshes. There are also found in the sea, certayne other fishes, as Soles, Mackerels, Turbuts, *Palamite*, *Lizze*, *Polpi*, *Chieppe*, *Xaibas*, Locustes, Dysters, exceedyng great Tortoyses, & *Tiburoni* of marueilous bygnesse: also *Manates*, and *Murene*, and many other fyshes, which haue no names in our language, and these of suche diuersitie and quantitie, as can not

Tiburons.
Manates.

not be expressed without large wryting and long tyme. But to let passe to intreate particularly of the multitude of fyshes, I intende to speake chiefely, and somewhat largely, of three sortes of most notable fyshes: whereof the fyrst is, the great Tortoyses, the seconde is called *Tiburon*, and the thyrd *Manate*. And to begin at the fyrst, I say that in the Ilande of *Cuba*, are found great Tortoyses (which are certayne shell fyshes) of suche byggenesse that tenne or fyfteene men are scarsely able to lyfte one of them out of the water, as I haue been informed of credible persons dwellyng in the same Iland. But of that which I my selfe haue seene, I can testifie, that in the fyrme lande, in the village of *Acla*, there are of this sort some taken and kylled of suche byggenesse, that fyve men with muche difficultie coulde scarsely drawe them out of the water, and commonly the least sort of them are as much as two men may carry at a burden: that whiche I sawe lyfted vp by fyve men, had her shell a yarde and a quarter in length, and in breadth more then fyue yardes. The maner of takyng them, is this: It sometymes chaunceth that in theyr great nettes (whiche they call shoote nettes) there are founde certayne Tortoyses of the common sort, in great quantities, and when they come out of the sea, and bryng foorth theyr egges, and goe togeather by companyes from the sea, to feede on the lande, the Christians or Indians folowe theyr steppes which they fynde in the sande, and soone ouertake them, because they are very heauy and slowe in goyng, although they make all the hast they can to returne to the sea, assoone as they espie any bodie. When they that pursue them haue ouertaken them, they put a stake or staffe vnder theyr legges, and ouerturne them on theyr backes as they are yet runnyng, so that they can goe no further, nor yet ryse agayne or turne, and thus they suffer them to lye styll whyle they folowe after the rest, which they ouerturne in lyke maner: and by this meanes take very many, at suche tymes as they come foorth of the sea as I haue sayde: This fyshe is very excellent and holsome to be eaten, and of good taste. The seconde of the three fyshes wherof I haue spoken, is the *Tiburon*: this is a very great fyshe, and very quycke and swyft in the water, and a cruell deuourer: these are oftentymes taken, as well when the shippes are vnder sayle in the Ocean, as also when they lye at anker, or at

Great Tortoyses.

Tiburons.

any other tyme, and especially the leaste kynde of these fyshes. When the shyppes are vnder sayle, the byggest sorte are taken after this maner. When the *Tiburon* seeth the shyppe saylyng, he foloweth it swymmyng behynde, the whiche thinges the mariners seeyng, cast fooryth all the fylth of the shyppe into the sea for the fyshe to eate, who neuertheless foloweth them with equall pase, although they make neuer suche haste with full wynde and sayles, and waloweth on euery syde and about the shyp, and thus foloweth it sometyme for the space of a hundred & fyftie leagues, and more, and when the mariners are disposed to take them, they cast downe by the sterne of the shyppe a hooke of Iron, as bygge as the byggest fynger of a mans hande, of three spannes in length, and crooked lyke a fyshehooke, with beardes accordyng to the bygnesse thereof, and fastened to an Iron cheyne of fyue or syxe lynkes neare vnto the ende, and from thence tyed with a great rope, fastnyng also on the hooke for a bayte, a peece of some fyshe, or hogges fleshe, or some other flesh, or the bowels and intralles of an other *Tiburon* which they haue taken before, whiche may easily be done, for I haue seene niene taken in one day, and if they would haue taken more, they myght also. Thus when the *Tiburon* hath pleasauntly folowed the shyppe a long viage, at the length he swaloweth the bayte with the hooke, and aswell by his stryuyng to flee or escape, as also by the swyft passage of the shyppe, the hooke ouerthwarteth and catcheth holde of his chappes: the whiche fyshe when it is taken, it is of such huge byggenesse, that twelue or fyfteene men are scarsely able to drawe it out of the water, and lyft it into the shyppe, where one of the mariners gyueth it many knockes on the head with a club or beetle, vntyll hee haue slayne it: they are sometymes founde of tenne or twelue foote long, and of fyue, syxe, or seuen spannes in breadth, where they are brodest: they haue very great and wyde mouthes, to the proportion of the rest of theyr bodyes, and haue two rowes of teeth, the one somewhat separate from the other, of cruell shape, and standyng very thycke. When they haue slayne this fyshe, they cut the body thereof in small peeces, and put it to drye, hangyng it three or foure dayes at the cordes of the sayle clothes to drye in the wynde, and then eate it: It is doubtlesse a good fyshe, and of great commoditie to serue

the

the shyppes for vitalles for many dayes: the leaste of these fyshes are most holesome and tender, it hath a skynne muche lyke to the skynne of a Sole whereunto the sayd *Tiburon* is like in shape: Whiche I saye, because Plinie hath made mention of none of these three fyshes, among the number of them wher- Plinie.
of he writeth in his natural hystorie. These *Tiburons* come foorth of the sea, and enter into the ryuers, where they are no lesse perylous then great Lisartes or Crocodiles, wherof I haue spoken largely before: For they deuoure men, kyne, and horses, Crocodiles.
euen as do the Crocodiles: they are very daungerous in certayne washyng places or pooles by the ryuers sydes, and where they haue deuoured at other tymes. Dyuers other fyshes both great and small, of sundry sortes and kyndes, are accustomed to folowe the shyppes goyng vnder sayle, of the whiche I wyll speake somwhat when I haue written of *Manate*, whiche is the Manates.
thyrde of the three wherof I haue promised to entreate. *Manate* therefore, is a fyshe of the sea, of the byggest sorte, and muche greater then the *Tiburon* in length and breadth, and is very bruitysshe and vyle, so that it appeareth in fourme lyke vnto one of those great vesselles made of goates skynnes, wherin they vse to cary newe wyne in *Medina de Campo*, or in *Areualo*: the head of this beast is lyke the head of an Oxe, with also like eyes, and hath in the place of armes, two great stumpes wherwith he swymmeth: It is a very gentle and tame beast, and commeth oftentimes out of the water to the next shore, where if he fynd any hearbes or grasse, he feedeth therof. Our men are accustomed to kyl many of these, and diuers other good fyshes, with their crosbowes, pursuing them in barkes or Canoas, because they swim in maner aboue the water: the which thyng when they see, they drawe thein with a hooke tyde at a small corde, but somewhat strong: As the fyshe fleeth away, the archer letteth go, and prolongeth the corde by litle and litle, vntyll he haue let it go many fathams: at the ende of the corde, there is tyde a corke, or a peece of lyght woodde, and when the fyshe is gone a litle way, and hath coloured the water with his blood, and feeleth hym selfe to faynt and drawe towarde the ende of his lyfe, he resorteth to the shore, and the archer foloweth, geatheryng vp his corde, wherof whyle there yet remayne syxe or eyght fathams, or some-

ſomewhat moꝛe oꝛ leſſe, he dꝛaweth it towarde the lande, and dꝛaweth the fyſhe therewith by litle and litle, as the waues of the ſea helpe hym to do it the moꝛe eaſily : then, with the helpe of the reſt of his companie, he lyfteth this great beaſte out of the water to the lande, beyng of ſuche byggeneſſe, that to conuey it from thence to the citie, it ſhalbe requiſite to haue a carte with a good yoke of Dꝛen, and ſometymes moꝛe, accoꝛdyng as theſe fyſhes are of byggeneſſe, ſome being much greater then other ſome in the ſame kinde, as is ſeene of other beaſtes: Somtymes they lyft theſe fyſhes into the Canoa oꝛ barke, without dꝛawyng them to the lande as beforꝛe, foꝛ as ſoone as they are ſlayne, they flote aboue the water: And I beleeue verily that this fyſhe is one of the beſt in the woꝛlde to the taſt, and the lykeeſt vnto fleſhe, eſpecially ſo lyke vnto beefe, that who ſo hath not ſeene it whole, can iudge it to be none other when he ſeeth it in peeces then very beefe oꝛ veale, and is certaynly ſo lyke vnto fleſhe, that all the men in the woꝛld may herein be deceyued: the taſt likewiſe, is like vnto the taſt of very good veale, and laſteth long, yf it be powdꝛed: ſo that in fine, the Baſe of theſe parts, is by no meanes lyke vnto this. This *Manate* hath a certayne ſtone, oꝛ rather bone in his head within the bꝛayne, whiche is of qualitie greatly appꝛopꝛiate agaynſt the diſeaſe of the ſtone, if it be burnt and grounde into ſmall powder, and taken faſtyng in the moꝛning when the paine is felte, in ſuch quantitie as may lye vppon a peny, with a dꝛaught of good whyte wyne: Foꝛ being thus taken thꝛee oꝛ foure moꝛnings, it acquieteth the greefe, as dyuers haue tolde me whiche haue pꝛoued it true, and I my ſelfe by teſtimonie of ſyght, do wytneſſe that I haue ſeene this ſtone ſought of dyuers foꝛ this effecte.

The fyſhe Manate.

A remedy agaynſt the ſtone.

There are alſo dyuers other fyſhes as bygge as this *Manate*, among the whiche there is one called *Vihuella*. This fyſhe beareth in the toppe of his head a ſwoꝛde, beyng on euery ſyde full of many ſharpe teeth, this ſwoꝛde is naturally very harde and ſtrong, of foure oꝛ fyue ſpannes in length, and of pꝛopoꝛtion accoꝛdyng to the ſame byggeneſſe: and foꝛ this cauſe is this fyſhe called *Spada*, that is, the ſwoꝛde fyſhe. Of this kynde ſome are founde as litle as Sardines, and other ſo great, that two yokes of Dꝛen are ſcarſely able to dꝛawe them

The ſwoꝛde fyſhe.

them on a Cart. But whereas before I haue promised to speake of other fyshes, whiche are taken in these seas whyle the shyppes are vnder sayle, I wyll not forgeat to speake of the Tunnye, whiche is a great and good fyshe, and is oftentymes taken and kylde with trout speares, and hookes, cast in the water, when they play and swym about the shyppes. In lyke maner also are taken many Turbuts, whiche are very good fyshes as are lyghtly in all the sea. And here is to be noted, that in the great Ocean sea, there is a strange thyng to be consydered, whiche all that haue been in the Indies affirme to be true: And this is, that lyke as on the lande there are some prouinces fertyle and fruitfull, and some barren, euen so doth the lyke chaunce in the sea: So that at some wyndes the shyppes sayle fyftie, or a hundred, or two hundred leagues and more, without takyng or seeyng of one fyshe: and agayne, in the selfe same Ocean in some places, all the water is seene tremble by the mouyng of the fyshes, where they are taken abundantly. It commeth further to my remembraunce to speake somewhat of the fleeyng of fyshes, whiche is doubtlesse a strange thyng to beholde, and is after this maner. When the shyppes sayle by the great Ocean, folowyng theyr viage, there ryseth sometymes on the one syde or on the other, many companies of certayne litle fyshes, of the whiche the byggest is no greater then a Sardyne, and so diminishe lesse and lesse from that quantitie, that some of them are very litle: these are called *Volatori*, that is, fleeyng fyshes: they ryse by great companies and flockes, in suche multitudes that it is an astonyshment to behold them: Sometimes they ryse but litle from the water, & (as it chaunceth) continue one flyght for the space of an hundred paces, and sometimes more, or lesse, before they fall agayne into the sea, sometymes also they fall into the shyppes. And I remember, that on an euenyng when al the company in the shyp were on theyr knees, syngyng *Salue regina* in the hyghest part of the Castell of the poupe, and sayled with a full wynde, there passed by vs a flocke of these fleeyng fyshes, and came so neare vs, that many of them fell into the shyppe, among the whiche, two or three fel hard by me, whiche I tooke alyue in my hand, so that I myght well perceyue that they were as bygge as Sardines, and of the same

Tunnye.

Turbut.

Note.

Fleeyng fyshes.

quantitie,

quantitie, hauyng two wynges or quilles growing out of theyr fynnes, lyke vnto those wherewith all fyshes swym in ryuers: these wynges are as long as the fyshes them selues. As long as theyr wynges are moyst, they beare them vp in the ayre, but assoone as they are drye, they can contynue theyr flyght no further then as I haue sayde before, but fall immediatlye into the sea, and so ryse agayne, and flee as before from place to place. In the yeere a thousand, fyue hundred, and fyfteene, when I came fyrst to enfourme your Maiestie of the state of the thynges in India, and was the yeere folowyng in Flaunders in the tyme of your most fortunate successe in these your kyngdomes of Aragonie and Castyle, whereas at that viage I sayled aboue the Ilande *Bermuda*, otherwyse called *Garza*, The Iland of Bermuda beyng the furthest of all the Ilandes that are founde at this daye in the worlde, and arryuyng there at the deapth of eyght yardes of water, and distaunt from the lande as farre as the shotte of a peece of Ordinaunce, I determyned to sende some of the shyp to lande, aswell to make searche of suche thynges as were there, as also to leaue in the Iland certayne Hogges for encrease. But the tyme not seruing my purpose by reason of contrary wynde, I coulde bryng my shyppes no nearer the Ilande, beyng twelue leagues in length, and syxe in breadth, and about thyrtie in circuite, lying in the three and thyrtieth degree of the North syde. Whyle I remayned heere, I saw a stryfe and combat betweene these fleeing fyshes, and the fyshes named Gylt heades, & the foules called Seamewes, and Cormorantes, wyich surely seemed vnto me a thyng of as great pleasure and solace as coulde be deuised, while the Gylt heades swam on the brynme of the water, and sometymes lyfted theyr shoulders aboue the same, to rayse the fleeyng fyshes out of the water to dryue them to flyght, and folowe them swymmyng to the place where they fal, to take and eate them sodenly. Againe on the other side, the Seamewes and Cormorantes, take many of these fleeyng fyshes, so that by this meanes they are neyther safe in the ayre, nor in the water. In the selfe same peryll and danger doo men lyue in this mortall lyfe, wherein is no certayne securitie, neyther in hyghe estate, nor in lowe. Which thyng surely ought to put vs in remembraunce of that blessed and safe restyng

Not to hie for the Hye, nor to lowe for the Crowe.

place

place whiche God hath prepared for suche as loue hym, who shall acquiete and fynishe the trauailes of this troublous worlde, wherein are so many dangers, and bryng them to that eternall lyfe where they shall fynde eternall securitie and rest. But to returne to the hystorye: these bydes and foules whiche I sawe, were of the Ilande of *Bermuda*, neere vnto the whiche I sawe these sleeyng fyshes: for they coulde be of no other lande, forasmuche as they are not accustomed to wander farre from the coastes where they are bredde.

Of thincrease and decrease (that is) rysyng and fallyng of our Ocean sea, and South sea, called the sea of *Sur*.

I Wyll nowe speake of certayne thynges whiche are seene in the Prouince, or at the least in the citie of golden Castyle, otherwyse called *Beragua*, and in the coastes of the North sea, & of the South sea, called the sea of *Sur*, not omitting to note one syngu- *Beragua.*
ler and marueylous thyng whiche I haue considered of the Ocean sea, wherof hytherto no Cosmographer, Pilot, or Maryner, or any other, haue satisfyed me. I say therefore, as it is well knowen to your maiestie, and all such as haue knowledge of the Ocean sea, that this great Ocean casteth from it selfe the sea *Mediterraneum* by the mouth of the strayght of *Gibilterra*, in the which the water, from thend & furthest part of that sea, euen vnto the mouth of the sayde strayght, eyther in the East toward the coaste commonly called Leuante, or in any other part of the sayde sea *Mediterraneum*, the sea doth not so fall nor increase, as reason woulde iudge for so great a sea, but increaseth very litle, and a small space: Neuertheless, without the mouth of the strayght in the mayne Ocean, it increaseth and falleth very muche, and a great space of grounde, from syxe houres to syxe houres, as in all the coastes of Spayne, Britanie, Flaunders, Garmanie, and England. The selfe same Ocean sea in the firme lande newly founde, in the coastes of the same lying towarde the North, doth neyther ryse nor fall, nor lykewyse in the Ilandes of *Hispaniola* and *Cuba*, and al the o- *Hispaniola. Cuba.*

The west Ocean. The sea Mediterraneum.

ther

cher Ilandes of the same lying towarde the noꝛth, foꝛ the space of thꝛee thousande leagues, but onely in lyke maner as dooth the sea *Mediterraneum* in Italy, which is in maner nothyng, in respecte to that increase and decrease whiche the sayde Ocean hath in the coastes of Spayne and Flaunders. But this is yet a greater thyng, that also the selfe same Ocean in the coastes of the sayde fyꝛme lande lying towarde the South, in the citie of *Panama*, and also in the coast of that lande whiche lyeth towarde the East and West from that citie, as in the Ilande of pearles oꝛ *Margaritea*, whiche the Indians call *Tarrarequi*, and also in *Taboga* and *Otoque*, and in all other Ilandes of the south sea of *Sur*, the water ryseth and falleth so muche, that when it falleth, it goeth in maner out of syght, whiche thyng I my selfe haue seene oftentymes. And here your maiestie may note an other thing, that from the noꝛth sea to the south sea, being of such difference the one from the other in rysyng and fallyng, yet is the lande that deuideth them not past eyghteene oꝛ twentie leagues in bꝛeadth from coaste to coaste: So that both the sayde seas, beyng all one Ocean, this strange effecte is a thyng woꝛthy greatly to be consydered of all suche as haue inclination and desyꝛe to knowe the secrete woꝛkes of nature, wherein the infinite power and wysedome of God is seene to be suche, as may allure al good natures to reuerence and loue so diuine a maiestie. And wheraꝛs by ỹ demonstrations of learned men I am not satisfyed of the naturall cause hereof, I content my selfe to knowe and beleeue, that he whiche hath made these thynges, dooth knowe this and many other, which he hath not graunted to the reason of man to compꝛehende, muche lesse to so base a wyt as myne is. They therefoꝛe that are of greater vnderstandyng, shall search the cause hereof foꝛ them and foꝛ me, foꝛasmuche as I haue onely put the matter in question, as a wytnesse that haue seene therperience of the thyng.

The South sea.

The power and wysedome of God is seene in his creatures.

Of

Of the strayght or narrowe passage of the land lying betweene the North and South sea, by the which spyces may much sooner and easlyer be brought from the Ilandes of *Molucca* into Spaine by the VVest Ocean, then by that way whereby the Portugales sayle into the East India.



It hath been an opinion among the Cosmographers and Pilottes of late tyme, and other whiche haue had practyse in thynges touchyng the sea, that there shoulde be a strayght of water passing from the North sea of the fyrme, into the South sea of *Sur*, which neuertheless hath not been seene nor founde to this day. And surely yf there be any such strayght, we that inhabite those partes do thynke the same should be rather of land then of water. For the fyrme land in some partes thereof is so strayght and narrowe, that the Indians say that from the mountaynes of the prouince of *Esquegua* or *Vrraca* (which are betweene the one sea and the other) if a man ascend to the top of the mountaines, and looke toward the North, he may see the water of the North sea of the prouince of *Beragua*: & againe looking the contrary way, may on the other syde (towards the South) see the sea of *Sur*, and the prouinces which confine with it, as do the territories of the two Lordes or kynges of the sayde prouinces of *Vrraca* and *Esquegua*. And I beleeue, that yf it be as the Indians say, of all that is hytherto knowen, this is the narrowest strayght of the fyrme land, whiche some affirme to be full of rough mountaynes. Yet do I take it for a better way, or soo short as is that whiche is made from the port called *Nomen Dei* (whiche is in the North sea) vnto the newe citie of *Panama*, beyng in the coast and on the bancke of the sea of *Sur*, whiche way is lykewyse very rough, full of thycke woodes, mountaynes, ryuers, valleyes, and very difficult to passe through, and can not be done without great labour & trauaile. Some measure this way in this part, to be from sea to sea eighteene leagues, whiche I suppose to be rather twentie, not for that it is any more by measure, but because it is rough and difficult, as I haue

Esquegua and Vrraca.

Nomen Dei.

Panama.

& sayde,

sayde, and as I haue founde it by experience, hauyng now twise passed that way by foote, countyng from the port and village of *Nomen Dei*, vnto the dominion of the *Cacique* of *Iuanaga*, otherwyse called *Capira*, eyght leagues, and from thence to the ryuer of *Chagre*, other eyght leagues. So that at this riuer, beyng sixteene leagues from the sayde port, endeth the roughnesse of the way: then from hence to the marueilous bydge are two leagues, and beyonde that, other two, vnto the port of *Panama*: So that altogeather, in my iudgement, make twentie leagues. And yf therefore this nauigation may be founde in the South sea for the trade of spyces (as we trust in God) to be brought from thence to the sayde port of *Panama* (as is possible enough) they maye afterwarde easely passe to the North sea, notwithstandyng the difficultie of the way of the twentie leagues aforesayde. Which thyng I affirme, as a man wel trauayled in these regions, hauyng twyse on my feete passed ouer this straycht in the yeere 1521, as I haue said. It is furthermore to be vnderstoode, that it is a marueilous facilitie to bryng spices by this way which I wil now declare. From *Panama* to the ryuer of *Chagre*, are foure leagues of good and fayre way, by the which cartes may passe at pleasure, by reason that the mountaines are but few and litle, and that the greatest part of these foure leagues is a playne grounde boyde of trees: and when the cartes are come to the sayde ryuer, the spyces may be caried in Barkes and pynnesses. For this riuer entreth into the North sea syue or syxe leagues lower then the port of *Nomen Dei*, and emptieth it selfe in the sea neere vnto an Iland called *Bastimento*, where is a very good and safe port. Your maiestie may now therfore consyder, howe great a thyng, and what commoditie it may be to conuey spices this way, forasmuch as ỹ riuer of *Chagre*, hauing his originall only two leagues from the South sea, continueth his course, and emptieth it selfe into the other North sea. This riuer runneth fast, and is very great, and so commodious for this purpose as may be thought or desired: the marueylous bydge made by the worke of nature, beyng two leagues beyond the sayde ryuer, & other two leagues on this syde the port of *Panama*, so lying in the mydde waye betweene them both, as framed naturally in suche sort, that none which passe by this viage doth see any such bydge, or thinke that there

The ryuer of Chagre.

The Iland Bastimento.

The marueylous bydge.

there is any such buyldyng in that place, vntyll they be in the top thereof, in the way towarde *Panama*: But assoone as they are on the brydge, lookyng towarde the ryght hande, they see a litle ryuer vnder them, whiche hath his chanell distant from the feete of them that walke ouer it, the space of two speares length or more. The water of this ryuer is very shalowe, not passyng the deapth of a mans legge to the knee, and is in breadth betweene thyrtie and fourtie pases, and falleth into the ryuer of *Chagre*. Towarde the ryght hand, standyng on this brydge, there is nothing seene but great trees. The largenesse of the brydge conteyneth fyfteene pases, and the length thereof about threescore or fourescore pases: The arche is so made of most harde stone, that no man can beholde it without admiration, beyng made by the hygh and omnipotent creatour of all thinges. But to returne to speake somewhat more of the conueying of spices, I say, that when it shall please almyghtie God that this nauigation aforesayde shall be founde by the good fortune of your maiestie, and that the spyces of the Ilandes of the South sea (whiche may also be otherwyse called the Ocean of the East India, in the which are the Ilandes of *Molucca*) shalbe brought to the sayd coast and the port of *Panama*, and be conueyed from thence (as we haue sayde) by the fyrme lande with cartes vnto the ryuer of *Chagre*, and from thence into this our other sea of the North, from whence they may afterwarde be brought into Spayne, I say that by this meanes the viage shalbe shortned more then seuen thousand leagues, with muche lesse daunger then is by the viage nowe vsed by the way of Commendator of *Ayfa*, captayne vnder your maiestie, who this present yeere attempted a viage to the place of the sayd spyces: and not only the way is thus muche shortned, but also a thyrd parte of the tyme is abbreuiate. To conclude therefore, if any had hytherto attempted this viage by the sea of *Sur*, to seeke the Ilandes of spyces, I am of firme opinion, that they shoulde haue been founde long since, as doubtlesse they may bee by the reasons of Cosmographie.

The Ilandes of Molucca.

The commoditie of this viage.

Howe thinges that are of one kynde, dyffer in fourme and qualitie, accordyng to the nature of the place where they are engendred or grow, and of the beastes called Tygers.

Tigers.

IN the firme lande are founde many terrible beastes, which some thinke to bee Tygers. Whiche thing neuertheleſſe I dare not affirme, considering what aucthours do wyte of the lyghtneſſe and agilitie of the Tyger, wheras this beast, being otherwyſe in shape very like vnto a Tiger, is notwithstandyng very slowe. Yet true it is, that accordyng to the marueiles of the worlde, and differences which naturall thinges haue in dyuers regions vnder heauen, and dyuers constellations of the same, vnder the which they are created, we see that some suche plantes and hearbes as are hurtfull in one countrey, are harmeleſſe and holsome in other regions. And byrdes whiche in one prouince are of good taſte, are in other so vnsauery that they may not bee eaten. Men lykewyſe whiche in some countreys are blacke, are in other places whyte: and yet are both these and they men. Euen so may it bee, that Tygers are lyght in some region, as they wyte, and may neuertheleſſe be slow and heauy in these Indies of your mateſtie, wherof we speake. The sheepe of Arabie drawe their tayles long and bigge on the ground, and the Bulles of Egypt haue theyr heare growyng towarde theyr heades: yet are those sheepe, and these bulles. Men in some countreys are hardy and of good courage, and in other naturally fearefull and bruityshe. All these thinges, and many more, whiche may bee sayde to this purpoſe, are easie to bee proued, and worthy to bee beleeued, of suche as haue read of the lyke in aucthours, or trauayled the worlde, whereby theyr owne sight may teache them the experience of theſe thinges whereof I speake. It is also manifeſt that *Iucca*, whereof they make theyr bread in the Ilande of *Hiſpaniola*, is deadly poyson if it bee eaten greene with the iuise: and yet hath it no such propertie in the firme lande, where I haue eaten it many times, and found it to be a good fruit. The Bats of Spaine, although they bite, yet are they not venomous: but in the firme

Plantes and hearbes.

Byrdes.

Men.

Sheepe.

Bulles.

Iucca.

Battes.

firme land, many dye that are bytten of them. And in this fourme may so many thinges be sayd, that tyme shall not suffice to write, whereas my intent is only to proove that this beast may bee a Tyger, or of ỳ kynd of Tygers, although it be not of such lightnesse and swiftnesse as are they wherof Plinie & other auctheurs speake, discrybyng it to bee one of the swyftest beastes of the lande, and that the ryuer of *Tigris* for the swyft course thereof was called by that name. The fyrst Spanyardes whiche sawe this Tyger in the firme lande, dyd so name it. Of the kynde of these was that which *Don Diego Columbo* the Admirall sent your maiestie out of newe Spayne to *Toledo*. Theyr heades are lyke to the heades of Lions, or Lionesses, but greater: the rest of all theyr bodyes, and theyr legges, are full of blacke spottes one neere vnto an other, and diuided with a circumference or fryndge of redde colour, shewyng as it were a fayre woorke and correspondent picture, about their croopes or hynder partes, they haue these spottes byggest, and lesse and lesse towarde theyr bellies, legges, and heades. That which was brought to *Toledo*, was young, and but litle, and by my estimation of the age of three yeeres: but in the firme lande there are many founde of greater quantitie, for I haue seene some of three spans in height, and more then fiue in length. They are beastes of great force, with strong legges, and well armed with nayles and fanges, which wee call dogge teeth: they are so fierce, that in my iudgement no reall Lion of the byggest sort is so strong or fierce. Of these, there are many found in the firme lande, which deuour many of the Indians, & doe much hurt otherwyse: but since the comming of the Christians, many haue been kyld with Crossebowes after this maner. Assoone as the archer hath knowledge of the haunt of any of these Tigers, he goeth searching their trase, with his crossebow & with a litle hound or begle, and not with a greyhounde, because this beast would soone kyll any dog that would venter on him: When the hounde hath founde the Tyger, he runneth about him baying continually, and approcheth so neare him, snappyng and grynnyng, with so quycke steepyng and returnyng, that he hereby so molesteth this fierce beast, that hee driueth him to take the next tree, at the foote wherof he remaineth

Pliny.

The Tiger.

The huntyng of Tigers.

styll baying, and the Tyger grynnyng and shewyng his teethe, whyle in the meane tyme the archer commeth neare, and .xii. or xiiii. paces of, stryketh him with the querell of his crossebowe in the brest, and fleeth incontinent, leauyng the Tyger in his trauayle for lyfe and death, bytyng the tree and eatyng earth for fiercenesse: then within the space of two or three houres, or the day folowyng, the archer returneth thyther, and with his dogge fyndeth the place where he lyeth dead. In the yeere. 1522. I with the other rulers and magistrates of the citie of *Sancta Maria Antiqua* in *Dariena*, tooke order in our counsayle, a rewarde of foure or fyue peeces of golde to bee giuen to euery man that kylled any of these Tygers: by reason whereof many were kyld in shorte space, both with crossebowes, and also with dyuers snares and ingens. But to conclude, I will not obstinately stand in opinion whether these beastes be Tygers or Panthers, or of the number of any other suche beastes of spotted heare, or also peraduenture some other newe beast vnknowen to the olde wryters, as were many other whereof I haue spoken in this booke: Of whiche thyng I doe not greatly marueyle, forasmuche as vnto our tyme this great part of the worlde was vnknowen to the antiquitie, insomuche that none of the wryters of that age, nor yet Ptolome in his Cosmographie, or any other since him, haue made any mention hereof, vntyll the fyrst Admyrall *Don Christopher Colonus* discouered the same: A thing doubtlesse without comparyson muche greater then that which is sayde of Hercules, that he fyrst gaue the entrance of the sea *Mediterraneum* into the Ocean, whiche the Grekes coulde neuer doe before him. And hereof ryseth the fable that the mountaynes of *Calpe* and *Abila* (whiche are directly one agaynst an other in the straycht of *Gibilterra*, the one beyng in Spayne, and the other in Affryke) were ioyned togeather before they were opened by Hercules, who erected those his pillers which your maiestie giue in token of prehemynence and lyke enterpryses, with likewise these his wordes *Plus Vltra*, wordes doubtlesse worthy for so great and vnyuersall an Emperour, and not conuenient for any other Prynce: forasmuche as your holy Catholyke maiestie haue spredde them in so strange and remote regions, so many thousand leagues further then euer dyd Hercules. And certeynly

A rewarde for kyllyng of Tygers.

Colonus compared to Hercules.

The pyllers of Hercules.

The straycht of Gibilterra.

Note.

Plus Vltra.

Yolue farre the Emperours maiestie excelleth Hercules.

ceynly sy3,if there had been an Image of gold made in the p3aise and fame of *Colonus*, he had as well deserued it, as any of those men to whom for they3 noble enterp3yse the antiquitie gaue diuine honour,if he had been in they3 tyme . But to returne to the matter whereof I began to speake : I neede say no mo3e of the fourme of this beast,for asmuch as your Maiestie haue seene that whiche is yet alyue in *Toledo*. And surely the keeper of your maiesties Lions, who hath taken vppon him the charge to tame this beast, myght better haue bestowed his paynes in an other thing that myght haue been mo3e p3ofytable for the safegarde of his lyfe,because this Tyger beyng yet but young, will dayly be stronger and fiercer,and increase in malyce. The Indians (and especially they of the firme lande in the p3ouince whiche the Catholyke Kyng *Don Ferdinando* commaunded to be called golden Castyle) call this beast *Ochi*. This thing is strange that chaunced of late : that whereas the Tiger whereof we haue made mention before, would haue kylde his keeper that then kept him in a cage,was in fewe dayes after made so tame,that he ledde her tyed only with a small corde,and playde with her so familyarly,that I marueyled greatly to see it, yet not without certayne beleefe that this friendship wil not last long,without danger of life to the keeper, forasmuche as surely these beastes are not meete to bee among men, for they3 fiercenesse and cruell nature that can not bee tamed.

A Tyger made tame.

Of the maners and customes of the Indians of the firme lande,and of their women.



The maners & customes of these Indians, are dyuers in diuers p3ouinces . Some of them take as many wiues as them list,and other lyue with one wyfe, whom they for3sake not without consent of both parties, which chaunceth especially when they haue no chyldren. The nobilitie as well men as women,repute it infamous to ioyne with any of base parẽtage o3 strangers, except Chr3istians, whom they count noble men, by reason of their valiantnesse, although they put a difference betweene the common sort & the other to whom they shewe obedience,counting it for a great matter & an honorable thyng, if they

The Indian women.

bee beloued of any of them: insomuche that if they knowe any Christian man carnally, they keepe their fayth to him, so that hee bee not long absent farre from them, for theyr intent is not to be widowes, or to liue chast lyke religious women. Many of them haue this custome, that when they perceyue that they are with chylde, they take an hearbe wherwith they destroy that is conceiued: for they say that only well aged women should beare chyldren, and that they wil not forbeare their pleasures, and defourme their bodies with bearyng of children, whereby theyr teates become loose & hanging, which thing they greatly dispraise. When they are deliuered of theyr children, they goe to the ryuer & washe them, whiche done, theyr blood and purgation ceaseth immediatly: And when after this they haue a fewe dayes abstayned from the company of men, they become so straycht, as they say which haue had carnall familiaritie with them, that such as vse them, can not without much difficultie satisfie theyr appetite: They also whiche neuer had chyldren, are euer as virgins. In some partes they weare certayne litle aprones rounde about them before and behynde, as low as to theyr knees and hammes, wherewith they couer theyr priuie partes, and are naked all their bodie beside. The principall men beare theyr priuities in a hollow pype of golde, but the common sorte haue them inclosed in the shelles of certayne great welkes, and are beside vtterly naked: For they thinke it no more shame to haue theyr coddes seene, then any other parte of theyr bodies: and in many prouinces both the men and women go vtterly naked, without any such couerture at all. In the prouince of *Cueua* they call a man *Chuy*, and a woman *Ira*, whiche name is not greatly disagreeable to many both of theyr women and of ours. These Indians gyue great honour and reuerence to theyr *Cacique* (that is) theyr kynges and rulers. The principall *Cacique* hath twelue of his most strong Indians appointed to beare him, when he remoueth to any place, or goeth abrode for his pleasure. Two of them cary him sitting vppon a long peece of wood, which is naturally as lyght as they can fynde, the other tenne folow next vnto him as footemen: they keepe continually a trottyng pase with him on their shoulders. When the two that cary him are weery, other two come in their places, without any disturbance or staye. And

The men of India.

The kyng is borne on mens backes.

thus

thus if the way bee playne, they cary him in this maner for the space of.xb or.xx.leagues in one day. The Indians that are assigned to this office, are for the most parte slaues, or *Naboriti*, that is, suche as are bounde to continuall seruice . I haue also noted that when the Indians perceyue them selues to be troubled with to muche blood, they let them selues blood in the calfes of theyr legges, and brawnes of theyr armes: this doe they with a very sharpe stone, and sometymes with the smal tooth of a Uiper, or with a sharpe reede or thorne. All the Indians are commonly without beardes, insomuch that it is in maner a marueile to see any of them eyther men or women to haue any downe or heare on theyr faces, or other partes of theyr bodies: Albeit I sawe the *Cacique* of the prouince of *Catarapa*, who had heare on his face and other partes of his bodie, as had also his wyfe in such places as women are accustomed to haue . This *Cacique* had a great part of his body paynted with a blacke colour, which neuer fadeth, and is much lyke vnto that wherewith the Moores paynt them selues in Barbarie in token of nobilitie. But the Moores are paynted specially on their visage and throte, and certayne other partes. Lykewyse the principall Indians vse these paynтynges on theyr armes and brestes, but not on theyr visages, because among them the slaues are so marked. When the Indians of certayne prouinces goe to the battayle (especially the Caniball archers) they cary certayne shelles of great welkes of the sea, which they blow, and make therewith great sound, much lyke the noyse of hornes: they cary also certayne Tymbyels, which they vse in the stead of Drummes: also very fayre plumes of feathers, and certayne armure of golde, especially great and rounde peeces on theyr brestes, and splintes on their armes. Lykewyse other peeces, which they put on theyr heades and other partes of theyr bodies: For they esteeme nothyng so muche as to appeare galant in the warres, and to goe in most comely order that they can deuyse, glysteryng with precious stones, Jewels, golde, and feathers. Of the least of these welkes or perewincles, they make certayne litle beades, of dyuers sortes and colours: they make also litle bracelets, which they myngle with gaudies of golde, these they rowle about theyr armes from the elbowe to the wrest of the hande. The lyke also doe they on theyr legges

Lettyng of blood.

They haue no beardes.

They paynte their bodies.

The Canibals.

Armure of golde.

Their galantnesse in the Warres.

Theyr Iuelles.

from the knee to the soles of theyr feete, in token of nobilitie, especially theyr noble women in dyuers prouinces are accustomed to weare suche Iewelles, and haue theyr neckes in maner laden therewith: these beades and Iewelles, and suche other trynkets, they call *Caquiras*. Besyde these also, they weare certaine rynges of golde at theyr eares and nostrelles, whiche they boze full of holes on both sydes, so that the rynges hang vppon theyr lyppes. Some of these Indians are poulde and rounded: albeit commonly both the men and women take it foz a decent thyng to weare long heare, whiche the women weare to the myddest of theyr shoulders, & cut it equally, especially aboue their bzowes: this doe they with certayne harde stones, whiche they keepe foz the same purpose. The pzyncipall women, when theyr teates fall, oz become loose, beare them vp with barres of golde, of the length of a spanne and a halfe, well wzought, and of suche byggenesse that some of them weygh moze then twoo hundzed Castelans oz Ducades of golde: these barres haue holes at both the endes, whereat they tye two small cozdes made of cotton at euery ende of the barres: One of these cozdes goeth ouer the shoulder, and the other vnder the arme holes, where they tye both togeather, so that by this meanes the barre beareth vp theyr teates. Some of these chiefe women goe to the battayle with theyr husbandes, oz when they them selues are regentes in any pzouinces, in the whiche they haue all thinges at commaundement, and execute the office of generall captaines, and cause them selues to bee carped on mens backes, in lyke maner as doe the Caciques of whom I haue spoken before.

Howe the women beare vp theyr teates, with barres of golde.

These Indians of the firme lande are muche of the same stature and colour as are they of the Ilands: they are foz the most part of the colour of an olyue, if there be any other difference, it is moze in bignesse then otherwise, & especially they that are called *Coronati*, are stronger and bygger then any other that I haue seene in these parties, except those of the Ilande of Giantes, which are on the South side of the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, neare vnto the coastes of the firme land, and likewise certaine other which they call *Iucatos*, which are on the Noxth syde. All which chiefly, although they bee no Giantes, yet are they doubtlesse the byggest of the Indians that are knowen to this day, & commonly bygger then the

The stature & colour of the Indians.

The Indians called Coronati.

The Ilande of Giantes.

Iucatos,

the Flemynges: and especially many of them, aswell women as men, are of very hygh stature, and are all archers both men and women. These *Coronati* inhabite thyrtie leagues in length by these coastes, from the poynt of *Canoa* to the great ryuer which they call *Guadalchiber*, neere vnto *Sancta Maria de gratia*. As I trauersed by those coastes, I fylled a butte of freshe water of that ryuer, syxe leagues in the sea from the mouth thereof where it falleth into the sea. They are called *Coronati* (that is crowned) because theyr heare is cutte rounde by theyr eares, and poulde lower a great compase about the crowne, much lyke the fryers of saint Augustines order. And because I haue spoken of theyr maner of wearyng theyr heare, heere commeth to my remembraunce a thyng which I haue oftentymes noted in these Indians: and this is, that they haue the bones of the sculles of theyr heades foure tymes thycker, and much stronger then ours, so that in commyng to handstrokes with them, it shalbe requisite not to strike them on the heads with swoordes, for so haue many swoordes been broken on theyr heades, with litle hurte doone. And to haue sayde thus much of theyr customes and maners, it shall suffise for this tyme, because I haue more largly intreated herof in my general historie of the Indies: Yet haue I neyther there nor here spoken muche of that part of the firme lande whiche is called *Noua Hispania* (that is, newe Spayne, whereof the Iland of *Iucatana* is part) forasmuche as *Ferdinando Cortesie* hath written a large booke therof. Of the houses of these Indies, I haue spoken sufficiently els where: Yet haue I thought good to infourme your maiestie of ỹ building and houses which the Christians haue made in diuers places in the firme lande. They buylde them nowe therefore with two solars or lofles, and with loopes and wyndowes to open and shutte: also with strong tymber, and very fayre boordes, in suche sorte, that any noble man may well and pleasauntly be lodged in some of them. And among other, I my selfe caused one to be builded in the citie of *Sancta Maria Antiqua* in *Dariena*, which cost me more then a thousand and fiue hundred Castelans, beyng of such sort that I may well entertayne and commodiously lodge any Lord or noble man, reseruing also part for my selfe and my family: for in this may many householdes be kept, both aboue

The sculles of the Indians heades.

Newe Spaine.

The houses of the Christians in India.

Dariena.

and

Gardens.

and beneath. It hath also a fayre garden, with many Orange trees, both sweete and sowre: Cedars also, and Limons, of the which there is nowe great plentie in the houses of the Christians. On one syde of the garden, there runneth a fayre riuer. The situation is very pleasaunt, with a good and holsome ayre, and a fayre prospecte about the ryuer. In fine, our trust is that in fewe yeeres al thinges in these regions shal growe to a better state, accordyng to the holy intention of your maiestie.

Of the chiefe Ilandes *Hispaniola* and *Cuba*.

THe Indians which at this present inhabite the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, are but fewe in number, and the Christians not so many as they ought to be, forasmuche as many of them that were in this Iland, are gone to other Ilandes, and to the fyrme lande. For beyng for the most parte young men vnmaried, and desirous daily to see newe things, wherin mans nature deliteth, they were not willing to continue long in one place, especially seeing daily other newe landes discouered, where they thought they might sooner fill their purses, by being present at the fyrst spoyle: Wherin neuertheless their hope deceiued many of them, and especially such as had houses & habitations in this Ilande: For I certainly beleeue, confyrming my selfe herein with the iudgement of many other, that if any one Prince had no more seignories then only this Ilande, it shoulde in short tyme be such, as not to geue place either to Sicilie or England, wheras euen at this present there is nothyng wherefore it shoulde malice theyr prosperitie, not beyng inferiour to them in any felicitie, that in maner the heauens can graunt to any lande: beyng furthermore suche as may inryche many prouinces and kyngdomes, by reason of many ryche golde mynes that are in it, of the best golde that is founde to this day in the worlde, and in greatest quantitie. In this Iland, nature of her selfe bryngeth footh suche abundance of cotton, that if it were wrought and maintayned, there shoulde be more and better then in any part of the world. There is so great plentie of excellent *Cassia*, that a great quantitie is brought from thence into Spaine, from whence it is caryed

Men are desirous of newe tyynges.

The commodities of Hispaniola, England, and Sicilie.

Golde mynes.

Cotton.

Cassia.

caried to diuers partes of the worlde. It encreaseth so muche, that it is a marueylous thyng to consider. In this are many ryche shoppes where Suger is wrought, and that of suche perfectnesse and goodnesse, and in such quantitie, that shyps come laden therewith yeerely into Spayne. All such seedes, settes, or plantes, as are brought out of Spayne and planted in this Ilande, become muche better, bygger, and of greater encrease then they are in any part of our Europe. And yf it chaunce otherwyse that sometymes they prosper not so well, the cause is that they which should tyl and husband the ground, & sowe and plant in due seasons, haue no respect heereunto, beyng impatient whyle the wheat and vines waxe rype, beyng geuen to wanderyng and other affayres of present gaynes (as I haue sayde) as searchyng the golde mynes, fyshyng for pearles, and occupying marchaundies, with suche other trades, for the greedy folowyng whereof, they neglect and contempne both sowyng and plantyng. Suche fruites as are brought out of Spayne, into this Iland, prosper marueylously, and waxe rype all tymes of the yeere, as hearbes of al sortes very good and pleasaunt to be eaten. Also many Pomgranates of the best kynde, and Oranges both sweete and sowre: Lykewyse many fayre Limons and Cedars, and a great quantitie of all such as are of sharpe, sowre, and bytter taste. There are also many Fygge trees, which byng foorth theyr fruite all the whole yeere. Lykewyse those kynde of Date trees that beare Dates, and diuers other trees and plantes, which were brought out of Spayne thyther. Beastes do also encrease in lyke abundaunce, & especially the heardes of Kyne are so augmented both in quantitie and number, that there are now many patrons of cattaile that haue more then two thousand heades of Neate, and some three or foure thousande, and some more. Besyde these, there are very many that haue heardes of foure or fyue hundred. And trueth it is, that this Iland hath better pasture for suche cattayle then any other countrey in the worlde: also holsome and cleare water, and temperate ayre, by reason whereof the heardes of such beastes are much bygger, fatter, and also of better taste then ours in Spayne, because of the ranke pasture, whose moisture is better digested in the hearbe or grasse by the continuall & temperate heate of the Sonne, wherby beyng

Suger.

Plantes and hearbes.

Great thynges hyndred by respect of present gaynes.

Oranges. Pomegranats.

Fygges all the yeere.

Dates.

Beastes.

Great heardes of cattayle.

Good pasture.

The effect of continuall and moderate heate.

beyng made moze fat and vnctuous, it is of better and moze ſted-
faſt nouryſhment. For contynuall and temperate heate, doth
not only drawe much moyſture out of the earth, to the nouryſh-
ment of ſuch thynges as growe and are engendred in that clime,
but doth alſo by moderation preſerue the ſame from reſolution
and putrifaction, digeſting alſo and condenſatyng or thyckenyng
the ſayde moyſt nouryſhment into a gummie and vnctuous ſub-
ſtaunce, as is ſeene in all ſuche thynges as growe in thoſe regi-
ons: and this is the only naturall cauſe aſwell that certayne
great beaſtes and of long lyfe (as the Elephant & Rhinoceros,
with ſuche other) are engendred only in the regions neare vnto
the Equinoctiall, as alſo that the leaues of ſuche trees as growe
there, do not wyther or fall, vntyll they be thruſt out by other,
accordyng to the verſe of the poet whiche ſayeth, *Et nata pira pi-
ris, et ficus in ficubus extant*, this is in effect, Peares growing vp-
on Peares, and Fygges vpon Fygges. Plinie alſo wryteth,
that ſuche trees are neuer infected with the diſeaſe of trees that
the Latines call *Caries*, whiche we may call the worme or can-
ker, beyng but a certayne putrifaction, by reaſon of a watriſhe
nouryſhment not well conſolidate. The ſame thyng hath been
the cauſe that certayne Philoſophers, conſidering aſwell that
man is the hotteſt and moyſteſt beaſt that is (whiche is the beſt
complexion) as alſo that men lyue longeſt in certayne partes of
India neare the Equinoctiall (where yet to this day ſome liue to
the age of an hundred and fyftie yeeres) were of opinion that yᵉ
mankynde had any beginning on the earth, that place ought by
good reaſon to be vnder or not farre from yᵉ Equinoctial line, for
the cauſes aforeſayde. Some of the Diuines alſo vpon lyke con-
ſideration, haue thought it agreable that they Paradiſe ſhoulde
be about the ſame, within yᵉ precinct of thoſe riuers which are na-
med in the booke of Geneſis. But to let paſſe theſe thyngs, & to
returne to the hiſtorie. In this Iland furthermore are manye
Sheepe, and a great number of Hogges, of the whiche (as
alſo of the Kyne) many are become wylde, and lykewyſe ma-
ny Dogges and Cattes, of thoſe whiche were brought out of
Spayne: Theſe (and eſpecially the Dogges) do much hurt a-
mong the cattayle, by reaſon of the negligence of the heardmen.

The cauſe of fat nouryſhment.

Beaſtes of long lyfe in regions about the Equinoctial line.

Trees whoſe leaues do not wyther.

The canker of the tree.

Long lyued men in India.

Paradiſe neare the Equinoctiall line.

Sheepe and Hogges.

Dogges and Cattes become wylde.

There

There are also many Horses, Mares, and Mules, and such other beastes as serue the vse of men in Spayne, and are muche greater then they of the fyrst broode brought thyther out of Spayne. Some places of the Ilande are inhabited, although not so many as were requisite: Of the which I wyl say no more, but that al the regions of the Ilande are so well situate, that in the course of tyme all thynges shall come to greater perfection, by reason of the rychnesse & pleasauntnesse of the countrey, and fertilitie of the soyle. But nowe to speake somewhat of the principall and chiefe place of the Ilande, whiche is the citie of *San Domenico*: I saye, that as touchyng the buildinges, there is no citie in Spayne, so much for so much (no not *Barsalona*, which I haue oftentymes seene) that is to be preferred before this, generally: For the houses of *San Domenico*, are for the most parte of stone, as are they of Barsalona, or of so strong & wel wrought earth, that it maketh a singuler and strong bynding. The situation is much better then that of Barsalona, by reason that the streates are much larger and plainer, and (without comparison) more directe and streyght foorth: For being builded nowe in our tyme, besyde the commoditie of the place of the fundation, the streetes were also directed with corde, compase, and measure, wherin it excelleth al the cities that I haue seene. It hath the sea so neere, that of one syde there is no more space betwene the sea and the citie then the walles, and this is about fiftie pases, where it is furthest of. On this syde, the waters of the sea beate vpon the natural stones and fayre coast: On the other part, hard by the side and at the foote of the houses, passeth the riuer *Ozama*, which is a marueilous port, wherin laden shippes rise very neere to the land, and in maner vnder the house windowes, and no further from the mouth of the riuer where it entreth into ỹ sea, then is from the foote of the hil of *Monyuia*, to the monastery of saint Fraunces, or to the lodge of Barsalona. In the myddest of this space in the citie, is the fortresse and castle, vnder the which, and twentie pases distant from the same, passe the shyppes to aryse somewhat further in the same riuer. From the entraunce of the shippes vntyl they cast anker, they sayle no further from the houses of the citie then thyrtie or fourtie pases, because of this side of the citie the habitation is nere to the riuer. The port or hauen also

The situation of Hispaniola.

The citi of San Domenico.

The ryuer Ozama.

The Hauen.

so is so fayre and commodious to defraight or vnlade shippes, as the like is founde but in fewe places of the worlde. The chymneis that are in this citie, are about syxe hundred in number, and such houses as I haue spoken of before: Of the which some are so fayre & large, that they may well receiue and lodge any lorde or noble man of Spaine with his traine & familie, and especially that which *Don Diego Colon*, viceroy vnder your maiestie, hath in this citie, is such that I knowe no man in Spayne that hath the lyke by a quarter in goodnesse, consydering all the commodities of the same. Lykewyse the situation thereof, as beyng aboue the sayde porte, and altogeather of stone, and hauyng many fayre and large roomes, with as goodly a prospect of the lande and sea as may be deuised, seemeth vnto me so magnificall and princelyke, that your maiestie may be as well lodged therin, as in any of the most exquisite buylded houses of Spayne. There is also a Cathedral church builded of late, where aswel ỹ Bishop accordyng to his dignitie, as also the Canons are wel endewed. This church is wel builded of stone and lime, and of good woorkmanshyp. There are furthermore three monasteries, bearyng the name of saint Dominike, saint Fraunces, and saint Marie of Mercedes, the which are all well buylded, although not so curiously as they of Spaine. But speakyng without prejudice of any other religious monasterie, your maiestie may be wel assured, that in these three monasteries god is as wel serued, as in any other religious house, with men of holy lyuyng & vertuous example. There is also a very good hospitall for the ayde and succour of poore people, which was founde by *Michael Passamont*, treasurer to your maiestie. To conclude, this citie from day to day increaseth in wealth and good order, aswel for that the saide Admiral & viceroy, with the lorde Chauncelour and counsayle appoynted there by your maiestie, haue theyr continuall abydyng heere, as also that the rychest men of the Ilande resort hyther for theyr most commodious habitation, and trade of suche marchaundies as are eyther brought out of Spayne, or sent thyther from this Ilande, whiche nowe so aboundeth in many thynges, that it serueth Spayne with many commodities, as it were with vsury requityng suche benefytes as it fyrst receyued from thence. The people of this Ilande are commonly of somewhat

A cathedrall churche and monasteris in Hispaniola.

An Hospitall

lesse

lesse stature then are the Spaniardes, and of a shynyng or cleare browne coloure: they haue wyues of theyr owne, and abstayne from theyr daughters, systers, and mothers: they haue large foreheades, long blacke heare, and no beardes or heare in anye other partes of theyr bodies, aswell men as women, except very fewe, as perhaps scarsly one among a thousand. They goe as naked as they were borne, except that on the partes whiche may not with honestie be seene, they weare a certayne leafe as brode as a mans hande, which neuertheless is not kept close with such diligence, but that sometymes a man may see that they thynke sufficiently hyd. In this Iland are certayne Glowormes, that shyne in the nyght as do ours, but are much bygger, and geue a greater lyght: Insomuch that when the men of the Ilande goo any iorneys in the night, they beare some of these wormes made fast about theyr feete and head, in such sort that he that should see them a farre, & ignorant of the thing, would be greatly astonished thereat. By the lyght of these also, the women worke in theyr houses in the nyght. These wormes they cal *Cieuas*. Their light lasteth for the space of three dayes, and diminisheth as they begin to dye vp. There is also a kynde of Crowes, whose breath stynketh in the mornyng, and is sweete in the after noone: the excrement which they auoyde, is a lyuing worme. As touching other thynges of this Iland, whereof Peter Martyr hath more largely intreated in his Decades, I haue thought it superfluous to repeate the same agayne out of this history of *Gonzalus Ferdinandus*, but haue heere gathered only such thynges as eyther are not touched of Peter Martir, or not so largely declared, as I haue done the lyke in all other notable thynges, which I haue collected out of this Summarie of *Gonzalus*.

The people.

Glowormes.

Crowes stinkyng & sweete.

Of the Ilande of *Cuba*, and other.



IF the Ilande of *Cuba*, and other, as the Ilandes of *Sancti Iohannis*, and *Iamaica*, the same may be sayde in maner in all thinges as before of *Hispaniola*, although not so largely. Yet in lesse quantitie do they bring foorth the lyke thynges, as golde, copper, cattayle, trees, plantes, fyshes, and suche other, of the whiche we haue spoken there.

Sainct Iohns Ilande. *Iamaica*.

In

Partriches. In *Cuba*, is a certayne kynde of Partriches, beyng verye litle, with theyr feathers muche of the coloure of Turtle Dooues, but are of muche better taſt to be eaten: they are taken in great number, and beyng brought wylde into the houſes, they become as tame within the ſpace of three or foure dayes as though they had been hatched there: they become exceedyng fat in ſhort ſpace, and are doubtleſſe the moſt delicate and pleaſaunt meate that euer I haue eaten. But to let paſſe many other thynges that myght be heere ſayd, and to ſpeake of two marueylous thynges whiche are in this Ilande of *Cuba*: whereof the on is, that a valleye conteynyng two or three leagues in length betweene two mountaynes, is full of a kynde of verye harde ſtones, of ſuche perfect roundeneſſe, and lyke vnto Pellettes of Gunnes, that no art can make better or more exactly puliſhed.

Pellettes for Gunnes wrought by nature.

Of theſe, ſome are as ſmall as Pellettes for Handgunnes, and other ſo encreaſyng bygger and bygger from that quantitie, that they maye ſerue for all ſortes of Artyllarie, although they bee of bygggeneſſe to receyue one or two or more Quintales of pouder, euery Quyntale conteynyng one hundred weyght, or of what other quantitie ſo euer they be. Theſe Pellettes are founde throughout al the valley within the earth, as in a mine, whiche they dygge, and take out ſuche as they neede of al ſortes.

A fountayne of the pytche of Bitumen

The other marueylous thyng of this Ilande is this: That farre from the ſea, there iſſueth out of a mountayne a certayne lycour, muche lyke the Cley of Babylon, called *Bitumen*, or lyke vnto pytche, in great quantitie, and ſuche as is very commodious for the calkyng of ſhyppes: this falleth continually from the rocke, and runneth into ſea, in ſuche aboundaunce that it is ſeene flotyng aboue the water on euerye ſyde of the ſea there about, as it is dryuen from place to place by the wynde or courſe of the water. *Quintus Curſius* wryteth in his hiſtorie, that great Alexander came to the citie of *Memi*, where is a great Caue or Denne, in the whiche is a ſpryng or fountayne that contynually auoydeth a great quantitie of *Bitumen*, in ſuche ſort, that it is an eaſy thyng to beleeue that the ſtones of the walles of Babylon might be laid therewith, according as the ſaid auctour writeth. I haue ſeene this myne of *Bitumen*, not only in the Ilande of *Cuba*, but alſo ſuch an other in new Spaine, whiche was

Quintus Curſius.

Bitumen of Babylon.

founde

founde of late in the prouince of *Panuco*, where it is much better then the other of *Cuba*, as I haue seene by experience in calkyng of shyppes. *Panuco.*

Of the lande of *Baccalaos*, called *Terra Baccalearum*, situate on the North syde of the firme lande.

Shortly after that your maiestie came to the citie of *Toledo*, there arriued in the moneth of Nouember, *Steuen Gomes* the pilot, who the yeere before of .1524. by the commaundement of your maiestie, sailed to ỹ North partes, and founde a great part of lande continuate from that which is called *Baccalaos*, discourlyng toward the West to the .xl. and .xli. degree, from whence he brought certayne Indians (for so call we all the nations of the newe found landes) of the which he brought some with him from thence, who are yet in *Toledo* at this present, and of greater stature then other of the firme lande, as they are commonly: theyr coloure is muche lyke the other of the firme lande: they are great archers, and go couered with the skinnes of diuers beastes, both wylde and tame. In this lande are many excellent furres, as Warterns, Sables, and such other ryche furres, of the which the sayd pilot brought some with him into Spayne: they haue syluer, and copper, & certayne other metals: they are Idolaters, and honour the Sonne and Moone, and are seduced with such superstition and errours as are they of the firme. And to haue wryten thus much it may suffice, of suche thynges as haue seemed to me most worthy to be noted in the Summarie of *Gonzalus Ferdinandus*, wrytten to Themperours maiestie. *Baccalaos.* *Indians.* *Ryche furres and syluer,* *Idolaters.*

Particularly of newe Spayne, called *Noua Hispania*, or *Mexico*.

Newe Spayne, is that part of the continent or firme lande that lyeth West and South from the land of *Florida*: this was subduced to thempire of Castile by the ryght noble gentelman *Ferdinando Cortese* ỹ marquesse of the vale of *Quaraca*. In this lande are many prouinces, conteynyng in them in

maner innumerable cities, among which, that is the chiefe whiche the Indians cal *Mexico*, or *Temixtitan*, consysting of more then fiue hundred thousand inhabitauntes: It standeth in the middest of a lake of salte water, as doth Uenece in the sea, the lake conteyneth fourtie Persian miles, called *Parasange*, euery one consysting of .xxx. furlonges, and more, as some say. In these regions is found great plentie of gold, syluer, & pretious stones, with innumerable other thynges, both necessary for the lyfe of man, & pleasant, as Silke, Bombasine cotton, Alame, Safferne, Woad, with diuers other thinges, wherwith cloth and Silke is dyed. There is also such abundaunce of suger, that certaine Spanishe shippes are yeerely fraighted therwith, and bring the same into Sicile, from whence it is caryed in maner to al partes of Christendome. Thinhabitantes of *Mexico* are subtile people, and vse much craft in theyr bargaining: they haue not the vse of gold and syluer mony, but vse in the steade thereof the halfe shelles of Almonds, which kind of Barbarous mony they cal *Cacoa*, or *Cacanguate*. In maner al kinds of corne are there very good cheape, especially barly and wheate. They haue great plentie of Hartes, wylde Boxes, Lions, Leopardes, and Tigers, whiche beastes wander in maner in euery place. The region is most commodious for haukyng and huntyng, for the great abundaunce it hath of beastes and foules: But the people exercise al theyr cunnyng in makyng the images of their idolatry, and in painting. Theyr women are valiant, and sumptuous in theyr apparell, and other tyrementes: for they so rychely frynge and beset the same with pearles, precious stones, and golde, that nothyng can be more excellent: they haue a kynde of paper greatly differyng from ours, in this they expresse their mindes by certayne figures, for they haue not otherwyse thuse of letters. The nation is desyrous of warre, and doth not long keepe the conditions of peace inuiolated: but delyteth rather in ciuile and most cruell battayle among them selues, then to liue in peace and quietnesse. Such as in the warres fal by any meanes into the handes of theyr enimies, eyther by submyssion or otherwyse, are partly sacrifised to the Idoles, and the residue geuen to the souldiers to be eaten, in lyke maner as we reward dogges and haukes with part of theyr pray. They haue innumerable Idoles, whiche euery one

The citie of Mexico, or Temixtitan.

Golde and syluer.

Sylke.
Cotton.
Alame.
Woade.
Suger.

Shelles for mony.

Corne.
Beastes.

Haukyng and huntyng.

Paintyng.

Wome̅ sumptuously apparelled.

A warlyke nation.

Captiues sacrificed to Idoles.

maketh

maketh for his particuler god, after the phantasie of his owne brayne, and geueth therto diuine honour, albeit at this day they do by litle and litle leaue of their barbarous fiercenesse, & with our religion imbrace better maners: For they nowe professe the fayth of Christ, and in his name pray vnto God the Father.

Of *Peru*.



The prouince called *Peru*, was also named *Noua Castilia*, by them that first founde it. This region is the West part of *America*, and is situate in the longitude of .290. degrees, proceeding from the West to the East, and Southward begynneth fiue degrees beyonde the Equinoctiall line, and is extended very farre into the South. This is taken to be the rychest land in golde, siluer, pearles, precious stones, and spices, that euer was founde yet to this day. For gold is there in suche plentie that they make pysspots therof, and other vessels applied to filthy vses. But this is more to be marueyled at, that in a citie called *Collao* was founde a house al couered with massie plates of gold. In their warres also their harnesse is of gold and siluer. Their weapons are bowes, arrowes, slyngs, dartes, and pykes. The inhabitauntes are warrelyke people, and of great agilitie. They haue cities defended with lawes and armes. The region is exceeding fruitfull, and yeldeth corne twyse in the yeere. It is so flowrishyng with many fayre woods, mountaynes, ryuers, and other both pleasaunt & necessarie commodities, that it seemeth in a maner an earthly Paradise: it hath diuers kynds of beastes, and yet none hurtful, or of rauenyng kynde. Their sheepe are of suche heyght, that they vse them in steede of Horses: some write that they are as bygge as the young Foles of Camelles, and that their wooll is verye softe and fyne: also that the Ewes bryng foorth Lambes twyse a yeere. The people are wyttie, and of gentle behauiour, cunnyng also in artes, faythfull of promise, and of maners not greatly to be discommended, saue only that they are ignorant of Christ, who neuertheless is now knowen vnto them in many places, as our hope is he shalbe daylie more

Peru is the rychest land that is knowen.

A house couered with golde.

Harnesse of golde.

A fruitfull region.

Great sheepe.

The dutie of Christian Princes.

more and more, yf all Princes wyll herein put theyr helpyng handes to the plowe of our Lorde, and send labourers into his vineyarde.

Of the great ryuer called *Rio de la Plata* (that is) the ryuer of siluer.

Paraue.

John Dias Solis.

The Iland Martinus Gratias.

THis ryuer reacheth very farre in length & breadth, and is called *Vruai*, in the Indian tongue. Into this falleth an other riuer named Paraue. The first that sayled into the riuer of Plata, was *Iohn Dias Solis*, whom the ryght noble kyng of Spaine *Ferdinandus* made Admirall of these seas. In the ryuer lyeth an Ilande whiche *Iohn Dias* named *Martinus Gratias*, because a pilot of his, so called, was buried there. This Ilande is situate in the myddest of the ryuer, and is distant from the mouth of the same about fourtie leagues. As the sayde Admyrall attempted to expugne the Ilande, he was sodenly oppressed and slayne of the Indians that priuyly assayled hym. Wherewith neuertheless theyr barbarous crueltie was not satisfied vntyll they had torne hym in peeces, and deuoured hym: But many yeeres after, the Emperours Maiestie, and Kyng of Spayne Charles the fyfte, sent foorth *Sebastian Cabot* (a man of great courage & skylful in Cosmographie, and of no lesse experience as concernyng the Starres of the sea) with commaundement to discouer and subdue the Indians of *Tharsis*, *Ophir*, *Cipango*, and *Coi Cathai*. Receyuyng therefore his commission, and proceedyng forwardes on his viage, he arriued by chaunce at this Ilande: the cause whereof was, that the principall vessell was lost by shypwracke, and the men that saued theyr lyues by swymmyng were receyued into our shyppes. Perceyuyng therefore that by reason of this chaunce he coulde by no meanes perfourme his viage attempted, he entended to expugne the sayde Ilande, and thereupon to conueygh his victuals to land, to prepare his souldiers to the inuasion, to plant colonies, & to erect fortresses by the riuers side, wherby the Spaniards might be defended from the violence of the Barbarians. But before he attempted this, he was aduertised that the Ilande was rich in gold & siluer. Which thing did so encorage him, that

The viage of Sebastian Cabot to the riuer of Plata.

Tharsis.

Ophir.

Cipango.

Cathay.

without

without respecte of peryl he thought best to expugne it by one meanes or other, wherein his boldenesse tooke good effecte, as often tymes chaunceth in great affayres. Furthermore as touchyng the ryuer, *Sebastian Cabote* made relation, that he neuer sawe any comparable vnto this in breadth and deapth: For whereas it falleth into the sea, it conteyneth .xxb. leagues in breadth. From the mouth of the ryuer, *Cabote* sailed vp the same into the lande for the space of three hundred and fiftie leagues, as he wryteth in his owne carde. That it is of great deapth, may hereby be considered, that many great ryuers fall into it, so that the chanell can not be shalowe that conteyneth such aboundance of water, and suche plentie of good and great fyshes: For there is in maner no fyshe in the sea, that is not founde in this ryuer. Assoone as the Spanyardes were set alande, they made a proofe if the soyle were fruitefull to beare corne. Takyng therefore fyftie graynes of wheate, and committyng the same to the earth in the moneth of September, they geathered thereof two thousand and fiftie at December next folowyng: (wherin some being deceyued and mistakyng the thyng, haue written in the steade of two thousande and fiftie, fiftie thousande and two:) the lyke fertilitie is there of all other grayne and pulse. Furthermore thinhabitauntes declared, that not farre from that place, there are great and hygh mountaines, in the which is founde great plentie of golde: and no great distance from the same, to be other mountaynes no lesse fruitefull of syluer, and many other thinges, long to rehearse. Thinhabitauntes are paynefull men, and tyll the grounde diligently, wherein they take great pleasure, and haue therefore great plentie of bread of *Maizium*. There are sheepe of such byggenesse, that they compare them to young Camels or Asses, as some say: theyr wooll is very fine, and nearest vnto the fyneneſſe of sylke. There are also beastes of diuers kyndes. Among men there is this difference, that such as liue in the mountaynes, are whyte, and for the most part lyke vnto the men of our regions: but they that dwell aboue the ryuer (as though they tooke theyr colour thereof) are blackyshe, or purple, of the coloure of fine Iron or Steele. This also chaunceth to many of them, that theyr feete and legges are lyke the legges and feete of the foule called the Dystreche.

The ryuer of Plata.

Marueylous fruitefulnes.

Mountaynes conteyning golde and syluer.

Great sheepe.

Theyr colour.

Men with deformed legges.

Of the landes of *Laborador* and *Baccalaos*, lying west and northwest from England, and being part of the firme lande of the VVest Indies.

The way to the Ilandes of Molucca by the north sea.

MAny haue trauepled to search the coaste of the lande of *Laborador*, aswell to thintent to knowe howe farre or whyther it reacheth, as also whether there be any passage by sea thyough the same into the sea of *Sur* and the Ilandes of *Molucca*, whiche are vnder the Equinoctiall lyne, thynkyng that the way thyther should greatly be shoxtened by this viage. The Spanyardes, as to whose ryght the sayde Ilandes of spices parteyne, dyd fyrst seeke to fynde the same by this way. The Portugales also hauyng the trade of spices in theyr handes, dyd trauayle to fynde the same, although hytherto neyther any suche passage is founde, or the ende of that lande. In the yeere a thousande and fiue hundreth, *Gasper Cortesreales*, made a viage thyther with two Carauelles, but found not the streight or passage he sought. At his being there, he named the Ilands that lye in the mouth of ỹ gulfe *Quadrado*, after his name *Cortesreales*, lying in the fyftie degree, and more, & brought from that land about threescore men for slaues: He greatly marueyled to behold the huge quantitie of snowe & Isse, for the sea is there frosen exceedingly. Thinhabitantes are men of good corporature, although tawny lyke the Indies, and laborious: They paynt theyr bodyes, and weare bracelettes and hoopes of syluer and copper: theyr apparell is made of the skynnes of Marternes, & dyuers other beastes, whiche they weare with the heare inwarde in winter, and outwarde in sommer. This apparell they gyde to theyr bodyes with gyrdels made of cotton, or the synewes of fyshes and beastes. They eate fyshe more then any other thyng, and especially Salmons, although they haue foules and fruite. They make theyr houses of tymber, whereof they haue great plentie: and in the steade of tiles, couer them with the skinnes of fishes and beastes. It is sayde also that there are Gryfes in this lande, and that the Beares and many other beastes and foules are whyte. To this

The Spanyardes.

Gasper Cortesreales.

Insula Cortesreales.

Snowe and Isse.

Furres.

Fyshe.

Gryfes.
Beares.

and

and the Ilandes about the same, the Britons are accustomed to resort, as men of nature agreeable vnto them, and borne vnder the same altitude and temperature. The Norwayes also sayled thyther with the pilot called *Iohn Scoluo*, and the Englyshe men with *Sebastian Cabot*.

The Britons.

Sebastian Cabot.

The coaste of the lande of *Baccallaos*, is a great tract, and the greatest altitude thereof is .xlviii. degrees and a halfe. *Sebastian Cabot* was the first that brought any knowledge of this land. For beyng in England in the dayes of kyng Henrye the seuenth, he furnyshed two shyps at his owne charges, or (as some say) at the kynges, whom he perswaded that a passage myght be founde to *Cathay* by the North seas, and that spyces myght be brought from thence sooner by that way then by the viage the Portugales vse by the sea of Sur. He went also to knowe what maner of landes those Indies were to inhabite. He had with hym three hundred men, and directed his course by the tract of Islande, vpon the Cape of *Laborador* at fyftie and eight degrees, affirming that in the moneth of July there was such cold, & heapes of Isse, that he durst passe no further: also that the daies were very long, and in maner without nyght, and the nyghtes very cleare. Certayne it is, that at the threescore degrees, the longest day is of eighteene houres. But considering the cold, and the strangenesse of the vnknowen lande, he turned his course from thence to the West, folowing the coast of the land of *Baccallaos* vnto the thirtie eight degrees, from whence he returned to Englande. To conclude, the *Britons* and *Danes*, haue sayled to the *Baccallaos*, and *Iaques Cartier* a french man was there twise with three Galeons: as one in the yeere .xxxiiii. and the other in the .xxxv. and chose the land to inhabite from the .xlv. degrees to the .li. beyng as good a land as Fraunce, and all thynges therin commune to suche as fyrst possesse the same. Of these landes, *Iacobus Gastaldus* writeth thus. The new land of *Baccallaos*, is a colde region, whose inhabitauntes are Idolatours, and praye to the Sonne and Moone, and dyuers Idoles: they are whyte people, and verye rusticall, for they eate flesh and fysh and all other thynges rawe. Sometymes also they eate mans flesh priuilie, so that theyr *Cacique* haue no knowledge thereof. The apparrel of both the men and women, is made of Beares skynnes, although they

Isse in July.

Baccallaos.

Britons.
Danes.
Iaques Cartyer.

The people of Baccallaos.

haue Sables and Warternes, not greatlye esteemed, because they are litle. Some of them go naked in sommer, and weare apparrell only in winter. The Britons and Frenchmen are accustomed to take fyshe in the coastes of these landes, where is founde great plentie of Tunnies, which thinhabitantes cal *Baccallaos*, wherof the land was so named. Northward from the region of *Baccallaos*, is the lande of *Laborador*, all full of mountaynes and great woods, in which are manye Beares & wild Boyes. The inhabitantes are Idolatours, and warlyke people, apparelled as are they of *Baccallaos*. In al this new land, is neyther citie or castell, but they lyue in companies like heardes of beastes.

Fyshing for Tunnies.

Laborador,

The discouering of the land of *Florida*.



John Ponce. Water of great vertue, of this reade in the Decades.

He gouernour of the Ilande of *Borioueua*, Iohn Ponce of Leon, beyng discharged of his office, and very ryche, furnished & sent foorth two Carauels to seeke the Ilands of *Boiuca*, in the which the Indians affirmed to be a fountayne or spryng whose water is of vertue to make old men young. Whyle he trauayled syxe monethes, with outragious desire among many Ilandes to fynde that he sought, and coulde fynde no token of any suche fountayne, he entred into *Bemini*, and discouered the lande of *Florida*, in the yeere 1512. on Easter day, whiche the Spaniards cal the floryshing day of *Pascha*, wherby they named that lande *Florida*. And supposyng that great ryches myght be brought from thence, he returned into Spayne, and couenanted with king *Ferdinando*, as touchyng the trade: and by the intercession of *Nicolas de Ouando*, and *Peter Nunnez de Guſman*, the kyng dyd not only make hym gouernour of *Bemini* and *Florida*, but also sent foorth with hym three shyppes from Sciuile towards his second viage, in the yeere 1515. He touched in the Ilande of *Guaccana*, otherwyse called *Guadalupea*, and sent to lande certayne of his men with the Laundryesses of the shyppes: whom the Canibales (lying in ambushe) assayled with theyr inuenomed arrowes, and slaying the most part, caried away the women. With this euill beginning, Iohn Ponce departed from hence to *Boriquen*, and from thence to *Florida*, where he went alande

Bemini,

Guaccana.

The Canibales.

Boriquen.

alande with his souldyers, to espie a place most commodious to inhabite and plant a colonie: But the Indians commyng foorth agaynst him to defende the entrance, assayled the Spanyardes fiercely, and slue and wounded many of them. At whiche conflicte also hee him selfe, beyng wounded with an arrowe, dyed shortly after in the Ilande of *Cuba*: and so endyng his lyfe, consumed a great parte of the rychesse hee had before gotten at sainct Iohans of *Boriquen*. This Iohn Ponce had before sayled with *Christopher Colon* to the Ilande of *Hispaniola* in the yeere 1493. Hee was a gentle souldyer in the warres of this Ilande, and captayne of the prouince of *Higuei* for *Nicolas de Ouando* that conquested the same. The region of *Florida* is a poynt or cape of lande reachyng into the sea lyke vnto a tongue, beyng a famous and notorious place among the Indians, by reason of many Spanyardes that haue been slayne there. But whereas by fame this *Florida* was esteemed a ryche lande, many valiant and noble men desyred the conquest thereof, among whom *Ferdinando de Soto* (who had before been a captayne in *Peru*, and greatly inryched by the imprisonment of kyng *Atabaliba*) attempted a viage thither with a good bande of men, and spent fyue yeeres in seekyng of golde mynes, supposyng that this land had been lyke vnto *Peru*. In fine, hee dyed there, and was the destruction and vndoyng of all that went with him, without inhabytyng that lande, in the whiche the conquestours had hytherto neuer good successe, forasmuche as these Indians are valiant archers, and strong & hardy men. But the valiant myndes of the Spanyardes not discouraged by these misaduentures, after the death of *Ferdinando Soto*, many worthie gentlemen desyred this conquest in the yeere. 1544. among whom was *Iulian Samano*, and *Peter de Ahumada*, beyng brethern, and men of sufficient abilitie for such an enterprise. But neyther the Emperour beyng then in Germanie, neyther the prince *Don Philip* his son, who gouerned all the kyngdomes of Castile and Aragonie, neyther yet the counsayle of the Indies, would in any case agree to the conquest. Neuertheless, not vtterly contemnyng the matter, which they were partly persuaded myght otherwyse be brought to passe, they sent thyther Fryer *Luys, Cancell* of *Baluastro*, with other Fryers of the order of sainct Dominike, who offred themselues

The death of Iohn Ponce.

The lande of Florida.

Ferdinando de Soto.

The valiant myndes of the Spanyardes.

The thyrd Attempt of the conquest of Florida.

Certayne Fryers attempt the conquest onely with wordes, but with euyll successe.

selues to conuert the nations of that lande from theyr gentilitie to the fayth of Christ, and obedience to the Emperour, onely with wordes. The Fryer therefore going forwarde on his viage at the kynges charges, in the yeere. 1549. went aland with foure other Fryers which he tooke with him, and certayne mayners, without harnesse or weapons: vnto whom as he began his preachyng, many of the Indians of the sayde *Elorida* resorted to the sea syde, where without gyuyng audience to his wordes, they caryed him away, with three other of his companyons, and dyd eate them, whereby they suffred martyrdome for the fayth of Christ: the residue that escaped, made hast to the shyppe, and kept themselues for confessours, as some say. Many that fauour the intent of the Fryers, doe nowe consider that by that meanes the Indians could not be brought to our friendshyp and religion: neuertheless, that if it could so haue been brought to passe, it had been better. There came of late from that shyppe, one that had been the page of *Ferdinando de Soto*, who declared that the Indians hanged vp the skynnes, with the heades and crownes of the sayd Fryers in one of theyr Temples.

The Fryers are slayne and eaten.

A newe kynde of disgradyng.

¶ FOR. M. CAP. FVRBY-SHERS PASSAGE BY THE NORTHVVEST.

OF CHINA IN CATHAYO, SITVATED IN THE EAST SYDE OF GREAT ASY.

OF THE IL AND GIAPAN, AND OTHER LITLE ILES IN TTE EAST OCEAN, BY THE VVAY FROM CATHAYO TO THE MOLVCCAES.

BY RICHARDE WILLES.

For. M. Captayne Furbishers passage by the Northweſt. To the ryght honourable and vertuous Ladie, the Lady Anne, Counteſſe of VVarwyke.

FOure famous wayes there be ſpoken of to thoſe fruitfull and wealthie Ilandes, we doe vſually call *Moluccaes*, continually haunted for gayne, and dayly traueyled for ryches therein growyng. Theſe Ilandes although they ſtand Eaſt from our Meridian, diſtant almoſt halfe the length of the worlde, in extreame heate, vnder the Equinoctial lyne, poſſeſſed of Infidelles and Barbares: yet by our neyghbours great aboundaunce of wealth there is paynefully ſought, in reſpect of the voyage deerely bought, and from thence daungerouſly brought home vnto vs. Our neyghbours I call the Portugalles in compariſon of the *Molucchians* for neereneſſe vnto vs, for lyke ſituation weſtwarde as we haue, for theyr vſuall trade with vs, for that the farre South aſterlynges doe know this parte of Europe by no other name then Portugall, not greatly acquaynted as yet with the other nations thereof. Theyr voyage is well vnderſtoode of all men, and the Southeaſterne way rounde about Affrike by the cape of Good hope, more ſpoken of, better knowen & traueyled than that it may ſeeme needefull to diſcourſe thereof any further.

1. By the ſouth-eaſt.

2. By the ſouth-weſt.

The ſeconde way lyeth Southweſt, betwyxt the Weſt Indie or South America, and the South continent, through that narrow ſtreicte where *Magellanus* firſt of all men that euer wee doe reade of, paſſed theſe later yeeres, leauyng therevnto therfore his name. This way no doubt the Spanyardes would commodiouſly take, for that it lyeth neare vnto their dominions there, could the Eaſterne currant and leuant wyndes as eaſily ſuffer them to returne, as ſpeedily therewith they may be carryed thyther: for the which difficultie or rather impoſſibilitie of ſtriuing agaynſt the force both of wynde and ſtreame, this paſſage is litle or nothyng vſed, although it be very well knowen.

3. By the north-eaſt.

The thyrd way by the Northeaſt, beyonde all Europe and *Aſie*, that woorthie and renowmed knight ſir *Hugh Willoughby* ſought

sought to his perill, enforced there to ende his lyfe for colde, congealed and frosen to death. And truely this way consisteth rather in the imagination of Geographers, than allowable either in reason, or approued by experience, as wel it may appeare by the dangerous trending of the Scythish Cape set by *Ortelius* vnder the eight degree North, by the vnlykely saylyng in that Northerne sea alwayes cladde with Yse and Snow, or at the least continually pestred therewith, if happely it be at any tyme dissolued: besydes bayes & shelfes, the water waxyng more shallow towardes the East, that we say nothyng of the foule mystes and darke fogs in the colde clime, of the litle power of the Sunne to cleare the ayre, of the vncomfortable nyghtes, so neare the Pole, fyue monethes long. *Ortel. tab. Asiæ. 3.*

A fourth way to goe vnto these aforesayde happy Ilandes *Molucc æ*, Syr *Humfrey Gilberte*, a learned and valiant Knyght, discourseth of at large in his new passage to *Cathayo*, and was attempted the last yeere by your Ho. seruaunt. M. Cap. *Furbisher*, presently takyng vpon him with his company fully to discouer the same, and is now, if I be not deceyued, ready for his voyage. The enterpryse of it selfe beyng vertuous, the facte must doubtlesse deserue hygh prayse, and whansoeuer it shall be finished, the fruites thereof can not be small: where vertue is guyde, there is fame a folower, and fortune a Companion. But the way is dangerous, the passage doubtfull, the voyage not throughly knowen, and therfore gaynesayde by many, after this maner. 4. By the Northwest.

First, who can assure vs of any passage rather by the Northwest, than by the Northeast? doe not both wayes lye in equall distance from the North pole? stande not the North capes of eyther continent vnder lyke eleuation? Is not the Ocean sea beyonde America farther distant from our Meridian by. 30. or. 40. degrees West, than the extreame pointes of *Cathayo* Eastward, if *Ortelius* generall Carde of the world be true? In the Northeast that noble Knyght sir *Hugh Willoughby* perished for colde: and can you than promyse a passenger any better hap by the Northwest? who hath gone for triall sake, at any tyme, this way out of *Europe* to *Cathayo*? Ob. 1. In Theatro.

If you seeke the aduyse heerein of such as make profession in Cosmographie, Ptolome, the father of Geographie, and his eldest Ob. 2.

best children,will answere by theyr Mappes with a negatiue, concludyng moste of the sea within the land,and makyng an end of the world northward, neare the.36.degree.The same opinion, whan learnyng chiefly florished, was receiued in the Romanes tyme,as by their Poetes wrytynges it may appeare: *Et te colet vltima Thule*, sayd *Virgile*,being of opinion,that Island was the extreme parte of the world habitable towarde the North. *Ioseph Moletius* an Italian, and *Mercator* a Germane, for knowledge men able to be compared with the best Geographers of our time, the one in his halfe Spheares of the whole worlde, the other in some of his great Globes, haue continued the West Indishe lande,euen to the North Pole, and consequently, cut of all passage by sea that way.

The same Doctors, *Mercator* in other of his Globes and Mappes, *Moletius* in his sea carde, neuertheless doubting of so great continuance of the former continent,haue opened a goulph betwixt the West Indies and the extreme northerne lande: but suche a one,that ether is not to be traueyled for the causes in the first Obiection alleaged, or cleane shut vp from vs in *Europe* by *Groenland*:the Sonth ende whereof *Moletius* maketh firme lande with America, the north parte continent with Lapponlande and Norway.

Ob.3. Thyrdly,the greatest fauourers of this voyage, can not deny but that if any such passage be, it lyeth subiect vnto Yse and snow for the most parte of the yeere, whereas it standeth in the edge of the frostie Zone.Before the Sunne hath warmed the ayre, and dissolued the Yse, eche one well knoweth that there can bee no saylyng: the Yse once broken through the continuall abode, the Sunne maketh a certayne season in those partes: how shall it be possible for so weake a vessell as a shyppe is, to holde out amyd whole Ilandes, as it were, of Yse continually beatyng on eche syde,and at the mouth of that goulphe,issuyng downe furiously from the North, safely to passe,whan whole mountaynes

Ob.4. of Yse and Snow shalbe tombled downe vpon her.

Wel, graunt the west Indies not to continue continent vnto the Pole,graunt there be a passage betwyxt these two landes, let the goulph lye neare vs than commonly in cardes we fynde it set, namely,betwyxt the,61.ſ.64.degrees north,as *Gemma Frisius* in his

his Mappes and Globes imagineth it, and so left by our countriman *Sebastian Cabote*, in his table, the which my good Lorde your father hath at Cheynies, and so tryed this last yeere by your Honours seruaunt as hee reported, and his carde and compasse doe witnesse. Let the way bee voyde of all difficulties, yet doeth it not folowe that we haue free passage to *Cathayo*. For examples sake. You may trende all *Norway*, *Finmarke*, and *Lapponlande*, and than bow Southwarde to sainct *Nicolas* in *Moscouia*: you may lykewyse in the Mediterranean sea fetche *Constantinople*, and the mouth of *Tanais*: yet is there no passage by sea through *Moscouia*, into *Pont Euxine*, now called *Mare Maggiore*. Agayne, in the aforesayde Mediterranean sea, we sayle to Alexandria in Egypt, the Barbares bryng theyr pearle and spices from the *Moluccaes* vp the read sea and Arabian goulph to *Sues*, scarsely three dayes iourney from the aforesayde hauen: yet haue we no way by sea, from Alexandria to the *Moluccaes*, for that *Isthmos* or litle streicte of lande betwyxt the two seas. In lyke maner, although the northerne passage bee free at. 61. degrees latitude, and the West Ocean beyonde America, vsually called *Mar del Zur*, knowen to be open at. 40. degrees eleuation, for the Ilande *Giapan*, yea. 300. leagues northerly aboue *Giapan*: yet may there bee lande to hynder the through passage that way by sea, as in the examples aforesayde it falleth out, *Asia* and America there beyng ioyned togeather in one continent. Ne can this opinion seeme altogeather friuolous vnto any one that diligently peruseth our Cosmographers doynges. *Iosephus Moletius* is of that mynde, not onely in his playne hemispheres of the worlde, but also in his sea carde. The French Geographers in lyke maner, bee of the same opinion, as by their Mappe cut out in fourme of a harte you may perceyue: as though the West Indyes were parte of *Asie*. Whiche sentence well agreeth with that olde conclusion in the scholes. *Quidquid præter Africam et Europam est, Asia est.* Whatsoeuer land doeth neyther appertayne vnto Afrike nor to Europe, is parte of *Asie*.

Further.

you may reade in his carde drawen with his owne hande, the mouth of the northwesterne streict lieth neare the .318. Meridian, betwixt .61. and .64. degrees in eleuation, continuyng the same breadth about .10 degrees west, where it openeth southerly more and more, vntyll it come vnder the tropike of *Cancer*, and so runneth into *Mar del Zur*, at the least .18. degrees more in breadth there, then it was where it fyrst began: otherwyse I coulde as well imagine this passage to be more vnlykely then the voyage to *Moscouia*, and more impossible then it for the farre situation and continuance thereof in ỹ frosty clime: as nowe I can affyrme it to be very possible and most lykely in comparison thereof, for that it nether coasteth so farre north as the *Moscouian* passage doth, nether is this streicte so long as that, before it bowe downe southerly towardes the Sonne agayne.

Sol .2. The seconde argument concludeth nothing. *Ptolome* knewe not what was aboue .16. degrees south beyonde the equinoctiall lyne, he was ignorant of all passages northwarde from the eleuation of .63. he knewe no Ocean sea beyonde *Asia*, yet haue the Portugalles trended ỹ Cape of good hope at the south poynte of *Afrike*, and trauayled to *Giapan* an Ilande in the east Ocean, betwixt *Asia* & *America*: our marchants in ỹ time of king Edward the fyrst discouered the *Moscouian* passage farther north then *Thule*, and shewed *Groenlande* not to be continent with *Lapponlande*, and Norway: the lyke our northwesterne trauaylers haue done, declaryng, by theyr nauigation that way, the ignorance of all Cosmographers that ether do ioyne *Groenlande* with *America*, or continue the west Indies with that frosty regton vnder the north pole. As for *Virgil* he sange accordingly to ỹ knowledge of men in his time, as an other poete dyd of the hotte *Zone*.

Ouid.1.Meta. *Quarum quæ media est, non est habitabilis æstu.* Imaginyng, as most men then dyd, *Zonam torridam*, the hot *Zone*, to be altogeather dishabited for heat, though presently we knowe many famous and worthy kingdomes and cities in that part of the earth, and the Iland of saint Thomas neare *Aethiopia*, and the welthy Ilands for the which chiefly al these voyages are taken in hande, to be inhabited euen vnder the equinoctial lyne.

Sol.3. To answere the third obiection, besides *Cabota* & al other trauaylers nauigations, ỹ only credit of *M.Furbisher* may suffise, who lately

lately, in t[illegible]al these Ilands of Ise, and mountaines of snowe, passed that way, euen beyond the gulphe that tumbleth downe from the North, and in some places though he drewe one ynche thick Ise, as he returning in August dyd, came home safelye agayne.

The fourth argument is altogeather friuolous & vayne, for neyther is there any isthmos or streict of land betwixt *America* and *Asia*, ne can these two landes ioyntly be one continent. The fyrst part of my answere is manifestly allowed of by *Homer*, whom that excellent Geographer *Strabo* followeth, yeldyng hym in this facultie the pryse. The aucthour of that booke lykewyse περι κοσμου to Alexander, attributed vnto *Aristotle*, is of ỹ same opinion, that *Homer* and *Strabo* be of, in two or thyee places. *Dionisius* in οικυμένης περιήγησι hath this verse. ὥτως ὠκεανός περιδρέμεται γαῖαν ἅπασαν. *So dooth the Ocean sea runne rounde about the worlde*: speakyng only of *Europe*, *Africke*, and *Asie*, as then *Asie* was trauayled & knowen. With these Doctoures may you ioyne *Pomponius Mela*, *Cap.* 2. *lib.* 1. *Plinius lib.* 2. *Cap.* 67. and *Pius.* 2. *Cap.* 2. in his description of *Asie*. All the whiche writers do no lesse confirme the whole Easterne side of *Asie* to be compassed about with sea, then *Plato* doth affirme in *Timæo*, vnder the name *Atlantide*, the West Indies to be an Ilande, as in a speciall discourse thereof. R. Eden writeth, agreable vnto the sentence of *Proclus*, *Marsilius Ficinus*, and others. Out of *Plato* it is gathered that *America* is an Ilande. *Homer*, *Strabo*, *Aristotle*, *Dionisius*, *Mela*, *Plinie*, *Pius* 2. affirme the continent of *Asie*, *Afrike*, and *Europe*, to be enuironned with the Ocean. I may therefore boldly say, though later intelligences therof had we none at all, that *Asie* and the West Indies, be not tied togeather by any isthmos or streict of land, contrary to the opinion of some new Cosmographers, by whom doubtfully this matter hath been brought in controuersie. And thus muche for the first part of my aunswere vnto the fourth obiection.

Sol. 4.

Lib. Geog.

περι.

The second part, namely that *America* & *Asie* can not be one continent, may thus be proued. καταντης γῆς κοιλότητα ῥεῖ καὶ τῶν ποταμῶν το πλῆθος. The most riuers take downe that way their course, where the earth is most holowe & deepe,

Lib. 2. *Meteor. Cap.* 1.

wryteth Aristotle: and the sea, sayth he in the same place, as it goeth farther, so is it founde deeper. Into what gouphe do the Moscouian ryuers *Onega*, *Duina*, *Oby*, and *Rha*, powre out their streames? Northwarde out of *Moscouia* into the sea. Whiche way dooth that sea stryke? The South is mayne lande, the Easterne coast waxeth more and more shalowe: from the North, ether naturally, because that part of the earth is higher *Aristot. 2. met. c. 1.* or of necessitie, for that the forcible influence of some Northerne Starres causeth the earth there to shake of the sea, as some Philosophers do thynke: or finally for the great store of waters engendred in that frostie and cold clyme, that the banckes are not able to holde them. *Alber. in 2. Meteo. Cap. 6.* From the North I say, contynually falleth downe great abundaunce of water. So that this Northeasterne currant must at the length abruptly bowe toward vs South on the West syde of *Fynmarke* and *Norwaye*: or els stryke downe Southwest aboue *Groneland*, or betwixt *Groneland* and *Iseland*, into the Northwest streict we speake of, as of congruence it doth, yf you marke the situation of that region, and by the report of M. Furbisher, experience teacheth vs. And M. Furbisher the further he trauayled in the former passage, as he tolde me, the deeper alwayes he founde sea. Lay you now the sum hereof togeather. The riuers runne where the Chanels are most hollow, the sea in taking his course waxeth deeper, the sea waters fall continuallye from the North Southward, the Northeasterne currant striketh downe into the streict we speake of, & is there augmented with whole mountains of ise & snow, falling downe furiously out from ꝑ land vnder ꝑ North Pole. Where store of water is, there is it a thing impossible to want sea, where sea not only doth not want, but waxeth deeper, ther can be discouered no land. Finally, whence I pray you came the contrary tyde, that M. Furbisher met withal after that he had sayled no small way in that passage, if there be any isthmos or streict of land betwixt the aforesaid Northwesterne gulfe and *Mar del Zur*, to ioyne *Asia* and *America* togeather? That conclusion frequented in scholes *Quidquid preter &c.* was ment of the partes of the worlde then knowen, and so is it of ryght to be vnderstoode.

Plin. lib. 2. Cap. 67.

Sol. 5.

The fifte obiection requireth for answere, wysedome, and policie,

ficie, in the trauailer, to wyn the Barbares fauour by some good meanes: and so to arme & strengthen him selfe, that when he shal haue the repulse in one coast, he may safely trauaile to an other, commodiously taking his conuenient times, & discretly making choyse of them with whom he wyl thoughly deale. To force a violent entrie, would for vs Englishe men be very hard, consyderyng the strength and valeour of so great a nation, farre distaunt from vs, and the attempt thereof myght bee most perillous vnto the doers, vnlesse theyr part were verye good. Touchyng theyr lawes agaynst strangers, you shall reade neuertheless in the same relations of *Galeotto Perera*, that the *Cathaian* kyng is woont to graunt free accesse vnto all forreiners that trade into his countrey for marchandyse, and a place of lybertie for them to remaine in: as the Moxes had, vntyll such time as they had brought the *Loutea* or Lieuetenaunt of that coaste to be a circumcised Saracene: wherefore some of them were put to the swoorde, the rest were scattred abrode: at *Fuquien*, a great citie in *China*, certayne of them are yet this day to be seen. As for the *Giapans*, they be most desyrous to be acquaynted with strangers. The Portugals though they were straightly handled there at the fyrst, yet in the ende they founde great fauoure at the yrince his hands, insomuch that the *Loutea* or president that misused them, was therefore put to death. The rude Indish *Canoa* halleth that seas, the Portugalles, the Saracenes, & Moxes traueil continually vp & downe that reache from *Giapan* to *China*, from *China* to *Malacca*, from *Malacca* to the *Moluccaes*: and shal an Englishmã, better appointed then any of them al (that I say no more of our naute) feare to saile in that Ocean? What seas at al doo want piracie? what nauigation is there voyde of peril? To the last argument. Our traueylers neede not to seeke their returne by the northeast, ne shall they be constrayned, except they lyst, ether to attempte *Magellane* streicte at the Southwest, or to be in daunger of the Portugalles for the Southeast: they may returne by the northwest, that same way they do go foorth, as experience hath shewed. The reason alleaged for proofe of the contrary, may be disproued after this maner. And fyrst, it may be called in controuersie, whether any currant continually be forced by the motion of *Primum mobile*, rounde about *Sol. 6.*

the woꝛlde, oꝛ no: foꝛ learned men do diuerſely handle that queſtion. The naturall courſe of all waters is downewarde, wherfoꝛe of congruence they fall that way wheꝛe they fynde the earth moſt lo we anddeepe: in reſpecte whereof, it was erſt ſayde, the ſeas to ſtrike from the Noꝛthẏen landes Southerly. Violently the ſeas are toſſed and troubled diuerſe wayes with the wyndes, encreaſed and diminiſhed by the courſe of the Moone, hoyſed vp and downe thꝛough the ſundꝛye operations of the Sonne and the Starres: finally ſome be of opinion, that the ſeas be carried in part violently about ẏ woꝛld after the daily motion of the higheſt mouable heauen, in lyke maner as ẏ elementes of ayꝛe and fyꝛe, with the reſt of the heauenly ſpheres are, from the eaſt vnto the weſt. And this they do call theyꝛ eaſterne currant, oꝛ leuant ſtreame. Some ſuche currant may not be denied to be of great foꝛce in the hote Zone, foꝛ the nearenes thereof vnto the centre of the Sonne and bluſtryng eaſterne wyndes violently dꝛyuing the ſeas weſtwarde: howbeit in the temperate climes, the Sonne beyng farther of, and the wyndes moꝛe diuerſe, blowyng as muche from the noꝛth, the weſt, and ſouth, as from the eaſt, this rule doth not effectually withholde vs from trauey-lyng eaſtwarde, ne be we kepte euer backe by the afoꝛeſayde Leuante wyndes and ſtreame. But in *Magellane* ſtreict we are violently dꝛiuen backe weſtwarde: Ergo thꝛough the Noꝛth-weſterne ſtreicte oꝛ *Anian* fret ſhall we not be able to returne eaſtwarde? it foloweth not. The fyꝛſt, foꝛ that the noꝛthweſterne ſtreict hath moꝛe ſea rome at the leaſt by one hundꝛed Engliſhe myles, then *Magellane* fret hath, the onely want wheꝛof cauſeth all narrowe paſſages generally to be moſt violent. So would I ſay in *Anian* gulfe, if it were ſo narrowe as *Don Diego* and *Zalterius* haue paynted it out, any returne that way to be ful of difficulties, in reſpect of ſuch ſtreictnes theꝛof, not foꝛ the nearenes of the Sonne, oꝛ eaſterne wyndes, violently foꝛceing that way any leuant ſtreame. But in that place there is moꝛe ſea rome by many degrees, if the cardes of *Cabota*, and *Gemma Friſius*, and that whiche *Tramezine* impꝛinted, be true.

Luc. lib. 1. Pharſal.

What the eaſterne currant is.

And hytherto reaſon ſee I none at all, but that I may as well geue credyt vnto theyꝛ doynges, as to any of the reſt. It muſt be *Peregrinationis hiſtoria*, that is, true repoꝛtes of ſkilful trauailers,

as

as *Ptolome* writeth, that in suche controuersies of Geographie must put vs out of doubte. *Ortelius* in his vniuersall tables, in his particuler Mappes of the west Indies, of all *Asia*, of the northren kyngdomes, of the easte Indies, *Mercator* in some of his globes, and generall mappes of the worlde, *Moletius* in his vniuersall table of the Globe diuided, in his sea carde, and particuler tables of the East Indies, *Zalterius*, and *Don Diego*, with *Fernando Bertely*, and others, do so much differ both from *Gemma Frisius* and *Cabota*, among them selues, & in diuers places from them selues, concerning the diuers situation and sundrye limittes of *America*, that one may not so rashly, as truelye surmise, these men either to be ignorant in those pointes touching the aforesayd region, or that the mappes they haue geuen out vnto the world, were collected only by them, & neuer of their owne drawyng. M. Furbishers prosperous voyage, and happie returne, wyl absolutely decide these controuersies, and certaynely determine where the whole passage lieth, how long it is, what breadth it carieth, how perilous, how prosperous the iorney is, and what commodities the paynfull trauayler can reape therby, what gaine the venterous marchant may looke for, what wealth, what honour, what fame wyll to our Englyshe nation thereof ensue. *Lib.* 1. *Geog. Cap.* 2.

Thus muche, right honorable, my verye good Lady, of your question concernyng your seruantes voyage. If not so skylfully as I would, and was desirous fully to do, at the least as I could, & leasure suffered me, for the litle knowledge God hath lent me, yf it be any at all, in Cosmographie and Philosophie, and the small experience I haue in trauaile. Chosing rather in the cleare iudgement of your Ho. mynde to appeare rude and ignorant, and so to be seene vnto the multitude, then to be founde vnthankefull and careless in any thing your Ho. shoulde commaunde me. God preserue your Honour. At the Court the .xx. of Marche.

Your Ho. most humbly at commaundement.

Richard Willes.

To the right wor-

ſhipfull, my ſinguler good

Myſtres, M. Elizabeth

Moriſyn.

VR Indian readinges, our Aſian lectures, our Geographical deſcription of the whole world, wyll I end with certayne reportes of the prouince China in Cathayo, and ſome intelligences of the worthy Ilands lying therby in the Eaſt Ocean. The relation whereof, though at the firſt mygȯt ſeeme briefly to be paſſed ouer, and in a fewe ſubſtantiall poyntes only to be touched, as in the reſt of our diſcourſes concernyng this facultie we haue done: Yet the worthyneſſe of matter herein conteyned, the order of ciuile gouerment, the maners & faſhions of the inhabiters, the diſcription of that countrey, ſo wel gathered the noueltie thereof in our language, haue effectually moued me to doo the whole diſcourſe into Englyſh. Needleſſe I graunt the labour is for you, that perfectly in ſo few Monethes, ſo few weekes, ſo fewe dayes, learned the Italian tongue, out of the whiche language this tranſlation is made. The ſingular care you euer haue had of my well dooyng, and the ſpeciall fauour I haue founde among your Honorable frendes for your ſake, vvoulde not only not let me to play the negligent Poete in the fift Act, but compelled me to handle euen the laſt Scene more abundantly: aſwel to acknowledge your good ſkill both in Coſmographie and in forreine languages, as alſo to teſtifie vnto the world, the great benefites the which I haue receyued for vſchering, as it were hercin, ſo good, ſo wyſe, ſo vertuous, ſo worſhipfull a myſtres. Nowe after all theſe learned exerciſes of your younger yeeres, God Almyghtie ſend you great good ſucceſſe in your preſent affaires, with encreaſe of proſperitie and muche honour, as you dayly ſhall growe elder.

At London the 21. of Feburary. 1576.

Your ſeruaunt euer.

R. Willes.

Certayne reportes of the prouince *China*, learned through the Portugalles there impriſoned, and chiefly by the relation of *Galeotto Perera*, a gentleman of good credit, that lay priſoner in that countrey many yeeres. Done out of Italian into Englyshe, by R. W.

THis land of *China* is parted into. 13. ſhyres, the which ſometymes were eche one a kyngdome by it ſelfe, but theſe many yeeres they haue been all ſubiect vnto one Kyng. *Fuquien* is made by the Portugalles the firſt ſhyre, bycauſe there their troubles began, and had occaſion thereby to know the reſt. In this ſhyre be viii. cities, but one principally more famous than others, called *Fuquieo*, the other ſeuen are reaſonably great, the beſt knowen wherof vnto the Portugalles is *Cinceo*, in reſpect of a certayne hauen ioyning thervnto, whyther in tyme paſt they were wont for merchandyſe to reſort. *Fuquien.* *Cinceo.*

Cantan is the ſecond ſhyre, not ſo great in quantitie, as well accoumpted of, both by the Kyng thereof, and alſo by the Portugalles, for that it lyeth nearer vnto *Malacca* than any other part of *China*, and was fyrſt diſcryed by the Portugalles before any other ſhyre in that prouince: this ſhyre hath in it ſeuen cities. *Cantan.*

Chequeam is the third ſhyre, the chiefeſt citie therein is *Donchion*, therein alſo ſtandeth *Liampo*, with other thirtiene or fourtiene Boroughes: countrey townes therein to to many to be ſpoken of. *Chequeam.*

The fourth ſhyre is called *Xutiamfu*, the principall citie therof is great *Pachin*, where the Kyng is alwayes reſident. In it are fyftiene other very great cities: of other townes therein, and Boroughes well walled and trenched about, I will ſay nothing. *Xutiamfu.*

The fyft ſhyre hath name *Chelim*: the great citie *Nanquin*, chiefe of other fyftiene cities was herein of auncient tyme, the *Chelim.*

royall

royall seate of the *Chinish* kynges. From this shyre, and from that aforesayde *Chequeam* forwarde, bare rule the other kynges, vntyll the whole region became one kyngdome.

Quianci. The first shyre beareth name *Quianci*, as also the principall cie *rather Quinzi* tie thereof, wherein the fine claye to make vesselles is wrought. The Portugalles beyng ignorant of this countrey, and fyndyng great aboundaunce of that fine claye to be solde at *Liampo*, and that very good cheape, thought at the first that it had been made there, howbeit in fine, they perceiued that the standing of *Quinzi* more neare vnto *Liampo* than to *Cinceo* or *Cantan*, was the cause of so muche fine claye at *Liampo*: within the compasse of *Quinci* shyre be other. 12. cities.

The seuenth shyre is *Quicin*, the eight *Quansi*, the nienth *Confu*, the tenth *Vrnan*, the eleuenth *Sichiua*. In the first hereof there be. 16. cities, in the next fyftiene: howe many townes the other three haue, we are ignorant as yet, as also of the proper names of the. 12. and. 13. shyres, and the townes therein.

This finally may be generally sayde heereof, that the greater shyres in *China* prouince, may be compared with mightie kyngdomes.

In eche one of these shyres be set *Ponchiassini* and *Anchiassini*, before whom are handled the matters of other cities. There is also placed in eche one a *Tutan*, as you would say a gouernor, and a *Chian*, that is a visiter, as it were: whose office is to goe in circuit, and to see iustice exactly done. By these meanes so vprygh tly thinges are ordered there, that it may bee worthely accompted one of the best gouerned prouinces in all the world.

Pachin.al. The Kyng maketh alwayes his abode in the great citie *Pochang.* *Pachin*, as muche to say in our language as by the name thereof I am aduertised, the towne of the kyngdome. This kyngdome is so large, that vnder fyue monethes you are not able to traueyle from the townes by the sea syde to the Court and backe agayne, no not vnder three monethes in poste at your vrgent businesse. The Posthorses in this countrey are litle of bodie, but swyfte of foote. Many doe traueyle the greater parte of this iourney by water in certayne lyght barkes, for the multitude of ryuers commodious for passage from one citie to an other.

The

The kyng, notwithstandyng the hugenesse of his kyngdome, hath such a care thereof, that euery Moone (by the Moones they recken their monethes) he is aduertised fully of whatsoeuer thing happeneth therein, by these meanes folowyng. Theyr monethes.

The whole prouince beyng diuided into shyres, and eche shyre hauyng in it one chiefe and principall citie, wherevnto the matters of all the other cities, townes, and Boroughes, are brought: there are drawen, in euery chiefe citie aforesayde, intelligences of suche thinges as doe monethly fall out, and be sent in writing to the Court. If happely in one moneth euery post is not able to goe so long a way, yet doeth there notwithstandyng once euery moneth arryue one poste out of the shyre. Who so commeth before the newe Moone, stayeth for the deliuery of his letters vntyll the Moone be chaunged. Then lykewyse are dispatched other postes, backe into all the .13. shyres agayne.

Before that we doe come to *Cinceo* we haue to passe through many places, and some of great importance. For this countrey is so well inhabited neare the sea syde, that you can not go one myle but you shall see some towne, Borough, or Hostry, the which are so abundantly prouided of all thinges, that in the cities & townes they liue ciuilly. Neuertheles such as dwel abrode are very poore, for the multitude of them euery where so great, that out of a tree you shal see many tymes swarme a number of children, where a man would not haue thought to haue founde any one at all.

From these places in number infinite, you shall come vnto two cities very populose, and beyng compared with *Cinceo*, not possibly to be discerned which is the greater of them. These cities are as well walled as any cities in all the worlde. As you come in to eyther of them, standeth so great and mightie a bryage, that the lyke thereof I haue neuer seene in Portugall nor els where. I heard one of my felowes say, that he told in one bridge .40. arches. The occasion wherfore these bridges are made so great, is for that the countrey is toward the sea very plaine and low, & ouerwhelmed euer as ỹ sea water encreaseth. The breadth of the bridges, although it bee well proportioned vnto the length therof, yet are they equally buylt, no higher in the middle than at eyther end, in such wyse that you may directly see from ỹ one end to the other, the sydes are wonderfully well engraued after the

maner of Rome woykes. But that wee did most marueyle at, was therwithall the hugeneſſe of ẏ ſtones, the lyke wherof as we came in to the citie, we dyd ſee many ſet vp in places diſhabited by the way, to no ſmall charges of theyrs, howbeit to litle purpoſe, whereas no body ſeeth them but ſuch as doe come bye. The arches are not made after our faſhion, bauted with ſundry ſtones ſet togeather: but paued, as it were, whole ſtones reaching from one piller to an other, in ſuche wyſe that they lye both for the arches heades, and galantly ſerue alſo for the hygh waye. I haue been aſtunned to beholde the hugeneſſe of theſe aforeſayde ſtones, ſome of them are. xii. pales long and vpwarde, the leaſt a. xi. good pales long, and an halfe.

The wayes echewhere are galantly paued with foureſquare ſtone, except it be where for want of ſtone they vſe to laye bricke: in this voyage wee traueyled ouer certayne hilles, where the wayes were pitched, and in many places no woyſe paued than in the playne grounde. This cauſeth vs to thinke, that in all the woylde there be no better woykemen for buildinges, than the inhabitantes of *China*.

The countrey is ſo well inhabited, that no one foote of ground is left vntilled: ſmall ſtoye of cattell haue we ſeene this way, we ſawe onely certayne Oxen wherewithall the countrymen doe plough theyr grounde. One Oxe draweth the plough alone, not onely in this ſhyre, but in other places alſo, wherein is greater ſtoye of cattell. Theſe countrymen by arte doe that in tyllage, which we are conſtrayned to doe by force. Here be ſolde the voydinges of cloſe ſtooles, although there wanteth not the dunge of beaſtes: for the excrements of man are good marchandiſe throughout all *China*. The dungfermers ſeeke in euery ſtreete by exchaunge to buye this durtie ware for hearbes and wood. The cuſtome is very good for keeping the citie cleane. There is great aboundance of Hennes, Geeſe, Duckes, Swyne, and Goates, Wethers haue they none: the Hennes are ſolde by weight, and ſo are all other thinges. Two pounde of Hennes fleſhe, Gooſe, or Ducke, is wooyth two Foi of their money, that is, d. ob. ſterling. Swines fleſhe is ſolde at a peny the pounde. Beefe beareth the ſame pryce, for the ſcarcitie thereof, howbeit Northwarde from *Fuquieo*, & farther offrom the ſea coaſt, there is Beefe moye plentie,

tie and solde better cheape, Beefe onely excepted, great aboundance of all these viandes we haue had in all the cities we passed through. And if this countrey were lyke vnto India, the inhabitantes whereof eate neyther Henne, beefe, nor porke, but keepe that onely for the Portugalles and Moores, they would be solde here for nothyng. But it so falling out, that the *Chineans* are the greatest eaters in all the world, they doe feede vppon all thinges, specially on porke, the fatter that is, vnto them the lesse lothsome. The highest price of these thinges aforesayde, I haue set downe, better cheape shall you sometymes buye them for the great plentie thereof in this countrey. Frogges are solde at the same price that is made of Hennes, and are good meate amongst them, as also Dogges, Cattes, Rattes, Snakes, and all other vncleane meates.

The cities be very gallant, specially neare vnto the gates, the which are marueylously great, & couered with Iron. The gatehouses buylt on hygh with Towers, the lower parte thereof, is made of bricke and stone, proportionally with the walles, from the walles vpward, the buyldyng is of tymber, and many stories in it one aboue the other. The strength of theyr townes is in the mightie walles and ditches, artillerie haue they none.

The streetes in *Cinceo*, and in all the rest of the cities we haue seene are very fayre, so large and so streight, that it is wonderfull to beholde. Theyr houses are buylte with tymber, the foundations onely excepted, the which are layde with stone, in eche syde of the streetes are paynteses or continuall porches for the marchantes to walke vnder: the breadth of the streete is neuertheless suche, that in them .xv. men may ryde commodiously syde by side. As they ryde they must needes passe vnder many hygh arches of triumph that crosse ouer the streetes made of tymber, and carued diuersely, couered with tyle of fine claye: vnder these arches the Mercers doe vtter theyr smaller wares, and such as lyst to stande there, are defensed from rayne and the heate of the Sunne. The greater gentlemen haue these arches at their doores: although some of them be not so myghtyly buylt as the rest.

I shall haue occasion to speake of a certayne order of gentlemen that are called *Loutea*, I will first therefore expounde what this worde signifieth. *Loutea* is as muche to say in our language *Loutea.*

as

as Syr, and whan any of them calleth his name, he answereth Syr: and as we doe say, that the kyng hath made some gentleman, so say they, that there is made a *Loutea*. And for that amongest them the degrees are diuers both in name and office, I will tell you onely of some principalles, beyng not able to aduertise you of all.

The maner howe gentlemen are created *Louteas*, and doe come to that honour and title, is by the gyuyng of a broad gyrdle not like to the rest, & a cap, at the commaundement of the kyng. The name *Loutea* is more generall and common vnto moe, than equalitie of honour therby signified, agreeth withall. Such *Louteas* that doe serue their prince in weightie matters for iustice, are created after triall made of their learning: but the other whiche serue in smaller affayres, as Capitaynes, Constables, Sergeantes by lande and sea, Receyuers, and such lyke, wherof there be in euery citie, as also in this, very many, are made for fauour: the chiefe *Louteas* are serued kneelyng.

The whole prouince *China* is diuided, as I haue sayde, into thirtiene shyres, in euery shyre at the least is one gouernour called there *Tutan*, in some shyres there be two.

Chian, al. Chaen.

Chiefe in office nexte vnto them be certayne other named *Chians*, that is, hygh Commissioners as you would say, or visiters, with full authoritie in suche wyse, that they doe call vnto an accompt the *Tutanes* them selues, but their authoritie lasteth not in any shyre longer than one yeere. Neuertheless in euery shyre beyng at the least seuen cities, yea, in some of them fyftiene or sixtiene, beside other Boroughes & townes not well to be numbred, these visiters, where they come, are so honoured and feared, as though they were some great princes. At the yeeres ende their circuit done, they come vnto that citie which is chiefe of others in the shyre, to doe iustice there: finally busyng them selues in the searchyng out of such as are to receyue the order of *Louteas*, whereof more shall be sayde in an other place.

Ponchiassi.

Ouer and beside these officers, in the chiefe citie of eche one of these aforesayde thirtiene prouinces, is resident one *Ponchiassi*, Capitayne thereof, and Treasurer of all the kynges reuenues. This Magistrate maketh his abode in one of the foure greatest

teſt houſes that be in all theſe head cities. And although the principall parte of his function be, to be Capitayne, to be Treaſurer of the reuenues in that prouince, to ſende theſe reuenues at appoynted tymes to the Court: yet hath he notwithſtandyng by his office alſo to meddle with matters apperteynyng vnto iuſtyce.

In the ſeconde great houſe dwelleth an other Magiſtrate called *Anchiaſsi*, a great offycer alſo, for he hath dealynges in all matters of iuſtice. Who although hee bee ſomewhat inferior in dignitie vnto the *Ponchiaſsi*, yet for his great dealynges and generall charge of iuſtice, whoſoeuer ſeeth the affayres of the one houſe and the other, myght iudge this *Anchiaſsi* to be the greater. *Anchiaſsi. al. Hexaſi.*

Tuzi, an other officer ſo called, lyeth in the thyrd houſe, a magiſtrate of importance, ſpecially in thinges belongyng vnto warfare, for thereof hath he charge. *Tuzi.*

There is reſident in the fourth houſe a fourth officer, bearyng name *Taiſſu*. In this houſe is the principall pryſon of all the citie. Eche one of theſe Magiſtrates aforeſayde may both laye euyll doers in pryſon, and deliuer them out agayne, except the facte be heynous and of importance: in ſuche a caſe they can doe nothing, except they doe meete altogeather. And if the deede deſerue death, all they togeather can not determine thereof, without recourſe made vnto the *Chian* whereſoeuer he bee, or to the *Tutan*: and eſtſones it falleth out, that the caſe be referred vnto hygher power. *Taiſſu.*

In all cities, not onely chiefe in eche ſhyre, but in the reſt alſo, are meanes founde to make *Louteas*. Many of them doe ſtudie at the prince his charges, wherfore at the yeeres ende they reſort vnto the head cities, whyther the *Chians* doe come, as it hath been earſt ſayde, as well to gyue theſe degrees, as to ſit in iudgement ouer the pryſoners.

The *Chians* goe in circuit euery yeere, but ſuche as are to be choſen to the greateſt offices, mecte not but from three yeeres to three yeeres, and that in certayne large halles appoynted for them to be examined in. Many thynges are aſked them, whereunto if they doe anſwere accordingly, and be found ſuffitient to take their degree, the *Chian* by and by graunteth it them: but the Cappe & gyrdle wherby they are knowen to be *Louteas*, they weare *Licentiates.*

Doctors. weare not before that they be confirmed by the kyng. Their examination done, and tryall made of them, such as haue taken their degree wont to be giuen them with all cerimonies, vse to banket and feast many dayes together (as the *Chineans* fashion is to end all their pleasures with eatyng and drinkyng) and so remayne chosen to doe the kyng seruice in matters of learnyng. The other examinates founde insufficient to proceede, are sent backe to their studie againe. Whose ignorannce is perceiued to come of negligence & default, such a one is whipped, and sometymes sent to prison, where wee lying that yeere whan this kynde of acte was, we found many thus punished, and demaundyng the cause therof, they sayde it was for that they knew not howe to answere vnto certayne thinges asked them. It is a worlde to see howe these *Louteas* are serued and feared, in suche wise, that in publyke assemblies at one shryke they gyue, all the seruitors belongyng vnto iustice, tremble thereat. At their being in these places, whan they lyst to moue, be it but euen to the gate, these seruitors do take them vp, and carry them in seates of beaten golde. After this sort are they borne whan they goe in the citie, eyther for their owne businesse abrode, or to see eche other at home. For the dignitie they haue, and office they doe beare, they be al accompanyed: the very meanest of them all that goeth in these seates is vshered by two men at the least, that cry vnto the people to gyue place, howbeit, they neede it not, for that reuerence the common people hath vnto them. They haue also in their company certayne Sergeantes, with their Maces eyther siluered, or altogeather siluer, some two, some foure, other six, other eight, conueniently for eche one his degree. The more principall and chiefe *Louteas* haue going orderly before these Sergeantes, many other with staues, and a great many catchpoules with roddes of Indishe canes, dragged on the grounde, so that the streetes beyng paued, you may heare a farre of as well the noyse of the roddes, as the voyce of the cryers. These felowes serue also to apprehende others, and the better to be knowen they weare liuery redde girdles, and in their cappes Peacockes feathers. Behynde these *Louteas* come such as doe beare certayne tables hanged at staues endes, wherein is written in siluer letters the name, degree, and office of that *Loutea*, whom they folowe. In lyke maner they haue borne after them

them hattes agreeable vnto theyr tytles: if the *Loutea* be meane, then hath he brought after hym but one hatte, and that may not be yealowe: but if he be of the better sorte, then may he haue two, three, or foure: the principall and chiefe *Louteas*, may haue all theyr hattes yealowe, the which among them is accompted great honour. The *Loutea* for warres, although he be but meane, may notwithstandyng haue yealowe hattes. The *Tutanes* and *Chians*, when they goe abrode, haue besydes all this before them ledde .3. or .4. horses with theyr garde in armor. Furthermore the *Louteas*, yea and all the people of *China*, are woonte to eate theyr meat syttyng on stooles at hygh tables as we do, and that very cleanly, although they vse nether table clothes nor napkyns. Whatsoeuer is set downe vppon the boorde, is fyrst carued, before that it be brought in: they feede with two stickes, refraynyng from touchyng theyr meate with theyr handes, euen as we do with forkes, for ỹ which respect, they lesse do neede any table clothes. Ne is the nation onely ciuil at meate, but also in conuersation, and in courtesie they seeme to exceede all other. Likewise in theyr dealynges, after their maner, they are so ready, that they farre passe all other Gentyles and Moores: the greater states are so vayne, that they lyne theyr clothes with the best sylke that may be founde. The *Louteas*, are an idle generation, without all maner of exercises and pastymes, excepte it be eatyng and drynkyng. Sometymes they walke abrode in the fieldes, to make the souldyars shoot at prickes with theyr bowes, but theyr eatyng passeth: they wyll stande eatyng euen when the other do drawe to shoote. The pricke is a great blanket spread on certayne long poles, he that stryketh it, hath of the best man there standyng a peece of crymson taffata, the whiche is knyt about his head: in this sorte the wynners honoured, and the *Louteas* with theyr bellyes full, returne home agayne. The inhabitantes of *China*, be very great Idolaters, all generally do worshyppe the heauens: and as we are woont to saye, God knoweth it: so saye they at euery worde, *Tien Tautee*, that is to saye, The heauens do knowe it. Some do worshypp the Sonne, and some the Moone, as they thynke good, for none are bounde more to one then to an other. In their temples, the which they do cal *Meani*, they haue a great altar in ỹ same place

We, that is the Italians and Spaniardes.

Wher the Watch fation.

as we haue, true it is that one may goe rounde about it. There set they vp the Image of a certayne *Loutea* of that countrey, whom they haue in great reuerence for certaine notable thinges he dyd. At the ryght hande standeth the deuyl, muche more vglie paynted then we do vse to set hym out, whereunto great homage is done by suche as come into the temple to aske counsell, or to drawe lottes: this opinion they haue of hym, that he is malitious and able to do euyl. If you aske them what they do thynke of the soules departed, they wil answeare, that they be immortall, and that as soone as any one departeth out of this life, he becommeth a deuyl if he haue liued well in this worlde, if otherwyse, that the same deuyl chaungeth hym into a busse, ore, or dogge. Wherfore to this deuyl do they muche honour, to hym do they sacrifice, prayng hym that he wyll make them lyke vnto hym selfe, and not lyke other beastes. They haue moreouer an other sorte of temples, wherein both vppon the altars and also on the walles do stande many Idoles well proportioned, but bare headed: These beare name *Omithofon*, accompted of them spirites, but suche as in heauen do nether good nor euyll, thought to be suche men and women, as haue chastlye lyued in this worlde in abstinence from fyshe and fleshe, fedde only with ryse & salates. Of that deuil they make some accompte, for these spirites they care litle or nothyng at all. Agayne they holde opinion that if a man do well in this lyfe, the heauens wyll geue hym many temporall blessynges, but if he do euyll, then shall he haue infirmities, diseases, troubles, and penurie, and all this without any knowledge of God. Finally, this people knoweth no other thing then to liue & die, yet because they be reasonable creatures, al seemed good vnto them we spake in our language, though it were not very sufficient: our maner of prayng especially pleased them, and truely they are wel ynough disposed to receiue the knowledge of the trueth. Our lorde graunte for his mercie all thynges so to be disposed, that it may some tyme be brought to passe, that so great a nation as this is, perysshe not for wante of helpe.

Pithigorian lyke.

Our manner of prayng so well lyked them, that in pryson importunately they besoughte vs to wryte for them some-

somewhat as concernyng heauen, the whiche we dyd to theyr contentation with suche reasons as we knewe, howbeit not very cunnyngly. As they do theyr Idolatry they laugh at them selues. If at any tyme this countrey myght be toined in league with the kyngdome of Portugale, in such wyse that free accesse were had to deale with the people there, they might al be soone conuerted. The greatest fault we do fynd in them is Sodomie, a vice very common in the meaner sort, & nothing strange amongst the best. This sinne were it left of them, in all other thynges so well disposed they be, that a good interpretour in a short space myght do there great good, yf, as I sayde, the countrey were ioyned in league with vs.

Furthermore the *Louteas*, with al the people of *China*, are wont to solempnize the dayes of the newe and full Moones in visiting one eache other. and makyng great bankettes, for to that end, as I earst sayd, do tend all theyr pastymes. and spendyng theyr daies in pleasure. They are wont also to solempnize eache one his byrth daye, whereunto theyr kyndred and frendes do resorte of custome, with presentes of Iuelles or money, receyuyng agayne for theyr rewarde good cheare. They keepe in lyke maner a general feast with great bankets that day theyr kyng was borne. But theyr most principall and greatest feast of al, and best cheare, is the fyrst day of theyr newe yeere, namely the fyrst day of the newe Moone of Februarye, so that theyr fyrst moneth is Marche, and they recken the tymes accordynglye, respect beyng had vnto the reigne of theyr Princes: as when anye deede is wrytten, they date it thus, Made suche a daye of suche a Moone, and such a yeere of the reigne of suche a Kyng. And theyr auncient wrytynges beare date of the yeeres of this or that Kyng.

Nowe wyll I speake of the maner the whiche the *Chineans* doo obserue in dooyng Iustice, that it maye be knowen how farre these Gentyles doo herein exceede manye Christians, that be more bounden then they to deale iustly and in trueth. Because the Chinishe Kyng maketh his abode contynually in the Citie *Pachyn*, his kyngdome so great, the shyres so many, as tofore it hath been sayde: in it therefore the Gouernours and Rulers, muche lyke vnto our Shyryffes, be so appoynted

sodenly and speedely discharged agayne, that they haue no tyme to growe naught. Furthermoze to keepe the state in moze securitie, the *Louteas* that gouerne one shyze, are chosen out of some other shyze distaunt farre of, where they must leaue theyz wyues, chyldzen, and goodes, carryeng nothyng with them but them selues. True it is, that at theyz commyng thyther they do fynde in a redinesse all thynges necessarie, theyz house, furniture, seruantes, and all other thynges in suche perfection and plentie, that they want nothyng. Thus the kyng is well serued without all feare of treason.

In the pzincipall cities of the shyzes be foure cheefe *Louteas*, before whom are brought all matters of the inferiour townes, throughout the whole realme. Diuers other *Louteas* haue the maneagyng of iustice, and receyuyng of rentes, bounde to yeeld an accompte thereof vnto the greater officers. Other doo see that there be no euyll rule keept in the citie: eache one as it behoueth hym. Generally al these do inpzyson malefactours, cause them to be whypped & racked, hoysing them vp & downe by the armes with a coyde, a thyng very vsuall there, and accompted no shame. These *Louteas* do vse great diligence in ỹ apprehending of theeues, so that it is a wonder to see a theefe escape away in any towne, citie, oz village. Upon the sea neere vnto the shoze many are taken, and looke euen as they are taken, so be they fyrst whypped, and afterward layd in pzison, where shortly after they all dye foz hunger and colde. At that tyme, when we were in pzyson, there died of them aboue threscoze and ten. Yf happely any one, hauyng the meanes to geat foode, do escape, he is set with the condemned persones, and pzouided foz as they be by the kyng, in such wyse as hereafter it shalbe sayde.

The Italians call it the strapado.

Theyz whyps be certayne peeces of canes, cleft in the middle, in such sozt that they seeme rather playne then sharpe. He that is to be whipped lieth grouelong on the ground. Upon his thighes the Hangman layeth on blowes myghtely with these canes, that the standers by tremble at theyz crueltie. Ten stryppes drawe a great deale of blood, twentie oz thyrtie spoyle the flesshe altogeather, fyftie oz threescoze wyll require long tyme to be healed, and yf they come to the number of one hundzed, then are they incurable.

The

The *Louteas* obserue moreouer this: when any man is brought before them to be examined, they aske hym openly in the hearing of as many as be present, be ỹ offence neuer so great. Thus did they also behaue them selues with vs. For this cause amongst them can there be no false witnes, as dayly amongst vs it falleth out. This good commeth therof, that many being alwaies about the iudge to heare the euidence, and beare witnesse, the processe can not be falsifyed, as it happeneth sometymes with vs. The Moores, Gentiles, & Iewes, haue al their sundry othes, ỹ Moores doo sweare by theyr *Mosafos*, the *Brachmans* by theyr *Fili*, the rest likewise by the thynges they do worshyppe. The *Chineans* though they be wonte to sweare by heauen, by the Moone, by the Sunne, and by all theyr Idolles, in iudgement neuertheless they sweare not at all. If for some offence an othe be vsed of any one, by and by with the least euidence he is tormented, so be the wytnesses he bryngeth, if they tell not the truth, or do in any poynt disagree, except they be men of worshyppe and credyte, who are beleeued without any farther matter: the rest are made to confesse the trueth by force of tormentes and whyppes. Besydes this order obserued of them in examinations, they do feare so muche theyr kyng, and he where he maketh his abode keepeth them so lowe, that they dare not once styrre. Agayne, these *Louteas* as great as they be, notwithstanding the multitude of Notaries they haue, not trusting any others, do write al great processes and matters of importance them selues. Moreouer one vertue they haue worthy of great prayse, and that is, being men so well regarded and accompted of as though they were princes, they be patient aboue measure in geuyng audience. The poore straungers brought before them myght saye what we woulde, as all to be lyes and falaces that they dyd wyte, ne dyd we stande before them with the vsuall ceremonies of that countrey, yet dyd they beare with vs so patiently, that they caused vs to wonder, knowyng specially howe litle any aduocate or iudge is wonte in our countrey to beare with vs. For where so euer in any towne of Christendome shoulde be accused vnknowen men as we were, I knowe not what ende the very innocentes cause woulde haue: but we in a Heathen countrey, hauyng our great enmimies two of the chiefest men in a whole

towne, wantyng an interpreter, ignorant of that countrey language, dyd in the ende see our great aduersaryes cast into prison for our sake, and depriued of theyr offices and honoure for not doyng iustice, yea not to escape death, for as the rumor goeth, they shalbe beheadded. Somewhat is nowe to be sayde of the lawes that I haue been hable to knowe in this countrey, and fyrst, no theefte or murther, is at any tyme pardoned: adulterers are put in prison, and the facte once proued, condemned to dye, the womans husbande must accuse them: this order is keapt with men and women found in that fault, but theeues and murtherers are inprisoned as I haue sayd, where they shortly dye for hunger and colde. If any one happely escape by brybyng the gayler to geue hym meate, his processe goeth farther, and commeth to the courte where he is condemned to dye. Sentence beyng geuen, the prysoner is brought in publyke with a terrible bande of men that laye hym in Irons hande and foote, with a boorde at his necke one handefull broade, in length reachyng downe to his knees, clefte in two partes, and with a hole one handefull downewarde in the table fyt for his necke, the whiche they enclose by therein, naylyng the boorde fast togeather, one handefull of the boorde standeth by behynde in the necke: the sentence and cause wherefore the fellon was condemned to dye, is wrytten in that parte of the table that standeth before.

A pyllery boorde.

This ceremonie ended, he is laid in a great prison in the companie of some other condemned persons, the which are found by the king as long as they do liue. The boord aforsaid so made, tormenteth the prysoners very much, keeping them both from rest, & eke lettyng them to eate commodyously, theyr handes beyng manacled in Irons vnder that bord, so ỹ in fine there is no remedy but death. In ỹ chiefe cities of euery shire, as we haue erst said, there be foure principal houses, in ech of them a prison: but in one of them where the *Taissu* maketh his abode, there is a greater & more principal prison thẽ in any of ỹ rest: & although in euery citie there be many, neuertheless in three of them remaine onely such as be condemned to die. Their death is much prolonged, for that ordinarily there is no execution doone but once a yeere, though many die for hunger and colde, as we haue seene in this prison. Execution is done in this maner. The *Chian*, to wyt the high

hygh commissioner or Lord cheefe Iustice, at the yeeres ende go-eth to the head citie, where he heareth agayne the causes of suche as be condempned. Many tymes he delyuereth some of them, declaryng that boord to haue been wrongfully put about theyr neckes: the visitation ended, he choseth out seuen or .viii. not many more or lesse, of the greatest malefactours, the whiche, to feare and keepe in awe the people, are brought into a great market place, where al the great *Louteas* meete togeather, and after many cerimonies and superstitions, as the vse of the countrey is, are beheaded. This is done once a yeere: who so escapeth that day, may be sure that he shal not be put to death al that yeere folowyng, & so remayneth at the kynges charges in the greater prison. In that prison where we lay were al waies one hundred & moe of these condemned persons, besides them that lay in other prisons.

These prisons wherin the condemned caytyfes do remayne are so strong, that it hath not been hard, that any prisoner in al *China* hath escaped out of prysons, for in deed it is a thyng impossible. The prisons are thus builded. First al the place is myghtely walled about, the walles be very strong and hygh, the gate of no lesse force: within it three other gates, before you come where the prysoners do lye, there many great lodginges are to be seene of the *Louteas*, Notaries, Parthions, that is, such as do there kepe watch and ward day and nyght, the court large and paued, on the one syde wherof standeth a prysons, with two myghtie gates, wherin are kept such prisoners as haue committed enormious offences. This prison is so great, that in it are streates and Market places wherein al thyngs necessarie are sold. Yea some prysoners liue by that kynde of trade, buyeng and selling, and letting out beds to hyre: some are dayly sent to prysons, some dayly deliuered, wherfore this place is neuer voyde of seuen or eyght hundred men that go at libertie.

Into one other prysons of condempned persons shall you goo at three yron gates, the court paued and bauted rounde about, & open aboue as it were a cloister. In this cloister be eight roomes with yron doores, and in eache of them a large Gallerie, wherein euery night the prisoners do lie at length, their feete in the stocks, theyr bodies hampered in huge woodden grates that kepe them frō sitting, so that they lie as it were in a cage, sleepe if they can: in the morning they are losed againe, that they may go into ỹ court.

Notwithstanding the strength of this pryson, it is ke pt with a garrison of men, part whereof watche within the house, part of them in the Court, some keepe about the pryson with lanterns and watchebelles answeryng one an other fyue tymes euerye nyght, and geuing warning so lowde, that the *Loutea* resting in a chamber not neare thereunto, may heere them. In these prysons of condemned persons remayne some .15. other 20. yeeres imprisoned, not executed, for the loue of theyr honorable frendes that seeke to prolong theyr lyues. Many of these prysoners be shomakers, and haue from the king a certayne allowaunce of rise: some of them worke for the keeper, who suffereth them to goe at libertie without fetters and boordes, the better to worke. Howbeit when the *Loutea* calleth his checke rolle, & with the keper vieweth them, they al weare theyr lyuereys, that is, boords at theyr neckes, pronned hand and foote. When any of these prysoners dieth, he is to be seene of the *Loutea* and Notaries, brought out at a gate so narrow, that there can but one be drawen out there at once. The prysoner beyng brought foorth, one of the aforesayde *Parthians* stryketh hym thryse on the head with an yron sledge, that doone, he is deliuered vnto his frendes, yf he haue any, otherwyse the kyng hyreth men to cary hym to his buriall in the fieldes.

Thus adulterers and theeues are vsed. Such as be imprisoned for debt once knowen, lye there vntyl it be payed. The *Taissu* or *Loutea* calleth them many tymes before him by the vertue of his office, who vnderstanding the cause wherefore they doo not pay theyr debtes, appointeth them a certayne tyme to doe it, wiin the compasse wherof if they discharge not theyr debtes beyng debters in deede, then they be whipped & condemned to perpetual imprisonment: yf the creditours be many, & one is to be payd before an other, they do, contrary to our maner, pay him fyrst, of whom they last borowed, and so ordinarily the rest, in suche sort that the fyrst lender be the last receyuer. The same order is kept in paying legacies: the last named, receyueth his portion first. They accompt it nothyng to shew fauour to such a one as can doo the lyke agayne: but to doo good to them that haue litle or nothing, that is worth thanks, therfore pay they the last before the first, for that their entent seemeth rather to be vertuous then gainful.

Of like the first lenders be the more welthier.

When

When I sayde that suche as bee committed to pryson for theft & murther, were iudged by the Court, I ment not them that were apprehended in the deed doyng, for they need no tryall, but are brought immediatly before the *Tutan*, who out of hand giueth sentence. Other not taken so openly, and doe neede tryall, are the malefactors put to execution once a yeere in the chiefe cities, to keepe in awe the people: or condempned, doe remayne in prison, iokyng for theyr day. Theeues being taken, are carryed to prison from one place to an other in a chest vpon mens shoulders, hyred therefore by the kyng, the Chest is sixe handfulles hygh, the prisoner sitteth therein vppon a benche, the couer of the chest is two boordes, ampd them both a pillerylyke hole, for the prisoner his necke, there sitteth he with his head without the chest, & the rest of his body within, not able to moue or turne his head this way or that way, nor to plucke it in: the necessities of nature he voydeth at a hole in the bottome of the chest, the meat hee eateth is put into his mouth by others. There abydeth he day and nyght duryng his whole iourney: if happely his porters stumble, or the chest doe iogge, or be set downe carelesly, it turneth to his great paynes that sitteth therein, all such motions beyng vnto him hangyng as it were. Thus were our companyons carryed from *Cinceo*, seuen dayes iourney, neuer taking any rest as afterward they told vs, & theyr greatest griefe was to staye by the way: as soone as they came, beyng taken out of the chests, they were not able to stande on theyr feete, and two of them dyed shortly after.

Fuquieo.

Whan we laye in pryson at *Fuquieo*, we came many tymes abrode, and were brought to the pallaces of noble men, to be seene of them and theyr wyues, for that they had neuer seene any Portugall before. Many thinges they asked vs of our countrey, and our fashions, and dyd wryte euery thyng, for they be curious in nouelties aboue measure. The gentlemen shewe great curtesie vnto straungers, and so dyd we finde at their handes, and bycause that many tymes we were brought abrode into the citie, somewhat will I say of such thinges as I dyd see therein, beyng a gallant citie, and chiefe in one of the thirtiene shyres aforesayde. *Hereof tofore.*

The citie *Fuquieo*, is very great, and mightily walled with square stone both within and without, and as it may seeme by the breadth thereof, filled vp in the middle with earth, layde ouer

with

with bricke and couered with tyle, after the maner of porches or galeryes, that one myght dwell therein. The steyers they vse, are so easily made, that one may go them vp and down a horsebacke, as eftsoones they doe: the streetes are paued, as already it hath been sayde: there be a great number of Merchantes, euery one hath written in a great table at his doore such thinges as he hath to sell. In lyke maner euery artisane paynteth out his craft: the market places be large, great abomdance of all thinges there be to be solde. The citie standeth vppon water, many streames run through it, the bankes pitched, and so broade that they serue for streetes to the cities vse. Ouer the streames are sundry brydges both of tymber & stone, that beyng made leuell with the streetes, hynder not the passage of the Barges to and fro, the chanelles are so deepe. Where the streames come in and goe out of the citie, bee certayne arches in the wall, there goe in and out theyr *Parai*, that is a kynde of Barges they haue, and this onely the day tyme: at nyght these arches are closed vp with gates, so doe they shut vp all the gates of the citie. These streames and Barges doe ennobly the very muche the citie, and make it as it were to seeme an other Uenice. The buyldinges are euen, well made, hygh, not lofted, except it be some wherein merchandise is layde. It is a worlde to see howe great these cities are, and the cause is, for that the houses are buylt euen, as I haue sayde, and doe take a great deale of roome. One thyng we sawe in this citie that made vs all to wonder, and is woorthy to bee noted: Namely, ouer a porche at the commyng in to one of the afore-sayde foure houses, the whiche the kyng hath in euery shyre for his gouernours as I haue erst sayde, standeth a Towre buylt vppon fourtie pyllers, eche one whereof is but one stone, eche one fourtie handfulles or spannes long: in breadth or compasse twelue, as many of vs dyd measure them. Besydes this, theyr greatnesse suche in one peece, that it myght seeme impossible to worke them: they bee moreouer cornerde, and in colour, length, and breadth so lyke, that the one nothyng dyffereth from the other. This thyng made vs all to wonder verye muche.

Parai.

Wee

Wee are wont to call this countrey *China*, and the people *Chineans*, but as long as we were prisoners, not hearing amongst them at any tyme that name, I determined to learne howe they were called: and asked sometymes by them thereof, for that they vnderstoode vs not whan wee called them *Chineans*, I answered them that all the inhabitantes of India named them *Chineans*, wherefore I prayed them that they would tell mee, for what occasion they are so called, whether peraduenture any citie of theyrs bare that name. Heerevnto they alwayes answered mee, to haue no suche name, nor euer to haue had. Than dyd I aske them what name the whole countrey beareth, and what they would answere beyng asked of other nations what countrymen they were: It was tolde me that of auncient tyme in this countrey had been many kynges, and though presently it were all vnder one, eche kyngdome neuertheless enioyed that name it first had, these kyngdomes are the prouinces I spake of before. In conclusion they sayde, that the whole countrey is called *Tamen*, and the inhabitantes *Tamegines*, so that this name *China* or *Chineans*, is not hearde of in that countrey. I doe thinke that the neareneſſe of an other prouince thereabout called *Cochinchina*, and the inhabitantes thereof *Cochineſſes*, first discouered before that *China* was, lying not farre from *Malacca*, dyd gyue occasion both to the one nation and to the other of that name *Chineans*, as also the whole countrey to be named *China*. But their proper name is that aforesayde.

Tamen the proper name of China.

I haue hearde moreouer that in the citie *Nanquim* remayneth a table of golde, and in it written a kyng his name, as a memory of that residence the kyngs were wont to keepe there. This table standeth in a great pallace, couered alwayes, except it bee in some of theyr festiuall dayes, at what tyme they are wont to let it be seene: couered neuertheleſſe as it is, all the nobilitie of the citie goeth of duetie to doe it euery day reuerence. The lyke is done in the head cities of all the other shyres in the pallaces of the *Ponchiasini*, wherein theſe aforesayde tables doe stande with the kyng his name written in them, although no reuerence be done thervnto but in solempne feastes.

I haue

Pechang. al. I haue lykewyse vnderstoode that the citie *Pachin*, where the kyng maketh his abode, is so great, that to goe from one syde to the other, besydes the Suburbes, the which are greater than the citie it selfe, it requyreth one whole day a horsebacke, going hackney pase. In the Suburbes be many wealthy marchantes of all sortes. They tolde me furthermore that it was Moted about, and in the Motes great store of fyshe, wherof the kyng maketh great gaynes.

Theyr enemies It was also tolde mee that the kyng of *China* had no kyng to wage battayle withall, besides the *Tartares*, with whom he had concluded a peace more than fourescore yeeres agoe. Neuertheless theyr friendshyp was not so great, that the one nation might marry with the other. And demaunding with whom they married, they sayde, that in olde tyme the *Chinish* kynges, whan they would marry theyr daughters, accustomed to make a solempne feast, wherunto came all sorts of men. The daughter that was to be marryed, stoode in a place where shee myght see them all, and looke whom shee lyked best, him did shee chuse to husbande, and if happely he were of a base condition, hee became by and by a gentleman: but this custome hath been left long since. Nowe a dayes the kyng marryeth his daughters at his owne pleasure, with great men of the same kyngdome: the lyke order he obserueth in the marryage of his sonnes.

Marryage of the kynges children.

They haue moreouer one thing very good, and that whiche made vs all to marueyle at them beyng Gentiles: namely, that there be hospitalles in all theyr cities, alwayes full of people, we neuer sawe any poore body begge. We therefore asked the cause of this: answered it was, that in euery citie there is a great circuit, wherein be many houses for poore people, for blinde, lame, old folke, not able to traueyle for age, nor hauyng any other meanes to lyue. These folke haue in the aforesayde houses, euer plentie of rice duryng theyr lyues, but nothyng els. Such as be receyued into these houses, come in after this maner. Whan one is sicke, blinde, or lame, he maketh a supplication to the *Ponchiassi*, and prouyng that to be true he wryteth, he remayneth in the aforesayde great lodgyng as long as he lyueth: besides this they keepe in these places Swyne and Hennes, whereby the poore be releeued without goyng a beggyng.

He speaketh not here of all China, but of the cities, for in other places there be beggers, as you haue seene already, swarmyng out of trees.

I sayde

I sayd before that *China* was full of ryuers, but now I mynde to confyrme the same anewe: for the farther we went into the countrey, the greater we found the ryuers. Sometymes we were so farre of from the sea, that where we came no sea fyshe had been seene, and salt was there very deere, of freshe water fyshe yet was there great aboundance, & that fysh very good: they keepe it good after this maner. Where the ryuers doe meete, and so passe into the sea, there lyeth great store of Boates, specially where no salte water commeth, and that in March and Aprill. These Boates are so many that it seemeth wonderfull, ne serue they for other than to take small fyshe. By the ryuers sydes they make leyres of fine and strong nettes, that lye three handfulles vnder water, and one aboue, to keepe and nourysh their fyshe in, vntyll suche tyme as other fyshers doe come with Boates, bryngyng for that purpose certayne great chestes lyned with paper, able to holde water, wherein they carry theyr fyshe vp and downe the ryuer, euery day renuyng the chest with freshe water, and sellyng theyr fyshe in euery citie, towne, and village, where they passe, vnto the people as they neede it: most of them haue nette leyres to keepe fyshe in alwayes for theyr prouision. Where the greater Boates can not passe any farther forwarde, they take lesser, and bycause the whole countrey is very well watred, there is so great plentie of dyuers sortes of fyshe, that it is wonderfull to see: assuredly we were amazed to beholde the maner of their prouision. Theyr fyshe is chiefly nourished with the dung of Buffles and Oxen, that greatly fatteth it. Although I sayde theyr fyshyng to be in March and Aprill at what tyme we sawe them doe it, neuertheless they tolde vs that they fyshed at all tymes, for that vsually they doe feede on fyshe, wherfore it behoueth them to make theyr prouision continually. Whan we had passed *Fuquien*, wee went into *Quicin* shyre, where the fine claye vessell is made, as I sayde before: and we came to a citie, the one syde whereof is built vppon the foote of a hyll, whereby passeth a ryuer nauigable: there we tooke Boate, and went by water towarde the sea: on eche syde of the ryuer we found many cities, townes, and villages, wherein we sawe great store of marchandyse, but specially of fine clay: there vpo wee lande by the way to buye victualles and other necessaryes. Goyng downe this ryuer Southwarde, we were glad

He speaketh of Fuquien shyre.

that

that we drewe neare vnto a warmer countrey, from whence wee had been farre distant: this countrey we passed through in eyght dayes, for our iourney laye downe the streame. Before that I doe say any thyng of that shyre we came into, I will fyrst speake of the great citie of *Quicin*, wherin alwayes remaineth a *Tutan*, that is a gouernour, as you haue seene, though some *Tutans* doe gouerne two or three shyres.

That *Tutan* that was condempned for our cause, of whom I spake before, was borne in this countrey, but he gouerned *Foquien* shyre: nothing it auayled him to bee so great an officer. This countrey is so great, that in many places where we went, there had ben as yet no talke of his death, although he were executed a whole yeere before. At the citie *Quanche* whyther we came, the riuer was so great that it seemed a sea, though it were so litle where we tooke water, that we needed smal boates. One day about .ix. of ỹ clocke, beginning to row neare the walles with the streame, we came at noone to a bridge made of many barges, ouerlinked all togeather with two mighty cheyns. There stayed we vntil it was late, but we saw not one go either vp theron or downe, except two *Louteas* ỹ about the going downe of ỹ sun, came & set them downe there, the one in one side, the other in the other side. Than was the bridge opened in many places, & barges both great & smal to the number of .600. began to passe: those that went vp the streame, at one place, such as came downe, at an other. Whã al had thus shot the bridge, than was it shut vp againe. We heare say that euery day they take this order in all principall places of merchandyse, for paying of ỹ custome vnto the king, specially for salt, wherof the greatest reuenews are made that the king hath in this countrey. The passages of the bridge where it is opened, bee so neare the shore, that nothing can passe without touching the same. To stay the barges at their pleasure, that they go no farther forward, are vsed certayne yron instrumentes. The bridge consisteth of .112. barges, there stayed wee vntyll the euenyng that they were opened, lothesomely oppressed by the multitude of people that came to see vs, so many in number, that we were enforced to goe aside from the banke vntyl such tyme as the bridge was opened: howbeit we were neuertheless thronged about wt many boates full of people. And though in other cities and places where wee went,

Aliis Cenchi.

The kynges reuenues.

went,the people came so importunate vpon vs, that it was needfull to withdraw our selues: yet were we heere much more molested for the number of people, and this bridge,the principal way out of the citie vnto an other place so well inhabited, that were it walled about,it myght bee compared to the citie. When we had shot the bridge,we kept along the citie vntill that it was nyght, than met we with an other ryuer that ioyned with this,we rowed vp that by the walles vntyll we came to an other bridge gallantly made of barges, but lesser a great deale than that other bridge ouer the greater streame: heere stayed we that nyght, and other two dayes with more quiet,being out of the preasse of the people. These riuers do meet without at one corner point of the citie. In either of them were so many barges great and small, that we all thought them at the least to be aboue three thousande: the greater number therof was in the lesser ryuer,where we were. Amongst the rest here lay certayne greater vessels,called in their language *Parai*,that serue for the *Tutan*. whan he taketh his voyage by other ryuers that ioyne with this,towards *Pachin*,where the king maketh his abode. For,as many tymes I haue erst sayd, all this countrey is full of riuers. Desirous to see those *Parai* we got into some of them,where we found some chambers set foorth with gilded beds very richly,other furnished with tables and seates, & all other thinges so neate and in perfection, that it was wonderfull. *Parai*.

Quiacim shyre,as farre as I can perceiue,lyeth vpon the south. On that syde we kept at our first entry thereinto, traueyling not far from the high mountaynes we saw there. Asking what people dwelleth beyond those mountaynes, it was told me that they be theeues,& men of a strange language. And bycause that vnto sundry places neare this riuer,ỹ mountaynes do approch,whence the people issuing downe do many tymes great harme,this order is taken at ỹ entry into *Quiacim* shyre. To gard this riuer wheron continually go to & fro *Parai* great & small fraught with salt, fish poudred with pepper,and other necessaries for that countrey: they do lay in diuers places certain *Parai*,& great barges armed, wherin watch & warde is kept day & night in both sides of the riuer,for the safetie of the passage, & securitie of suche *Parai* as doe remayne there,though the traueylers neuer go but many in company. In euery rode there be at the least thirtie, in some two hundred men,as the passage requyreth.

This

This garde is kept vsually vntyll you come to the citie *Onchio*, where continually the *Tutan* of this shyre, and eke of *Cantan*, maketh his abode. From that citie vpwarde, where the ryuer waxeth more narrow, and the passage more daungerous, there be alwayes armed one hundred and fiftie *Parai*, to accompany other vesselles fraught with marchandyse, and all this at the king his charges. This seemed vnto me one of the strangest thinges I dyd see in this countrey.

Whan we laye at *Fuquien*, we dyd see certayne Moores, who knewe so litle of theyr secte, that they could say nothyng els but that Machomet was a Moore, my father was a Moore, and I am a Moore, with some other wordes of theyr Alcoran, wherewithall, in abstinence from Swynes flesh, they lyue vntyll the deuyll take them all. This whan I sawe, & beyng sure that in many *Chinish* cities the reliques of Machomet are kept, as soone as we came to the citie where these felowes be, I enfourmed my selfe of them, and learned the trueth.

These Moores, as they tolde me, in tymes past came in great shippes fraught with marchandise from *Pachin* ward, to a Porte graunted vnto them by the kyng, as hee is wont to all them that traffike into this countrey, where they beyng arriued at a litle towne standyng in the hauens mouth, in tyme conuerted vnto their secte the greatest *Loutea* there. Whan that *Loutea* with all his family was become Moorysh, the rest began lykewyse to doe the same. In this part of *China* the people be at libertie, euery one to worshyp and folow what him lyketh best. Wherefore no body tooke heede thereto, vntyll such tyme as the Moores perceyuyng that many folowed them in superstition, and that the *Loutea* fauoured them, they began to forbyd wholy the eatyng of Swines flesh. But all this countrymen and women, chosing rather to forsake father and mother, than to leaue of eatyng of porke, by no meanes would yelde to that proclamation. For besides the great desyre they all haue to eate that kynde of meate, many of them doe lyue thereby: and therefore the people complayned vnto the Magistrates, accusing the Moores of a conspiracy pretended betwixt them and the *Loutea* agaynst theyr kyng. In this countrey, as no suspicion, no not one traytorous worde is long borne withall: so was the kyng speedily aduertised thereof, who gaue commaun-

commaundement out of hande that the aforesayde *Loutea* should be put to death, and with hym the Moores of most importance: the other to be layde fyrst in pryson, and afterwarde to be sent abrode into certayne cities, where they remayned perpetuall slaues vnto the kyng. To this citie came by happe men and women threescore and odde, who at this day are brought to fiue men and foure women, for it is nowe twentie yeeres agoe this happened. Theyr offspryng passeth the number of .200. and they in this citie, as the rest in other cities, whyther they were sent, haue theyr *Moscheas*, wherunto they al resorte euery fryday to kepe theyr holydaye. But, as I thynke, that wyll no longer endure, then whiles they do lyue, that came from thence, for theyr posteritie is so confused, that they haue nothing of a Moore in them but abstinence from Swynes flesshe, and yet many of them do eate thereof priuilie. They tell me that theyr natiue countrey hath name *Camarian*, a fyrme lande, wherein be many kynges, and the Indishe countrey well knowen vnto them. It may so be: for as sone as they dyd see our seruauntes (our seruauntes were *Preuzaretes*) they iudged them to be Indians: many of theyr woordes sounded vppon the Persike tongue, but none of vs coulde vnderstand them. I asked them whether they conuerted any of the *Chinishe* nation vnto theyr secte: they answeared me, that with much a do they conuerted the women with whom they do marry, yeldyng me no other cause thereof, but the difficultie they find in them to be brought from eating swines flesshe and drynking of wine. I am perswaded therfore, that if this countrey were in league with vs, forbyddyng them neyther of both, it would be an easy matter to draw them to our religion, from theyr superstition, wherat they them selues do laugth when they do their Idolatrie. I haue learned moreouer that the sea wherby these Moores that came to *China*, were woont to trauaile, is a very great gulfe, that falleth into this countrey out from *Tartaria* and *Persia*, leauing on the other syde all the countrey of *China*, and lande of the *Mogorites*, drawyng alwayes towarde the south: and of all lykelyhood it is euen so, because that these Moores, the whiche we haue seene, be rather browne then white, wherby they shewe them selues to come from some warmer countrey then *China* is, neere to *Pachin*, where the

That is theyr temples.

It shoulde seeme by their voyage to be *Cardandan in Ortelius.*

It seemeth they came by the riuer from the Caspian sea.

At cacan.

ryuers are froſen in the wynter for colde, and many of them ſo behemently, that cartes may paſſe ouer them.

Mi. Mnoins Tartares.

We dyd ſee in this citie many *Tartares*, *Mogorites*, *Bremes*, and *Laoynes*, both men & women. The *Tartares* are men very white, good horſemen and archers, confinyng with *China* on that ſide where *Pachin* ſtandeth, ſeparated from thence by great mountaines that are betwyxt theſe kingdomes. Ouer them be certaine wayes to paſſe, and for both ſydes, Caſtelles continually keapte with ſouldiers: in tyme paſt the *Tartares* were woont alwayes to haue warrs with the *Chineans*, but theſe foureſcore yeeres paſt they were quiete, vntyll the ſeconde yeere of our impryſonment.

Mount Sinai.

Mogolites.

The *Mogorites* be in lyke maner whyte, and heathen, we are aduertiſed that of one ſyde they border vppon theſe *Tartares*, and confine with the *Perſike Tartares* on the other ſyde, whereof we ſawe in them ſome tokens, as theyr maner of clothes, and that kynde of hat the *Saracenes* do weare. The Moores affirmed, that where the kyng lyeth, there be many *Tartares* and *Mogorites*, that brought into *China* certayne blewes of great valewe: al we thought it to be *Vanil* of *Cambaia* woont to be ſold at *Ormus*. So that this is the true ſituation of that countrey, not in the Northpartes, as many tymes I haue harde ſaye, confynyng with Germanie.

Bremes.

As for the Bremes we haue ſeene in this citie *Chenchi* certaine men & women, amongſt whom there was one that came not long ſince, hauyng as yet her heare tyed vp after the *Pegues* faſhion: this woman, and other moe with whom a blacke Moore damſell in our companye had conference, and dyd vnderſtande them well ynough, had dwelte in *Pegu*. This newe come woman, imaginyng that we ment to make our abode in that citie, byd vs to be of good comforte, for that her countrey was not diſtant from thence aboue fiue dayes iourney, and that out of her countrey there laye a hygh way for vs home into our owne. Beyng aſked the way, ſhe anſweared that the fyrſt three dayes the way lyeth ouer certayne great mountaynes and wylderneſſe, afterwarde people to be mette withall agayne. Thence two

dayes

dayes iorney more to the Breames countrey. Wherfore I doo conclude, that *Chenchi* is one of the confynes of this kyngdome, seperated by certayne huge mountaynes, as it hath been already sayd, that lye out towardes the South. In the residue of these mountaynes standeth the prouince *Sian*, the *Laoyns* countrey, *Cambaia, Chinapa,* and *Cochinchina.*

Southwarde from Chenchi to the sea.

Auoins.

This citie, cheefe of other syxteene, is situated in a pleasaunt playne, aboundyng in thynges necessarie, sea fysh only excepted, for it standeth farre from the sea: of freshe fyshe so muche store, that the market places are neuer emptie. The walles of this citie are very strong and hygh: one day dyd I see the *Louteas.* thereof go vpon the walles, to take the viewe thereof, borne in theyr seates I spake of before, accompanied with a troupe of horsemen, that went two and two: It was tolde me they myght haue gone three and three. We haue seene moreouer, that within this aforesayde citie the kyng hath moe than a thousand of his kynne lodged in great pallaces, in diuers partes of the citie: theyr gates be redde, and the entrye into theyr houses, that they may be knowen, for that is the kyng his colour. These gentlemen, accordyng to theyr neareneſſe in blood vnto the kyng, as soone as they be maried, receiue theyr place in honour: this place neither encreaseth nor diminisheth in any respect, as long as the kyng lyueth, the kyng appoynteth them theyr wyues and familie, allowyng them by the Moneth al thynges necessarie abundantly, as he doth to his gouernours of shyres and cities, howebeit, not one of these hath as long as he lyueth, any charge or gouernment at al. They geue them selues to eatyng and drinkyng. and be for the most part burly men of bodie, inlomuche that espiyng any one of them, whom we had not seene before, we myght knowe hym to be the kyng his cosyn. They be neuertheleſſe very pleasaunt, courteous, and fayre conditioned: ne dyd we finde, al the time we were in that citie, so much honour and good entertaynement any where, as at theyr handes. They byd vs to theyr houses, to eate and drynke, and when they founde vs not, or were not wyllyng to go with them, they byd our seruantes, & slaues, causing them to syt down with the first. Notwithstanding the good lodging these gentlemen haue so commodious that they

Chenchi.

want

want nothyng, yet are they in this bondage, that duryng lyfe they neuer goe abrode. The cause, as I dyd vnderstand, wherefore the kyng so vseth his cousynes, is that none of them at anye tyme may rebell agaynst hym: and thus he shutteth them vp in three or foure other cities. Most of them can play on the Lute: and to make that kynde of pastyme peculier vnto them only, all other in the cities where they do lyue be forbydden that instrument, the Curtisans and blynde folke only excepted, who be musitions, and can play.

This king furthermore for the greater securitie of his realme, and the auoydyng of tumultes, letteth not one in al his countrey to be called Lord, except he be of his blood. Many great estates and gouernours there be, that duryng theyr office are lodged Lordlyke, and do beare the port of myghtie Princes: but they be so many tymes displaced, and other placed a newe, that they haue not the whyle to become corrupt. True it is that duryng theyr office they be well prouided for, as afterwarde also lodged at the kynges charges, and in pension as long as they liue, payde them Monethly in the cities where they dwel, by certaine officers appoynted for that purpose. The kyng then is a Lorde only, not one besydes hym as you haue seene, except it be suche as be of his blood. A Nephewe lykewyse of the kyng, the kyng his systers sonne, lyeth continually within the walles of the citie, in a strong pallace built Castelwyse, euen as his other cousins do, remaynyng alwayes within doores, serued by Eunuches, neuer dealyng with any matters. Their festiuall dayes, newe Moones, and ful Moones the magistrates make great bankets, & so do such as be of the king his blood. The king his Nephewe hath name *Vanfuli*, his pallace is walled about, the wall is not high, but foure square, and in circuit nothing inferiour to the walles of *Goa*, the outside is painted red. in euery square a gate, & ouer each gate a tower, made of timber excellently wel wrought: before the principal gate of the foure, that openeth into the high streat, no *Loutea*, be he neuer so great, may passe on horsbacke, or carried in his seat. Amydde this quadrangle standeth the pallace where that gentleman lieth, doubtlesse worth the sight, although we came not in to see it. By report the roofes of the towers and house, are glased greene, the greater part of the

Goa is a citie of the Portugales in East Indie.

quadrangle

Quadrangle set with sauage trees, as Okes, Chestnuttes, Cypres, Pineapples, Cedars, and other suche lyke that we do wante, after the maner of a wood, wherin are keapt Stagges, Oxen, and other beastes, for that Lorde his recreation neuer goyng abrode, as I haue sayde. One prehominence this citie hath aboue the reste where we haue been, and it of ryght as we do thynke, that besydes the multitude of market places, wherein all thynges are to be solde, throughe euery streate continually are cryed all thynges necessarie, as flesshe of all sortes, freshefysshe, hearbes, oyle, vineger, meale, rise, in summa, al thinges so plentifully, that many houses neede no seruauntes, euery thing beyng brought to theyr doores. Most part of the merchantes remayne in the suburbes, for that ỹ cities are shut vp euery night as I haue sayde. The merchantes therefore the better to attende theyr businesse, do chuse rather to make theyr abode without in the suburbes, then within the citie. I haue seene in this ryuer a pretie kynde of fyshyng, not to be omitted in my opinion, and therefore wyll I set it downe. The kyng hath in many ryuers good store of barges full of sea crowes, that breede, are fedde, and do dye therein, in certayne cages, allowed monethly a certayne prouision of ryse. These barges the kyng bestoweth vppon his greatest magistrates, geuyng to some two, to some three of them, as he thynketh good, to fysshe therewithall after this maner. At the houre appoynted to fysshe, all the barges are brought togeather in a circle, where the ryuer is shalowe, and the crowes, tyed togeather vnder the wynges, are let leape downe into the water, some vnder, some aboue, worth the lookyng vppon: eche one as he hath filled his bagge, goeth to his owne barge and emptieth it, whiche done, he retourneth to fysshe agayne. Thus hauyng taken good store of fysshe, they set the crowes at libertie, and do suffer them to fysshe for theyr owne pleasure. There were in that citie, where I was, twentie barges at the least of these aforesayde crowes. I wente almost euery day to see them, yet coulde I neuer be throughly satisfied to see so straunge a kynde of fyshyng.

Finis.

¶ Of the Ilande Giapan, and other litle Isles in the East Ocean.

By R. Wylles.

THe extreme part of the knowen woꝛlde vnto vs, is the noble Ilande *Ciapan*, witten otherwyse *Iapon* and *Iapan*. This Iland standeth in the East Ocean, beyonde all *Asie*, betwixte *Cathayo* & the West Indies 36. degrees Noꝛthwarde from the *æquinoctial* line, in the same clime with the South part of Spayne and Poꝛtugall, distant from thence by sea. 6000. leagues: the trauayle thyther, both foꝛ ciuile discoꝛde, great piracie, and often shipwꝛackes, very daungerous. This countrey is hylly, and pestred with snowe, wherefoꝛe it is nether so warme as Poꝛtugall, & yet very pooꝛe, as farre as we can learne, wantyng oyle, butter, cheese, mylke, egges, suger, honny, by neger, saffarne, cynamome, and pepper. Barly bzanne the Ilanders do vse in steede of salte: medicinable thinges hollsome foꝛ the body haue they none at al. Neuertheless in that Iland sundꝛy fruites do gꝛow, not much vnlike the fruites of Spayne: & great stoꝛe of Syluer mynes are therin to be seene. The people tractable, ciuile, wyttye, courteous, without deceyte, in vertue and honest conuersation exceedyng all other nations lately discouered, but so muche standyng vppon theyꝛ reputation, that theyꝛ chiefe Idole may be thought honour. The contempte therof causeth among them much discoꝛd and debate, manslaughter and murther: euen foꝛ theyꝛ reputation they do honour theyꝛ parentes, keepe theyꝛ promises, absteyne from adultery and robberyes, punyshing by death the least robbery done, holdyng foꝛ a pꝛynciple, that whosoeuer stealeth a tryfle, wyll if he see occasion steale a greater thing. It may be thefte is so seuerely punished of them, foꝛ that the nation is oppꝛessed with scarcitie of al thynges necessarye, and so pooꝛe, that euen foꝛ miserie they strangle theyꝛ owne chyldꝛen, preferring death befoꝛe want. These felowes do nether eate noꝛ kyll any foule. They lyue chiefely by fysshe, hearbes, and fruites, so healthfully, that they dye very olde. Of Ryce and Wheate there is no great stoꝛe.

No

No man is ashamed there of his pouertie, ne be they gentlemen therfore lesse honored of the meaner people, ne wyl the poorest gentleman there. matche his chylde with the baser sort for any gayne, so muche they do make more accompt of gentry then of wealth. The greatest delyght they haue, is in armorie, eache boy at fourteene yeeres of age, be he borne gentle or otherwyse, hath his swoorde and dagger: very good archers they be, contempnyng all other nations in comparison of theyr manhood and prowesse, puttyng not vp one iniurie, be it neuer so small in worde or deede, among them selues. They feede moderately, but they drynke largely. The vse of vines they knowe not, theyr drinke they make of Ryce, vtterly they do abhorre dyse, and all games, accomptyng nothyng more vyle in a man, then to geue hym selfe vnto those thynges, that make vs greedie and desirous to get other mens goodes. If at any time they do sweare, for that seldome they are wont to do, they sweare by the Sunne: many of them are taught good letters, wherfore they may so much the sooner be brought vnto Christianitie. Eche one is contented with one wyfe: they be all desirous to learne, and naturally enclined vnto honestie and curtesie: godly talke they lysten vnto wyllingly, especially when they vnderstand it thoroughlye. Theyr gouerment consisteth of three estates. The fyrst place is due vnto the hygh priest, by whose lawes and decrees, al publique and priuate matters, apparteynyng vnto religion, are decided. The sectes of theyr cleargie men, whom they do call *Bonzi*, be of no estimation or authoritie, except the high priest by letters patent do confyrme the same: he confyrmeth and alloweth of theyr *Tundi*, who be as it were Byshops, although in many places they are nominated by sundrye Princes. These *Tundi*, are greatly honoured of all sortes: they do geue benefices vnto inferiour ministers, and doo graunt licences for many thynges, as to eate flesh vppon those daies they go in Pilgrimage to theyr Idoles, with suche lyke priuileges. Finallye, this hygh priest, wont to be chosen in *China*, for his wisdome and learnyng: made in *Giapan*, for his gentry and byrth: hath so large a Dominion, and reuenewes so great, that ofttimes he beardeth the pety Kinges, and Princes there.

Theyr gouerneinent.

Tundi.

Theyr seconde principall Magistrate, in theyr language *Vo*, is the cheefe Herehaught, made by succession and byrth, honored as a God. This gentleman neuer toucheth the grounde with his foote without foxfaytyng of his office, he neuer goeth abrode out of his house, nor is at all tymes to be seene. At home he is eyther carried about in a lytter, or els he goeth in woodden Choppines a foote hygh from the grounde: commonly he sitteth in his Chayre with a swoord in one syde, and a bowe and arrowes in the other, next his body he weareth blacke, his outwarde garment is redde, all shadowed ouer with Cipresse, at his cap hang certayne Lambeaux much lyke vnto a Bishops Myter, his forehead is paynted whyte and red, he eateth his meate in earthen Dishes. This Herehaught determineth in all *Giapan* the diuers tytles of honour, whereof in that Iland is great plentie, eache one perticularly knowen by his badge, commonly seene in sealyng vp theyr letters, and dayly altered accordyng to theyr degrees. About this *Vo* euery noble man hath his Soliciter, for the nation is so desirous of prayse and honour, that they stryue among them selues who may byrbe hym best. By these meanes the Herehaught groweth so ryche, that although he haue neyther lande nor any reuenewes otherwyse, yet may he be accompted the wealthyest man in al *Giapan*. For three causes this great Magistrate may loose his office: first, if he touch the ground with his foote, as it hath been alreadie sayd: next, if he kyl anye body: thyrdlye, yf he be founde an enemie vnto peace and quietnesse, howebeit neyther of these aforesayde causes is sufficient to put hym to death.

Theyr thyrd cheefe officer is a Iudge, his office is to take vp & to end matters in controuersie, to determine of warres & peace, that which he thynketh ryght, to punyshe rebelles, wherein he may commaunde the noble men to assist hym vpon paine of forfettyng theyr goodes: neuertheless at all tymes he is not obeyed, for that many matters are ended rather by might and armes, than determined by law. Other controuersies are decided either in the Temporal Court, as it seemeth good vnto the Princes, or in the Spiritual consistorie before the *Tundi*.

P. 231. Rebelles are executed in this maner, especially yf they be noble men, or officers. The kyng, looke what daye he geueth sentence

sentence agaynst any one, the same day the partie, whersoeuer he be, is aduertised thereof, and the day tolde him of his execution. The condempned person asketh of the messenger where that it may be lawfull for him to kyll him selfe: the which thing whan the kyng doeth graunt, the partie takyng it for an honour, putteth on his best apparell, and launcyng his body a crosse from the brest downe all the belly, murdreth him selfe. This kynde of death they take to be without infamy, ne doe their children, for theyr fathers crime so punished, lose theyr goods. But if the king reserue them to be executed by the Hangman, than flocketh hee togeather his children, his seruantes, and friendes home to his house, to preserue his lyfe by force. The kyng committeth the fetchyng of him out vnto his chiefe Iudge, who first setteth vppon him with bow and arrowes, & afterward with pykes & swoords, vntyll the rebell and all his family be slayne, to theyr perpetuall ignominie and shame.

The Indyshe wryters make mention of sundry great cities in this Iland, as *Cangoxima* a Hauen towne in the South parte therof, and *Meaco* distant from thence 300. leagues northward, the royall seat of the kyng, and most wealthy of all other townes in that Islande. The people thereabout is very noble, and theyr language the best *Iaponishe*. In *Meaco* are sayde to be nienetie thousande houses inhabited and vpwarde, a famous Vniuersitie, and in it fyue principall Colledges, besydes closes and cloysters of *Bonzi*, *Leguixil*, and *Hamacata*, that is, Priestes, Monkes, and Nunnes. Other fyue notable Vniuersities there be in *Giapan*, namely, *Coia*, *Negru*, *Homi*, *Frenoi*, and *Bandu*. The fyrst foure haue in them at the least, 3500. scholers: in the fyft are many moe. For *Bandu* prouince is very great, and possessed by sixe princes, fyue whereof are vassalles vnto the sixt, yet he himselfe subiecte vnto the *Iaponish* kyng, vsually called the great king of *Meaco*: lesser scholes there be many in diuers places of this Islande. And thus muche specially concernyng this glorious Islande, among so many barbarous nations and rude regions, haue I gleathered togeather in one summe, out of sundry letters written from thence into *Europe*, by no lesse faithful reporters thã famous trauelers. For confirmation whereof, as also for the knowledge of other thinges not conteyned in the premisses, the curious rea-

ders may peruſe theſe foure volumes of Indiſche matters writ-
ten long agoe in Italian, and of late compendiouſly made latin,
by *Petrus Maffeius* my olde acquaynted friend, entitulyng the
ſame, *De rebus Iaponicis*. One whole letter out of the fyft booke
thereof, ſpecially entreatyng of that countrey, haue I done into
Englyſhe word for word, in ſuche wyſe as foloweth.

Aloiſius Froes, to his companyons in Ieſus Chriſt,
that remayne in China and Indie.

The laſt yeere, deare brethren, I wrote vnto you from *Firan-
do*, howe *Coſmus Turrianus* had appoynted me to traueyle to
Meaco, to help *Gaſpar Vilela*, for that there the harueſt was great,
the labourers fewe, and that I ſhould haue for my companyon in
that iourney *Aloiſius Almeida*. It ſeemeth now my parte, hauing
by the helpe of God ended ſo long a voyage, to ſignifie vnto you
by letter ſuche thinges ſpecially as I myght thinke you woulde
moſt delyght to knowe. And becauſe at the begynnyng *Almeida*
and I ſo parted the whole labour of wrytyng letters betwixt vs,
that he ſhould ſpeake of our voyage, and ſuche thinges as happe-
ned therein, I ſhould make relation of the *Meachians* eſtate, and
wryte what I could well learne of the *Giapans* maners and con-
ditions: ſettyng aſyde all diſcourſes of our voyage, that whiche
ſtandeth me vppon I wil diſcharge in this Epiſtle, that you con-
ſideryng howe artificially, how cunningly, vnder the pretexte of
religion that craftie aduerſary of mankynde, leadeth and drayweth
vnto perdition the *Giaponish* myndes, blynded with many ſuper-
ſtitions and ceremonies, may the more pitie this nation.

The inhabiters of *Giapan*, as men that neuer had greatly to
doe with other nations, in their Geography diuided the whole
world into three partes, *Giapan*, *Sian*, and *China*. And albeit the
Giapans receyued out of *Sian*, and *China*, their ſuperſtitions and
ceremonies, yet doe they neuertheleſſe contemne all other natti-
ons in compariſon of them ſelues, & ſtandyng in their owne con-
ceite doe far preferre them ſelues before all other ſortes of people
in wiſedome and policie.

Touchyng the ſituation of the countrey, & nature of the ſoyle,
vnto the thinges eſtſones erſt written, this one thing wil I adde:
in theſe Ilandes the ſommer to be moſt hot, the winter extreame
colde. In the kyngdome of *Canga*, as we call it, falleth ſo muche
ſnow,

snow,that the houses being buried in it,ỹ inhabiters keepe within doores certaine moneths of the yeere,hauing no way to come foorth except they breake vp the tiles. Whirlewyndes most vehement,Earthquakes so common, that the *Giapans* dreade suche kinde of feares litle or nothing at all. The countrey is full of siluer mines,otherwyse barren,not so much by fault of nature, as through the slouthfulnes of the inhabiters: howbeit Oxen they keepe,& that for tillage sake onely. The ayre is wholsome, ỹ waters good,the people very fayre & well bodied: bare headed commonly they go,procuring baldnes with sorow & teares,eftsoones rooting vp w̃ pinsars al the heare of their heads as it groweth,except it be a litle behind, the which they knot and keepe with al diligence. Euen from their childehood they weare daggers and swoords,the which they vse to lay vnder their pillows whan they goe to bedde:in shew curteous and affable: in deede haughty and proude. They delight most in warlyke affayres, and their greatest studie is armes. Mennes apparell dyuersly coloured, is worne downe halfe the legges,and to the elbowes: womens attyre made hansomely, lyke vnto a vayle, is somewhat longer: all maner of dysyng and theft they doe eschue. The merchant, although he bee wealthie, is not accompted of. Gentlemen,be they neuer so poore, retayne theyr place: most precysely they stande vppon theyr honour and woorthynesse, ceremoniously stryuyng among them selues in curtesies and fayre speaches. Wherein if any one happely bee lesse carefull than hee should bee, euen for a trifle many tymes hee getteth euyll will. Want, though it trouble most of them, so muche they doe detest, that poore men cruelly takyng pitie of theyr infantes newly borne, especially gyrles, doe many tymes with theyr owne feete strangle them. Noble men, and other lykewyse of meaner calling,generally haue but one wyfe a peece, by whom although they haue issue,yet for a trifle they diuorse themselues from their wiues,and the wiues also sometimes from their husbands,to marry with others. After ỹ seconde degree,coosins may there lawfully marry. Adoption of other mens children is much vsed among them. In great townes most men and women can write and reade.

This nation feedeth sparely, theyr vsuall meate is ryse and salattes, and neare the sea syde fyshe. They feast one an

other

other many tymes,wherein they vse great diligence,especially in drinkyng one to an other,insomuch that the better sorte,least they myght rudely commit some fault therin,doe vse to reade certaine bookes written of dueties and cerimonies apperteynyng vnto bankettes. To be delicate and fine, they put theyr meat into their mouthes with litle forkes, accompting it great rudenes to touch it with theyr fingers: wynter and sommer they drynke water as hot as they may possible abyde it. Theyr houses are in daunger of fyre,but finely made,and cleane, layde all ouer with straw pallettes,whereupon they doe both sit in steede of stooles, and lye in theyr clothes,with billets vnder theyr heades. For feare of defilyng these pallettes,they goe eyther barefoote within doores,or weare strawe pantofles on theyr buskynnes whan they come abroade, the which they laye aside at theyr returne home agayne. Gentlemen for the most parte doe passe the nyght in banketting, musike,and vayne discourses,they sleepe the day tyme. In *Meaco* and *Sacaio* there is good store of beddes,but they be very litle, and may be compared vnto our pues.

In bryngyng vp theyr children they vse wordes onely to rebuke them,admonishyng as diligently and aduisedly boyes of six or seuen yeeres age,as though they were olde men. They are giuen very much to entertayne strangers, of whom most curiously they loue to aske euen in trifles what forreyne nations doe, and theyr fashions. Suche argumentes and reasons as be manifest, and are made playne with examples,doe greatly persuade them. They detest all kynde of theft, whosoeuer is taken in that faulte may be slayne freely of any body. No publike prisons, no common gayles,no ordinary Iusticers: priuately eche householder hath the hearyng of matters at home in his owne house, and the punishyng of greater crymes that deserue death without delaye. Thus vsually the people is kept in awe and feare.

About foure hundred yeeres agoe (as in theyr olde recordes we fynde) all *Giapan* was subiecte vnto one *Emperor*,whose royall seate was *Meaco*, in the *Giaponishe* language called *Cubucama*. But the nobilitie rebellyng agaynst him, by litle and litle haue taken away the greatest parte of his dominion,howbeit his title continually remayneth,and the residue in some respect doe make great accompt of him stil,acknowledging him for theyr superior.

Thus

Thus the Empyre of *Giapan*, in tymes past but one alone, is now diuided into sixtie sixe kyngdomes, the onely cause of ciuile warres continually in that Iland, to no small hynderaunce of the Gospell, whilest the kynges that dwell neare togeather inuade one an other, eche one couetyng to make his kyngdome greater. Farthermore in the citie *Meaco* is the pallace of the high priest, whom that nation honoureth as a God, he hath in his house. 366. Idolles, one whereof by course is euery nyght set by his syde for a watcheman. He is thought of the common people so holy, that it may not be lawfull for him to goe vppon the earth: if happely he doe set one foote to the grounde, he looseth his office. He is not serued very sumptuously, he is maynteined by almes. The heads and beards of his ministers are shaueu, they haue name *Cangues*, and theyr aucthoritie is great throughout all *Giapan*. The *Cubucama* vseth them for Embassadours to decide controuersies betwixte princes, and to ende theyr warres, whereof they are wont to make very great gayne. It is now two yeeres since, or there about, that one of them came to *Bungo*, to entreat of peace betwixt the kyng thereof, and the kyng of *Amanguzzo*. This Agent fauouring the kyng of *Bungo* his cause more than the other, brought to passe that the foresayde kyng of *Bungo* should keepe two kingdomes, the which he had taken in warres from the king of *Amanguzzo*. Wherefore he had for his reward of the kyng of *Bungo* aboue thirtie thousande Ducattes. And thus farre heereof.

But his almes are very good.

I come now to other superstitions and ceremonies, that you may see, deare brethren, that whiche I sayde in the beginnyng, howe subtlye the deuyll hath deceyued the *Giaponisbe* nation, and howe diligent and ready they be to obey and worshyp him. And first, all remembrance and knowledge not onely of Christ our redeemer, but also of that one God the maker of all thinges, is cleane extinguished, & vtterly abolished out of the *Giapans* hartes. Moreouer theyr superstitious sectes are many, wheras it is lawfull for eche one to folow that which lyketh him best: but the principall sectes are two, namely the *Amidans* and *Xacaians*. Wherfore in this countrey shall you see many monasteryes, not onely of *Bonzii* men, but also of *Bonziæ* women diuersly attyred, for some doe weare whyte vnder, and blacke vpper garments, other goe apparelled in ashe colour, & theyr Idole hath name *Denichi*:

from

from these the *Amidanes* differ very muche. Agayne the men *Bonzii* for the most parte dwell in sumptuous houses, and haue great reuenues. These felowes are chast by commaundement, marry they may not vnder payne of death. In the mydst of theyr Temple is erected an Aulter, whereon standeth a wodden Idole of *Amida*, naked from the gyrdle vpwarde, with holes in his eares, after the maner of Italian Gentlewomen, sittyng on a woodden rose, goodly to beholde. They haue great libraries, and halles for them all to dyne and suppe togeather, and belles wherewith they are certayne houres called to prayers. In the euenyng the Superintendent gyueth eche one a theame for meditation. After mydnyght before the Aulter in theyr Temple they doe say Mattens as it were out of *Xaca* his last booke, one quier one verse, the other quier an other. Early in the mornyng eche one gyueth him selfe to meditation one houre: they shaue theyr heades and beardes. Theyr Cloysters be very large, and within the precincte thereof, Chappelles of the *Fotoquiens*, for by that name some of the *Giapanish* Sainctes are called: theyr holydayes yeerely be very many. Most of these *Bonzii* be Gentlemen, for that the *Giaponish* nobilitie, charged with many children, vse to make most of them *Bonzii*, not being able to leaue for eche one a patrymony good ynough. The *Bonzii* most couetously bent, know all the wayes howe to come by money. They sell vnto the people many scroles of paper, by the helpe whereof the common people thinketh it selfe warranted from all power of the deuylles. They borowe lykewyse money to bee repayde with great vsury in an other world, gyuyng by Obligation vnto the lender an assuraunce thereof, the whiche departyng out of this lyfe hee may carry with him to hell.

Inambuxu.

There is an other great company of suche as are called *Inambuxu*, with curlde and staryng heare. They make profession to fynde out agayne thinges either lost or stolen, after this sorte. They set before them a chylde, whom the deuyll inuadeth, called vp thither by charmes: of that chylde than doe they aske that which they are desirous to know.

These mens prayers both good and bad are thought greatly to preuayle, insomuch that both their blessinges and theyr curses they

they sell vnto the people . The Nouices of this order, before they be admitted, goe together two or three thousande in a company, vp a certayne high mountayne to do pennance there, three-score dayes voluntarily punishyng them selues . In this tyme the deuyl sheweth him selfe vnto them in sundry shapes: and they, lyke young graduates, admitted as it were felowes into some certayne company, are set foorth with whyte tasselles hanging about theyr neckes, and blacke Bonettes that scarsely couer any more than the crowne of theyr heades . Thus attyred they range abrode in all *Giapan*, to set out them selues and their cunnyng to sale, eche one beatyng his basen hee carryeth alwayes about with him, to gyue notice of theyr comunyng in all townes where they passe.

There is also an other sorte called *Genguis*, that make profession to shewe by southsayng where stolen thinges are, and who were the theeues. These dwel in the toppe of an high mountayne, blacke in face for the continuall heate of the sunne, for the colde, wyndes, and raynes they doe continually endure . They marry but in theyr owne tribe and lyne: the reporte goeth that they bee horned beastes . They clyme vp most hygh rockes and hylles, and goe ouer very great ryuers by the onely arte of the deuyll, who to bryng those wretches the more into errour, byddeth them to goe vp a certayne hygh mountayne, where they stande myserably gazing and earnestly lookyng for him as long as the deuyll appoynteth them . At the length at noone-tyde, or in the euenyng, commeth that deuil, whom they call *Amida*, among them to shewe him selfe vnto them: this shew breedeth in the braynes and hartes of men suche a kynde of superstition, that it can by no meanes be rooted out of them afterwarde. *Genguis.*

The deuyll was wont also in an other mountaine to shewe him selfe vnto the *Giaponish* nation. Who so was more desirous than other, to go to heauen and to enioy Paradyse, thyther went he to see that syght, and hauyng seene the deuyll, folowed hym, so by the deuyll persuaded, into a denne vntyll hee came to a deepe pytte . Into this pytte the deuyll was wont to leape, & to take with him his worshypper whom he there murdred. This deceit was thus perceyued . An olde man blynded with this superstition, was by his sonne dissuaded from thence, but all in vayne.

Wherfore

Wherefore his ſonne folowed him priuely into that denne with his bowe and arrowes, where the deuyll gallantly appeared vnto him in the ſhape of a man. Whileſt the olde man falleth downe to worſhyp the deuyll, his ſonne ſpeedily ſhootyng an arrow at the ſpirite ſo appearyng, ſtroke a Fore in ſteede of a man, ſo ſodeynly was that ſhape altered. This old man his ſonne trackyng the Fore ſo runnyng away, came to that pit wherof I ſpake, and in the bottome thereof he founde many bones of dead men, deceyued by the deuyll after that ſorte in tyme paſt. Thus deliuered hee his father from preſent death, and all other from ſo peſtilent an opinion.

There is furthermore a place bearyng name *Coia*, very famous for the multitude of Abbeyes the *Bonzii* haue therin. The beginner and founder whereof is thought to be one *Combendaxis* a ſuttle craftie felowe, that gotte the name of holyneſſe by cunnyng ſpeache, although the lawes and ordinances he made were altogeather deuiliſhe: he is ſayde to haue founde out the *Giapaniſhe* letters vſed at this day. In his later yeeres this Sim ſuttle buryed him ſelfe in a foureſquare graue, foure cubites deepe, ſeuerely forbyddyng it to be opened, for that than he dyed not, but reſted his body, wearyed with continuall buſineſſe, vntyll many thouſande thouſandes of yeeres were paſſed, after the whiche tyme a great learned man named *Mirozu* ſhould come into *Giapan*, and than would he ryſe vp out of his graue agayne. About his tumbe many lampes are lyghted, ſent thyther out of dyuers prouinces, for that the people is perſuaded, that whoſoeuer is liberall and beneficiall towardes the beautifying of that monument, ſhall not onely encreaſe in wealth in this worlde, but in the lyfe to come be ſafe through *Combendaxis* helpe. Suche as gyue them ſelues to worſhip him, liue in thoſe Monaſteries or Abbayes, with ſhauen heads, as though they had forſaken all ſecular matters, wheras in deede they wallow in all ſortes of wickedneſſe and luſt. In theſe houſes, the which are many (as I ſayde) in number, doe remaine 6000. *Bonzii*, or thereabout, beſydes the multitude of laye men: women be reſtrayned from thence vppon payne of death. An other company of *Bonzii* dwelleth at *Fatonochaiti*. They teache a great multitude of children all trickes and ſleightes of guyle and theft: whom they doe fynde to be of great towardneſſe, thoſe

doe

doe they instruct in all the petigrues of princes, and fashions of the nobilitie, in chiualry, & eloquence, and so send them abrode into other prouinces, attyred lyke young princes, to this ende, that faynyng them selues to be nobly borne, they may with great summes of money, borowed vnder the colour and pretence of nobilitie, returne agayne. Wherefore this place is so infamous in all *Giapan*, that if any scholler of that order bee happely taken abrode, hee incontinently dyeth for it. Neuertheless these cousyners leaue not dayly to vse theyr wonted wickednesse and knauery.

Nyth from *Giapan*, three hundred leagues out of *Meaco*, lyeth a great countrey of sauage men, clothed in beastes skynnes, rough bodyed, with huge beardes, and monstruous muchaches, the which they hold vp with litle forkes as they drynke. These people are great drinkers of wyne, fierce in warres, and much feared of the *Giapans*: beyng hurte in fight, they washe theyr woundes with salte water, other surgery haue they none. In theyr bestes they are sayde to carry lookyng glasses: their swordes they tye to theyr heades, in suche wyse, that the handle doe rest vppon their shoulders. Seruice and cerimonies haue they none at all, onely they are wont to worshyppe heauen. To *Aquita*, a great towne in that *Giaponishe* kyngdome, we call *Geuano*, they muche resort for merchandyse, and the *Aquitanes* lykewyse doe traueyle into theyr countrey, howebeit not often, for that there many of them are slayne by the inhabiters.

The Giapanish Funerals.

Muche more concernyng this matter I had to wryte, but to auoyde tediousnesse, I will come to speake of the *Giapans* madnesse agayne, who most desirous of vayne glory, doe thynke than specially to geat immortall fame, whan they procure them selues to bee most sumptuously and solempnely buryed. theyr buryalles and obsequies in the citie *Meaco*, are done after this maner. About one houre before the dead body be brought forth, a great multitude of his friendes, apparelled in theyr best aray, go before vnto the fyre, with them goe theyr kynswomen, and such as bee of theyr acquayntaunce, clothed in whyte (for that is the mournyng colour there) with a chaungeable coloured vayle on theyr heades. Eche woman hath with her also, accordyng to her abilitie, all her family trymmed vp in whyte silke mocado:

eado: the better sorte and wealthier women goe in litters of *Cædar*, artificially wrought, and richly dressed. In the seconde place marcheth a great company of footemen sumptuously apparelled. Than a far of commeth one of these *Bonzii*, maister of the cerimonies for that superstition, brauely clad in silkes & golde, in a large & high lytter excellently wel wrought, accompanied with. 30. other *Bonzii*, or thereabout, wearing hattes, linnen albes, and fyne blacke vpper garments. Than attired in ashe colour (for this colour also is mourning) with a long torch of pineaple, sheweth the dead body the way vnto the fyre, least it either stumble, or ignorantly goe out of the way. Welneare. 200. *Bonzii* folow him singing the name of that deuill the which the partie deceassed chiefly did woorship by his life tyme, and therwithall a very great basen is beaten, euen to the place of fire, in steed of a bel. Than folow two great paper baskets hanged open at staues endes, full of paper roses diuersly coloured: such as beare them, doe march but slowly, shaking euer now & than their staues, that the aforesaid floures may fall downe by litle & litle, as it were droppes of rayne, and be whirled about with the wynd. This shoure say they is an argument that the soule of the dead man is gone to Paradyse. After all this, eight beardles *Bonzii* orderly two and two dragge after them on the ground long speares, the pointes backewarde, with flagges of one cubite a peece, wherin the name also of that Idole is written. Than be there carried ten Lanternes trimmed with the former inscription, ouercast with a fine bayle, and candelles burning in them. Besides this, two young men clothed in ashe colour, beare pineaple torches, not lighted, of three foote length, the which torches serue to kindle the fyre wherein the dead corpes is to be burnt. In the same colour folow many other that weare on the crownes of their heades fayre, litle, threesquare, blacke lethren caps, tied fast vnder their chine (for ẏ is honorable amõgst them) with papers on their heads, wherin the name of ẏ deuyll, I spake of, is written. And to make it the more solempne, after commeth a man with a table one cubite long, one foote broad, couered with a very fine whyte bayle, in both sides wherof is written in golden letters the aforesaid name. At the length by foure men is brought forth the corpes sitting in a gorgeous lytter, clothed in whyte, hanging downe his head, and holding his handes togeather lyke

one

one that prayed: to the reſt of his apparell may you adde an vpper gowne of paper, written full of that booke the which his God is ſayd to haue made, whan he liued in the worlde, by whoſe helpe and merites commonly they doe thinke to bee ſaued. The dead man his children come next after him moſt gallantly ſet fooryth, the yongeſt wherof carrieth lykewyſe a pineaple torch to kyndle the fyre. Laſt of all folowety a great number of people in ſuche cappes as I erſt ſpake of.

Whan they are al come to the place appointed for the obſequie, all the *Bonzii* with the whole multitude, for the ſpace of one hour, beating pannes & baſens with great clamors, cal vpon the name of that deuill, the which being ended, the obſequie is done in this maner. In the midſt of a great quadrangle, rayled about, hanged with courſe lynnen, and agreeably vnto the foure partes of the worlde, made with foure gates to goe in and out at, is digged a hole: in the hole is layde good ſtore of wood, whereon is rayſed gallantly a waued roofe, before that ſtande two tables furniſhed with diuers kyndes of meates, eſpecially dry figges, Pomegranates, and tartes good ſtore, but neyther fyſhe nor fleſhe: vpon one of them ſtandeth alſo a chaffre with coles, and in it ſweete wood to make perfumes. Whan all this is ready, the corde wherewith the lytter was carried, is throwen by a long rope into the fyre: as many as are preſent ſtryue to take the rope in their handes, vſing theyr aforeſayd clamors, which done, they goe in proceſſion as it were rounde about the quadrangle thryſe. Than ſetting the lytter on the wood buylte vp ready for the fyre, that *Bonzius* who than is maiſter of the cerimonies, ſayeth a verſe that no bodie there vnderſtandeth, whyrlyng thryſe about ouer his head a torche lyghted, to ſignifie thereby that the ſoule of the dead man had neyther any begynnyng, ne ſhall haue at any tyme an ende, and throweth away the torche. Two of the dead man his children, or of his neare kynne, take it vp agayne, and ſtandyng one at the Eaſt ſyde of the lytter, the other at the Weſt, doe for honour and reuerence, reache it to eche other thryſe ouer the dead corpes, and ſo caſt it into the pyle of wood: by and by they throwe in oyle, ſweete wood, and other perfumes, accordyngly as they haue plentie, and ſo with a great flame bryng the corpes to aſhes: his chyldren in the meane

whyle puttyng ſweete wood into the Chaffer at the table, with odoꝛes, doe ſolempnely and religiouſly wooꝛſhyp their father as a Sainct: which being done, the *Bonzii* are payde eche one in his degree. The maiſter of the cerimonies hath foꝛ his part fyue ducates, ſometimes ten, ſometimes .xx. the reſt haue ten Julies a peece, oꝛ els a certayne number of other preſentes called *Caxæ*. The meate that was oꝛdeyned, as ſoone as the dead coꝛpes friendes and all the *Bonzii* are gone, is left foꝛ ſuch as ſerued at the obſequie, foꝛ the pooꝛe, and impotent lazares.

The next day returne to the place of obſequie the dead man his childꝛen, his kynread, and friendes, who geatheryng vp his aſhes, bones, and teeth, doe put them in a gylded potte, and ſo carry them home, to be ſet vp in the ſame pot couered with cloth, in the mydſt of theyꝛ houſes. Many *Bonzii* returne lykewiſe to theſe priuate funeralles, and ſo doe they agayne the ſeuenth day. than carry they out the aſhes to bee buryed in a place appoynted, laying therevppon a foureſquare ſtone, wherein is written in great letters, drawen all the length of the ſtone ouer, the name of that deuyll the which the dead man wooꝛſhypped by his lyfe tyme. Euery day afterwarde his childꝛen reſoꝛte vnto that graue, with roſes and warme water, that the deade coꝛpes thirſt not. Noꝛ the ſeuenth day onely, but the ſeuenth moneth, and yeere, within theyꝛ owne houſes they renue this obſequie, to no ſmall commodities and gayne of the *Bonzii*: great ryche men doe ſpende in theſe theyꝛ funeralles .3000. ducates, oꝛ there about, the meaner ſoꝛte two oꝛ three hundꝛed. Suche as foꝛ pouertie be not able to go to that charges, are in the nyght time, darkelong without all pompe & ceremonies, buryed in a dunghil.

They haue an other kynde of buriall, eſpecially neare the ſea ſyde, foꝛ them that bee not yet deade. Theſe felowes are ſuch, as hauyng religiouſly with much deuotion woꝛſhipped *Amida*, now deſirous to ſee him, doe ſlaye them ſelues. And firſt they go certaine dayes begging almes, the which they thruſt into theyꝛ ſleeues, than preache they in publyke a ſermon vnto the people, declaring what they mynd to doe, with the great goodlykyng of all ſuche as doe heare them: foꝛ euery body wondꝛeth at ſuch a kynd of holyneſſe. Than take they hookes to cut downe

byers and thornes that myght hinder them in theyr way to heauen, and so imbarke them selues in a newe vessell, tying great stones about their neckes, armes, loynes, thighes, and feete: thus they launchyng out into the mayne sea, be eyther drowned there, theyr shyppe bouged for that purpose, or els doe cast them selues ouer boorde headlong into the sea. The emptie barke is out of hande set a fyre, for honour sake, by theyr friendes that folowe them in an other boate of their owne, thynkyng it blasphemie that any mortal creature should afterward once touche the barke that had been so religiously halowed.

Truely whan we went to *Meaco*, eyght dayes before we came to the Isle of *Hiu*, at *Fore* towne, sixe men and two women so dyed. To all suche as dye so, the people erecteth a Chappell, and to eche of them a pyllar and a pole made of pinaple, for a perpetuall monument: hangyng vp many shredes of paper in stickes all the roofe ouer, with many verses set downe in the walles, in commendation of that blessed company. Wherefore vnto this place both day and nyght many come very superstitiously in pylgrimage. It happened euen then as *Aloisius Almeida* & I went to Christen a chyld, we traueyled that way, at what time foure or fiue olde women came foorth out of the aforesaide Chappel with beades in theyr handes (for in this pointe also the deuyll counterfayteth Christianitie) who partly scorned at vs for folly, partly frowned and taunted at our small deuotion, for passing by that holy monument, without any reuerence or woorshyp done therevnto at all.

It remayneth nowe we speake two or three woordes of those Sermons the *Bonzii* are wont to make, not so many as ours in number, but assuredly very wel prouided for. The Pulpit is erected in a great Temple with a silke Canapie ouer it, therein standeth a costly seate, before the seate a table with a bel & a booke. At the houre of sermon, eche secte of the *Giapans* resorteth to theyr owne doctors in diuers Temples. Vp goeth the doctor into the Pulpit, and beyng set downe, after that he hath Lordlyke looked him about, signifieth silence with his bell, and so readeth a fewe woordes out of that booke we spake of, the which he expoundeth afterwarde more at large. These preachers be for the most parte eloquent, and apte to drawe with their speach the myndes of their

hearers. Wherefore to this ende chiefly, suche is theyr greedyneſſe, tendeth all theyr talke, that the people be brought vnder the colour of godlineſſe to enryche theyr monaſteries, promyſing to eche one ſo much the more happineſſe in the lyfe to come, howe much the greater coſtes & charges they be at in church matters & obſequies: notwithſtanding this multitude of ſuperſtitious ſects and companyes, and the diuerſities therof amongſt them ſelues: yet in this principally all theyr ſuperintendentes doe traueyle, ſo to perſuade theyr Nouices in their owne tales and lyes, that they thinke nothing els trueth, nothing els ſure to come by euerlaſting ſaluation, nothing els wooyth the hearyng. Wherunto they adde other ſubtilties, as in going, grauitie: in countenance, apparel, and in all other outward ſhewe, comelyneſſe. Wherby the *Giapanes* myndes are ſo nouſled in wicked opinions, and doe conceyue thereby ſuch truſt and hope of euerlaſting ſaluation, that not onely at home, but alſo abrode in euery corner of the towne, continually almoſt they rume ouer their beades, humbly aſking of *Amida* and *Xaca* wealth, honour, good health, and euerlaſtyng ioyes. Thus than, deare brethren, may you thinke howe greatly they neede the helpe of God, that eyther doe bring the Goſpel into this countrey, or receiuing it brought vnto them, do forſake Idolatry, & ioyne them ſelues with Chriſt, being aſſalted by ſo many ſnares of the deuil, troubled with the dayly diſſuaſions of their *Bonzii*, and finally ſo iniuriouſly, ſo hardely, ſo ſharpely vexed of their kindread and friendes, that except the grace of God obteyned by the ſacrifices and prayers of the Catholike church do helpe vs, it can not be choſen, but that the fayth and conſtancie of many, if not of all, in theſe firſt beginninges of our churches, will greatly be put in ieopardie. So much the more it ſtandeth you vpon, that ſo earneſtly long for the health of ſoules, to commende ſpecially theſe *Giaponish* flockes vnto our Lorde.

Wee came to *Sacaio*, the.xxviii. of Ianuary. *Aloyſius Almeida* firſt for buſineſſe, but afterwarde let by ſickeneſſe, ſtayed there ſome whyle, but I parting the next day from thence, came thirtiene leagues of, to *Meaco* the laſt of Ianuary. Of my commyng all the Chriſtians tooke great comfort, but ſpecially *Gaſper Vilela*, who in ſix yeeres had ſeene none of our company at *Meaco*: his yeeres are not yet fourtie, but his gray heares ſhewe him

him to bee seuentie, so behemently is his litle body afflicted and worne with extreme colde. He speaketh *Giapanish* so skilfully after the phrase of *Meaco* (the which for the renowne of this people, and royall seat of the kyng is best accompted of) that he doth both confesse & preach in that language. Certayne godly bookes also he hath done into that speach, not omitting to translate other as leasure suffreth him. To make an end, our Lord for his goodnesse vouchsafe to preserue vs all continually, and to giue vs ayde both ryghtly to interprete his wil, and well to do the same. From *Meaco* the .xix. of February. 1565.

Other suche lyke matter is handled both in other his letters, and also in the Epistles writen by his companyons, to be seene at large in the aforesayde volume. Amongst the rest this seemed in my iudgement one of the principall, and therefore the rather I tooke vppon me to doe it into Englyshe.

Of the Isles beyond Giapan, in the way from China to the Moluccaes.

AMongst other Isles in the Asian sea, betwixt *Cantan* a *Chinishe* hauen in *Cathayo*, and the *Moluccaes*, muche spoken of in the Indish histories, & paynted out in Mappes, *Ainan* and *Santlianum*, are very famous.

Ainan standeth nienetiene degrees on this syde of the Equinoctial lyne neare *China*, from whence the *Chinishe* nation haue theyr prouision for shyppyng and other necessaryes requisite for theyr Nauie. There stayed *Baltbasar Gagus*, a great traueyler, fiue monethes, who describeth that place after this maner. *Ainan* is a goodly countrey, full of Indishe fruites, and all kynde of victualles, besydes great store of Iuelles and pearle, well inhabited, the townes buylte of stone, the people rude in conditions, apparelled in diuersly coloured rugges, with two Oxe hornes, as it were, made of fyne cypres hangyng downe about theyr eares,

Ainan.

De reb. Iap. li. 4.

and a payre of sharpe eyzers at theyr foreheades.

The cause wherefore they goe in suche attyre, I could not understande, except it be for that they doe counterfaite the deuyll in the fourme of a bruite beast, offeryng to him vp them selues.

Santianum. *Santianum*, is an Isle neare vnto the hauen *Cantan*, in the confines lykewyse of *China*, famous for the death of that woorthie traueyler, and godly professour, and paynefull doctor of the Indyshe nation, in matters concernyng religion, *Francis Xauier*, who after great labours, many iniuries, and calamities infinite suffred with much pacience, singular ioye and gladnesse of mynd, departed in a cabben made of bowes and rushes vppon a desarte mountayne, no lesse voyde of all worldly commodities, than endued with all spirituall blessinges, out of this lyfe, the seconde day of December, the yeere of our Lorde. 1552. after that many thousandes of these Easterlynges were brought by him to the knowledge of Christ. Of this holy man, his perticular vertues, and specially traueyle, and wonderfull worckes in that region, of other many litle Isles, yet not so litle but that they may ryght well be written of at leasure, all the later histories of the Indyshe regions are full.

FINIS.

Of the Northeast frostie Seas, and kyngdoms lying that way, declared by the Duke of Moscouia his ambassadour, to a learned Gentleman of Italie, named Galeatius Butrigarius: likewise of the viages of that worthie old man Sebastian Cabote, sometymes gouernour of the companie of the Merchantes of Cathay, in the Citie of London.

IT is doubtlesse a marueilous thyng to consyder what changes and alterations were caused in all the Romane Empyre by the *Gothes* and *Vandales*, and other Barbarians into Italy. For by their inuations were extinguyshed all artes and sciences, and all trades of Merchandies that were vsed in dyuers partes of the worlde. The desolation and ignorannce whiche insued hereof, continued as it were a cloude of perpetuall darkenesse among men for the space of foure hundred yeeres and more, insomuche that none durst aduenture to goe any whyther out of theyr owne natiue countreys: whereas before the incursions of the sayde Barbarians, when the Romane Empyre florysshed, they myght safely passe the seas to all partes of East India, whiche was at that tyme as well knowen and frequented, as it is nowe by the natuigations of the Portugales. And that this is true, it is manifest by that whiche *Strabo* wryteth, who was in the tyme of *Augustus* and *Tiberius*. For speakyng of the greatnesse and ryches of the citie of Alexandria in Egypt (gouerned then as a prouince of the Romanes) he wryteth thus. This onely place of Egypt, is apte to receyue all thynges that come by sea, by reason of the commoditie of the hauen, and lykewyse all suche thynges as are brought by lande, by reason of the ryuer of *Nilus*, whereby they may bee easely conueyed to Alexandria, beyng by

The Romane Empyre.

4. hundreth yeeres of ignorannce.

East India well knowen in olde time.

Strabo.

The great ryches of Egypt.

The citie of Alexandria.

Marueylous rychesse.

by these commodities the rychest citie of merchauntes that is in the worlde. The reuenues of Egypt are so great, that *Marcus Tullius* sayth in one of his orations, that kyng *Ptolomeus*, surnamed *Auleta*, the father of queene *Cleopatra*, had of reuenues twelue thousande and fyue hundred talentes, whiche are seuen millions and a halfe of golde. If therefore this kyng had so great reuenues when Egypt was gouerned of so fewe and so negligently, what myght it then be wooryh to the Romanes, by whom it was gouerned with great diligence, and theyr trade of merchandies greatly increased by the traffike of *Troglodítica* and *India*: whereas in tyme past there coulde hardly be founde .xx. shyppes togeather that durst enter into the gulfe of *Arabie*, or shewe theyr prowesse without the mouth of the same. But at this present, great nauies sayle togeather into *India*, and to the furthest partes of *Ethiope*, from whence are brought many rich and pretious merchandies into Egypt, and are caried from thence into other countreys. And by this meanes are the customes redoubled, aswel by such thynges as are brought thither, as also by suche as are caryed from thence, forasmuche as great customes aryse of thinges of great value. And that by this voyage infinite and pretious merchaundies were brought from the redde sea and India, and those of dyuers other sortes then are known in our tyme, it appeareth by the fourth volume of the ciuile lawe, wherein is described the commission of Thempe-rours, *Marcus* and *Commodus*, with the rehearsall of al such stuffe and merchandies, wherof custome shoulde be payde in the redde sea, by suche as had the same in fee farme, as were payde the customes of all other prouinces partaynyng to the Romane Empyre: and they are these folowyng.

The gouernaunce and reuenues of the Romanes.

Troglodítica. and India.

The gulfe of Arabia.

Ethiope.

Ryche customs.

The rychesse whiche were brought in olde time from India and the redde sea.

The commission of Thempe-rours Marcus and Como-dus.

Cinamome.	Xilocassia.
Long pepper.	Myr.
Whyte pepper.	Amome.
Cloues.	Ginger.
Costus.	Malabatrum.
Cancomo.	Ammoniac.
Spikenarde.	Galbane.
Cassia.	Laser.
Sweete perfumes	Agarike.

Gumme

Gumme of Arabie.
Cardamome.
Xilocinamome.
Carpesio.
Sylkes of diuers sortes.
Lynnen cloth.
Skynnes and Furres of Parthia and Babylon.
Iuorie.
Wood of Heben.
Pretious stones.
Pearles.
Iewelles of Sardonica.
Ceraunia.
Calamus Aromaticus.
Beriłle.
Cilindro.
Slaues.
Cloth of Sarmatia.
The sylke called Metaxa.
Uestures of sylke.
Died cloth, and sylke.
Carbasei.
Sylke threede.
Gelded men.
Popingayes.
Lions of India.
Leopardes.
Panthers.
Purple.

Also that iuyce or lyquour whiche is geathered of wooll, and of the heare of the Indians.

By these woordes it doeth appeare, that in olde tyme the said nauigation by the way of the red sea, was wel knowen, & muche frequented, & perhaps more then it is at this present: Insomuch that the ancient kynges of Egypt, consyderyng the great profite of the customes they had by the viages of the red sea, and wylling to make the same more easie & commodious, attempted to make a fosse or chanel, which should begin in the last part of the said sea, where was a citie named *Arsinoe* (which perhappes is that that is nowe called *Sues*) and shoulde haue reached to a branch of the riuer of *Nilus*, named *Pelusio*, whiche emptieth it selfe in our sea towarde the East, about the citie of *Damiata*. They determined also to make three causeys or hygh wayes by land, which shoulde passe from the sayd branch to the citie of *Arsinoe*: but they founde this too difficult to bryng to passe. In fine, king *Ptolomeus* surnamed *Philadelphus*, ordeyned another way, as to sayle vppon *Nilus*, agaynst the course of the riuer, vnto the citie of *Copto*, and from thence to passe by a desart countrey, vntyl they come aboue the red sea, to a citie named *Berenice*, or *Miosormo*, where they imbarked al their merchandise and wares for *India*, *Ethiope*, and *Arabie*, as appeareth by the wrytyng first of *Strabo* (who wryteth that he was in Egypt) and then by *Plinie*, who was in the

The great riches the kings of Egypt had by customes.

The noble enterpryses of the kings of Egypt
Arsinoe.
Damiata.
Pelusio.

Nilus.
Copto.

Berenice.

A nauigable trenche made from Egypt to the red sea.

Lacus amari.

King Sesostre.

King Psammiticus.

Kyng Darius.

Kyng Ptolomeus.

The citie Heroum.

What Plinie writeth of the nauigable trenche.

The largenesse and length of the trenche.

the tyme of *Domitian*. *Strabo* also, speaking of the saide fosse or trenche whiche was made towarde the redde sea, wryteth thus, There is a trenche that goeth towarde the red sea, & the gulfe of *Arabie*, and to the citie of *Arsinoe*, whiche some call *Cleopatrida*, and passeth by the lakes named *Amari* (that is) bytter, because in deede they were fyrste bytter: but after that this trenche was made, and the ryuer entred in, they became sweete, and are at this present ful of foules of the water, by reason of their pleasantnesse. This trenche was fyrste begunne by king *Sesostre*, before the battaile of *Troy*. Some say that it was begunne by king *Psammiticus*, while he was a childe, and that by reason of his death it was left imperfect: also, that afterwarde, king *Darius* succeeded in the same enterprise, who woulde haue finished it, but yet brought it not to the ende, because he was enformed that the redde sea was higher then Egypt, and that if this lande (diuiding both the seas) were opened, all Egypt shoulde be drowned thereby. King *Ptolomeus* woulde in deede haue finished it, but yet left it shut at the head, that he myght, when he woulde, sayle to the other sea, and returne without peryll. Here is the citie of *Arsinoe*, and neare vnto that, the citie called *Heroum*, in the vttermost parte of the gulfe of *Arabie*, towarde Egypt, with many portes and habitations. *Plinie* likewise, speaking of this trenche, sayth, In the furthest part of the gulfe of *Arabie*, is a porte called *Danco*, from whence they determined to byng a nauigable trenche vnto the riuer of *Nilus*, whereas is the firste *Delta*. Betweene the saide sea and *Nilus*, there is a streict of lande of the length of. lxii. miles. The firste that attempted this thing, was *Sesostre* king of Egypt, & after him *Darius* king of the *Persians*, whom *Ptolomeus* folowed, who made a trenche a hundred foote large, and thirtie foote deepe, being. CCC. miles in length, vnto the lakes named *Amari*, and durst proceede no further for feare of inundation, hauing knowledge that the red sea was higher by three cubites then all the countrey of Egypt. Other say that this was not the cause: but, that he doubted that yf he shoulde haue let the sea come any further, all the water of *Nilus* shoulde haue been thereby corrupted, whiche onely ministreth dynke to all Egypt. But notwithstanding, all these thinges aforesayde, all this viage is frequented by lande

from

from Egypt to the redde sea, in whiche passage are three Cau-
seyes or hygh wayes. The fyrst begynneth at the mouth of
Nilus, named *Pelutio*: All whiche way is by the sandes, inso-
muche that if there were not certayne hygh Reedes fyxt in the
earth, to shew the ryght way, the Cauley could not be found, by
reason the wynde euer couereth it with sand. The seconde Cau-
sey is two myles from the mountayne *Cassius*: And this also in
the ende of threescore myles, commeth vpon the way or Cauley
of *Pelusius*, inhabited with certayne *Arabians*, called *Antei*. The
thyrde begynneth at *Gerro*, named *Adipson*: and passeth by the
same *Arabians*, for the space of threescore miles, somewhat shor-
ter, but full of rough mountaynes, and great scarcenesse of wa-
ter. All these Causeyes, leade the way to the citie of *Arsinoe*, buil-
ded by *Ptolomeus Philadelphus* in the gulfe *Carandra* by the redde
sea. This *Ptolomeus* was the fyrst that searched all that part of
the red sea, whiche is called *Trogloditica*. Of this trench, descri-
bed of *Strabo* and *Plinie*, there are seene certeyne tokens remay-
nyng at this present, as they do affyrme whiche haue been at
Sues beyonde the citie of *Alcayr*, otherwyse called Babylon in
Egypt. But the merchauntes that of later dayes trauayle
this viage by lande, ryde through the dyre and barren desartes,
on Camels, both by day and by nyght, directyng theyr waye by
the starres and compasse, as do mariners on the sea, and carying
with them water sufficient for many dayes iorneys. The places
of *Arabie*, and *India*, named of *Strabo* and *Plinie*, are the selfe
same where the Portugales practyse theyr trade at this day, as
the maners and customes of the Indians doo yet declare: for
euen at this present their women vse to burne them selues alyue
with the dead bodyes of their husbandes. Whiche thyng (as
wryteth *Strabo* in his xv. booke) they dyd in olde time by a lawe,
for this consyderation, that sometyme being in loue with other,
they forsooke or poysoned their husbandes. And for as muche as
accordyng to this customne, the olde Poet *Propertius* (who ly-
ued about an hundred yeeres before the incarnation of Christ)
hath in his booke made mention of the contention that was a-
mong the Indian women, whiche of them shoulde be burned a-
liue with theyr husbandes, I haue thought good to subscribe his
verses, whiche are these.

The viage by land from Egypt to the red sea.

What kyng Ptolomeus discouered.

Alcayre.

The viage to East India frequented in olde tyme.

The customes and maners of the Indians.

Fœlix

Fœlix Eois lex funeris vna maritis,
Quos aurora suis rubra colorat equis.
Namque vbi mortifero iacta est fax vltima lecto,
Vxorum fusis stat pia turba comis,
Et certamen habent lethi, quæ viua sequatur
Coniugium, pudor est non licuisse mori.
Ardent victrices, & flammæ pectora præbent.
Imponuntque suis ora perusta viris.

As touchyng these viages both by sea and by lande to East India and *Cathay*, many thinges are wrytten very largly by diuers autours, which I omit, because they parteyne not so much vnto vs as doth the viage attempted to *Cathay* by the nozth seas, and the coastes of *Moscouia*, discouered in our tyme by the viage of that excellent young man Rychard Chaunceller, no lesse learned in al mathematicall sciences, then an expert pilotte, in the yeere of our Lozde .1554. As concernyng this viage, I haue thought good to declare ỹ communication which was betweene the sayd learned man *Galeatius Butrigarius*, and that great philosopher and noble gentleman of Italie named *Hieronimus Fracastor*, as I fynd wzitten in the Italian histozies of nauigations. As they were therefoze conferryng in matters of learnyng, and reasoning of the science of Cosmographie, the saide learned man, hanyng in his hand an instrument of Astronomie, declared with a large ozation howe much the wozlde was bound to the kinges of Poztugale, rehearsing the noble factes done by them in India. and what landes and Ilandes they had discouered, and howe by theyz nauigations they made the whole wozlde to hang in the ayze. He further declared of what partes of the ball, the earth remayned yet vndiscouered: and sayde, that of the landes of the inferioz hemispherie, oz halfe compase of the ball towarde the pole Antartike, there was nothyng knowen but that litle of the coaste of *Brasilia*, vnto the streyght of *Magellanus*: also a part of Peru: also a litle aboue Affrike towarde the cape of *Bona Speranza*. Also that he marueyled without measure, that this thyng was no better consydered of Chzistian Pzinces, to whom God hath deputed this charge, hauyng euer on theyz counsail men of great learning, which may infourme them of this thing, being so marueylous and noble, wherby they may obtayne glozy

The voyage to Cathay.

Rycharde Chaunceler.

A learned discourse of dyuers voyages.

The voyages of the Poztugales.

The wozldes hangyng in the ayze.

What is knowen of the lower hemispherie.

The lande of Brasile.

Peru.

The charg and dutie of Christian pzinces.

Note.

glory and fame by vertue, and be imputed among men as gods, by better demerites then euer were *Hercules* & great *Alexander*, who trauayled onely into *India*: and that by makyng the men of this our Hemispherie knowen to them of the other halfe compasse of the ball beneathe vs, they myght by the tytle of this enterpryse, without comparison, farre excell all the noble factes that euer were doone by *Iulius Cæsar*, or any other of the Romane Emperours. Whiche thyng they myght easily bryng to passe, by assigning colonies to inhabite diuers places of that Hemispherie, in lyke maner as dyd the Romanes in prouinces newly subdued: whereby they myght not onely attayne great riches, but also enlarge the Christian fayth and Empire, to the glory of God, and confusion of infidels. After this, he spake of the Ilande of Saint Laurence, called in olde tyme *Madagascar*, whiche is greater then the realme of *Castile* and *Portugale*, and reacheth from the. xii. degree towarde the Pole Antartike, vnto the. xxvi. degree and a halfe, lying Northeast from the cape of *Bona Speranza*, and partly vnder the lyne of *Tropicus Capricorni*, beyng wel inhabited, and of temperate ayre, with abundance of all thynges necessary for the lyfe of man, and one of the moste excellent Ilandes that is founde this day in the worlde: And that neuertheless there is nothing knowen thereof, except onely a fewe small Hauens by the sea syde, as the lyke ignorance remayneth of the greatest part of the Ilandes of *Taprobana*, *Giaua*, the more and the lesse, and infinite other. Then begynnyng to speake of the partes of our Pole, he caused the bookes of *Plinie* to be brought hym, where diligently ponderyng the lxvii. Chapter of the seconde booke, he founde where he rehearseth the historie of *Cornelius Nepos*, by these woordes: That in his tyme one *Eudorus* escapyng the handes of kyng *Lathyro*, departed from the gulfe of *Arabie*, and came by sea to the Ilande of *Calese*: Declaryng further, that whereas this narration was manye yeeres reputed for a fable, was nowe in our tyme, by the vertue of the *Portugales*, knowen to be true: And that lykewyse the same *Cornelius Nepos* reciteth, that at the tyme when *Quintus Metellus Celer* was Proconsul or Lieutenant for the Romanes in Fraunce, the kyng of *Sueuia* gaue hym certayne *Indians*, whiche saylyng out of *India* for merchandise,

Hercules and Alexander.

The colonies of the Romans in regions subdued.

The great Ilande of Sapnct Laurence or Madagascar.

The Ilands of Taprobana or Giaua.

Plinie.

The historie of Cornelius Nepos.

Shyps of India driuen into the sea of Germanie.

dies, were by tempest dryuen to the coastes of Germanie. When he had redde these wordes, he proceeded, saying that the same thyng myght be verified nowe in our tyme, if the princes which confine vppon that sea woulde endeuoure theyr industry and diligence to bryng it to passe: and that there coulde not any nauigation be imagined so commodious and profitable to all Christendom as this way might be, if by this voiage shoulde be found open to India, to come to the rych countrey of *Cathay*, whiche was discouered nowe two hundred yeeres since by *Marcus Paulus*. Then takyng the globe in his hande, he made demonstration that this voyage shoulde bee very shorte, in respect of that which the Portugales nowe folowe, and also of that which the Spanyardes may attempt, to the Ilandes of *Molucca*. He declared furthermore, that the citie of *Lubyke*, beyng rych and of great power, and situate vppon the sea of Germanie, and also accustomed with continual nauigations to trauayle the sea of Norway and *Gothlande*, and lykewyse the ryght noble kyng of Polonie, whose dominions, with his realme of *Lituania*, extende to the saide sea, shoulde be apte to discouer this secrete: But that aboue al other, the Duke of *Moscouia*, should performe the same, with greater commoditie, & more facilitie then any other Prince. And here staying a while, he began to speake againe, and said. Nowe, forasmuch as we are come to this passe, me thinke it should seeme a great discurtesie if I should not shew you al that I knowe as touching this viage, whereof I greatly mused with my selfe many yeeres by occasion of the wordes of Plinie. Wheras therfore, beyng a young man, I was in Germanie in the citie of *Augusta*, it so chaunced that in those dayes there came thither an ambassadour of the Duke of *Moscouia*, a man singularly learned both in the Greeke tongue & the Latine, and of good experience in worldely thynges, hauing been sent to dyuers places by the sayde Prince, and one of his counsayle. Of whose learnyng beyng aduertised, I sought his acquayntaunce, and talkyng with hym one daye of these Indians, dryuen by fortune to the coastes of Germanie, and of the viage that myght be discouered by the North sea to the Ilandes of spices, I perceyued that at the fyrst he marueyled exceedyngly, as at a thyng that he coulde neuer haue imagined. But restyng a

An enterprise wherby Princes may obtayne true fame and glory.

Cathay discouered by Marcus Paulus.

The citie of Lubyke.

The kyng of Polonie.

The Duke of Moscouia.

An ambassadour from the Duke of Moscouia.

whyle in maner astonyshed in his secrete phantasie, hee tooke great pleasure therein, and sayde: forasmuch as the Portugales haue now compassed about all the South partes, supposed in old tyme to bee inaccessable by reason of great heate, why should we not certaynely thynke that the lyke may bee done about this parte of the North, without feare of colde, especially to men borne and brought vp in that clime: Yet proceedyng further, he sayde, that if his Prince and maister had men that would animate him to discouer this vyage, there was no Prince in Christendome that myght doe it with more facilitie. Then calling for a Mappe, in which was the discription of Moscouia, and the prouinces subiect to the same, hee declared that from the citie of Moscouia or Mosca, goyng towarde the Northeast for the space of.lx.myles, they come to the ryuer of *Volochda*, and afterwarde by that, and folowyng the course thereof, to the citie of *Vstiug*, so called, bycause the ryuer of *Iug* falleth into the ryuer of *Succana*, where they lose theyr owne names, and make the great ryuer *Duina*, and by that, leauyng on the ryght hande the citie of *Colmogor*, they sayle vnto the North Ocean. The which way, although it bee a long tracte, as more then.800. myles, neuertheless he sayd that in sommer it myght commodiously be sayled. And that whereas it falleth into the sea, there are infinite woods of goodly trees, apte to make shyppes, and the place so conuenient for this purpose, that shypwryghtes and other skylfull woorkemen for all thinges heerevnto apperteynyng, may easily come out of Germanie: also, that the men which are vsed to traueyle the sea of Germanie about the coastes of Gothlande, should bee best and most apte to attempt this enterpryse, bycause they are indurate to abyde colde, hunger, and labour. He sayde furthermore, that in the court of his Prince, they haue muche knowledge of the great Cam of *Cathay*, by reason of the continuall warres they haue with the *Tartars*, of whom the greatest parte gyue obedience to the sayd great Cam, as to theyr chiefe Emperour. He made also demonstration in the sayde carde by the Northeast, that being past the prouince of *Permia*, and the ryuer *Pescora* (which falleth into the North sea) & certeine mountaines named *Catena Mundi*, there is thentraunce into the prouince of *Obdora*, whereas is *Vecchiadoro*, and the ryuer *Obo*, whiche also falleth

The woordes of the Ambassadour of Moscouia.

The way from Moscouia to the North Ocean & Cathay

Volochda.
Vstiug.
Iug.
Succana.
Duina.
Colmogor.
The North Ocean.

Great woods.

Gothlande.

The Moscouites haue knowledge of the great Cam of Cathay.
Permia.
Pescora.
Catena mundi
Obdora,
Vecchiadoro,
Obo.

falleth into the sayde sea, and it is the furthest border of Themppre of the Prince of Moscouia. The sayde ryuer hath his originall in a great lake called *Chethai*, which is the fyrst habitacion of the *Tartars*, that paye tribute to the great Cane. And from this lake for the space of two moneths byage (as they were credybly informed by certayne *Tartares* taken in the warres) is the most noble citie of *Cambalu*, beyng one of the chiefest in the dominion of the great Cane, whom some call the great Cham. He also affyrmed, that if shyppes should be made on the coastes of the sayde sea, and sayle on the backe halfe of the coast thereof (which he knew by many relations made to his Prince, to reach infinitely towarde the Northeast) they should doubtlesse in folowyng the same, easily discouer that countrey. Unto these woordes he added, that although there were great difficultie in Moscouia, by reason that the way to the sayde sea is full of thicke woods and waters, whiche in the sommer make great maryshes, and impossible to be trauepled, as well for lacke of victuals, whiche can not there be founde, not for certayne dayes, but for the space of certayne monethes, the place beyng desolate without inhabitauntes: neuertheless he sayde, that if there were with his Prince, onely two Spanyardes or Portugales, to whom the charge of this viage should be committed, he no wayes doubted but that they would folowe it, and fynde it, forasmuch as with great ingeniousnesse and inestimable pacience, these nations haue ouercome much greater difficulties then are these, whiche are but litle in comparison to those that they haue ouerpassed, and doe ouerpasse in all their viages to India. He proceded, declaryng that not many yeeres since, there came to the courte of his Prince, an Ambassadour from pope *Leo*, named maister *Paulo Centurione*, a Genuese, under dyuers pretenses. But the principall occasion of his commyng, was, bycause hee had conceyued great indignation and hatred agaynst the Portugales: And therfore intended to proue if he could open any byage by land, wherby spyces myght be brought from India by the lande of *Tartaria*, or by the sea *Caspium* (otherwyse called *Hircanum*) to Moscouia, and from thence to be brought in shyppes by the ryuer *Riga*, which runnyng by the countrey of *Liuonia*, falleth into the sea of Germanie: And that his Prince gaue eare vnto him, and caused

The lake Chethay.
The Tartars.
The citie of Cambalu.
Note this secrete.
Difficult trauelyng in Moscouia.
Commendation of the Spanyardes and Portugales.
The hystorie of Paulus Centurio.
Of this reade more at large in the booke of Paulus Iouius.
Maltre may doe more with some then vertue.
The Caspian sea.
Riga.
Liuonia.

caused the sayde vyage to be attempted by certaine noble men of *Lordo*, of the *Tartars* confinyng next vnto him. But the warres which were then betweene them, and the great desartes which they should of necessitie ouerpasse, made them leaue of their enterpryse: whiche if it had ben purposed by the coastes of this our North sea, it might haue been easily fynyshed. The sayde Ambassadour continued his narration, saying that no man ought to doubt of that sea, but that it may be sayled sixe monethes in the yeere, forasmuche as the dayes are then very long in that clime, and hot, by reason of continuall reuerberation of the beames of the Sunne, and shorte nyghtes: And that this thing were as well worthie to bee proued, as anye other nauigation, whereby many partes of the worlde, heeretofore vnknowen, haue been discouered and brought to ciuilitie. And heere makyng an ende of this talke, he sayde: Let vs now omyt this parte of Moscouia with his colde, and speake somewhat of that parte of the newe worlde, in whiche is the lande of Bytons, called *Terra Britonum*, and *Baccaleos*, or *Terra Baccalearum*, where in the yeere. 1534. and. 1535. *Iaques Cartier*, in two vyages made with three great French Gallies, founde the great and large countreys named *Canada*, *Ochelaga*, and *Sanguenai*: which reach from the .xlv. to the .51. degree, beyng well inhabited, and pleasaunt countreys, and named by him *Noua Francia*. And here staying a while, and lyftyng vp his handes, he sayde, Oh what doe the Christian princes meane, that in suche landes discouered, they doe not assigne certayne colonies to inhabite the same, to bryng those people (whom God hath so blessed with naturall giftes) to better ciuilitie, and to embrase our religion, then the whiche, nothing can bee more acceptable to God? The sayd regions also, beyng so fayre and fruitfull, with plentie of all sortes of corne, hearbes, fruites, wood, fyshes, beastes, metals, and ryuers of suche greatnesse that shyppes may sayle more then. 180. myles vpon one of them, beyng on both sydes infinitely inhabited: And to cause the gouernours of the sayde colonies to searche whether that lande towarde the North, named *Terra de Laborador*, doe ioyne as one firme lande with Norway: Or whether there bee any streight or open place of sea, as is most lyke there should be, forasmuch as it is to bee thought that the sayde Indians, dryuen by fortune

The Tartars of Lordo.

Defartes.

The vyage by the North sea.

The worthinesse of this vyage.

The vyages of the Frenchmen to the lande of Baccalaos.

Pleasaunt countreys.

New France.

Apostrophe to to the Christian Princes.

Great ryuers.

A thyng worthy to be searched.

The way to Cathay and the Ilandes of Molucca by the Northwest. A notable enterpryse.

about the coastes of Norway, came by that streight or sea, to the coastes of Germanie, and by the sayde streight to sayle northwest, to discouer the landes and countreys of *Cathay*, and from thence to sayle to the Ilandes of *Molucca*, and these surely should bee enterpryses able to make men immortall. The which thing, that ryght woorthie Gentleman maister *Antony di Mendoza* considering, by the singular vertue and magnanimitie that is in him, attempted to put this thyng in practyse. For being viceroy of the countrey of *Mexico* (so named of the great citie *Mexico*, otherwyse called *Temistitan*, now called new Spayne, beyng in the .xx. degree aboue the Equinoctiall, and parte of the sayde firme lande) he sent certeyne of his Captaines by lande, and also a naute of shyppes by sea, to search this secrete. And I remember that when I was in Flaunders in Themperours court, I saw his letter wrytten in the yeere .1541. and dated from *Mexico*: wherein was declared howe towarde the Northwest, he had founde the kyngdome of *Sette Citta* (that is) seuen Cities, whereas is that, called *Ciuola*, by the reuerende father *Marco da Niza*: and howe beyonde the sayde kyngdome yet further towarde the Northwest, Captayne *Francesco Vasques* of *Coronado*, hauing ouerpassed great desartes, came to the sea syde, where he founde certaine shyppes which sayled by that sea with merchandies, and had in theyr banner vppon the proues of theyr shyppes, certayne foules made of golde and siluer, which they of *Mexico* call *Alcatrazzi*, and that theyr mariners shewed by signes that they were xxx. dayes saylyng, in commyng to that hauen: whereby he vnderstoode that these shyppes could be of none other countrey then of *Cathay*, forasmuch as it is situate on the contrary parte of the sayde lande discouered. The sayd maister Antonie wrote furthermore, that by the opinion of men well practised, there was discouered so great a space of that countrey vnto the sayde sea, that it passed .950. leagues, whiche make .2850. myles. And doubtlesse if the Frenche men, in this theyr newe Fraunce, would haue passed by lande toward the sayd Northwest and by North, they should also haue founde the sea whereby they myght haue sayled to *Cathay*. But aboue all thynges, this seemed vnto me most woorthie of commendation, that the sayde maister Antonie wrote in his letter, that he had made a booke of al the natu-

The discouerying of the Northwest partes.

Shyppes saylyng from Cathay by the North Hyperboream sea, to the coastes of the Northwest parte of the lande of Bacaleos. Cathay.

The sea from newe Fraunce or Tarra Britonum to Cathay.

A notable booke.

rall

and marueylous thinges whiche they founde in searchyng those countreys, with also the measures of landes, and altytudes of degrees: A worke doubtlesse which sheweth a princely and magnificall mynd, wherby we may conceiue that if God had giuen him the charge of the other hemisspherie, he would or now haue made it better knowen to vs. The which thing I suppose no man doth greatly esteeme at this tyme: beyng neuertheiesse the greatest and most glorious enterpryse that may be imagined.

A great and glorious enterprise.

And heere makyng a certayne pause, and turnyng him selfe towarde vs, hee sayde, Doe you not vnderstande to this purpose, howe to passe to India towarde the Northwest wynde, as dyd of late a citizen of Venece, so baliant a man, and so well practised in all thinges perteynyng to nauigations, and the science of Cosmographie, that at this present hee hath not his lyke in Spayne, insomuche that for his vertues hee is preferred aboue all other pylottes that sayle to the West Indies, who may not passe thyther without his lycence, and is therefore called *Piloto Maggiore* (that is) the graunde pylote. And when we sayde that wee knewe him not, hee proceeded, saying, that beyng certayne yeeres in the citie of Siuile, and desirous to haue some knowledge of the nauigations of the Spanyardes, it was tolde him that there was in the citie a valiant man, a Venecian borne, named *Sebastian Cabote*, who had the charge of those thinges, beyng an expert man in that science, and one that could make cardes for the sea with his owne hande: and that by this reporte, seekyng his acquayntaunce, hee founde him a very gentle person, who entertayned him friendly, and shewed him many thinges, and among other a large Mappe of the worlde, with certayne particular nauigations, as well of the Portugales as of the Spanyardes: and that hee spake further vnto him, in this effecte. When my father departed from Venece, many yeeres since, to dwell in Englande, to folowe the trade of merchandyes, hee tooke mee with him to the citie of London, whyle I was very young, yet hauing neuertheiesse some knowledge of letters of humanitie, and of the sphere. And when my father dyed, in that tyme when newes were brought that *Don Christopher Colonus Genuese*, had discouered the coasts of India, whereof was great talke in all the court of kyng Henry the seuenth,

Sebastian Cabote the grand pylot of the West Indies.

Commendation of Sebastian Cabote.

Sebastian Cabote tolde me that he was borne in Bristow, & that at .iiii. yeeres olde he was carryed with his father to Venice, and so returned again into England with his father after certayne yeeres: whereby he was thought to haue ben borne in Venice.

who then reigned: insomuche that all men with great admiration affirmed it to be a thing more diuine then humane, to sayle by the West into the East where spyces growe, by a way that was neuer knowen before. By which fame and report, there increased in my harte a great flame of desyre to attempte some notable thyng. And vnderstandyng by reason of the sphere, that if I should sayle by the way of the Northwest wynde, I should by a shorter tracte come to India, I therevppon caused the kyng to bee aduertised of my diuise: who immediately commaunded two Carauels to be furnyshed with all thinges appertaynyng to the vyage, which was as farre as I remember, in the yeere. 1496. in the begynnyng of sommer. Beginning therefore to sayle toward Northwest, not thinking to fynde any other lande then that of *Cathay*, and from thence to turne toward India. But after certayne dayes, I founde that the lande ranne towarde the North, which was to me a great displeasure. Neuertheless, saylyng along by the coast, to see if I could fynde any gulfe that turned, I founde the lande styll continent to the. 56. degree vnder our pole: And seeyng that there the coast turned toward the East, dispayring to fynde the passage, I turned backe agayne, and sayled downe by the coast of that lande towarde the Equinoctiall (euer with intent to fynde the sayde passage to India) and came to that parte of this firme lande whiche is nowe called *Florida*. Where, my victualles faylyng, I departed from thence, and returned into Englande, where I founde great tumultes among the people, and preparance for warres in Scotlande: by reason whereof, there was no more consideration had to this vyage. Wherevppon I went into Spayne, to the Catholyke kyng, and queene Elizabeth: who beyng aduertised what I had done, enterteyned mee, and at theyr charges furnyshed certayne shyppes wherewith they caused mee to sayle to discouer the coastes of Brasile, where I founde an exceedyng great and large ryuer, named at this present *Rio della Plata* (that is) the ryuer of siluer, into the whiche I sayled, and folowed it into the firme lande more then sixe hundred leagues, fyndyng it euery where very fayre and inhabited with infinite people, whiche with admiration came rummyng dayly to our shyppes. Into this ryuer, runne so many other riuers, that it is in maner incredible.

The fyrst vyage of Sebastian Cabote.

The lande of Florida.

The seconde vyage of Cabote to the land of Brasile, and Rio della Plata.

Cabote tolde me that in a region within this ryuer he sowed. 50. graines of

After

After this, I made many other vyages, whiche I now permyt. And weryng olde, I gyue my selfe to rest from suche traueyles, bycause there are nowe many young and lusty Pylotes and mariners of good experience, by whose forwardnesse I doe reioyce in the fruites of my labours, and rest with the charge of this office as you see. And this is as muche as I haue vnderstoode of maister *Sebastian Cabote*, as I haue geathered out of dyuers nauigations written in the Italian tongue.

wheate in September, and geathered therof. 50. thousande in December, as writeth also Franciſco Lopes.

And whereas I haue before made mention howe Moscouia was in our tyme discouered by Richarde Chanceler in his viage towarde *Cathay*, by the direction and information of the sayd maister *Sebastian*, who long before had this secrete in his mynd, I shall not neede heere to describe that viage, forasmuche as the same is largely and faythfully written in the Latine tongue by that learned young man Clement Adams, schoolemaister to the Queenes Henshemen, as he receyued it at the mouth of the sayd Richard Chanceler. Neuertheleſſe, I haue thought good heere to speake somewhat of Moscouia, as I haue redde in the booke of Iohn Faber, written in the Latine tongue, to the ryght noble Prince *Ferdinando*, Archeduke of *Austria*, and Infant of Spaine, of the maners and religion of the Moscouites, as he was partly instructed by the Ambassadours of the Duke of Moscouie, sent into Spayne to Themperours maiestie, in the yeere. 1525. He wryteth therefore as followeth.

The viage to Moscouia.

The hystory of Moscouia.

I thynke it fyrst conuenient to speake somewhat of the name of this region whereby it is called at this day, and howe it was called in olde tyme. Conferryng therefore the moste auncient of the Greeke and Latine monumentes with the histories of later tyme, I perceyue it to bee a thyng whiche requireth no small iudgement of wytte and learnyng. For we see in howe shorte tyme the names of thinges are chaunged, as are also the maners of men. I fynde therefore that those people whom at this day wee commonly call Moscouites, were in tyme past (as wytnesseth Plinie) called *Roxolani*, whom neuertheleſſe by chaungyng one letter, Ptolome in his eyght table of Europe, calleth *Rosolanos*, as doeth also *Strabo*. They were also many yeeres called *Rutheni*, and are that people whiche sometyme fought manfully agaynst the Captaynes

The dyuers names of Moscouia.

Roxolani. Rosolani. Rutheni.

The ryuer Mosco.

of *Methridates*, as *Strabo* writeth. They were called Moscouites, of the chiefe citie of all the prouince, named *Moscouia* or *Mosca*: or (as *Volaterane* sayeth) of the ryuer *Mosco*. They were sometyme gouerned by Duke John, whose wyfe was Helena, of the lynage of Theimperours of Constantinople, of the noble famelie of the *Paleologi*. Beyonde these *Roxolanos*, *Strabo* sayeth there is no lande inhabited. These *Ruthenians* therfore or Moscouites, are people of the Northeast parte of the worlde from vs, and

The ryuer Boristhenes.

are determined with the limittes of the great ryuer *Boristhenes* of *Scithia*: on the one syde with the *Lituanians* and *Polonians*, and on the other syde with the *Tartars*, who ceasse not to vexe

Theimperour of Cathay.

them with continuall warres and incursions: Especially the great Emperour *Cham* of *Cathay*, the chiefe Prince of the *Tartars*, resydent by the sea syde in *Taurico Chersoneso*, molesteth them with sore warres. They are towarde the North

The frosen sea.

syde inclosed with the frosen sea, the lande of whose coastes beyng very large, perteyneth in maner all to the dominion of the Duke of *Moscouie*. The sea is it whiche the olde wryters call *Lacus Cronicus*, so named of the Greeke woord *Cronos*, which

Lacus Cronicus. Saturnus.

the Latines call *Saturnus*, whom they fayne to be an olde man, of complexion colde and slowe, and thereby name all suche thinges as are colde and slowe, *Cronica*, as by lyke reason they dyd this North sea, which beyng in maner euer frosen, is slow and cold, and in maner immoueable. And for lyke consideration (as sayth

Amaltheum.

Plinie) Heathens nameth it in the Scithian tongue, *Amaltheum*, which woord signifieth as much as congealed or frosen. But that I wander not farre from my purpose: Themppre and dominion of the Duke of *Moscouie*, reacheth so farre, that it com-

The dominion of the Duke of Moscouia.

prehendeth certayne partes of *Asia*, and also of Europe. The citie of *Moscouia* or *Mosco*, is counted twyse as byg as *Colonia Agrippina*, as they faythfully repoxte which know both. Unto

The citie of Moscouia.

this they haue also an other, not vnequall in bygnesse, called *Fladimer*. Also *Blescouia*, *Nouogradia*, *Smolne*, and *Otifer*, all which, The chiefe cities of Moscouia.

they? Ambassadours affyrme to be of princely and magnificall buyldynges, and strongly defended with walles both of bricke and square stone. Of these, *Blescouia* is strongest, and enuironed with three walles. Other whiche they haue innumerable, are not so famous as are these wherof this Duke of *Moscouie*

and

and Emperoure of Russia taketh thinscription of his title. For euen at this present, when so euer, eyther by his ambassadours or his letters, he doth signifie hym selfe to be Emperour of *Moscouie*, he is accustomed to vse this title, *Basilius* by the grace of God Emperour of al *Russia*, and great Duke of *Fladamer*, *Moscouie*, *Nouigrade*, *Blascouia*, *Smolne*, and *Otifer*. *&c.* And this is the tytle whereby the sayde ambassadours saluted your maiestie in the name of great *Basilius* when they began theyr oration. This prince of *Moscouie*, hath vnder hym prynces of many prouinces, and those of great power: Of the whiche, that olde whyte bearded man, whom this Emperour of the *Ruthians*, sent for his ambassadoure to Themperours maiestie into Spaine, is not one of the least. For euen he, when necessitie of warre requireth, is accustomed to make for his Emperour a bande of .xxx. thousand horsemen. But this is to their singular commendation, that they are so obedient to theyr prince in all thynges, that beyng commoned by hym by neuer so meane an heralde, they obey incontinent, as if it were to god, thynkeing nothing more glorious then to die in ỹ quarel of theyr prince. By reason of which obedience, they are able, in short tyme, to assemble an army of two or three hundred thousande men against theyr enimies, eyther the *Tartares*, or the great *Cham*: And haue hereby obtayned great victories and triumphes, aswell agaynst the Turks, as the *Tartars*, by the exceeding multitude of theyr horsemen, and continual experience in warres. At such time as Themperour *Maximilian* made a league with them, they kept warre against the kyng of Polonie. They vse not onely bowes and dartes, after the maner of the Parthians, but haue also the vse of gunnes as we haue. And to be briefe, only the *Moscouites* may seeme that nation which hath not felte the commodities of peace: Insomuch that if theyr region were not strongly defended by the nature of the place, beyng impreignable, it had or now been oftentymes conquered. Theyr language agreeth muche with the tongue of ỹ *Bohemians*, *Croatians*, and *Sclauons*: so that the *Sclauon* doth playnely vnderstande the *Moscouite*, although the *Moscouian* tongue be a more rude and hard phrase of speach. The historiographers wryte that the *Sclauons* tongue tooke the name of the confusion whiche was in Babell in the tyme

The Duke of Moscouia & Emperour of Russia.

The duke of Moscouia his tytle.

Duke Basilius.

Theyr power.

Theyr obedience to theyr prynce.

Theyr warres & conquestes.

Gunnes.

Only the Muscouites haue not felt the commodiees of peace.

Theyr language.

of

of that stoute hunter *Nemroth*, of whom mention is made in the Genesis. But I can not enough marueyle at this thyng, that whereas betweene *Dalmatia* (nowe called *Sclauonia*) and *Moscouia*, both the *Pannonies* are situate, yet this notwithstandyng, the *Hungarians* tongue nothyng agreeth with the *Moscouites*. Whereby we may coniecture that these nations were sometymes diuided by legions, and that they came out of *Dalmatia* thyther: whiche thyng also *Volateranus* affirmeth, saying that the language of the *Ruthenians* (whiche are the *Moscouites*) is *Semidalmatica* (that is, halfe *Sclauone*) Howe so euer it be, this is certaine, that the *Bohemians*, *Croatians*, *Sclauons*, & *Moscouites*, agree in language, as we perceiued by thinterpretours whiche your maiestie had then in your courte. For whereas the sayd interpretours were borne among the *Croatians* & *Sclauons*, and none of them had euer been in *Moscouia*, or before that tyme had any conuersation with them, yet dyd they well vnderstande the ambassadours woordes. There are in *Moscouia*, woodes of exceedyng byggenesse, in the whiche blacke woolues and whyte beares are hunted. The cause whereof may bee therxtreme colde of the North, whiche doth greatly alter the complextions of beastes, and is the mother of whitenesse, as the Philosophers affirme. They haue also great plentie of Bees, wherby they haue such abundaunce of hony and waxe, that it is with them of smale price. When the commoditie of theyr countrey is neglected by reason of long warres, their chiefe aduauntage wherby they haue all thynges necessarie towarde theyr lyuyng, is the gaynes whiche they haue by theyr ryche furres, as Sables, Warternes, Luzernes, most white Armins, and such other, whiche they sell to merchauntes of dyuers countreys. They bye and sell with simple fayth of woordes, exchaungyng ware for ware, without any curious bondes or cautels. And albeit they haue the vse of both golde and syluer mynes, yet do they for the moste part exchaunge theyr furres for fruites, and other things necessarie to mainteine their life. There are also some people vnder the dominion of this Emperour, which haue neither wyne nor wheate, but lyue only by flesshe and mylke, as do the wylde *Tartars* theyr borderers, which dwell in woods by the coastes of the frosen sea. These people are bruitishe, and

Dalmatia.

Pannonia. Hungarie.

Their original.

The Sclauon tongue reacheth farre.

Great woods, white beares and blacke woolues.

Abundance of hony and waxe.

Ryche furres.

Theyr maner of bargayning.

Rude & wylde people.

Tartares.

and lyue in maner lyke wylde beastes. But they of the citie of *Mosca* and *Nouigrade*, and other cities, are ciuile people, and agree with vs in eatyng of fyshe and flesshe, although theyr maner of coquerye is in many thynges differyng from ours. *Volaterane* wryteth that the *Ruthenians* vse money vncoyned. And enquiryng further, I was informed that the money of *Hungary* is much currant with them. But this is cheeflye to be considered, that they embrace the Christian fayth, whiche they affirme to haue been preached to them fyrst by Sainct Andrewe the Apostle, and brother to Simon Peter. Suche doctrine also as vnder *Constantine* the great, in the yeere. CCC. xviii. was concluded in the fyrst generall counsayle holden in the citie of *Nicene* in *Bethynia*, and there determined by. CCC. xviii. Byshops, and also suche as hath been wrytten and taught by the Greeke Doctours *Basilius Magnus* and *Chisostomus*, they beleeue to be so holy, fyrme, and syncere, that they thynke it no more lawfull one heare to transgresse or go backe from the same, then from the Gospell of Christ. For theyr constancie and modestie is suche, that no man dare call those thynges into question whiche haue once been decised by holy fathers in theyr general counsailes. They do therfore with a more constant mynde persteuer in theyr first faith, which they receiued of Sainct Andrew thapostle, and his successoure and holy fathers, then do many of vs, beyng diuided into scismes and sectes, which thing neuer chaunceth among them. But if any difficultie chaunce to rise as touching the faith or custome of religion, all is referred to the Archebyshop and other byshops, as to be defined by theyr spirite: not permittyng any iudgement to the inconstant and ignorant people. Their Archbishop is resident in the citie of *Mosca*, where also the Emperour keepeth his court. They haue lykewyse diuers other Byshops: as one in *Nouigradia*, where also *Isodorus* was Byshop vnder pope *Eugenius*. They haue an other in *Rosciuia*, an other in *Sustali*, an other in *Otiferi*: also in *Smolne*, in *Resan*, in *Colmum*, and in *Volut*, all whiche haue theyr Dioces. They acknoweledge theyr Archebyshop as the cheefe. Before the patriarche of *Constantinople* was oppressed by the tiranny of the Turkes, this Archebyshop recognised hym as his superiour: Insomuche that this Duke of *Moscouia*, and Emperour

Ciuile people in cities.

Theyr money.

They embrace the Christian faith which they receyued of the Apostles.

The counsayle of Nicene.
Basilius Magnus.
Chrisostomus.

Their constancie in theyr religion.

The bishops define controuersies in religion.

Theyr bishops.

The Archbishop.
The patriarke of constantinople.

perour of *Russia*, not vnmyndeful hereof, but a diligent obseruer of his accustomed religion, doth at this daye yeerely sende a certayne stypend, in maner of almes, to the Patriarche of *Constantinople*, that he may with more quiet mynde looke for the ende of this his *Egyptian* seruitude, vntyl it shal please almightie God to restore hym to his former churche and auctho*r*itie. For he iudgeth it much impietie, if he shoulde nowe forsake hym whose predicessours haue ruled and gouerned so many churches, and of whom the fayth and religion of so many regions and prounces haue depended.

A notable example of a Christian Prince.

But to speake briefly of they*r* religion, they agree in manye thynges with vs, and in some thynges folow the *Greekes*. They haue Munkes and religious men. Not farre from the citie of *Mosca*, they haue a great Monasterie, in the whiche are three hundred Munkes, lyuyng vnder the rule of *Basilius Magnus*, in the which is also the sepulchre of *S. Sergius* the Abbot. They obserue they*r* vowe of chastitie, whiche none may breake that haue once professed. Yet such as haue maried Virgins of good fame, may be admitted to thorder of priesthood, but may neuer be a Munke. The priestes and Byshops whiche are admitted to orders vnmaried, may neuer after be maried: nor yet such as haue wiues, marry agayne when they are dead, but liue in perpetual chastitie. Such as commit adulterie or fornication, are greuously punished by the Bishops, and depriued of the benefices. They celebrate masse after the maner of the *Greekes*, whiche differeth from ours in diuers thyngs, as in fermented bread, after the maner of the *Greekes*. They put in the Chalice as muche water as red wine, which water they vse to heate, because (not without a great mysterie) there issued foorth of the syde of our Lord, both blood and water, which we ought by good reason to thynke was not without heat: for els should it scarcely haue been iudged for a miracle. In fine, they affirme that al they*r* customes and rites are according to the institutions of the primitiue church, and the doctrine of *Basilius Magnus*, and *Chrisostomus*. In this thyng they differ greatly from vs, that they minister the communion to young chyldren of three yeeres of age, which they do with fermented bread dypt in a sponefull of wine, and geue it to them for the bodye and blood of Christ.

They*r* religion.

A monasterie of ccc. Munkes.

Priestes.

Masse.

A misterie.

The primatiue churche.

A strange custome.

A briefe

A briefe description of Moscouia, after the later writers, as Sebastian Munster, and Iacobus Gastaldus.

The prouince of *Moscouia*, is so named of the ryuer *Mosco*, whiche passeth by the metrapolitane citie of *Moscouia*, called *Mosca* by the name of the ryuer *Mosco*. This prouince was called of the olde writers, *Sarmatia Asiatica*. The borderers or confines to the *Moscouians* on the one syde towarde the East, are the *Tartars*, called *Nogai*, and the *Scianbanians*, with the *Zagatians*. Towarde the West, the prouinces of *Liuonia* and *Lituania*. Towarde the South, the ryuer of *Tanais*, and the people confining with the riuer of *Volga*, called of the olde wryters *Rha*. And towarde the North, the Ocean sea, called the *Scythian* sea, and the region of *Lapponia*. *Moscouia* is in maner all playne, and full of marysshes, wooddes, and many very great ryuers, whereof the ryuer of *Volga* is the principall. Some call this *Ledil*, as the olde authours named it *Rha*. It begynneth at the great lake called *Lacus Albus* (that is) the white lake, and runneth into the sea of *Bachau*, named of the auncient wryters, the sea *Caspium* or *Hircanum*. Under the domininon of *Moscouia*, are certayne regions and Dukedomes: as *Alba Russia* (that is whyte *Russia*). Also *Colmogora*, *Plescouia*, *Basrida*, *Nouogradia*, with also manie places of the *Tartars*, whiche are subiecte to the Duke of *Moscouia*. The chiefe cities of *Moscouia*, are *Mosca*, *Plescouia*, *Nouogradia*, *Colmogora*, *Otogeria*, *Viatra*, *Smolenser*, *Percaslauia*, *Cologna*, *Volodemaria*, *Roslauia*, and *Cassam*. The people of *Moscouia* are Christians, and haue great abundaunce of hony and wax: also rych furres, as Sables, Martenes, Foynes, and dyuers other. All the *Tartars* whiche inhabite towarde the East beyonde the ryuer of *Volga*, haue no dwellyng places, nor yet cities or Castles, but cary about with them certayne cartes or wagens couered with beastes hydes, vnder the whiche they reste, as we do in our houses.

Sarmatia Asiatica.

The Scythian Ocean.

The ryuer of Volga.

Lacus albus.

The Caspian sea.

Their chiefe cities.

The wylde Tartars.

They

Hordas. They remoue togeather in great companyes, whiche they call *Hordas*. They are warlyke people, and good horsemen, and are all Mahometistes.

The bygnes of the citie of Moscouia.

Sebastian Munster in his booke of Uniuersall Cosmographie, wryteth that the citie of *Mosca* or *Moscouia* conteyneth in circuite .xiiii. myles, and that it is twyse as bygge as the citie of *Praga* in *Bohemie*. Of the countrey of *Moscouia*, besyde other prouinces subiecte to the same, he wryteth thus: It extendeth in largenesse foure hundreth myles, and is ryche in syluer. It is lawful for no man to go out of the realme, or come in, without the Dukes letters. It is playne without mountaynes, and full of woodds and marishes. The beastes there, by reason of the colde, are lesse then in other countreys more southwarde. In the middest of the citie of *Mosca*, beyng situate in a playne, there is a Castell with .xvii. towres, and three bulwarkes, so strong & fayre, that the lyke are scarsely seene in any other place. There are also in the Castell .xvi churches, and three very large courtes, in the whiche the noble men of the courte haue theyr lodgynges. The Dukes pallaice is buylded after the maner of the Italian buylding, and very fayre, but not great. Theyr drynke is mede and beere, as is the maner of the most part of the people that inhabite the North partes of the woorlde. They are exceedyngly geuen to droonkennesse. Yet (as some saye) the princes of the lande are prohibit on payne of death to absteine from suche strong drinkes as are of force to inebriate, except at certayne times when licence is graunted them, as twise or thrise in the yeere. They plowe the ground with horses, and plowes of wood. Theyr corne and other grayne, by reason of long colde, do seldome waxe rype on the ground, by reason wherof they are sometimes inforced to rype & dry them in their stooues and hot houses, and then grynd them. They lacke wyne and oyle. *Moscouia* is extended vnto *Iurham* and *Corelia* which are in *Scithia*. The famous ryuer of *Tanais*, the *Moscouites* call *Don*, hauyng his sprynges and originall in *Moscouia* in the Dukedome of *Rezense*. It ryseth out of a ground that is playne, baren, muddy, full of marshes and wooddes. And where it proceedeth toward the East to the mountaynes of *Scythia* and *Tartarie*, it bendeth to the south: and commyng to the marshes of *Meotis*, it

Syluer.
The region of Moscouia.

Beastes.

A fayre and stronge castel in the citie of Mosca.

The Dukes pallaice.
Theyr drynke.

They are geuen to drunkennesse.

Corne and grayne.

Stooues.

The famous ryuer of Tanais.

it falleth into them. The riuer of *Volga* (sometyme called *Rha*, and now called of the *Tartars Edell*) runneth towards the North certaine myles, to whom is ioyned the riuer *Occa* or *Ocha*, flowing out of *Moscouia*, and then bendyng into the South, and encreased with many other riuers, falleth into the sea *Euxinum*, which diuideth *Europe* and *Asia*.

The marishes of Meotis.
Volga.
Ocha.
The sea Euxinum.

The wood or forrest called *Hircania silua*, occupieth a small portion of *Moscouia*: Yet is it somewhere inhabited, and by the long labour of men, made thynner and barer of trees, In that part that lieth toward *Prusia*, is a kinde of great & fierce Bulles, called *Vri* or Bysonts, as writeth *Paulus Iouius*. There are also Alces, much lyke vnto Hartes, with long snowtes of flesh, and long legges without any bowyng of theyr hoyr or pasternes. These beastes the *Moscouites* cal *Lozzi*, and the *Almaines*, *Heleues*. The iorney that is betweene *Vlna* of *Lituania* by *Smolence* to *Mosca*, is trauayled in winter on sleades, by the snow congeled by long frost, and made very slypperie and compact lyke Isse, by reason of much wearyng and treadyng, by meanes whereof this viage is perfourmed with incredible celeritie. But in the Sommer, the playne countreyes can not be ouercome without difficult labour: For when the snow beginneth to be disolued by contynuall heate, it causeth marishes and quamyres inextricable and daungerous both for horse and man, were it not for certaine Causeis made of timber with in maner infinite labour. The region of *Moscouia* (as I haue said) beareth neither Vines nor Oliue trees, nor yet any other trees that beare any apples or fruites of very pleasant and sweete sauour or tast, except Cherry trees, forasmuch as al tender fruites and trees, are burnt of the cold blasts of the North wynde. Yet do the fieldes beare al kyndes of corne, as wheate, and the grayne called *Siligo*, whereof the fynest kynde of breade is made: also Rye, and Panycke, whiche the Italians call *Melica*: Lykewyse al kyndes of pulse, as Beanes, Peason, Tares, and such other. But theyr cheefe haruest consisteth of Honye and Waxe, forasmuch as the whole region is replenished with fruitefull Bees, which make most sweete Hony, not in the husband mens hyues, but euen in hollow trees. And hereby commeth it to passe, that both in the wooddes and shalowed launes, are seene many swarmes of Bees hangyng on

The mountaynes of Hircania.
Vri.
Alces.
They trauayle in winter on sleades.
Causeys of tymber.
Trees and fruites.
Corne and grapnes.
Hony in woods and trees.

the

the bowes of trees, so that it shall not be necessarie to call them togeather, or charme them with the sound of Basens. There are oftentymes founde great masses of Hony combes, conserued in trees of the olde Hony forsaken of bees, forasmuche as the husbandmen can not seeke euery tree in so great and large woods: Insomuche that in the stockes or bodies of exceedyng great and hollowe trees, are sometymes founde great pooles or lakes of Hony. *Demetrius* thambassadour of the Duke of *Moscouia*, whom he sent to the Bishop of Rome not many yeeres since, made relation that a husbandman of the countrey, not farre from the place where he remayned, seekyng in the woods for Hony, descended into a great hollowe tree full of Honye, into the which he slypt vp to the breast, and lyued there only with Hony for the space of two dayes, calling in vaine for helpe in that desart of woodds: and that in fine dispayryng of helpe, he escaped by a marueylous chaunce, beyng drawen out by a great Beare that descended into the tree, with her loynes downeward after the maner of men. For when the man (as present necessitie and opportunitie serued) percepued the Beare to be within his reache, he sodenly clasped her about the loynes with his armes, and with a terrible crye prouoked the beast to enforce her strength to leape out of the tree, and therewith to drawe hym out, as it chaunced in deede. These regions abounde with Beares, whiche euery where seeke both Honye and Bees, not only herewith to fyll theyr bellyes, but also to helpe theyr syght: For theyr eyes are oftentymes dulled, and theyr mouthes wounded of the Bees: both which greefes are eased by eatyng of Honye. They haue weakest heades, as Lions haue strongest: Insomuche that when (beyng thereto enforced) they cast them selues downe headlong from any rockes, they couer theyr heades with theyr feete, and lye for a tyme astonyshed, and halfe deade with knockes. They walke sometymes on two feete, and spoyle trees, backewarde. Sometyme also they inuade Bulles, and so hang on them with all theyr feete, that they weerye them with weight. The Beare (as sayeth *Plinie*) bringeth foorth her byrth the thirtie day, and often tymes two. Theyr birth is a certaine white masse of flesh without fourme, and litle bigger then a mouse, without eyes, and without heare, with only the nayles or clawes

Lakes or pooles of Hony.

A man almost drowned in hony.

A merueplous chaunce.

Beares feede of hony & bees.

Beares inuade Bulles.

The Beares byrth.

clawes commyng fooyth: but the damme with continuall lyckyng, by litle and litle figureth the infoyme byyth. When she entreth into the denne which shee hath chosen, shee creepeth thyther with her belly vpwarde, least the place should be founde by the steppes of her feete. And beyng there deliuered of her byyth, remaineth in the same place foy the space of xiiii. dayes, immoueable as wyteth Aristotle. They lyue without meat xl. dayes, and foy that tyme susteyne them selues only by lyckyng and suckyng theyy ryght foote. At the length chaunsing to finde meate, they fyll them selues so full, that they remedy that surfeyte by vomyte, which they pyouoke by eatyng of Antes. Theyy byyth is oppyessed with so heauy a sleepe foy the space of xiiii. dayes, that it can not be raysed eyther with pyickyng oy woundes, and in the meane tyme growe exceedyng fatte. After fourtiene dayes they wake from sleepe, and begyn to lycke and sucke the soles of theyy foye feete, and lyue thereby foy a space: Moy yet is it apparent that they lyue by any other meate, vntyll the syyng tyme of the yeere. At whiche tyme begynnyng to runne abyode, they feede of the tender buddes and young syygges oy byaunches of trees, and other hearbes coyresponden t to theyy lyppes.

The Beares denne.

Beares lyue without meate xl. dayes.

The sleape of Beares.

Before fiue hundyed yeeres, the Moscouites honoured the Goddes of the Gentyles: And then fyyst receyued the Chyistian fayth when the Byshoppes of Grecia began to discent from the church of the Latines: and therefoye receyued the rites of the Greekes. They minister the sacrament with fermented byeade vnder both kyndes: And thinke that the soules of dead men are not helped with the suffragies of pyiestes, noy yet by the deuotion of theyy friendes oy kynsfolke: Also that the place of Purgatoyie is a fable. In the tyme of the diuine seruice, the hystorie of the myyacles of Chyist, and the Epistles of sainct Paule are rehearsed out of the Pulpitte. Beyonde Moscouia, are many people which they call Scythians, and are partely subiecte to the Pyince of Moscouia. These are they which Duke Iwan subdued, as are the people of *Perm, Baskird, Cezriremissa, Iubra, Corela,* and *Permska*. These people were Idolatours before the Duke compelled them to baptisme, & appointed a byshop ouer them named Steuen, whom the Barbarians after the departure

The religion of the Moscouites.

The Scythians subiect to the Duke of Moscouia.

departure of the Duke, slayed alyue, and slue. But the Duke returnyng shortly after, afflicted them sore, and assigned them a newe byshop.

It is here also to be noted, that the olde Cosmographers fayned, that in these regions towarde the North pole, there should be certayne great mountaynes, which they called *Ripheos* and *Hyperboreos*, which neuertheless are not founde in nature. It is also a fable, that the ryuers of *Tanais* & *Volham* doe spryng out of hygh mountaynes, whereas it is apparent that both these ryuers, and many other, haue theyr originall in the playnes.

It was then an opinion that all ryuers sprong out of mountaynes.

Next to Moscouia, is the fruitful region of *Colmogora*, through the whiche runneth the ryuer of *Diuidna*, beyng the greatest that is knowen in the North partes of the worlde. This ryuer increaseth at certayne tymes of the yeere, as doeth the ryuer of *Nilus* in Egypt, ouerfloweth the fieldes rounde about, and with aboundaunce of fatte moysture, resisteth the coldnesse of the ayre. Wheate sowne in the grounde, groweth aboundauntly without ploughyng: and fearyng the newe iniurie of the proude ryuer, springeth, groweth, and ryppeth, with wonderfull celeritie of hastyng nature.

The fruitfull region of Colmogora.

The great ryuer Diuidna.

Wheate without plowing.

The ryuer of Iuga.

Into the ryuer of *Diuidna* runneth the ryuer of *Iuga*: And in the very angle or corner where they meete, is a famous marte towne named *Vstiuga*, beyng a hundred and fyftie myles distant from the chiefe citie of Mosca. To this marte towne, from the higher countreis, are sent the precious furres of Marternes, Sables, Woolues, & such other, which are exchaunged for dyuers other kyndes of wares & marchandies. Hytherto *Munsterus*.

Vstiuga.

Furres.

And forasmuche as many doe marueyle that such plentie of hony should bee in so coole a countrey, I haue thought good to declare the reason and naturall cause heereof. It is therefore to be considered, that lyke as spices, gums, and odoriferous fruites are engendred in hotte regions, by continuall heate duryng all the whole yeere, without impression of the mortifying qualitie of colde, whereby all thynges are constrayned as they are dilated by heate, euen so in colde and moyst regions (whose moysture is thynner and more watersyhe then in hot regions) are floures engendred more aboundauntly, as caused by impression of lesse and fayntер heate, woorkyng in thynne matter of

The naturall cause of much hony in colde regions.

Gummes and spyces in hotte countreys.

Floures in colde regions.

watersyh

watery the moysture, lesse concocte then the matter of gummes and spyces, and other vnctuous fruites and trees growyng in hot regions. For although (as Munster sayeth here before) the region of Moscouia beareth neyther vines or Olives, or any other fruites of sweete sauour, by reason of the coldnesse thereof, neuertheless, forasmuch as floures (wherof hony is chiefly geathered) may in sommer season growe aboundantly in the playnes, maryshes, & woods, not onely on the ground, but also on trees in colde regions, it is agreeable to good reason, that great plentie of hony should be in suche regions as abounde with floures, which are brought fooyth with the fyrst degree of heate, and fyrst approche of the sunne, as appeareth in the spryng tyme, not only by the spryngyng of floures in fieldes and Gardeynes, but also of blossomes of trees spryngyng before the leaues or fruite, as the lyghter and thynner matter fyrst drawne out with the lowest and least degree of heate: as the lyke is seene in the arte of stylling, whereby all thynne and lyght moystures are lyfted vp by the fyrst degree of the fyre: and the heauyest and thyckest moystures are drawne out with more vehement fyre. As we may therefore in this case compare the generation of floures to the heat of May, the generation of gummes to the heat of June, and spyces to the heate of July: Euen so, in suche colde regions whose sommer agreeth rather with the temperate heate & moysture of May, then with therextreme heate of the other monethes, that heate is more apte to bring fooyth aboundance of floures, as thinges caused by moderate heate, as playnly appeareth by their taste and sauour, in which is no sharpe qualitie of heate, eyther byting the tongue, or offendyng the head, as is in spices, gums, and fruites of hotte regions. And as in colde and playne regions, moderate heate, with aboundance of moisture, are causes of the generation of floures (as I haue sayde) so lykewyse the length of the dayes and shortnesse and warmenesse of the nyghtes in sommer season, in such colde regions, is a great helpe heereunto. Cardanus writeth in his booke *De Plantis*, that bramble & fearne growe not but in colde regions, as doeth wheate in temperate regions: and that spices and hot seedes, can not growe in colde regions, forasmuch as beyng of thynne substaunce, they should soone bee mortified & extinct by excessiue colde. For (as he sayeth) nothing

Floures of trees.

Blossomes of trees.

An example of the degrees of heate.

The generation of floures by moderate heate.

Long dayes and short nyghtes.

Bramble and fearne.

Spyces.

can concocte, rype, and attenuate the substance of fruites without the helpe of ayre, agreeable to the natures of such thinges as are brought foorth in the same, although it may doe this in rootes.

The sauour of floures.

But in maner all floures are of sweete sauour, forasmuch as the moysture that is in them, being thynne and but litle, is by meane heate soone and easily concocte or made rype. Suche also as are soone rype, are soone rotten, accordyng to the prouerbe.

What Plinie wryteth of hony.

Plinie, although in the .xi. booke of his naturall hystorie. Cap. viii. he wryteth that hony is geathered of the floures of all trees and sortes or plantes, except sorell and the hearbe called *Chenopode* (which some call Goose foote) yet he affirmeth that it descendeth from the ayre: for in the .xii. Chapter of the same booke, he wryteth thus.

Sirius is otherwyse called Canicula, that is, the Dogge, of whom the canicular dayes haue theyr name.

This commeth from the ayre at the rysing of certayne starres, and especially at the rysyng of *Sirius*, and not before the rysyng of *Vergiliæ* (which are the seuen starres called *Pleiades*) in the sprynge of the day. For then at the mornyng sprynge, the leaues of trees are founde moist with a fatte dewe: Insomuche that suche as haue been abrode vnder the firmament at that tyme, haue theyr apparell annoynted with lyquour, and the heare of theyr head clammy. And whether this bee the swette of heauen, or as it were a certayne spettyll of the starres, eyther the iuise of the ayre purgyng it selfe, I woulde it were pure, liquide, & simple of his owne nature, as it first falleth from

What is hony.

aboue. But now descendyng so farre, and infected, not only with

Howe hony is corrupted.

suche vncleane vapours and exhalations, as it meeteth with by the way, but afterwarde also corrupted by the leaues of trees, hearbes, and floures of sundry tastes and qualities, and lykewyse as well in stomackes of the bees (for they vomite it at their mouthes) as also by long reseruyng the same in hiues, it neuertheless reteyneth a great parte of the heauenly nature &c. Agayne

Hony of great quantitie in North regions

in the .xiiii. Chapter of the same booke he wryteth, that in certayne regions towarde the North, as in some places of Germanie, hony is founde in suche quantitie, that there haue been seene hony combes of eyght foote long, and blacke in the holow parte. By the which woordes of Plinie, and by the principles of naturall philosophie, it doeth appeare that aboundaunce of hony should chiefly be engendred in suche regions, where the heate of

sommer

sommer is temperate and continuall, as well by nyght as by day, as it is not in hot regions, where the nyghtes be long and colde, as is declared in the Decades. For lyke as suche thinges as are fyned by continuall heate, mouyng, and circulation, are hyndered by refrigeration or colde (as appeareth in the arte of stillyng and hatchyng of egges) euen so by the action of temperate and continuall heate, without interposition of contrarie and mortifying qualitie, crude thinges are in shorte tyme made rype, sower made sweete, thicke made thinne, heauie made lyght, grosse made subtyle, harde made softe, dead made lyuyng, and in fine, bodyes made spirites, as manifestly appeareth in the marueylous worke of dygestion of lyuyng beastes, whereby the finest parte of theyr nourishment is turned into blood, and the finest of that blood conuerted into spirites, as the lyke is also seene in the nourishment of trees, plantes, and hearbes, & all other thinges that growe on the grounde, all which are moued, digested, subtiliate, attenuate, ryped, and made sweete by the action of this continuall heate whereof I haue spoken. To conclude therefore, if hony be eyther the swette of the starres, or the iuise of the ayre purgyng it selfe (as Plinie wryteth) or otherwyse engendred of subtyle and fine vapours rysing from the earth, and concocte or digested in the ayre by the sayde continuall and moderate heate, it may seeme by good reason that the same should be engendred in sommer season more aboundantly in colde regions then in hot, for the causes aforesayde. And that it may by authoritie and reason more manifestly appeare, both that the heate of sommer in colde regions is continuall (as I haue sayde) and also that the colde in wynter is not there so intollerable to thinhabitauntes of those regions as other doe thynke, I haue thought good for the better declaration hereof, to adde hereunto what I haue geathered out of the booke of *Ziglerus*, wrytten of the Northe regions.

Hot nyghtes in colde regions. A similitude.

Naturall heat doeth subtyle and digest all thinges.

Subtyle vapours digested by heate.

Colde regions.

Ziglerus.

Of the North regions, and of the moderate and continual heate in colde regions, aſwell in the nyght as in the day in ſommer ſeaſon: Alſo howe thoſe regions are habitable to thinhabitauntes of the ſame, contrary to the opinion of the olde wryters.

Ziglerus.



OF this matter, *Ziglerus* in his booke of the Noyth regions in the deſcription of *Scondia*, wryteth as foloweth.

We will intreate of this matter, not as putting the ſame in queſtion as did the olde writers, noy geathering iudgement deducted of reaſons in way of argument, foyaſmuche as we are already moye certayne by hyſtoyie that theſe cold regions are inhabited. We will firſt therfoye ſhew by natural reaſon, and by conſideration of the ſphere, declare howe by the helpe of man and arte, colde regions are inhabited without domage oy deſtruction of lyuyng beaſtes: And will firſt ſpeake of the qualitie of ſommer, declaryng howe it is there augmented. Yet intend I noe to compyehende all that may be ſayde in this matter, but only rehearſe ſuche reaſons and ſimilitudes as are moſt apparent and eaſie to be vnderſtoode.

The qualitie of ſommer in colde regions.

The courſe of the Sunne.

In ſuch regions therefoye, as are extended from the burnt lyne oy Equinoctiall towarde the Noyth, as much as the ſunne ryſeth higher ouer them, ſo much are they the moye burnt with heat, as Affrica, bycauſe it ryſeth higheſt ouer them, as they are neareſt to the Equinoctial: & tarying with them ſo much the ſhoyter tyme, cauſeth ſhoyter dayes, with longer & colder nyghtes, to reſtoye the domage of the day paſt, by reaſon of the moiſture conſumed by vapour. But in ſuch regions ouer the which the ſun ryſeth lower (as in *Sarmatia*) it remayneth there the longer in the day, and cauſeth ſo much the ſhoyter and warmer nyghtes, as reteynyng warme vapours of the day paſt, whych vapours helpe the woyke of the day. I ſpeake as I haue founde by experience, ſayth *Vpſalienſis*: For I haue felte the ſommer nyghtes ſcarſely tollerable for heate in Gothlande, whereas I felte them colde in Rome. This benefite of the increaſe of the day doeth augment ſo much the moye in colde regions, as they are nearer the poles: and ceaſeth

Vapours.

Shoyt and warme nyghts

Gothlande.

ceaseth not vntyll it come directly ouer the center or poynte of the axes or arcelтree of the worlde, where the sunne beyng, at the hyghest in sommer, is eleuate about. xxiiii. degrees: In which regions, one continuall day consisteth of. vi. monethes from the spryng tyme, by the standyng of the sunne (called *Solstitium*) in the signe of Cancer, to Autumne. The Sunne therfore, without any offence of the nyght, gyueth his influence vppon those landes with heate that neuer ceaseth duryng that tyme, which maketh to the great increase of sommer, by reason of continuaunce. Wee haue now therefore thought good to geather, by a certayne coniecture, howe greatly we thynke the sommer to be increased heereby.

One day of. vi. monethes.

Howe the sommer is increased in colde regions.

We haue before declared howe hygh the sunne is eleuate ouer the regions that are vnder the poles at the staye of the sunne: And so many partes is it eleuate in Rome at the staye of the sunne in wynter (that is) at the shortest day in the yeere. But here, in the myd wynter, the sunne at noonetyde is beneficiall, and bryngeth foorth floures, Roses, and Jelefloures. I haue geathered some in winter in the moneth of December, not procured at home by humane arte, but growyng in open Gardens in maner in euery bed vnder the bare heauen, brought foorth only by the sunne. But this benignitie of the sunne, continueth not past fyue houres in the naturall day, forasmuch as the operation thereof is extinct by the coldenesse of the nyght folowyng. But if this benefite myght be receyued without hinderaunce of the nyght, as it is vnder the poles, and so continue many monethes in hot regions vnto wynter, it should surely bring foorth many wonderful thinges, if moysture fayled not. And by this condition thus propounded, we may well conceyue that the Romane wynter, although it be not hotte, yet to be equall in heate to the full spryng tyme in the same citie, during the tyme of the sayd fyue houres. And thus by a similitude of the height of the sunne vnder both places, and of the knowen qualitie of the Romane heauen, and by the accesse of the sunne to such places where the longest day continueth certayne moneths, we may geather that sommer, in places vnder the pole, is lyke vnto and equall with the full Romane spryng.

Rome.

Colde nyghtes in hot regions.

The Romane wynter.

But the more difficult question, is of the tyme of the. vi. monethes in the whiche the Sunne leaueth those regions,

One night of vi. monethes.

and goeth by the contrary or ouerthwarte circle toward the south in wynter. For they say that at that tyme, those regions are deformed with horrible darkenesse, and nyghtes not increased, whiche may be the cause that beastes can not seeke theyr foode: And that also the colde should then bee intollerable. By which double euyls all thynges constrayned should dye, so that no beast were able to abyde the iniuryes of wynter and famyne insuyng thereof: but that all beastes should perysshe before the sommer folowyng, when they should bryng forth theyr broode or succession: and that for these causes, the sayde colde clyme should bee perpetually desolate and vnhabitable. To all which obiections, we answere in this maner.

Obiections.

As touchyng the nyghtes not increased, I say, that it was not conuenient to assume that for any reason. For not as the Sunne falleth, so sodeynly commeth the darke nyght: but that the euenyng doeth substitute and prolong the day long after, as also the day spryng or dawnyng of the day, gyueth a certayne lyght before the rysing of the Sunne: After the which, the residue of the nyght that receyueth no lyght by the sayde euenyng and mornyng twilightes, is accomplysshed by the lyght of the Moone, so that the nyghtes are sildome vnaugmented. Let this bee an example prooued by our temperate regions, whereby we may vnderstande the condition of the nyght vnder the pole: Therefore euen there also the twilightes helpe the nyght a long tyme, as we will more presently demonstrate. It is approoued by the Astronomers, that the Sunne descendyng from the highest halfe sphere by eightiene paralels of the vnder horizon, maketh an ende of the twilight, so that at the length the darke night succeedeth: And that the Sunne approchyng, and rysing aboue the hyghest halfe sphere by as many paralels, doeth dyminysshe the nyght and increase the twylyght. Agayne, by the position or placyng of the sphere vnder the pole, the same is the horizontall that is the Equinoctiall. Those paralelles therefore that are paralelles to the horizontall lyne, are also paralelles to the Equinoctiall. So that the Sunne descendyng there vnder the horizon, doeth not bryng darke nyghtes to those regions, vntyll it come to the paralels distant. xviii. partes from the Equinoctiall.

The twylightes.

The lyght of the Moone.

The nyght vnder the pole.

The demonstration.

Duryng

Duryng the tyme of these sayde syxe monethes of darkenesse vnder the pole, the nyght is destitute of the benefite of the Sunne and the sayde twylyghtes, onely for the space of thyee monethes, in the whiche the Sunne goeth and returneth by the portion of the ouerthwarte circle. But yet neyther this tyme of thyee monethes is without remedy from heauen. For the Moone with her full globe increased in lyght, hath accesse at that tyme, and illuminateth the monethes lackyng lyght, euery one by them selues, halfe the course of the moneth: by whose benefite it commeth to passe that the nyght, named as vnaugmented, possesseth those regions no longer then one moneth and a halfe, neyther that continually or all at one tyme: but this also diuided into thyee sortes of shorter nyghtes, of the whiche euery one endureth for the space of two weekes, and are illuminate of the Moone accordyngly. And this is the reason conceyued of the power of the sphere, whereby we testifie that the sommers and nyghtes vnder the pole are tollerable to lyuyng beastes. But we wyll nowe declare by other remedies of nature and arte, that this colde so greatly feared, is more remisse and tollerable then our opinion: so that, compared to the nature of suche beastes as lyue there, it may be abydden. And there is no doubte but there are autours of more antiquitie then that age in the whiche any thyng was exactly knowen or discouered of the Northy regions. The olde wryters therefore perswaded onely by naked coniecture, dyd geather what they myght determyne of those places: Or rather, by the estimation of heauen, the whiche, because they felte it to bee hardely tollerable to them selues, and lesse to men borne in the clyme of Egypt and Grecia, tooke thereby an argument of the whole habitable earth. The hystorie of *Strabo* is knowen, that a potte of brasse, whiche was broken in sunder with frosen water, was brought from *Pontus*, and shewed in *Delphis* in token of a greeuous wynter. Here therefore, they that so greatly feared the wynter (suche as chaunceth to the earth vnder the xlviii. paralele) and therefore consecrated that broken potte to the temple of Appollo: what coulde suche men truely define vppon regions so farre without that paralele, whether they were

The Moone.

Remedies of nature & art.

The olde writers perswaded by coniecture.

A brasen potte broken with frost.

were inhabited or not? But suche as folowed these, beyng contented with thinuentions of the olde autours, and borne in maner vnder the same qualitie of heauen, persysted wyllyngly in the same opinion, with more confidence then consideration of the thynges whereof we nowe intreate: so lyghtly was that opinion receyued as touchyng the vnhabitable clime vnder the poles. But we with better confidence and faith (forasmuche as we are not instructed with coniectures) intend to staude against the sentence of the olde autours, affirmyng the North regions within the colde clime to be inhabited with herrynges, coddes, haddockes, and brettes, tunnyes, and other great fyshes, with thinfinite number whereof, tables are furnyshed through a great parte of Europe: All whiche are taken in the North sea extended beyonde our knoweledge. This sea at certayne tymes of the yeere, poureth fooryh his plentifulnes, or rather driueth fooryh his increase to seeke newe mansions, and are here taken in theyr passage. Furthermore also, euen the mouthes of the riuer of Tiber receiued a fyshe as a newe gest sent from the noryh sea: this swamme twise through Fraunce, and twise through Spayne, ouerpassed the *Ligurion* and *Tuscan* sea, to communicate her selfe to the citie of Rome. The lakes also and ryuers of those regions are replenyshed with fyshe: insomuch that no power of colde is able to extinguyshe thincrease of the yeere folowing, and the succession reparable so many hundred yeeres. And I plainely thinke, that if it should of necessitie folowe, that one of these two elementes, the earth and the water, should be destructiue to lyuyng creatures, the water shoulde chiefely haue wrought this effecte. But this is founde so tractable, that in the depe wynter, both that increase is brought fooryh, and fyshing is also exercised. The lande is lykewise inhabited with like plentifulnesse. But that we wander not to farre, let the fayth hereof rest in theexposition folowing, wherin we intend to declare howe by the power of nature and industry of man, this commoditie may come to passe. Therefore as touchyng nature, we suppose that the diuine prouidence hath made nothyng vncommunicable, but to haue geuen suche ouer to all thynges, wherby euery thyng may be tollerable to the next. The extremities of the elementes consent with theyr next. The ayre is grosse about the earth and water:

Fyshes of the North seas.

The North sea.

The qualitie of water.

The land.

The diuine prouidence in moderatyng the elementes.

water: but thynne and hot about the fyre. By this prouidence of nature, the vttermost sea is very salt. And salt (as witnesseth *Plinie*) yeldeth the fattnesse of Oyle. But Oyle, by a certayne natyue heate, is of propertie agreeable to fyre. The sea then, beyng al of such qualitie, powreth foorth it selfe farre vpon the extreeme landes, whereby by reason of the saltnesse thereof, it moueth and stirreth vp generatiue heate, as by fatnesse it norisheth the fecunditie of thynges generate. It geueth this fruitefulnesse to the earth at certayne floods, although the earth also it selfe haue in his inner bowels the same lyuely and norishing heate, wherby not only the Dennes, Caues, and hollow places, but also spryngs of water are made warme: & this so much the more, in how muche the wynter is more vehement. This thyng doth more appeare by this example, that the mountaines of *Norway* and *Swethlande* are fruitfull of metales, in the which, siluer and copper are concoct and molten into veines, which can scarcely by done in fornaces. By this reason also, the vapoures and hot exhalations pearsyng the earth and the waters, and through both those natures breathyng foorth into the ayre, temperateth the qualitie of heauen, & maketh it tollerable to beasts, as witnesseth the huge bygnesse of the Whales in those seas, with the strength of body, and long lyfe of such beastes as lyue on the land: which thyng coulde not be, except all thyngs were there commodiously norished by the benefite of the heauen and the ayre. For nothyng that in the tyme of encrease is hyndred by any iniurie, or that is euyl fedde al the tyme it lyueth, can prosper wel. Neyther are such thynges as liue there, offended with theyr natural wynter, as though an *Egiptian* or *Ethiopian* were sodenly conueighed into those cold regions. For they were in long tyme, by litle and litle, brought fyrst acquaynted with the nature of that heauen, as maye be prooued both by the lyfe of man, and by the hystorie of holy scripture They that were led from *Mesopatamia*, and that famous Tower of *Babilon* towards the North partes of the worlde, in the fyrst dispertion of nations, did not immediately passe to the extreme boundes, but planted theyr habitations first vnder a myddle heauen, between both, as in *Thracia*, and *Pontus*, where theyr posteritie was accustomed the better to sustayne the rigour of *Scythia* and *Tanais*

The nature of the sea.

Salt.

Generatyue heate.

Outward colde is cause of inwarde heate.

Metals.

Vapoures and exhalations.

Whales.

Beastes.

Hereby may be considered the cause of the death of our men that saple directly to Guinea.

No passage from one extremitie, to another, but by a meane.

nais, as he that commeth from winter to sommer, may the better after abyde yse and snow, beyng fyrst hardened thereto by the frostes of Autumne. In lyke maner mortal men, accustomed to beare the hardnesse of places next vnto them, were thereby at the length more confirmed to sustayne the extremities. And here also, if any sharpnesse remaine that may seeme intollerable, nature hath so prouided for the same, with other remedies. For the land and sea, hath geuen vnto beastes, deepe and large Caues, Dennes, and other hollowe places, and secreete corners in mountaynes and rockes, both on the land and by sea banckes, in the which are euer conteyned warme vapoures, so muche the more intent and vehement, in how much they are the more constrayned by extreeme cold. Nature hath also geuen valleyes, diuerted and defended from the North windes. She hath lykewyse couered beastes with heare, so muche the thycker, in how much the vehemencie of cold is greater: by reason wherof the best and richest furres are brought from those regions, as Sables, whose pryce is growne to great excesse, next vnto gold and precious stones, and are esteemed princely ornamentes. The beasts that beare these furres, are hunted cheefelye in winter (whiche thyng is more strange) because their heare is then thicker and cleaueth faster to the skin. How greeuous then shal we thinke the wynter to be there, where this litle beast liueth so wel, and where the hunters may search the Dennes and hauntes of such beastes through the woods and snow? But such beastes, the condition of whose bodies is so tender that they are not able to abide thiniurie of the cold, either lye hyd in winter, or change their habitation, as do certaine beasts also in our clime. Nature hath furthermore geuen remedie to man, both by art and industry to defende him selfe both abrode and at home. Abrode with a thicke vesture, and the same well dowbeled. At home, with large fyers on Harthes, Chymneyes, and in Stooues for the daye, with close Chaumbers, and Couches, soft and warme Beddes for the nyght: by whiche remedies they mittigate the wynters, which seeme rigorous to straungers, although they are to thinhabitantes more tollerable then our opinion, as in deede by the fyrst naturall mixture or composition of theyr bodies, such thyngs are agreeable to them, as seeme very hard to other. The Lion in *Affrik*.

Caues and Dennes.

Valleis.

The best furres. Sables.

Beastes that lye hyd in wynter.

All beasts haue the nature of the place where they are engendred.

and

and the beare in *Sarmatia*, are fierce, as in theyr present strength and vigoure: but translated into a contrary heauen, are of lesse strength and courage. The foule called *Ciconia* (which some thynke to be the Stoyke) doth not tary the wynter: yet do the Cranes come at that tyme. The *Scythian* wyll accuse the Romane heauen as inducyng feuers, whereas neuertheless there is none more holsome. Such as haue been tenderly brought vp, if they come suddeynely into the campe, can not away with hunger, watchyng, heate, passages through ryuers, battayles, sieges, and assaultes: But the olde souldier, exercised in the warres, vseth these as meditations of the fielde, as hardened therto by long experience. He that hath been accustomed to the shadowe of the citie, and wyll attempte the saying of the poet Virgil, *Nudus ara, sere nudus*, that is, naked and bare, without house and home, shal to his peryl make an end of the verse, *Habebis frigora febrem* (that is) he shal haue the colde ague. Suche thynges therfore as seeme hard vnto vs, beyng accustomed by litle and litle, become more tollerable: Insomuch that this exercise of sufferaunce by such degrees, doth oftentimes growe to prodigious effectes, farre beyond our expectation. And thus we seeme to haue made sufficient demonstration, by heauen, nature, and art, wherby it may appeare, that no part of the land or sea is denied to liuing creatures. The reader may also perceiue howe large matter of reasons and examples may be opened for the declaryng of our opinion, wherin we rest. Let therfore thauctoritie of the auntient auctours geue place, and the consent of the newe writers agree to this history, not as nowe at the length comprehended (wheras before many hundred yeeres Germanie and Scondia had entercouse of merchandies not seuered by the large gulfe of *Gothia*) but as nowe by our commentaries brought to lyght: and hauyng sayde thus muche in maner of a preface, we wyll nowe proceede to wryte of the North regions.

What exercise may do.

Vse maketh masteries.

Scondia.

Schondia.

Scondia, Schondania, or *Schondenmarchia*, is as muche to saye as fayre *Dania*, or fayre *Denmarke*. *Plinie* in one place, nameth it *Scandia*, and in an other *Scandinauia*, if there be no faute in the exemples.

Scone is fayre in the duch tongue.

It was named *Schondia*, by reason of the fayrenesse and fruitefulnesse thereof. And this aswell for that in beneficiall heauen, fertilitie of grounde, commoditie of hauens and marte townes, abundaunce of ryuers and fyshe, plentie of beastes, great quantitie of metall, as golde, syluer, copper, and leade, diligent culturyng the grounde, with townes and cities well inhabited and gouerned by ciuile lawes, it geueth place to none other fortunate region. This was in maner vnknowen to the olde Greekes and Latins, as may appeare by this argument, that with one consent they affirmed, that in these north regions the colde Zone or clime, was condemned to perpetuall snowe, intollerable to al lyuyng creatures. For fewe of them haue made mention hereof as to be inhabited. Among whom Plinie, as one of the chiefe, saith in his fourth booke, that *Schondania* is of vnknowen biggenesse: and onely that portion thereof to be knowen, which is inhabited with the nation of the *Hilleuiones* in fiftie villages: Neither yet is *Eningia* lesse in opinion. Other more auncient then Plinie, haue placed most fortunate regions, with men of long lyfe (which the Greekes call *Macrobios*) and of most innocent behauour vnder the tracte of those landes: and that there came from thence to *Delphos*, certayne religious virgines, with vowes and giftes consecrated to Apollo: And furthermore, that that nation obserued this institution, vntyll the saide virgins were violated of them, of whom they were receiued as straungers. These are most cleare testimonies of Antiquitie, both of the greatnesse of *Schondia*, and the people that inhabite the same, although they were since vnknowen: as lykewyse the *Gothes* departyng from these North landes, although they obteyned Thempire of the regions about the marysches of *Meotis*, and the coastes of the sea *Euxinus*, with the realme of Denmarke (wherof that is thought to be a portion whiche is nowe called *Transiluania*) and the bankes of the ryuer of *Danubius*, and in fine, inuaded the Romane Empire, yet were not the regions well knowen from whence they tooke theyr originall. Therefore lyke as part of the olde wryters are vnsufficient witnesses, to testifie of our narrations as touchyng these landes vnknowen to them: Euen so the other parte whiche excluded the same as vnhabitable, are to be conuinced, leaste theyr authoritie, beyng admitted, shoulde

The fertilitie of Schondia.

He meaneth Diodorus Siculus

Thinuasions of the Gothes.

Transiluania.

engender

engender opinions not agreeable or conuenient to the nature of places. *Sigismundus Liberus*, in his commentaries of *Moscouia*, writeth thus. *Scandia* or *Scondia*, is no Ilande (as some haue thought) but part of the continent or firme land of *Suetia*, which by a long tract reacheth to *Cothland*: and that nowe the kyng of *Denmarke* possesseth a great part thereof. But whereas the writers of these thynges haue made *Scondia* greater then *Suetia*, and that the *Gothes* and *Lumbardes* came from thence, they seeme in my opinion to comprehend these three kyngdomes as it were in one bodie, only vnder the name of *Scondia*, forasmuch as then, that part of land that lyeth betweene the sea *Baltheum* (which floweth by the coastes of *Finlandia*) and the frosen sea, was vnknowen: and that by reason of so manye marysshes, innumerable riuers, and intemperateneſſe of heauen, it is yet rude, vncultured, and litle knowen. Which thyng hath been the cause that some iudged al that was called by the name of *Scondia*, to be one great Iland.

The Gothes & Lumbardes.

Gronelande.

Ronelande is interpreted greene land, so called for the great encreaſe and fruitfulneſſe of pasture. By reason whereof, what great plentie of cattaile there is, it may hereby appere, that at such time as shippes may passe thither, they set forth great heapes of Cheese and Butter to be solde, whereby we coniecture that the lande is not rough with barren mountaynes. It hath two Cathedrall Churches vnder the Ordination of *Nidrosia*. To one of these, was of late yeeres a Bysshop appointed, only by the title of a Suffragane, in consideration that while the Metropolitane doth neglect the direction of religion for the distance of the place, and difficult nauigation, the people is in maner falne to gentilitie, being of them selues of moueable wittes, & geuen to magicall artes. For it is sayd that they (as also the people of *Laponia*) do rayse tempestes on the sea with magicall inchauntmentes, and bryng such shyps into daunger as they entend to spoyle. They vse litle ships made of Leather, and safe agaynst the brusing of the sea and rockes, and with them assaile other shyps. *Peter Martir* of *Angleria*, writeth in his Decades

Fruitfull pasture.

Religion neglected.

Inchaunters.

of

The viage of Sebastian Cabot to the frosen sea.

of the Spanysh nauigations that *Sebastian Cabot*, saylyng from England continually towarde the Noyth, folowed that course so farre, that he chaunced vpon great flakes of yse in the Moneth of July: and that diuertyng from thence, he folowed the coast by the shore bendyng toward the South, vntyll he came to the clyme of the Iland of *Hispaniola*, aboue *Cuba*, an Ilande of the Canibales. Which narration hath geuen me occasion to extende *Groneland* beyond the promontorie or cape of *Huitsarch*, to the contyneut or fyrme lande of *Lapponia*, aboue the castell of *Wardhus*: whiche thyng I dyd the rather, for that the reuerende Archebyshop of *Nidrosia*, constantly affirmed that the sea bendeth there into the fourme of a crooked Elbowe. It agreeth herewith also, that the *Lapones* consent with them in the lyke Magicall practises, and do n eyther embrace the Christian religion, nor refuse it: wherby I haue thought this lykenesse of customes to be betweene them, because they ioyne togeather in one continent. The distance lykewyse, seemeth not to disagree. For betweene both these people, the distance is not full two hundred *Schoeni*, euery one beyng a space of ground conteining threescore furlonges, which make seauen myles, & a halfe. It furthermore agreeth with this coniecture that *Cabot* chaunced into such yse. And albeit, as touching the Moneth of July, I wyll contend it is not well rehearsed, no although he had sailed vnder the poole, for such reasons as we haue declared before to the contrary: neuertheless, that at some tyme he sailed by yse, this testifieth in that he sayled not by the mayne sea, but in places neare vnto the land, comprehending & embracing the sea in fourme of a gulfe, whereas for the same cause the gulfe of *Gothland* is frosen, because it is streyght and narrow: in the which also the litle quantitie of salte water is ouercome by the abundance of fresh water of many and great ryuers that fall into the gulfe. But betweene *Norway* and *Island*, the sea is not frosen, for the contrary cause, forasmuch as the power of freshe water is there ouercome of the abundance of the salte water. There is a fame (but of vncertayne auctoritie) that the Spaniardes sayle at this present to *Gronelande*, and to an other lande, whiche they call *Terra Viridis*, that is, the greene lande, bringyng from thence suche wares as are founde in *Gronelande*. Towards the Noyth, it reacheth to the vnknowen

Gronelande.

Wardhus.

Lapponia and Gronelande.

Schoeni.

Cabot tolde me that this ise is of fresh water & not of the sea.

A commixtion of salt water & fresh.

The sea betweene Norway and Island.

Terra Viridis.

vnknowen land vnder the pole, from whence also the theeues and robbers of the Pigmei come into this lande. Which is an argument that the regions vnder the pole are inhabited, & almost enuironed with the sea, as are they whiche the Cosmographers call *Chersonesi*, or *Peninsulæ* (that is) almost Ilandes. Pigmei.

The description of Gronlande.

The description of the East syde, which lyeth towarde Norway.

Wardhus Castle.	54.		70.	30.
Towarde the North.	53.	30.	71.	30.
The fyrst extention.	40.		71.	40.
The second extention.	28.		72.	
Huitsarch promont.	22.		67.	
The extention.	5.		61.	45.

It is continued from thence by the coastes of the lande of Baccallaos. Baccallaos.

356.	60.	

Towarde the West and North, it is termined with an vnknowen ende of landes and seas.

Islande.

ISlande is interpreted the land of Isse, and is called of the olde wryters *Thyle*. It is extended betweene the South and the North, almost two hundred schoenes in longitude. It is for the most parte full of mountaynes, and vncultured. But in the playnes it hath such fruitfull pastures, that they are fayne sometymes to dryue the beastes from theyr feedyng, least they should be suffocate with to much fatnesse. This Ilande is famous by the strange myracles of nature, of the whiche *Saxo Grammaticus* in his hystorie of Denmarke, and *Olaus Gothus*, in his description of the North landes, doe make mention. There are in it three mountaynes of marueylous height, the toppes whereof are couered with perpetuall snowe: but the nether partes of them, are of lyke nature to the mountayne *Etna*, in the Ilande of *Sicilie*, boylyng with continuall flames of fyre, and castyng fourth brymstone. One of these is named *Helga*, and the other *Mons Crucis* (that is) the mounte of the crosse. The thyrd is named *Hecla*, whose flames neyther consume flaxe or tow, matters most apte to take fyre, nor yet are quenched with water. And with

Islande called Thyle.

Schoene is lx. furlonges.

Myracles of nature in Islande.

Three marueylous mountaynes.

Helga.

Hecla.

lyke force as the ſhot of great artillerie is driuen foorth by violence of fyre, euen ſo by the commixtion and repugnance of fyre, colde, and brymſtone, great ſtones are heere throwne into the ayre. Neare vnto theſe mountaynes are three chynkes or open places in the earth, of huge bygneſſe, and ſuch depth (eſpecially at the mount *Hecla*) that no ſight can attayne thereto. But to ſuch as looke into them, there firſt appeare men as though they were drowned, and yet breathyng foorth theyr ſoules: who beyng exhorted by theyr friendes to reſorte to theyr owne, they anſwere with mournyng voyce and greeuous ſighes, that they muſt departe from thence to the mount *Hecla*, and therewith ſodaynely vanyſhe out of ſight. Straunge viſions.

Ile. Ile floweth about the Ilande for the ſpace of ſeuen or eight monethes, makyng by runnyng togeather a certayne miſerable waylyng and gronyng noyſe, not vnlyke the voyce of man. Thinhabitauntes thynke, that in this Ile and the mount *Hecla*, are the places where the euyll ſoules of theyr people are tormented. A ſtraunge thyng.

If any man take a great portion of this Ile, and keepe it as diligently as may be in a cloſe veſſell or cofer, the ſame doeth ſo vanyſhe at the tyme when the other Ile about the Ilande diſſolueth, that not ſo much as one droppe of water or Ile can thereof be founde.

Foure ſpryngs of contrary nature.

Not farre from theſe mountaynes reachyng towarde the ſea coaſtes, are foure ſprynges of water, of moſt diuers and contrary nature. The fyrſt, by reaſon of his perpetuall and feruent heate, ſodaynely turneth all bodyes, that are caſt therein, into ſtones, reſeruyng neuertheleſſe theyr fyrſt forme and ſhape. The ſeconde, is of intollerable coldneſſe. The thyrd, is ſweeter then hony, and moſt pleaſaunt to quench thyrſt. The fourth, is playne poyſon, peſtilent, and deadly. There is furthermore in theſe ſprynges ſuche aboundaunce of brymſtone, that a thouſande pounde weight thereof is bought for litle, as for the tenth parte of a ducate. Aboundaunce of brymſtone.

Dryed fyſhe. Theyr chiefe wares, are dryed fyſhe, as Soles, Maydens, Playces, Salpas, Stockefyſhes, and ſuch other, whiche they exchange for wheat, and ſuch other thinges as are brought thyther from Lubecke, Hamborowe, and Amſterdam. Scarſeneſſe of corne. For they haue oftentymes ſuch ſcarſeneſſe of corne, that they vſe dryed fyſh in the ſteade of bread, although in ſommer the Iland ſo floryſheth with greene and fruitfull medowes, that they are fayne ſomtimes

to dryue theyr beastes from pasture, least they should suffocate for to much fatnesse, as I haue sayde before. They make very good butter, and apte to be vsed in matters of phisicke. There are found diuers kindes of good Haukes, as Faulcons, Gerfaulcons, Lanners, and Sperhaukes: Also Rauens, Crowes, Beares, Hares, and Foxes, both white and blacke. They haue most swift horses, and such as run. xxx. miles continually without rest or baite. They haue many churches: & houses builded of the bones of Whales and other great fyshes. The nauigation is not open to this Iland but in sommer season: and that only for the space of foure monethes, by reason of the colde and Ise whereby the passage is stopped. If any stryfe or debate aryse on the sea among the mariners for the commoditie of the hauen, the gouernour of the place, although he haue knowledge thereof, yet doeth he not punyshe them, forasmuche as it appertayneth not to his office to decerne such thinges as are done on the sea, but only on the lande. Shyps are there oftentymes in great peryll, by reason of Whales, & such other monsters of the sea, except the Mariners take good heede, and keepe them far from the shyps with the noyse of Drummes, and emptie barrels cast into the sea. There are many Mynstrels and other that play on instruments, with the sweete noyse whereof, they vse to allure foules and fyshes to their nettes and snares. Many also, lye lurkyng in caues and dennes, to auoyd the sharpnesse of cold, as the Affricanes doe the lyke to defend them selues from the heate. On the top of a certaine mountayne called *Weyszarch*, (lying betweene Island and Gruntland, or Greonland) is erected a shypmans quadrant of marueylous bygnesse, made by two Pirates, named Pinnigt and Pothorst, in fauour of suche as sayle by those coastes, that they may thereby auoyde the daungerous places lying towarde Greonland.

Hawkes.

White Rauens.

Houses of Whales bones

The nauigation to Iceland.

Whales.

One thyng seruyng for contrary vses.

A shypmans quadrant.

The myddest of the Ilande.	7	0	65	30.
The citie Harsol. &c.	7	40	60	42.

Laponia.

THe region of *Laponia*, was so named of the people that inhabite it. For the Germanes call all suche Lapones, as are simple or vnapte to thinges. This

People of great agilitie.

people is of small stature, and of suche agilitie of bodie, that hauyng theyr quyuers of arrowes gerte to them, and theyr bowes in theyr handes, they can with a leape cast themselues through a circle or hope of the diameter of a cubite. They fight on foote, armed with bowes and arrowes after the maner of the *Tartars*. They are exercised in hurlyng the darte, and shootyng, from theyr youth: insomuche that they gyue theyr chyldren no meate vntyll they hyt the marke they shoote at, as dyd in olde tyme thynhabitauntes of the Ilandes called *Baleares*. They vse to make theyr apparell streight and close to theyr bodyes, that it hynder not theyr woorke. Theyr wynter vestures are made of the whole skynnes of Seales or Beares, artificially wrought, and made supple. These they tye with a knotte aboue theyr heads, leauyng onely two holes open to looke through, and haue all the residue of theyr bodyes couered, as though they were sowed in sackes, but that this beyng adopted to all partes of theyr bodyes, is so made for commoditie, and not for a punyshment, as the Romanes were accustomed to sow paricides in sackes of leather with a Cocke, an Ape, and a Serpent, and so to hurle them alyue altogeather into the ryuer of *Tyber*. And heereby I thynke it came to passe, that in olde tyme it was rashly beleeued, that in these regions there were men with rough & heary bodyes like wylde beastes, as parte made relation through ignorannce, parte also takyng pleasure in rehearsall of suche thinges as are straunge to the hearers. The Lapones defended by this arte and industry, goe abrode and withstand the sharpenesse of wynter and the North wyndes, with all the iniurpes of heauen. They haue no houses, but certayne Tabernacles lyke tentes or hales, wherewith they passe from place to place, and chaunge their mansions. Some of them lyue after the maner of the people of *Sarmatia*, called in olde tyme *Amaxobii*, which vsed waynes in the steade of houses. They are much giuen to huntyng, and haue suche plentie of wylde beastes, that they kyll them in maner in euery place. It is not lawfull for a woman to goe foorth of the tent, at that doore by the which her husbande went out on huntyng the same day, nor yet to touche with her hande any parte of the beast that is taken, vntyll

A strange apparell.

The cause of an olde errour.

So doe the Tartars.

Plentie of wylde beastes.

tyll her husbande reache her on the spytte suche a portion of flesshe as he thynketh good . They tyll not the grounde. The region nourysheth no kynde of Serpentes: yet are there great and noysome Gnattes . They take fysshe in great plentie: by the commoditie whereof, they lyue after the maner of the Ethiopians, called *Ichthiophagi* . For as these drye theyr fysshe with feruent heate, so doe they dryve them with colde, and grynde or stampe them to pouder as small as meale or floure. They haue suche aboundaunce of these fysshes, that they hourd great plentie thereof in certeyne stone houses, to carry them vnto other landes neare about them, as *Northbothnia*, and whyte *Russia* . Theyr shyppes are not made with nayles, but are tyde togeather and made fast with cordes and wythes. With these they sayle by the swyft ryuers betweene the mountaynes of *Laponia*, beyng naked in sommer that they may the better swymme in the tyme of perill, and geather togeather such wares as are in daunger to be lost by shypwracke. Parte of them exercyse handie crafftes , as imbroderyng and weauyng of cloth, interlaced with golde and syluer . Suche as haue deuised any necessary Arte, or doe increase and amende the inuentions of other, are openly honoured, and rewarded with a vesture, in the which is imbrodered an argument or token of the thyng they deuised . And this remayneth to the posteritie of theyr famelie, in token of theyr desartes. They frame shyppes, buylde houses, and make dyuers sortes of housholde stuffe artificially, and transporte them to other places neare about. They buye and sell both for exchaunge of wares, and for money . And this only by consent of both parties, without communication: yet not for lacke of wytte, or for rudenesse of maners, but bycause they haue a peculiar language vnknowen to theyr borderers. It is a valiant nation, and lyued long free, and sustayned the warres of Norway and *Suetia*, vntyll at the length they submitted themselues, and payde ryche furres for theyr tribute. They chose themselues a gouernour, whom they cal a kyng: But the kyng of *Suetia*, gyueth him auctoritie and administration. Neuertheless, the people in theyr suites and doubtful causes, resorte to *Suetia* to haue theyr matters decised.

No Serpents.

Great Gnats.

Aboundaunce of fysshe.

Shyps without nayles.

Science honoured.

Bargeynyng without woordes.

In theyr iourneys, they goe not to any Inne, nor yet enter into any house, but lye all nyght vnder the firmament. They haue no horses, but in the steade of them, they tame certayne wylde beastes which they call Reen, beyng of the iust bygnesse of a Male, with rough heare lyke an Asse, clouen feete, and braunched hornes lyke a Harte, but lower and with fewer antlettes. They will not abyde to be rydden. But when theyr peytrels or drawyng collers are put on them, and they so ioyned to the Charlotte or steade, they runne in the space of.xxiiii. houres, a hundred and fyftie myles, or.xxx. *Schœnos*, the whiche space they affyrme to chaunge the horizon thryse, that is, thryse to come to the furthest signe or marke that they see a far of. Which doubtlesse is a token both of the marueylous swyftnesse & great strength of these beastes, beyng able to continue runnyng for so great a space, in the meane whyle also spendyng some tyme in feedyng. I suppose that this thyng was somewhat knowen to the olde wryters, although receyued in maner by an obscure and doubtfull fame: For they also wryte that certayne Scythians doe ryde on Hartes.

No horses.

A beast of marueylous strength and swyftnesse.

What Schoenus is, looke in Groenlande.

The chaunge of the horizon.

The olde aucthours called all the North people Scythyans.

They neyther folow the Christian religion, nor yet refuse it, or are offended therewith as are the Iewes: but doe sometymes receyue it fauourably, to gratifie the princes to whom they obey. And that no more of them imbrase the Christian fayth, the faulte is somewhat to be imputed to the Bishoppes and Prelates that haue eyther reiected this cure & charge of instructyng the nation, or suffered the fayth of Christ to bee suffocate, euen in the fyrst spryng. For vnder the pretence of religion, they would haue aduaunced theyr owne reuenues, and ouerburdened the people by an intollerable example, none otherwyse here then in all Christendome, which thyng is doubtlesse the cause of most greeuous defections. I heard Iohn, a bishop of Gothlande, say thus: We that gouerne the churche of *Vpsalia*, and haue vnder our diocesse a great parte of that nation, lyke as it is not conuenient to declare many thinges of our bigilance and attendaunce ouer the flocke committed to our charge, euen so abstaynyng from myscheeuous couetousnesse, whereby religion is abused for luker, we doe in all places our diligent endeuour, that wee minister none occasion, whereby this nation, as offended by our

Erasmus lamenteth this in his fyrst booke de ratione contionandi, where he speaketh of the people, called Pilapii.

sinnes

sinnes, may be the lesse wyllyng to embrase the Christian sayth. This is the state of the religion among the Lapones: although of theyr owne institution and custome receyued of theyr predicessours, they are Idolatours, honouryng that lyuyng thyng that they meete fyrst in the mornyng, for the God of that day, and diuinyng thereby theyr good lucke or euyll. They also erecte Images of stone vppon the mountaynes, whiche they esteeme as Goddes, attributyng to them diuine honour. They solemne martages, and begyn the same with fyre and flynt, as with a mysterie so aptely applyed to the Image of stone, as if it had been receyued from the myddest of Grecia. For in that they adhibite a mysterie to fyre, as they doe not this alone (forasmuch as the Romanes obserued the same custome) euen so are they herein partly to be commended, in that they vse the ceremonies of so noble a people. The mysterie of the flinte is no lesse to be praysed, both forasmuch as this is domesticall philosophie, and hath also a neare affinitie and signification to these solemnities. For as the flynt hath in it fyre lying hyd, whiche appeareth not but by mouyng & force: so is there a secrete lyfe in both kynds of man and woman, which by mutuall coniunction commeth forth to a lyuyng byrth. They are furthermore experte inchaunters. They tye three knottes on a stryng hangyng at a whyp. When they lose one of these, they rayse tollerable wynds: When they lose an other, the wynde is more behement: but by losyng the thyrd, they rayse playne tempestes, as in olde tyme they were accustomed to rayse thunder and lyghtnyng. This arte doe they vse agaynst such as sayle by theyr coastes, and staye or moue the ryuers and seas more or lesse, as they lyst to shew fauour or displeasure. They make also of leade certayne shorte magicall dartes of the quantitie and length of a fynger. These they throwe agaynst such, of whom they desyre to bee reuenged, to places neuer so farre distant. They are sometymes so vexed with the canker on theyr armes or legges, that in the space of three dayes they dye through the behemencie of the payne. The Sunne falleth very lowe in these regions: and prolongeth one continuall nyght for the space of three monethes in wynter, during whiche tyme they haue none other lyght but lyke vnto the twilight of euenynges & mornynges. This is very cleare, but con-

Idolatrie.

A mysterie of mariage in fyre and flynt.

Experte inchaunters.

Magicall dartes.

The canker.

One nyght of three monethes.

tinueth but fewe houres, and is lyke the bygght shynyng of the Moone. Therefore that day that the Sunne returneth to the hemispherie, they keepe holy day, and make great myrth with solemne festiuitie. And these are the maners of this nation, not so brutyshe or saluage, as woorthy therefore to be called Lapones for theyr vnapteneſſe or simplicitie, as when they lyued vnder theyr owne Empyre, and vsed no familiaritie or entercourse with other nations, & knew not the commoditie of their owne thinges,

Riche furres. neyther the pryce and estimation of theyr furres in our regions, by reason whereof, they solde great plentie of them for some of our wares of small value.

The boundes or limittes of *Laponia* (beyng the extreme land of Scondia knowen towarde the North pole) are extended towarde this parte of the North, to the world yet vnknowen to vs: And furthermore towarde the same parte of the vttermost sea, accordyng to this description.

The fyrst coast.	70	72.
The coast folowyng.	80	7.
That that yet foloweth.	90	70.

Plentie of sea tyshe. From the fyshyng places and stone houses of this sea, they carry foorth to *Nordbothnia*, and whyte *Russia*, landes confinyng to them, great plentie of fyshe. Whereby we may conjecture that this sea is extended on euery syde towarde the North. Towarde the West, it is limitted with the most inwarde gulfe at the Ca-

Wardhus. stle of Wardhus, at the degree. 54 70 30.

Towarde the South, it is limitted by a lyne drawen from thence vnto the degree. 90 69.

Norwegia, or Norway.

NOrdway, is as muche to say, as the Northway. This was sometyme a flourishyng kyngdome, whose dominion comprehended Denmarke, Friselande, and the Ilandes farre about, vntyll the domesticall Empyre was gouerned by the succession of inheritaunce. In the meane tyme whyle this gouernance ceassed for lacke of due issue, it was instituted by consent of the nobilitie, that the kynges should be admitted by election: supposing that they would with more equitie execute that office, forasmuche as they were placed in

the

the same by suche auctoritie, and not by obteynyng the kyngdome by fortune and newe aduauncement. But it came so to passe, that as euery of them excelleth in rychesse, ambition, and fauoure by consangiuitie, so were they in greater hope to obteine the kyngdome: and were by this meanes diuided into factions, attemptyng also occations to inuade forayne realmes, whereby they myght strenghten theyr parties. It is therefore at this present vnder the dominion of the Danes, who do not onely exact intollerable tributes, but also byyng al theyr ryches and commodities into Denmarke, constitutyng the continuance of theyr gouernaunce in thinfirmitie and pouertie of the subiectes: whiche exemple, some other princes do folowe at this day in the Christian Empire. For after that the princes had forsaken such vertues as should haue shyned in them, as to be *Patres patriæ* (that is) the fathers of their countreys, and that in the place hereof, onely the proude countenaunce of dominion remayned, whiche opened licentiousnesse to thiniurie of the subiectes: this folowed there of, that whereas the Danes by this occasion had no further trust or ayde in the loue of the people, they prouided, for thindempnitie of theyr owne estate, by forcible extenuatyng the goods and power of them whom they desired to keepe in subiection. This is the fortune of Norway, whose edefices, townes, and cities can not defende theyr auncient amplitude and dignitie: neyther is there any hope of repayryng theyr state. For there are no consultations admitted for the redresse of the common welth: No man dare shewe his aduice, or attempte any thyng, vncertayne of the myndes and consent of other. To this difficultie is added the qualitie of the place: For the Danes haue in theyr power al the nauigations of Norway, wherby it may exercise no trade by sea, neyther cary forth wares to other places: So that in fine it may seeme most vnfortunate, as lackyng the fauoure of heauen, the sea, and the lande. From hence is brought into all Europe a fyshe of the kyndes of them whiche we call haddockes or hakes, indurate and dried with cold, and beaten with clubbes or stockes, by reason whereof the Germans call them stockefyshe. The takyng of these, is most commended in Januarie, that they may be sufficiently dryed and hardened with colde: For suche as are taken in the more temperate monethes, do corrupt and putrifie,

Kyngdomes destroyed by factions.

The Danes.

The defaut of princes.

An exemple of tyrannie.

The myserable state of Norway.

Stockfyshe.

putrifie, and are not meete to be caryed forth.

The description of the west coaste, with the part thereof lying most towarde the north.

Wardhus (that is) the watche house, or watche towre

54. 70. 30.

It is a stronge Castell or fortresse appointed to the *Lapones*.

The coaste folowyng, .48. 50. 70

Matthkur. &c.

All the coast from hence, and the places neere about vnto the degree. 45. 69. beyng sometyme lefte desolate by the sedition and destruction of Norway, the *Lapones* chose for their habitations, as comming to amore beneficial heauen. From ỹ castel of *Wardhus*, vnto the degree. 40. 30. 64. 10. al the coast in the spring tyme is daungerous to passe, by reason of whales, of such huge byggenesse, that some of them growe to an hundred cubites: for these fyshes at that tyme of the yeere resort togeather for generation. Such shyppes as chaunce to fall eyther vppon theyr bodies, or into suche whyrlepooles as they make by theyr vehement motions, are in great peryll. The remedie to auoyde this daunger, is to power into the sea *Castoreum* (that is) oyle made of the stones of the beaste called the *Beuor*, myngeled with water: For with this, the whole heard of whales vanysheth suddeynely to the bottome of the sea: They make a terrible roryng, and haue two breathyng places in the hyghest part of theyr foreheads, standyng foorth right a cubite in length, and are brode at the endes, beyng couered with a skynne, through the whiche they blowe waters lyke showers or stormes of raine. The prickes of theyr backes, are founde conteynyng three els in circuite, and euery knotte betwene them of one ell. They are at the leaste of. lx. cubites in length, and are salted and kept in store houses. The greatest are vnprofitable to bee eaten, by reason of theyr ranke and vnsauery taste, whiche can not be qualified.

The Lapones.

Shyppes in daunger by reason of whales.

Castoreum.

The roryng of whales.

whales salted and reserued.

Nidrosia standyng vppon the south syde of the sea banke, was the chiefe citie and *Metropolitane* churche throughout all Norway, Islande, Gronlande, and the Ilandes there about. This citie was noble at the fyrst vnder the flouryshyng Empire of Norway, conteynyng in circuite. xxiiii. paryshes,

The citie of Nidrosia.

but

but it is now brought in maner to a billage, and is called in the Germane tongue *Truthaim*, as the house of the Dryides. There remayneth at this day a Cathedrall churche in token of the auncient felicitie, beyng such that in bygnesse and workmanshyp of wrought stone, the lyke is not in all Christendome. The greeses or compasse about the Altar, was destroyed by fyre, and repared at the same time that we wrote this historie. The charge of the reparation, was esteemed to be seuen thousand crownes: by which small portion an estimate may be made of the excellencie of the whole Churche.

A magnificiall churche

The tract of all the sea coastes of *Norway* is very quiet and meeke, the sea is not frosen, the snowes endure not long. This lande hath also a peculiar pestilence, which they call *Leem* or *Lemmer*. This is a litle foure footed beaste, about the bygnesse of a Ratte, with a spotted skynne: these fall vppon the grounde at certayne tempestes and soddeyne showres, not yet knowen from whence they come, as whether they are brought by the wyndes from remote Ilandes, or otherwyse engendred of thycke and feculent clowdes. But this is well knowen, that as soone as they fall downe, greene grasse and hearbes are found in theyr bowels not yet digested. They consume al greene thyngs, as do Locustes: and such as they only byte, wyther and dye. This pestilence lyueth as long as it doth not tast of the grasse newely sprong. They come together by flockes, as do Swalows: and at an ordinarie time, either die by heapes, with great infection of the land (as by whole corruption ỹ aire is made pestiferous, and molesteth the *Noruegians* with swymmyng in the head and the Iaundies) or are consumed of other beastes named *Lefrat*. Towards the East, it is included within the lyne that is drawen by the mountaynes, whose endes or vttermoste boundes, they are, that lye toward the South, aboue the mouthes of the riuer *Trolhetta*: but that part that lieth toward the North, passeth by the castel of *Wardhus*, and is extended to the vnknowen lande of the *Lapones*.

Noysome beasts of vnknowen generation.

Wardhus.

The vnkowen land of the Lapons.

The Lake called *Mos*, and the Ilande of *Hoffuen* in the myddest therof, is in the degree. 45 30 61.

In this Lake appeareth a straunge monster: whiche is, a serpent of huge byggenesse. And as to all other places of the

A serpent of huge bignesse.

the worlde, blasing starres do portend thalteration and chaunge of thynges: so doth this to *Norway*. It was seene of late (in the yeere of Christ. 1522. appearyng farre aboue the water, rowlyng lyke a great pyller, and was, by coniecture farre of, esteemed to be of fyftie cubites in length. Shortly after folowed the reiectyng of *Christiernus* kyng of *Denmarke*. Suche other monstrous thyngs are sayd to be seene in diuers places of the world. And doubtlesse except we should thynke that the diuine prouidence, hauyng mercy vpon mortall men, and hereby warnyng them of theyr offences, doth send such strange thynges (as also blasing starres, and armies fyghtyng in the ayre, with suche other portentous monsters, whereof no causes can be founde by naturall thynges) we myght els suspect that such syghtes were but imaginations of the sense of man deceyued.

God warneth vs by signes of thyngs to come.

On the East syde, are exceedyng rough mountaynes, which admit no passage to *Suetia*. The sea betweene *Norway* and the Ilandes, is called *Tialleslund*, *Euripus*, or the streyghtes. The Iland of *Lofoth*, whose middest. 42 67 10.
Langanas, whose middest. 41 67
Vastrall, whose middest. 41 30 67 30.

The streightes of boyling sea.

The sea betwene these three Ilands, is called *Muscostrom* (that is) boyling. At the flowing of the sea, it is swalowed into the Caues, and is blowne out agayne at the reflowing, with no lesse violence then the streames of ryuers fall from mountaines. This sea is nauigable, vntyl it be lower then the mouthes of the rockes. Such as chaunce into it out of due time, are caried headlong into Whyrpooles. The fragmentes of the lost shyps, are seldome cast vp agayne. But when they are cast vp, they are so brused and fretted against the rockes, that they seeme to be ouergrowne with hoare. This is the power of nature, passing the fabilous Simpleiades & the fearful *Malea*, with the dangerous places of *Silla* and *Caribdis*, and all other miracles that nature hath wrought in any other sea hytherto knowen to man.

Dangerous places in the sea.

Fruitfull Ilands about Norway.

The Ilands about *Norway*, are of such fruitful pasture, that they bryng not theyr beastes into the stables before the moneth of Nouember, and do in many places wynter them abrode.

Suetia

Suecia, or Suethlande.

Svecia, is a kyngdome ryche in Golde, Syluer, Copper, Leade, Iron, fruite, cattayle, and exceedyng increase of fyshe, of the ryuers, lakes, and the sea, and hath no lesse plentie of such wylde beastes as are taken with huntyng. Golde and syluer.

Towarde the West, it is ended with the mountaynes of Noryway from the Castel of *Wardhus* vnto thende. 51. 63. 40 Wardhus castell.

Towarde the South, with the line from this ende vnto the degrees 53. 30. 61. And from thence vnto the degrees. 61. 60. 30. Aboue the gulfe of Suecia, towarde the noryth, with the south end of *Lapponia* from the castel of *Wardhus* vnto the ende. 62. 70. The gulfe of Suecia.

Towarde the East, it is ended with the line from this ende vnto the degree. 63. 69. &c. *Stokholme* the chiefe citie. 64. 61. The citie of Stokholme.

This is the chiefe mart towne of *Suecia*, and is strongly defended by art and nature. It is situate in marysches, after the maner of Uenice: and was therfore called *Stokholme*, forasmuch as beyng placed in the water, the fundation is fortified with stockes or piles. The sea entreth into it with two armes or hyanches, of such largenesse and depth, that shyps of great burden and with maine sayles may enter by the same with theyr ful fraight. This suffered of late yeeres greeuous spoile and destruction, to the singular exemple of cruel hostilitie: and such, as the lyke hath not been lyghtly shewed to any other citie, receiued by league and composion. In al the tract from *Stokholme* to the lake aboue the ryuer of *Dalekarle*, whiche is in the degree. 56 30. 63. 50. are mountaynes fruiteful of good syluer, copper, and lead. They get great ryches by the salmons and plentie of other fyshes whiche they take in certayne great lakes. Golde in colde regions. Fyshe.

The duke dome of Agermannia occupieth the noryth syde to the confines of *Laponia*. This tract is ful of wods, in the which they hunt the beastes called *Vros* or *Bisontes*, which in theyr tongue they call *Elg*, (that is) wylde Asses. These are of such heyght, that the hygheste part of theyr backes are equal with the measure of a man, holdyng vp his armes as hygh as he may reach. &c. *Vpsalia* the chiefe citie. 62. 62. 30. here is buryed the body of saint *Henricus* kyng and martyr. The beaste called Vros or Elg. Vpsalia.

Copperdalia (that is) the copper valley, is a Dukedome Copperdalia.

south-

ſouthwarde from the Dukedom of *Iemptia*. Under this, is the valyant nation of the people called *Dalekarly*.

Oplandia. *Oplandia*, is a Dukedome and the nauil or myddeſt of *Scondia*.

The citie of *Pircho*, on the North ſyde of the lake of *Meler*, was once a great citie, and able to arme .xiiii. thouſande men to the warres: but is nowe brought to a byllage.

All the tracte of *Oplandia*, hath mynes of Syluer, Copper, and Steele.

Of the Ilandes and rockes that lye about *Suecia*, the myddeſt is. 67. 30. 61. 30.

Byrdes. Theſe were called of the olde writers Done, the reaſon of which name remayneth vnto this daye: For there are in theſe innumerable multitudes of byrdes, inſomuch that thinhabitaunces of the next coaſt, ſayle thyther in the moneth of May, whyle the byrdes ſyt on theyr egges: which they ſteale, and reſerue them in ſalte for a long tyme.

Egges reſerued in ſalte.

Bothnia.

Bothnia is ſo named of the pretious furres of all ſortes that are caryed from thence into forraigne regions: For by theſe and theyr fyſhyng, they haue great commoditie. Salmons of the beſt ſort are taken in theſe ſeas, & are great riches among theſe nations. *Bothnia* is diuided into two partes, as *Northbothnia*, & South *Bothnia*, called *Oſtrobothhia*. *Northbothnia*, is termined with the South ende of the *Lapones*, vnto the ende. 78. 30. 69

Pretious furres.

Fyſhe.

Towarde the Eaſt, it is termined with this ende, and vnto the degree. 78. 30. 68. 20.

Towarde the Weſt, with the line terminyng the Eaſt ſyde of *Suecia*. And towarde the South, with the reſidue of the gulfe of *Suecia*, from thende that hath degrees. 63. 69.

Oſtrobothnia, towarde the Eaſt is termined from the ſayde ende of the moſt Eaſt coaſt. And towarde the South, with a line extended by the mountaynes from this ende vnto the degree. 71 66

Towarde the North and Weſt, with part of the gulfe of *Suecia*, &c.

Gothia

Gothia or Gothlande.

Gothia is by interpretation good. For the holy name of God, is in the Germane tongue *Goth* (that is) Good. At what tyme the *Gothes* vpon a generall consent sent foorth theyr offspring or sucession to seeke new seates or countreys to inhabite, and when they possessed the coastes of *Meotis* and *Asia*, none of the olde wryters haue made mention as farre as I know. But they haue been knowen since the tyme that the *Romanes* dilated theyr Empire by *Illirium* (now called *Slauonie*) vnto the ryuer of *Danubius*, and were also famous from the time of *Cesar Dictator*, and *Octauianus Augustus*, by reason of their great warres at *Danubius*, being the vtermost bound of Thempire. Neuertheleſſe, in that renowme what *Gothia* was, vnder what part of heauen it was scituate, or of whom the *Gothes* tooke their original, it hath been vnknowen almost to this age. This is termined toward the North, with the South ende of *Suetia*, and towarde the West, with the other mountaynes of *Norway*, whiche continue from the bounde of *Suetia*, to the mouthes of the ryuers of *Trolheta*. &c.

Thinuasions of the Gothes.

The warre of the gothes against the Romanes.

The bounde of gothland.

It hath many goodly Townes, Cities, Castles, Mines. &c. The citie of *Visba*, being in the degree. 61. 30. 54. 15. was an ancient and famous mart Towne, as is *Genua* in *Italie* at this day: but afterward being afflicted by ỹ incursions of the pirates of the *Danes* and *Moscouites*, it was left desolate. There remayne to this day certayne ruines, whiche testifie the auncient nobilitie. In this place were the firſte stations of the *Gothes* that possessed *Meotis*. It is at this day of fruiteful soyle, and famous by many goodly and strong Castles & Monasteries. There is (among other) a Monasterie of the order of Saint Benedict, in the whiche is a librarie of about two thousande bookes of old auctors.

The citie of Visba.

Danes and Moscouites.

A librarie of two thousand bookes.

About the yeere of Christe foureſcore and eyght, the *Gothes*, vnto whom resorted a great multitude of other people of these North partes of the worlde, as from *Liuonia*, *Prusia*, *Russia*, and *Tartaria*, with diuers other countreyes, making them diuers kynges and Captaynes, dyd depopulate and bring in subiection the more part of *Europe*, inuaded *Italie*, destroied *Rome*, inhabited that parte of *Italie* nowe called *Lumbardie*, and lykewyse subdued the Realmes of *Castile* and *Aragonie*. Their warres continued aboue three hundred yeeres.

The gothes inuaded Europe, and destroyed Rome.

Finland,

Finland, and Eningia.

Finlandia, is as much to ſaye as a fayre land, or fyne lande, ſo named for the fertilitie of the grounde. *Plinie* ſeemeth to call it *Finnonia*: for he ſaieth, that about the coaſtes of *Finland*, are many Ilands without names, of the which there lyeth one before *Scithia* called *Pannonia*. The gulfe called *Sinus Finnonicus*, is ſo named at this day of the land of *Finnonia*. *Finnonia* confineth with *Scithia*, and runneth without all *Tanais*, (that is to ſay) without the lymittes of *Europe* to the confines of *Aſia*. But that the name of *Einlande* ſeemeth not to agree hereunto, the cauſe is, that this place of *Plinie* is corrupted, as are many other in this aucthour. So that from the name of *Finnonia*, or *Phinnonia*, it was a lykely errour to call it *Pannonia*, forasmuche as theſe wordes doo not greatly differ in wryting and ſounde: ſo that the counterfect name was ſoone put in the place of the true name, by hym that knew *Pannonia* and read that name before, beyng alſo ignorant of *Phinnonia*.

Pannonia falſly taken for Finnonia.

Eningia had in olde tyme the tytle of a kyngdome, it is of ſuch largeneſſe, but hath now only the title of an inferiour gouernour, beyng vnder the dominion of the *Slauons*, and vſyng the ſame tongue. In religion, it obſerued the rytes of the *Greekes* of late yeeres, when it was vnder the gouernance of the *Moſcouites*: But it is at this preſent vnder the kyng of *Suecia*, & obſerueth thinſtitutions of the Occidentall churche. Spanyſhe wynes are brought thither in great plentie, which the people vſe merely and cheerefully. It is termined on the North ſide by the South lyne of *Oſtrobothnia*, and is extended by the mountaynes. Toward the Weſt, it is termined with the ſea of *Finnonia*, accordyng to this deſcription, and hath degrees. 71 66. &c.

Eningia.

Spaniſhe wines.

Of the difference of regions, and cauſes of great cities, after the deſcription of Hieronimus Cardanus. Liber. xi. *De Subtilitate*.

There is an other difference of regions cauſed of cold and heate. For ſuche as are neare vnto the poles, are vexed with to muche colde: and ſuche as are vnder the line where the Sunne is of greateſt force, are oppreſſed with heate. Suche as are in the middeſt betweene both, are neareſt vnto temperateneſſe. Vnder the pole, it is impoſſible that

that there should be populous cities, bycause the lande is barren, and the carpage or conueyaunce of fruites, victualles, and other necessaryes, is incommodious. By reason whereof, it is necessarie that the inhabitauntes of such regions lyue euer in continuall wanderyng from place to place, or els in small vyllages. Suche as inhabite temperate regions, haue meane cities, as well for that they haue more commodious conueyaunce for necessaryes, as also that they may dwel better and more safely togeather then in vyllages, by reason of fortifying their townes with walles, and exercising of artes and occupations, wherby the one may the better helpe the other. Yet that olde Rome (beyng in a temperate region) was of such incredible bygnesse, the cause was, that it obteyned the Empyre of the worlde, by reason whereof, all nations had confluence thyther, and not the greatnesse of the walles. But it is necessarie that the greatest cities be in hotte regions: fyrst, for that in such regions, part of the soile is either barren if it lacke water, or els most fruitfull if it abounde with water. And for this inequalitie, when they fynde any place meete to susteyne a multitude, it foloweth of necessitie that great cities be builded in such places, by reason of great concourse of people resortyng to the same. An other great cause is, that whereas in such regions, marchauntes come very farre to such commodious places, they passe through many desarte and perillous regions: So that it shalbe necessary for theyr better securitie, to come in great companyes, as it were great armies. And therefore whereas such a societie is once knyt togeather in a commodious place, it should bee great hynderance as well to the inhabitants as to marchauntes, if they should wander in incommodious places. And by this confluence, both of such as dwell neare to such places, and also of strangers and such as dwell farre of, it is necessary that in continuaunce of tyme, small townes become great cities, as are these: *Quinsai, Singui, Cambalu, Memphis, Cairus*, or *Alcair*, otherwyse called Babilon in Egypt. But if here any will obiecte Constantinople (in olde tyme called *Bizantium*) beyng in a temperate region, although it be not to be compared to such cities as are more then Ix. myles in circuite, yet doe we answere herevnto, that the Turkes Empyre is the cause of the greatnesse hereof, as we sayde before of Rome.

The historie written in the latine tongue by *Paulus Iouius*, byshop of *Nuceria* in Italie, of the legation or ambassade of great *Basilius* Prince of *Moscouia*, to Pope Clement the.vij.of that name: In which is conteyned the description of *Moscouia*, with the regions confinyng about the same, euen vnto the great and rych Empire of *Cathay*.

I intend first briefly to describe the situation of the region which we plainely see to haue ben litle knowen to *Strabo* & *Ptoleme*, & then to proceede in rehearsing the maners, customes, & religion of the people: and this in maner in the like simple stile and phrase of speach, as the same was declared vnto vs by *Demetrius* the Ambassadour, a man not ignorant in the latin tongue, as from his youth brought vp in *Liuonia*, where he learned the first rudiments of letters, and being growne to mans age, executed thoffice of an Ambassadour into diuers Christian prouinces. For whereas by reason of his approued faithfulnesse & industrie, he had before ben sent as Orator to the kynges of *Succia* and *Denmarke*, & the great maister of *Prussia*, hee was at the last sent to Themperour *Maximilian*, in whose court (being replenyshed with all sortes of men) while he was conuersant, if any thing of barbarous maners yet remayned in so docible & quiet a nature, the same was put away by framing him selfe to better ciuilitie.

Demetrius the ambassadour of Moscouia.

The cause of his legacie or ambassade, was giuen by *Paulus Centurio* a *Genuese*, who when he had receiued letters commendatory of pope Leo the tenth, & came to *Moscouia* for the trade of marchaundies, of his owne mynde conferred with the familiars of Duke *Basilius*, as touching the conformation of the rites of both churches. He furthermore of great magnanimitie, and in maner outragious desire, sought how by a new and incredible viage, spices might be brought from India. For while before hee had exercised the trade of marchandies in *Syria*, *Egypt*, & *Pontus*, he knewe by fame that spices myght be conueighed from the further India by the riuer *Indus*, against the course of the same, and from thence by

Paulus Centurio.

Spices brought from India to Moscouia.

The riuer Indus.

by a small vyage by land passing ouer the mountaines of *Paropanisus*, to be caried to the ryuer *Oxus* in *Bactria*, which hauing his originall almost from the same mountaynes from whence *Indus* doeth spryng, and violently carying with it many other ryuers, falleth into the sea *Hircanum* or *Caspium*, at the porte called *Straua*. And he earnestly affirmed that from *Straua*, is an easie & safe nauigation vnto the marte towne of *Citrachan* or *Astrachan*, and the mouth of the ryuer *Volga*, and from thence euer against the course of the ryuers, as *Volga*, *Occha*, and *Moscho*, vnto the citie *Moscha*, and from thence by lande to *Riga*, and into the sea of *Sarmatia*, and all the West regions. For he was vehemently, and more then of equitie, accensed and prouoked by the iniuries of the Portugales, who hauyng by force of armes subdued a great parte of India, and possessed all the marte townes, takyng wholly into theyr handes all the trade of spyces to bryng the same into Spayne, and neuertheless to sell them at a more greeuous and intollerable price to the people of Europe then euer was heard of before: And furthermore kepte the coastes of the Indian sea so straightly with continuall nauies, that those trades are thereby left of, which were before exercised by the gulfe of *Persia*, and towarde the ryuer of Euphrates, and also by the streightes of the sea of *Arabia*, and the ryuer *Nilus*, and in sint by our sea: by which trade all *Asia* and Europe was abundantly satisfied, and better cheape then hath been since the Portugales had the trade in theyr handes, with so many incommodities of such long viages, whereby the spyces are so corrupted by infection of the pompe and other filthinesse of the shyppes, that theyr naturall sauour, taste, and qualitie, as well heereby, as by theyr long reseruyng in the shoppes, sellers, and warehouses in Lusheburne, vanysheth and resolueth, so that reseruyng euer the freshest and newest, they sell only the woorst and most corrupted. But *Paulus*, although in all places he earnestly and vehemently argued of these thinges, and styred great malice and hatred agaynst the Portugales, affyrmyng that not only thereby the customes and reuenues of princes should be much greater, if that vyage might be discouered, but also that spyces myght bee better cheape bought at the handes of the *Moscouites*: yet could he nothyng auayle in this suite, forasmuche as Duke *Basilius*

Oxus or Horina, a ryuer of Asia, runneth through the desartes of Scythia.

The sea Hircanum is now called *mare* Bacucke, or *mare de Sala*.

Citrachan or Astracan.

Sarmatia is that great countrey wherin is conteyned Russia, Liuonia, and Tartaria, and the North and East parte of Polonia.

Against the Portugales.

The trade of spices in olde tyme.

Spices corrupted.

thought it not good to make open, or disclose vnto a straunger and vnknowen man, those regions which gyue enterance to the sea *Caspium*, and the kyngdomes of *Persia*. Paulus therefore excludyng all hope of further traueyle, and become nowe of a marchaunte an Ambassadour, brought *Basilius* letters (Pope *Leo* beyng now departed) to Adrian his successour, in the which he declared, with honourable and reuerende woordes, his good will and fauourable mynde towarde the Bishoppe of Rome. For a fewe yeeres before, *Basilius* (then keeppyng warres agaynst the Polones, at suche tyme as the generall counsayle was celebrate at *Laterane*) requyred by John, Kyng of Denmarke (the father of Christierne, who was of late expulsed from his kyngdome) that safe passage myght be graunted to the Ambassadours of *Moscouia*, to goe to Rome. But whereas it so chaunced, that kyng John and Pope Julius dyed both in one day, whereby he lacked a conuenient sequester or solicitour, he omitted his consultation as touchyng that legacie. After this, the warre waxed hotte betweene him and Sigismunde the kyng of *Polonie*: who obteynyng the victorie agaynst the *Moscouites* at *Boristhene*, supplications were decreed in Rome for the ouerthrowe and vanquishyng the enemyes of the Christian fayth, whiche thyng greatly elienated both kyng *Basilius* him selfe, and all that nation from the Bishoppe of Rome. But when Adrian the.vi. departed from this lyfe, and lefte Paulus now readie to his seconde byage, his successour Clement the.vii. perceyuyng that Paulus styll furiously reuolued and tossed in his vnquyet mynde that byage towarde the East, sent him agayne with letters to *Moscouia*, by the whiche with propense and friendly persuasions, hee exhorted *Basilius* to acknowledge the maiestie of the Romane churche, and to make a perpetuall league and agreement in matters of religion, which thyng should bee not only for the health of his soule, but also greatly to the increase of his honour: And further promysed, that by the holy aucthoritie of his office, he would make him a kyng, and gyue him kyngly ornamentes, if reiectyng the doctrine of the Greekes, hee would conforme himselfe to the auctoritie of the Romane churche.

The Caspian sea.

Basilius wrot to Pope Adriane.

Warre betweene the Polones and Moscouites.

The seconde byage of Paulus to Moscouia.

The Pope perswadeth Basilius to acknowledge the Romane churche.

But

But Paulus, who with moze pzosperous iourneyes then great vauntage, had from his youth traueyled a great parte of the woꝛlde, although hee were nowe aged, and soze vexed with the strangurie, came with a pzosperous and speedy iourney to Moscouia, where he was gentelly receyued of *Basilius*, and remayned in his Courte foꝛ the space of twoo monethes. But in fine, mistrustyng his owne strength, and deterred by the difficultie of so great a iourney, when he had vtterly put away all his imaginations and hope of this trade to India, returned to Rome with *Demetrius* the Ambassadour of *Basilius*, befoze we yet thought that he had been in Moscouia. The Byshoppe commaunded that *Demetrius* should bee lodged in the most magnificent and pzincely parte of the houses of *Vaticane*, the rooffes of whose edifies are gylted and embowed, and the chambers rychly furnyshed with silken beddes and cloth of Arresse: Wyllyng furthermoze that he should be honourably receyued, and vestured with silke. He also assigned *Franciscus Cheregatus*, the Byshoppe of *Aprutium* (a man that had often tymes been Ambassadour to dyuers regions) to accompany him, and shewe him the oꝛder and rytes of our religion, with the monumentes and maners of the citie. Furthermoze, when *Demetrius* had certayne dayes rested and recreated him selfe, washing away the fylth he had gathered by reason of the long viage, then apparelled with a fayze vesture, after the maner of his countrey, he was bzought to the byshops pzesence, whom he honoured kneelyng, with great humilitie and reuerence (as is the maner) and therwith pzesented vnto his holinesse certeyne furres of Sables in his owne name, and in the name of his pzince, and also delyuered the letters of *Basilius*, which they befoze, and then the Illyzian oꝛ Slauon interpzetour, *Nicolaus Siccensis*, translated into the Latine tongue, in this effecte as folowth.

Demetrius intertaynement at Rome.

Demetrius is bzought to the Popes pzesence.

Basilius letters to Pope Clement.

To Pope Clement, shepard and teacher of the Romane church, great *Basilius* by the grace of God, lord, Emperour, and dominatour of all *Russia*, and great Duke of *Volodemaria, Moscouia, Nouogradia, Plescouia, Smolenta, Ifferia, Iugoria, Periunia, Vetcha, Bolgaria*, &c. *Dominator* & great prince of *Nouogradia*, in the lower countrey: also of *Ceruigouia, Razania, Volotthia, Rzeuia, Belchia, Rostouia, Iaroslauia, Belozeria, Vdoria, Obdoria*, & *Condiuia*, &c. You sent vnto vs *Paulus Centurio*, a citizen of *Genua*, with letters, whereby you doe exhort vs to ioyne in power & counsayle with you, & other Princes of Christendome, against the enemies of the christian fayth: & that a free passage & redy way may bee opened for both your Ambassadours & ours, to come & go to & fro, whereby by mutual dutie and indeuour on both parties, we may haue knowledge of the state of thinges parteynyng to the wealth of vs both. VVe certes, as we haue hytherto happely by the ayde and helpe of almightie God constantly and earnestly resisted the cruell & wicked enemies of the christian faith, so are we determined to doe hereafter: and are likewise redy to consent with other christian princes, & to graunt free passage into our dominions. In consideration wherof, we haue sent vnto you our faithful seruant *Demetrius Erasmus*, with these our letters: & with him haue remitted *Paulus Centurio*, desiring you also shortly to dismisse *Demetrius*, with safegard and indemnitie vnto the borders of our dominions. And we will likewise do the same, if you send your Ambassadour with *Demetrius*, whereby both by communication and letters, we may be better certified of thorder and administration of such things as you require: so that being aduertised of the mindes and intent of all other christian princes, we may also consult what is best to be done herein. Thus fare ye wel. Giuen in our dominiō in our citie of *Moscouia*, in the yeere from the creation of the world. vii. thousand and. 300. the third day of Aprill.

But *Demetrius*, as he is experte in diuine and humane thinges, and especially of holy scripture, seemed to haue secrete commaundement of greater matters, whiche we thinke he will shortly declare to the senate in priuate consultations. For he is now deliue-

red

red of the feuer, into the which he fell by change of ayre, and hath so recouered his strength & natiue colour, that being a man of lx. yeeres of age, he was not only present at the Popes masse, celebrated with great solemnitie in the honour of S. *Cosmus & Damian*, but came also into the Senate, at such tyme as Cardinal *Campegius*, commyng first from the legacie of *Pannonia*, was receiued of the Pope & all the nobilitie of the court: And furthermore also viewed the Temples of the holy citie, with the ruines of the Romane magnificence, and with woondring eyes beheld the lamentable decay of the auncient buildinges. So that we thinke that shortly after he hath declared his message, he shal return to *Moscouia*, with the byshop of *Scarense* the Popes legate, not vnrecompensed with iust rewardes at the handes of his holinesse.

Cardinall. Campegius.

The ruynes of Rome.

The name of the *Moscouites* is nowe newe, although the Poete Lucane maketh mention of the *Moschos* confynyng with the *Sarmatians*: and Plinie also placeth the *Moschos* at the sprynges of the great ryuer of *Phasis*, in the region of *Colchos*, aboue the sea *Euxinus*, towarde the East. Theyr region hath very large boundes, and is extended from the Aultars of great Alexander about the sprynges of *Tanais*, to the extreme landes and North Ocean, in maner vnder the North starres, called charles wayne, or the great Beare, beyng for the most parte playne, & of fruitfull pasture, but in sommer in many places full of marishes. For whereas all that lande is replenyshed with many and great ryuers, which are greatly increased by the wynter, snowe, and Isse, resolued by the heate of the sunne, the playnes and fieldes are thereby ouerflowen with marishes, and all iourneys incombred with continuall waters and myrie slabbynesse, vntyll by the benefite of the newe wynter the ryuers and marishes be frosen agayne, and giue safe passage to the sleades that are accustomed to iourney by the same. The wood or forest of *Hercynia* (and not *Hyrcania*, as is red in some false copies) occupyeth a great parte of *Moscouia*, and is heere and there inhabited, with houses builded therein, and so made thinner by the long labour of men, that it doeth not now shewe that horrour of thicke & impenetrable woods and landes, as many thinke it to haue. But beyng replenished with many wylde beastes, is so far extended thyrough *Moscouia*, with a continuall tract betweene

The descriptiō of Moscouia.

The Aultars of great Alexander.

Marishes in sommer.

The forest of Hercynia.

Wylde beastes.

The Scythian Ocean.

the East and the North, towarde the Scythian Ocean, that by the infinite greatnesse thereof, it hath deluded the hope of suche as haue curiously searched the ende of the same. In that parte that reacheth towarde *Prussia*, are founde the great and fierce beastes called *Vri*, or *Bisontes*, of the kynde of Bulles: Also, *Alces* lyke vnto Hartes, which the *Moscouites* call *Lozzi*, and are called of the Germaynes Helenes.

The beastes called Vri, or Bisontes.

Helenes.

Of the Scythians and Tartars.

On the East syde of Moscouia are the Scythians, which are at this day called *Tartars*, a wandyng nation, and at all ages famous in warres. In the stead of houses they vse wagons, couered with beastes hydes, whereby they were in olde tyme called *Amaxouii*. For cities and townes, they vse great tentes and pauilions, not defended with trenches or walles of tymber or stone, but inclosed with an innumerable multitude of archers on horsbacke. The *Tartars* are diuided by companyes, which they call *Hordas*, which worde in theyr tongue signifieth a consentyng company of people, geathered together in forme of a citie. Euery *Horda* is gouerned by an Emperour, whom eyther his parentage or warlyke prowes hath promoted to that dignitie. For they oftentimes keepe warre with theyr borderers, and contende ambitiously and fiercely for dominion. It doeth hereby appeare, that they consist of innumerable *Hordas*, in that the *Tartars* possesse the most large desartes, euen vnto the famous citie of *Cathay*, in the furdest Ocean in the East. They also that are neareste to the *Moscouites*, are knowen by theyr trade of marchaundies, and often incursions. In Europe, neare vnto the place called *Dromon Achillis*, in *Taurica Chersoneso*, are the *Tartars* called *Precopites*, the daughter of whose prince, *Selymus* the Emperour of the Turkes tooke to wyfe. These are most infest to the *Polones*, and waste the regions on euery syde, betweene the ryuers of *Boristhenes* and *Tanais*. They that in the same *Taurica* possesse *Caffam*, a colonie of the *Ligurians* (called in olde tyme *Theodosia*) doe both in religion and all other thinges agree with the Turkes. But the *Tartars* that inhabite the regions of *Asia*, betweene *Tanais* and *Volga*, are subiect to *Basilius* the kyng of the *Moscouites*, and choose them a gouernour at his assignement. Among these, the *Cremii* afflicted with ciuile seditions, where as heeretofore they were ryche and of great power, haue of late yeeres lost theyr domi-

Horda.

The large dominion of the Tartars.

Cathay.

The Tartars of Europe.

The Tartars of Asia are subiecte to the Duke of Moscouia.

dominion and dignitie. The *Tartars* that are beyonde the riuer of *Volga*, do religiously obserue the frendshyp of the *Moscouites*, and professe them selues to be theyr subiectes. Beyond the *Cassanites*, towarde the North, are the *Sciambani*, rych in heardes of cattaylle, and consistyng of a great multitude of men. After these, are *Nogai*, whiche obteyne at this day the chiefe fame of ryches and warly affayres. Theyr *Horda*, although it be most ample, yet hath it no Emperour, but is gouerned by the wysedome and vertue of the most auncient & valiant men, after the maner of the common wealth of Uenece. Beyonde the *Nogais*, somewhat towarde the South & the *Caspian* sea, the noblest nation of the *Tartars*, called *Zagathai*, inhabite townes buylded of stone, and haue an exceedyng great and fayre citie, called *Samarcanda*, whiche *Iaxartes*, the great ryuer of *Sogdiana*, runneth thyough, and passyng from thence about a hundred myles, falleth into the *Caspian* sea. With these people in our dayes, *Ismael* the *Sophi* and kyng of *Persia*, hath oftentymes kepte warre, with doubtfull successe. Insomuche that fearyng the greatnesse of theyr power, whiche he resysted with all that he myght, he lefte *Armenia* and *Tauristum* the chiefe citie of the kyngdome, for a praye to *Selimus* the victourer of one wyng of the battayle. From the citie of *Samarcanda*, descended *Tamburlanes* the myghty Emperour of the *Tartars*, whom some call *Tanberlanis*: But *Demetrius* sayth that he shoulde be called *Themircuthlu*. This is he that about the yeere of Christ M. CCC. xcviii. subdued almost all the Easte partes of the woylde: And lastly, with an innumerable multitude of men, inuaded the Turkes dominions, with whom *Baiasetes Ottomanus* theyr kyng, (and father to the great grandfather of this *Solyman* that nowe lyueth) meetyng at *Ancira* in the confines or marches of *Galatia* and *Bythinia*, gaue hym a sore battayle, in the whiche fell on the Turkes part. 20000. men, and *Baiasetes* hym selfe was taken prisoner, whom *Tamburlanes* caused to be locked in an Iron cage, and so caryed hym about with hym thyough all *Asia*, which he also conquered with a terryble army. He conquered all the landes betwene *Tanais* and *Nilus*, and in fine vanquished in battayle the great *Soltane* of Egypte, whom he chased beyonde *Nilus*, and tooke also the citie of *Damascus*.

The Tartars beyonde the riuer of Volga.

Nogai. Sigismundus calleth them Nogapsri.

The noblest nation of the Tartars.

The ryuer Iaxartes.

Ismael the Sophi kyng of Persia.

The citie of Samarcanda.

Tamburlanes, the myghtie Emperour of the Tartars.

The conquestes of Tamburlanes.

Baiasetes.

From

This apparell they haue of the Persians.

From the region of these *Tartars* called *Zagathei*, is brought great plentie of sylken apparell to the *Moscouites*. But the *Tartares* that inhabite the mydlande or inner regions, bryng none other wares then trucks or droues of swift runnyng horses, and clokes made of whyte feltes: also hales or tentes, to withstande the iniuries of colde and rayne. These they make very artificially, & apt for the purpose. They receiue againe of the *Moscouites*, coates of cloth, and Syluer monie, conteynyng all other bodyly ornamentes, and the furnyture of superfluous houshold stuffe. For beyng defended agaynst the violence of weather and tempestes, onely with such apparel and couerture whereof we haue spoken, they trust onely to theyr arrowes, which they shoote aswell backwarde flying, as when they assayle theyr enimies face to face: Albeit, when they determined to inuade Europe, theyr princes and captaynes had helmets, coates of fence, and hooked swoordes, whiche they bought of the *Persians*. Toward the South, the boundes of *Moscouia* are termined by the same *Tartars* whiche possesse the playne regions neere vnto the *Caspian* sea, aboue the marysshes of *Meotis* in *Asia*, and about the ryuers of *Boristhenes* and *Tanais* in part of Europe. The people called *Roxolani*, *Gete*, and *Bastarne*, inhabited these regions in olde tyme, of whom I thynke the name of *Russia* tooke originall. For they call part of *Lituania*, *Russia* the lower, whereas *Moscouia* it selfe is called whyte *Russia*. *Lituania* therefore, lyeth on the Northwest syde of *Moscouia*. But toward the full West, the mayne landes of *Prussia* and *Liuonia* are ioyned to the confines or marches of *Moscouia*, wher the *Sarmatian* sea breakyng foorth of the streightes of *Cimbrica Chersonesus* (nowe called Denmarke) is bended with a crooked gulfe towarde the North. But in the furthest bankes of that Ocean, where the large kyngdomes of Norway and *Suecia* are ioyned to the continent, and almost enuironed with the sea, are the people called *Lapones*: a nation exceedyng rude, suspitious, and fearefull, flying and astonyshed at the syght of all straungers and shyppes. They knowe neyther fruites nor apples, nor yet any benignitie eyther of heauen or earth. They prouide them meate onely with shootyng, and are appareled with skynnes of wylde beastes. They dwell in caues fylled with drye leaues, and in holowe

The Tartars traffycke with the Moscouites.

The Tartars of the South syde of Moscouia.

Gete and Roxolani.

Russia.

Moscouia called whyte Russia.

Lituania.

Prussia.

Liuonia.

Denmarke.

Norway.

Suecia.

The people of Lapponia.

holow trees, consumed within eyther by fyre, or rotten for age. Such as dwell neare the sea syde, fyshe more luckelye then cunnyngly, and in the stead of fruites, reserue in store fyshes dryed with smoke. They are of small stature of bodie, with flat vilagies, pale and wannie coloure, and very swyft of foote. Theyr wyttes or dispositions, are not knowen to the *Moscouites* theyr borderers, who thynke it therefore a madnesse to assayle them with a smal power, and iudge it neyther profitable nor glorious, with great armies to inuade a poore & beggerly nation. They exchange the most white furres, which we cal *Armelines*, for other wares, of diuers sortes: Yet so, that they flye the syght and companie of all merchantes. For comparyng and laying theyr wares togeather, and leauyng theyr furres in a mydde place, they bargayne with simple fayth, with absent and vnknowen men. Some men of great credite and authoritie, do testifie that in a region beyond the *Lapones*, betwene the West and the North, oppressed with perpetuall darknesse, is the nation of the people called *Pigmei*, who being growen to theyr ful grought, do scarcely excede the stature of our chyldren of ten yeeres of age. It is a fearefull kynde of men, and expresse theyr wordes in suche chatteryng sort, that they seeme to be so muche the more lyke vnto Apes, in howe muche they differ in sense and stature from men of iust heyght.

Armeline furres.

Bargaynyng without wordes.

The dark region by this dark region and pigmei, is the way to Cathay by the North sea.

Toward the North, innumerable people are subiect to the Empire of the *Moscouites*. Theyr regions extend to the *Scythian Ocean* for the space of almost three monethes iorney.

The Scythian Ocean.

Next vnto *Moscouia*, is the region of *Colmogora*, abounding with fruites. Through this runneth the ryuer of *Diuidna*, beyng one of the greatest that is knowen in the North partes, and gaue the name to an other lesse ryuer, which breaketh foorth into the sea *Baltheum*. This encrealyng at certayne tymes of the yeere, as dooth the ryuer *Nilus*, ouerfloweth the feeldes and playnes, and with his fatte and nourishyng moysture, doth marueylously resist the iniuries of heauen, and the sharp blastes of the North wynde. When it riseth by reason of molten snow, and great showres of rayne, it falleth into the *Ocean* by vnknowen nations, and with so large a Trenche, lyke vnto a great sea, that it can not be sayled ouer

The region of Colmogora. The ryuer of Diuidna.

in

in one day with a prosperous wynde. But when the waters are fallen, they leaue here and there large and fruitfull Ilands: For corne there cast on the grounde, groweth without anye helpe of the Plowe, and with meruaylous celeritie of hasting nature, fearyng the newe iniurie of the proude ryuer, doth both spryng and ryppe in short space.

The ryuer of Juga or Jug. Vstiuga.

Into the riuer *Diuidna*, runneth the ryuer *Iuga*: and in the corner where they ioyne togeather, is the famous Marte Towne called *Vstiuga*, distant from the cheefe citie *Mosca*, vi. hundred myles.

The riuer of Diuidna or Duina.

Note that whereas *Paulus Iouius* wryteth here that the ryuer of *Diuidna*, otherwyse called *Duina*, runneth through the region of *Colmogor*, it is to bee vnderstood that there are two ryuers of that name, the one on the Northeast side of *Moscouia*, toward the frosen sea, & the other on the Southwest syde, falling into the sea *Baltheum*, or the gulfe of *Finnonia*, by the citie of *Riga* in *Liuonia*. And forasmuche as the true knowledge of these and certayne other is very necessarie for all such as shal trade into *Moscouia*, or other regions in those coastes by the North sea, I haue thought good to make further declaration hereof, as I haue founde in the historie of *Moscouia*, most faythfully and largly wrytten by *Sigismundus Liberus*, who was twyse sent Embassadour into *Moscouia*, as fyrst by *Maximilian* the Emperour, and then agayne by *Ferdinando* kyng of *Hungarie* and *Boheme*. This haue I done the rather, for that in al the mappes that I haue seene of *Moscouia*, there is no mention made of the riuer of *Duina*, that runneth through the region of *Colmogor*, and by the citie of the same name, although the prouince of *Duina*, be in all cardes placed Northwarde from the ryuer of *Vstiug* or *Succana*, which is the same *Duina*, wherof we now speake, and whereof *Paulus Iouius* wryteth, although it be not so named but from the angle or corner, where ioynyng with the ryuer of *Iug* and *Succana*, it runneth Northwarde towards the citie of *Colmogor*: and from thence falleth into the North or frosen sea, as shall hereafter more playnely appeare by the wordes of *Sigismundus*, that the one of these be not taken for the other, beyng so farre distant, that great errour myght ensue by mistaking the same, especially because this whereof *Paulus Iouius* writeth, is not by name expressed in the cardes, but only in the other, wherby the errour myght be the greater. Of that therfore that runneth by the confines of *Liuonia*, and the citie of *Riga*, *Sigismundus* writeth in this maner.

The riuer of Suchana.

The frosen sea.

The Lake of *Duina*, is distant from the springes of *Boristhenes*, almost ten myles, and as many from the marishe of *Fronouuo*. From it a ryuer of the same name towarde the West, distant from *Vuilna* twentie myles, runneth from thence toward the North, where by *Riga*, the cheefe citie of *Liuonia*, it falleth into the *Germane* sea, whiche the *Moscouites* call *Vuareczkoie morie*. It runneth by *Vuitepso*, *Polotzo*, and *Dunenburg*, and not by *Plescouia*, as one hath wrytten. This riuer, beyng for the moste part nauigable, the *Liuons* call *Duna*.

Of the other *Duina*, whereof *Poulus Iouious* speaketh, he wrytteth as foloweth.

The

The prouince of *Duina* and the ryuer of the same name, is so named from the place where the ryuers of *Suchana* and *Iug* meetyng togeather, make one ryuer so called. For *Duina* in the *Moscouites* tongue, signifieth two. This ryuer by the space of two hundred myles, entreth into the North Ocean, on that part where the sayde sea runneth by the coastes of *Suecia* and Norway, and divideth Engreonland from the vnknowen lande. This prouince situate in the full North, perteyned in tyme past to the seignorie of *Nouogorode*. From *Moscouia* to the mouthes of *Duina*, are numbred. CCC. myles: Albeit as I haue sayde, in the regions that are beyonde *Volga*, the accompt of the iourney can not be wel obserued, by reason of many maryshes, ryuers, and very great woodes that lye in the way. Yet are we led by coniecture to thynke it to be scarsely two hundred myles: forasmuch as from *Moscouia* to *Vuolochda*, from *Vuolochda* to *Vstiug* somewhat into the East, and laste of al, from *Vstiug* by the ryuer *Duina*, is the ryght passage to the North sea. This region, besyde the Castel of *Colmogor* and the citie of *Duina*, situate almost in the mydde way betwene the spryngs and mouthes of the ryuer, and the Castell of *Pienega* standyng in the very mouthes of *Duina*, is vtterly without townes and Castels: Yet hath it many vyllages which are farre in sunder, by reason of the barennesse of the soyle. &c.

Vnina and Suchana.

Greonlande or Engreonland.

Vnderstande myles of Germany, that is leagues.

In an other place he wryteth, that *Suchana* and *Iug*, after they are ioyned togeather in one, loose theyr fyrst names, and make the ryuer *Duina*. &c. But let vs nowe returne to the hystorie of *Paulus Iouius*.

Unto *Vstiuga*, from the *Permians*, *Pecerrians*, *Inugrians*, *Vgolicans*, and *Pinnegians*, people inhabytyng the North and Northest prouinces, are brought the precious furres of Marterns and Sables, also the cases of Woulfes and Foxes both whyte and blacke: And lykewyse the skynnes of the beastes called *Ceruarij Lupi* (that is) harte Woolfes, beyng engendred eyther of a Woolfe and a Hynde, or a Hart and a bitch Woolfe. These furres and skynnes, they exchaunge for dyuers other wares, The best kynde of Sables, and of the finest heare, wherewith nowe the vestures of princes are lyned, and the tender neckes of delicate dames are couered, with the expresse similitude of the lyuyng beast, are brought by the *Permians* and *Pecerrians*, whiche they them selues also receyue at the handes of other that inhabite the regions neere vnto the North Ocean. The *Permians* and *Pecerrians*, a litle before our tyme, dyd sacrifice to Idols, after the maner of the Gentyles: but do nowe acknowledge Christe theyr God. The passage to the *Inugrians*, and *Vgolicans*, is by certayne rough mountaynes, whiche perhappes are they that in olde tyme were called *Hyperborei*.

Furrs.

Lupi Ceruarij.

Sables.

The mountaynes called Hyperborei.

Hiperborei . In the toppes of these, are founde the best kyndes of *Falcons* : whereof one kynde (called *Herodium*) is white, with spotted fethers.

Haukes of diuers kyndes.

There are also Jerfalcons, Sakers, and Peregrines, whiche were vnknowen to the ancient prynces in theyr excessiue and nise pleasures.

Beyonde those people whom I last named (beyng all tributaries to the kynges of *Moscouia*) are other nations, the last of men, not knowen by any voyages of the *Moscouites*, forasmuche as none of them haue passed to the Ocean, and are therefore knowen onely by the fabulous narrations of marchauntes. Yet it is apparante that the ryuer *Duidna* or *Duina*, draweyng with it innumerable other ryuers, runneth with a vehement course towarde the North, and that the sea is there exceedyng large: so that sayling by the coaste of the ryght hande, shyppes may haue passage from thence to *Cathay*, as it is thought by most lykely coniecture, except there lye some lande in the way . For the region of *Cathay* pertayneth to thextreme and furthest partes of the Easte, situate almost in the parallel of Thracia, and knowen to the Portugales in India when they sayled neere thereunto by the regions of *Sinara* and *Malacha* to *Aurea Chersonesus*, and brought from thence certayne vestures made of Sables skynnes, by whiche onely argument it is apparente that the citie of *Cathay* is not farre from the coastes of *Scithia*.

The passage from Moscouia to Cathay.

Cathay.

Maister Eliot calleth Cathay the region of Sinarum.

But when Demetrius was demaunded whether eyther by the monuments of letters, or by fame lefte them of theyr predicessours, they had any knowledge of the *Gothes*, who nowe more then a thousande yeeres since, subuerted Thempire of the Romane Emperours, and defaced the citie of Rome: He answered, that both the nation of the *Gothes* of the name of king *Totilas* theyr chiefe captayne, was of famous memorie among them: And that dyuers nations of the North regions conspired to that expedition, and especially the *Moscouites*: Also that that armie increased of the confluence of the Barbarous *Liuons* and wandryng *Tartars* : But that they were all called *Gothes*, forasmuche as the *Gothes* that inhabited *Scondania* and *Iselande*, were the auctours of that inuasion.

The Gothes subuerted the romane Empire.

The north region conspired against the Romans.

Moscouia.

And

And with these boundes are the *Moscouites* inclosed on euery syde, whom we thynke to be those people that *Ptolome* called *Modocas*: but haue doubtlesse at this day theyr name of the ryuer *Mosco*, which runneth through the cheefe citie *Mosca*, named also after the same. This is the most famous citie in *Moscouia*, aswell for the situation thereof, beyng in maner in the myddest of the region, as also for the commodious opportunitie of riuers, multitude of houses, and strong fence of so fayre and goodly a Castell. For the citie is extended with a long tract of buildynges by the bankes of the ryuer for the space of fyue myles. The houses are made all of tymber, and are diuided into Parlours, Chambers, and Kytchyns, of large roomes: yet neyther of vnseemely heyght, or to lowe, but of decent measure and proportion. For they haue great trees apt for the purpose brought from the forest of *Hercinia*: Of the which, made perfectly round lyke ỳ masses of shyps, and so layd one vpon an other, that they ioyne at the endes in vpright angles, where beyng made very fast and sure, they frame theyr houses therof, of meruaylous strength with smal charges, and in very short tyme. In maner all the houses haue priuate gardens, aswel for pleasure as commoditie of hearbes, wherby the circuite of the dispersed citie appeareth very great. All the warues or quarters of the citie, haue their peculiar Chappels. But in the cheefest and highest place therof, is the Church of our Lady, of ample and goodly workemanshyppe. whiche *Aristoteles* of *Bononie*, a man of singular knowledge and experience in Architecture, builded more then threescore yeeres since. At the very head of the citie, a litle ryuer, called *Neglinia* which ryseth many some myles, entereth into the ryuer *Moscus*, and maketh almost an Ilande, in whose end is the Castel, with many strong towers and bulwarkes, builded very fayre by the deuice of Italian Architectors that are the maisters of the kynges woorkes. In the fieldes about the citie, is an incredible multitude of Hares, and Roe Buckes, the which, it is lawful for no man to chase or pursue with dogges or nettes, except only certayne of the kyngs familiars, and straunge Ambassadours, to whom he geueth licence by special commaundement. Almost three partes of the citie is inuironed with two riuers, and the residue with a large Mote, that receiueth plentie of water from the

The citie of Mosca.

Richard Chaunceler told me that these masts are smoothollow on the one syde, & that the whole syde of the next entereth into ỳ same, whereby they lye very close.

The castel of Mosca.

White Hares and Roe buskes.

ſayde ryuers. The citie is alſo defended on the other ſyde with an other ryuer named *Iauſa*, whiche falleth alſo into *Moſcus* a litle beneath the citie. Furthermoꝛe, *Moſcus* runnyng towards the South, falleth into the riuer *Ocha* oꝛ *Occa*, muche greater then it ſelfe at the towne *Columna*: and not very farre from thence, *Ocha* it ſelfe, encreaſed with other ryuers, vnladeth his ſtreames in the famous ryuer *Volga*, where at the place where they ioyne, is ſituate the citie of *Nouogradia* the leſſe, ſo named in reſpect of the greater citie of that name, from whence was bꝛought the fyꝛſt colonie of the leſſe citie. *Volga*, called in olde tyme *Rha*, hath his oꝛiginall of the great mariſhes, named the Whyte Lakes. Theſe are aboue *Moſcouia*, betweene the Noꝛth and the Weſt, and ſend fooꝛth from them almoſt all the ryuers that are diſperſed into diuers regions on euery ſyde, as we ſee of the Alpes, from whoſe toppes and ſpꝛynges deſcend the waters, of whoſe concourſe the ryuers of *Rhene*, *Po*, and *Rodanum*, haue theyꝛ encreaſe. Foꝛ theſe maryſhes, in the ſteade of mountaines full of ſpꝛynges, miniſter abundant moyſture, foꝛaſmuche as no mountaynes are yet founde in that region by the long trauayles of men, inſomuche that many that haue been ſtudious of the old Coſmographie, ſuppoſe the *Riphean* and *Hiperborean*, mountaines ſo often mentioned of the auncient wꝛyters, to be fabulous. From theſe maryſhes therfoꝛe, the riuers of *Duina*, *Ocha*, *Moſcus*, *Volga*, *Tanais*, and *Boriſthenes*, haue theyꝛ oꝛyginall. The *Tartares* call *Volga Edel*: *Tanais* they call *Don*: And *Boriſthenes*, is at this tyme called *Neper*. This, a litle beneath *Taurica*, runneth into the ſea *Euxinus*. *Tanais* is receyued of the maryſhes of *Meotis* at the noble Marte Towne *Azoum*. But *Volga*, leauyng the citie of *Moſca* towardes the South, and runnyng with a large circuite, and great Wyndynges, and Creekes fyꝛſt towardes the Eaſt, then to the Weſt, and laſtlye to the South, falleth with a full ſtreame into the *Caſpian* oꝛ *Hircan* ſea. Aboue the mouth of this, is a citie of the *Tartars* called *Citrachan*, whiche ſome call *Aſtrachan*, where Wares are kept by the Merchauntes of *Media*, *Armenia*, and *Perſia*. On the further bancke of *Volga*, there is a towne of the *Tartars* called *Caſan*, of the whiche the *Horda* of the *Caſanite Tartars* tooke theyꝛ name. It is diſtant from the mouth of *Volga*

The ryuer Ocha.

Volga. Nouogradia.

Rha.

The white Lakes.

The Riphean & Hiperborean mountaynes.

Tanais and Boꝛyſthenes.

The ſea Euxinus.

The Caſpian ſea.
Aſtrachan.
Media.
Armenia.
Perſia.

Caſan.

and

and the *Caſpian* ſea.500.myles. Aboue *Caſan*.150.myles, at the entraunce of the ryuer *Sura*, *Baſilius* that now reigneth, buylded a towne called *Surcium*, to thintent that in thoſe deſartes, the marchantes and traueylers which certifie the gouernours of the marches of the doinges of the *Tartars*, and the maners of that vnquiet nation, may haue a ſafe manſion among theyr cuſtomers.

Sura.
Surcium.

The Emperours of *Moſcouia* at dyuers tymes, eyther moued thereto by occaſion of thinges preſent, or for the deſyre they had to nobilitate newe and obſcure places, haue kepte the ſeat of theyr court and Empyre in dyuers cities. For *Nouogrodia*, which lyeth toward the Weſt, and the *Lyuon* ſea, not many yeeres paſt, was the head citie of *Moſcouia*, and obteyned euer the chiefe dignitie, by reaſon of the incredible number of houſes and edifies, with the opportunitie of the large lake replenyſhed with fyſhe, and alſo for the fame of the moſt auncient & venerable Temple, which more then foure hundred yeeres ſince, was dedicated to *Sancta Sophia*, Chriſt the ſonne of God, accordyng to the cuſtome of the Emperours of *Bizantium*, nowe called Conſtantinople. *Nouogrodia*, is oppreſſed in maner with continuall wynter, and darkeneſſe of long nyghtes. For it hath the pole Artike eleuate aboue the Horizon threeſcore and foure degrees: and is further from the Equinoctiall then *Moſcouia*, by almoſt ſix degrees. By which dyfference of heauen, it is ſayde, that at the ſommer ſteye of the Sunne, it is burnt with continuall heate, by reaſon of the ſhorte nyghtes.

Nonogrodia.

The Temple of Sancta Sophia.

The elenation of the pole at Nouogrodia, & Moſcouia. Heate by reaſon of ſhorte nyghtes.

The citie alſo of *Volodemaria*, beyng more then twoo hundred myles diſtant from *Moſca* towarde the Eaſte, had the name of the chiefe citie and kynges towne, whyther the ſeate of the Empyre was tranſlated by the valiaunt Emperours for neceſſarie conſiderations, that ſuche ayde, furniture, and requiſites, as appertayne to the warres, myght be neare at hande, at ſuche tyme as they keepe continuall warre agaynſt the *Tartars* theyr borderers. For it is ſituate without *Volga*, on the bankes of the ryuer *Cleſma*, whiche falleth into *Volga*. But *Moſcha*, aſwell for thoſe gyftes and commodities whereof we haue ſpoken, as alſo that it is ſituate in the myddeſt of the moſt frequented place of all the region and Empyre, and defended with the ryuer and Caſtell, hath in compa-

The citie of Volodemaria.

The citie of Moſcha.

ryson to other cities been thought most wooꝛthie to be esteemed foꝛ the chiefe. *Moscha* is distant from *Nouogrodia* fyue hundꝛed myles: and almost in the myd way is the citie of *Ottoferia* (otherwyse called *Otwer*, oꝛ *Tuwer*) vppon the ryuer of *Volga*. This ryuer, neare vnto the fountaynes and spꝛynges of the same, not yet increased by receyuyng so many other ryuers, runneth but slowly and gentelly, and passeth from thence to *Nouogrodia*, thꝛough many woods and desolate playnes. Furthermoꝛe from *Nouogrodia* to *Riga*, the nexte poꝛte of the *Sarmatian* sea, is the iourney of a thousande myles, litle moꝛe oꝛ lesse. This tract is thought to be moꝛe commodious then the other, bycause it hath many townes, and the citie of *Plescouia* in the way, beyng imbꝛased with two ryuers. From *Riga* (perteynyng to the dominion of the great maister of the warres of the *Liuons*) to the citie of *Lubecke*, a poꝛte of Germanie, in the gulfe of *Cymbrica Chersonesus* (now called Denmarke) are numbꝛed about a thousande myles of daungerous saylyng.

Ottoferia.
Volga.
Riga.
The citie of Plescouia.
The citie of Lubecke.

From Rome to the citie of *Moscha*, the distance is knowen to bee two thousande and sixe hundꝛed myles, by the neaꝛest way, passyng by *Rauenna*, *Taruisium*, the Alpes of *Carnica*: Also *Villacum*, *Noricum*, and *Vienna* of *Pannonie*: and from thence (passyng ouer the ryuer of *Danubius*) to *Olmutium* of the *Marouians*, and to *Cracouia* the chiefe citie of *Polonie*, are compted xi. hundꝛed myles. From *Cracouia* to *Vilna*, the head citie of *Lithuania*, are compted fyue hundꝛed myles; and as many from that citie to *Smolenzko*, situate beyonde *Boristhenes*, from whence to *Moscha*, are compted sixe hundꝛed myles. The iourney from *Vilna* by *Smolenzko* to *Moscha*, is trauayled in wynter with expedite sleades, and incredible celeritie vppon the snowes, hardened with long frost, and compacte lyke Isle, by reason of muche wearyng. But in sommer, the playnes can not bee ouerpassed but by difficulte and laboꝛious trauayle. Foꝛ when the snowes by the continuall heate of the Sunne begyn to melte and dissolue, they cause great maryshes and quamyꝛes, able to intangle both hoꝛse and man, were it not that wayes are made thꝛough the same, with bꝛydges and causes of wood, and almost infinite labour.

From Rome to the citie of *Moscouia*.
Wynter trauayle by Isle and snow.
Maryshes in sommer.

In all the region of *Moscouia*, there is no bayne oꝛ mine

Other writers denye this.

of

of golde or syluer, or any other common metall, except Iron, neyther yet is there any token of precious stones : and therefore they buye all those thinges of straungers. Neuertheleſſe, this iniurie of nature is recompenſed with aboundance of rich furres, whoſe price, by the wanton nyſeneſſe of men, is growen to ſuche exceſſe, that the furres parteynyng to one ſorte of apparell, are now ſolde for a thouſande crownes. But the tyme hath been that theſe haue been bought better cheape, when the furtheſt nations of the North, being ignorant of our nyſe fineneſſe, and breathyng deſyre towarde effeminate and ſuperfluous pleaſures, exchaunged the ſame with muche ſimplicitie, oftentymes for trifles and thinges of ſmall value: Inſomuche that commonly the *Permians* and *Pecerrians*, were accuſtomed to giue ſo many ſkinnes of Sables for an Iron Axe or Hatchet, as being tyed harde togeather, the marchantes of *Moſcouia* could drawe through the hole where the hafte or handle entereth into the ſame. But the *Moſcouites* ſende into all partes of Europe the beſt kynde of flaxe to make lynnen cloth, and hempe for ropes: Alſo many Oxe hydes, and exceedyng great maſſes of waxe.

Rych furres.

The price of furres.

How many Sables ſkynnes for an Axe.

Flaxe.
Oxe hydes.
Waxe.

They proudely deny, that the Romane churche obteyneth the principate and preeminent auctoritie of all other.

But truely.

They ſo abhorre the nation of the Iewes, that they deteſt the memorie of them, and will in no condition admyt them to dwell within theyr dominions: eſteemyng them as wycked and miſchieuous people, that haue of late taught the Turkes to make gunnes. Beſide the bookes that they haue of the ancient Greeke doctours, they haue alſo the commentaries and homelies of ſaint Ambroſe, Auguſtine, Ierome, & Gregorie, tranſlated into the *Illyrian* or *Slauon* tongue, which agreeth with theyrs: For they vſe both the Slauon tongue and letters, as doe alſo the *Sclauons*, *Dalmates*, *Bohemes*, *Pollones*, and *Lithuanes*. This tongue is ſpredde further then any other at this day: For it is familiar at Conſtantinople, in the court of the Emperours of the Turks, and was of late hearde in Egypte among the *Mamalukes*, in the court of the *Soltane* of *Alcayre*, otherwyſe called *Memphis*, or Babilon in Egypt. A great number of bookes of holy ſcripture are tranſlated into this tongue by the induſtrie of Saincte Ierome and *Cyrillus*. Furthermore, beſyde the hyſtories of

They abhorre the Iewes.

Theyr bookes and religion.

The Slauon tongue ſpred further then any other.

Sainct Jerome was borne in Dalmatia, now called Sclauonia.

their owne countreys, they haue also bookes, conteyning the facts of great Alexander, and the Romane Emperours, and lykewyse of *Marcus Antonius*, & *Cleopatra*. They haue no maner of knowledge of philosophie, Astronomie, or speculatiue physicke, with other liberal sciences: But such are taken for Physitians, as professe that they haue oftentymes obserued the vertue and qualitie of some vnknowen hearbe.

Howe they number the yeeres.

They number the yeeres, not from the byrth of Christ, but from the begynnyng of the worlde. And this they begin to accompt, not from the moneth of Januarye, but from September.

Fewe and simple lawes.

They haue fewe and simple lawes throughout all the kyngdome, made by the equitie and conscience of theyr prynces, and approued by the consent of wyse and good men, and are therfore greatly for the wealth and quyetnesse of the people, forasmuche as it is not lawfull to peruerte them with any interpretations or cauillations of lawyers or Atturneys. They punysh theeues, rouers, priuie pyckers, and murtherers. When they exampne malefactours, they powre a great quantitie of cold water vpon such as they suspecte, whiche they say to be an intollerable kynde of torment. But sometymes they manacle suche as are stubborne, and will not confesse apparent crymes.

The exercise of youth.

Theyr youth is exercised in dyuers kyndes of games and playes, resemblyng the warres, whereby they both practise policie, and increase theyr strength. They vse runnyng both on horsebacke and a foote. Also runnyng at the tylt, wrestlyng, and especially shootyng. For they gyue rewardes to such as excell therein.

Shootyng.

The coportature of the Moscouites.

The *Moscouites* are vniuersally of meane stature, yet very square set, and myghtyly brawned. They haue all grey eyes, long beardes, shorte legges, and bygge bellyes. They ryde very shorte, and shoote backewarde very cunnyngly, euen as they flye. At home in theyr houses, theyr fare is rather plentifull then deyntie: For theyr tables are furnyshed for a small pryce, with all suche kyndes of meates as may bee desyred of suche as are gyuen to most excessiue gluttony. Hennes and Duckes are bought for litle syluer pence the peece. There is incredible plentie of beastes and cattayle, both great and small. The flesshe of beefe that is kylled in the myddest of

Theyr fare.

wynter,

wynter, is so concealed and frosen, that it putrifieth not for the space of two monethes. Theyr best and most delicate dyshes, are gotten by huntyng and haukyng, as with vs: For they take all sortes of wylde beastes with Houndes, and dyuers kyndes of nettes. And with Faulcons and Erens, or Eagles, of a marueylous kynde, which the region of *Pecerra* bryngeth foorth vnto them, they take not onely Fesantes and wylde Duckes, but also Cranes and wylde Swannes. They take also a foule of darke colour, about the bygnesse of a Goose, with redde ouerbrowes, whose flesh in taste passeth the pleasauntnesse of Phesauntes: These in the *Moscouites* tongue are called *Tetrao*, whiche I suppose to be the same that Plinie calleth *Erythratao*, knowen to the people of the Alpes, and especially to the Rhetians which inhabite the landes about the spryngs of the ryuer *Abdua*. The ryuer of *Volga* ministreth vnto them great fyshes, and of pleasaunt taste, especially Sturgions, or rather a kynde of fyshe lyke vnto Sturgions: which in the wynter season beyng inclosed in Isse, are long reserued freshe and vncorrupte. Of other kyndes of fyshes, they take in maner an incredible multitude in the whyte lakes whereof we haue spoken before. And whereas they vtterly lacke natyue wynes, they vse such as are brought from other places. And this only in certeyne feastes and holy mysteryes, especially the pleasaunt Maluasies of the Islande of *Creta*, now called *Candy*, are had in most honour: and vsed eyther as medicines, or for a shewe of excessiue aboundaunce, forasmuch as it is in maner a miracle that wines brought from *Candy* by the streightes of Hercules pyllers, and the Ilandes of *Gades*, and tossed with such fluddes of the inclosed Ocean, should be droonke among the Scythian snowes in theyr natiue puritie and pleasauntnesse.

Flesh preserued long, by reason of colde.

Haukyng and huntyng.

Plentie of fyshe.

Fyshe long reserued in Isse.

Wyne.

Maluasie.

All the North parte of the fyrme lande was called Scythia, and the people Scythians.

The common people drinke meade, made of hony & hoppes sodden togeather, whiche they keepe long in pitched barrelles, where the goodnesse increaseth with age. They vse also beere and ale, as doe the Germanes and Polones. They are accustomed for delicatenesse in sommer, to coole theyr beere and meade with putting Isse therein, which the noble men reserue in theyr sellars in great quantitie for the same purpose. Some there are that delight greatly in the iuise that is pressed out of Cherries before

Drynke cooled with Isse.

Wyne of Cherryes.

they be full rype, which they affyrme to haue the colour of cleare and ruddy wyne, with a very pleasaunt taste.

Theyr women.

Theyr wyues & women, are not with them in such honour as they are in other nations: for they vse them in maner in the place of seruants. The noble women & gentelwomen, do diligently obserue their walkes, and haue an eye to their chastitie. They are sildome bydden foorth to any feastes: neyther are permitted to resorte to churches farre of, or to walke abrode without some great consideration. But the common sorte of women, are easily and for a small price allured to lechery, euen of straungers: by reason whereof, the Gentlemen doe litle or nothyng esteeme them.

Thomas Paleologus.

John the father of kyng *Basilius*, dyed more then. xx. yeeres since. He maryed *Sophia*, the daughter of Thomas *Paleologus*, who reigned far in *Peloponnesus* (now called *Morea*) & was brother to Themperour of Constantinople: She was then at Rome when Thomas her father was driuen out of *Grecia* by the *Turks*.

The conquest of the Turkes in Grecia.

Of her were fiue children borne, as *Basilius* him selfe, George, *Demetrius*, *Symeon*, and *Andreas*. *Basilius* tooke to wife *Salomonia*, the daughter of George *Soborouius*, a man of singuler fidelitie & wisedome, and one of his counsayle: the excellent vertues of whiche woman, only barennesse obscured.

Howe the princes choose theyr wyues.

When the Princes of *Moscouia* deliberate to marry, their custome is to haue choyse of all the vyrgins in the realme, and to cause suche as are of most fayre and beautifull vysage and personage, with maners and vertues accordyng, to bee brought before them: Whiche afterwarde they commyt to certayne faythfull men, and graue matrones to be further viewed, insomuche that they leaue no parte of them vnsearched. Of these, shee whom the Prince most lyketh, is pronounced woorthie to bee his wyfe, not without great and carefull expectation of theyr parentes, lyuyng for that tyme betweene hope and feare. The other virgins also whiche stoode in election, and contended in beautie and integritie of maners, are oftentymes the same day, to gratifie the Prince, marryed to his noble men, Gentelmen, and Captaynes: wherby it sometymes commeth to passe, that whyle the Princes contemne the lynage of royall descent, suche as are borne of humble parentage, are exalted to the degree of princely estate, in lyke maner as the Emperours of the

Turkes

Turkes were accustomed to be chosen, by comelynesse of personage, and warly prowesse.

Basilius was vnder the age of fourtie and seuen yeeres, of comly personage, singular vertue, & princely qualities, by all meanes studious for the prosperitie & commodities of his subiectes: furthermore, in beneuolence, liberalitie, and good successe in his doinges, to be preferred before his progenitours. For when he had bi. yeeres kepte warre with the Lyuons, that moued. lxxii. confederate cities to the cause of that warre, he obteyned the victorie, & departed w few conditions of peace, rather giuen then accepted. Also at the beginning of his reigne, he put the Polones to flight, and tooke prisoner Constantine, the Captayne of the *Ruthens*, whom he brought to *Moscouia* tyed in chaynes: But shortly after, at the ryuer of *Boristhenes*, aboue the citie of *Orsa*, he him selfe was ouercome in a great battayle, by the same Constantine whom he had dismissed: Yet so, that the towne of *Smolenzko*, which the *Moscouites* possessed before, and was newe woon by the Polones, should still parteyne to the dominions of *Basilius*. But agaynst the *Tartars*, and especially the *Tartars* of Europe, called the *Precopites*, the *Moscouites* haue oftentymes kepte warre with good successe, in reuenge of the iniuryes done to them by theyr incursions.

Duke Basilius.

War betweene the Polones and Moscouites.

War betweene the Moscouites and Tartars.

Basilius is accustomed to bryng to the fielde more then a hundred and fiftie thousande horsemen, deuided into three bandes, and folowyng the banners or enlignes of theyr Captaynes in order of battayle. On the banner of the kynges wyng, is figured the Image of Iosue the Captayne of the Hebrues, at whose prayer the Sunne prolonged the day, and stayed his course, as witnesse the hystories of holy scripture. Armies of footemen are in maner to no vse in those great wyldernesses, as well for theyr apparel being loose and long, as also for the custome of theyr enemies, who in their warres trust rather to the swyftnesse of their light horses, then to trye the matter in a pyght fielde.

The Moscouites armye.

Their banner.

Theyr horses are of lesse then meane stature: but very strong and swyfte. Theyr horsemen are armed with pykes, Ryuettes, Mases of yron, and arrowes. Fewe haue hooked swoordes. Theyr bodyes are defended with rounde Targets, after the maner of the Turkes of *Asia*, or with bendyng and

Their horses and horsemen.

Theyr armure.

coynarde Targettes after the maner of the Greekes: Also with coates of mayle, Bygantines, and sharpe Helmets. *Basilius* dyd furthermoze instytute a bande of Hargabusiers on hozsebacke, and caused many great brasen peeces to be made by the wozkemanshyp of certayne Italians: and the same with theyr stockes and wheeles to be placed in the Castle of *Mosca*.

Hargabusters.

Gunnes.

The kyng him selfe with pyncely magnificence and singular familiaritie (wherwith neuertheleste no parte of the maiestie of a kyng is violate) is accustomed to dyne openly with his noble men, & strange Ambassadours in his owne chamber of presence, where is seene a marueylous quantitie of siluer & gylt plate, standyng vpon two great and high cubbardes in the same chamber. He hath not about him any other garde for the custody of his person, sauing only his accustomed familie. For watch and warde is diligently kept of the faithful multitude of the citizens: Insomuch that euery warde or quarter of the citie is inclosed with gates, rayles, and barres: neyther is it lawfull for any man rashely to walke in the citie in the nyght, or without lyght. All the courte consisteth of noble men, Gentlemen, and choyse souldyers, which are called out of euery region by theyr townes and vyllages, and commaunded to wayte course by course at certayne monethes appoynted. Furthermoze when warre is proclaymed, all the armie is collected both of the olde souldyers, and by musteryng of newe in all prouinces. For the Lieuetenantes and Captaynes of the army, are accustomed in al cities to muster the youth, & to admyt to the ozder of souldyers such as they thinke able to serue the turne. Theyr wages is payde them of the common treasury of euery prouince, whiche is geathered, and partly payde also, in the tyme of peace, although it be but litle. But such as are assigned to the warres, are free from all tributes, and inioye certayne other priuilegies, whereby they may the moze gladly and cheerfully serue theyr kyng, and defende theyr countrey. For in the tyme of warre, occasion is mynistred to shewe true vertue and manhood, where in so great and necessarie an institution, euery man accozdyng to his approued actiuitie and ingenious forwardenesse, may obtayne the foztune eyther of perpetuall honour, oz ignominie.

The Prince dyneth openly.

Sigismundus sayeth, that much of this is golde.

The custodie of of the citie.

The Dukes courte.

Souldyers wages of the common treasury.

Vix

Vix olim vlla fides referrentibus horrida regna
Moſchorum, & Ponti, res glacialis erat.
Nunc Iouio autore, illa oculis luſtramus, et vrbes,
Et nemora, et montes cernimus et fluuios.
Moſchouiam, monumenta Ioui, tua culta reuoluens,
Cæpi alios mundos credere Democriti.

Other notable thinges as concernyng Moſcouia, geathered out of the bookes of Sigiſmundus Liberus. Note that when he ſayth myles, he meaneth leagues.

FRom whence *Ruſſia* had the name, there are dyuers opinions. Some thynke that it was ſo named of one *Ruſſus* the ſonne or neuiew of *Lech* the kyng of the *Polons*. Other affirme that it was ſo called of a certayne olde towne, named *Ruſſus*, not farre from *Nouogoroda* or *Nouogradia* the more. Some alſo thynke that it was ſo called of the browne coloure of the nation. But the *Moſcouians* confute all theſe opinions as vntrue, affirmyng that this nation was in olde tyme called *Roſſeia*, as a nation diſperſed, as the name it ſelfe doth declare. For *Roſſeia* in the *Ruthens* tongue, doth ſignifie diſperſed, or ſcattered. The whiche thyng to be true, dyuers other people commyxt with thinhabitauntes, and dyuers prouinces lying here and there betwene diuers parts of *Ruſſia* do plainly declare. But whence ſoeuer they tooke theyr name, doubtleſſe all the people that vſe the *Slauon* tongue, and profeſſe the fayth of Chriſt, after the maner of the Greekes (called in theyr common language *Ruſſi*, and in the Latin tongue *Rutheni*) are increaſed to ſuch a multitude, that they haue eyther expulſed all the nations that lye betwene them, or drawne them to theyr maner of liuing, in ſomuche that they are nowe called all *Rutheni*, by one common name.

Ruſſia.

The browne coloure of the Ruſſes.

Roſſeia.

The Slauon tongue ſpreadeth farre.

Furthermore the *Slauon* tongue (whiche at this daye is ſomewhat corruptly called *Sclauon*) runneth exceedyng farre, as vſed of the *Dalmates*, *Boſſuenſer*, *Croatians*, *Iſtrians*, and

and by a long tracte of the sea *Adriatike* vnto *Forum Iulij*: Of the *Caruians* also, whom the *Venetians* call *Charsos*: and lykewyse of the *Carniolans* and *Carinthians*, vnto the ryuer *Drauus*: Furthermoze of the *Stirians* within *Gretzium*, and by *Muera* vnto *Danubius*, and from thence of the *Misians*, *Seruians*, *Bulgarians*, and other inhabityng, euen vnto *Constantinople*: Furthermoze of the *Bohemians*, *Lusacians*, *Silesians*, *Morauians*, and thinhabitauntes neere vnto the ryuer *Vagus* in the kyngdome of *Hungarie*: The *Polones* also, and the *Ruthenians*, whose Empire reacheth very farre: lykewyse the *Circasians* and *Quinquemontanians*, vnto *Pontus*: and is from thence vsed in the Noyth parties of Germanie, among the remnant of the *Vandales* inhabityng here and there. All whiche nations, although they acknowledge them selues to bee *Sclauons*, yet the Germans takyng the denomination onely of the *Vandales*, call all them that vse the *Slauon* tongue, *Vuenden*, or *Vuinden*, or *Vuindysh*.

Vandales.

The princes of Russia.

Of the Princes that nowe reigne in *Russia*, the chiefe is the great Duke of *Moscouia*, who possesseth the greatest part thereof. The seconde is the great Duke of *Lithuania*: and the thyrde the kyng of *Polonie*, who nowe obteyneth the dominion of *Polonie* and *Lithuania*.

The Duke of Moscouia.

In aucthoritie and dominion ouer his subiectes, the prince of *Moscouie* passeth all the monarkes of the woylde: For he depriueth all his noble men and gentelmen of all theyr holdes and munitions at his pleasure. He trusteth not his owne brethren, but oppresseth all with lyke seruitude: Insomuch that whom so euer he commaundeth either to remaine with him in the courte, or to go to the warres, or sendeth on ambassage, they are compelled to be at theyr owne charges, except the young gentelmen the sonnes of the *Boiarons*, that is, the noble men of the lowest degree. He vsurpeth this aucthoritie aswell ouer the spiritualtie as the temporaltie, constituting what him listeth of the goods and lyfe of all men. Of his counsellers there is not one that dare dissent from hym in any thyng. They openly confesse, that the wyl of theyr prince is the will of God: and therfore call hym the key bearer and chamberlen of God, & beleeue hym to be the executor of Gods will. By reason wherof, the prince hym selfe, when any petition is made to hym for the deliuerie of any captiue, is accustomed

accustomed to answere, when God commaundeth, he shalbe deliuered. Lykewyse when any asketh a question of an vncertaine or doubtful thyng, theyr custome is to answere thus: God knoweth, and the great Prince. It is vncertayne whether the crueltie and fyrcenesse of the nation do require so tyrannous a Prince, or whether by the tiranny of the Prince, the nation is made so fierce and cruell.

Basilius the Sonne of Iohn, was the fyrst that tooke vppon hym the name and title of a kyng, in this maner. The great lorde *Basilius*, by the grace of God, kyng and lorde of all *Russia*, and the great Duke of *Vuolodimaria, Moscouia, Nouogradia, &c.*

Why the Duke of Moscouia was called an Emperour.

Furthermore, wheras nowe this Prince is called Emperour, I haue thought good to shewe the title and cause of this errour. Note therfore that *Czar* in the *Ruthens* tongue, signifieth a kyng, whereas in the language of the *Slauons, Pollons, Bohemes*, and other, the same worde *Czar*, signifieth *Cesar*, by whiche name the Emperours haue been commonly called. For both they, and the *Slauons* that are vnder the kyngdome of *Hungarie*, call a kyng by an other name: as some *Crall*, other *Kyrall*, and some *Korall*: but thynke that only an Emperour is called *Czar*. Whereby it came to passe that the *Ruthene* or *Moscouite* interpreteurs, hearyng theyr Prince to be so called of strange nations, began them selues also to name hym an Emperour, & thynk the name of *Czar* to be more worthy then the name of a kyng, although they signifie all one thyng. But who so wyll reade all theyr histories and bookes of holy scripture, shall fynde that a kyng is called *Czar*, and an Emperour *Kessar*. By the lyke errour the Emperour of the Turkes is called *Czar*, who neuertheless of antiquitie vsed no hygher tytle then the name of a kyng, expressed by this worde *Czar*. And hereof the Turkes of *Europe* that vse the *Slauon* tongue, call the citie of *Constantinople Czargard*, (that is) the kyngs citie.

The great Turke.

Some call the Prince of *Moscouie* the whyte kyng, which I thynke to proceede of the whyte Cappes, or other tyrementes they weare on theyr heades, lyke as they call the kyng of *Pertia Kisilpassa* (that is) redde head. He vseth the tytle of a kyng when he wryteth or sendeth to Rome, the Emperour, the Pope, the Kyng of *Suetia* and *Denmarke*, the great

The whyte kyng.

The Duke of Moscouia his tytle.

great maister of *Prusia* and *Liuonia*, and also to the great Turke, as I haue been credibly enfourmed: but he is not called kyng of any of them, except perhaps of the *Liuons*. Yet by reason of his later conquestes, some haue thought hym worthy the name of a kyng, or rather of an Emperour, because he hath kyngs vnder his Empire.

To the kyng of *Polone*, he vseth this title: The great lorde *Basilius* by the grace of God, lord of al *Russia*, and great Duke of *Vuolodimeria*, *Moscouia*, *Nouogradia*. *&c.* leauyng out the title of a kyng. For none of them vouchsafeth to receyue the letters of the other augmented with any newe title, as I knewe by experience at my beyng in *Moscouia*, at which time *Sigismundus* the kyng of *Polone* sent hym his letters augmented with the title of the Duke of *Moscouia*, wherwith he was not a litle offended.

Russia baptised by Sainct Andrewe the Apostle.

They glory in theyr histories that before *Vuolodimeria* and *Olha*, the land of *Russia* was baptised and blessed of Sainct Andrewe the Apostle of Christ, affirmyng that he came from *Grecia* to the mouthes of the ryuer *Boristhenes*: and that he sayled vp the ryuer to the mountaynes where as is nowe *Chiouia*: and that there he blessed all the lande and placed his crosse, prophesyng also that the grace of God shoulde be great there, and that there shoulde be many churches of Christian men: Lykewyse, that he afterward came to the sprynges of *Boristhenes*, vnto the great Lake *Vuolok*, and by the ryuer *Louat* descended into the Lake *Ilmer*: from whence by the ryuer *Vuolcon*, whiche runneth out of the same Lake, he came to *Nouogradia*: and passed from thence by the same ryuer to the Lake *Ladoga*, and the ryuer *Heua*, and so vnto the sea whiche they call *Vuarezkoia*, beyng the same that we call the *Germane* sea, betweene *Vuinlandia* or *Finlandia* and *Liuonia*, by the whiche he sayled to Rome, and was at the last crucified for Christ his Gospell in *Peloponnesus* by the tirranie of *Agus Antipater*, as theyr cronacles make mention.

The Moscouites warres.

The Prince euery seconde or thyrde yeere causeth a muster to bee taken of the Sonnes of the *Boiorons*, and taketh an accompte booth of theyr number, and howe manye Horses and men euery of them is able to make: and then appoynteth a certayne

a certayne stypende to suche as are able further to beare theyr owne charges in the warres. They haue seldome any rest or quietnesse: For they eyther keepe warre with the *Lithuanians*, *Liuonians*, *Suetians*, or *Tartars* of *Casan*. Or if it so chaunce that the prince keepe no warre, yet doth he yeerely appoynte garrysons of .xx. thousande men in places about *Tanais* and *Occa*, to represse the incursions and robberyes of the *European Tartars*, called *Precopites*.

Dyuers maners of dyuers people in the warres.

As in other matters, euen so in the order of warrefare there is great diuersitie among men. For the *Moscouian* as soone as he beginneth to flye, thinketh of none other succoure, but putteth all his confidence therin. Beyng pursued or taken of his enimie, he neyther defendeth hym selfe, nor desireth pardon.

The *Tartar* cast of from his horse, spoyled of all his armure and weapones, and also sore wounded, defendeth hym selfe with handes, feete, and teethe, and by all meanes he may, vntyll his strength and spirite fayle hym.

The Turke, when he seeth hym selfe destitute of all helpe and hope to escape, doth humbly desyre pardon, castyng away his weapons and armure, and reaching forth to the victourer his handes ioyned togeather to be bounde, hoppyng by captiuitie to saue his lyfe.

The Moscouites armye.

The *Moscouites* in placeyng theyr armie, chuse them a large playne, where the best of them pytch theyr tentes, and the other make them certaine arbours of bowes fyxt in the grounde, bendyng togeather the toppes thereof, which they couer with theyr clokes to defende them selues, theyr bowes, arrowes, saddels, and other theyr necessaries from rayne. They put forth theyr horses to pasture, and for that cause haue theyr tentes so farre in sunder, which they fortifie neither with cartes or trenches, or any other impedyment, except perhappes the place be defended by nature, as with woodes, ryuers, and maryshes.

Howe he maintayneth his armye.

It may perhappes seeme straunge, howe he mayntayneth hym and his so longe with so small an armye as I haue sayde. I wyll nowe therefore briefely declare theyr sparyng and frugalitie. He that hath fyue or sometymes more horses, vseth one of them as a packe horse to beare all theyr necessaryes.

tyes. He hath alſo in a bagge of two or three ſpannes long, the flower or meale of the graine called mille, and viii. or x. pounds weyght of Swines fleſhe poudred. He hath lykewyſe a bagge of ſalte, myxt with pepper, if he be rych. Furthermore euery man carryeth with hym a hatchet, a fyre boxe, and a braſen potte: ſo that if they chaunce to come to any place where they can fynde no fruites, Garlyke, Onyons, or fleſhe, they kyndle a fyre, and fyll theyr pottes with water, whereunto they put a ſpoonefull of meale, with a quantitie of ſalt, and make pottage therof, wherwith the maiſter and all his ſeruauntes lyue contented. But if the maiſter bee very hungrye, he eateth all alone, and the ſeruauntes are ſometymes enforced to faſt for the ſpace of two or three dayes. And if the maiſter intende to fare ſomewhat more delycately, then he addeth thereto a litle portion of Swynes fleſhe. I ſpeake not this of the beſt of them, but of ſuch as are of the meane ſort. The gouernours and captaynes of the armie, do ſometymes bydde the poorer ſorte to theyr tables: where they feede them ſelues ſo well, that they faſt two or three dayes after. When they haue fruites, Garlyke, and Onyons, they can well forbeare all other meates. Proceedyng forwarde to the battayle, they put more confidence in theyr multitude, and with what great armies they aſſayle theyr enimies, then eyther in the ſtrength and valyauntneſſe of theyr ſouldiers, or in well inſtructyng theyr armie, and fight better a farre of, then at hand: and therfore ſtudy howe to circumuent or incloſe theyr enimies, and to aſſayle them on the backe halfe. They haue many trumpetters, the which while they blow al at once, after theyr maner, make a maruelous ſtraunge noyſe. They haue alſo another kynde of inſtrumentes which they call Szurna: theſe they blow without ceaſſyng for the ſpace of an houre togeather, ſo temperyng the ſame, and holdyng in the wynde whyle they draw more, that the noyſe ſeemeth continually without intermiſſion.

Inſtrumentes of warre.

The Moſcouites and Tartars apparell.

They vſe all one maner of apparell: as longe coates without pleyghtes, and with narrowe ſleeues, after the maner of the *Hungarians*. Theſe the Chriſtians vſe to butten on the ryght ſyde: and the *Tartars* (vſeyng the lyke) butten them on the lefte ſyde. They weare redde and ſhort buſkyns that reache not to theyr knees, and haue the ſoles thereof defended

fended with plates of Iron. In maner all theyr shyftes are wrought with diuers coloures about the necke, and haue the Collars and Ruffes beset with litle round Baules like Beades, of Syluer, or gylted Copper, and some tyme Pearles also. They gyrd them selues beneath the bellie, euen as lowas theyr pryuie members, that they may seeme more burlye, which they greatly esteeme, as doo at this daye the Spanyardes, Italians, and Almanes.

The prouince of *Moscouia* is neyther very large nor fruitful, forasmuch as the fertilitie is hindred with sandye ground, which either with to much dryneſſe or moysture killeth the corne. Furthermore immoderate and sharpe vntemperateneſſe of the ayre, whyle the colde of the wynter ouercommeth the heate of the Sunne, sometymes doth not suffer the corne to rype. For the colde is there sometymes so extreame, that lyke as with vs in somer by reason of heate, euen so there by extreame cold, the earth hath many great chinckes or breaches. Water also cast into the ayre, and spytle fallyng from ones mouth, are frosen before they touche the grounde. I my selfe, when I came thither in the yeere 1526. sawe the braunches of fruitfull trees wythered by the colde of the wynter before, whiche was so extreame, that many of theyr wagoners and carriers (whom they call *Gonetz*) were found frosen to death in theyr sleades. There were some that at the same tyme leavyng and dryuing theyr cattayle from the next villages to *Moscouia*, died by the way with their beastes, through the extremitie of the colde. Furthermore the same yeere many players that were accustomed to wander about the countrey with daunsing Beares, were found dead in the high wayes. Wilde Beares also, enforced therto by famine, left the woods, and ran here and there into diuers villages and houses: at whose commyng whyle the men of the countrey forsooke theyr houses and fledde into the fieldes, many of them perysshed through the vehemencie of the cold. Agayne it sometymes so chaunceth that in Sommer the heate is as extreame: as in the yeere. 1525. in the whiche almost all kyndes of pulse and grayne were scorched and burnt, and suche a dearth of corne folowed that drought, that that which before was bought for three Dengas, was afterward solde for twentie or thyrtie. Furthermore also, many

The prouince of Moscouia.

Extreame colde.

Extreame heate in cold regions.

ny villages, woods, and ſtackes of corne, were ſet on fyre by the extreame heate: the ſmoke wherof ſo fylled the region, that the eyes of many were ſore hurt therby. There aroſe alſo as it were a darke and thycke myſt without ſmoke, whiche ſo moleſted the eyes, that many loſt theyr ſyght therby. They ſow and nourythe the ſeedes of Melons with great diligence in certayne rayſed beddes myxt with doung, wherby they fynde a remedie both agaynſt extreame cold and heat. For if the heat exceede, they make certayne ryftes in the beds, as it were breathyng places, leſt the ſeedes ſhoulde be ſuffocate with to much heate. And if the cold be extreame, it is tempered with the heate of the mucke or doung.

Litle beaſtes.

Theyr beaſtes are much leſſe then ours, yet not all without hornes, as one hath wrytten: For I haue there ſeene Oxen, Kine, Goates, and Rammes, al with hornes.

The citie of Moſcouia or Moſca.

Not farre from the citie of *Moſca*, are certayne monaſteries, whiche a farre of, ſeeme lyke vnto a citie. They ſay that in this citie is an incredible number of houſes: and that the ſyxt yeere before my commyng thyther, the prince cauſed them to be numbred, and found them to be more then one and fourtie thouſand & fyue hundred houſes. The citie is very large and wyde, and alſo very ſlabby and myxye: by reaſon wherof, it hath many bridges and cauſeyes.

Holſome ayre.

The ayre of the region is ſo holſome, that beyond the ſpryngs of *Tanais*, eſpecially towards the North, and a great part alſo towards the Eaſt, the peſtilence hath not been heard of ſynce the memorye of man: Yet haue they ſometymes a diſeaſe in theyr bowelles and heades, not much vnlyke vnto the peſtilence. This diſeaſe they call a heate: wherwith ſuch as are taken, dye within fewe dayes.

A ryche ſpoyle.

Some wryte that Iohn the Duke of *Moſcouia*, and Sonne of *Baſilius*, vnder the pretence of religion, lacked & ſpoyled the citie of *Nouogradia*, and caried with hym from thence to *Moſcouia* thyree hundred ſleades laden with gold, ſyluer, and precious ſtones, of the goodes of the Archbiſhop, the merchauntes, citizins, and ſtrangers.

The Iland of Solowki.

Solowki is an Iſlande ſituate in the North ſea, eyght leagues from the continent betweene *Duina* and the prouince of *Corela*. Howe farre it is diſtaunt from *Moſcouia*, can not be well knowen, by reaſon of many Fennes, Mariſhes, Woods,

wooddes, and desolate places lying in the way. Albeit, some say that it is not three hundred leagues from *Moscouia*, and two hundred from *Bieloiesero*. In this Ilande is made great plentie of salte: and it hath in it a monasterie, into the which it is not lawfull for any woman or virgin to enter. There is also great fyshyng for herryng. They say that heere the Sunne at the sommer Equinoctiall, shyneth continually except two houres. Bieloiesero.

The length of the day.

Demetriowe, is a citie with a Castell, distante from *Moscouia* xii. leagues, declinyng from the West somewhat towarde the north. By this runneth the riuer *Lachroma*, that runneth into the ryuer of *Sest*. *Sest* also receyueth the ryuer *Dubna*, which vnladeth it selfe in *Volga*. And by the commoditie of thus many ryuers, many ryche marchaundies are brought without great labour or difficultie from the Caspian sea, by the ryuer *Volga* to *Moscouia*, and dyuers other prouinces and cities about the same.

The trade from Moscouia to the Caspian sea.

Bieloiesero, a citie with a Castell, is situate at a lake of the same name. For *Bieloiesero* in the *Moscouites* tongue, signifieth a whyte lake. The citie standeth not in the lake, as some haue sayde. Yet is it so enuironed with marysches, that it may seeme to be inexpugnable: In consideration wherof, the princes of *Moscouia* are accustomed to keepe theyr treasure there. *Bieloiesero* is from *Moscouia*, a hundred leagues, and as muche from *Nouogradia* the great. The lake it selfe, is. xii. leagues in length, and as much in breadth, and hath (as they say) three hundred ryuers falling into it. The inhabitauntes of this place, haue a peculyar language, although now in maner all speake the *Moscouites* tongue. The longest day here in the sommer Equinoctial, is sayd to consist of. xix. houres. A man of great name and credit tolde mee, that at the begynnyng of the spryng, when the trees began nowe to bee greene, he went in poste from *Moscouia* to *Bieloiesero*: and passyng ouer the ryuer *Volga*, founde the region there so couered with Ise and snow, that hee was fayne to dispatche the residue of his iourney on sleades. And although the wynter be longer there, yet doe the fruites waxe rype and are geathered euen at the same tyme that they are in *Moscouia*. Within an arrowe shotte of the lake, there is an other lake that bringeth foorth brymstone: which a certayne riuer running out of

Bieloiesero or the whyte lakes.

Diuersitie of temperamēt in small distance.

A lake of brymstone.

the same, carrieth with it in great quantitie, flotyng aboue the water lyke a scomme, yet through the ignorannce of the people, they haue no commoditie thereby.

Exchange of furres for other ware.

The people that inhabite the regions, lying farre North, and East from *Moscouia*, exchange their furres for apparel, Kniues, needles, Spoones, Hatchets, and suche other necessary wares: for they haue not the vse of golde and syluer.

The description of the regions, people, and riuers, lying North and East from Moscouia: as the way from Moscouia to the riuer Petzora, and the prouince Iugaria, or Iuhra, and from thence to the riuer Obi. Likewyse the description of other countreys and regions, euen vnto thempire of the great Cham of Cathay.

The dominion of the duke of Moscouia.

THE dominion of the prince of *Moscouia*, reacheth farre towarde the East & North, vnto the places whiche we wyll nowe describe. As concernyng whiche thyng, I translated a booke that was presented vnto me in the *Moscouites* tongue, & haue here made a breefe rehearsal of the same, I wyl first therfore describe the iourney from *Moscouia* to *Petzora*, and so to *Iugaria* and *Obi*. From *Moscouia* to the citie of *Vuolochda*, are numbred fyftie werstes, one werst conteynyng almoste the space of an Italian myle. From *Vuolochda* to *Vstiug*, toward the ryght hande, descending with the course of the riuer of *Vuolochda* and *Suchana* with whom it ioyneth, are compted fyue hundred werstes, where within two werstes of the towne called *Strelze*, and hard by the citie of *Vstiug*, *Suchana* ioyneth: Iug which runneth from the South, from whose mouth, vnto the sprynges of the same, are numbred fyue hundred werstes.

Vuolochda. werste. Vstiug.

Note that whereas here before the author numbreth but fyftie werstes from *Moscouia* to *Vuolochda*, it seemeth that the place is corrupted by the Printers mistakyng one woorde for an other, as, *Quinquaginta*, whiche is fyftie, for *Quingenta*, whiche is fyue hundred. For the distance is no lesse from *Moscouia* to *Vuolochda*, then is from *Vuolochda* to *Vstiug*, whiche is fyue hundred werstes.

But

But *Suchana* and *Iug*, after they ioyne togeather, lose their first names, and make both one riuer, named *Dwina*, by the which, the passage to the citie of *Colmogor* conteineth fyue hundred werstes, from whence in the space of sixe dayes iourney, *Dwina* entreth into the North Ocean at syxe mouthes: and the greatest parte of this iourney consysteth by Nauigation: for by lande from *Vuolochda* vnto *Colmogor*, passyng ouer the ryuer *Vuaga*, are a thousande werstes. Not farre from *Colmogor*, the riuer *Pienega*, runnyng from the East on the ryght hand, for the space of seuen hundred werstes, falleth into *Dwina*. From *Dwina* by the riuer *Pienega*, by the space of two hundred werstes, they come to a place called *Nicolai*, from whence within halfe a werst, shyppes haue passage into the riuer *Kuluio*, whiche hath his originall from a lake of the same name towarde the North, from whose springes is eight dayes viage to the mouth of the same, where it entreth into the Ocean.

Suchana.
Iug. So called of his swift and pleasant streame.
Pienega.
Nicolai.
Kuluio.

Sayling by the coastes of the ryght hande of the sea, they passe by the regions of *Stanuwische*, *Calunczscho*, and *Apnu*: And sayling about the promontorie or cape of *Chorogoski*, *Nosz*, *Stanuwische*, *Camenckh*, and *Tolstickh*, they come at the length into the riuer *Mezen*, and from thence in the space of syxe dayes, to a village of the same name, standing in the mouth of the riuer *Piezа*, by the whiche agayne ascendyng towarde the left hande and Sommer East, they come to the riuer *Piescoia*: from whence sayling for the space of fyue werstes, they come into two lakes, in the whiche are seene two wayes: whereof one on the ryght syde, goeth to the riuer *Rubicho*, by the whiche they passe to the riuer *Czircho*. Other, by an other and shorter way, byrng their shyppes from the lake directly into *Czircho*: from whence, excepte they be hyndered by tempest, they come in the space of three weekes to the riuer and mouth of *Czilma*, flowyng into the great riuer *Petzora*, whiche in that place is two werstes in breadth. Saylyng from hence, they come in the space of syxe dayes to the Towne & castle of *Pustoosero*, neare vnto the which, *Petzora* entreth into the North Ocean at syxe mouthes. The inhabitantes of this place, are men of simple wyt: they receyued the fayth of Christ, and were baptised in the yeere. M. D. xviii.

The regions by the North sea.
Piezа.
Piescoia.
Rubicho.
Czircho.
Czilma.
Petzora.
Pustoosero.

Vssa.

From the mouth of *Czilma* vnto the mouth of the ryuer *Vssa*, goyng by *Petzora*, is one moneths vyage. *Vssa* hath his sprynges in the mountaine *Poyas Semnoi*, being on the left hand toward the sommer East, & spryngeth out of a great stone of the same mountayne, called *Camen Bolschoi*. From the spryngs of *Vssa* to the mouthes of the same, are numbered moze then a thousande Werstes. Furthermoze, *Petzora* runneth from this south winter parte, from whence ascending from the mouthes of *Vssa*, vnto the mouthes of the ryuer *Stzuchogora*, is thzee weekes vyage. They that described this vyage, sayde that they rested betweene the mouthes of the ryuers of *Stzuchogora* and *Potzscheriema*, and lefte theyr victualles there whiche they brought with them from *Russia*. Beyond the ryuers of *Petzora* and *Stzuchogora* towarde the mountayne *Camenipoias*, and the sea with the Ilandes there about, and the Castell of *Pustooserо*, are dyuers and innumerable nations, whiche by one cõmon name are called *Samoged* (that is) such as eate them selues. They haue great increase of foules, vyldes, and dyuers kyndes of beastes: as Sables, Marternes, Beuers, Otters, Hermelines, Squirrels: and in the Ocean the beast called Moys: Also Uesse, whyte Beares, Wolues, Hares, Equiwoduani, great Whales, and fysh called *Semsi*, with dyuers other. The people of these nations come not to *Moscouia*: For they are wylde, and flee the company and societie of other men.

Cingulus mundi.

Stzuchogora.

Potzscheriema.

Camenipoias.

Samoged.

Foules and beastes.

Wylde people.

From the mouthes of *Stzuchogora*, saylyng vp the ryuer vnto *Poiassa*, *Artawischе*, *Cameni*, and *Poiassa* the greater, is thzee weekes vyage. Furthermoze, the ascendyng to the mounte *Camen*, is thzee dayes iourney: from the which, descendyng, they come to the ryuer *Artawischa*, and from thence to the ryuer *Sibut*, from whence they passe to the Castell of *Lepin*, and from *Lepin* to the ryuer *Sossa*. The people that inhabite the region by this ryuer, are called *Vuogolici*. Leauyng *Sossa* on the ryght hande, they come to the great ryuer *Obi*, that spryngeth out of the lake *Kitaisko*, the whiche with all the haste they coulde make, they coulde scarcelye passe ouer in one day, the ryuer beyng of suche breadth that it reacheth fourescoze Werstes. The people also that dwell about this ryuer, are called *Vuogolici* and *Vgritzschi*. From

Poiassa.

Camen.
Artawischa.
Sibut.
Lepin.

Sossa.
Obi.
Kitaisko.

Vuogolici.

the

the Caſtle of *Obca*, aſcendyng by the ryuer of *Oby*, vnto the ryuer *Irtiſche*, into the which *Soſſa* entereth, is thꝛee monethes iourney. In theſe places are two Caſtles named *Ierom* and *Tumen*, kepte by certayne Lꝛdes called *Kneſi Iuhorſki*, being tributaries to the great Duke of *Moſcouia*, as they ſay. Heere are dyuers kyndes of beaſtes and furres.

Irtiſche.
Ierom.
Tumen.

From the mouth of the ryuer *Irtiſche* to the Caſtle of *Gruſtina*, is two monethes iourney: from whence to the lake *Kitai*, by the ryuer *Oby* (which I ſayde to haue his ſpꝛinges in this lake) is moꝛe then thꝛee monethes iourney. From this lake come many blacke men, lackyng the vſe of common ſpeech. They bꝛyng with them dyuers wares, and eſpecially pearles and pꝛecious ſtones, which they ſell to the people called *Gruſtintzi* and *Serponowtzi*. Theſe haue theyꝛ name of the Caſtle *Serponow*, ſituate in the mountaynes of *Lucomorya*, beyonde the ryuer *Obi*. They ſay that to the men of *Lucomorya*, chaunceth a marueylous thing and incredible: Foꝛ they affyꝛme, that they dye yeerely at the .xxvii. day of Nouember, beyng the feaſt of Sainct Geoꝛge among the *Moſcouites*: and that at the nexte ſpꝛyng about the .xxiiii. day of Apꝛill, they reuyue agayne as doe Frogges.

Gruſtina.
Kitai.
Blacke men without ſpeech.
Serponow.
Lucomorya.
Men that yeerely dye and reuyue.

With theſe alſo, the people of *Gruſtintzi* and *Serponowtzi*, exerciſe a newe and ſtraunge kynde of trade: Foꝛ when the accuſtomed tyme of theyꝛ dying, oꝛ rather of ſleapyng, appꝛocheth, they leaue theyꝛ wares in certayne places appoynted, which the *Gruſtintzi* and *Serponowtzi* carry away, leauyng other wares of equall value in theyꝛ places: which if the dead men at the tyme of theyꝛ reuyuyng perceyue to be of vnequall pꝛyce, they requyꝛe theyꝛ owne agayne: by reaſon whereof, much ſtryfe and fighting is betweene them.

A ſtraunge trade of marchaundies.

From the ryuer of *Obi* deſcendyng towarde the lefte hande, are the people called *Calami*, whiche came thyther from *Obiowa* and *Pogoſa*. Beneath *Obi*, about *Aurea Anus* (that is, the golden olde wyfe) are the ryuers *Soſſa*, *Beres*, *Vua*, & *Danadim*, all which ſpꝛyng out of the mountaynes *Camen*, *Bolſchega*, *Poiaſſa*, and the rockes ioynyng to the ſame. All the nations that inhabite from theſe ryuers to *Aurea Anus*, are ſubiecte to the pꝛince of *Moſcouia*.

Obi.
Calami.
Ryuers.

Aurea Anus. Obdoria.

Aurea Anus, called in the *Moscouites* tongue, *Slata Baba*, is an idol, at the mouthes of *Obi* in the prouince of *Obdora*, standyng on the furthest banke towarde the sea. Along by the bankes of *Obi*, and the riuers neare there about, are here and there many castles and fortresses: all the lordes whereof, are subiect to the prince of *Moscouia*, as they say. They say also, or rather fable, that the idoll called *Aurea Anus*, is an image lyke vnto an olde wyfe, hauyng a chylde in her lappe, and that there is nowe seene another infant, whiche they say to be her nephewe: Also, that there are certayne instrumentes that make a continuall sounde lyke the noyse of Trumpettes, the whiche, yf it so be, I thynke it to be by reason of the wynde, blowing continually into the holowe places of those instrumentes.

Cossin. Cassima. Tachnin.

The riuer *Cosfin* falleth out of the mountaynes into *Lucomoria*: In the mouth of this is a castle, whither from the spryinges of the great riuer *Cosfin*, is two monethes viage. Furthermore, from the spryinges of the same riuer, the riuer *Casfima* hath his original, whiche runnyng through *Lucomoria*, falleth into the great riuer *Tachuin*, beyonde the whiche (as is sayde) dwel men of prodigious shape, of whom, some are ouergrowen with heare lyke wilde beastes, other haue heades lyke dogges, and their faces in their brestes, without neckes, and with long handes also, and without feete. There is lykewyse in the ryuer *Tachnin*, a certayne fysh, with head, eyes, nose, mouth, handes, feete, and other members vtterly of humane shape, and yet without anye voyce, and pleasant to be eaten, as are other fyshes.

People of mõstrous shape.

A fyshe lyke a man. Plinie writeth of the lyke fysh.

All that I haue hytherto rehearsed, I haue translated out of the sayde iourney whiche was delyuered me in the *Moscouites* tongue: In the whiche, perhappes some thynges may seeme fabulous, and in maner incredible, as of the dombe men, and the dead, reuiuyng, the *Aurea Anus* also, and the monstrous shapes of men, with the fyshe of humane fourme: whereof, although I haue made diligent inquisition, yet coulde I knowe nothyng certayne of anye that had seene the same with their eyes: neuertheless, to geue further occasion to other to searche the trueth of these thynges, I haue thought good to make mention hereof.

Noss in the *Moscouites* tongue signifieth a Nose, and therefore they cal all capes or poyntes, that reache into the sea, by the same

same name.

The mountaynes about the riuer of *Petzora*, are called *Semnoi Poyas*, or *Cingulus mundi*, that is, the gyrdle of the worlde, or of the earth. Mountaynes.

Kithai is a lake, of whom the great *Cane of Cathay*, whom the *Moscouians* call *Ezar Kithaiski*, hath his name: For *Chan* in the *Tartars* language signifieth, A Kyng. The great Chane of Cathay.

The places of *Lucomoria*, neare vnto the sea, are saluage, ful of woods, and inhabited without anye houses. And albeit, that the author of this iourney, sayde, that manye nations of *Lucomoria* are subiecte to the prince of *Moscouia*, yet for as muche as the kyngdome of *Tumen* is neare therevnto, whose prince is a *Tartar*, and named in their tongue, *Tumenski Czar*, that is, a king in *Tumen*, and hath of late doone great domage to the prince of *Moscouia*: it is moste lyke that these nations shoulde rather be subiect vnto hym. Lucomoria. Tumen.

Neare vnto the riuer *Petzora* (whereof mention is made in this iourney) is the citie and castle of *Papin*, or *Papinowgorod*, whose inhabitantes are named *Papini*, and haue a priuate language, differyng from the *Moscouites*. Beyonde this ryuer are exceedyng hygh mountaynes, reachyng euen vnto the bankes, whose rydges or toppes, by reason of continuall wyndes, are in maner vtterly barren without grasse or fruites. And although in diuers places they haue diuers names, yet are they commonlye called *Cingulus mundi*, that is, the worlde. In these mountaynes doo Iersalcons breede, whereof I haue spoken before. There growe also Cedar trees, among the whiche are founde the best and blackest kynde of Sables: and onely these mountaynes are seene in all the dominions of the prince of *Moscouia*, whiche perhappes are the same that the olde writers call *Rhipheos*, or *Hyperboreos*, so named of the Greeke woorde, Hyper, that is, Under, and Boreas, that is, the North: for by reason they are couered with continual snowe and frost, they can not without great difficultie be trauayled, and reache so farre into the North, that they make the vnknowen land of *Engreonland*. The Duke of *Moscouia*, *Basilius* the sonne of Iohn, sent on a tyme two of his captaynes, named *Simeon Pheodorowitz Kurbski*, and *Knes Peter Vschatoi*, to searche the places beyonde Petzora. Papin. Hygh mountaynes, supposed to be Hyperborei and Rhiphei. Engreonland.

these mountaynes, and to subdue the nations thereabout. *Kurbski* was yet alyue at my beyng in *Moscouia*, and declared vnto mee that he spent .xvii. dayes in ascending the mountayne, and yet could not come to the toppe therof, which in theyr tongue is called *Stolp* (that is) a pyller. This mountayne is extended into the Ocean vnto the mouthes of the ryuers of *Dwina* and *Petzora*. But now hauyng spoken thus much of the sayde iourney, I will returne to the dominions of *Moscouia*, with other regions lying Eastwarde and South from the same, toward the myghtie Empyre of *Cathay*. But I will fyrst speake somewhat briefly of the prouince of *Rezan*, and the famous ryuer of *Tanais*.

Stolp.

Cathay.

The fruitfull prouince of Rezan.

Iaroslaw.

The prouince of *Rezan*, situate betweene the ryuers of *Occa* and *Tanais*, hath a citie buylded of wood, not far from the banke of *Occa*: there was in it a Castle named *Iaroslaw*, whereof there now remayneth nothing but tokens of the olde ruine. Not farre from that citie, the ryuer *Occa* maketh an Islande named *Strub*, which was somtyme a great Dukedome, whose prince was subiecte to none other. This prouince of *Rezan*, is more fruitful then any other of the prouinces of *Moscouia*: Insomuche that in this (as they say) euery grayne of wheate bringeth foorth twoo, and sometymes more eares: whose stalkes or strawes grow so thicke that horses can scarsly goe through them, or Quayles flee out of them. There is great plentie of hony, fyshes, foules, byrdes, and wylde beastes. The fruites also doe farre exceede the fruites of *Moscouia*. The people are bolde and warlyke men.

Hony.

Of the famous ryuer of Tanais.

FRom *Moscouia* vnto the Castle of *Iaroslaw*, and beyonde for the space of almost xviiii. leagues, runneth the ryuer of *Tanais*, at a place called *Donco*, where the marchauntes that trade to *Asoph*, *Capha*, and Constantinople, fraight theyr shyppes: and this for the most parte in Autumpe, beyng a rayney tyme of the yeere. For *Tanais* heere at other tymes of the yeere, doeth not so abounde with water, as to beare shyppes

Donco.
Asoph.
Capha.
Constantinople.

shyppes of any burden. This famous ryuer of *Tanais*, dyuydeth Europe from *Asia*, and hath his ozygynall oz spzynges almost .viii. leagues from the citie of *Tulla*, towarde the South, inclynyng somewhat towarde the East, and not out of the *Riphean* mountaynes, as some haue writen: But out of a great lake named *Iwanwosero* (that is) the lake of John, beyng in length and bzedth about .1500. Werstes, in a wood which some call *Okonitzkilles*, and other name it *Iepiphanoulies*. And out of this lake, spzyng the two great ryuers of *Schat* and *Tanais*. *Schat* towarde the West receyuyng into it the ryuer of *Vppa*, runneth into the riuer of *Occa* betwene the West and the Nozth: But *Tanais* at the fyrst runneth directly East, and continueth his course betwene the kyngdomes of *Casan* and *Astrachan* within syze oz seuen leagues of *Volga*, and from thence bendyng towarde the South, maketh the fennes oz marysshes of *Meotis*. Furthermoze, nerte vnto his spzynges, is the citie of *Tulla*: and vppon the banke of the ryuer, almost thzee leagues aboue the mouthes of the same, is the citie of *Asoph*, whiche was fyrst called *Tanais*. Foure dayes iozney aboue this, is a towne called *Achas*, situate harde by the same ryuer, whiche the *Moscouites* call *Don*. I can not sufficiently pzayse this ryuer foz the exceedyng abundaunce of good fyshes, and fayzenesse of the regions on both sydes the bankes, with plentie of holesome hearbes and sweete rootes, besyde dyuers and many fruitefull trees, growyng in suche coomly ozder as though they had been set of purpose in gardens oz ozchardes. There is also in maner euery where such plentie of wylde beastes, that they may easely be slayne with arrowes: Insomuch that such as trauaile by those regions, shall stande in neede of none other thyng to mayntayne theyz lyfe, but only fyze and salte. In these partes, is no obseruation of myles, but of dayes iozneys. But as farre as I coulde coniecture, from the fountaynes oz spzynges of *Tanais*, vnto the mouthes of the same, iozneying by lande, are almost fourescoze leagues. And sayling from *Donco* (from whence I sayde that *Tanais* was fyrst nauigable) in scarsely .xx. dayes voyage, they come to the citie of *Asoph*, tributarie to the Turkes: which is (as they say) fyue dayes iozney from the streight of *Taurica*, otherwyse called *Precop*. In this citie is a famous marte towne, vnto

Tanais diuideth Europe from Asia.
The spzynges of Tanais.
A great lake.
The ryuer Schat.
Casan.
Astrachan.
Meotis.
Tulla.
Achas.
Fruitefull regions about Tanais.
Plentie of wyld beastes.
Fyze and salt.
Where Tanais is fyrst naugable.
Asoph.

The marte of Asoph.

vnto the whiche resort many merchauntes of dyuers nations, and from dyuers partes of the worlde. For, that all nations may the gladlyer haue recourse thyther, free lybertie of byyng and sellyng is graunted vnto all: and that without the citie euery man may freely vse his owne and accustomed maner of lyuyng, without punyshement.

Libertie allureth straungers.

The altars of Alexander and Cesar.

Of the alters of great Alexander and Julius Cesar, whiche many wryters make mention of in this place, or of theyr ruines, I coulde haue no certayne knowledge of thinhabitauntes or any other that had oftentymes trauayled these places. Furthermore, the souldyers whiche the prince of *Moscouia* mayntayneth there peerely to oppresse thincursions of the *Tartars*, beyng of me demaunded herof, answeared ỹ they neuer saw or heard of any such thing. Neuertheless they said, that about ỹ mouths of *Tanais* the lesse, foure dayes iorney from *Asoph*, neere vnto a place called *Sewerski*, by the holy mountaynes, they sawe certayne images of stone and marble. *Tanais* the lesse, hath his spryinges in the Dukedome of *Sewerski*, whereof it is called *Donetz Sewerski*, and falleth into *Tanais*, three dayes iorney aboue *Asoph*. But such as iorney from *Moscouia* to *Asoph* by lande, they, passyng ouer *Tanais* about the olde and ruinate towne of *Donco*, do somwhat turne from the South to the East: In the which place, if a ryght line be drawne from the mouthes of *Tanais* to the sprynges of the same, *Moscouia* shalbe founde to be in *Asia*, and not in Europe.

The holy mountaynes.

Tanais the lesse.

From Moscouia to Asoph.

Moscouia in Asia and not in Europe.

More directly from Moscouia to Cathay.

The prouince of Permia.

THe great and large prouince of *Permia*, is distant from *Moscouia* two hundred and fyftie, or (as some sai) three hundred leagues, directly betwene the East and North: and hath a citie of the same name by the ryuer *Vischora*, which runneth .x. leagues beneth *Camam*. The iorney by land can scarsely be trauailed thither but in winter, by reaso of many riuers, matisches, and fens. But in sommer, this iorney is dispatched with more facilitie in boates or smal ships by *Vuolochda Vstiug*, and the ryuer

Marysches in sommer.

Vitzchda

Vitzechda, which runneth into *Duina*. xii. leagues from *Vstiug*. But they that go from *Permia* to *Vstiug*, must sayle vp the ryuer *Viſchora* agaynſt the courſe of the ſtreame: and paſſyng ouer certayne ryuers, ſometymes alſo conueying theyr boates into other ryuers by land, they come at the length to *Vstiug*, three hundred leagues diſtant from the citie of *Permia*.

Duina. Vstiug.

There is ſmal vſe of bread in this prouince. For theyr yeerely tribute, they pay to the Prince furres and horſes. They haue a priuate language, and letters of theyr owne, which one Stephen a Byſhop (who confirmed them yet waueryng in the fayth) did inuent. For before, beyng yet infantes in the faith of Chriſt, they ſtewe and ſteyde an other Byſhop that was appoynted to inſtruct them. This Stephen afterward when *Demetrius* the ſonne of Iohn reygned, was taken for a Sainct among the *Ruſſens*. Of theſe people there yet remayne many Idolatours here and there in the woods, whom the Munkes and Heremites that go thyther, do not ceaſe to conuert from theyr vaine errour. In the winter they ioyney to *Artach*, as they do in many places of *Ruſſia*. *Artach*, are certaine long patentes of wood of almoſt ſix handfulles in length, which they make faſt to theyr feete with Latchets, and therwith performe theyr ioyneis with great celeritie. They vſe for this purpoſe great Dogges in the ſteade of other beaſtes, with the which they carry theyr fardels on ſleades, as other do with Hartes in other places, as we wyl further declare hereafter. They ſay that the prouince toward the Eaſt confineth with the prouince called *Tumen*, parteining to the *Tartars*.

Tribute Furres and Horſes.

Munkes and Heremites.

Patentes.

Marcus Paulus wryteth that theſe doggs are almoſt as bygas Aſſes: & that they vſe ſix to one ſleade.

The ſituation of the prouince of *Iugaria*, is apparent by that which we haue ſayd before. The *Moſcouites* call it *Iuhra* with an aſpiration: and call the people *Iuhrici*.

Iugaria.

This is that *Iugaria* from whence the *Hungarians* came in tyme paſt, poſſeſſed *Pannonia*, and vnder the conduct of *Attila*, ſubdued many prouinces of *Europe*: wherein the *Moſcouites* doo greatly glorye, that a nation ſubiect to them, inuaded and waſted a great part of *Europe*. *Georgius Paruus*, a Greeke borne, and a man of reputation with the Prince of *Moſcouia*, wylyng to aſcribe to the ryght of his Prince the great Dukedome of *Lithuania*, and the kyngdome of *Polonie*, with certayne other Dominions, tolde me that the *Iuhgarici* or

Hungaria. Pannonia. Attila.

rici or *Iubgarie*, beyng subiects to the great Duke of *Moscouia*, came fooryth of theyr owne countrey, and fyrst inhabited the regions about the Fennes of *Meotis*, and then *Pannonie*. which was afterward called *Hungarie*, by the ryuer of *Danubius*: Also that in fine they possessed the region of *Morauia*, so named of the ryuer: and lykewyse *Pollonie*, so called of *Polle*, whiche signifieth a playne. Furthermore that *Buda* was so called after the name of the brother of *Attila*. They say also that the *Iubgarie* vse the same tongue that do the *Hungarians*: the whiche whether it be true or not, I do not know. For although I haue made diligent inquisition to knowe the trueth hereof, yet could I fynde no man of that region with whom my seruaunt, beyng expert in the *Hungarian* tongue, might speake. They also pay furres for theyr tributes to the Prince of *Moscouia*. And albeit that pearles and precious stones, are brought from thence to *Moscouia*, yet are they not geathered in theyr *Ocean*, but in other places: especially about the coast of the *Ocean*, neare vnto the mouthes of *Duina*.

The hygher or superiour Hungarie, is called Austria.

Polonie.

Buda.

Furres.

Pearles, & precious stones.

Sibier.

The prouince of *Sibier*, confineth with *Permia*, and *Vuiathka*: the whiche, whether it haue anye castels or cities, I do not yet certaynely knowe: In this, the ryuer *Iaick* hath his originall, and falleth into the *Caspian* sea. They say that this region is desart, because it lyeth so neare the *Tartars*: or that yf it be in any part inhabited, the same to be possessed of the *Tartar Schichmamai*. Thinhabitantes haue a peculiar language: and haue theyr cheefe gaynes by the furres of Marternes, whiche in fairnesse and greatnesse, excel al the furres of that kynd that are found in any other prouinces. Yet could I haue no greate plentie of them in *Moscouia* at my beyng there.

Aspreolos, I thynke to bee Marternes: yet some thinke them to be Squirels, Gesnerus wryteth that the kinges of the Tartars, haue their tentes couered without with the skinnes of Lions: & within, with the skynnes of Sables and Ermines.

Note that long after the wrytyng of this hystorie, at Richard Chaunceler his fyrst beyng in *Moscouia*, Duke John *Vasiliuiche* that nowe reygneth, subdued all the *Tartars* with theyr regions and prouinces, euen vnto the great citie and mart towne of *Astrachan* & the *Caspian sea*. At the same tyme also, there was in the Dukes Court an ambassadour that came from this prouince of *Sibier*, who declared that his father had been sent Ambassadour to the great *Chan* of *Cathay*, and that the great citie of *Cambalu*, where the great *Chan* kepeth his Court in wynter, was in maner distroyed by Nigromancie and Magicall Artes, wherein the *Cathyans* are very expert as wryteth *Marcus Paulus Venetus*.

There was also at the same tyme thambassadour of the kyng of *Persia* called the great *Sophie*. This Ambassadour was apparelled al in Scarlet, and spake muche to the Duke in the behalfe of our men, of whose kyngdome and trade he was not ignorant.

The

The people called *Czeremisse*, dwell in the wooddes beneth *Nouogradia* the lower. They haue a peculiar language, and are of the secte of *Machumet*. They were sometyme subiecte to the kyng of *Casan*: but the greater part of them are nowe subiecte to the prince of *Moscouia*. Many of them at my beyng there, were brought to *Moscouia*, as suspected of rebellion. This nation doth inhabite a large region without houses from *Vuiathka* and *Vuolochda*, to the ryuer of *Rama*. All the nation, aswell women as men, are very swifte of foote, and expert archers: wherin they so delyght, that they bowes are in maner neuer out of their handes: and geue they children no meate vntyll they hyt the marke they shoote at. Two leagues distaunt from *Nouogradia* the lower, were many houses to the similitud of a citie or towne, where they were accustomed to make salte. These a fewe yeeres since beyng burnt of the *Tartars*, were restored by the commaundement of the prince.

Czeremisse.

Habitation without houses.

Salte.

Mordwa, are people inhabytyng by the ryuer of *Volga* on the south banke beneth *Nouogradia* the lower, and are in al thinges lyke vnto the *Czeremisses*, but that they haue more houses. And here endeth the empire of the *Moscouites*.

Note here that *Matthias* of *Michou*, in his booke of *Sarmatia Asiatica*, writeth that the dominion of the Duke of *Moscouia* reacheth from the northwest to the southeast fyue hundred myles of Germanie, whiche are more then leagues: For they affirme that a German myle is more then three Englishe myles.

Of the Tartars.

WE will nowe adde hereunto somewhat of the people confinyng with the *Moscouites* towarde the East: of the which the *Tartars* of *Casan* are the fyrst. But before we speake of them particularly, we will fyrst rehearse somewhat of they manners and customes in general.

The Tartars of Casan.

The *Tartars* are diuided into companies, which they cal *Hordas*, of the whiche the *Horda* of the *Sauolhenses* is the chiefe in fame and multitude: For it is sayde that the other *Hordas* had they offspring and originall of this. And albeit that euery *Horda* hath his peculiar name, as the *Sauolhenses*, *Precropenses*, and *Nahais*, with dyuers other, beyng all *Machumetans*, yet do they take it euyll, and count it reproche to be called Turkes: but wyll them selues to be called *Besermani*, by the which name also the Turkes desyre to be called.

Horda.

Besermani.

And

The ſtature of the Tartars.

And as the *Tartares* inhabite many prouinces reachyng far on euery ſyde, euen ſo in maners and order of lyuyng do they not agree in all thynges. They are men of meane ſtature, with hyde and fatte faces, holowe eyde, with rough and thycke beardes, and poulde heades. Onely the noble men haue long heare, and that exceedyng blacke, whiche they weath on both ſydes theyr eares. They are ſtrong of body, and ſtoute of mind, prone to leacherye, and that vnnaturall. They eate the fleſhe of Horſes, Camelles, and other beaſtes, except Hogges, from whiche they abſteyne by a lawe. They can ſo abyde faſting and hunger, that they ſometyme forbeare meate and ſleepe for the ſpace of foure dayes, occupied neuertheleſſe about their neceſſary affayres. Agayne, when they get any thyng to deuoure, they ingorge them ſelues beyonde meaſure, and with that furfect in maner recompence theyr former abſtinence. And beyng thus oppreſſed with laboure and meate, they ſleepe continually for the ſpace of three or foure dayes, without doyng any maner of worke or laboure: duryng which tyme the *Liuons* and *Moſcouites*, into whoſe dominions they are accuſtomed to make their incurſions, aſſayle them vnwares, thus oppreſſed with meate and ſleepe, lying ſcattered here and there out of order without watch or ward. Alſo if when they ryde, they be moleſted with hunger and thyrſt, they vſe to lette theyr horſes blood, and with drynkyng the ſame, ſatiſfye theyr preſent neceſſitie, and affirme theyr horſes to be the better thereby. And becauſe they all wander in vnknowen places, they vſe to dyrect theyr iorneys by thaſpect of the ſtarres, and eſpecially of the pole ſtarre, which in theyr tongue they call *Seleſnikoll*, (that is) an Iron nayle. They greatly delyght in Mares mylke, and beleeue that it maketh men ſtrong and fatte. They eate hearbes very much, and eſpecyally ſuch as growe about *Tanais*. Fewe of them vſe ſalt. When theyr kynges diſtribute any vytayles among them, they are accuſtomed to geue one horſe or cowe to fourtie men. Of the ſlayne beaſte, the bowells and tripes are reſerued for the chiefe men and captains. Theſe they heate at the fyre, vntil they may ſhake out the doong, and then deuoure them gredyly. They lucke and lycke, not only theyr fingers imbrued with fat, but alſo theyr kniues, & ſtyckes wherwith they ſcrape the doong from the guttes.

Then abſteine from hogges fleſhe.

Abſtinence.

Voracitie.

So do the Turkes.

Ioyneing by the pole ſtarre.

Mares milke.

Horſe fleſhe eaten.

Clenly.

The

The heades of hoꝛſes are counted delicate diſhes with them, as are Boozes heades with vs, and are reſerued only foꝛ the cheef men. Theyꝛ hoꝛſes (whereof they haue great aboundance) are but ſmall, and with ſhoꝛt necks: but very ſtrong, and ſuch as can well away with labour and hunger. Theſe they feede with the bꝛaunches and barkes oꝛ ryndes of trees, and the rootes of hearbes and weedes, wherby they accuſtome them to hard feedyng, and exercyſe them to contynuall labour: by reaſon whereof (as ſay the *Moſcouites*) theyꝛ hoꝛſes are ſwyfter and moꝛe durable then any other: theſe kynde of hoꝛſes, they call *Pachmat*. They haue none other ſaddels and ſtyꝛops then of wood, except ſuch as they eyther bye of the Chꝛiſtians, oꝛ take from them by violence. Leſt theyꝛ hoꝛſe backes ſhoulde be hurt with theyꝛ ſaddelles, they vnderlay them with graſſe and leaues of trees. They alſo paſſe ouer riuers on hoꝛſ backe. But yf when they flee, they feare the purſuyng of theyꝛ enemies, then caſtyng awaye theyꝛ ſaddels, apparrell, and all other impedimentes, reſeruyng only theyꝛ armour and weapons, they flee amayne, and with great celeritie.

Hoꝛſe heades deyntie meates. The Tartars hoꝛſes.

Saddels and ſtyꝛops of wood.

Their women vſe the ſame kinde of apparrel that do the men, without any difference, except that they couer theyꝛ heades with lynnen bayles, & vſe lynnen hoſe much like vnto mariners ſlops. When theyꝛ queenes come a bꝛode, they are accuſtomed to couer theyꝛ faces. The other multitude of the common ſoꝛt that lyueth here and there in the fieldes, haue theyꝛ apparrell made of ſheepes ſkynnes, which they change not vntyll they be woꝛne & toꝛne in fytters. They tarrye not long in one place, iudgyng it a great miſerie ſo to do. Inſomuch that when they are angry with their chyldꝛen, the greateſt curſe that they can geue them, is that they may remayne perpetually in one place, & dꝛawe the ſtynch of theyꝛ owne fylthyneſſe as do the Chꝛiſtians. When they haue conſumed the paſture in one place, they go to an other with their dꝛoues of cattaile, and theyꝛ wiues and chyldꝛen, whom they euer carry about with them in Wagons: albeit the *Tartars* that dwell in cities and townes, vſe an other oꝛder of lyuyng.

The Tartars women.

The Tartars curſe.

If they be incloſed with any daungerous warre, they place theyꝛ wyues, chyldꝛen, and olde folkes, in the ſaueſt places. There is no Juſtice among them. Foꝛ yf any man ſtande in

No iuſtice among the Tartars.

neade of any thyng, he may without punishement take it a waye from an other. If any complayne to the Iudge of the violence and wrong doone vnto hym, the offender denieth not the crime, but sayeth that he coulde not lacke that thyng. Then the Iudge is wont to geue this sentence: If thou also shalt haue neade of any thyng, do the lyke to other. Some say they do not steale: But whether they steale or not, let other iudge. They are surely a theeuyshe kynde of people, and very poore, lyuyng only by robbyng of other, and stealyng away other mens cattayle, and violently also carryying away the men them selues, whom eyther they sell to the Turkes, or proffer them to be redeemed by ransome, reseruyng only the young wenches. They seldome assault cities or castels, but burne and waste townes and villages: Insomuch that they so please them selues herein, that they thynke they haue so muche the more enlarged theyr Empire, in howe muche they haue wasted and made desolate many prouinces. And although they be most impacient of rest and quietnesse, yet do they not kyll or destroy one an other, except theyr kynges be at dissention betweene them selues. If any man be slayne in any fray or quarrell, and the autchours of the mischefe be taken, only theyr horse, harnesse, weapons, and apparrell, are taken from them, and they dismissed. So that the murderer by the losse of a vyle Horse or a Bowe, is discharged of the Iudge with these woordes: Get thee hence, and goe about thy businesse. They haue no vse of gold and syluer, except only a few merchauntes: but exercyse exchaunge of ware for ware. And yf it so chaunce that by sellyng of suche thynges as they haue stolne, they get anye money of theyr borderers, they bye therewith certayne apparrell and other necessaries of the *Moscouites*.

The Tartas are theeues and poore.

They reioyce in spoylyng.

The feelde-Tartars.

The regions of theyr habitations (the feelde *Tartars* I meane) are not lymitted with any boundes or borders. There was on a tyme a certayne fatte *Tarter* taken prysoner of the *Moscouites*: to whom, when the Prince sayde, howe art thou so fat thou dogge, syth thou hast not to eate? the *Tartar* aunswered, Why should not I haue to eate, syth I possesse so large a lande from the East to the West, whereby I may be abundantly nourysshed? But thou mayest rather seeme to lacke, syth thou inhabytest so small a portion of the woorlde, and dooest

A merry tale.

dayly

dayly stryue for the same.

Casan is a kyngdome, also a citie and a castle of the same name, scituate by the riuer *Volga*, on the further banke, almoste threescore and tenne leagues beneath *Nouogradia* the lower. Along by the course of *Volga* towarde the East and South, it is termined with desart feeldes: towarde the Sommer East, it confineth with the *Tartars*, called *Schibanski*, and *Kosatzki*. The kyng of this prouince is able to make an armie of thyrtie thousande men, especially footmen, of the which, the *Czeremisse* and *Czubaschi* are moste expert Archers. The *Czubaschi* are also cunnyng Mariners. The citie of *Casan* is threescore leagues distant from the principall castle *Vuiathka*. Furthermore, *Casan* in the *Tartars* language, signifieth a brasen pot boylyng. These *Tartars* are more ciuill then the other, for they dwell in houses, tyl the grounde, and exercise the trade of marchandies: They were of late subdued by *Basilius* the great Duke of *Moscouia*, and had their Kyng assigned them at his arbitrement: But shortlye after they rebelled agayne, and associate with other *Tartars*, inuaded the region of *Moscouia*, spoyled and wasted many cities and townes, and ledde away innumerable captiues, euen from the citie of *Moscouia*, which they possessed for a tyme, and had vtterly destroyed the same, yf it had not been for the valeauntnesse of the *Almaine* Gunners, whiche kept the castle with great ordinaunce. They also put Duke *Basilius* to flyght, and caused hym to make a letter of his owne hand to *Machmetgirei* theyr Kyng, to acknowledge hym selfe for a perpetuall tributarie to them: whereupon they dissolued the siege, and gaue the *Moscouites* free libertie to redeeme their captiues & goods, and so departed. But *Basilius* not long able to abyde this contumelie and dishonour, after that he had put to death suche as by flying at the first encountryng were the cause of this ouerthrow: assembled an armie of an hundred and fourescore thousande men shortly after, in the yeere. 1523. and sent forwarde his armie, vnder the conduct of his Lieuetenant, and therewith an Heralde at armes to bydde battell to *Machmetgirei* the Kyng of *Casan*, with woordes in this effecte. The last yeere, lyke a theefe and robber, without bydding of battel, thou diddest priuily oppresse

Casan.

The kynge of Casan.

Archers.

Mariners.

The towne Tartars.

Moscouia inuaded by the Tartars.

The prince of Moscouia tributary to the Tartars.

Duke Basilius army against the Tartars.

mee, wherefore I nowe chalenge thee, once agayne to proue the fortune of warre, if thou mystruste not thyne owne power. To this the Kyng answered, that there were manye wayes open for him to inuade *Moscouia*: and that the warres haue no lesse respecte to the commoditie of tyme and place, then of armure or strength: and that hee would take the aduauntage thereof, when and where it should seeme best to him, and not to other. With whiche woordes *Basilius* beyng greatly accensed, and burnyng with desyre of reuenge, inuaded the kingdome of *Casan*: whose Kyng beyng stryken with sodayne feare at the approche of so terrible an army, assigned the gouernaunce of his kyngdome to the yong Kyng of *Taurica* his Neuic, whyle he him selfe went to requyre ayde of the Emperour of the Turkes. But in fine, the Kyng of *Casan* submytted him selfe vppon certayne conditions of peace, which the *Moscouites* dyd the gladlyer accept for that tyme, because their victualles fayled them to mayntayne so great a multitude. But whereas Duke *Basilius* him selfe was not present at this last expedition, hee greatly suspected *Palitzki* the Lieuetenant of the army to bee corrupted with bybes, to proceede no further. In this meane tyme, the Kyng of *Casan* sent Ambassadours to *Basilius* to intreate of peace, whom I sawe in the Dukes courte at my beyng there: but I coulde perceyue no hope of peace to be betweene them. For euen then, *Basilius* to endomage the *Casans*, translated the marte to *Nouogradia*, whiche before was accustomed to be kepte in the Ilande of marchauntes, neare vnto the citie of *Casan*: Commaunding also vnder payne of greeuous punyshement, that none of his subiectes shoulde resorte to the Ilande of marchauntes: thynkyng that this translatiou of the marte shoulde greatly haue endomaged the *Casans*: and that only by takyng away their trade of salte (which they were accustomed to buye of the *Moscouites* at that marte) they should haue been compelled to submyssion. But the *Moscouites* them selues felte no lesse inconuenience heereby then dyd the *Casans*, by reason of the dearth and scarsenesse that folowed heereof, of all suche thinges as the *Tartars* were accustomed to bryng thyther by the ryuer of *Volga*.

The kyng of Casan submitteth hym selfe.

The Ilande of marchauntes

Volga, from the *Caſpian* ſea, the kyngdomes of *Perſia* and *Armenia*, and the marte towne of *Aſtrachan*: eſpecially the great number of moſt excellent fyſhes that are taken in *Volga*, both on the hyther and further ſyde of *Caſan*.

The Caſpian ſea.
Perſia.
Armenia.
Aſtrachan.

But hauyng ſayde thus muche of the warres betweene the prince of *Moſcouia* and the *Tartars* of *Caſan*, we will nowe proceede to ſpeake ſomewhat of the other *Tartars*, inhabiting the regions towarde the Southeaſt, and the *Caſpian* ſea.

Next beyond the *Tartars* of *Caſan*, are the *Tartars* called *Nagai* or *Nogai*, which inhabite the regions beyonde *Volga*, about the *Caſpian* ſea at the ryuer *Iaick*, runnyng out of the prouince of *Sibier*. Theſe haue no kynges but Dukes. In our tyme, three bretheren deuydyng the prouinces equally betweene them, poſſeſſed thoſe Dukedomes. The firſt of them named *Schidack*, poſſeſſeth the citie of *Scharaitzick*, beyonde the ryuer of *Rha* or *Volga*, toward the Eaſt, with the region confinyng with the ryuer *Iaick*. The ſeconde called *Coſſum*, enioyeth all the lande that lyeth betweene the ryuers of *Kaman*, *Iaick*, and *Volga*. The third brother named *Schichmamai*, poſſeſſeth parte of the prouince of *Sibier*, and all the region about the ſame. *Schichmamai*, is as much to ſay by interpretation, as holy or myghtie. And in maner all theſe regions are ful of woods, except that that lieth toward *Scharaitz*, which conſiſteth of playnes and fieldes.

The Tartars neare to the Caſpian ſea.
Nogai.

The poſſeſſion of three bretherne.

Betweene the riuers of *Volga* and *Iaick*, about the *Caſpian* ſea, there ſometimes inhabited the kinges called *Sawolhenſes*. *Demetrius Danielis* (a man among theſe Barbarians of ſingular faith & grauitie) tolde vs of a marueylous & in maner incredible thing, that is ſeene among theſe *Tartars*. And that his father being ſent by the prince of *Moſcouia* to the kyng of *Sawolhenſe*, ſaw while he was in that legacie, a certaine ſeede in that Iſland ſomewhat leſſe & rounder then the ſeeds of *Melones*: Of the which being hyd in the ground, there groweth a fruite or plante very lyke a Lambe, of the height of fiue ſpannes: and is therefore called in theyr tongue *Boranetz*, whiche ſignifieth a litle Lambe. For it hath the head, eyes, eares, and all other partes like vnto a Lambe newly eyned: with alſo a very thyn ſkyn, wherewith dyuers of the inhabitauntes of thoſe regions are accuſtomed to lyne theyr cappes and hattes, and other tyrements for theyr heades.

The kynges called Sawolhenſes.

A marueylous frute lyke a lambe.

Many also confirmed in our presence, that they had seene these Skynnes. He saide furthermore, that that plant (yf it may be called a plant) hath blood, and no flesshe, but hath in the steade of flesshe, a certayne substaunce lyke vnto the flesshe of Creuishes. The hoofes also are not of horne, as are the Lambes, but couered with heare in the same fourme. The roote cleaueth to the naupl or myddest of the belly: the plant or fruite lyueth until al the grasse & hearbes growing about it, being eaten, the roote wytherech for lacke of nourysshment. They say that it is very swecte to be eaten, and is therfore greatly desyred, and sought for of the Woolues, and other rauenyng beastes. And albeit I esteeme all that is sayde of this plant to be fabulous, yet forasmuche as it hath been tolde me of credible persons, I haue thought good to make mention hereof.

Wandeuile.

Of this strange fruite *Mandeuile* maketh mention, where in the.lxxxiiii. Chapter of his Booke, he wryteth thus: Nowe shal I say of some landes, countreys, and Iles that are beyonde the lande of *Cathay*: therefore whoso goeth from *Cathay* to *India* the hygh and the lowe, he shall goe through a Kyngdome that men call *Cadissen*, and is a great lande. There groweth a manner of fruite, as it were Gourdes, and when it is rype, men cut it asunder, and fynde therein a beast, as it were of flesshe, bone, and blood, as it were a litle Lambe, without wooll, and men eate that beast, and the fruite also, whiche is a great marueyle: neuertheless, I sayde vnto them, that I helde that for no marueyle, for I sayde, that in my countrey are trees that beare fruite, that become hydes fleeing, which are good to be eaten, and that that falleth into the water, lyueth, and that that falleth on the earth, dyeth: And they had great marueyle of this. &c.

Barnacles of the Dikeneps.

From the prince of *Schidacke*, proceedyng twentye dayes iourney towarde the East, are the people which the *Moscouites* cal *Iurgenci*, whose prynce is *Barack Soltan*, brother to the great *Chan* of *Cathay*. In tenne dayes iourney from *Barack Soltan*, they come to *Bebeid Chan*. And this is that great *Chan* of *Cathay*.

Barack Soltan.
Cathay.

Names

Names of dignities among the *Tartars*, are these, *Chan*, signifieth a Kyng: *Soltan*, the sonne of a Kyng: *Bij*, a Duke: *Mursa*, the sonne of a Duke: *Olboud*, a noble man, or counseller: *Olboadulu*, the sonne of a noble man: *Seid*, the hygh priest: *Ksi*, a priuate person.

The names of offices, are these, *Vlan*, the seconde dignitie to the Kyng: for the Kynges of the *Tartars* haue foure principal men, whose counsell they vse in all their weyghtie affayres: Of these, the firste is called *Schirni*: the seconde, *Barni*: the thyrde, *Gargni*: the fourth, *Tzipsan*. And to haue sayde thus muche of the *Tartars*, it shal suffise.

Marcus Paulus wryteth, that the great *Chan* is called *Chan Cublai*, that is, the great Kyng of Kynges, as the great Turcke wryteth hym selfe in lyke maner, as I sawe in a letter wrytten by hym of late in the citie of *Raguſa*, in the whiche he vseth this subscription. *Soltan Soliman deſclim Cham Signore de Signori in ſempiterno.*

The Nauigation by the froſen Sea.

AT my beyng in *Moſcouia*, when I was sent thyther by king *Ferdinando*, my lorde and maister, it so chaunced, that *Georgius Iſtoma*, the Duke of *Moſcouia* his Interpreter, a man of great experience, who had before learned the latine tongue in the court of *Iohn* king of *Denmarke*, was there present at the same tyme. He, in the yeere of Christe. 1496. beyng sent of his prince with maister *Dauid*, a Scotte borne, and then Ambassadour for the kyng of *Denmarke* (whom also I knewe there at my firste legacie) made me a breefe information of al the order of his iourney: the which,

forasmuch as it may seeme difficult and laborious, as wel for the distance as daungerous places, I haue thought good to describe the same as I receyued it at his mouth.

Nouogradia. Suecia vnder the kyng of Denmarke.

First, he sayde that beyng sent of his prince with the sayde Dauid, they came fyrst to *Nouogradia* the great. And whereas at that tyme the kyngdome of *Suecia* reuolted from the Kyng of Denmarke, & also the Duke of *Moscouia* was at discention with the *Suetians*, by reason whereof they could not passe by the most accustomed way, for the tumultes of warre, they attempted theyr iourney by an other way, longer, but safer, and came fyrst from *Nouogradia* to the mouthes of the ryuer of *Dwina* and *Potiwlo*, by a very difficult and paynfull iourney: For hee sayd that this iourney, which can not be to muche detested for such labours and trauayles, continueth for the space of three hundred leagues. In fine, takyng foure small shyppes or barkes at the mouthes of *Dwina*, they sayled by the coast on the right hand of the Ocean, where they sawe certayne hygh and rough mountaynes: and at the length saylyng .xvi. leagues, and passyng a great gulfe, folowed the coast on the lefte hande: and leauyng on the right hande the large sea whiche hath the name of the ryuer *Petzora* (as haue also the mountaynes adiacent to the same) they came to the people of *Finlappia*: who, although they dwell here & there in low cottagies by the sea syde, and leade in maner a beastly lyfe, yet are they more meeke and tractable then the wylde *Lappians*. He sayde that these also are tributaries to the prince of *Moscouia*. Then leauing the lande of the *Lappians*, and saylyng fourescore leagues, they came to the region of *Nortpoden*, vnder the dominion of the kyng of *Suecia*. This the *Moscouites* call *Kaienska Semla*, and the people *Kaieni*. Departyng from hence, and saylyng along by the coast of a wyndyng and bendyng shore reachyng towarde the ryght hande, they came to a promontorie or cape, called the Holy nose, being a great stone reachyng farre into the sea, to the similitude of a nose: vnder the which is seene a caue with a whyrlepoole, which swaloweth the sea euery syxe houres: and castyng foorth the same agayne with terryble roaryng and violence, causeth the sayde whyrlepoole. Some call this the Nauell of the sea: and other name it *Charibdis*. He affyrmeth that

Hygh mountaynes neare the north Ocean.

Finlappia.

The wylde Lappians.

The region of Nortpoden

The cape called the holy nose.

A whyrlpoole or swalowing goulfe.

the violence of this ſwalowing gulfe is ſuch, that it draweth into it, inuolueth, and ſwaloweth vp ſhyppes, & all other thinges that come neare it, and that they were neuer in greater danger. For the whirlepoole ſo ſodeynely and violently drue vnto it the ſhyp or barke wherein they were carryed, that with the helpe of Dres and great labour they hardly eſcaped. When they had thus ouerpaſſed the holy noſe, they came to a certayne ſtony mountaine, which they ſhould needes compaſſe about: but being there ſtayed with contrary windes for the ſpace of certaine dayes, the pylot of the ſhyp ſpake vnto them in this effect: This ſtone (ſayeth he) that you ſee, is called *Semes*: the whiche except wee pleaſe with ſome gyfte, we ſhall not paſſe by without great danger. But the Pylot beyng reproued of *Iſtoma* for his vayne ſuperſtition, helde his peace. And when they had ben deteined there by tempeſt for the ſpace of foure dayes, at the length the tempeſt ceaſſed, and they went forward on theyr viage with a proſperous wynde. Then the pylot ſpake vnto them agayne, ſaying: You deſpiſed my admonition of pleaſing the *Semes*, and ſcorned the ſame as vayne and ſuperſtitious: but if I had not priuilie in the night aſcended a rocke and pleaſed the *Semes*, we ſhould ſurely haue had no paſſage. Being demaunded what he offered to the *Semes*, hee ſayde that he poured butter myxt with otemeale vpon the ſtone which we ſawe reach footh into the ſea. As they ſayled further, they came to an other cape named *Motka*, whiche was almoſt enuironed with the ſea, lyke an Iſlande, in whoſe extreme pointe, is ſituate the Caſtel of *Barthus*, which ſome call *Wardhus*, (that is) a houſe of defence or foxtreſſe: For the kynges of Norway haue there a garriſon of men to defend theyr marches. He ſayde furthermore, that that cape reacheth ſo farre into the ſea, that they could ſcarſely compaſſe it in eyght dayes. By which taryng leaſte they ſhould be hyndered, they caryed on theyr ſhoulders with great labour, theyr barkes and fardelles ouer a ſtreyght of lande conteynyng halfe a league in breadth. From hence they ſayled to the region of the wylde *Lappones*, called *Dikillappones*, to a place named *Dront*, beyng. 200. leagues diſtant from *Dwina*, toward the North. And thus far as he ſayth, doth the prince of *Moſcouia* exacte tribute. Furthermore, leauing

Such whyrle pooles, are cauled vipers

The ſtone called Semes.

Superſtition

Sacrifice to the ſtone Semes.

The cape Motka.

The caſtel of Wardhus.

The region of the wylde Lappones.

Dront,

Iourneying on Sleades.

their Barkes here, they furnyshed the residue of their iourney on Sleades. He further declared, that there were heards of Hartes, as are with vs of Oxen, which in the *Noruegians* tongue are called *Rhen*, beyng somewhat bygger then our Hartes. These the *Lappones* vse in this maner: They ioyne them to Sleades made lyke fysher Boates, as we put hoyses to the Cart, the man in the Sleade is tyed fast by the feete, lest he fal out by the swift course of the Hartes. In his leaft hande he holdeth a coller or reigne, wherewith he moderateth the course of the Hartes: and in the ryght hand a pyked staffe, wherwith he may susteyne the Sleade from fallyng, yf it chaunce to decline too muche on anye parte.

How the Harts draw Sleades.

Twentye leagues in one day

And he tolde me, that by this meanes he trauayled. xx. leagues in one day, and then dismysſed the Hart, who by hym selfe returned to his owne maister and accustomed stable. This iourney thus finished, they came to *Berges* a citie of *Noruegia*, or *Norway*, situate directlye towarde the North, betweene the mountaynes, and went from thence to *Denmarke* on hoyst backe. At *Dront* and *Berges* the day is sayde to be. xvii. houres long in the Sommer Equinoctial. *Blasius*, an other of the prynce of *Moscouia* his Interpreters, who a fewe yeeres before was sent of his prynce into Spayne to the Emperour, declared vnto vs an other and shorter way of his iourney: for he sayde, that when he was sent from *Moscouia* to *Iohn* the kyng of *Denmarke*, he came firste on foote vnto *Rostowe*, and takyng shyppe there, came to *Pereaslaw*: and from *Pereaslaw*, by the riuer *Volga*, to *Castromow*: and that from thence, goyng seuen werstes by lande, he came to a litle ryuer, saylyng by the whiche, when firste he came to *Berges* in *Norway*, ouerpassyng in this viage al the perylles and labours that *Istoma* rehearsed before, he came at length to *Hafnia* the cheefe citie of *Denmarke*, whiche the *Germanes* call *Koppenhagen*: but in their returnyng home, they both confesse that they came to *Moscouia* by *Liuonia*, and that they were a yeere in this viage: albeit *Georgius Istoma* sayde, that halfe the parte of that tyme he was hyndered by tempestes, and inforced to tarrye long in manye places by the way, yet they both lykewyse constantly affyrme, that in this iourney eyther of them trauayled a thousande, threescore, and ten werstes, that

The citie of Berges in Norway.

A shorter iourney.

Rostowe.
Pereaslaw.
Castromow.

Vuolochda.
Suchana.
Dwina.
Hafnia.
Koppenhagen.

Liuonia.

Werst is almost an Italian myle.

(that is) three hundred and fourtie leagues. Furthermore also *Demetrius*, who of late was sent ambassadour from the prince of *Moscouia* to the Bishop of Rome, (by whose relation also *Paulus Iouius* wrote his description of *Moscouia*) confirmed all these thynges to be true. All they beyng demaunded of me of the congeled or frosen sea, made none other answere, but that in places neere vnto that sea, they sawe many and great ryuers, by whose vehemente course and abundant flowyng, the seas are dryuen farre from the shore: and that the sayde water of the ryuers is frosen with the sea a good space from the lande, as in *Liuonia* and other partes of *Suecia*. For although by the vehemencie of the wyndes, the Isle is broken in the sea, yet doth this chaunce seldome or neuer in ryuers, except by some innundation or fludde the Isle geathered togeather be lyfted vp and broken. For the flakes or pieces of Isle caryed into the sea by force of the ryuers, do flote aboue the water in maner all the whole yeere, and are agayne so vehemently frosen togeather, that a man may there sometymes see great heapes of the Isle of manie yeeres, as doth appeare by suche pieces as are dryuen to the shore by the wynde. I haue also been credibly informed by faythfull men, that the sea *Baltheum* (otherwyse called the gulfe of *Liuonia*) is oftentymes frosen in many places. They say furthermore, that in that region whiche is inhabited of the wylde *Lappones*, the Sunne in the sommer Equinoctiall doth not fall for the space of .xl. dayes: yet that the body thereof is so hydden with a darke myste or cloude three houres, that the beames do not appeare: neuertheless to geue such light during that time, that the darkenesse hyndereth not theyr woorke. The *Moscouites* make theyr boste that these wylde *Lappones* are tributaries to theyr prynce. Whereat I do not greatly marueyle, forasmuch as they haue none other neere vnto them, that may demaund tribute of them. Theyr tribute is onely furres and fysshe, hauyng in maner none other thyng greatly commodious. And albeit they lacke bread, salte, and other intysementes of gluttony, and lyue onely with fysshe and wylde beastes, yet are they exceedyng prone to lechery. They are suche expert archers, that if in theyr huntyng they espye any beastes, whose skynnes they desyre to saue vnperyshed, they wyll not lyghtly mysse to hytte hym

Paulus Iouius.

Ryuers fallyng into the frosen sea.

wynde.

Isle.

Isle of many yeeres.

The sea Baltheum.

Where the Sunne falleth not in .xl. days.

The wyld Lappones are tributares to the Moscouites.

Furres and fysshe.

Expert archers

in

in the nosethyrlles. When they go foorth on huntyng, they are accustomed to leaue at home with theyr wyues suche merchauntes or straungers as they haue receyued into theyr houses: So that if at theyr returne, they perceyue theyr wyues through the companye of the strangers to be merier and more iocunde then the were woonte to be, they geue the straungers some present. But if they fynde it otherwyse, they thrust them foorth of the doores with woordes of reproche. But nowe by the companye they haue with strangers that resort thyther for gaynes, they begyn to leaue theyr native barbarousnesse. They gladly admytte merchauntes, because they bryng them apparell of grose cloth: also hatchettes, needels, spones, knyues, drynkyng cuppes, earthen and brasen pottes, with such other necessarie wares: So that they vse now to eate sodden and rosted meate, and do embrase more ciuile maners. Their owne apparell is made of the skinnes of diuers beastes sowed togeather. And in this apparel they somtimes come to *Moscouia*. Yet fewe of them haue cappes or hosen, which they vse to make of hartes skynnes. They haue not the vse of golde or syluer mony: but vse only barteryng of ware for ware. And being ignorant of other languages besyde theyr owne, they seeme among straungers to be in maner dombe. Theyr cotages are couered onely with the barkes of trees. They haue no certaine resting habitation: But when they haue consumed the fishe and wild beastes in one place, they remoue to an other. Furthermore also the saide ambassadours of the prince of *Moscouia* declared, that in the same partes they sawe certayne hygh mountaynes, continually casting foorth flames of fyre, as doth the mountayne of *Etna* in the Ilande of *Sicilia*: and that euen in Norway many mountaynes are fallen downe and burnt in maner to ashes with such continuall flames. Which thyng some consideryng, fayne the fyre of Purgatorie to be there. And as concernyng these mountaynes of Norway, when I was sent ambassadour to *Christierne* king of Denmarke, I was enformed the lyke by the gouernours of Norway, who chaunced at that tyme to be present there.

Goodfelowshyp.

Necessarie wares.

No vse of mony.

Theyr cotages.

Mountaynes continually burnyng.

About the mouthes of the ryuer *Petzora* that are towarde the ryght hande from the mouthes of *Duina*, are sayde to be dyuers and great beastes in the Ocean: and among other, a certayne

The ryuer Petzora.

certayne great beast as byg as an Oxe, which the inhabitauntes call Moys. This beast hath short feete lyke a Beuer or an Otter, with a breast somewhat hygh and brode, for the proportion of the residue of his body, and two long and great teeth groweyng out of the vpper iawe. These beastes for rest and encrease, do sometymes leaue the Ocean, and by great heardes ascend the mountaynes: where, before they geue them selues to profounde sleepe (whereunto they are naturaly enclined) they appoynt one of theyr number as it were a watch man, as do Cranes for the securitie of the rest. Which yf he chaunce to sleepe, or to be slaine of the hunters, the residue may easly be taken. But yf the watchman geue warnyng with royryng (as the maner is) immediately the whole heard awakened thereby, sodaynely put theyr hinder feete to theyr teeth, and so fallyng from the mountaine with great celeritie as it were on a sleade, they cast them selues headlong into the Ocean: where also they rest and sleepe for a while vpon the heapes of yse. The hunters pursue these beastes onlye for theyr teeth: Of the whiche the *Moscouites*, *Tartars*, and especially the *Turkes*, make haftes for swordes and daggers very artificially: and vse these rather for ornament, then to geue the greater stroke for the weyght or heauynesse thereof, as some fable. Also among the *Turkes*, *Moscouites*, and *Tartars*, these teeth are solde by weyght, and are called the teeth of fyshes.

The beast called Moys.

The prouidence of nature.

The frosen sea reacheth farre and wyde beyonde *Duina*, to *Petzcora*, and vnto the mouthes of the great ryuer *Obi*: beyonde the whiche they say to be the region of *Engreonland*, vnknowen and seperate from the trade and conuersation of our men, by reason of hygh mountaynes couered, and colde with perpetuall snow, and the sea no lesse incumbred with continuall yse, which hindereth nauigations, and maketh them daungerous, as they say.

The frosen sea.

Engreonland or greonland.

(··)

Exemplar

Exemplar Epistolę seu Literarum

Missiuarum, quas illustrissimus Princeps Eduardus, eius nominis Sextus, Angliæ, Franciæ, et Hiberniæ Rex, misit ad Principes Septentrionalem, ac Orientalem, mundi plagam inhabitantes iuxta mare glaciale, nec non Indiam Orientalem. Anno Domini. 1553. Regni sui Anno septimo, et vltimo.

EDuardus sextus, Angliæ, Franciæ, & Hiberniæ Rex. &c. Omnibus Regibus et principibus ac Dominis, et cunctis Iudicibus terræ, et Ducibus eius, quibuscunque est excellens aliqua dignitas in ea, cunctis in locis quæ sunt sub vniuerso cælo: Pax, tranquillitas, & honor vobis, terris, et regionibus vestris quæ imperio vestro subiacent, cuiquæ vestrum quemadmodum conuenit ei. Propterea quod indidit Deus Opt. Max. hominibus præ cunctis aliis viuentibus, cor & desiderium tale, vt appetat quisquæ cum aliis societatem inire, amare, et vicissim amari, beneficijs afficere, et mutua accipere beneficia studeat, ideo cuiquæ pro facultate sua hoc desiderium in omnibus quidem hominibus beneficijs fouere et conseruare conuenit, in illis autem maxime, qui hoc desiderio adducti, a remotis etiam regionibus ad eos veniunt. Quo enim longius iter, eius rei gratia ingressi sunt, eo ardentius in eis hoc desiderium fuisse declararunt. Insuper etiam ad hoc, nos patrum maiorumq; nostrorum exempla inuitant, qui semper humanissime susceperunt et benignissime tractauerunt illos, qui tum a locis propinquis, tum a remotis, eos amice adibant, eorum se protectioni commendantes. Quod si omnibus id prestare æquum est, certe mercatoribus imprimis prestari debet, qui per vniuersum orbem discurrunt, mare circumlustrantes et aridam, vt res bonas et vtiles que Dei beneficio in regione eorum inueniuntur, ad remotissimas regiones et regna adferant, atquæ inde viuissim referant, quod suæ regioni vtile ibi repererint: vt et populi ad quos eunt, non destituantur commodis, quæ non profert illis terra eorum, & ipsi sint participes rerum, quibus illi abundant. Nam Deus cæli et terræ, humano generi maxime consulens, noluit vt omnia in quauis regione inuenirentur, quo regio ope alterius regionis indigeret, et gens ab alio gente commodum aliquod expectaret, ac ita stabiliretur

amicitia

amicitia inter omnes, ſingulique omnibus benefacere quererent. Hoc itaque ineundæ ac ſtabiliendæ amicitiæ deſiderio moti viri quidam regni noſtri, iter in remotas maritimas regiones inſtituerunt, vt inter noſtros et illos populos, viam mercibus inferendis et eferendis aperirent, noſque rogauerunt vt id illis concederemus. Qui petitioni illorum annuentes, conceſſimus viro honorabili et forti, Hugoni Wilibeo, et alijs qui com eo ſunt ſeruis noſtris fidis et charis, vt pro ſua voluntate, in regiones eis prius incognitas eant, queſituri ea quibus nos caremus, et adducant illis ex noſtris terris, id quod illi carent. Atque ita illis et nobis commodum inde accedat, ſitque amicitia perpetua, et fœdus indiſſolubile inter illos et nos, dum permittent illi nos accipere de rebus, quibus ſuperabundant in regnis ſuis, et nos concedemus illis ex regnis noſtris res, quibus deſtituuntur. Rogamus itaque vos Reges et principes, & omnes quibus aliqua eſt poteſtas in terra, vt viris iſtis noſtris, tranſitum permittatis per regiones veſtras. Non enim tangent quicquam ex rebus veſtris inuitis vobis. Cogitate quòd homines et ipſi ſunt. Et ſi qua re caruerint, oramus pro veſtra beneficencia, eam vos illis tribuatis, accipientes viciſſim ab eis, quod poterunt rependere vobis. Ita vos gerite erga eos, quemadmodum cuperetis vt nos, et ſubditi noſtri, nos gereremus erga ſeruos veſtros, ſi quando tranſierint per regiones noſtras. Atque promittimus vobis per Deum omnium quæ cœlo, terra et mari continentur, perque vitam noſtrum, et tranquillitatem regnorum noſtrorum, nos pari benignitate ſeruos veſtros accepturos, ſi ad regna noſtra aliquando venerint. Atq; a nobis et ſubditis noſtris, ac ſi nati fuiſſẽt in regnis noſtris ita benignè tractabuntur, vt rependamus vobis benignitatem, quam noſtris exhibueritis. Poſtquam vos Reges, Principes. &c. rogauimus vt humanitate et beneficentia omni proſequamini ſeruos noſtros nobis charos, oramus omnipotentem Deum noſtrum, vt vobis diuturnam vitam largiatur, et pacem que nullam habeat finem. Scriptum Londini, quæ ciuitas eſt regni noſtri. Anno .5515. a creato mundo, menſe Iiar, xiiii. die menſis, anno ſeptimo regni noſtri.

The

The copy of the letters miſſiue whiche the ryght noble prince Edwarde the .vi. ſent to the Kynges, Princes, and other potentates inhabityng the Northeſt partes of the worlde towarde the myghty Empire of Cathay, at ſuch tyme as ſyr Hugh VVilloby knyght and Richard Chaunceler, with theyr company, attempted theyr voyage thyther in the yeere of Chriſt .1553. and the .vii. and laſt yeere of his reigne.

EDwarde the ſyxt by the grace of God, king of England, Fraunce and Ireland, &c. To all Kynges, Princes, Rulers, Iudges, and Gouernours of the earth, and all other hauyng any excellent dignitie on the ſame in all places vnder the vniuerſall heauen: Peace, tranquilitie, and honour, be vnto you, and your landes and regions whiche are vnder your dominions, and to euery of you, as is conuenient.

Foraſmuche as the great and almyghtie God hath geuen vnto mankynde, aboue all other lyuing creatures, ſuch a hart and deſyre, that euery man deſyreth to ioyne frendeſhyp with other, to loue and be loued, alſo to geue and receyue mutuall benefites: it is therefore the duetie of all men, accordyng to theyr power, to mayntayne and increaſe this deſyre in euery man, with well deſeruing to all men, and eſpecially to ſhewe this good affection to ſuch, as beyng moued with this deſyre, come vnto them from farre countreis. For in howe much the longer voyage they haue attempted for this intent, ſo much the more do they thereby declare that this deſyre hath ben ardent in them. Furthermore alſo, the exemples of our fathers and predeceſſours do inuite vs herevnto, foraſmuch as they haue euer gentelly and louyngly intreated ſuch as of frendely mynde came to them, alſwell from countreys neere hand, as far remote, commending them ſelues to their protection. And if it be ryght and equitie to ſhewe ſuch humanitie towarde all men, doubtleſſe the ſame ought chiefely to be ſhewed to merchauntes, who wanderyng about the worlde, ſearch both the lande and the ſea, to cary ſuche good and profitable thynges as are founde in theyr countreys, to remote regions and kyng-

domes.

domes,and agayne to bryng from the same, suche thynges as they fynde there commodious for theyr owne countreys: both aswell that the people, to whom they goe, may not be destitute of suche commodities as theyr countreys bryng not foorth to them,as that also they may be partakers of suche thynges wherof they abounde. For god of heauen and earth, greatly prouydyng for mankynd, would not that al thinges should bee founde in one region, to thende that one should haue neede of an other, that by this meanes frendshyp myght be establyshed among all men, and euery one seeke to gratifie all. For the establyshing and furtheraunce of whiche vniuersall amitie, certayne men of our realme, moued hereunto by the sayde desire, haue instituted and taken vpon them a viage by sea into farre countreys, to the intent that betweene our people and them, a way be opened to bryng in, and carry out merchandizes, desiryng vs to further theyr enterpryse. Who assentyng to theyr petition, haue licenced the ryght valiaunt and worthy sir Hugh Willoby Knyght, and other our trusty and faythful seruantes which are with him, accordyng to theyr desire, to go to countreys to them heretofore vnknowen, aswell to seeke suche thynges as we lacke, as also to carry vnto them from our regions, suche thynges as they lacke. So that hereby not only commoditie may ensue both to them and to vs, but also an indissoluble and perpetuall league of frendshyp be establyshed betweene vs both, whyle they permit vs to take of theyr thyngs,such whereof they haue aboundaunce in theyr regions, and we agayne graunt them suche thynges of ours whereof they are destitute. We therfore desire you Kyngs and Princes, and all other to whom there is any power on the earth, to permit vnto these our seruantes, free passage by your regions and dominions : for they shall not touche any thyng of yours vnwylling vnto you. Consider you that they also are men. If therefore they shall stande in neede of any thyng, we desire you of all humanitie, and for the nobilitie whiche is in you, to ayde and helpe them with suche thynges as they lacke, receyuyng agayne of them suche thynges as they shalbe able to geue you in recompence. Shew your selues so towards them,as you would that we and our subiectes should shew our selues towards your seruantes,if at any time they shall passe by our regions.

Thus

Thus doyng, we promise you by the God of all thyngs that are conteyned in heauen, earth, and the sea, and by the lyfe and tranquilitie of our kyngdomes, that we wyll with lyke humanitie accept your seruantes if at any tyme they shall come to our kyngdomes, where they shall as frendly and gently be entertayned, as if they were borne in our dominions, that we may hereby recompence the fauour and benignitie which you haue shewed to our men. Thus after we haue desired you Kynges and Princes. &c. With all humanitie and fauour, to entertayne our welbeloued seruantes, we wyll pray our almyghtie God to graunt you long lyfe, & peace, which neuer shall haue end. Wrytten in London whiche is the cheefe citie of our kyngdome: in the yeere from the creation of the worlde 5515. in the moneth of Iiar, the fourteene day of the moneth, and seuenth yeere of our reigne.

Iiar, I would reade Mair, that is in the Saracen language, mixt of Turkish & Egiptian, Februarp, interpreted by them the moneth to set sayls to the sea.

This letter was wrytten also in Greeke, and diuers other languages.

(*)

Other

The voyages of Persia, traueiled by the merchauntes of London, of the company and felowshyp of *Moscouia*. In the yeeres. 1561. 1567. 1568.

IT shall not heere be needefull to wryte any thyng of the way from hence to *Moscouia* by sea, vnto the porte of Saincte Nicolas, where our merchantes haue a house of their trafique, for as muche as the same is alreby well knowen. And therefore it shall suffice for the description of this voyage, to shewe the way from Sainct Nicolas in *Moscouia* vnto *Persia*, as our men traueyled by the regions of *Moscouia* vnto the *Caspian* sea, and by that sea into *Media* and *Persia*, vnto the courte of the great Sophie Kyng of *Persia*, and many other realmes and kyngdomes subiecte vnto the same, as hereafter shall bee more particularly declared, with suche breuitie as the tyme and matter now requireth. Forasmuch as many thinges myght bee written touchyng this voyage, and the merchauntes trafique in these regions, whiche for many great considerations ought not to be publyshed or put in pryut: and therefore touchyng only those thinges, it shall suffice to the reader to vnderstande the description of the regions, with the maners and customes of the people of those countreys, after the maner of a Geographicall historie, partely to delight and content the desyre of suche as take pleasure in the knowledge of straunge thinges and countreys, whereby the mynde of man increaseth in wisedome and knowledge, both in humane affayres, and also of the marueylous and manyfolde workes of god & nature, that thereby God may be glorified and sanctified in all his workes, in the spirites of all good and vertuous men which delight in the same. And whereas in the description of this voyage, I may seeme to haue kepte no due order of wryting, I shal desire the reader to haue me excused, for that I coulde not orderly haue any information of them that came from *Persia*: but was fayne to geather certayne notes

only by communication and conference with them at ſundrye tymes, with fewe woordes as occaſion ſerued. But now to enter into the voyage.

From the merchauntes houſe at the porte of Sainct Nicolas in *Moſcouia*, they traueyle vp the ryuers of *Duina* and *Sachana*, vntyll they come vnto the citie of *Vologda*, (where alſo the merchantes haue an other houſe) a thouſande werſtes or *Rus* myles, or myles of *Ruſsia*, whiche may bee about ſeuen hundred Englyſhe myles. Then from *Vologda* ouerlande, to the citie of *Yeraſlaue*, which lyeth on the ryuer *Volga*, a hundred and foure-ſcore *Rus* myles. At this citie of *Yeraſlaue*, the merchantes lande theyr goods for *Perſia*, and buylded theyr ſhyppes there vppon the ſayde ryuer, at a place named *Vſtwicki Zeleſnoy*, about a hundred myles from *Yeraſlaue*. So traueylyng from thence downe the ryuer *Volga*, vntyll they come to *Aſtracan*, a ſorte of the Emperour of *Moſcouia*, lying threeſcore myles from the *Caſpian* ſea. Vppon *Volga* lyeth a great towne of merchaundies, named *Coſtrum*, and beyonde that a ſtrong Caſtell of bricke, named *His Nouogorod*, ſtandyng vppon a hyll. And from thence, vppon an arme of the ſame ryuer, lyeth a great fortreſſe named *Cazan*, which the *Moſcouite* woon from the *Tartars*, *Nogais* being their chiefe and principall holde: and therewith conquered the whole countrey of *Cazan*, or the *Tartars Cazamites*, conteynyng two thouſande myles. From *Cazan* vpon the ſayde ryuer, the *Moſcouite* hath in his ſubiection the one ſyde of the ryuer, and the *Tartars*, called Crimes, haue the other ſyde. But they dare not paſſe ouer the ryuer, by reaſon that the *Moſcouite* keepeth many Gariſons on the ryuer, and in certayne Ilandes of the ryuer from place to place, as occaſion ſerueth: So that the ryuer is kept quietly, notwithſtandyng the conflicte that happened to Baniſter outward, by reaſon of the Turkes ſouldiers that would haue ſpoyled his ſhyppes: which neuertheleſſe defended them ſelues manfully, and ſlue two hundred of the Turkes. For the Turke ſent thyther an armie of xl. thouſande Turkes and *Tartars*, to recouer *Aſtracan* from the *Moſcouite*: but they were enforced to breake vp theyr Campe for lacke of victualles and other neceſſaries, eſpecially bycauſe the wynter drue neare, and the *Moſcouite* prepared a great army againſt them.

A werſt is theyr myle, and is three quarters of an Englyſhe myle.

From

From *Astracan*, downe the sayde ryuer, to the *Caspian* sea, is the distance of threscore myles. From the entrance into the *Caspian* sea, in two or three dayes saylyng with a good wynde, crosse ouer that sea from the North to the South, they come to the realme of *Media*, arryuing at a porte named *Bilbil*, enteryng into a small ryuer that falleth into the *Caspian* sea, and passing from thence by lande with Camels, in three dayes iourney, they come to a citie of *Sharuan* or *Media*, named *Shamaki*. And from thence in xviii. dayes iourney by Camelles, they come to the great and famous citie of *Tauris*, or *Teueris*, being the greatest citie of *Persia*, for trade of merchandies. This citie is esteemed almost twyse as byg as London, and for the most parte is buylded of rawe brickes, not burnt, but only dryed and hardened in the sunne: the doores of the houses be very lowe and litle. The Sophie in tyme paste remayned chiefly in this citie: But after that the region about this citie was inuaded by the Turkes, he went further into the countrey, and buylded a towne named *Casbin*, which before. xx. yeeres was but a village, where he now keepeth his courte, being. xiii. dayes iourney from *Shamaki*, by horse, and. xx. dayes by Camelles.

Media nowe called Sharuan.

Note, that neare vnto this syde of the *Caspian* sea, dwell the *Tartars* called *Nogais* and *Shalcauis*. Also certayne *Arabians*, and Christians named *Armenians*. The *Caspian* sea is otherwise called *Mare de Baccan*: and may seeme so to be called, by reason of a towne by the sea syde, named *Bacco*.

Armenians. Christians.

Certayne extractes of the voyage of maiſter Antony Ienkinſon into Perſia, in the yeere. 1561.



IN the yeere. 1561. maiſter Antonie Ienkinſon was ſent as Ambaſſadour into *Perſia*, with the Queenes maieſties letters, in the Latine, Italian, and Hebrue tongue, to the great Sophie or kyng of *Perſia*, to entreate of commodities of merchaundies whiche myght bee betweene her maieſties merchantes and them, vppon certayne priuileges and free paſſage to bee graunted vnto her merchauntes both by the Emperour of *Moſcouia* and the *Sophi* of *Perſia*, as hereafter ſhall appeare, where we will wryte of the ſayde priuileges. Maiſter Ienkinſon at his firſt commyng, founde ſome difficultie to obtayne the Emperours licence to goe into *Perſia*: but at the length by friendſhyp made, hee gaue him both licence to goe, and alſo gaue him letters commendatorie vnto the *Sophie*, and committed alſo to him certayne affayres of his to doe there. And after certayne banquettes, and honourable entertaynment, accompanied him with an Ambaſſadour of *Perſia*, who had been long in hys Courte. Therefore ſaylyng ouer the *Caſpian* ſea, they arryued on the Weſt ſyde thereof. Not farre from thence is a towne named *Darbent*, where is a very ſtrong Caſtell of ſtone made by *Alexander Magnus*, and a wall of the length of thirtiene dayes iourney, whiche he made when he kepte warres agaynſt the *Perſians* and *Medians*, that the inhabitauntes of that countrey then newly conquered, ſhoulde neyther lyghtly flee, nor his enemyes inuade them. This *Darbent*, is now vnder the dominion of the *Sophie*, and in the latitude of .41. degrees. From *Darbent* to *Bilbec*, or *Bilbil*, the porte and harborowe where they diſcharge theyr goods, is halfe a dayes ſaylyng.

A marueylous long wall buylded by great Alexander.

And

And from thence to *Sharuan* is ten dayes iourney: This towne standeth in a valley, & is in the countrey of *Media*: in the whiche towne also, remayneth the *Soltan* or gouernour of *Media*, vnder the *Sophie*.

The magnificence of Abdalaca kyng of Media.

In the meane tyme, the Kyng of *Media*, named *Abdalica*, cosen vnto the *Sophie*, came thyther, and honourably entertayned maister Ienkinson and the Englyshe merchauntes which were with him, and made them a great banquet, causyng maister Ienkinson (who was then rychely apparelled in silke, veluet, and scarlet, as became an Ambassadour for the Queenes maiestie) to sit downe somewhat farre from him.

The Kyng him selfe dyd sitte in a very ryche Paulion wrought with silke and golde, of the length of sixtiene fatham, or thereabout, placed on a hylles syde, hauyng before him a goodly fountayne of fayre running water, wherof he and his nobilitie dronke. He was rychly apparelled with long garments of silke, and cloth of golde, brodered with pearle and pretious stones. Uppon his head, he had a Cappe with a sharpe ende of halfe a yarde long, standyng vpryght, of ryche cloth of golde, wrapped about with a piece of Indian silke of twentie yardes long, wrought with golde. On the lefte syde of his *Tollepan* (so is the cappe called) was a plume of feathers set in a troonke of golde, rychly inameled and set with precious stones. At his eares, he wore earerynges, with pendantes of golde and stones a handful long, with two great Rubies of great value in the endes therof. All the grounde within his Paulion, was couered with Carpettes, and vnder him selfe was spred a square Carpet wrought with siluer and golde, and therevppon were layde two suitable Cussions. Thus the kyng and his noble men satte in his Paulion with theyr legges acrosse, as doe Taylers: Yet commaunded stooles to be gyuen to our men, bycause they coulde not sitte so: then caused meate to be sette before them, and made them a banquet of a hundred dyshes of meate, and as many of fruites and conserues. After the banquet, he caused them to goe with him a huntyng and hauking, in the which they killed certayne beastes and Cranes. Maister Ienkinson founde so much fauour with this kyng, that at his departyng, he commended him to the *Sophie* with his letters, and also wrote in his fauour to his sonne,

Haukyng and huntyng.

being then in the *Sophies* courte . So that after his commyng thyther, by his meanes, he came at the length to the presence and speache of the *Sophie*: whiche otherwyse he should haue done very hardly, by reason of the Turkes Ambassadours which then were there, and resisted his assayres, with many persuasions to the Sophie, and other of his nobilitie, agaynst the Christians, as mortall enemies both to the Turkes and *Persians*, and theyr religion . And whereas a whyle before, a perpetuall peace and amitie was concluded betweene the Turke and the Sophie, the Ambassadours woulde persuade him that his friendshyp with the Christians, or contracte with them touchyng any affaires, and especially suche as myght be preiudiciall to the Turke, or any of his subiectes, myght engender newe suspitions and occasions of breache of the late concluded peace, with many suche other surmised accusations . Wherebypon the Sophie stayde, and prolonged the tyme, before he woulde admit maister Jenkinson to his speache . At the length when by the friendshyp and fauour of Kyng *Abdalaca* and his sonne, with other friendes made in the courte, the tyme was appoynted that maister Jenkinson shoulde be hearde, there was one that came to him without the courte gate, before he lyght from his horse on the ground, and gaue him a payre of shooes sent from the Sophie, suche as he him selfe was wonte to weare in the nyght when he ryseth to pray, willyng him to put them on his feete, for that it was not otherwyse lawfull for him beyng a *Gawar* or *Caffer* (that is a myscleeuer) to treade bypon that holy grounde . When hee came to his presence, he demaunded of him of what countrey of Frankes he was, meanyng by Frankes Christians : For they call all Christians Frankes (that is Frenche men) as we commonly call all Mahumetans, Turkes, although there bee many Mahumetans of other nations besyde Turkes . He answered, that he was a Christian of the best Frankes of the countrey of Englande : declaryng further vnto him, the cause of his commyng thyther, to be for the great commoditie of him and his subiectes by the way of merchandies, as myght further appeare by the letters directed vnto his maiestie from the Queene of Englande his Prince, and the Emperour of *Moscouia* . Muche more talke had he with maister Jenkinson, not here

The Turkes Ambassadours resist maister Jenkinson.

Great holinesse in shooes.

Christians called Frankes.

here to be written: but by reason of the Turkes Ambassadours, at this present, was no great thyng done heerein to the preferment of the merchantes affayres. Yet he commaunded that maister Jenkinson shoulde be honourably used, and sent him certayne ryche apparell. At this tyme was also in the Sophies courte the sonne of the Kyng of the *Georgians*, a Christian Sismatike as they are nowe called. The same tyme also, a sonne of the Turkes (who had before attempted somewhat agaynst his father, and fledde to the Sophie) was by him at the Turkes request deteyned in prison: And vppon the late conclusion of peace, the Turke required the Sophie to send him his head: which hee graunted, and sent it him by the sayd Ambassadours. This voyage of maister Jenkinson, was in the yeere, 1561.

The Turkes sonne beheaded.

Here foloweth ſuch informations as was gyuen mee by maiſter Geferie Ducate, principall Agent of the merchantes, for the laſt voyage into *Perſia*, in the yeere of our Lord. 1568. beginning in the dominion of the Sophie, at the citie of *Shamaki* in *Media*, bycauſe the beginning of the voyage from *Moſcouia* hytherto, is declared heere before.

Hamaki is the fayreſt towne in all *Media*, and the chiefeſt commoditie of that countrey is rawe ſilke, and the greateſt plentie thereof, is at a towne three dayes iourney from *Shamaki*, called *Arashe*: and within three dayes iourney of *Arashe*, is a countrey named *Groyſine*, whoſe inhabitauntes are Chriſtians, & are thought to be they, which are otherwiſe called *Georgians*: there is alſo much ſilke to be ſolde. The chiefe towne of that countrey is called *Zeghaui*, from whence is carryed yeerely into *Perſia*, an incredible quantitie of haſell Nuttes, all of one ſorte and goodneſſe, and as good and thyn ſhaled as are our Fylberdes. Of theſe are caryed yeerely the quantitie of 4000. Camelles laden.

Chriſtians.

Georgians.

Yaſell Nuttes.

Of the name of the Sophie of *Perſia*, and why he is called the *Shaugh*, and of other cuſtomes.

The Kyng of *Perſia* (whom here we call the great *Sophi*) is not there ſo called, but is called the *Shaugh*. It were there daungerous to call him by the name of *Sophi*, bycauſe that *Sophi* in the *Perſian* tongue, is a begger: and it were as much as to call him, the great begger.

The

Helyeth at a towne called *Caſbin*, whiche is ſituat in a goodly fertile valley, of three or foure dayes iorney in length. The towne is but euyll buylded, and for the moſt part all of brycke, not hardened with fyre, but onely dryed at the Sunne, as is the moſt part of the buyldyng of all *Perſia*. The kyng hath not come out of the compaſſe of his owne houſe in .xxviii. or .xxviiii. yeeres, whereof the cauſe is not knowen, but as they ſaye, it is bypon a ſuperſtition of certayne prophesies, to whiche they are greatly addicted: he is nowe about foure-ſcore yeeres of age, and very luſtie. And to keepe hym the more luſtye, he hath foure wyues alwayes, and about three hundred concubynes. And once in the yeere, he hath all the fayre maydens and wyues, that may bee founde a great way about, brought vnto hym, whom he diligently peruſeth, feelyng them in all partes, takyng ſuche as he lyketh, and puttyng away ſome of them which he hath kept before. And with them that he putteth away, he gratifieth ſome ſuche as hath doone hym the beſt ſeruice. And if he chaunce to take any mans wyfe, her huſbande is very glad thereof, and in recompence of her, oftentymes he geueth the huſbande one of his olde ſtore, whom he thankfully receyueth. If any ſtraunger, beyng a Chriſtian, ſhall come before hym, he muſt put on a newe payre of ſhowes made in that countrey, and from the place where he entereth, there is dygged as it were a cauſye all the way, vntyll he come to the place where he ſhall talke with the kyng, who ſtandeth alwayes aboue in a gallerye when he talketh with any ſtrangers: and when the ſtranger is departed, then is the cauſye caſt downe, and the grounde made euen agayne.

Caſbin.

The kynges Concubines.

How ſtraungers are vſed.

(.)

Of

Of the religion of the Perſians.

Haly,
A goodly and well grounded religion.

THeyr religion is all one with the Turkes, ſauyng that they dyffer who was the ryght ſucceſſor of *Mahumet*. The Turkes ſaye that it was one *Homer* and his ſonne *Vſman*. But the *Perſians* ſaye, that it was one *Mortus Ali*, whiche they woulde proue in this maner. They ſay there was a counſayle called to decide the matter who ſhoulde be the ſucceſſour: and after they had called vppon *Mahumet* to reuele vnto them his wyll and pleaſure therein, there came among them a litle lizarde, who declared that it was *Mahumetes* pleaſure that *Mortus Ali* ſhould be his ſucceſſour. This *Martus Ali* was a valiant man, and ſlewe *Homer* the Turkes prophet: He had a ſwoorde that he fought withall, with the whiche he conquered all his enimies, and kylled as many as he ſtroake. When *Mortus Ali* dyed, there came a holy prophet, who gaue them warnyng that ſhortly there woulde come a whyte Camell, vppon the which he charged them to lay the body and ſwoorde of *Mortus Ali*, and to ſuffer the Camell to carye it whether he woulde. The whiche beyng perfourmed, the ſayde whyte Camell caryed the ſwoorde and body of *Mortus Ali* vnto the ſea ſyde, and the Camell goyng a good way into the ſea, was with the ſwoorde and bodye of *Mortus Ali* taken vp into heauen, for whoſe returne they haue long looked for in *Perſia*. And for this cauſe, the kyng alwayes keepeth a horſe redye ſadled for hym, and alſo of late kepte for hym one of his owne daughters to be his wyfe, but ſhe dyed in the yeere of our Lorde .1573. And ſaye furthermore, that yf he come not ſhortly, they ſhalbe of our beleefe: much lyke the Iewes, lookyng for theyr Meſſias to come and reigne among

mong them, lyke a worldly kyng for euer, and deliuer them from the captiuitie which they are nowe in among the Christians, Turkes, and Gentyles.

The *Saugh*, or Kyng of *Persia*, is nothyng in strength and power comparable vnto the Turke: for although he hath a great Dominion, yet is it nothyng to be compared with the Turkes: neyther hath he any great Ordinaunce of Gunnes, or Harkebuses. Notwithstandyng, his eldest sonne *Ismael*, about twentie and fyue yeeres past, fought a great battayle with the Turke, and slewe of his armye about an hundred thousande men, who after his returne, was by his father cast into prysone, and there continueth vntyl this daye: for his father the *Shaugh*, had hym in suspition that he would haue put hym downe, and haue taken the regiment vppon hym selfe.

Theyr opinion of Christ, is that he was an holy man, and a great Prophet, but not lyke vnto Mahumet: saying that Mahumet was the last Prophet, by whom all thynges were finished, and was therefore the greatest. To proue that Christ was not Goddes sonne, they saye that God had neuer wyfe, and therefore coulde haue no sonne or chyldren. They goe on pylgrymage from the furthest part of *Persia*, vnto *Mecha* in *Arabia*, and by the way they visite also the sepulchre of Christ at Jerusalem, whiche they nowe call *Couche Kalye*.

Theyr opinion of Christ.

The most part of Spyces whiche commeth into *Persia*, is brought from the Iland of *Ormus*, situate in the gulfe of *Persia*, called *Sinus Persicus*, betweene the mayne lande of *Persia* and *Arabia*. &c. The Portugales touche at *Ormus* both in theyr viage to East *India*, and homewarde agayne, and from thence bryng all suche Spyces as is occupied in *Persia* and the regions there about: for of Pepper they bryng verye small quantitie, and that at a verye deare pryse. The Turkes oftentymes bryng Pepper from *Mecha* in *Arabia*, whiche they sell as good cheape as that which is brought from *Ormus*. Sylkes are brought from noo place, but are wrought all in theyr owne countrey. *Ormus*, is within two myles of the mayne lande of *Persia*, and the Portugales fetche theyr freshe water there, for the whiche they paye trybute to the *Shaugh* or kyng of *Persia*.

Within

Theyr money.

Within *Perſia*, they haue neyther golde nor ſyluer mynes, yet haue they coyned money, both of golde and ſyluer, and alſo other ſmall moneys of Copper. There is brought into *Perſia* an incredible ſumme of Duche Dolours, which for the moſt part is there employed in rawe ſylke.

Theyr bookes and learnyng.

They haue few bookes, and leſſe learnyng, and are for the moſt part very brutyſhe in all kynde of good ſciences, ſauing in ſome kynde of ſylke woркes, and in ſuche thynges as parteyne to the furniture of Horſes, in the which they are paſſyng good.

Such was the lawe of the Macedons for Treaſon.

Theyr lawes are, as is theyr religion, wicked and deteſtable. And yf any man offend the Prince, he punyſheth it extreamely, not only in the perſon that offendeth, but alſo in his chyldren, and in as many as are of his kynne. Theft and murder are often puniſhed, yet none otherwyſe then pleaſeth hym that is ruler in the place where the offence is committed, and as the party offendyng is able to make frendes, or with money to redeeme his offence.

Diſſention for religion.

There is often tymes great mutenye among the people in great townes, whiche of *Mortus Ali* ſonnes was greateſt: Inſomuche that ſometymes in the towne two or three thouſand people are togeather by the eares for the ſame, as I haue ſeene in the towne of *Shamaky* and *Ardaruill*, and alſo in the great citie of *Teueris*, where I haue ſeene a man comming from feightyng, in a brauerie bryngyng in his hande foure or fyue mens heades, carryng them by the heare of the head: for although they ſhaue theyr heades moſt commonly twyſe a weeke, yet leaue they a tuft of heare vpon the crowne, about two foote long. I haue enquired why they leaue that tuft of heare vppon theyr heades. They anſwere, that thereby they may eaſyer be caryed vp into heauen, when they are dead.

Shauing.

For theyr religion, they haue certayne prieſtes, who are apparelled lyke vnto other men. They vſe euerye morнyng and afternoone, to go vp to thetoppes of theyr churches, and tell there a great tale of Mahumet and *Mortus Ali*: and other preachyng haue they none. Their Lent is after Chriſtmas, not in abſtinence from fleſh only, but from al meates & drynkes, vntill the day be of the ſkye: but then they eate ſometimes the whole night.

Theyr prieſtes, and preachyng.

Theyr Lent.

And

And although it be against theyr relygion to drynke wyne, yet at nyght they wyll take great excesse thereof, and bee dronken. Theyr lent begynneth at the newe Moone, and they do not enter into it vntyll they haue seene the same: Neyther yet doth theyr lent ende, vntill they haue seene the next new Moone, although the same through close weather shoulde not be seene in long tyme.

Abstinence frō wyne, but not from drunkennes.

They haue among them certayne holy men, whom they call *Setes*, counted holy for that they or any of theyr auncestours haue been on pilgrimage at *Mecha* in *Arabia*, for whosoeuer goeth thyther on pilgrimage to visite the sepulchre of *Mahumet*, both he and all his posteritie, are euer after called *Setes*, and counted for holy men, and haue no lesse opinion of them selues. And if a man contrarye one of these, he wyll saye that he is a sayncte, and therefore ought to be beloued: and that he can not lye, although he lye neuer so shamefully. Thus a man may be to holy, and no pryde is greater then spirituall pryde, of a mynde puffed vp with his owne opinion of holynesse. These *Setes* do vse to shaue theyr headdes all ouer, sauyng on the sydes a litle aboue the temples, the whiche they leaue vnshauen, and vse to wrayde the same as women do theyr heare, and weare it as long as it wyll growe.

Theyr saintes and holy men.

Pilgrimage.

Euery mornyng they vse to worshyppe God, *Mahumet*, and *Mortus Ali*, and in prayng turne them selues towarde the South, because *Mecha* lyeth that way from them. When they be in trauayle on the way, many of them wyll (as soone as the sunne ryseth) lyght from theyr horses, turnyng them selues to the South, and wyll laye theyr gownes before them, with theyr swoordes and beades, and so standyng vpryght, worshyp to the South: And many tymes in theyr prayers kneele downe and kysse theyr beades, or somewhat els that lyeth before them.

Theyr prayer and worshiping of God and Mahumet.

The men or women do neuer go to make water, but they vse to take with them a potte with a spout, and after they haue made water, they flasshe some water vppon theyr priuie partes, and thus do the women aswell as the men: and this is a matter of great religion among them, and in making of water, the men do cowre downe as well as the women.

Washyng and outward cleanelesse.

When

Their swearing

When they earnestly affirme a matter, they wyll sweare by God, *Mahumet*, or *Mortus Ali*, and sometymes by all at ones: as thus in theyr owne language, saying, *Olla Mahumet Ali*. But if he sweare by the *Shaughes* head, in saying *Shaugham bashbe*, you may then beleeue hym if you wyll.

The kynges magnificence.

The *Shaugh* keepeth a great magnificence in his courte: and although sometymes in a moneth or syxe weekes, none of his nobilitie or counsayle can see hym, yet go they dayly to the courte, and tary there a certayne tyme, vntyll they haue knowen his pleasure whether he wyll commaund them any thyng or not. He is watched euery nyght with a thousand of his men, whyche are called his Curshes, who are they that he vseth to sende into the countreys about his greatest affayres. When he sendeth any of them (if it be to the greatest of any of his nobilitie) he wyll obeye them, although the messenger shoulde beate any of them to death.

Pursiuantes.

The kynges companie with his wyues and concubines.

The *Shaugh* occupieth hym selfe alwayes two dayes in the weeke in his Bathestoue, and when he is disposed to go thither, he taketh with hym fyue or syxe of his concubines, more or lesse, and one day they consume in washyng, rubbyng, and bathyng hym, and the other day in paryng his nayles, and other matters. The greatest part of his lyfe, he spendeth amongst his wyues and concubines. He hath nowe reigned about fyftie and foure yeeres, and is therefore counted a very holy man, as they euer esteeme theyr kynges, if they haue reigned fyftie yeeres or more: for they measure the fauoure of God by a mans prosperitie, or his displeasure by a mans misfortune or aduersitie. The great Turke hath this *Shaugh* in great reuerence, because he hath reigned kyng so long tyme.

A very Sardanapalus.

I haue sayde before that he hath foure wyues, and as many concubynes as hym lysteth: and if he chaunce to haue any chyldren by any of his concubines, and be mynded that any of those chyldren shall inherite after hym, then when one of his wyues dyeth, the concubine whom he so fauoureth, he maketh one of his wyues, and the chylde whom he so loueth best, he ordayneth to be kyng after hym.

The succession of the kyngdome.

Mariage.

What I heard of the maner of theyr mariages, for offending of

of honest consciences and chaste eares, I may not commit to wryting: their fastyng I haue declared before. They vse Circumcision vnto chyldren of seuen yeeres of age, as doo the Turkes. Circumcision.

Theyr houses (as I haue sayde) are for the most part made of Brycke, not burned, but only dryed in the Sunne: In theyr houses they haue but litle furniture of housholde stuffe, except it be theyr Carpets, and some Copper worke: for all theyr Kettles and Dyshes wherein they eate, are of Copper. They eate on the grounde, sittyng on Carpets crosse legged as do taylers. There is no man so symple but he sytteth on a Carpet better or worse, and the whole house or roome wherein he sytteth, is wholy couered with Carpets. Theyr houses are all with flatte rookes, couered with earth: and in the sommer tyme, they lye vpon them all nyght. Theyr houses & maner of sateryng.

They haue many bonde seruauntes both men and women. Bond men and bond women is one of the best kinde of merchandies that any man may bryng. When they bye anye maydes or young women, they vse to feele them in all partes, as with bs men do horses: when one hath bought a young woman, yf he lyke her, he wyll keepe her for his owne vse as long as hym lysteth, and then selleth her to an other, who doth the like with her. So that one woman is sometymes solde in the space of foure or fyue yeeres, twelue, or twentie tymes. If a man keepe a bonde woman for his owne vse, and yf he fynde her to be false to hym, and geue her body to any other, he may kyll her yf he wyll. Bond men & bond women.

When a merchant or trauailer commeth to any towne where he entendeth to tarry any time, he hyreth a woman, or sometimes two or three dayes his abode there. And when he commeth to an other towne, he doth the lyke in the same also: for there they vse to put out theyr women to hyre, as wee doo here hackneye Horses. Women hongry & solde, and let to hire.

There is a verye great ryuer which runneth through the playne of *Iauat*, which falleth into the *Caspian* sea, by a towne called *Backe*, neare vnto which the towne is a strange thyng to beholde. For there issueth out of the grounde a marueilous quantitie of Dyle, which Dyle they feteh from the vttermost boundes of al *Persia*: it serueth all the countrey to burne in theyr houses. Abundance of Dyle issuing out of the ground.

This

This Dyle is blacke, and is called Nefte: they vse to cary it throughout all the countrey vpon Kyne and Asses, of which you shal oftentymes meete, with foure or fyue hundred in a company. There is also by the sayde towne of *Backo*, an other kinde of Dyle whiche is whyte and very precious: and is supposed to be the same that here is called *Petroleum*. There is also not farre from *Shamaky*, a thyng lyke vnto Tarre, and issueth out of the grounde, whereof we haue made the proofe, that in our shyps it serueth well in the steade of Tarre.

Oleum Petroleum.

In *Persia* are Kyne of twa sortes, the one lyke vnto ours in these partes, the other are marueylous euil fauoured, with great bones, and very leane, and but little heare vppon them: theyr milk is walowish sweete: they are like vnto them which are spoken of in the scripture, which in the dreame of Pharao signified the seuen deare yeeres: for a leaner or more euill fauoured beast, can no man see.

Two sortes of Kyne.

In the countrey of *Sheruan* (sometyme called *Media*) if you chaunce to lye in the fieldes neare vnto any village, as soone as the twylyght begynneth, you shall haue about you two or three hundred Foxes, whiche make a marueylous wawelyng or howlyng: and yf you looke not well to your victuales, it shall scape them hardly but they wyll haue part with you.

Foxes in great plentie.

The *Caspian* sea, doth neyther ebbe nor flowe, except sometymes by rage of wynde it swelleth vp very hygh: the water is very salt. Howbeit, the quantitie of water that falleth out of the great ryuer of *Volga*, maketh the water freshe at the least twentie leagues into the sea. The *Caspian* sea is marueylous full of fyshe, but no kynde of monstrous fysh, as farre as I coulde vnderstande, yet hath it sundry sortes of fyshes whiche are not in these parties of the worlde.

The Mutton there is good, and the Sheepe great, hauyng very great rumpes with much fat vppon them. Ryse and Mutton, is theyr cheefe victuale.

(.·.)

(·.·) (·.·)

(·.·)

Of

Of the Empire of the Persians, and of theyr originall.

THe kyngdome or Empire of the *Persians*, as it was in auncient tyme most famous, euen so is it at these dayes, mighty & glorious, comprehendyng many great & large regions. For all the tracte of *Asia*, which is betweene the riuer of *Tigris*, the gulfe of *Persia*, and the Indian sea (sometime called the sea *Indus*) and the ryuer *Iaxartes* (at this day called *Chefell*) euen vnto the *Caspian* sea, is at this day vnder the dominion of the Sophie of *Persia*. *Abraham Ortelius.*

Of the originall of the *Sophies*, thus writeth *Cælius Curio* in his Saracenicall historie. In the yeere of our Lord. 1369. was a certayne Prince among the *Persians*, who possessed the towne of *Ardenelim*, his name was *Sophi*: & glorified him selfe to discende of the race and progenie of *Alis Muamedis*, by *Musan Cazin* his Neuie. He, after the death of *Calyfa*, the Soltan of Babilon, and the contrary faction which the Turkes defended, suppressed also of the *Tartars*, began more boldly and freely to professe his opinion and sentence of theyr religion. And bycause that *Ocenus* the sonne of *Alis*, (from whom he glorified him selfe to descend) had twelue children, willyng to adde to them of his secte a certayne signe, whereby they myght be knowen from other, ordeyned that they that would embrace his secte and profession, should were on their heads a high cappe of purple vnder a bele, wherwith all the Turkes inuolue theyr heades, and in theyr language call it *Tulibante*, hauing in the middest of it. xii. plumes or shappe toppes. After his death, succeeded his sonne *Guines*: who in all the East partes obteyned so great opinion of wisedome and holinesse, that most famous *Tamerlanes*, Emperour of the *Parthians* (who before had taken *Bayazetes* kyng of the Turkes) made a iourney into *Persia*, to visit him as a most holy man, of whom *Guines* had so much fauour, that he obteyned of him the libertie of. xxx. thousande Captiues which he brought with him, whom also *Guines* addicted to his faction: and his sonne *Secaidar* vsed them in his warres.

Tamerlanes. Thamurlanes. Tamburlanes, or Tamurthlam.

warres. For with these, after the death of *Guines*, he made warre to certayne people of *Scythia*, named Georgians, his borderers, beyng Christians, & afflicted them very greeuously. Thus much of the originall of the Sophie of *Persia*: they keepe continually warres with the Turkes for the religion of Mahumet. For the Sophians or Persians, folowe one maner of interpretation of Mahumettes religion, and the Turkes an other: the which interpretations neuertheless are so differyng one from the other, that the one of them esteemeth the other for heretikes. The Persians are of liberall nature, of muche ciuilitie and curtesie, greatly esteeming artes and sciences: they acknowledge a certaine worthinesse or nobilitie among men, wherin they differ much from the Turkes, which make no difference betweene slaues and worthier men or Gentelmen.

Georgians Christians.

Contention for religion betweene Turkes and Persians.

Persians.

Turkes.

Of the Region of Persia, and the maners of the Persians: Marcus Paulus Venetus, writeth thus. Cap, xix. Lib. I.

Anno. do. 1280.

Persia is a great and large prouince, & was once noble and of great fame, but nowe deuastate and ouerrun by the *Tartars*, it is of lesse dignitie, & the ancient renoume thereof greatly diminished, and the name deuided into the prouinces confine or adiacent vnto it. So that now the prouince of *Persia* (as it is diuided) conteyneth eight kingdomes; whereof the first is named *Chasum*, the seconde *Churdistam*, the third *Loc*, the fourth *Cielstam*, the fyft, *Instanich*, the sixte, *Zerazi*, the seuenth, *Socham*, and the eight, *Timochaim*, in the confines of *Persia*. There are very fayre and goodly horses of great price, insomuch that sometymes one is solde for .200. pounds of Turon. Merchants bring them to the cities of *Chisi* and *Curmosa*, situate on the sea side, and sell them into *India*. Also Asses be there very fayre and great, insomuch that sometymes one is solde for .xxx. pounde weight of siluer. The people is of euyll disposition, quarellous, theeues, and murderers: and robbe and kyll merchantes by the way, except they goe in great companyes. Yet in the cities, they are of better

ter maners, and of more humanitie: also very excellent artificers in woorkes of golde, silke, Embroderie, needle woorke, and suche lyke. They haue aboundance of bombasine, wheate, barlye, mylle, wyne also, and fruites, but in religion, they are Mahumetans.

Of the kyngdome of the Persians, Haithon in his booke de Tartaris. Cap. vii. writeth as foloweth.

THe kyngdome of the Persians, is diuided chiefly into two partes, whiche make one kyngdome, bicause they are both subiecte to the dominion of one kyng. The first parte of *Persia*, beginneth in the East, from the confines of the kingdome of *Turqueſtan*, and is extended toward the West, to the great ryuer of *Phiſon*, which is the chiefe among the foure floodes which run out of earthly Paradyse. Towarde the North, it is extended to the *Caſpian* sea, and towarde the South, vnto the desartes of *India*. The region is in maner all playne: in the middest whereof, are two very great and riche cities, the one is named *Boctara*, and the other *Seonorgant*. The Persians haue a language proper to them selues: they vse merchandies and tyllage of the grounde, and among them selues lyue in peace: In tyme paste they were Idolatours, and honoured fyre chiefly for God. But after that the secte of the Mahumetans occupied the dominion of those landes, they became vniuersally Saracens, beleeuing the deuilishe doctrine of Mahumet. The other parte of *Persia*, beginneth from the riuer *Phiſon*, and is extended Westward vnto the confines of the kyngdomes of *Media*, and partely also of *Armenia* the greater. Toward the North, it is extended vnto the *Caſpian* sea, on the South syde, it confineth with a certaine prouince of the kingdom of *Media*, and in this prouince are two great cities, one named *Nesabor*, and the other *Sachen*, whiche in secte and maners, are lyke vnto the other.

Phiſon is thought to be Ganges.

Saraſins (that is) Mahumetans.

Of *Perſia*, and of dyuers cities therof, & other notable thinges reade heereafter, the thirde booke of the voyage of *Lodouicus Vartomannus*. Alſo, the firſt booke of the ſame voyage. Cap. 12. of Mahumet and his fellowes: where you may ſee the difference in religion betweene the Turkes and *Perſians*, beyng both *Mahumetans*.

The name of the Sophie, Thomas Shaugh, and why he is ſo called.

THe *Perſians* doe not call theyr kyng by the name of Sophie, but this name Sophie, is giuen him by other nations: for of his owne people, he is called *Thomas Shaugh*, whiche is, Thomas the ruler, Soltan, or gouernour: for *Shaugh*, is not the name of a kyng, but of an office. For a kyng in theyr language, is called *Pachet*, but no Prince is called by this name, before hee haue reigned by ſeuen diſcentes: but he that nowe reygneth, is but only of fyue diſcentes, and is therefore called only *Shaugh*, which is a name of office.

He hath foure wyues and .xii. ſonnes, and hath kepte one of his ſonnes in priſon many yeeres, for a great ouerthrowe whiche he gaue the Turke in the warres, although he tooke the ſame for acceptall ſeruice, and a noble exployt. Yet foraſmuch as by that facte, he obteyned great renoume of a valiant and warlyke man, he began him ſelfe to haue him in ſuſpition, leaſt the glorie of that enterpriſe myght encourage him to attempt ſomewhat agaynſt his father, as oftentymes the Turkes ſonnes haue rebelled agaynſt theyr fathers yet liuyng, and diſplaced them of their dignitie.

Of the kyngdome of Ormus, confine to Persia, and of the trafique betweene them. Also of the citie and Ilande of Ormus or Armusium.



Ormus is a great kyngdome, and hath a peculiar Kyng, tributorie to the kyng of Portugale. This kyngdome conteyneth all the sea coastes of *Arabia*, in the gulfe of *Persia*, from the mouth of the riuer of *Euphrates*, vntill the Cape of *Razalguati*, and also parte of the kingdome of *Persia*, whiche is adiacent vnto the streight of *Bazora*, called *Fretum Bazoræ*, and in maner all the Ilandes of the gulfe of *Persia*, called *Sinus Persicus*. The *Metrapolis* or chiefe citie of the kingdome of *Ormus*, is the citie of *Ormus*, situate in an Iland named *Geru*, being one of the famoste martes of these partes of the world. The Iland is within the gulf of *Persia*, not far within the streight of *Bazora*. This streight of *Bazora*, other haue named the streight of *Ormus*, being betweene *Arabia Fœlix*, and the region of *Persia*. The region of *Ormus* is well peopled, & hath many goodly places & cities. The gulfe is not euery where nauigable, by reason of many shelues and lowe places. Within foure dayes sayling of *Ormus*, are the Ilandes of *Baharen*, where are found the fayrest orientall pearls of the world. *Ormus* vseth trafique of merchandies with *Adem* & *Cambaia*, and with the kingdomes of *Decan* & *Goa*, & with the portes of *Narsinga* & *Malabar*. The chiefe merchandies brought from thence, are horses of *Arabia* & *Persia*, pearles, salt peter, brimstone, silke, *Tutia*, Alume, also Alume of *Alexandria* or Boyace, Uitriol, or Copporose, salt in great quantitie, siluer, Muske, Ambar, wheate, many dryed fruites, Ryse, & many other prouisions of vittailes, and other thinges to be eaten. For these, they returne pepper, cloues, Cinamon, Ginger, and diuers other sorts of spices and drugges, which are dispersed into sundry regions of *Persia* and *Arabia*, and also into *Aden* where there is great plentie. But if they be deare in *Ormus*, it is not possible that they should be carryed to *Cair*, to come into Italie. They returne, is with Ryse, as much as

Abraham Ortelius.

they can haue, white cloth, & Iron. Theyr horſes are of marueylous great price in the kyngdomes of *Goa*, *Decan*, and *Narſinga*, and therefore yeerely the merchantes of *Ormus* bryng many thither, and yet ſometyme one horſe is there at the price of vii. hundred of thoſe peeces of golde, which they call *Saraffos*. The beſt are of *Arabia*, the ſeconde of *Perſia*, and the wooꝛſt of *Cambaia*.

Of the Sophie and kyngdome of Perſia, after the later writers.

Perſia is one of the greateſt and moſt famous prouinces of the woꝛlde. It toucheth not the ſea, but at the gulfe of *Ormus*. On the ſyde of *Cambaia*, it confineth with the people named *Motagues*, on the ſyde of *Arabia*, with the gulfe of *Ormus*, on the ſyde of the firme lande, with the mountaynes of *Deli*, and on the ſide of *Carmania*, and in maner by the confines of *Babylon*, it extendeth towarde *India*: it hath many kingdomes and cities ſubiecte vnto it. The people of *Perſia*, are called *Azemini*. It conteyneth foure principall prouinces, which are theſe: *Coraconi*, *Ginali*, *Tauris*, *Xitarim*. In the which alſo are theſe foure moſt famous cities: That is *Tauris*, *Siras*, *Samarcante*, *Coraconi*: They are valiant and warlyke men, & of great eſtimation. They of *Samarcante*, haue in auncient tyme been Chriſtians. *Tauris* and *Siras*, are cities as famous among them, as is with vs *Paris* in France: they are men of great ciuilitie and curteſie. The women of *Siras*, are of commendable beautie and behauour, very neate and delicate, and thereof commeth a prouerbe among the Mahumetans, that Mahumet would neuer goe to *Siras*, leaſt if he had taſted the pleaſures of thoſe women, he ſhould neuer after his death haue gone to Paradyſe. The kyng of *Perſia* is called *Siech Iſmael*, whom the Italians call *Gualizador*, oꝛ *Sophi*. His chiefe manſion place oꝛ court, is at *Tauris*, oꝛ *Teueris*, which is diſtant from *Ormus* fiftie dayes iourney with Camelles. He is called the great Mahumetan of the oꝛder of the red bonet (that is) of the ſecte of *Hali*, which our men that came late from *Perſia*, call *Mortus Ali*, wherof we haue ſpoken moꝛe befoꝛe. The region of

Babilon of Chaldea, and not of Egypt.

Tauris or *Teueris*.

Iſmael, they pronounce Smael.

Mortus Ali.

Persia, hath all sortes of domesticall or tame beastes, suche as are in our countreys. It hath furthermore, Lions, Onces, and Tigers, the people are muche giuen to pleasures and sportes, and are honourably apparelled, delighting greatly in perfumes and sweete sauours: they haue many wyues, and commit the keeping or charge of them to enuches or gelded men: who for that seruice, are oftentymes preferred to great promotion, yet are they very ielous of theyr wyues. Notwithstanding, both the Persians, and also their neighbours of *Ormus*, are detestable Sodomites. In tyme paste many great and valiant personages, as *Cyrus*, *Darius*, *Assuerus*, and great *Alexander*, haue inuaded *Persia*. It is not baren as some haue written, but hath aboundance of all sortes of victualles, and pleasures, and thinges necessarie for the lyfe of man.

Enukes or gelded men.

The trafique of Persia, with other countreys.

IN the region of *Persia*, are many sortes of merchandies, wherewith they vse great trafique in the countreys of *Armenia*, *Turchia*, and in the citie of *Cair* or *Alcayr*. From the lande of *Siras*, is brought great aboundance of silke, whereof is made an infinite quantitie of all sortes of silken cloathes, and fine chamolettes of diuers colours: also great aboundance of roche Alume, Vitriol, *Alcoffare*. Likewise many horses, victualles, Turques stones, wax, hony, butter, &c. Also great peeces of tapestrie of diuers sortes & workes, clothes of sundry colours, veluets both high and lowe after theyr maner: Likewyse cloth of golde of sundry sortes: Paullions, and great aboundance of armure. From the other syde of the mountaynes by the way of *Siam*, are brought Muske, Aloes, Reubarbe, *Lignum aloes*, *Camphora*, *&c.* All these thinges, and many other, are caryed to *Ormus*: for the which, the returne is, great quantitie of Pepper, and other spices and drugges: for the Persians vse much spices with their meats, and especially Pepper.

Of the Gulfe of Perſia, or Sinus Perſicus.

THe region and lande of *Perſia*, is ſituate betweene two ryuers, whiche fall not into the Ocean ſea, but into the gulfe of *Perſia* : the which gulfe hath on euery ſyde many goodly countreys well inhabited. The gulfe conteyneth in largeneſſe.lx.myles, and is nauigable with great Barkes,and is ſometimes troubled with great tempeſtes. There is taken great abundance of fiſhe,which being ſalted or dryed, is carryed into all partes of *Perſia*. The gulfe is alſo very long, and conteyneth from *Ormus* to the ende,lx.dayes iourney with Camelles.

1 Articles of the Priuileges whiche the Sophie of Perſia graunted to the Englyshe merchantes.

Theſe articles were ſent vnto the company of merchants from *Moſko*, by maiſter Ienkinſon, graunted in the names of theſe perſons . Syr VVilliam Garret, Syr VVilliam Cheſter,gouernours . Syr Thomas Lodge, Maiſter Antonie Ienkinſon, Maiſter Thomas Nicolls, and Arthur Edwardes,merchantes of London : as alſo in the names of the whole companie.

2 FYrſt, it is graunted that you ſhall paye no maner of cuſtomes or tolles any kynd of wayes,now nor in time commyng vnto his heires after him . And that all Engiyſhe merchantes now preſent,or hereafter, may paſſe and repaſſe into all places of his dominions,and other countreys adioyning to him, in the trade of merchaundies, to buye and ſell all maner of commodities,with all maner of perſons.

3 Item that in all places,where any of our merchantes ſhalbe theſe gouernours,rulers,and Iuſtices,to take heede vnto the Engliſhe merchantes, and be their ayde, and puniſhe them that ſhall doe them any wyong or hurte.

4 Item that ſuche debtes as ſhalbe owyng by any maner of perſon,iuſtice to be done on the partie,and to ſee all Engliſhe merchantes payde at the day.

5 Item

5 Item that no maner of perſon of what eſtate or degree they be of, ſo hardie to take any kynde of wares, or any gyftes, without the Englyſhe merchantes good willes.

6 Item if by chaunce medley, any of the merchauntes or ſeruauntes (as God forbyd) ſhoulde kyll any of his ſubiectes, no partes of theyr goods to be touched or medled withal, neither no perſon but the offender, and being any of the merchaunts, not to ſuffer without the pryinces knowledge & advice.

7 Item that all ſuch debtes as ſhalbe oweyng, to be payde to any of the merchauntes in the abſence of the other, be the partie dead or alyue.

8 Item that no perſon returne any kynde of wares backe agayne, beyng once bought or ſolde.

9 Item that when God ſhall ſende the merchauntes goods to ſhore, preſently his people to helpe them alande with them.

The proſperous vyage of Arthur Edwardes into Perſia, and of the fauoure that he found with the Sophy, and alſo what conference he had with that prynce.

When he came fyrſt to the *Sophies* preſence, bynging his interpretour with hym, and ſtandyng farre of, the *Sophie* (ſyttyng in a ſeate royall with a great number of his noble men about hym) badde him come neere, and that thryſe, vntyl he came ſo neere him that he myght haue touched hym with his hand. Then the fyrſt demaund that he asked hym, was from what countrey he came: he answeared, that he came from Englande. Then asked he of his noble men, who knew any ſuch countrey. But when Edwards ſawe that none of them had any intelligence of that name, he named it *Inghilterra*, as the Italians cal England. Then one of the noble men ſayde *Londro*, meanyng therby London, which name is better knowen in far countreys out of Chriſtendome, then is the name of Englande. When Edwardes harde hym name *Londro*, he ſayd that that was the name of the chiefe citie of Englande, as was *Teueris*, of the chiefe citie of *Perſia*. He asked hym many thynges more, as of the realme

Londro. London.

realme of Englande, marueylyng that it ſhoulde be an Iland, of ſo great rycheſſe and power, as Edwardes declared vnto hym, of the ryches and abundaunce of our merchaundies, as he further vnderſtode by our traffique in *Moſcouia* and other countreys. He demaunded alſo many thynges of the Queenes maieſtie, and of the cuſtomes and lawes of the realme: ſaying oftentymes in his owne language, *Bara colla* (that is to ſaye) wel ſaid. He aſked alſo many thinges of kyng Philip, and of his warres agaynſt the Turke at *Malta*. Then demaunded of hym what was the chiefe cauſe of his reſorte into his realme. And beyng certified that it was for the trade of merchaundies, he aſked what kynde of merchaundies he coulde bryng thyther. Such (ſayde he) as the *Venetian* merchauntes, which dwellyng in our countrey in the citie of *Londro*, ſende to Uenes, and from thence into Turkie by *Halepo* and *Tripoli* in *Sorya*, from whence, as by the ſeconde and thyrde handes, with great charges of many cuſtomes and other thynges thereunto parteyning, they are at the length brought into your countrey and cities of *Perſia*. What merchaundies are thoſe, ſayd the *Sophie*? Edwardes anſweared, that they were great abundaunce of fine carſeis, of brode clothes, of all ſortes and coloures, as ſcarlettes, violettes, and other of the fyneſt cloth of all the worlde. Alſo that the *Venetians* brought out of Englande, not onely ſuch clothes redie made, but furthermore great plentie of fyne wool to myngle with their wools, of the which they coulde not otherwiſe make fyne cloth: Affirming that there went out of Englande yeerely that wayes, aboue two hundred thouſande carſeis, and as manye brode clothes, beſyde fine wool and other merchaundies, beſyde alſo the great abundaunce of like clothes, ỹ which were caried into Spaine, *Barbarie*, and diuers other countreys. The *Sophie* then aſked hym by what meanes ſuch merchaundies myght be brought into *Perſia*. Ryght well Sir (ſayde he) by the way of *Moſcouia*, with more ſafetie and in much ſhorter tyme then the *Venetians* can bryng them, fyrſt from Englande to Uenes, and from thence into *Perſia*, by the way of Turkye. And therefore if it ſhall pleaſe your maieſtie to graunt vs free paſſage into al your dominions, with ſuch priuileges as may apperteyne to the ſafegard of our liues,

The Venetians traffique in England.

Engliſh clothes, carſes & fyne wool.

lyues, goodes, and merchandies, we wyl furnyſh your countreys with al ſuch merchandies, & other commodities, in ſhorter tyme, and better cheape then you may haue the lame at the Turkes handes. This talke and muche more was between the *Sophie* and Edwardes for the ſpace of two houres, all whithe thynges lyked hym ſo well, that ſhortly after he graunted to the ſayde Arthur Edwardes two other priuileges, for the trade of merchandies into *Preſia*, all wrytten in Azure and golde letters, and deliuered vnto the lorde keeper of the *Sophie* his great ſeale. The lorde keeper was named *Coche Califaye*, who ſayde that when the *Shaughe* (that is the kyng or prince) dyd ſytte to ſeale any letters, that priuilege ſhoulde be ſealed and deliuered to Laurence Thapman. In this priuilege is one principal article for ſeruantes or merchantes: That yf the Agent do perceyue that vpon theyr naughtie doynges, they woulde become Buſor men, that then the Agent wherſoeuer he ſhall fynde anye ſuch ſeruant or ſeruantes, to take them, and put them in pryſon: and no perſon to keepe them, or mayntayne them. This article was graunted in reſpect of a cuſtome among the *Perſians*, being Mahumetanes; whoſe maner is frendly to receyue and wel entertayne, both with giftes & lyuyng, all ſuche Chriſtians as forſakyng theyr religion, wyl become of the religion of the *Perſians*. Inſomuch that before this priuilege was graunted, there was great occaſion of naughtie ſeruantes to deceyue and robbe theyr maiſters: that vnder the coloure of profeſſyng that religion, they might liue among them in ſuch ſafetie, that you might haue no law agaynſt them, eyther to punyſh them, or to recouer your goodes at theyr handes, or els where. For before the *Sophie* (whom they ſay to be a marueylous wyſe and gracious prince) ſeemed to fauour our nation, and to graunt them ſuch priuileges, the people abuſed them very much, and ſo hated them that they would not touche them, but reuiled them, callyng them *Cafars* & *Gawars*, which is, infydels, or miſbeleeuers. But after they ſaw how greatly the prince fauoured them, they had them afterward in great reuerence, and would kyſſe theyr handes, and vſe them very frendly. For before, they tooke it for no wrong to rob them, defraud them, beare falſe witneſſe againſt them, & ſuch merchandies as they had bought or ſold, make them take it againe, and

Buſor men, be they that forſake theyr faith, and receyue the religion of Mahumet.

chaunge

chaunge it as often as them liſted . And yf any ſtraunger by chaunce had kylled one of them, they woulde haue the lyfe of two for one ſlayne, and for the debtes of any ſtraunger, woulde take the goodes of any other of the ſame nation, with many other ſuch lyke abuſes, in maner vnknowen to the Prince, before the complayntes of our men made vnto hym for reformation of ſuch abuſes: which were the cauſe that no merchant ſtrangers of contrary religion, durſt come into his dominions with theyr commodities: which myght be greatly tothe profite of hym and his ſubiectes.

The Articles.

10 Item that the merchantes haue free lybertye, as in theyr fyrſt priuilege, to go vnto *Gylian*, and all other places of his dominions, now or hereafter when occaſion ſhalbe geuen.

11 Item yf by miſfortune any of theyr ſhips ſhould breake, or fal vpon any part of his dominions on the ſea coaſt, his ſubiectes to help with al ſpeede to ſaue the goodes, & to be deliuered to any of the ſayd merchants that liueth: or otherwyſe to be kept in ſafetie vntyl any of them come to demaund them.

12 Item yf any of the ſayd merchants depart this lyfe in any citie or towne, or on the hygh way, his gouernours there to ſee theyr goodes ſafely kept, and to be deliuered to any other of them that ſhal demaund them.

13 Item the ſayde merchants to take ſuch camell men as they them ſelues wyl, beyng countrey people: and that no Kyſſell Bayſhe do let or hynder them. And the ſayde owners of the camels, to be bounde to anſwere them ſuch goodes as they ſhall receyue at theyr handes: and the camell men to ſtande to the loſſes of theyr camels or horſes.

Kyſſell Baſhe are the gentlemen that weare redcappes.

14 Item more, that the ſayde carryars do demaunde no more of them, then theyr agreement was to pay them.

15 Item

15 Item more, if they be at a pryce with any carryours, and geuen earnest, the Camell men to see they keepe theyr promesse.

16 Item if any of the sayd merchauntes be in feare to trauaile, to geue them one or more to go with them, and see them in safetie with theyr goods to the place they wyll go vnto.

17 Item in all places, to say, in all cities, townes, or villages on the hygh way, his subiectes to geue them honest rooume, and vittayles for theyr mony.

18 Item the sayde merchauntes may in any place where they shall thynke best, buylde or bye any house or houses to theyr owne vses: And no person to molest or trouble them, and to stande in any *Carauan* where they wyll, or shal thinke good.

The commodities whiche the merchauntes may haue by this trade into *Persia*, are thought to be great, and may in tyme perhappes be greater then the Portugalles trade into the East Indies, forasmuch as by the way of *Persia* into Englande, the returne may be made euery yeere once, wheras the Portugalles make the returne from *Calecut* but once in two yeeres, by a long and daungerous vyage all by sea: for whereas the citie and Ilande of *Ormus*, lying in the goulfe of *Persia*, is the most famous marte towne of all East India, whyther all the merchaundies of India are brought, the same may in shorter time, and more safely, be brought by land & ryuers through *Persia*, euen vnto the *Caspian* sea, and from thence by the countreys of *Russia* or *Moscouia* by ryuers, euen vnto the citie of *Yeraslaue*, and from thence by lande a hundred and fourescore myles to *Vologda*: and from thence agayne al by water, euen vnto England.

The commodities which the merchauntes may haue by the trade into Persia.

The merchaundies whiche be had out of *Persia* for the returne of wares, are sylke of all sortes and colours, both rawe and wrought: Also all maner of spices and drugges, Pearles and precious stones: likewyse carpettes of dyuers sortes, with diuers other ryche merchaundies, whereof you may reade more here before in the Chapter entituled, Of the trafique of *Persia* with other countreys. It was tolde me of them that came last

laſt from *Perſia*, that there is more ſylke brought into ſome one citie of *Perſia*, then is of cloth brought into the citie of London. Alſo that one village of *Armenia*, named *Gilgat*, doth carie yeerely fyue hundred, and ſometyme a thouſande mules laden with ſylke to *Halepo* in *Sorya* of Turkye, beyng foure dayes iorney of *Tripoli*, where the Venetians haue their continuall abidyng, and ſend from thence ſylkes, which they returne for Engliſh carſes, and other clothes, into al partes of Chriſtendome.

The maner howe the Chriſtians become Buſormen, and forſake their religion.



I Haue noted here before, that if any Chriſtian wyll become a *Buſor* man, that is, one that hath forſaken his fayth, and be a *Mahumetan* of their religion, they geue him many giftes, and iointyme alſo a liuyng. The maner is, that when the deuil is entred into his hart to forſake his fayth, he reſorteth to the *Soltan* or gouernoure of the towne, to whom he maketh proteſtation of his diuilyſhe purpoſe. The gouernoure appoynteth hym a horſe, and one to ryde before hym on an other horſe, bearyng a ſwoorde in his hande, and the *Buſor* man bearyng an arowe in his hand, and rydeth in the citie, curſyng his father and mother: and if euer after he returne to his owne religion, he is giltie of death, as is ſignified by the ſwoorde borne before hym. A young man, a ſeruaunt of one of our merchauntes, becauſe he woulde not abyde the correction of his maiſter for his faultes, was mynded to forſake his fayth. But (as God woulde) he fell ſodaynely ſicke and dyed, before he gaue hym ſelfe to the deuil. If he had become a *Buſor* man, he had greatly troubled the merchauntes, for if he woulde then haue ſayd that halfe their goods had ben his, they would haue geuen credite vnto hym. For the auoydyng of whiche inconuenience, it was graunted in the priuileges that no *Buſor* man &c. as there appeareth.

Oxen and kyne beare burdens.

In *Perſia* in diuers places, oxen and kine beare the tentes and houſholde ſtuffe of the poore men of the countrey, which haue neither Camelles nor horſes.

OF

Of the tree whiche beareth Bombasine cotton, or Gossampine

IN *Persia* is great abundance of Bombasine cotton, and very fyne, this groweth on a certayne litle tree or hyper, not past the height of a mans waste, or litle more: the tree hath a slender stalk, like vnto a brier, or to a carnation gylesiour, with very many braunches, bearyng on euery braunch a fruite, or rather a codde, growyng in round fourme, conteynyng in it the cotton: and when this budde or codde commeth to the bygnesse of a wallnut, it openeth and sheweth foorth the cotton, which groweth styll in bygnesse vntyll it be lyke a fleece of wooll as byg as a mans fyst, and beginneth to be loose: and then they geather it as it were the rype fruite. The seedes of these trees, are as byg as peason, and are blacke, and somewhat flatte, and not rounde: they sowe them in plowed grounde, where they growe in the fieldes in great aboundance in many countreys in *Persia*, and diuers other regions.

The writing of the *Persians*.

ARthur Edwardes shewed me a letter of the *Sophie*, written in theyr letters backward, subsigned with the handes both of the *Sophie* & his secretarye. The *Sophies* subscription, was only one word (his name I suppose of *Shaugh*) wrytten in golden letters vpon red paper. The whole letter was also wrytten on the same peece of red paper, beyng long and narrowe, about the length of a foote, and not past three inches brode. The priuate signet of the *Sophie*, was a rounde pynted marke, about the byggenesse of a Ryall, only pynted vpon the same paper, without any waxe or other seale: the letters seeme so myshapen and disordered, that a man woulde thynke it were somewhat scribled in maner at aduentures. Yet they say that almost euery letter with his pricke or circumflexe, signifieth a whole worde. Insomuch that in a peece of paper as bygge as a mans hand, theyr wryting doth conteyne as much as doth ours almost in a sheete of paper.

The

¶ The two viages made out of Englande into *Guinea* in *Affricke*, at the charges of certayne merchantes aduenturers of the citie of London, in the yeere of our Lorde 1553.

BEing desired by certayne of my freendes, to make some mention of these viages, that some memory thereof myght remayne to our posteritie, yf eyther iniquitie of tyme, consumyng all thynges, or ignoraunce creepyng in by barbarousnesse and contempt of knowledge, shoulde hereafter bury in oblyuion so worthy attempts, so much the greatlyer to be esteemed, as before neuer enterprysed by Englyshe men, or at the least so frequented, as at this present they are, and may be, to the great commoditie of our merchantes, yf the same be not hyndred by the ambition of such, as for the conquesting of fourtie or fyftie myles here & there, and erectyng of certayne fortresses, or rather blockehouses among naked people, thynke them selues worthy to be lordes of halfe the world, enuying that other shoulde enioy the commodities, which they them selues can not wholy possesse. And although suche as haue been at charges in the discouerynge and conquestyng of suche landes, ought by good reason to haue certayne priuileges, preheminences, and tributes for the same, yet (to speake vnder correction) it may seeme somewhat rigorous, and agaynst good reason and conscience, or rather against the charitie that ought to be among Christian men, that such as violentlye inuade the dominions of other, shoulde not permit other frendly to vse the trade of merchandies, in places neerer, or seldome frequented of them, whereby theyr trade is not hyndred in such places, where they them selues haue at theyr owne election appointed the martes of theyr trafficke. But forasmuch as at this present, it is not my entent to accuse or defend, approue or improue, I will ceasse to speake any further hereof, & proceade to the discription of the first viage, as breefely and faithfully as I was aduertised of the same, by the information of such credible persons, as made diligent inquisition to know the trueth hereof, as much as shalbe requisite, omittyng to speake of many particuler

Ambition.

ticuler thinges, not greatly necessarie to bee knowen: whiche neuertheleſſe, with also the exacte course of the nauigation, shall be moze fully declared in the seconde vyage. And if herein fauour oz friendshyp shall perhappes cause some to thynke that some haue been sharpely touched, let them laye a parte fauour and friendshyp, and gyue place to trueth, that honest men may recepue prayse foz well doyng, and leude persons repzoche, as the iust stipende of theyr euyll desartes, whereby other may bee deterred to doe the lyke, and vertuous men encouraged to pzocede in honest attemptes.

But that these vyages may be moze playnely vnderstoode of all men, I haue thought good foz this purpose, befoze I intreate hereof, to make a bzeefe description of Affrica, beyng that great parte of the wozlde, on whose Weste syde begynneth the coaste of *Guinea* at *Cabo Verde*, about the twelue degrees in latitude, on this syde the Equinoctiall line, and two degrees in longitude from the measuryng lyne, so runnyng from the Noyth to the South, and by East in some places within.v.iiii. and.iii. degrees and a halfe within the Equinoctiall, and so fooyth in maner direcly East and by Noyth, foz the space of xxxvi. degrees, oz there about, in longitude from the West to the East, as shall moze playnely appeare in the description of the seconde vyage.

Affrica.

The coast of Guinea.

A bzeefe description of Affrike.

IN *Affrica* the lesse are these kyngdomes: the kingdome of *Tunes* & *Constantina*, which is at this day vnder *Tunes*, and also the regi-on of *Bugia*, *Tripoli*, and *Ezzab*. This part of *Afrike* is very baren by reason of the great desartes, as the desartes of *Numidia* & *Barcha*. The pzincipall poztes of the kingdome of *Tunes* are these: *Goletta*, *Bizerta*, *Potofarnia*, *Boua*, and *Stora*. The chiefe cities of *Tunes*, are *Constantina*, and *Boua*, with diuers other. Under this kyngdome are many Ilands, as *Zerbi*, *Lampadola*, *Pantalarea*, *Limoso*, *Beit*, *Gamelaro*, and *Malta*, where at this pzesent is the great maister of the Rodes. Under the South of this kyngdome, are the great desartes of *Libia*. All the nations

Tunes.

Bugia.
Tripoli.

Numidia.

Ilandes of Tunes.
Malta.

The desartes of Libia.

in this *Africa* the lesse, are of the secte of Mahumet, & a rusticall people, lyuyng scattered in villages. The best of this parte of *Afrike*, is *Barbaria*, lyng on the coast of the sea *Mediterraneum*.

Barbarie.

Mauritania.

Mauritania (now called *Barbaria*) is diuided into two partes, as *Mauritania Tingitania*, and *Cesariensis*. *Mauritania Tingitania*, is nowe called the kyngdome of *Fes*, and the kyngdome of *Marrocko*. The principall citie of *Fes*, is called *Fessa*: and the chiefe citie of *Marrocko*, is named *Marrocko*.

The kinkdoms of Fes and Marrocko.

Tremisen.

Mauritania Cesariensis, is at this daye called the kyngdome of *Tremisen*, with also the citie called *Tremisen* or *Telensin*. This region is full of desartes, and reacheth to the sea *Mediterraneum*, to the citie of *Oram*, with the porte of Massaquiber. The kyngdome of *Fes* reacheth vnto the Ocean sea, from the West to the citie of *Argilla*: and the porte of the sayde kyngdome is called *Salla*.

Oram.

Massaquiber.

Salla.

Azamor.

The kyngdome of *Marrocko* is also extended aboue the Ocean sea, vnto the citie of *Azamor* and *Azafi*, which are aboue the Ocean sea towarde the West of the sayde kyngdome. In *Mauritania Tingitania* (that is to say, in the two kyngdomes of *Fes* and *Marrocko*) are, in the sea, the Ilandes of Canarie, called in olde tyme the fortunate Ilandes. Towarde the South of this region, is the kyngdome of *Guinea*, with *Senega*, *Iaiofo*, *Gambra*, and many other regions of the blacke Moores, called *Ethiopians* or *Negros*, all whiche are watered with the ryuer *Negro*, called in olde tyme *Niger*. In the sayde regions are no cities, but only certayne lowe cotages made of boughes of trees, plastered with chauke, and couered with strawe: In these regions are also very great desartes.

The Ilandes of Canarie.

Guinea.

Ethiopians.

Marrocko.

Fes.

Tremisen.

Guinea.

The kyngdome of *Marrocko* hath vnder it these seuen kyngdoms: *Hea*, *Sus*, *Guzula*, the territory of *Marrocko*, *Duchala*, *Hazchora*, and *Telde*. The kyngdome of *Fes* hath as many: as *Fes*, *Temesne*, *Azgar*, *Elabath*, *Errisi*, *Garet*, and *Elcauz*. The kyngdome of *Tremisen* hath these regions: *Tremisen*, *Tenez*, and *Elgazaet*, all which are *Machometistes*. But all the regions of *Guinea* are pure Gentyles and Idolatours, without profession of any religion, or other knowledge of God, then by the lawe of nature.

Africa the great.

Africa the great, is one of the three partes of the worlde, knowen

knowen in olde tyme, and seuered from *Asia*, on the East by the ryuer *Nilus*, on the West, from Europe by the pillers of Hercules. The hyther parte is now called Barbarie, and the people Moores. The inner parte is called *Libia* and *Ethiopia*. *Afrike* the lesse, is in this wyse bounded: On the West it hath *Numidia*: On the East *Cyrenaica*: On the North, the sea called *Mediterraneum*. In this countrey was the noble citie of Carthage.

Affricke the leasse.

Carthage.

In the East side of *Africke*, beneath the redde sea, dwelleth the great and myghtie Emperour and Christian kyng Prester John, well knowen to the Portugales in theyr vyages to *Calicut*. His dominions reache very farre on euery syde: and hath vnder hym many other kynges both Christian and heathen that pay hym tribute. This mightie prince is called Dauid Themperour of Ethiopia. Some wryte, that the kyng of Portugale sendeth hym yeerely .viii. shyppes laden with marchaundies. His kingdome confineth with the redde sea, and reacheth farre into Afrike toward Egypte and Barbarie. Southwarde it confineth with the sea towarde the *cape de Buona Speranza*: and on the other syde with the sea of sande, called *Mare de Sabione*, a very dangerous sea, lying betweene the great citie of *Alcayer*, or *Cairo* in Egypt, and the countrey of Ethiopia: In the whiche way are many vnhabitable desarts, cõtinuing for the space of fiue dayes iorney. And they affirme, that if the sayd Christian Emperour were not hyndered by those desartes (in the whiche is great lacke of victualles, and especially of water) he woulde or nowe haue inuaded the kingdome of Egypt, and the citie of *Alcayer*. The cheefe citie of Ethiopia, where this great Emperour is resident, is called *Amacaiz*, being a faire citie, whose inhabitantes are of the colour of an Olyue. There are also many other cities, as the citie of *Saua* vpon the ryuer of *Nilus*, where Themperour is accustomed to remayne in the sommer season. There is lykewyse a great citie named *Barbaregaf*, and *Ascon*, from whence it is sayde that the Queene of *Saba* came to Hierusalem to heare the wysedome of Salomon. This citie is but little, yet very fayre, and one of the chiefe cities in *Ethiope*. In the sayde kyngdome is a prouince called *Manicongni*, whose kyng is a Moore, and tributarie to Themperour of *Ethiope*. In this prouince are manie exceedyng hygh mountaynes, vp-

Prester John.

Cape de Buona Speranza.

The sea of sande.

Alcair.

From whence the queene of Saba came.

Manicongni.

The earthly Paradice. The trees of the Sunne and Moone.

pon the which is sayde to be the earthly Paradyse: and some say that there are the trees of the Sunne and Moone, whereof the antiquitie maketh mention: yet that none can passe thyther, by reason of great desartes of a hundred dayes iourney. Also beyond these mountaynes, is the cape of *Bona Speranza*. And to haue sayde thus much of *Afrike* it may suffice.

The first vyage to Guiena.



The Primrose. The Lion. The Moone.

IN the yeere of our Lord 1553. the xii day of August, sayled from Portchmouth two goodly shyppes, the Primrose and the Lion, with a pynnesse called the Moone, being all well furnished as wel with men of the lustiest sorte, to the number of seuen score, as also with ordinaunce and byttayles, requisite to such a viage: hauyng also two Captaynes, the one a stranger, called *Antoniades Pinteado*, a Portugale, borne in a towne named the porte of Portugale, a wyse, discreete, and sober man, who for his cunnyng in saylyng, beyng as well an experte pylot as politike Captayne, was sometyme in great fauour with the kyng of Portugale, and to whom the coastes of Brasile and *Guinea*, were committed to be kepte from the Frenchmen, to whom he was a terrour on the sea in those partes, and was furthermore a Gentelman of the kyng his maisters house. But as fortune in maner neuer fauoureth but flattereth, neuer promiseth but deceiueth, neuer rayseth but casteth downe agayne, and as great wealth and fauour hath alwayes companions emulation and enuie, he was after many aduersities and quarels made agaynst him, inforced to come into Englande: where in this golden vyage he was euil matched with an vnequal companion, and vnlyke matche of most sundrie qualities and conditions, with vertues fewe or none adourned. Thus departed these noble shyppes vnder sayle on their vyage. But first Captayne *Wyndam*, puttyng foorth of his shyp at Portchmouth, a kynseman of one of the head merchants, and shewyng herein a muster of the tragicall partes he had conceyued in his brayne, and with suche small begynnynges nourished so monstrous a byrth, that more happie, yea and blessed

Pinteado.

Brasile. Guinea.

The flatterynge of fortune.

was

was that young man being lefte behynde, then if he had been taken with them, as some doe wishe he had done the lyke by theyr. Thus sayled they on their vyage, vntyl they came to the Ilandes of *Madera*, where they tooke in certayne wynes for the store of their shippes, and payde for them as they agreed of the price. At these Ilandes they met with a great Galion of the kyng of Portugale, ful of men and ordinance: yet such as could not haue preuayled if it had attempted to withstande or resist our shippes, for the which cause it was set foorth, not only to let and interrupte these our shippes of their purposed viage, but all other that should attempte the lyke: yet chiefly to frustrate our vyage. For the Kyng of Portugale was sinisterly informed that our shyppes were armed to his castell of *Mina* in these parties, whereas nothyng lesse was ment.

The Ilandes of Madera.

A galeon of the kyng of Portugale.

The Castell of Mina.

After that our shyppes departed from the Ilandes of *Madera* forwarde on theyr vyage, began this woorthie Captayne *Pinteados* sorowe, as a man tormented with the company of a terrible Hydra, who hytherto flattered with him, and made him a fayre countenaunce and shewe of loue. Then dyd he take vppon him to commaund all alone, settyng nought both by Captayne *Pinteado*, with the reste of the merchante factours: sometymes with opprobrious woordes, and sometymes with threatnynges, most shamefully abusing them, taking from *Pinteado* the seruice of the boyes & certaine mariners that were assigned him by the order and direction of the woorshipfull merchauntes, and leauyng him as a common mariner, whiche is the greatest despite and greefe that can be to a Portugale or Spanyarde, to be diminished theyr honour, which they esteeme aboue all riches. Thus saylyng forwarde on theyr vyage, they came to the Ilands of Canarie, continuing theyr course from thence vntyll they arryued at the Ilande of Saincte Nicolas, where they vyttayled them selues with freshe meate, of the flesshe of wylde Goates, whereof is great plentie in that Ilande, and in maner of nothing els. From hence folowyng on theyr course, and tarying heere and there at the desarte Ilandes in the way, bycause they would not come to tymely to the countrey of *Guinea* for the heate, and tarying somewhat to long (for what can be well mynistred in a common wealth, where inequalitie with tyran-

The Ilandes of Canarie.

The Ilande of S. Nicolas.

Guinea.

The ryuer of Sesto.

Graynes.

The thirst of golde.

The Castell of Mina.

The quantitie of golde.

Benin.

Pepper.

Furie admitteth no counsaple.

nie will rule alone) they came at the length to the fyrst lande of the countrey of *Guinea*, where they fell with the great ryuer of *Sesto*; where they myght for theyr merchandies haue laden their shyppes with the graynes of that countrey, whiche is a very hot fruite, and muche lyke vnto a fygge as it groweth on the tree. For as the fygges are full of small seedes, so is the sayde fruite full of graynes, which are lose within the codde, hauyng in the myddest thereof a hole on euery syde. This kynde of spyce is much vsed in colde countreys, and may there be solde for great aduantage, for exchaunge of other wares. But our men by the persuasion or rather inforcement of this tragicall Captaine, not regardyng, and settyng lyght by that commoditie, in comparison to the fine golde they thirsted, sayled an hundred leagues further, vntyll they came to the golden lande: where not attemptyng to come neare the Castell parteynyng to the kyng of Portugale, which was within the ryuer of *Mina*, made sale of theyr ware onely on this syde and beyond it, for the golde of that countrey, to the quantitie of an hundred and fyftie poundes weyght, there beyng in case that they myght haue dispatched all theyr ware for golde, if the vntame brayne of Wyndam had or could haue gyuen eare to the counsayle and experience of *Pinteado*. For when that Wyndam, not satisfied with the golde whiche he had (and more might haue had if he had taried about the *Mina*) commaundyng the sayde *Pinteado* (for so he tooke vppon him) to leade the shyppes to *Benin*, beyng vnder the Equinoctiall lyne, and a hundred and fyftie leagues beyonde the *Mina*, where he looked to haue theyr shyppes laden with pepper: and beyng counsayled of the sayde *Pinteado*, considerying the late tyme of the yeere, for that tyme to goe no further, but to make sale of their wares suche as they had for golde, whereby they myght haue ben great gayners. But Wyndam not assentyng hereunto, fell into a sodayne rage, reuilyng the sayde *Pinteado*, callyng him Iewe, with other opprobrious woordes, saying, This horson Iewe hath promysed to bryng vs to suche places as are not, or as he can not bryng vs vnto: but if he doe not, I will cut of his eares, and nayle them to the mast. *Pinteado* gaue the foresayde counsayle to goe no further, for the safegarde of the men & theyr liues, whiche they shoulde put in daunger if they came to late, for the

the rossia whiche is theyr wynter, not for colde but for smothe-
ryng heate, with close and cloudie ayre, and stormíng wether, of
suche putrifying qualitie, that it rotted the coates of theyr backes:
or els for commyng to soone for the scorching heate of the sunne,
whiche caused them to lynger in the way . But of force, and
not of wyll, brought he the shyppes before the ryuer of *Benin*:
where rydyng at an Anker, sent theyr pinnesse vp into the riuer
fyftie or threescore leagues, from whence certayne of the mer-
chauntes with Captayne *Pinteado*, *Francisco* a Portugale, *Nico-
las Lambert* Gentelman, and other merchauntes, were conduc-
ted to the courte where the kyng remayned, ten leagues from the
ryuer syde : whyther when they came, they were brought with
a great company to the presence of the Kyng, who being a blacke
Moore (although not so blacke as the reste) sat in a great houge
hal, long and wyde, the walles made of earth, without windowes,
the roofe of thynne boordes, open in sundry places, lyke vnto lo-
uers, to let in the ayre.

The Rossia.
Rottyng heate.

Scorchyng heate.

Benin.

Francisco.
Nicolas Lam-
berte.

The kyng of
Banin his
courte.

And here to speake of the great reuerence they gyue to theyr
kyng, being suche that if we would gyue as muche to our sauiour
Christ, we should remoue from our heades many plagues which
we dayly deserue for our contempte and impietie.

Reuerence
towarde the
kyng.

So it is therfore, that when his noble men are in his presence,
they neuer looke him in the face, but sit courying, as wee vppon
our knees, so they vppon theyr buttockes, with theyr elbowes vp-
pon theyr knees, and theyr handes before theyr faces, not looking
vp vntyll the Kyng commaunde them . And when they are
commyng towarde the Kyng, as farre as they doe see him, doe
they shewe suche reuerence, syttyng on the grounde with theyr
faces couered as before. Likewise when they departe from him,
they turne not theyr backes towarde him, but goe creeping back-
warde with lyke reuerence.

And nowe to speake somewhat of the communication that
was betweene the Kyng and our men, you shall fyrst vnder-
stande that hee him selfe coulde speake the Portugale tongue,
whiche he had learned of a chylde . Therefore after that he had
commaunded our men to stande vp, and demaunded of them
the cause of theyr commyng into that countrey, they answe-
red by *Pinteado*, that they were merchauntes, traueiyng in-

The commu-
nication be-
tweene the
kyng of Benin
and our men.

to those parties for the commodities of his countrey, for exchange of wares whiche they had brought from theyr countreys, beyng such as should bee no lesse commodious for him and his people.

Pepper. The Kyng then hauyng of olde lying in a certayne store house thirtie or fourtie kyntalles of pepper (euery kyntall beyng an hundred weyght) wyllyng them to looke vppon the same, and agayne to bryng him a sight of suche merchaundies as they had brought with them. And therevppon sent with the Captaine and the merchauntes, certayne of his men to conducte them to the waters syde, with other to bryng the ware from the pinnesse to the courte. Who when they were returned and the wares seene, the kyng grewe to this ende with the merchantes, to prouyde in thirtie dayes the ladyng of all theyr shyppes with pepper. And in case theyr merchaundies would not extende to the value of so muche pepper, he promised to credite them to theyr next returne: and therevppon sent the countrey rounde about to geather pepper, causing the same to be brought to the courte: So that within the space of thirtie dayes they had geathered fourescore tunne of pepper.

The kynges gentelnesse towarde our men.

In the meane season, our men partly hauyng no rule of themselues, but eatyng without measure of the fruites of the countrey, and drinkyng the wyne of the Palme trees that droppeth in the nyght from the cutte branches of the same, and in suche extreeme heate runnyng continually into the water, not vsed before to suche sodayne and vehement alterations (then the which nothyng is more daungerous) were thereby brought into swelynges and agues: insomuche that the later tyme of the yeere comming on, caused them to dye sometimes.iii. & sometimes.iiii. or v. in a day. Then *Windam* perceiuing the time of the.xxx. dayes to be expired, & his men dying so fast, sent to the courte in poste to captaine *Pinteado*, and the rest, to come away, and to tary no longer. But *Pinteado*, with the rest, wrote backe to him againe, certifying him of the great quantitie of pepper they had alredy geathered, and looked dayly for much more: Desiring him furthermore to remember the great praise and name they should wyn, if they came home prosperously, and what shame of the contrarie. With which answere Wyndam not satisfied, and many of their men dying dayly, willed and commaunded them againe either to come

The disorder and death of our men.

come away furthwith, or els threatened to leaue them behynde. When *Pinteado* heard this aunſweare, thynkyng to perſuade hym with reaſon, tooke his way from the courte towarde the ſhyppes, beyng conducted thyther with men by the kynges commaundement.

In the meane ſeaſon *Windam* all rageyng, brake vp *Pinteados* Cabin, brake open his cheſtes, ſpoyled ſuch prouiſion of colde ſtylled waters and ſuckettes as he had prouided for his health, and lefte hym nothing, neither of his inſtrumentes to ſaile by, nor yet of his apparell: and in the meane tyme fallyng ſycke hym ſelfe, dyed alſo. Whoſe death *Pinteado*, commyng abrode, lamented as muche as if he had ben the deereſt frende he had in the worlde. But certayne of the maryners and other officers dyd ſpette in his face, ſome callyng hym Iewe, ſaying that he had brought them thyther to kyll them: and ſome drawyng theyr ſwoordes at hym, makyng a ſhewe to ſlay hym. Then he, perceyuyng that they would needes away, deſyred them to tary, that he myght fetch the reſt of the merchauntes that were lefte at the courte. But they woulde not graunt his requeſt. Then deſyred he them to geue hym the ſhyppe boate, with as muche of an olde ſayle as myght ſerue for the ſame, promiſyng them therewith to bryng Nicolas Lambert and the reſt into England: But al was in vayne. Then wrote he a letter to the courte to the merchants, informyng them of all the matter, and promiſyng them if God would lende hym lyfe to returne with al haſt to fetch them. And thus was *Pinteado* kept a boordeſhyppe againſt his will, thruſt among the boyes of the ſhyppe, not vſed lyke a man, nor yet like an honeſt boy, but glad to fynde fauour at the cookes hande. Then departed they, leauing one of theyr ſhyppes behynd them, which they ſonke for lacke of men to cary her. After this, within fyue or ſeuen dayes ſaylyng, dyed alſo *Penteado*, for very penſiuenelle and thought that ſtroke hym to the hart: A man worthy to ſerue any prynce, and moſt vilely vſed. And of ſeuenſcore men came home to Plymmouth ſcarſely fourtie, and of them many dyed. And that no man ſhoulde ſuſpect theſe wordes whiche I haue ſayd in commendation of *Pinteado*, to be ſpoken vppon fauour otherwyſe then truth, I haue thought good to ad hereunto the coppie of the letters which the kyng of Portugale and the

The death of wyndam. Pinteado cupl I vſed of the maryners.

This Lambart was a Lōdoner borne, whoſe father had been Lorde mayre of London, and this Lambart ſometyme a knyght of the rodes, one as he was vnmaried, ſo he lued in the feare of God, and was the fyrſt of that order that forſoke the Pope, and clane to Gods holy worde. The death of Pinteado.

infant

infant his brother wrote vnto hym, to reconcyle hym, at suche tyme as vppon the kyng his maisters displeasure (and not for any other cryme or offence, as may appeare by the sayde letters) he was only for pouertie inforced to come into Englande, where he fyrst persuaded our merchauntes to attempt the sayde vyages to *Guinea*. But as the kyng of Portugale to late repented hym that he had so punyshed *Pinteado*, vppon malicious informations of suche as enuied the mans good fortune, euen so may it hereby appeare, that in some cases, euen Lions them selues, may either be hyndred by the contempt, or ayded by the helpe of the poore myse, accordyng vnto the fable of Esope.

The copie of Antoni Anes Pinteado his letters patentes, wherby the king of Portugale made him knyght of his house, after al his troubles and imprisonment, which, by wrong information made to the king, he had susteined of long time, being at the last deliuered, his cause knowen and manifested to the kyng by a grey fryer the kynges confessour.



The kyng do geue you to vnderstande lorde Frances *Desseosa*, one of my counsaile, and ouerseer of my house, that in consideration of the good seruice which *Antonie Anes Pinteado*, the sonne of Iohn *Anes*, dwellyng in the towne called the porte, hath done vnto me, my wyl and pleasure is, to make him knight of mi house, alowing to him in pension seuē hundred reis moneth-ly, and euery day one alcayre of barly, as long as he keepeth a horse, and to be payde accordyng to the ordinaunce of my house. Prouydyng alwayes that he shal receyue but one mariage gifte: And this also in such condition, that the tyme which is excepted in our ordinaunce, forbiddyng such men to marry for gettyng suche chyldren as myght succeede them in this alowance, which is syxe yeeres after the makyng of this patent, shalbe fyrst expired before he do mary. Wherfore commaund you to cause this to be entred in the booke called the *Matricola* of our housholde, vnder the title of knyghtes. And when it is so entred, let the clarke of ỳ *Matricola*, for the certaintie thereof, wryte on the back-

Seuen hundred reis are .x. s. Alcayre is halfe a bushell.

backſyde of this *Aluala*, or patent, the number of the leafe wherin this our graunt is entered. Which doone, let him returne this writing vnto the ſaid *Anthonie Anes Pinteado* for his warrant.

I Diego Henriques haue wrytten this in *Almarin* the twenty and two day of September, in the yeere of our Lorde. 1551. And this beneuolence the kyng gaue vnto *Anthonie Anes Pinteado* the twentie and fyue day of July this preſent yeere.

Rey.

The ſecretaries declaration written vnder the kynges graunt.

OUr Maieſtie hath vouchſafed, in reſpect & conſideration of the good ſeruice of *Anthonie Anes Pinteado*, dwellyng in the port, and ſonne of *Iohn Anes*, to make hym knyght of your houſe, with ordinarie allowance, of ſeuen hundred Reys penſion by the moneth, and one *Alcayr* of Barley by the day, as long as he kepeth a Horſe: and to be payde accordyng to the ordinance of your houſe, with condition that he ſhall haue but one mariage gyft: and that not within the ſpace of .vi. yeeres after the makyng of theſe letters patentes. The ſecretaries note. Entered in the booke of the *Matricola*. Fol. 683.

Franciſco de Siquera.

The coppie of the letter of *Don Lewes* the infant, and brother to the kyng of Portugale: ſent into England to *Anthonie Anes Pinteado*.

Anthonie Anes Pinteado, I the infant brother to the kyng, haue me hartely commended vnto you. *Peter Gonſalues* is gone to ſeeke you, deſiring to bryng you home againe into your countrey. And for that purpoſe, hath with hym a ſafe conduct for you, graunted by the kyng, that thereby you maye freelye and without all feare come home. And although the weather be foule and ſtormye, yet fayle not to come: For in the tyme that his Maieſtie hath geuen you, you maye

doo

do many thynges to your contentation and gratyfyng the king, whereof I woulde be ryght glad: and to bryng the same to passe, wyll do all that lyeth in me for your profite. But forasmuche as *Peter Gonsalues* wyl make further declaration hereof vnto you, I say no more at this present. Wrytten in *Luxburne* the eyght day of December. Anno. Y. D.LIJ.

The infant *Don Lewes*.

ALl these forsayde wrytynges I sawe vnder seale, in the house of my frende Nicholas Liese, with whom *Pinteado* left them, at his vnfortunate departyng to *Guinea*. But notwithstandyng all these freendly letters and fayre promises, *Pinteado* durst not attempt to goe home, neyther to keepe company with the Portugales his countrey men, without the presence of other: forasmuch as he had secrete admonitions that they entended to sley hym, yf tyme and place myght haue serued theyr wicked entent.

The second viage to *Guinea*.

AS in the fyrst viage I haue declared rather the order of the history, then the course of the nauigation, wherof at that time I could haue no perfect information: so in the discription of this seconde viage, my cheefe intent hath been to shewe the course of the same, accordyng to the obseruation and ordinary custome of the maryners, and as I receyued it at the handes of an expert Pilot, beyng one of the cheefe in this viage, who also with his owne handes wrote a briefe declaration of the same, as he founde and tryed al thynges, not by coniecture, but by the art of saylyng, and instrumentes parteynyng to the mariners facultie. Not therefore assumyng to my selfe the commendations due vnto other, neyther so bolde as in any part to change or otherwyse dispose the order of this viage, so well obserued by

art

arte and experyence, I haue thought good to set fooyth the same, in suche sort and phrase of speache as is commonly vsed among them, and as I receyued it of the sayd pilot, as I haue said. Take it therefore as foloweth.

In the yeere of our lorde .1554. the .11. daye of October, we departed the ryuer of Temmes with three goodly shyppes, the one called the Trinitie, a ship of the burden of seuenscore tun, the other called ỳ Barthelmew, a shyppe of the burden of .lxxx. the thyrd was the John Euangelist, a shyp of seuenscore tunne. With the sayde shyppes and two pynesses (whereof the one was drowned in the coast of Englande) we went forwarde on our vyage, and stayed at Douer .xiiii. dayes . We stayed also at Rye three or foure dayes . Moreouer last of all we touched at Darthmouth.

The fyrst day of Nouember at .ix. of the clocke at nyght, departyng from the coaste of Englande, we sette of the stert, bearyng southwest al that nyght in the sea, and the next day all day, and the next nyght after, vntyl the thyrde day of the sayde moneth about noone, makyng our way good, dyd runne .60. leagues.

Item from .xii. of the clocke the thyrde daye, tyll .xii. of the clocke the .iiii. day of the sayde moneth, makyng our way good southest, dyd runne euery three houres two leagues, which amounteth to .xvi. leagues the whole.

Item from .xii. of the clocke the .iiii. day, to .xii. of the clocke the .v. day, running southwest in the sea, dyd runne .xii. leagues.

Item runnyng from .xii. of the clocke the .v day, vntyll .xii. of the cloke the .vi. day, runnyng southeast, dyd runne .xviii. leagues.

And so from .xii. of the clocke the .vi. day, vntyll .xii. of the clocke the .vii. day, runnyng southsouthwest, dyd runne euery houre .ii. leagues, which amount to .xlviii. leagues the whole.

Item from .xii. of the clocke the .vii. day, tyll .iii. of the clocke the .viii. day, southsouthwest runnyng in the sea, dyd runne .xxx. leagues.

Item from three of the clocke the .viii. day, vntill .iii. of the clocke the .ix. day, runnyng southsouthwest, dyd runne .xxx. leagues.

Item from .iii. of the clocke the .ix. day, tyll .iii. of the clocke

the

the .x. daye, dyd southsoutheast in runnyng in the sea the summe of .xxiiii. leagues.

Also from .iii. of the clocke the .x. day, vntyll .xii of the clocke the .xi. daye, dyd runne southsouthwest the summe of .xii. leagues, and from .xii. of the clocke, tyll .vi of the sayde daye, dyd runne vi. leagues.

Running south and by west in the sea, from .vi. of the clocke the xi. day, til .vi. of the clocke the .xii. day, dyd runne .xxvi. leagues.

From .vi. of the clocke at after noone the .xii. daye, tyll .vi. of the clocke the .xiii. daye at after noone, dyd runne .xiii. leagues. Item from .vi. of the clocke the .xiii. daye, tyll .vi. of the clocke the .xiiii. day at after noone, we were becalmed, that we coulde lye southwest with a sayle . And the .xv. daye in the mornyng, the wynd came to the East and Eastnortheast. The .xvii. daye in the mornyng, we had syght of the Ile of *Madera*, whiche doth ryse to hym that commeth in the northnortheast part vpryght lande in the west part of it, and very hygh: and to the southsoutheast a lowe long lande, and a long poynt, with a saddle thorough the myddest of it, standeth in the .xxvii. degrees: and in the west part, many sprynges of water runnyng downe from the mountayne, and many whyte fieldes lyke vnto corne fieldes, and some whyte houses to the southeast parte of it: and the toppe of the mountayne sheweth very ragged if you may see it, and in the northeast part there is a bycht or bay as though it were a harborowe: Also in the sayd part, there is a rocke a litle distance from the shore, and ouer the sayde bycht, you shall see a great gap in the mountayne.

The Ile of Madera.

The .xix. day at .xii. of the clocke, we had sycht of the Ile of Palmes and *Teneriffa* and the *Canaries*. The Ile of Palme riseth round, and lyeth southeast and northwest, and the northwest part is lowest. In the south, is a round hyll ouer the head land, and an other round hyll aboue that in the land. There is betwene the Southeast part of the Ile of *Madera* and the northwest part of the Ile of Palme .lvii. leagues. This Ile of Palme lyeth in the .xxix. degrees. And our course from *Madera* to the Ile of Palme was south, & south and by west, so that we had sight of *Teneriffa* & of the *Canaries*. The southeast part of the Ile of Palme, and the northnortheast of *Teneriffa*, lieth southeast and northwest,

The Ile of palmes. Teneriffa. The Canaries.

From Madera to the Ile of Palmes.

and

and betweene them is twentie leagues. *Teneriffa* and the great Canarie, called *Grancanaria*, and the West part of *Fortisuentura*, standeth in .xxvii. degrees and a halfe. *Gomera*, is a fayre Iland and very ragged, and lyeth West Southwest of *Teneriffa*. And who so euer wyll come betweene them two Ilandes, must come South and by East, and in the South part of *Gomera* is a towne and a good rode in the sayde parte of the Ilande: and it standeth in twentie and seuen degrees and three terces. *Teneriffa* is an hygh land, & a great hygh pycke, lyke a suger loafe: and vpon the said picke is snow throughout al the whole yeere. And by reason of that pycke it may be knowen aboue al other Ilandes, and there we were becalmed the .xx. day of Nouember, from syxe of the clocke in the morning, vntyl foure of the clocke at after noone.

Grancanaria.
Fortisuentura.
The Iland of Gomera.
Teneriffa.
Snowe.

Betweene *Gomera*, and *Cape de las Barbas*.

THe .xxii. day of Nouember, vnder the Troppke of Cancer, the Sunne goeth downe West and by South. Upon the coast of Barbarie .xxv. leagues by North *Cape blanke* at three leagues of the mayne, there is .xv. fadome, and good shelly grounde, & sand among, and no streames, and two small Ilandes standyng in the .xxii. degrees & a terce.

The coast of Barbarie.
Cape blanke.

From *Gomera* to *Cape de las Barbas* is an hundred leagues, and our course was South and by East. The sayde *Cape* standeth in xxii. and a halfe: and all that coast is flatte .xvi. or xvii. fadome deepe. Uii. or. viii. leagues off from the ryuer *de Oro* to *cape de las Barbas*, there vse many Spanyardes and Portugales to trade for fyshyng, duryng the moneth af Nouember: and al that coast is very lowe landes. Also we went from *cape de las Barbas* south southwest, and southwest and by south, tyl we brought our selues in .xx. degrees and a halfe, reckonyng our selues. vii. leagues of: and that was the least sholes of *cape Blanke*.

The ryuer of de Oro.

Then we went South, vntil we brought our selues in thyrteene degrees, reckonyng our selues twentie and fyue leagues of. And in fyfteene degrees, we did reare the crossiers, and we myght haue reared them sooner if we had loked for them. They are not ryght a Crosse in the moneth of Nouember, by reason of the nyghtes

The Crossiers or crosse starres.

nyghtes are shoꝛt there. Neuertheleſſe we had the ſyght of them the .xxix. day of the ſayde moneth at nyght.

The fyꝛſt of December out thyꝛteene degrees, we ſet our courſe South and by Eaſt, vntyl the fourth day of December at twelue of the clocke the ſame day. Then we were in niene degrees and a terce, reckonyng our ſelues thyꝛtye leagues of the ſholes of the ryuer called *Ria Grande*, beyng West Southweſt of them: the whiche ſholes be thyꝛtie leagues long.

Ria Grande.

The fourth of December, we began to ſet our courſe Southeaſt, we beyng in ſyxe degrees and a halfe.

The nienth day of December we ſet our courſe Eaſt Southeaſt: the fourteenth day of the ſayde moneth, we ſet our courſe Eaſt. we beyng in fyue degrees and a halfe, reckonyng our ſelues thyꝛtie and ſyxe leagues from the coaſt of *Guinea*.

The .xix. of the ſayde moneth, we ſet our courſe Eaſt and by Noꝛth, reckoning our ſelues .xvii. leagues diſtant from *Cape Menſurado*, the ſayde *Cape* beyng Eaſt Noꝛtheaſt of vs, and the ryuer of *Seſto* beyng Eaſt.

Cape Menſurado.
The ryuer of Seſto.

The .xxi. day of the ſayde moneth, we fel with *Cape Menſurado* to the Southeaſt, about two leagues of. This *Cape* may be eaſely knowen, by reaſon the ryſyng of it is like a Poꝛpoſe head. Alſo toward the Southeaſt there are thꝛee trees, whereof the Eaſtermoſt tree is the hygheſt, and the myddlemoſt is lyke a hie ſtacke, and the Southermoſt lyke vnto a Gibet: and vppon the mayne, are foure oꝛ fyue hygh hylles ryſyng one after an other lyke rounde hoommockes oꝛ hyllockes. And the Southeaſt of the thꝛee trees, is thꝛee trees lyke a bꝛaudierwyſe: and all the coaſt along is whyte ſand. The ſayde *Cape* ſtandeth within a litle in ſyxe degrees.

The .xxii. of December, we came to the ryuer of *Seſto*, and remayned there vntyll the .xxix. day of the ſayde moneth. Here we thought it beſt to ſend befoꝛe vs the pynneſſe to the ryuer of *Dulce*, called *Rio Dulce*, that they myght haue the begynnyng of the market befoꝛe the commyng of the John.

The ryuer of Seſto.
Rio Dulce.

At the ryuer of *Seſto*, we had a Tunne of graynes. This riuer ſtandeth in .vi. degrees, lackyng a terce. From the ryuer of *Seſto* to *Rio Dulce*, is .xxb. leagues. *Rio Dulce* ſtandeth in fyue degrees and a halfe. The ryuer of *Seſto* is eaſye to be knowen, by

reaſon

reason there is a ledge of rockes on the Southeast parte of the Rode. And at the entryng into the hauen, are fyue or sixe trees that beare no leaues. This is a good harborowe, but very narow at the entrance into the ryuer. There is also a rocke in the hauens mouth ryght as you enter. And all that coast betweene Cape *de Monte*, and cape *de las Palmas*, lyeth Southeast and by East, Northwest and by West, being three leagues of the shore. And you shall haue in some places rockes two leagues of: and that betweene the riuer of *Sesto* and cape *de las Palmas*.

Cape de monte.

Cape de las Palmas.

Betweene the ryuer of *Sesto* & the ryuer *Dulce*. is. xxb. leagues: and the high lande that is betweene them both, is called *Cakeado*, being eight leagues from the ryuer of *Sesto*. And to the Southeastwarde of him, is a place called *Shawgro*, and an other called *Shyawe* or *Shauo*, where you may get freshe water. Of this *Shyawe*, lyeth a redge of rockes: and to the Southeastwarde, lyeth a hedlande called *Croke*. Betweene *Cakeado* and *Croke*, is. ix. or ten leagues. To the Southeastwarde of, is a harborowe called saint *Vinecnt*: Ryght ouer agaynst sainct *Vincent*, is a rocke vnder the water, two leagues and a halfe of the shore. To the Southeastwarde of that rocke you shall see an Islande about three or foure leagues of: this Islande is not paste a league of the shore. To the East Southeast of the Islande, is a rocke that lyeth aboue the water, and by that rocke goeth in the ryuer of *Dulce*, which you shall know by the sayde ryuer and rocke. The Northwest syde of the hauen, is flatte sande, and the Southeast syde thereof, is lyke an Islande, and a bare platte without any trees, and so is it not in any other place.

The land of Cakeado.

Shauo.

Croke.

Sainct Vincentes harborowe.

The riuer Dulce.

In the Rode, you shall ryde in xiii. or. xiiii. fadomes, good owes and sande, beyng the markes of the Rode to byng the Islande and the Northeast lande togeather, and here we Ankered the last of December.

The third day of January, we came from the riuer of *Dulce*.

Note that *cape de las Palmas*, is a fayre high lande, but some lowe places thereof by the water syde looke lyke redde cliffes with whyte strakes lyke wayes, a cable length a peece, & this is to the East parte of the cape. This cape is the Southermost lande in all the coast of *Guinea*, and standeth in foure degrees and a terce.

Cape de las Palmas.

The coast of Guinea.

The coast from *Cape de las palmas* to *Cape Trepoyntes*, or the *tres Puntas*, is fayre and cleare without rocke or other daunger.

Twentie and fyue leagues from *Cape de las Palmas*, the lande is hygher then in any place, vntyl we come to *Cape Trepoyntes*. And about ten leagues before you come to *Cape Trepoyntes*, the land ryseth styll hygher and hygher, vntyl you come to *Cape Trepoyntes*. Also before you come to the sayde *Cape*, after other fyue leagues to the Northwest part of it, there is certayne broken grounde, with two great rockes, and within them in the byght of a bay, is a castel called *Arra*, parteining to the kyng of Portugale. You shal know it by the sayd rockes that lye of it: for there is none suche from *Cape de las Palmas* to *cape Trepoyntes*. This coast lyeth East & by North, West & by South. From *Cape de las Palmas* to the sayd castel, is fourscore and fyfteene leagues. And the coast lyeth from the sayd castel to the westermost point of the *Trepoyntes*, Southeast and by South, Northwest and by North. Also the westermost poynt of the *Trepoyntes*, is a low land, lying halfe a myle out in the sea: and vppon the innermoste necke to the land ward, is a tuft of trees, & there we arryued the eleuenth day of Januarye.

The castell of Arra.

The twelf day of Januarye, we came to a towne called *Samma* or *Samua*, beyng .viii. leagues from *Cape Trepoyntes* toward East Northeast. Betweene *Cape Trepoyntes* and the towne of *Samua*, is a great ledge of rockes a great way out in the sea. We continued foure dayes at that towne: & the captayne therof would needs haue a pledge a shore. But when they receiued the pledge, they kept him still, & would trafficke no more, but shot of theyr ordinance at vs. They haue two or three peeces of ordinance and no more. The .xvi. day of the sayde mooneth, we made reckonyng to come to a place called *Cape Corea*, where captayne *Don Ihon* dwelleth, whose men entertayned vs frendly. This *Cape Corea*, is foure leagues Eastwarde of the castell of *Mina*, other wyse called *La mina* or *Castello de mina*, where we arryued the .xviii. day of the moneth. Here we made sayle of all our cloth, sauing two or three packes.

The towne of Samma.

The pledge was for Johu pork his neuew.

Cape Corea.

The castell of mina parteynyng to the kyng of Portugale.

The .xvi. day of the same moneth we weighed anker, and departed from thence to the Trinitie, whiche was .vii. leagues East-

Eastwarde of vs, where she solde her wares. Then they of the Trinitie wylled vs to go Eastwarde of that, viii or .ix leagues, to sell part of theyr wares, in a place called *Perecow*, and an other place named *Perecow Grande*, beyng the eastermost place of both these, whiche you shall knowe by a great rounde hyll neere vnto it, named *Monte Rodondo*, lying westward from it, and by the water syde are many hygh palme trees. From hence dyd we set forth homewarde the .xiii. day of February, and plyed vp alongest tyll we came within .vii or .viii. leagues to *Cape Trepointes*. About .viii. of the clocke the .xv. day at afternoone, we dyd cast about to seawarde: and beware of the currantes, for they wyl deceiue you sore. Whosoeuer shall come from the coaste of *Mina* homewarde, let hym be sure to make his way good west, vntyl he recken hym selfe as farre as *Cape de las Palmas*, where the currant setteth alwayes to the eastwarde. And within .xx. leagues eastwarde of *Cape de las Palmas*, is a ryuer called *De los Potos*, where you may haue freshe water and balasse enough, and plentie of Iuery or Elephantes teeth. This ryuer standeth in foure degrees, and almost two terces. And when you recken your selfe as farre shotte as *Cape de las Palmas*, beyng in a degree, or a degree and a halfe, you may go west, & west by north, vntyl you come in three degrees: and then you may go west northwest, and northwest and by west, vntyll you come in fyue degrees, and then northwest. And in the .vi. degrees, we met northerly wyndes, and great roostyng of tydes. And as we coulde iudge, the currantes went to the north northwest. Furthermore betweene *Cape de Monte* and *Cape verde*, go great currantes which deceiue many men.

Perecowe.
Perecowe grando.
Monte rodondo.
The currantes
From Mina homewarde.
Rio de los Potos.
Iuerye.
Cabe de las Palmes.
Currantes.

The .xxii. daye of Aprill, we were in .viii. degrees and two terces: and so we ranne to the northwest, hauyng the wynde at northeast and east northeast, and sometymes at east, vntyll we were at .xviii. degrees and a terce, whiche was on Maye daye. And so from .xviii. and two terces, we had the wynde at east and east northeast, and sometymes at east southeast: and then we reckened the Ilandes of *Cape Verde* easte southeast of vs, we iudgyng our selues to bee .xlviii. leagues of. And in .xx. and .xxi. degrees, we had the wynde more easterly to the southwarde then before. And so we ran

to the Northwest & north northwest, and sometymes north & by west and north, vntyll we came into.xxxi.degrees, where we reckoned our selues a hundred and fourescore leagues southwest, and by south of the Iland *de Flore* or *de los Flores*, and there wee met with the wynd at south southeast, and set our course northeast.

The Ile de Floza.

In.xxiii.degrees, we had the wynde at the South and southwest, and then we set our course north northeast, and so we ranne to.xl.degrees, and then we set our course northeast, the wynde being at the southwest, and hauyng the Ile *de Flore* East of vs, and xvii.leagues of.

In.xli.degrees, we met with the wynde at Northeast, and so we ranne northwestwarde, then we met with the wynde at the west northwest, and at the west within.vi. leagues, runnyng towarde the northwest, and then we cast about, and laye northeast, vntyll we came in.xlii.degrees, where wee set our course East northeast, iudgyng the Ile of *Coruo* south and by west of vs, and xxvi.leagues distant from vs.

The Ile of Coruo.

A remembrance that the.xxi day of May, we communed with John Rafe, and he thought it best to goe northeast, and iudged him selfe.xxv.leagues Eastwarde to the Ile *de Flore*, and in.xxxix. degrees and a halfe.

Where they lost the sight of the North starre.

Note that in the fourth day of September, vnder niene degrees, we lost the sight of the north starre.

Howe the compasse doeth varie.

Note also, that in the.xlv degrees, the compasse is varied.viii. degrees to the West.

Item, in xl degrees, the compasse dyd vary.xv. degrees in the whole.

Item, in.xxx.degrees and a halfe, the compasse is varyed.v. degrees to the West.

Be it also in memorie, that two or three dayes before we came to cape Trepointes, the pynnesse went alongest the shore, thinkyng to sell some of our wares, and so we came to Anker three or foure leagues west and by south of the cape Trepointes, where we lefte the Trinitie.

Then our pynnesse came aboorde with all our men: the Pynnesse also tooke in more wares. They tolde me moreouer that they would goe to a place where the Prymrose was, and had receyued muche golde at the first vyage to these parties,

The Primrose.

and

and tolde me furthermore that it was a good place: but I fearyng a brigantine that was then vppon the coast, dyd wey and folow them, & left the Trinitie about foure leagues of from vs, and there we rode agaynst that towne foure dayes: so that Martine by his owne desire, and assent of some of the Commissioners that were in the pinnesse, went a shore to the towne, and there John *Berin* went to trafique from vs, being three myles of trafeking at an other towne. The towne is called *Samma* or *Samua*, for *Samma* and *Sammaterra*, are the names of the two first townes, where we did traficke for golde, to the Northeast of cape *Trepoints*. The towne of Samma. Golde.

Hetherto continueth the course of the vyage, as it was described by the sayd Pylot. Now therfore I wil speake somewhat of the countrey and people, and of such thinges as are brought from thence.

They brought from thence at the last vyage, foure hundred pound weight and odde of gold, of .xxii. Carraties and one graine in fineneſſe: also .xxvi. buttes of graynes, and about two hundred and fyftie Elephantes teeth of all quantities. Of these, I sawe and measured some of .ix. spannes in length, as they were crooked. Some of them were as bygge as a mans thygh aboue the knee, and weyed about foure score and tenne pounde weight a peece. They say that some one hath been seene of a hundred and .xxv. pounde weyght. Other there were which they call the teeth of calues, of one or two or three yeeres, whereof some were a foote and a halfe, some two foote, and some three, or more, accordyng to the age of the beast. These great teeth or tuskes, growe in the vpper iawe downewarde, and not in the nether iawe vpwarde, wherin the paynters and arras wookers are deceyued. At this laste vyage was brought from *Guinea* the head of an Elephante, of suche huge bygnesse, that only the bones or crauewe thereof, beside the nether iawe and great tuskes, weyghed about two hundred weyght, and was as muche as I coulde well lyfte from the grounde: insomuche that considering also heerewith the weyght of two suche great teethe, the nether iawes with the lesse teeth, the tongue, the great hangyng eares, the bygge and long snoute or troonke, with all the fleshe, braynes, and skynne, with all other partes belongyng to the whole head, in my iudgement it could wey little lesse then Golde foure hundred weight. Graynes. Elenantes teeth. The head of an Elephant.

fyue hundzed weight. This head dyuers haue seene in the hou se of the woozthie merchant syz Andzewe Judde, where also I saw it, and beheld it, not onely with my bodyly eyes, but much moze with the eyes of my mynde and spirite, considered by the woozke, the cunnyng and wysedome of the wozkemaister: without which consideration, the sight of suche straunge and wonderfull thinges may rather seeme curiosities, then profitable contemplations.

The contemplations of Gods wozkes.

The Elephante (whiche some call an Oliphante) is the biggest of all foure footed beastes, his fozelegges are longer then his hynder, he hath ankles in the lower parte of his hynder legges, and fyue toes on his feete vndiuided, his snoute oz troonke is so long, and in suche fourme, that it is to him in the steede of a hande: foz hee neyther eateth noz dzynketh but by byngyng his troonke to his mouth, therewith hee helpeth vp his maister oz keeper, therwith he ouerthzoweth trees. Besyde his two great tuskes, he hath on euery syde of his mouth foure teethe, wherewith he eateth and gryndeth his meate: eyther of these teeth, are almost a spanne in length, as they growe along in the iawe, and are about two inches in heyght, and almost as much in thicknesse. The tuskes of the Male are greater then of the Female: his tongue is very litle, and so farre in his mouth, that it can not be seene: of all beastes they are most gentle and tractable, foz by many sundzy wayes they are taught, and doe vnderstande: insomuche that they learne to doe due honour to a Kyng, and are of quicke sense and sharpenesse of wyt. When the Male hath once seasoned the Female, he neuer after toucheth her. The Male Elephante lyueth two hundzed yeeres, oz at the least one hundzed and twentie: the Female almost as long, but the floure of theyz age, is but lx. yeeres, as some wryte. They can not suffer wynter oz colde: they loue ryuers, and will often goe into them vp to the snoute, wherewith they blow and snuffe, and playe in the water: but swymme they can not foz the weyght of theyz bodyes. *Plinie* and *Solinie* wryte, that they vse none adulterie. If they happen to meete with a man in wyldernesse beyng out of the way, gentelly they will goe before him, and bryng him into the playne waye. Joyned in battayle, they haue no small respecte vnto them that be woundded: foz they bzyng them that are hurte oz weary into the middle

The description and properties of the Elephant

ble of the army to be defended: they are made tame by drinking the iuise of barley. They haue continual war agaynst Dragons, which desire theyr blood, bycause it is very colde: and therfore the Dragon lying awayte as the Elephant passeth by, wyndeth his tayle (being of exceeding length) about the hynder legges of the Elephant, and so steying him, thrusteth his head into his troonke and exhaustеth his breath, or els byteth him in the eare, whereunto he can not reache with his troonke, and when the Elephant waxeth faynte, he falleth downe on the Serpent, beyng nowe full of blood, and with the poyse of his body breaketh him: so that his owne blood with the blood of the Elephant, runneth out of him myngeled togeather, which beyng colde, is congealed into that substance which the Apothecaries call *Sanguis Draconis*, (that is) Dragons blood, otherwyse called *Cinnabaris*, although there be an other kynde of *Cinnabaris*, commonly called cinoper or vermilion, which the painters vse in certaine colours.

Debate betweene the Elephant and the Dragon.

Sanguis Draconis.

Cinnabaris.

They are also of three kyndes, as of the maryshes, the plaines, and the mountaynes, no lesse differyng in conditions. *Philostratus* writeth, that as much as the Elephant of *Libia* in bygnesse passeth the horse of *Nysea*, so muche doeth the Elephantes of India exceede them of *Libia*: for of the Elephantes of India, some haue been seene of the heyght of.ix. cubites: the other doe so greatly feare these, that they dare not abyde the sight of them. Of the Indian Elephantes, only the Males haue tuskes, but of them of *Ethiopia* and *Libia*, both kyndes are tusked: they are of dyuers heyghtes, as of.xii.xiii. and.xiiii. dordantes, euery dordant benig a measure of niene yuches. Some wryte that an Elephant is bygger then three wylde Oxen or Buffes. They of India are blacke, or of the colour of a Mouse, but they of *Ethiope* or *Guinea*, are browne: the hyde or skynne of them all, is very harde, and without heare or bystels: theyr eares are two dordantes brode, and theyr eyes very litle. Our men sawe one drynkyng at a ryuer in *Guinea*, as they sayled into the lande.

Three kyndes of Elephantes.

Of other properties and conditions of the Elephant, as of theyr marueylous docilicie, of theyr fyght and vse in the warres, of theyr generation and chastitie, when they were fyrste seene in the theaters and tryumphes of the Romans, howe they are taken and tamed, and when they caste theyr tuskes,

with the vse of the same in medicine, who so desireth to know, let him reade Plinie, in the viii. booke of his natural hystorie. He also writeth in his xii. booke, that in olde tyme they made many goodly woorkes of Iuery or Elephants teeth: as tables, tresselles, postes of houses, rayles, lattesses for wyndowes, Images of their goddes, and dyuers other thinges of Iuery, both coloured and vncoloured, & intermyxt with sundry kyndes of precious woods, as at this day are made certayne Chayres, Lutes, and Virginalles. They had suche plentie thereof in olde tyme, that (as far as I remember) Iosephus wryteth, that one of the gates of Hierusalem was called *Porta Eburnea*, (that is) the Iuery gate. The whytenesse thereof was so muche esteemed, that it was thought to represent the naturall fayrenesse of mans skynne: insomuche that such as went about to set foorth (or rather corrupt) naturall beautie with colours and paynting, were reproued by this prouerbe, *Ebur atramento candefacere*, that is, to make Iuery whyte with pynke. The Poettes also, describyng the fayre neckes of beautifull virgins, call them *Eburnea colla*, that is, Iuery neckes. And to haue sayde thus muche of Elephantes and Iuery, it may suffice.

Woorkes of Iuery.

Now therfore I wil speake somewhat of the people and theyr maners, and maner of lyuyng, with also an other briefe description of Africa. It is to vnderstande, that the people which nowe inhabite the regions of the coast of *Guinea*, and the myd partes of Africa, as *Libia* the inner, and *Nubia*, with diuers other great and large regions about the same, were in olde tyme called *Ethiopes*. and *Nigrite*, which we now call Moores, Moorens, or *Negros*, a people of beastly lyuyng, without a God, lawe, religion, or common wealth, and so scorched and vexed with the heate of the sun, that in many places they curse it when it ryseth. Of the regions and people about the inner *Libia* (called *Libia Interior*) *Gemma Phrysius* writeth thus.

The people of Africa.

Libia Interior.

Libia Interior, is very large and desolate, in the whiche are many horrible Wylderneses and mountaynes, replenished with dyuers kyndes of wylde and monstrous beastes and Serpentes. Fyrst from *Mauritania* or Barbarie towarde the South is *Getulia*, a rough and saluage region, whose inhabitauntes are wylde and wanderyng people. After these folowe the

Getulia.

people

people called *Melanogetuli* and *Pharusii*, whiche wander in the wyldernesse, carying with them great gourdes of water. The Ethiopians, called *Nigrite*, occupie a great part of *Aphrica*, and are extended to the West Ocean. Southwarde also they reach to the ryuer *Nigritis*, whose nature agreeth with the ryuer of *Nilus*, forasmuch as it is increased and diminished at the same tyme, and bryngeth foorth the lyke beastes as the Crocodile. By reason whereof, I thynke this to be the same ryuer whiche the Portugales call *Senega*: For this ryuer is also of the same nature. It is furthermore marueylous and very strange that is sayde of this ryuer: And this is, that on the one syde thereof, thinhabitauntes are of hyghe stature and blacke, and on the other syde, of browne or tawnie coloure, and lowe stature, whiche thyng also our men confyrme to be true. There are also other people of *Libia* called *Garamantes*, whose women are common: for they contracte no matrimonie, neyther haue respecte to chastitie. After these are the nations of the people called *Pyrei, Sathiodaphnite, Odrangi, Mimaces, Lynxamate, Dolopes, Agangine, Leuce Ethiopes, Xilicei Ethiopes, Calcei Ethiopes*, and *Nubi*. These haue the same situation in *Ptolomie* that they nowe geue to the kyngdome of *Nubia*. Here are certayne Christians vnder the dominion of the great Emperour of *Ethiopia*, called Prester Iohn. From these towarde the west, is a great nation of people called *Aphricerones*, whose region (as farre as may bee geathered by coniecture) is the same that is nowe called *Regnum Orguene*, confinyng vppon the east partes of *Guinea*. From hence Westwarde, and somewhat towarde the North, are the kyngdomes of *Gambra* and *Budomel*, not farre from the ryuer of *Senega*. And from hence towarde the inlande regions, and along by the sea coast, are the regions of *Ginoia* or *Guinea*, which we commonly call *Gynnee*. On the West syde of these regions towarde the Ocean, is the cape or poynt called *Gabouerde*, or *Caput viride* (that is) the greene cape, to the whiche the Portugales fyrst directe theyr course when they sayle to *America* or the lande of *Brasile*. Then departyng from hence, they turne to the ryght hande towarde the quarter of the wynde called *Garbino*, whiche is betwene the west and the south. But to speake somewhat more of *Ethiopia*, Although

Ethiopes. Nigrite.

The ryuer Nigritis or Senega.

A strāge thyng

Garamantes.

People of Libia.

Prester John.

Regnum Orguene.

Gambra.

Guinea or Cap. Verde.

The Portugales nauigations to Brasile.

Ethiopia.

there

there are many nations of people so named, yet is Ethiopia chiefely diuided into two partes, whereof the one is called Ethiopia vnder Egypte, a great and ryche region. To this parteyneth the Ilande of *Meroe*, imbraced rounde about with the streames of the ryuer *Nilus*. In this Ilande women reigned in olde tyme. Iosephus writeth, that it was somtyme called *Saba*: and that the queene of *Saba* came from thence to Hierusalem, to heare the wysedome of Salomon. From hence towarde the East, reigneth the sayde Christian Emperour Prester John, whom some call *Papa Iohannes*, and other saye that he is called *Pean Iuan* (that is) great John, whose Empire reacheth farre beyonde *Nilus*, and is extended to the coastes of the redde sea and *Indian* sea. The myddle of the region is almost in the .66. degrees of longitude, and .xii. degrees of latitude. About this region inhabite the people called *Clodu*, *Risophagi*, *Babilonj*, *Axiunite*, *Molili*, and *Molibe*. After these is the region called *Trogloditica*, whose inhabitauntes dwell in caues and dennes: for these are theyr houses, and the flesh of serpents theyr meate, as writeth *Plinie*, and *Diodorus Siculus*. They haue no speache, but rather a grynnyng and chatteryng. There are also people without heades, called *Blemines*, hauyng theyr eyes and mouth in theyr breste. Lykewyse *Strucophagi*, and naked *Ganphasantes*: *Satyrs* also, which haue nothyng of men but onely shape. Moreouer *Oripei*, great hunters. *Mennones* also, and the region of *Smyrnophora*, which bringeth forth myrre. After these is the regiõ of *Azania*, in the which many Elephantes are founde. A great part of the other regions of Afrike that are beyond the Equinoctiall line, are nowe ascrybed to the kyngdome of *Melinde*, whose inhabitauntes are accustomed to traffike with the nations of Arabie, and theyr kyng is ioyned in frendshyp with the kyng of Portugale, and payeth tribute to Prester John.

The Ilande of Meroe.

The queene of Saba.

Prester John Emperour of Ethiopia.

People of the east syde of Africa.

Cephiophagi.

People without heades.

Myrre.
Azania.

Regnum Melinde.

The other Ethiope, called *Ethiopia Interior* (that is) the inner Ethiope, is not yet knowne for the greatnesse thereof, but onely by the sea coastes: yet is it described in this maner. First from the Equinoctiall towarde the South, is a great region of Ethiopians, which bryngeth fooyth whyte Elephantes, Tigers, and the beastes called *Rhinocerontes*. Also a region that bryngeth fooyth plentie of Cinamome, lying betwene the braunches

Ethiopia Interior.

Whyte Elephantes.

braunches of *Nilus*. Also the kyngdome of *Habech* or *Habasia*, a regyon of Christien men, lying both on this syde and beyonde *Nilus*. Here are also the *Ethiopians*, called *Ichthiophagi* (that is) suche as lyue only by fysshe, & were sometymes subdued by the warres of great Alexander. Furthermore the *Ethiopians* called *Rhapsii*, and *Anthropophagi*, that are accustomed to mans flesshe, inhabite the regions neare vnto the mountaynes called *Montes Lunæ*, (that is) the mountaynes of the Moone. *Gazatia*, is vnder the Troppyke of Capricorne. After this, followeth the front of Affrike, the *Cape* of *Buena Speranza*, or *Caput Bonæ Spei*, (that is) the *Cape* of good hope, by the which they passe that sayle from Spaine to Calicut. But by what names the *Capes* and gulfes are called, forasmuche as the same are in euery globe and carde, it were here superfluous to rehearse them.

Habassia.

Ichthiophagi.

Anthropophagi.

Montes Lunæ.

Gazatia,

Cape bonæ Spei.

Some wryte that *Affrica* was so named by the *Grecians*, because it is without colde. For the Greeke letter *Alpha*, or *A*, signifieth priuation, voyde, or without: and *Phrice*, signifieth colde. For in deede although in the steadeof wynter, they haue a cloudy and tempestious season, yet is it not colde, but rather smootheryng hotte, with also hotte shewres of rayne, and somewhere suche scorchyng wyndes, that what by one meanes and other, they seeme at certayne tymes to lyue as it were in fornaces, and in maner alredy halfe way in Purgatorie or hell. *Gemma Phrisius* wryteth, that in certayne partes of *Affrica*, (as in *Atlas* the greater) the ayre in the nyght season is seene shynyng, with many strange fyers and flames rysyng in maner as hyghe as the Moone: and that in the element are sometyme hearde as it were the sounde of pypes, trumpettes, and drommes: Which noises may perhaps be caused by the behement and sundry motions of suche fyrye exhalations in the ayre, as we see the lyke in many experiences wrought by fyre, ayre, & winde. The holownesse also, & diuers reflexions and breaking of the cloudes, may be great causes hereof, beside the behement colde of the middle region of the ayre, wherby the said fyrie exhalations, ascendyng thither, are sodenly strycken backe with great force: For euen common and dayly experience teacheth vs, by the whysshyng of a burning Torche, what noyse fyre maketh in the ayre, & much more where it stryueth when it is inclosed with ayre, as appeareth in gunnes,

Aphrica without colde.

The wynter of Affrica.

Flames of fyre & noyse in the ayre.

The myddle region of the ayre is colde.

The stryfe of elementes.

and

and as the like is seene in only aire enclosed, as in Organ pipes, and such other instrumentes that go by winde. For wynd (as say the Philosophers) is none other then aire vehemently moued, as we see in a payre of bellowes, and such other.

Wynde.

Some of our men of good credit that were in this last viage to *Guinea*, affirme ernestly that in the night season they felt a sensible heate to come from the beames of the Moone. The which thyng, although it be strange and insensible to vs that inhabite colde regions, yet doth it stand with good reason that it may so be, forasmuche as the nature of starres and planettes (as wryteth *Plinie*) consisteth of fyre, and conteyneth in it a spirite of life, which can not be without heate.

The heate of the Moone.

The nature of the starres.

And that the Moone geueth heate vppon the earth, the Prophet Dauid seemeth to confirme in his .cxxi. Psalme, where speakyng of such men as are defended from euils by goddes protection, he sayeth thus: *Per diem Sol non exuret te, nec Luna per noctem.* That is to say, In the day the Sunne shall not burne thee, nor the Moone by nyght.

They say furthermore that in certayne places of the sea, they saw certayne streames of water, which they call spoutes, fallyng out of the ayre into the sea, and that some of these are as byg as the great pyllers of Churches: Insomuch that sometymes they fall into shyps, and put them in great daunger of drownyng. Some phantasye that these should be the Caractes of Heauen, whiche were all opened at Noes fludde. But I thynke them rather to be such fluxions and eruptions as *Aristotle* in his booke *de Mundo* saith, to chaunce in the sea. For speakyng of suche strange thynges as are seene often tymes in the sea, he wryteth thus. Oftentymes also euen in the sea are seene euaporations of fyre, and suche eruptions and breakyng foorth of springs, that the mouthes of ryuers are opened, Whyrlepooles, and fluxions are caused of such other vehement motions, not only in the myddest of the sea, but also in creekes and streyghtes. At certayne tymes also, a great quantitie of water is sodenly lyfted vp and carryed about with the Moone. &c. By whiche woordes of *Aristotle* it doth appeare that suche waters may bee lyfted vp in one place at one tyme, and sodenlye fall downe in an other place at an other tyme. And hereunto perhappes parteyneth

Spoutes of water falling out of the aire.

Caractes of heauen.

Vehement motions in the sea.

it

it that Rychard Chaunceller tolde me that he harde *Sebastian Cabot* repoꝛte, that (as farre as I remenber) eyther about the coastes of *Brasile* oꝛ *Rio de Plata*, his shyppe oꝛ pinnesse was suddaynly lyfted from the sea, and cast vppon lande, I wotte not howe farre. The whiche thyng, and suche other lyke wonderfull and straunge wooꝛkes of nature whyle I consyder, and call to rememberaunce the narowneſſe of mans vnderstandyng and knowledge, in comparyson of her myghtie power, I can but ceasse to marueyle and confesse with *Plinie*, that nothyng is to her impossible, the leaſte parte of whose power is not yet knowen to men. Many thynges moꝛe our men sawe and consydered in this vyage, woꝛthy to be noted, whereof I haue thought good to put some in memoꝛie, that the reader may aswell take pleasure in the varietie of thynges, as knowledge of the hystoꝛie. Among other thynges therefoꝛe touchyng the maners and nature of the people, this may seeme straunge, that theyꝛ pꝛinces and noble men vse to pounce and rase theyꝛ skinnes with pꝛetie knottes in dyuers foꝛmes, as it were branched damaske, thynkyng that to be a decent oꝛnament. And albeit they go in maner all naked, yet are many of them, and especially their women, in maner laden with collars, braſlettes, hoopes, and chaines, eyther of golde, copper, oꝛ Iuery. I my selfe haue one of theyꝛ braſelettes of Iuery, waying two pound and .vi. ounces of Troy weyght, whiche make .xxviii. ounces: this one of theyꝛ women dyd weare vpon her arme. It is made of one whole peece of the byggeſt part of the tooth, turned and somewhat carued, with a hole in the myddeſt, wherein they put theyꝛ handes to weare it on theyꝛ arme. Some haue of euery arme one, and as many on theyꝛ legges, wherwith some of them are so galded, that although they are in maner made lame therby, yet wyl they by no meanes leaue them of. Some weare also on theyꝛ legges great shackels of bꝛyght copper, which they thynke to be no leſſe comely. They weare also collars, braſlettes, garlandes, and gyrdels, of certayne blewe stones lyke beades. Lykewyse some of theyꝛ women weare on theyꝛ bare armes certayne foꝛesleeues, made of the plates of beaten golde. On theyꝛ fingers also they weare ringes, made of golden wyꝛes, with a knotte oꝛ wreathe, lyke vnto that which chyldꝛen make in a ryng of a ryshe. Among other thinges of

A straunge thyng.

The power of nature.

They rase theyꝛ skynnes.

Fyne iewelles.

A braſlet.

Shackels.

Rynges.

Dogs chaines of golde.

of golde that our men bought of them for exchange of their wares, were certayne dogges chaynes and collers.

They are very ware people in theyr bargaynyng, and wyll not lose one sparke of golde of any value. They use weyghtes and measures, and are very circumspect in occupying the same. They that shall haue to do with them, must use them gentelly: for they wyl not traffike or bryng in any wares if they be cupil used. At the fyrst vyage that our men had into these parties, it so chaunced, that at theyr departure from the fyrst place where they dyd traffike, one of them eyther stole a muske catte, or tooke her away by force, not mystrustyng that that shoulde haue hyndred theyr bargaynyng in an other place whyther they intended to go. But for all the hast they coulde make with full sayles, the fame of theyr mysusage so preuented them, that the people of that place also, offended thereby, would bryng in no wares: Insomuche that they were inforced eyther to restore the cat, or pay for her at theyr price, before they coulde traffike there.

A musk cat.

Their houses.

Theyr houses are made of feure postes or trees, and couered with bowes.

Their feeding

Theyr common feedyng is of rootes, and suche fyshes as they take, whereof they haue great plentie. There are also such fleeing fyshes as are seene in the sea of the West Indies. Our men salted of theyr fyshes, hopyng to prouide store thereof: but they wolde take no salte, and must therefore be eaten forthwith as some saye. Howbeit, other affirme that if they be salted immediatly after they be taken, they wyll last uncorrupted .x. or .xii. dayes. But this is more straunge, that part of such flesh as they caryed with them out of England, and putrifyed there, became sweete againe at their returne to the clime of temperate regions.

Flepng fyshes.

A strange thyng.

Their bread.

They vse also a strange makyng of bread, in this maner. They grynde betweene two stones with theyr handes as muche corne as they thynke may suffice theyr family, and when they haue thus brought it to floure, they put thereto a certayne quantitie of water, and make therof very thin dough, which they stick vpon some post of theyr houses, where it is baked by the heate of the Sun: So that when the maister of the house or any of his family wyll eate thereof, they take it downe, and eate it.

They

They haue very fayre wheate, the eare whereof is two handefulles in length, and as bygge as a great Bulrush, and almost foure inches about where it is byggest. The stemme or straw, seemeth to be almost as byg as the litle fynger of a mans hande, or litle lesse. The graynes of this wheate are as byg as our peason, rounde also, and very whyte, and somewhat shynyng, lyke pearles that haue lost theyr colour. Almost all the substance of them turneth into floure, and maketh litle branne or none. I told in one eare two hundred and threescore graynes. The eare is inclosed in three blades longer then it selfe, and of two ynches broade a peece. And by this fruitfulnesse the Sunne seemeth partly to recompence such greefes and molestations as they otherwyse receyue by the feruent heate thereof. It is doubtlesse a worthy contemplation to consider the contrary effectes of the Sunne: or rather the contrary passions of suche thynges as receyue the influence of his beames, eyther to theyr hurt or benefyte. Theyr drynke is eyther water, or the iuise that droppeth from the cut branches of the barren Date trees, called *Palmites*. For eyther they hang great gourdes at the sayde branches euery euenyng, and let them so hang al night, or els they set them on the ground vnder the trees, that the droppes may fall therein. They say that this kynde of drynke is in taste muche like vnto whey, but somewhat sweeter, and more pleasaunt. They cut the branches euery euening, because they are seared vp in the day by the heate of the Sunne. They haue also great Beanes as bygge as chestnuts, and very hard with a shel in the steade of a huske.

Theyr wheate.

The Sunne.

Theyr drynke.

Many thynges more myght be sayde of the maners of the people, and of the woonders and monstruous thynges that are engendred in *Africke*. But it shall suffice to haue sayde thus much of suche thynges as our men partly sawe, and partlye brought with them.

And whereas before speakyng of the fruite of graynes, I described the same to haue holes by the syde (as in deede it is, as it is brought hither) yet was I afterward enfourmed, that those holes were made to put syrynges or twygges throughe the fruite, thereby to hang them vp to dry at the Sunne. They growe not past a foote and a halfe, or two foote from the grounde, and are as red as blood when they are geathered.

Graynes.

The

The graynes them selues, are called of the physitions, *Grana Paradisi.*

Shelles that cleaue to shyps.

At theyr commyng home, the keeles of theyr shyppes were marueylously ouergrowen with certayne shelles of two inches length and moze, as thycke as they coulde stande, and of suche byggenesse that a man may put his thumme in the mouthes of them. They certaynely affirme that in these there groweth a certayne slymy substaunce, whiche at the length slyppyng out of the shell and fallyng in the sea, becommeth those foules which we cal Barnacles. The lyke shelles haue been seene in shyppes returnyng from *Iselande*, but these shels were not past halfe an inche in length. Of the other that came from *Guinea*, I saw the Pzymrose lying in the Docke, and in maner couered with the sayd shelles, which in my iudgement shoulde greatly hynder her saylyng. Theyr shyppes were also in many places eaten with the wozmes called *Bromas* oz *Bissas*, whereof mention is made in the Decades. These creepe betweene the plankes, whiche they eate thzough in many places.

Barnacles.

Bromas.

A secrete.

Among other thynges that chaunced to them in this viage, this is wozthy to be noted, that whereas they sayled thyther in seuen weekes, they coulde returne in no lesse space then twentie weekes. The cause whereof they say to be this: That about the coast of *Cabo Verde*, the wind is euer at the East, by reason wherof they were enfozced to sayle farre out of theyr course into the mayne *Ocean*, to fynde the wynde at the West to bzyng them home. There died of our men at this last viage about twentie and foure, whereof many died at theyr returne into the clyme of the colde regions, as betweene the Ilandes of *Soria* and Englande. They bzought with them certayne blacke slaues, wherof some were tall and strong men, & coulde well agree with our meates and dzynkes. The colde and moyst ayze doth somewhat offend them. Yet doubteleſſe men that are bozne in hotte regions, may better abyde cold, then men that are bozne in colde regions may abyde heate, fozasmuche as vehement heate resolueth the radicall moysture of mens bodies, as colde constrayneth and pze-serueth the same.

The death of our men.

Colde may be better abiden then heate.

This is also to be considered as a secrete woozke of nature, that thzoughout all *Affricke* vnder the Equinoctiall line, and neare

neare about the same, on both sydes, the regions are extreeme hotte, and the people very blacke. Whereas contrarily such regions of the West Indies as are vnder the same lyne, are very temperate, and the people neyther blacke, nor with curide and choyce wooll on theyr heades, as haue they of Affrike, but of the colour of an Olyue, with long and blacke heare on their heades: the cause of whiche varietie is declared in dyuers places in the Decades.

It is also woorthie to be noted that some of them that were at this vyage tolde me: That is, that they ouertooke the course of the Sunne, so that they had it North from them at noone, the xiiii. day of Marche. And to haue sayde thus muche of these vyages, it may suffice.

Of the Dooues of the Ilande of Madera.

Adamastus wryteth, that before the Portugales came to this Ilande, it was ouergrowen with trees, and vnhabited, yet were there many beastes, and great plentie of Dooues, which were vtterly without feare of men, bycause they had neuer seene any men before, nor yet were accustomed to bee put in feare: insomuche that they stoode styll whyle snares were put about theyr neckes with long roddes and poles: the whiche thyng he sayeth, he hath also seene in other Ilandes. There are many ryche men in this Ilande, and great aboundance of flesshe, bycause the whole Ilande is in maner one gardeyne.

Of the Ilande of Sainct Thomas, vnder the Equinoctiall line.

THe chiefest occupation and liuing of the inhabitantes of this Ilande, is the making of suger, which they sell yeerely to the shippes that come for it out of Spaine and Portugale, laden with buttes of meale and floure, also wyne, oyle, cheese, lether, swoordes, cuppes of glasse, beades, certeyne scaruels of the fine white earth called *Porcellana*, of the whiche are made the earthen dishes of the wooркe of *Maiolica*. And if it were not that suche victualles and prouisions were brought them out of Spaine and Portugale, the whyte merchantes which dwell in that Ilande (parteynyng to the dominion of the kyng of Portugale) should not be able to lyue there, forasmuch as they are not accustomed to eate such meates as doe the *Ethiopians* or *Negros*. And therefore the Portugales which inhabite this Ilande, haue certayne blacke slaues of *Guinea*, *Benin*, and *Manicongo*, whiche they set to tyll and labour the grounde, and make suger. Among these whyte inhabitauntes, there are many riche men, which haue 150. or. 200. and some. 300. blacke slaues of men and women, to tyll the grounde, and doe other laborious wooркes. This Ilande was discouered a hundred yeeres since, by the nauigations of the Portugales, and was vnknowen to the olde writers. It lyeth in the great gulfe of Affrike, in the. 30. degree of longitude from the West to the East, & is in maner rounde. It is of largenesse from syde to syde. lx. Italian myles, (that is to say) one degree. The horizontall line of the Ilande passeth by the two poles, Artike, and Antartike, and hath euer the day equall with the nyght, without any sensible difference, whether the Sunne be in Cancer or in Capricorne. The starre of the pole Artike, is there inuisible: but the wardens are seene somewhat to moue about: & the starres called the Crosse are seene very hygh. Of this Ilande, with the other landes and Ilandes lying betweene Portugale and the same, a certeyne pylotte of Portugale hath written a goodly vyage to *Conte Rimondo*.

FINIS.

The Nauigation and vyages of

Lewes Vertomannus, Gentelman of the citie of Rome, to the regions of Arabia, Egypte, Perſia, Syria, Ethiopia, and Eaſt India, both within and without the ryuer of *Ganges*. &c. In the yeere of our Loꝛde. 1503. Conteynyng many notable and ſtraunge thinges, both hyſtoꝛicall and naturall.

Tranſlated out of Latine into Englyſhe, by Richarde Eden.

In the yeere of our Loꝛd. 1576.

THere haue ben many before me, who to know the miracles of the worlde, haue with diligent studie read dyuers Authours which haue written of such thinges. But other giuing more credite to the lyuely voyce, haue been more desirous to know the same by relation of such as haue traueyled in those countreys, & seene such thinges whereof they make relation, for that in many bookes, geathered of vncertaine aucthoritie, are myxt false thinges with true. Other there are so greatly desirous to know the trueth of these thinges, that they can in no wyse be satisfied, vntyll by theyr owne experience they haue founde the trueth, by voyages and peregrinations into straunge countreys and people, to know theyr maners, fashions, and customes, with dyuers thinges there to be seene: whereun, the only readyng of bookes, could not satisfie their thirst of suche knowledge, but rather increased the same, in so much that they feared not with losse of goods and daunger of lyfe to attempte great byages to dyuers countreys, with witnesse of theyr eyes to see that they so greatly desired to knowe. The whiche thyng among other chaunced vnto me also, For as often as in the bookes of hystories and Cosmographie, I read of such marueylous thinges whereof they make mention (especially of thinges in the East partes of the world) there was nothyng that coulde pacifie my vnquiet mynde, vntyll I had with myne eyes seene the trueth thereof. I knowe that some there are indued with hygh knowledge, mountyng vnto the heauens, whiche will contempne these our writinges, as base and humble, bycause we doe not here, after their maner, with high and subtile inquisition intreate of the motions and dispositions of the starres, and gyue reason of theyr wooxkyng on the earth, with their motions, retrogradations, directions, mutations, epicicles, reuolutions, inclinations, diuinations, reflexions,

and

and suche other parteynyng to the science of Astrologie: which certeynely we doe not condempne, but greatly prayse. But measuryng vs with our owne foote, we will leaue that heauie burden of heauen to the strong shoulders of Atlas and Hercules: and only creepyng vppon the earth, in our owne person beholde the situations of landes and regions, with the maners and customes of men, and variable fourmes, shapes, natures, and propzieties of beastes, fruites, and trees, especially suche as are among the *Arabians, Persians, Indians,* and *Ethiopians*. And whereas in the searchyng of these thinges, we haue (thanked be God) satisfied our desire, we thinke neuertheless that we haue done little, except we should communicate to other, such thinges as we haue seene and had experience of, that they lykewyse by the readyng thereof, may take pleasure, for whose sakes we haue written this long and dangerous discourse, of thinges which we haue seene in dyuers regions and sectes of men, desiryng nothyng more then that the trueth may be knowen to them that desyre the same.

But what incommodities and troubles chaunced vnto me in these viages, as hunger, thirst, colde, heate, warres, captiuitie, terrours, and dyuers other suche daungers, I will declare by the way in theyr due places.

The first Chapter, of the nauigation from Venice to Alexandria in Egypte.

IF any man shall demaunde of me the cause of this my vyage, certeynely I can shewe no better reason then is the ardent desire of knowledge, which hath moued many other to see the worlde and miracles of God therin. And forasmuch as other knowen partes of the world, haue heretofore ben sufficiently traueyled of other, I was determyned to visite and describe suche partes as here before haue not been sufficiently knowen: and therefore with the grace of God, and callyng vppon his holy name to prosper our enterprise, departyng from Venice with prosperous wyndes, in fewe dayes we arryued at the citie of *Alexandria* in Egypte: where the desyre we had to knowe thinges more straunge and further of, would not permit vs to tarrie long. And therefore departyng from thence, and saylyng vp the ryuer of *Nilus*, we came to the citie of new Babylon, commonly called *Cayrus* or *Alcayr*.

The same was also called Memphis in tyme past.

Of the citie named Babylon, or Alcayr, a citie of Nilus in Egypt. Cap. 2.

WHen we arryued there, I marueyled more then I am able to say: yet when I approched so neare the citie that I myght wel see into it, it seemed to me much inferior to the reporte and fame that was thereof: for the greatnesse thereof, seemed nothyng agreeable to the byuite, and appeared no more in circuite then the citie of Rome, although muche more peopled, and better inhabited. But the large fieldes of the suburbes haue deceyued many, beyng dispersed with in maner innumerable villages, whiche some haue thought to haue been

parts

part of the citie, whiche is nothyng so. For those billages and disperſed houſes, are two or three myles from the citie, and round about it on euery syde. Neyther is it here needefull to spende muche tyme in declaryng of theyr maners, or religion, forasmuch as it is well knowen, that all the inhabitantes of those regions are Mahumetans, and Mamalukes, whiche are suche Christians as haue forsaken theyr fayth, to serue the Mahumetans and Turkes: Although commonly they that serued the Soltan of Babylon in tyme past, before the Soltan was ouercome by the Turke, were called *Mamaluchi*, as they that serue the Turke, are called *Ienetzari*. But these Mamaluke Mahumetans, are subiecte to the Soltan of *Syria*.

Mamalukes.
Mahumetans.
Ienezzari.

Of the cities of Berynto, Tripoli, and Antioch. Cap. 3.

THe riches, fayreneſſe, and magnificence of Babylon aforesayde, and the straunge ſouldiers Mamalukes, as things knowen, we will now preterмit. Therfore departyng from Babylon, and returnyng to *Alexandria*, where we agayne entered into our sea, we came to *Berynto*, a citie on the sea coaſt of *Syria Phœnicia*, where we spent many dayes. This is inhabited of Mahumetans, and plentifull of all thinges. The sea beateth on the walles of the towne: it is not compaſſed with walles, but on the Weſt syde towarde the sea. Here founde we nothyng memorable, but only an olde place ruinate, where they say that Sainct George deliuered the kynges daughter from a cruell Dragon, whiche he slue, and restored her to her father. Departyng from hence, we sayled to *Tripoli*. This is a citie of *Syria*, Eastwarde from *Berynto* two dayes saylyng. The inhabitauntes are subiecte to the Lieuetenant or gouernour of *Syria*, and are Mahumetans. The soile is very fertile, and for the great traffique of merchaundies, incredibly aboundeth with all thinges. Departyng from thence, we came to the citie *Comagen* of *Syria*, commonly called *Alepo*, and named of our men *Antioch*.

Syria Phœnicia.
Sainct George and the Dragon.
Tripoli.
Alepo or Antioch.

The mount Taurus.
The mount *Olympus*.
Azamia.
Mesapotamia.
Persia.

It is a goodly citie, situate vnder the mount *Taurus*, and is subiecte to the Lieuetenant or Soltan of Babilon. There be the scales or ladders (for so they call them) of the Turkes and *Syrians*, for it is neare the mount of *Olympus*. It is a famous marte towne of the *Azamians* and *Persians*. The *Azamians*, are people of *Mesopotamia*, neare vnto the *Persians*, & of the religion of Mahumet. From thence, is the iourney to the Turkes and *Syrians*, and especially of them that come from the part of *Mesopotamia*, named *Azamia*.

Of the cities of Aman and Menin. Cap. 4.

Damasco.

Sainct Helene the mother of Constantine the Emperour.

Departyng from thence, we came to *Damasco*, in ten dayes iourney. But before you come there, in the myd way, is a citie named *Aman*, where is great aboundaunce of gossampine or cotton wooll, and all maner of pleasant fruites. Goyng a little from *Damasco*, the space of sixe myles, is a citie named *Menin*, situate on the declinyng of a mountayne. It is inhabited of Christians of the Greeke profession, who also obaye to the gouernour of *Damasco*. There are seene two fayre Temples, which (as the inhabitantes reporte) were builded by *Helena*, the mother of the Emperour Constantine. There are all kyndes of fruites, and goodly Grapes, and Gardens watered with continuall sprynges. Departyng from thence, we came to the citie of *Damasco*.

Of

Of the citie of Damasco. Chap. 5.



IT is in maner incredible, and passeth all beleefe, to thinke howe fayre the citie of *Damasco* is, and how fertile is the soyle. And therefore allured by the marueilous beautie of the citie, I remayned there many dayes, that learnyng theyr language, I myght knowe the maners of the people. The inhabitants are *Mahumetans* and *Mamalukes*, with also many Christians, lyuyng after the maner of the Greekes. By the way, it shall not be from my purpose to speake of theyr *Hexarchatus*: the whiche (as we haue sayde) is subiect to the Lieuetenaunt, viceroye, or gouernoure of *Syria*, whiche some call *Sorya*. There is a very stronge fortresse or Castell, whiche a certayne *Ethruscan*, borne in the citie of *Florence*, buylded at his owne charges, while he was there ỹ chiefe *Hexarchatus* or gouernour, as appeareth by the flower of a Lilie there grauen in marble, beyng the armes of the citie of *Florence*. The citie is compassed with a deepe fosse or diche, with foure goodly high towres. They passe the dyche with a hangyng brydge, whiche is lyfted vp or lette downe at theyr pleasure. There is all kynde of great artillerie and munition, with also a garde of fyftie *Mamalukes*, whiche dayly assyste the gouernoure or captayne of the castell, and receyue theyr stipende of the gouernoure or viceroye of *Syria*. Fortune seemed to geue the *Hexarchatus* or principate to the sayde *Florentine*, whiche we wyll declare as we haue hearde of thinhabitaunces. They saye that poyson was once geuen to the *Soltan* of *Syria*: and when he sought for remedie, he chaunced to be healed by the sayde *Florentine*, whiche was one of the companye of the *Mamalukes*. After whiche good fortune, he grewe dayely in fauoure with the sayde Prince, who for reward gaue hym that citie: where also

Christians Greekes.

Hexarchatus is a principate or gouernment.

The Soltan of Syria.

also the sayde *Florentine* buylded a Castel, and dyed: whom to this daye the Citisens honour for a sainte, for sauyng the lyfe of theyr prince: after whose death, the gouerment returned to the *Syrians*. They saye furthermore that the *Soltan* is well beloued of his lordes and princes, for that he easely graunteth them principates and gouernementes: yet with condition to paye peerely many thousandes of those peeces of gold which they call *Saraphos*. They that denye to paye the summe agreed of, are in daunger of imminent death. Of the chiefe noble men or gouernoures .x. or .xii. euer assiste the Prince. And when it pleaseth hym to extorte a certayne summe of golde of his noble men or merchauntes (for they vse great tyrannye and oppression by the iniuries and theste of the *Mamalukes* agaynst the *Mahumetans*) the Prince geueth two letters to the captaine of the Castell. In the one is contayned, that with an oration he inuite to the Castell suche as pleaseth hym. In the other is declared the mynde of the Prynce, what he demaundeth of his subiectes. When the letters be read, withal expedition they accomplishe his commaundement, be it ryght or wrong, without respecte. This meanes the Prynce inuented to extorte mony. Yet sometymes it commeth to passe, that the noble men are of suche strength, that they wyll not come when they are commaunded, knowyng that the tyrant wyl offer them violence. And therefore oftentymes when they knowe that the captayne of the Castell wyll call them, they flee into the dominions of the Turke. This haue we geathered as touchyng theyr maners, we haue also obserued, that the watchemen in the towres, do not geue warnyng to the garde with lyuely voyce, but with drommes, the one answearyng the other by course. But if any of the watchemen be so sleeppe, that in the moment of an houre he aunsweare not to the founde of the watche, he is immediatly committed to prison for one whole yeere.

A strange maner to demaund a subsidie.

Of

Of suche thynges as are seene in the citie of *Damasco*. Cap. 6.

AFter that I haue declared the maners of the Princes of *Damasco*, it seemeth agreeable to speake of some suche thynges as I haue seene there. And therefore to speake fyrst of the excellencie and beautie of the citie, it is certaynely marueylously wel peopled, and greatly frequented, and also marueylous ryche. It is of goodly buildyng, and exceedeth in abundance and fruitfulnesse of all thynges, and especiallye of all kynde of victuales, flesh, corne, and fruites, as freshe damesenne grapes all the whole yeere: also Pomegranets, Oranges, Lymons, and excellent Olyue trees. Lykewyse Roses, both white and red, the fayrest that euer I sawe: and all kyndes of sweete apples, yet peares and peaches very vnsauery. The cause wherof, they say to be to much moysture. A goodly and cleare riuer runneth about the citie: & therfore in maner in euery house are seene fountaynes of curious worke embossed and grauen. Theyr houses outwardly are not very beautyfull, but inwardly marueylously adourned with variable woorkes of the stone called *Ophis*, or serpentine Marble. Within the towne are many temples or churches, which they call *Moscheas*. But that which is most beautyfull of all other, is buylded after the maner of Sainct Peters church in Rome, if you respect the greatnesse, exceptyng this, that in the myddle is no roofe or couerture, but is all open: but about the rest of the temple, it is altogeather vaulted. There they obserue religiously the bodye of the holy Prophet *Zacharie*. The temple hath also foure great double gates of metal, very fayre, and many goodly fountaynes within it. There are yet seene the ruins of many decaied houses, which were once inhabited by the Christians. Those houses they cal *Canonicas*, and are of woorke both carued and imbossed.

Theyr churches.

The bodie of the Prophet Zacharias.

There

The place of the conuersion of Sainct Paule.

There is also to be seene the place where (as they say) our sauiour Christ spake to Sainct Paule these woordes, Paule, Paule, why doest thou persecute me: &c. This place is without the citie about a myle.

The prison of Sainct Paule.

There are buried the Christians that die in the citie. There is seene also the Tower in whiche Sainct Paule was committed to prysone, and ioyneth to the wall of the citie. But that place of the Tower where Paule was brought foorth by the Angell, the *Mahumetans* do not attempt to close vp: Saying, that yf it be closed ouer nyght, they fynde it open agayne in the morning.

The place wher Cain slue Abel.

I saw also there, those houses in the whiche (as they say) *Cain* slue his brother *Abell*. These are on the other part of the citie a myle of, in a certayne valley, yet on the syde of a hyll. But let vs nowe returne to the stranger Solgiers, which they call *Mamaluchos*, and to speake somewhat howe licenciously they lyue in that citie.

Of the Mamalukes of *Damasco*, Cap. 7.

The *Mamalukes* therefore, are that kynde of men, which haue forsaken our fayth, and as slaues are bought by the gouerner of *Syria*. They are very actiue, & brought vp both in learnyng and warlike discipline, vntil they come to great perfection. As wel the litle as ỹ great, without respect, receiue stipend

The Mamalukes wages.

of the gouernour: which for euery moneth amounteth to syxe of those peeces of gold which they call *Saraphos*, beside the meate and drynke of them selues and theyr seruantes, and also prouision for theyr horses. And the more valiaunt they be, & of greater actiuitie, they are hyred for the greater wages. They walke not in the citie but by two or three togeather, for it is counted dishonour for any of them to walke without a companion. And if by the waye they chaunce to meete with two or three women (for they lay wayte to tarry for them about suche houses whyther they know the women resort) lycence is graunted them, as they by chaunce fyrst meete with them, to bryng them into certaine tauerns, where they abuse them. When the *Mamalukes* attempt

How the Mamalukes abuse women.

to

to deſcouer theyr faces (for they go with theyr faces couered) they ſtriue with them becauſe they wyll not be knowen. But when the *Mamalukes* perſyſte wantonly to diſcouer them, they ſaye thus vnto them, Is it not enough for you that you haue abuſed our bodyes as pleaſeth you, but that you wyl alſo diſcouer our faces? Then the *Mamalukes* ſuffer them to departe. But ſometyme it chaunceth, that when they thynke to proſtitute the daughter of ſome gentelmen or noble men, they committe the facte with theyr owne wyues: whiche thyng chaunced whileſt I was there. The women beautifie and garnilhe them ſelues as muche as any. They vſe ſylken apparell, and couer them with cloth of goſampine, in maner as fyne as ſylke. They weare white buſkyns, and ſhooes of red or purple coloure. They garnyſhe theyr heades with many iewelles and earerynges, and weare rynges and braſlettes. They mary as often as them lyſteth: for when they are weary of theyr fyrſt maryage, they go to the chiefe preſte of their religion (whom they call *Cady*) and make requeſt to hym to be diuorſed from theyr fyrſte maryage. This diuorſment in theyr language is called *Talacarè*: whiche graunted by the hygh Prieſt or Byſhop, they begyn newe maryages. The lyke lybertie is alſo graunted to the huſbandes. Some thynke that the *Mahumetans* haue fyue or fyxe wyues togeather, which I haue not obſerued: but as farre as I coulde perceyue they haue but two or three. They eate openly, ſpecially in the martes or fayres, and there dreſſe they all theyr meates. They eate horſes, Cammelles, Buffles, Gotes, and ſuche other beaſtes. They haue great abundaunce of freſhe cheeſe. They that ſell mylke, dryue about with them xl. or .l. Gotes, whiche they bryng into the houſes of them that wyll bye mylke, euen vp into theyr chambers, although they be three rooſes hygh, and there mylke them, to haue it freſhe and newe. Theſe Gotes haue theyr eares a ſpanne long, many bowers or pappes, and are very fruitefull: There is great abundaunce of muſſheromes, for ſometymes there are ſeene .xx. or .xxx. Cammelles laden with muſſheromes, and yet in the ſpace of three dayes they are all ſolde. They are brought from the mountaynes of *Armenia*, and from *Aſia* the leſſe, whiche is nowe called *Turchia* or *Natolia*, or *Anatolia*.

The women of Damaſco.

Chaunge of huſbandes and wyues.

The Mahumetans wiues.

Gotes mylke.

Muſſheromes.

Aſia the leſſe nowe named *Natolia* or *Turchia*.

The

The *Mahumetans* vse long vestures and loose, both of sylke and cloth. The most part vse hose of gossampine cloth, and whyte shooes. When any of the *Mahumetans* by chaunce meeteth with any of the *Mamalukes*, although the *Mahumetan* be the wooꝛthyer person, yet geueth he place and reuerence to the *Mamaluke*, who otherwyse woulde geue hym the Bastonado, and beate hym with a staffe. The Chꝛistians also keepe there many ware houses of merchaundies, where they haue dyuers soꝛtes of sylkes and veluet: but the Chꝛistians are there euyll entreated of the *Mahumetans*.

Chꝛistians of Damasco.

The iorney from Damasco to Mecha, and of the maners of the Arabians. Chap. 8.

After that I haue largely spoken of *Damasco*, I wyll pꝛoceede to the rest of my vyage. Therfoꝛe in the yeere of our loꝛde. 1503. the eight daye of the moneth of Apꝛyll, when I had hyꝛed certayne Cammelles (which they call *Carauanas*) to go to *Mecha*, and beyng then ignoꝛant of the customes and maners of them in whose compauye I shoulde go, I entred familiaritie and frendshyppe with a certayne captayne *Mamaluke*, of them that had foꝛsaken our fayth, with whom beyng agreed of the pꝛice, he pꝛepared me apparell lyke vnto that whiche the *Mamalukes* vse to weare, and geuyng me also a good hoꝛse, accompanyed me with the other *Mamalukes*. This (as I haue sayde) I obtayned with great cost, and many gyftes whiche I gaue hym. Thus enteryng to the ioꝛney, after the space of thꝛee dayes, we came to a certayne place named *Mezaris*, where we remayned thꝛee dayes, that the merchauntes which were in our company myght pꝛouide thynges necessarie, as specially Camels, and dyuers other thynges. There is a certayne Pꝛince whom they cal *Zambei*, of great power in the countrey of *Arabia*: he had thꝛee bꝛethꝛen and foure chyldꝛen. He noꝛysheth fourtie thousand hoꝛses, ten thousand mares, & foure thousand Camels.

Caranana, a companie of Cameles.

Mamaluchi renegadi.

Mezaris.

The pꝛince Zambei in Arabia.

The

The countrey where he keepeth the heardes of these beastes, is large, of two dayes iorney. This Prince *Zambei*, is of so great power, that he keepeth warre with the *Soltan* of *Babylon*, the gouernour of *Damasco*, and the prince of Ierusalem al at once. In the tyme of harueſt and geatheryng of fruites, he is geuen wholy to praye and robbyng, and with great subtiltie deceyueth the *Arabians*: for when they thynke hym to be a myle or two of, he is with them sodenly betymes in the morning: and inuadyng theyr landes, carryeth away theyr fruites, Wheate, and Barlye, euen as he fyndeth it in the sackes: and so lyueth contynually day and nyght with suche incursions. When his Mares be weeried with continuall runnyng, he resteth a whyle: and to refreshe them, geueth them Camelles mylke to drynke, to coole them after theyr great labour. Those Mares are of such marueylous swyftnesse, that when I presently sawe them, they seemed rather to flee then to runne. Note also that these *Arabians* ryde on horses only couered with certayne clothes or mattes, and weare none other vesture then only an inwarde coate, or peticoate: for weapon, they vse a certayne long Dart of Reedes, of the length of ten or twelue cubites, poynted with Iron (after the maner of Iauelyns) and frynged with sylke. When they attempt any incursyons, they marche in suche order, that they seeme to go in troupes: they are of despicable and litle stature, and of coloure betweene yealowe and blacke, which some call *Oliuastro*. They haue the voyces of women, and the heare of theyr head long and blacke, and layde out at large. They are of greater multitude then a man woulde beleeue, and are among them selues at contynuall stryfe and warre. They inhabite the mountaynes, and haue certayne tymes appoynted to robberye: for this purpose they obserue especially the tyme, when they are certayne of the passage of the Pylgryms and other that iorney that way to *Mecha*, then lyke theeues they lye in the way and robbe them. When they make these theeuysh inuasions, they bryng with them theyr wyues, chyldren, families, and all the goodes they haue. Theyr houses they put vpon the Camelles, for other houses haue they none, but lyue onlye in tentes and pauylyons as do our Souldiers.

The Prince of Ierusalem.

A Prince a theefe.

Mares.

The Arabians lyue by robbery.

Houses borne on Camels backs.

Tentes and pauilions.

Suche

Suche tabernacles are made of blacke wooll, and that rough and fylthy. But to returne to our viage. The eleuenth day of Aprill, departed from *Mezaris* a company of Camels (which companie they call the *Caranana*) to the number of .xxxb. thousand, with fourtie thousand men. But we were no moze then thzeescoze persons, of whom the *Mamalukes* had taken the charge to guyde and garde vs, and the *Caranana* of our companie, whiche the *Mamalukes* diuided into thzee partes, as some in the fronte, other in the myddest of the army, and other in a wyng after the maner of a halfe Moone, inclosyng the whole armie: foz in this ozder march the peregrines which ioyney in these regions, as hereafter we wyll further declare. But you shall fyrst vnderstand that *Damasco* is from *Mecha* fourtie dayes and fourtie nyghtes ioyney. Departyng therefoze from *Mezaris*, we continued our ioyney that day, vntyll the .xxii. houre of the day. Then our Captayne and guide *Agmirus*, after he had geuen the watch wooyde and signe, commaunded that euerye man shoulde rest and remayne in the place where the signe shoulde be geuen them. Therefoze as soone as they hearde the signe by the sound of a Trumpet, they stayed, and after they had vnburdened theyr Camels, spent there two houres to victual them selues and theyr beastes: then the Captayne geuyng a newe signe, chargyng theyr Camelles agayne, they departed speedyly from thence. Euery Camell hath at one feedyng fyue Barly loaues, rawe and not baked, as bygge as a Pomegranate. Takyng Hoyse, they continued that ioyney the daye and nyght folowyng, vntyll xxii. houres of the day, and at that houre they obserue the ozder whiche we haue spoken of herebefoze. Euery eyght daye they drawe water by dyggyng the grounde oz sande: by the way neuertheleste somewhere are founde Welles and Sesternes. Also euery eyght daye, they rest theyr Camelles two dayes to recouer theyr strength. The Camelles are laden with incredible Burdens, and double charge: that is to meane, the burden of two great Mules. They drynke but once in thzee dayes.

This for feare of the Arabians.

From Damasco to Mecha.

Perhaps with the sounde of a Hoyne oz Trumpet.

Water.

The Burden of the Camelles.

Of the strength and valiantneſſe of the Mamalukes. Cap. 9.

When they tary and reſt them at the waters aforeſayde, they are euer enforced to conflict with a great multitude of the Arabians: but the battayle is for the moſt parte without bloodſhed. For although we haue often tymes fought with them, yet was there only one man ſlayne on our parte: for theſe Arabians are ſo weake and feeble, that threeſcore Mamalukes, haue often put to the woꝛſt fyftie thouſande Arabians. For theſe feelde Arabians, whiche are called *Pagani*, are not in ſtrength oꝛ force of armes to be compared to the Mamalukes, of whoſe actiuitie I haue ſeene great experience: among the whiche this is one. A certayne Mamaluke layde an Apple vppon the head of his ſeruant, & at the diſtance of about xii oꝛ xiiii. paſes, ſtroke it of from his head. I ſawe lykewyſe an other, who ryding on a ſadled hoꝛſe with full courſe (foꝛ they vſe ſaddles as we doe) cooke of the ſaddle from the hoꝛſe ſtyll runnyng: and foꝛ a ſpace bearyng it on his head, put it agayne on the hoꝛſe, ſtyll continuing his full courſe.

The feeblenesse of the Arabians. Pagans.

The actiuitie of the Mamalukes.

Of the cities of Sodoma and Gomorrha. Cap. 10.

Paſſyng the iourney of twelue dayes, we came to the playne oꝛ valley of *Sodoma* and *Gomoꝛrha*, where we founde it to be true that is written in holy ſcripture: foꝛ there yet remayne the ruynes of the deſtroyed citie, as witneſſe of Gods wꝛath. We may affyꝛme that there are thꝛee cities, and eche of them ſituate on the declining of thꝛee hylles: and the ruines doe appeare about the heyght of thꝛee oꝛ foure cubites. There is yet ſeene, I wotte neare what, lyke blood, oꝛ rather

lyke redde waxe myxte with earth. It is easie to beleeue that those men were infected with most horrible vices, as testifieth the baren, dyre, filthie, and vnholsome region, vtterly without water. Those people were once fedde with *Manna*: but when they abused the gyft of God, they were sore plagued. Departyng twentie myles from these cities, about thirtie of our company perysshed for lacke of water, and dyuers other were ouerwhelmed with sande. Goyng somewhat further forewarde, we founde a little mountayne, at the foote whereof we founde water, and therefore made our abode there. The day folowyng early in the mornyng, came vnto vs. xxiiii. thousande Arabians, askyng money for the water which we had taken. We answered that we would paye nothyng, bycause it was gyuen vs by the goodnesse of God. Immediatly we came to hand strokes. We geatheryng our selues togeather on the sayde mountayne, as in the safest place, vsed our Camelles in the steede of a bulwarke, and placed the merchauntes in the myddest of the army (that is) in the myddest of the Camelles, whyle we fought manfully on euery syde. The battayle continued so long, that water fayled both vs and our enemies in the space of two dayes. The Arabians compassed about the mountayne, crying and threatenyng that they would breake in among the Camelles: at the length to make an ende of the conflicte, our Captayne assemblyng the merchauntes, commaunded a thousande and two hundred peeces of golde to be giuen to the Arabians: who when they had receyued the money, sayde that the summe of ten thousande peeces of golde should not satisfie them for the water which we had drawen. Whereby we perceyued that they began further to quarell with vs, and to demaunde some other thing then money. Whereuppon incontinent our Captayne gaue commaundement, that whosoeuer in all our companie were able to beare armes, should not mount vppon the Camelles, but should with all expedition prepare them selues to fyght. The day folowyng in the mornyng, sendyng the Camelles before, and inclosyng our army, beyng about three hundred in number, we met with the enemies, and gaue the onset. In this conflicte, we lost only a man and a woman, and had none other domage: we slue of the Arabians a thousande and fyue hundred.

Manna, turned in bitter plagues.

Lacke of water.

Water deerely bought.

So did Abraham with the Philistians.

So doeth the Turke his army.

dyed. Whereof you neede not marueyle, if you consyder that they are vnarmed, and weare only a thynne loose vesture, and are beside almost naked: theyr hoyses also beyng as euyll furnished, and without saddles, or other furniture.

Of a mountayne inhabited with Iewes, and of the citie of Medinathalhabi, where Mahumet was buried. Cap. II.



IN the space of eyght dayes, we came to a mountayne whiche conteyneth in circuite ten or twelue myles. This is inhabited with Iewes, to the number of fyue thousande, or thereabout. They are of very little stature, as of the heyght of fyue or sixe spannes, and some muche lesse. They haue small voyces lyke women, and of blacke colour, yet some blacker then other: They feede of none other meate then Goates flesshe. They are circumcised, and deny not them selues to bee Iewes. If by chaunce any Mahumetan come into their handes, they slay him alyue. At the foote of the mountayne, we founde a certayne hole, out of the whiche flowed aboundaunce of water. By fyndyng this opportunitie, we laded sixtiene thousand Camels: which thyng greatly offended the Iewes. They wandred in that mountayne, scattered lyke wylde Goates or Pyckettes, yet durst they not come downe, partly for feare, and partly for hatred agaynst the Mahumetans. Beneath the mountayne, are seene seuen or eyght thorne trees, very fayre, and in them we founde a payre of Turtle Doues, which seemed to vs in maner a miracle, hauyng before made so long iourneyes, and sawe neyther beast nor foule. Then proceedyng two dayes iourney, we came to a certayne citie named *Medinathalhabi*: foure myles from the sayd citie, we founde a well. Heere the *Carauana* (that is, the whole heard of the Camelles) rested.

Iewes Pigmei.

The citie of *Medinathalhabi*.

And remaynyng here one day, we washed our selues, and chaunged our shertes, the more freshely to enter into the citie: it is well peopled, and conteyneth about three hundred houses, the walles are lyke bulwarkes of earth, and the houses both of stone and bricke. The soile about the citie, is vtterly barren, except that about two myles from the citie, are seene about fyftie palme trees that beare Dates. There, by a certayne garden, runneth a course of water fallyng into a lower playne, where also passingers are accustomed to water theyr Camelles. And heere opportunitie nowe serueth to confute the opinion of them whiche thynke that the Arke or Toombe of wicked Mahumet in *Mecha*, to hang in the ayre, not borne vp with any thyng. As touchyng which thyng, I am vtterly of an other opinion, and affirme this neyther to be true, nor to haue any lykenesse of trueth, as I presently beheelde these thynges, and sawe the place where Mahumet is buried, in the sayde citie of *Medinath alhabi*: for we taryed there three dayes, to come to the true knowledge of all these thynges. When wee were desirous to enter into theyr Temple (which they call *Meschita*, and all other churches by the same name) we coulde not be suffered to enter, without a companion, little or great. They takyng vs by the hande, brought vs to the place where they saye Mahumet is buried.

The Toombe or Sepulchre of Mahumet.

Mahumet was not buried in Mecha.

Of the Temple or Chapell, and Sepulchre of Mahumet, and of his felowes. Cap. 12.

THis Temple is vaulted, and is a hundred paces in length, and fourescore in breadth: the entry into it, is by two gates: from the sydes, it is couered with three vaultes, it is borne vp with iiii. hundred columnes or pillers of white brick, there are seene hanging lampes about the number of. 3. thousande.

From

From the other part of the Temple in the firſt place of the *Meſchita*, is ſeene a Tower of the circuite of fyue paſes, vaulted on euery ſyde, and couered with a cloth of ſilke, and is boyne vp with a grate of copper curiouſly wrought, and diſtant from it two paſes: and of them that goe thyther, is ſeene as it were thyough a latteſſe. Towarde the lefte hande, is the way to the Tower, and when you come thyther, you muſt enter by a narower gate. On euery ſide of thoſe gates or dooyes, are ſeene many bookes in maner of a Libyarie, on the one ſyde. xx. and on the other ſyde xxb. Theſe contayne the filthie traditions and lyfe of Mahumet and his fellowes: within the ſayde gate, is ſeene a Sepulchre (that is) a digged place, where they ſay Mahumet is buried and his felowes, which are theſe, *Nabi*, *Bubacar*, *Othomar*, *Aumar*, and *Fatoma*: But Mahumet was theyr chiefe Captayne, and an Arabian borne. *Hali*, was ſonne in lawe to Mahumet, for he tooke to wyfe his daughter *Fatoma*. *Bubacar*, is he who they ſay was exalted to the dignitie of a chiefe counſeller and great gouernour, although he came not to the hygh degree of an Apoſtle or prophet, as dyd Mahumet. *Othomar*, and *Aumar*, were chiefe Captaynes of the army of Mahumet. Euery of theſe haue their proper bookes of theyr factes and traditions. And hereof proceedeth the great diſſention and diſcorde of religion and maners among this kynde of filthie men, whyle ſome confirme one doctrine, and ſome an other, by reaſon of theyr diuers ſectes of patrons, Doctours, and ſaintes, as they call them. By this meanes, are they marueyloufly diuided among them ſelues, and lyke beaſtes kyll them ſelues, for ſuch quarelles of dyuers opinions, and all faiſe. This alſo is the chiefe cauſe of warre betweene the Sophie of *Perſia* and the great Turke, beyng neuertheleſſe both Mahumetans, and lyue in mortall hatred one agaynſt the other, for the mayntenaunce of theyr ſectes, Saincles, and Apoſtles, whyle euery of them thynketh theyr owne to bee beſt.

Mahumets Libyarie.

Nomothetæ Turcarum.

This Hali, our men that haue been in Perſia, call Moyrus Hali, That is, Saint Hali.

Diſcorde and ſectes of religion among the Mahumetans, Turkes, and Perſians.

Note.

Such corne, ſuch chaffe.

Not only among Turkes and Perſians, Sed.

Of the Secte of Mahumet. Cap. 13.

NOw will we speake of the maners and leet of Mahumet. Understande therefore, that in the highest part of the Tower aforesayd, is an open rounde place. Now shall you understande what crafte they vsed to deceyue our *Carauana*. The first euenyng that we came thyther to see the Sepulchre of Mahumet, our Captaine sent for the chiefe priest of the Temple to come to him: and when he came, declared vnto him that the only cause of his commyng thyther, was to visite the Sepulchre and bodie of *Nabi*, by which woord, is signified the Prophet Mahumet: and that he vnderstoode that the price to be admitted to the sight of these mysteries, should be foure thousande Saraphes of golde. Also that he had no parentes, neyther brothers, sisters, kinsefolkes, chyldren, or wyues, neyther that he came thyther to buye merchaundies, as spices, or *Baccar*, or *Nardus*, or any maner of precious Jewelles: but only for very zeale of religion and saluation of his soule, and was therefore greatly desirous to see the bodie of the Prophet. To whom the priest of the Temple (they call them *Side*) with countenance lyke one that were distraught, made answere in this maner, Darest thou with those eyes with the which thou hast committed so many horrible sinnes, desyre to see him by whose sight God hath created heauen and earth? To whom agayne our Captayne answered thus, My Lorde, you haue sayde truely: neuertheless I pray you that I may fynde so much fauour with you, that I may see the Prophet: whom when I haue seene, I will immediately thrust out myne eyes. The *Side* answered, O Prince, I will open all thynges vnto thee. So it is, that no man can denye but that our Prophet dyed heere, who if he would myght haue dyed at *Mecha*: But to shewe in him selfe a token of humilitie, and thereby to gyue vs example to fo-

Nabi, is the name of Mahumet.

A great price for vile marchandies.

Suche people suche priest.

My lorde bishop of Mecha

It semeth that they know not where he was buryed.

lowe

lowe him, was willyng rather heere then elsewhere to departe out of this woꝛlde, and was incontinent of Angelles bozne into heauen, and there receyued as equall with them. Then our Captayne sayde to him, Where is *Iesus Christus* the sonne of Marie? To whom the *Side* answered, At the feete of Mahumet. Then sayde our Captayne agayne: It suffyceth, it suffyceth, I will knowe no moꝛe. After this, our Captayne comming out of the Temple, and turnyng him to vs, sayd, See (I pꝛay you) foꝛ what goodly stuffe I would haue payde thꝛee thousande Saraphes of golde? The same daye at euenyng, at almost thꝛee a clocke of the nyght, ten oꝛ twelue of the Elders of the secte of Mahumet entred into our *Carauana*, whiche remayned not paste a stone cast from the gate of the citie. These ranne hyther and thyther, cꝛying lyke madde men, with these woꝛdes, Mahumet the messenger and Apostle of God, shall ryse agayne. O Pꝛophet, O God, Mahumet shall ryse agayne, haue mercy on vs God. Our Captayne and we all rayled with this cꝛye, tooke weapon with all expedition, suspectyng that the Arabians were come to robbe our *Carauana*: We asked what was the cause of that exclamation, and what they cryed: foꝛ they cryed as doe the Chꝛistians, when sodeynly any marueylous thyng chaunceth. The Elders answered, Sawe you not the lyghtnyng whiche shone out of the Sepulchꝛe of the Pꝛophet Mahumet. Our Captayne answered, that he sawe nothyng, and we also beyng demaunded, answered in lyke maner. Then sayde one of the olde men, Are you slaues? That is to say, bought men: meanyng thereby Mamalukes. Then sayde our Captayne, We are in deede Mamalukes. Then agayne the olde man sayde, You my Loꝛdes, can not see heauenly thinges, as beyng *Neophiti*, (that is) newly come to the fayth, and not yet confirmed in our religion. To this our Captayne answered agayne, O you madde and insensate beastes, I had thought to haue giuen you thꝛee thousande peeces of golde, but now, O you dogges, and pꝛogenie of dogges, I will gyue you nothyng. It is theꝛefoꝛe to bee vnderstoode, that none other shynyng came out of the Sepulchꝛe, then a certayne flame which the pꝛiests caused to come out of the open place of the Towꝛe spoken

The deuyll he was.

Thiefe at the feete of Mahumet.

Mahumet shall ryse. &c. with Iuda.

False miracles to confyꝛme false religion.

Neophiti.

Sic ne respondes pontifici.

of here before, whereby they would haue deceyued vs. And therfore our Captaine commaunded that thereafter none of vs should enter into the Temple. Of this also we haue most true experience, and most certaynely assure you, that there is neyther Iron or steele, or the *Magnes* stone that should so make the toombe of Mahumet to hange in the ayre, as some haue falsely imagined: neyther is there any mountayne nearer then foure myles: we remayned here three dayes to refreshe our company. To this citie, victualles and all kynde of corne is brought from *Arabia Fœlix*, and Babylon or *Alcayr*, and also from *Ethiope*, by the redde sea, whiche is from this citie but foure dayes iourney.

The fable that Mahumets Toombe hangeth in the ayre.

The iourney to Mecha. Cap. 14.

AFter that we were satisfied, or rather wearyed, with the filthinesse and lothesomenesse of the trumperyes, deceites, trifles, and hypocrises of the religion of Mahumet, we determyned to goe forward on our iourney: and that by guiding of a pylot, who myght directe our course with the mariners boxe or compasse, with also the carde of the sea, euen as is vsed in saylyng on the sea. And thus bendyng our iourney to the West, we founde a very fayre well or fountayne, from the which flowed great aboundance of water. The inhabitantes affyrme that Sainct Marke the Euangelist was the aucthour of this fountayne by a miracle of God, when that region was in maner burned with incredible dryneſſe. Here we and our beastes were satisfied with drynke. I may not here omit to speake of the sea of sande, and of the daungers thereof. This was founde of vs before we came to the mountayne of the Iewes. In this sea of sand we trauelled the iourney of three dayes and nightes: this is a great brode plaine, all couered with white sande, in maner as small as floure: If by euyll fortune it so chaunce that anye

Iourney on the lande by carde and compasse as on the sea.

The fountaine of Sainct Marke the Euangelist.

The sea of sande. *Mare fabulosum.*

trauayle

trauaile that way southward, if in the meane time the wind come to the north, they are ouerwhelmed with sande. And although they shoulde haue prosperous wynde, yet are they so inuolued with sande, that they scatter out of the way, and can scarsely see the one the other .x. pases of. And therefore thinhabitans trauayling this way, are inclosed in cages of woodde, borne with Camels, and lyue in them, so passyng the iorney guided by pilots with maryners compasse and card, euen as on the sea, as we haue sayde. In this iorney also many perysshe for thirst, and many for drynkyng to muche, when they fynde suche good waters. In these sandes is founde *Momia*, whiche is the flesshe of such men as are drowned in these sandes, and there dryed by the heate of the Sunne: So that those bodyes are preserued from putrifaction by the drynesse of the sand: and therefore that drye flesshe is esteemed medicinable. Albeit there is an other kynde of more pretious *Momia*, which is ỹ dryed and embalmed bodies of kynges and princes, whiche of long tyme haue been preserued drye without corruption. When the wynde bloweth from the northeast, thẽ the sand riseth, & is driuen against a certaine mountayne which is an arme of the mount *Sinai*. There we found certayne pyllers artificially wrought, whiche they call *Ianuan*. On the lefte hande of the sayde mountayne, in the toppe or rydge thereof, is a denne, and the entrie into it, is by an Iron gate. Some sayne that in that place *Mahumet* lyued in contemplation. Here we heard a certayne horrible noyse and crye: for passyng the sayde mountayne, we were in so great daunger, that we thought neuer to haue escaped. Departyng therefore from the fountayne, we continued our iorney for the space of .x. dayes: And twyse in the way fought with fyftie thousande *Arabians*, and so at the length came to the citie of *Mecha*, where al thinges were troubled by reason of the warres betweene two brethren, contendyng whiche of them shoulde possesse the kyngedome of *Mecha*.

Momia.

Momia of kynges bodies embalmed.

Mont Sinai.

The den where Mahumet liued in contemplation.

Mecha, The kingdome of Mecha.

Of

Of the fourme and situation of the citie of Mecha: and why the Mahumetans resort thyther .Cap .15.

Mecha, whiche Abraham Ortelius calleth Mecca.

NOwe the tyme requireth to speake somewhat of the famous citie of *Mecha*, or *Mecca*, what it is, howe it is situate, and by whom it is gouerned. The citie is very fayre and well inhabited, and containeth in rounde fourme fyxe thousande houses, as well buylded as ours, and some that cost three or foure thoulande peeces of golde: it hath no walles. About two furlongs from the citie is a mount, where the way is cutte out, whiche leadeth to a playne beneath. It is on euery syde fortified with mountains, in the stead of walles or bulwarks, and hath foure entries. The gouernour is a *Soltan*, and one of the foure brethren of the progenie of *Mahumet*, and is subiect to the *Soltan* of Babylon, of whom we haue spoken before: His other three brethren be at continuall warre with hym. The xviii. daye of Maye, we entred into the citie by the north syde: then by a declynyng way, we came into a playne. On the south syde are two mountaynes, the one very neere the other, distant onely by a litle valley, which is the way that leadeth to the gate of *Mecha*. On the east syde, is an open place betweene two mountaynes, lyke vnto a valley, and is the waye to the mountayne where they sacrifice to the Patriarkes Abraham & Isaac.

The Soltan of Mecha.

Sacrifice to Abraham and Isaac.

This mountayne is from the citie about .x. or .xii myles, and of the heyght of three stones cast: it is of stone as harde as marble, yet no marble. In the toppe of the mountaine, is a Temple or *Meschita*, made after their fashion, and hath three wayes to enter into it. At the foote of the mountayne are two cesterns, which conserue waters without corruption: of these, the one is reserued to minister water to the Camels of the *Carauana* of Babylon or *Alcayr*, and the other, for them of *Damasco*. It is rayne water, and is derined far of.

But

But to returne to speake of the citie: for as touchyng the maner of sacrifice which they vse at the foote of the mountayne, wee wyll speake hereafter. Entryng therefore into the citie, wee founde there the *Carauana* of *Memphis*, or *Babylon*, which preuented vs eyght dayes, and came not the waye that wee came. This *Carauana* conteyned threescore and foure thousande Camelles, and a hundred *Mamalukes* to guyde them. And here ought you to consyder, that by the opinion of all men, this citie is greatly cursed of God, as appeareth by the great barrennesse thereof, for it is destitute of all maner of fruites and corne. It is scorched with drynesse for lacke of water, and therefore the water is there growen to suche price, that you can not for twelue pence buye as muche water as wyll satysfie your thyrst for one day. Nowe therefore I wyll declare what prouision they haue for victuales. The most part is brought them from the citie of *Babylon*, otherwyse named *Memphis*, *Cayrus*, or *Alcayr*, a citie of the ryuer of *Nilus* in Egypt, as we haue sayde before, and is brought by the red sea (called *Mare Erythreum*) from a certayne port named *Gida*, distaunt from *Mecha* fourtie myles. The rest of they prouisions, is brought from *Arabia Fælix* (that is) the happye or blessed *Arabia*: so named for the fruitfulnesse thereof, in respect of the other two *Arabiaes*, called *Petrea* & *Diserta*, that is, stonye and desart. They haue also muche corne from *Ethyopia*. Here we found a marueylous number of straungers and peregrynes, or Pylgryms: Of the whiche, some came from *Syria*, some from *Persia*, and other from both the East Indiaes, (that is to say) both *India* within the ryuer of *Ganges*, and also the other *India* without the same ryuer. I neuer sawe in anye place greater abundaunce and frequentation of people, for asmuche as I could perceyue by tarryng there the space of .xx. dayes. These people resort thyther for diuers causes, as some for merchandies, some to obserue they vowe of Pylgrymage, and other to haue pardon for they sinnes: as touchyng the whiche we wyll speake more hereafter.

Mecha cursed of god.

Water very deare.

The ryuer Nilus.

The red sea.

Arabia Fælix.

Many pylgrymes and strangers at Mecha.

Why so many nations resort to Mecha.

Of

Of the merchandies of Mecha. Cap. 16.

FRom *India* the greater, which is both within & without the ryuer of *Ganges*, they haue pearles, precious stones, and plentie of spyces: and especially from that citie of the greater *India*, which is named *Bangela*, they haue muche gossampyne cloth and sylke. They haue also spyces from *Ethiopia*: and therefore we must needes confesse that this citie is a famous mart of many ryche thynges, whereof there is great plentie.

Of the Pardons or Indulgences of Mecha. Cap. 17.

The temple of Mecha.

LEt vs now returne to speake of the pardons of pilgryms, for the which so many strange nations resort thither. In the myddest of the citie, is a Temple, in fashyon lyke vnto the *Colossus* of Rome, the *Amphitheatrum* I meane, lyke vnto a stage, yet not of marble or hewed stones, but of burnt bryckes: For this temple, lyke vnto an *Amphitheater*, hath fourescore and ten, or an hundred gates, and is vaulted. The entrance, is by a discent of twelue stayers or degrees on euery part: in the church porche, are solde only iewels and precious stones. In the entry the gylted walles shyne on euery syde with incomparable splendour. In the lower part of the temple (that is vnder the vaulted places) is seene a marueylous multitude of men: For there are fyue or syxe thousand men that sell none other thyng then sweete oyntmentes, and especially a certayne odoriferous and moste sweete pouder, wherewith dead bodyes are embalmed. And from hence, all maner of sweete sauours are carried in maner into the countreys of all the *Mahumetans*. It passeth all beleefe to thynke of the exceedyng sweetenesse of these sauours, farre surmounting

the shoppes of the Apothecaries. The .xxiii. daye of Maye, the pardones began to be graunted in the Temple, and in what maner we wyll nowe declare. The Temple in the myddest is open, without any inclosyng, and in the myddest also therof, is a Turret, of the largnesse of syxe pases in cercuitie, and inuolued or hanged with cloth or tapestry of sylke, and passeth not the heyght of a man. They enter into the turret by a gate of syluer, and is on euery syde besette with vesselles full of balme. On the day of Pentecost, licence is graunted to al men to se these thynges. The inhabitantes affyrme, that balme or balsame, to be parte of the treasure of the *Soltan* that is Lorde of *Mecha*. At euery vaulte of the turret, is fastened a rounde circle of Iron, lyke to the ryng of a dooze. The .xxiii. day of Maye, a great multitude of people beganne earely in the morning before day, seuen tymes to walke about the Turret, kyssyng euery corner thereof, oftentymes feelyng and handelyng them. From this Turret, about tenne or twelue pases, is an other Turret, like a Chappell buylded after our maner. This hath three or foure entryes: in the myddest thereof is a well of threescore and tenne cubites deepe: the water of this Well is infected with salt Peter or salniter. Eyght men are thereunto appoynted to drawe water for all the people: and when a multitude of people haue seuen tymes gone rounde about the fyrst Turret, they come to this well: and touchyng the mouth or brym therof, they saye thus, Be it in the honour of God, God pardon me, and forgeue me my synnes. When these woordes are sayde, they that drawe the water, powre three buckettes of water on the headdes of euery one of them that stand neere about the well, and washe them all wette from the headde to the foote, although they be apparelled with sylke. Then the doting fooles deame that they are cleane from all theyr synnes, and that their synnes are forgeuen them. They saye furthermore, that the fyrst Turret, wherof we haue spoken, was the fyrst house that euer Abraham buylded: and therefore, whyle they are yet all wette of the sayd washyng, they go to the mountayne, where (as we haue sayde before) they are accustomed to sacrifice to Abraham,

A Turret in the Temple of Mecha.

A gate of siluer.

Balsame or balme.

A chappel with a well in it, in the Temple.

A straunge baptisme for remission of synnes.

Good meaning sufficeth not.

The house of Abraham.

Sacrifice to Abraham.

ham. And remaining there two daies, they make the said sacrifice to Abraham at the foote of the mountayne.

The maner of Sacrificyng at Mecha. Cap. 18.

Sacrifice of Sheepe.

IN asmuche as for the most parte, noble spirites are delyted with nouelties of great and straunge thynges, therefore to satisfie their expectation, I wyll describe theyr maner of sacrifycyng. Therefore, when they intend to sacrifice, some of them kyl three sheepe, some foure, and some tenne: So that the butcherie sometyme so floweth with blood, that in one sacrifice are slayne aboue three thousande sheepe. They are slayne at the ryssyng of the Sunne, and shortly after are distributed to the poore for Gods sake: for I sawe there a great and confounded multitude of poore people, as to the number of xxx. thousande. These make many and long dyches in the feeldes, where they keepe fyre with Camels dooug, and rost or seeth the flesh that is geuen them, and eate it euen there. I beleue that these poore people come thither rather for hunger then for deuotion: which I thinke by this coniectur, that great abundance of cucumbers are brought thyther from *Arabia Fælix*, whiche they eate, caskyng away the parynges without their houses or tabernacles, where a multitude of the sayde poore people geather them euen out of the myre and sande, and eate them, and are so greedie of these parynges, that they fyght who may geather most. The daye folowing, their *Cadi* (which are in place with them as with vs the preachers of gods worde) ascended into a hygh mountayne, to preache to the people that remayned beneath: and preached to them in theyr language the space of an houre. The summe of his sermon was, that with teares they shoulde bewayle theyr sinnes, and beate their brestes, with sighes and lamentation. And the preacher hym selfe with loude voyce, spake these woordes, O Abraham beloued of god, O Isaac chosen of god, and his frend, praye to god for the people of *Nabi*. When these woordes were sayde, sodenly were heard lamentiug voyces. When the sermon was done, a rumor was spredde that a great armye of Arabians, to the number of twentie thousande, were commyng.

Religion for pouertie.

Cadi, a preacher.

A goodly sermon.

Soldiers trouble the word of God.

With

With whiche newes, they that kept the *Carauanas* beyng greatly feared, with all speede, lyke madde men, fledde into the citie of *Mecha*, and we agayne hearyng newes of the *Arabians* approche, fledde also into the citie. But whyle wee were in the mydwaye betweene the mountayne and *Mecha*, we came by a despicable wal, of the breadth of foure cubites: The people passyng by this wall, had couered the waye with stones, the cause whereof, they saye to be this: When Abraham was commaunded to sacrifice his sonne, he wylled his sonne Isaac to folowe hym to the place where he should execute the commaundement of God. As Isaac went to folow his father, there appeared to hym in the way a Deuyl, in lykenesse of a fayre and freendly person, not farre from the sayde wall, and asked hym freendlye whyther he went. Isaac answered that he went to his father who tarryed for hym. To this the enimie of mankynde answered, that it was best for hym to tarrye, and yf that he went anye further, his father woulde sacrifice hym. But Isaac nothyng feareyng this aduertisement of the Deuyl, went forewarde, that his father on hym myght execute the commaundement of God: and with this answere (as they saye) the Deuyll departed. Yet as Isaac went forwarde, the Diuell appeared to hym agayne in the lykenesse of an other frendlye person, and forbade hym as before. Then Isaac takyng vp a stone in that place, hurlde it at the Deuyl, and wounded hym in the forehead: In witnesse and remembraunce whereof, the people passyng that waye, when they come neare the wall, are accustomed to cast stones agaynst it, and from thence go into the citie. As we went this way, the ayre was in maner darkened with a multitude of stocke Doues. They saye that these Doues, are of the progenie of the Doue that spake in the eare of *Mahumet*, in lykenesse of the Holye Ghost. These are seene euery where, as in the villages, houses, tauernes, and graniers of corne and ryse, and are so tame, that one can scharsely dryue them a way. Too take them or kyll them, is esteemed a thyng worthy death: and therfore a certayne pension is geuen to nourysshe them in the Temple.

Where Abraham sacrifyced his sonne Isaac.

The Diuell appeareth to Isaas.

Isaac wounded the Deuyll in the forehead.

Stocke doues of the progenie of the Doue which spake in Mahumets eare.

Of

Of the Vnicorns of the temple of Mecha, whiche are not seene in any other place. Cap. 19.

Monoceros.



IN the other part of the temple are parkes or places inclosed, where are seene two Unicorns, named of the Greekes *Monocerotæ*, and are there shewed to the people for a myracle, and not without good reason, for the seldomenesse and strange nature. The one of them, which is much hygher then the other, yet not muche vnlyke to a colte of thryye monethes of age, in the forehead groweth only one horne, in maner ryght foorth, of the length of three cubites. The other is much younger, of the age of one yeere, and lyke a young colte: the horne of this, is of the length of foure handfuls. This beast is of the coloure of a horse of weesell coloure, and hath the head lyke an Hart, but no long necke, a thynne mane hangyng onlye on the one syde: theyr legges are thyn and slender, lyke a fawne or hynde: the hoofes of the fore feete are diuided in two, much like the feete of a Goat, the outwarde part of the hynder feete is very full of heare. This beast doubtlesse seemeth wylde and fierce, yet tempereth that fiercenesse with a certaine comelinesse. These Unicornes one gaue to the *Soltan* of *Mecha*, as a most precious and rare gyfte. They were sent hym out of *Ethiope* by a kyng of that countrey, who desired by that present to gratifie the *Soltan* of *Mecha*.

The Vnicorns horne.

Of diuers thynges which chaunced to me in Mecha: And of Zida, a port of Mecha. Cap. 20.



IT may seeme good here to make mention of certayne thynges, in the which is seene sharpenesse of witte in case of vrgent necessitie, which hath no lawe, as sayeth the prouerbe: for I was dryuen to the poynt howe I myght prively escape from *Mecha*. Therefore whereas my Captayne gaue me charge to buy certaine thyngs, as I was in the market place,

place, a certayne Mamaluke knewe me to be a Chriſtian. And therefore in his owne language, ſpake vnto me theſe woordes, *Inte mename*: That is, whence arte thou? To whom I anſwered that I was a Mahumetan. But he ſayde, Thou ſayeſt not truely. I ſayde agayne, By the head of Mahumet, I am a Mahumetan. Then he ſayde agayne, Come home to my houſe. I folowed him willingly. When we were there, he began to ſpeake to me in the Italian tongue, and aſked me agayne from whence I was, affyrmyng that he knewe me, and that I was no Mahumetan: Alſo that he had been ſometyme in *Genua* and *Venice*. And that his woordes myght be the better beleeued, rehearſed many thinges whiche teſtified that he ſayde trueth. When I vnderſtoode this, I confeſſed freely that I was a Romane, but profeſſed to the fayth of Mahumet in the citie of Babylon, and there made one of the Mamalukes. Whereof he ſeemed greatly to reioyce, and therefore vſed me honourably. But becauſe my deſyre was yet to goe further, I aſked the Mahumetan whether that citie of *Mecha* was ſo famous as all the woꝛld ſpake of it: and inquired of him where was the great aboundaunce of pearles, precious ſtones, ſpices, and other rich merchandies that the bruite went of to be in that citie. And all my talke was to the ende to grope the mynde of the Mahumetan, that I might know the cauſe why ſuch thinges were not brought thyther as in tyme paſte. But to auoyde all ſuſpition, I durſt here make no mention of the dominion which the Kyng of Portugale had in the moſt parte of that Ocean, and of the gulfes of the redde ſea and *Perſia*. Then he began with more attentyue mynde, in order to declare vnto me the cauſe why that marte was not ſo greatly frequented as it had been before, and layde the only faulte therof in the kyng of Portugale. But when he had made mention of the Kyng, I began of purpoſe to detracte his fame, leaſt the Mahumetan might thinke that I reioyced that the Chriſtians came thyther for merchandies. When he percepued that I was of profeſſion an enemy to the Chriſtians, he had me yet in greater eſtimation, and proceeded to tell me many thynges more. When I was well inſtructed in all thinges, I ſpake vnto him friendly theſe woordes in the Mahumets language, *Menaha Menalhabi*: That is to ſay, I pray you aſſiſt mee. He aſked

Why Mecha is not ſo much frequented as in tyme paſte.

The dominion of the Kyng of Portugale in the Eaſt partes

Hipocriſie.

me wherein. To helpe me (sayde I) howe I may secretly departe hence. Confirmyng by great othes, that I would goe to those Kinges that were most enemies to the Christians: Affirmyng furthermore, that I knewe certayne secretes greatly to be esteemed, whiche if they were knowen to the sayde kynges, I doubted not but that in shorte tyme I shoulde bee sent for from *Mecha*. Astonyshed at these woordes, he sayde vnto mee, I pray you what arte or secrete doe you knowe? I answered, that I would gyue place to no man in makyng of all maner of Gunnes and artillerie. Then sayde hee, Praysed be Mahumet who sent thee hyther, to do him and his Saintes good seruice: and willed me to remayne secretly in his house with his wyfe, and requyred me earnestly to obtayne leaue of our Captayne, that vnder his name he myght leade from *Mecha* fiftiene Camelles laden with spices, without paying any custome: for they ordinarily paye to the Soltan thirtie Saraphes of golde, for transportyng of such merchandies for the charge of so many Camelles. I put him in good hope of his request, although he would aske for a hundred, affyrmyng that that myght easily be obteyned by the priuileges of the Mamalukes, and therefore desired him that I myght safely remayne in his house. Then nothyng doubtyng to obtayne his request, he greatly reioyced, and talkyng with me yet more freely, gaue me further instructions, and counsayled me to repayre to a certayne Kyng of the greater *India*, in the kyngdome and realme of *Decham*, whereof we will speake hereafter. Therfore the day before the *Carauana* departed from *Mecha*, he willed me to lye hydde in the most secrete parte of his house. The day folowyng, early in the morning, the trumpetter of the *Carauana* gaue warning to all the Mamalukes to make readie their horses, to directe their iourney toward *Syria*, with proclamation of death to all that shoulde refuse so to doe. When I hearde the sounde of the Trumpet, and was aduertised of the streight commaundement, I was marueylously troubled in mynde, and with heauy countenaunce desired the Mahumetans wyfe not to bewraye me, and with earnest prayer committed my selfe to the mercie of God. On the Tuesday folowyng, our *Carauana* departed from *Mecha*, and I remayned in the Mahumetans house with his wyfe, but he folowed the *Carauana*.

Paying of custome to the Soltan.

The realme of Decham in India.

Yet before he departed, he gaue commaundement to his wyfe to bryng me to the *Carauana*, which should departe from *Zida* the porte of *Mecha*, to goe into *India*. This porte is distant from *Mecha*, xl. miles. Whilest I laye thus hyd in the Mahumetans house, I can not expresse how friendly his wife vsed me. This also furthered my good interteynement, that there was in the house a fayre young mayde, the Niese of the Mahumetan, who was greatly in loue with me. But at that tyme, in the myddest of those troubles and feare, the fyre of Uenus was almost extincte in mee: and therefore with daliaunce of fayre woordes and promises, I styll kepte my selfe in her fauour. Therefore the Fryday folowyng, about noone tyde I departed, folowyng the *Carauana* of *India*. And about mydnyght, we came to a certayne village of the Arabians, and there remayned the rest of that nyght, and the nexte day tyll noone.

Affliction coueteth lechery.

From hence we went forwarde on our iourney towarde *Zida*, and came thyther in the silence of the nyght. This citie hath no walles, yet fayre houses, somewhat after the buylding of Italie. Heere is great aboundaunce of all kynde of merchandies, by reason of resorte in maner of all nations thyther, excepte Iewes and Christians, to whom it is not lawfull to come thyther. Assoone as I entered into the citie, I went to their Temple or *Meschita*, where I sawe a great multitude of poore people, as about the number of. xxb. thousande, attendyng a certayne Pilot who should bryng them into their countrey. Heere I suffered muche trouble and affliction, beyng enforced to hyde my selfe among these poore folkes, faynyng my selfe very sicke, to the ende that none should be inquisityue what I was, whence I came, or whyther I would. The Lord of this citie is the Soltan of Babylon, brother to the Soltan of *Mecha*, who is his subiecte. The inhabitauntes are Mahumetans. The soyle is vnfruitfull, and lacketh freshe water. The sea beateth agaynst the towne. There is neuertheless aboundance of all thinges: but brought thyther from other places, as from Babylon of *Nilus*, *Arabia Fœlix*, and dyuers other places. The heate is here so great, that men are in maner dryed vp therewith. And therefore there is euer a great number of sicke folkes. The citie conteyneth about fyue hundred houses.

The citie of Zida.

Poore Pilgryms that came from Mecha.

From Arabia to Persia.

After fyftiene dayes were paſt, I couenaunted with a pilot, who was ready to departe from thence into *Perſia*, and agreed of the price, to goe with him. There laye at Anker in the hauen almoſt a hundred Bzigantines and Foiſtes, with diuers boates and barkes of ſundry ſoztes, both with Dzes and without Dzes. Therefoze after three dayes, gyuyng wynde to our ſayles, we entred into the redde ſea, otherwyſe named *Mare Erythræum*.

The red ſea.

Of the red ſea, and why it can not be ſayled in the nyght. Cap. 21.

IT is well knowen to wyſe men that this ſea is not red, as ſome haue imagined, but is of the colour of other ſeas. We continued therefoze our byage vntyll the goyng downe of the Sunne. Foz this ſea, is nauigable only in the day tyme: and therefoze in the nightes, the maryners reſt them, vntyll they come to the Iſlande named *Chameran*, from whence they pzocecde fozwarde moze ſafely. Why this ſea can not be ſayled in the nyght, they ſay the cauſe to be, that there are many daungerous ſandes, rockes, and ſhelues: and therefoze that it is needefull of diligent and long pzoſpecte, from the toppe Caſtell of the ſhyppe, to fozeſee the dangerous places.

The

The seconde booke, entreating of *Arabia Fœlix*, That is, the happie or blessed *Arabia*.

Of the citie of Gezan, and the fruitfulnesse thereof. Cap. 1.

FOrasmuche as hytherto wee haue spoken somewhat of the maners of the people and cities of *Arabia Fœlix*, it may nowe seeme conuenient to finishe the reste of our vyage with such thinges as we haue seene in the sayde countrey of *Arabia*. Therefore after sixe dayes saylyng, we came to a citie named *Gezan*. It hath a commodious porte, and very fayre, where we found about fourtie and fyue Bzigantines and Foistes of dyuers regions. The citie is harde by the sea syde, and the Prince thereof, is a Mahumetan. The soile is fruitful, lyke vnto Italie: It beareth Pomegranates, Quinses, Peaches, Apples of *Assyria*, Pepons, Melons, Oranges, Gourdes, and dyuers other fruites: Also Roses, and sundry sortes of floures, the fayrest that euer I sawe: It seemeth an earthly Paradyse. The moste parte of the inhabitauntes go naked. In other thinges, they lyue after the maner of the Mahumetans. There is also great abundance of flesshe, wheate, barley, the grayne of whyte Millet or Hirse (whiche they call *Dora*) whereof they make very sweete bread. The citie of Gezan.

Of certayne people named Banduin. Cap. 2.

DEparting from the citie of *Gezan*, the space of.v. dayes, sayling towarde the lefte hande, hauyng euer the coast of the lande in sight, we came to the sight of certayne houses, where about.xiiii. of vs went alande, hoping to haue had some victuals of the inhabitans. But we lost our labour, for in the steede of victuals, they cast stones at vs with slinges. They were about a hundred that fought with our men for the space of

an houre. Of them were slayne .xxiiii. The rest were dryuen to flyght, they were naked, and had none other weapons then slynges. After theyr flyght, we brought away with vs certayne hens and Calues very good. Shortly after a great multitude of the inhabitauntes shewed them selues to the number of fyue or syxe hundred: but we departed with our praye, and returned to the shyppes.

Of an Ilande of the red sea, named Camaran. Cap. 3.

THe same day saylyng forwarde, we came to an Iland named *Camaran*, which conteyneth ten myles in circuite. In it is a towne of two hundred houses, the inhabitantes are Mahumetans: it hath aboundaunce of freshe water and flesshe, and the fayrest salte that euer I sawe. The porte is eight myles from the continent, it is subiecte to the Soltan of *Amanian* of *Arabia Fœlix*. After we had remayned here two dayes, we tooke our way towarde the mouth of the red sea in the space of two dayes saylyng: This sea may here be sayled both day and nyght. For (as we haue sayde before) from this Ilande vnto the porte of *Zida*, the red sea is not safely nauigable by nyght. When we came to the mouth of the sea, we seemed to be in maner inclosed, for that the mouth of the sea is there very streyght, and no more then three myles ouer. Towarde the right hande, the continent lande is seene of the heyght of ten pales: the soile seemeth rude and not cultured. At the lefte hande of the sayde mouth, ryseth a very hygh hyll of stone. In the myddest of the mouth, is a litle Ilande vnhabited, named *Bebmendo*, and is towarde the lefte hande to them that sayle to *Zeila*: But they that goe to *Aden*, must keepe the way to the lefte hande. All this way, we had euer the lande in our sight, from *Bebmendo* to *Aden*, in the space of two dayes and a halfe.

Of

Of the citie of Aden, and of their maners and cuſtomes towarde ſtraungers, Cap. 4.

I Doe not remember that I haue ſeene any citie better fortified then this: It ſtandeth on a ſoyle not much vnequall, it is walled on two ſydes: The reſte is incloſed with mountaynes, hauyng on them fyue fortreſſes. The citie conteyneth ſixe thouſande houſes. Theyr exerciſe of bying and ſellyng, begynneth the ſeconde houre of the nyght, by reaſon of extreeme heate in the day tyme. A ſtone caſt from the citie, is a mountayne, hauyng on it a fortreſſe. The ſhyppes lye neare the foote of the mountayne: it is certaynely a very goodly citie, and the fayreſt of all the cities of *Arabia Fœlix*. To this, as to the chiefe marte, the merchauntes of *India*, *Ethiopia*, and *Perſia*, haue recourſe by ſea, and they alſo that reſorte to *Mecha*. Aſſoone as our Bzigantines came into the hauen, immediately the cuſtomers and ſearchers came aboorde, demaundyng what we were, from whence we came, what merchaundies we brought, and howe many men were in euery Bzigantine.

Of the citie of Aden looke. Cap. 13.

Bying and ſellyng by nyght.

Beyng aduertiſed of theſe thinges, immediately they tooke away our maſte, sayles, and other tackelynges of our ſhyppes, that we ſhould not departe without paying of cuſtome. The day after our arryuyng there, the Mahumetans tooke mee, and put ſhackles on my legges, whiche came by occaſion of a certayne Idolatour who cryed after mee, ſaying, O Chriſtian Dogge, borne of Dogges. When the Mahumetans hearde the name of a Chriſtian, incontinent they layde handes on mee, and brought mee to the Lieuetenaunt of the Soltan of that place, who aſſemblyng his counſayle, aſked their opinion if I ſhould bee put to death as a ſpye of the Chriſtians.

The Authour taken and put in priſon.

Wicade the Moore wri-teth that Chriſtians are founde in all regions ſauing in Arabia and Egypt, where they are moſt hated.

The Soltan him ſelfe was out of the citie, and therefore his Lieuetenaunt, who had yet neuer adiudged any man to death, thought it not good to gyue ſentence agaynſt mee, before the

Soltan should be aduertised hereof . And therefore I escaped this present daunger, and remayned in custodie fiftie and fyue dayes, with an Iron of eightiene pounde weyght hangyng at my feete . The seconde day after I was taken, many Mahumetans in great rage resorted to him, whose office was to make inquisition of treason . These a fewe dayes before, by swymmyng hardly escaped the handes of the Portugales, with the losse of theyr Foistes and Barkes, and therefore desired greatly to bee reuenged of the Christians: affyrmyng with outragious crye, that I was a spye of the Portugales. But God fayled not to assyst me . For the maister of the prison, perceyuing the outrage of the Mahumetans, and fearyng that they would offer me violence, made fast the gates of the prison . After that fyue and fiftie dayes were paste, the Soltan commaunded that I should be brought before him: and so, set vppon a Camel with my shackles, I came in eight dayes iourney to the place where the Soltan laye, and was brought to his presence in a citie named *Rhada*: for there the Soltan had assembled an army of thirtie thousande men, to make warre agaynst the Soltan of the citie of *Sana*, whiche is three dayes iourney from *Rhada*, and situate partly on the declining of a hyll, and partly in a playne, very fayre to be seene, well peopled, and hauyng plentie of all thinges . When I came before the Soltan, he began to aske me what I was. I answered that I was a Roman, professed a Mamaluke in Babylon of *Alcayr*, and that of religious mynd to discharge my conscience of a vowe whiche I had made to see the bodie of *Nabi* the holy Prophet, I came to the citie of *Medinathalhabi*, where they say he is buried: and that in all cities and countreys by the way, I hearde honourable reporte of his greatnesse, wisedome, and singuler vertue, and therefore ceassed not vntyll I entred his dominions, moste desirous to see his face, yeldyng thankes to God, and *Nabi*, that it was nowe my chaunce to be presented before him: trustyng that the equitie of his wisedome, would thereby consyder that I was no spye of the Christians, but a true Mahumetan, and his seruant and slaue. Then sayde the Soltan, Saye, *Leila illala Mahumet resullala*: whiche woordes I coulde neuer well pronounce, eyther that it pleased not God, or that for feare and scruple

The woordes of them that professe the religion of Mahumet.

of

of conſcience, I durſt not . Therefore when hee ſawe mee holde my peace, he committed me agayne to pryſon, commaundyng that I ſhoulde be ſtraightly looked vnto, where .xvi. men of the citie were appoynted, euery daye foure, to watche me by courſe. So that for the ſpace of thre monethes, I had not ỹ fruitti-on of heauē, during which miſerable time, me diet was euery day a lofe of myllet, ſo litle that ſeuen of them woulde not haue ſatiſ-fyed my hunger for one daye: But if I myght haue had my fyll of water, I woulde haue thought my ſelfe happie . Within three dayes after the *Soltan* marched with his army of thyrtie thouſande footemen (as we haue ſaydē) and three thouſande horſemen, to beſeege the citie of *Sana* . Theſe horſemen were borne of Chriſtian parentes, and blacke like the Ethiopians, and whyle they were yet very young, were bought in the kyng-dome of Preſter John, named in Latine *Preſbyter Iohannes*, or rather *Precioſus Iohannes* . Theſe Chriſtian Ethiopians, are alſo named *Abbyſſini* . They are brought vp in diſcipline of warre, as are the *Mamalukes* and *Ienetzares* of the Turkes. This *Soltan* hath them in great eſtimation, for they are the gard of his owne perſon, and therefore haue greater wages, and are in number foureſcore thouſande . They couer theyr bodie with a ſindon, like vnto a cloke or cape, putting out onely one arme, and are beſyde naked without any other apparell . In the warres they vſe rounde targettes, made of bufles hydes, with certayne litle barres of Iron to ſtrengthen them. Theſe targets are payn-ted very fayre with ſundrye colours, and very commodious to reſiſte dartes, and are in largeneſſe as muche as the mouth of a barell: the handle is made of woodde, as bygge as they may well holde in theyr handes, and made faſt with nayles . They vſe dartes, and ſhorte brode ſwoordes. At other tymes, they vſe alſo veſtures of lynnen cloth of ſundry coloures. Alſo of goſſampine or *Xylon*, otherwyſe alſo named bombaſine . In the warres, euery man beareth with hym a ſlyng, which he caſteth, fyrſt ſhakyng it often about his head . When they come to .xl. or .l. yeeres of age, they make them hornes, by wreathyng ỹ heare of their heds, ſo bearyng two hornes lyke young Gotes . When they procede to the warres, fyue thouſande Camels folowe the army, all laden with ropes of bombaſine.

Soldiers horſe-men of Chriſti-an Ethiopians of the dominiō of Preſbiter Johannes.

Abbyſſini, vn-der Preſter John.

A gard of foure ſcore thouſand blacke men.

Targettes.

Slynges.

Howe

How the women of Arabia, are greatly in loue with whyte men, Cap. 5.

AFter the army was departed, I was incontinent commytted to pryson, as I haue sayde. Harde by the prysone was a long entrie in maner of a cloyster, where somtyme we were permitted to walke. We shall further vnderstande, that in the *Soltans* place remayned one of his three wyues, with twelue young maydes to wayte vppon her, very fayre and comely, after theyr maner, and of coloure inclinyng to blacke. The fauoure that they boze me, helped me very much, for I with two other, beyng in the same pryson, agreed that one of vs should counterfytte him selfe to be mad, that by this deuice, one of vs myght helpe an other. In fine, it was my lotte to take vppon me the mad mans part, and therefore stoode me in hande to do suche follies as pertayne to madnesse. Also the opinion whiche they haue of mad folkes, made greatly for my purpose: for they take mad men to be holy, and therefore suffered me to run more at large, vntyll the Eremites had geuen iudgement whether I weare holy, or ragyng mad, as appeareth heareafter. But the fyrst three dayes in which I began to shew my madnesse, weryed me so muche, that I was neuer so tyred with labour or greeued with payne, for the boyes and rascall people sometyme to the number of .xl. or .l. hurled stones at me almost without ceassing, while in the meane time againe I paid some of them home with lyke wages. The boyes cryed euer after me, callyng me mad man. And to shewe it the more, I caryed alwayes stones with me in my shyrt, for other apparel had I none. The queene hearyng of my follies, looked oftentymes out of the wyndowes to see me, more for a secrete loue she boze me, then for the pleasure she tooke in my follyes, as afterwarde appeared.

Counterfet madnesse.

There-

Therefore on a tyme, when some of them, muche madder then I, played the knaues with me in the syght of the queene (whose secrete fauour towardes me I somewhat percepued) that my maddenesse myght seeme more manifest, I cast of my shyrt, and went to the place before the wyndowes, where the queene myght see me all naked: wherein I percepued she tooke great pleasure. For she euer founde some occasion that I myght not goe out of her syght: and would sometymes, with all her damoselles waytyng on her, spende almost the whole daye in beholdyng me: and in the meane season diuers tymes sent me secretlye muche good meate by her maydens, and when she saw the boyes or other do me any hurt, she badde me kyll them, and spare not, reuylyng them also, and callyng them dogges and beastes. In the pallace was nourished a great fatt sheepe: for there are some of such exceedyng bygnesse, that only the tayle wayeth .xi. or .xii. pounde weyght. Under the coloure of madnesse, I layd hand on this sheepe, saying, *Leila illala Mahumet resullala:* which woordes the *Soltan* before, when I was brought to his presence, wylled me to say, to proue whether I were a *Mahumetan* or a professed *Mamaluke*. But the beast answerynge nothyng, I asked hym yf he were a *Mahumetan*, Iewe, or Christian. And wyllyng to make hym a *Mahumetan*, I rehearsed agayne the sayde woordes *Leila illala Mahumet resullala*, (that is to saye) there is one God, and *Mahumet* his cheefe Prophet: whiche are the woordes which they speake in professyng theyr fayth. But when the beast yet answered nothyng, I broke his legges with a staffe. The queene tooke great pleasure in these my madde follyes, and commaunded the flesshe of the sheepe to be geuen me to eate: I neuer ate meate with more pleasure, or better appetite. Also three dayes after, I lykewyse kylled an Asse that was wont to bryng water into the pallace, because he refused to be a *Mahumetan*, and to say those woordes. The same tyme also I handeled a Iewe so euyll, that I had almost kylled hym, one in the meane tyme callyng me Christian dogge, dogge borne. With which woords beyng very angry, I cast many stones at him: but he againe hurlyng at me, gaue me a stroke on the brest, and an other on the syde, which greeued me very sore.

Sheepe with exceedyng great tayles.

A Sheepe made a mahumetan.

Hunger maketh appetite.

And

And because I coulde not folowe hym by reason of my shackles, I returned to the pryson, and stopped the dooze with a heape of stones, and there lyued in great payne foz the space of two daies without meate oz dzynke: And therefoze the queene and other thought me to be dead, but the dooze was opened by the queenes commaundement. Then these dogges derydyng me, gaue me stones in the steede of bread, and peeces of whyte marble, saying that it was suger: other gaue me clusters of Grapes full of sand. But partly that they should not suspect that I counterfeyted madnesse, I ate the Grapes as they gaue me them. When the bruite was spred that I lyued two dayes & nyghtes without meate and dzynke: some began to suspect that I was a holy man, and some that I was starke madde. And thus being diuided into diuers opinions, they consulted to send foz certayne men, of whom they haue such opinion of holynesse, as we haue of Heremytes: these dwell in the mountaynes, and leade a contemplatyue lyfe. When they came vnto me, to geue theyr iudgement what maner of man I was, certayne merchantes asked them yf I were a holy man, oz a madde man. These were also of diuers opinions, some affyrmyng one thyng, and some another. Whyle they were yet debatyng this matter, foz the space of an houre, I pyssed in my handes, and hurlde it in theyr faces: whereby they agreed that I was no Sainct, but a mad man. The queene seyng all this at the wyndowe, laughed well thereat among her maydens, and sayd thus to them, By the goodnesse of God, and by the head of *Mahumet*, this is a good man. The day folowyng, when in the mozning I founde hym a sleepe that had so soze hurt me with stones, I tooke hym by the heare of the head with both handes, and with my knee so pounched hym on the stomacke, and battered his face, that I left hym all blooddy, and half dead. Which thyng the queene seeing, cryed vnto me saying, kyll the beast, kyll the dogge: wherupon, he ran his way, and came no moze in syght. When the Presi-dent of the citie heard that the queene fauoured me, & toke plea-sure in my mad spozt, thynkyng also that I was not mad, com-maunded that I shoulde goe at lybertie within the pallace, only wearyng my shackles: Yet euery nyght was I put in an other pyson in the lower part of the pallace, and so remayned styl in the

Madnesse taken foz holy-nesse.

Heremytes.

Mahume-tans.

the courte for the space of .xx. dayes. In the meane tyme, the queene wylled me to go a huntyng with her, whiche I refused not, and at my returne, I fained me to be sicke for weerinesse. So continuyng for the space of eyght dayes, vnder the coloure of sickenes, the queene often sent to me to know how I did. After this, fyndyng opportunitie, I declared to the queene that I had made a vow to God and Mahumet to visite a certaine holy man in the citie of *Aden*, and desyred her to geue me leaue to go thyther. Whereunto she consented: and commaunded immediatly a Cammell and .xxv. Sarraphes of golde to be delyuered me. Therfore ỹ day folowyng, I tooke my iorney, and in the space of eyght dayes, came to the citie of *Aden*: and shortly after my commyng, vysited the man of whom was so great reporte of holynesse, and whom the people honoured for a saint. And this onely, because he had euer lyued in great pouertie, and without the company of women. And heare are seene many other such: But doubtlesse all suche lose theyr labour, beyng out of the fayth of Christ. When I had performed my vowe, I fayned that I had recouered health by myracle of that holy man, and certified the queene thereof, desyryng that I myght tarye there a whyle, to visyte lykewise certayne other men in that countrey, of whom was the lyke fame of holynesse: whiche excuse I deuised, because the fleete of *India* woulde not yet depart from thence for the space of a moneth. In the meane tyme I secretly agreed with a certayne captayne of that nauie to goe with hym into *India*, and made hym many fayre promisses to rewarde hym largly. He answeared, that he woulde not go into *India* before he had fyrst ben in *Persia*: wherunto I agreed.

A holy bowe.

A holy saint.

The fleete of India.

Of the cities of Lagi and Aiaz in Arabia Felix: And of the martes of Aiaz and the towne of Dante. Cap. 7.

THe daye folowyng, mountyng vppon a Camell, and makyng a iorney of .xxv. myles, I came to a certayne citie named *Lagi*, situate in a great playne, well peopled, hauyng abundaunce of Oliues, and flesh, with also great plentie

plentie of coyne, after our maner: but no vines, and great scarsenesse of woodde. The inhabitauntes are vnciuile and rusticall people, of the nation of vagabunde and feelde Arabians, and therfoye but pooye. Departing frō hence one dais ioyney, I came to an other citie named *Aiaz*, situate vppon two hylles, with a great plaine betweene them, and hath in it a notable fountayne, & therfoye diuers nations resoyt thither as to a famous mart. The inhabitauntes are Mahumetans, and yet greatly differyng in opinion of theyr religion: insomuche that therefoye they be at great enimitie one agaynst the other, and keepe soye warre. The cause whereof they saye to be this: That the people of the noyth mountayne, maynteyne the fayth and secte of Mahumet and his felowes, of whom we haue spoken befoye: but the other of the South mountayne affyrme, that fayth shoulde be geuen onely to Mahumet and *Haly*, saying the other to be falle pyophetes. But let vs nowe returne to the marte. Almost all maner of spices are vyought hyther. The region vyyngeth fooyth sylke and bombasine: also diuers goodly fruites, and vynes. On the toppe of both the hylles, are very strong foytresses, two dayes ioyney from thence is the citie of *Dante*, well foytified both vy arte and nature, situate in the toppe of a very great mountaine.

Strife and hatred foy religiō and all woyth nought.

Mortus Kali, as the Persians call hym.

Of Almacharan, a citie of Arabia Fælix, and of the fruitefulneſſe thereof. Cap. 8.

DEpartyng from *Dantè*, we came to the citie of *Almacharan*, in two dayes ioyney. This is situate on a very hygh mountayne, and declynyng, and difficulte to ascende, as of the heyght of seuen myles, and the way so narow, that onely two men can passe togeather. In the toppe, is a playne of incredible largenesse, very fruiteful, with plentie of all thynges to the vse of man. And therefoye I thynke it to be inexpugnable & inaccessible: hauyng also so great abundaunce of water, that one fountaine may suffice foy a hundyed thousand men. And therfoye they saye that the *Soltan* here hydeth his treasure, because he was boyne in this citie.

Heare

Here also euer remayneth one of his wyues. The ayre is marueylous temperate and hollsome, and the citie seconde to none in all respectes: the colour of the inhabitantes is rather enclynyng to whyte, then any other colour. And to speake that I haue seene, the *Soltan* reserueth here as much golde, as wyll lade a hundred Camels.

As muche gold as wyll lade a hundred Camels.

Of Reame a citie of Arabia Fælix, and the temperateneſſe thereof. Cap. 9.

This citie is distaunt two dayes iorney from *Almacaran*. The colour of the inhabitantes is enclinyng to blacke: they are great merchantes. The soyle is fruitfull of all thynges sauyng wood: it conteyneth in circuite two thousande houses: on the one syde is a mountayne hauyng on it a very strong fortresse. Here I saw a certayne kinde of sheepe hauyng theyr tayles of fortie and foure pounde weyght, and are without hornes, and also so marueylous fat, that they can scarcely goe for fatnesse. There be lykewyse certayne grapes without graynes, the sweetest that euer I eate, and al maner of suche fruites, as I haue spoken of before. It is of marueylous temperateneſſe, as witnesseth the long lyfe of men, for I haue spoken with many of them that haue passed the age of a hundred and fyue and twentie yeeres, & yet verye lusty and wel complexioned. They goe for the most part naked, wearyng only shyrts, or other loose and thynne apparell, lyke Mantelles, puttyng out one Arme all bare. Almoste all the Arabians make them hornes with wreathyng of theyr owne heare, and that they thynke very comely.

A sheepes tayle of .44. pounde weyght.

Grapes without graynes.

Men of long lyfe in temperate ayre.

Of Sana a citie of Arabia Fælix. Cap. 10.

Departyng from thence three dayes iorney, I came to a citie named *Sana*, situate vppon a verye hyghe mountayne, verye strong by Arte and Nature. The *Soltan* beseyged this, with a great armye of foure-

score

An armye of foureſcore thouſand men.

ſcore thouſande men for the ſpace of three monethes, but coulde neuer wynne it. Yet it was at the laſt rendered by compoſition. The walles are of eyghteene cubites heyght, and twentie in

Strong walles.

breadth, inſomuch that eyght Camels in order may wel marche vpon them. The region is very fruitefull and muche lyke vnto ours, and hath plentie of water. A *Soltan* is Lorde of the citie: hee hath twelue ſonnes, of the whiche one is named *Mahumet*, who by a certayne naturall tyrrannye and madneſſe, delyteth to eate mans fleeſhe, and therfore ſecretly kylleth many

Anthopophagus.

to eate them. He is of large and ſtrong body, of foure cubites hygh, and of the coloure inclinyng to aſhes. The ſoyle beareth certayne ſpyces not farre from the citie. It conteyneth about foure thouſand houſes. The houſes are of fayre buyldyng, and geue no place to ours. The citie is ſo large, that it conteyneth within the walles, fieldes, gardens, and medowes.

Of Taeſſa, Zibith, and Damar, great cities of Arabia Eælix. Cap. 11.

After three dayes iorney, I came to a citie named *Taeſſa*, ſytuate vppon a mountayne, and verye fayre to ſyght: it

Roſes.

hath plentie of all delices, and eſpecially of marueylous fayre Roſes, whereof they make Roſe water. It is an auncient citie, and hath in it a Temple buylded after the faſhion of the churche of *Sancta Maria Rotunda* in Rome. The houſes are very fayre, and ſhewe yet the monumentes of antiquitie: innumerable merchantes reſort hyther for the trafficke of ſundry merchandies. In apparrell they are lyke vnto other, and of darkyſhe aſhe coloure of ſkynne, enclynyng to blacke. Three dayes iorney from thence, I came to an other citie named *Zibith*, very fayre and good, diſtaunt from the redde ſea onlye halfe a dayes iorney: there is great abundance of merchandies by reaſon of the neareneſſe of the ſea. It aboundeth with many

Suger.

goodly thynges, and eſpecially with moſt white Suger, and ſundrye kyndes of pleaſant fruites. It is ſytuate in a very large playne within two mountaynes: it lacketh walles, and is one of the cheefeſt martes for all ſortes of ſpyces. The inhabitants are of the colour of them afore ſayde. From hence in one dayes

iorney

loyney, I came to the citie of *Damar*: it is in a fruitefull soyle, and hath great exercise of merchandise. The inhabitants are *Mahumetans*, in apparrell and colour lyke vnto the other.

Of the Soltan of the aforesayde cities, and why he is named Sechamir. Cap. 12.

The Soltan of Arabia felix.

THese cities whereof we haue spoken here a litle before, are subiect to a *Soltan* of *Arabia Fælix*, named *Sechamir*. *Secha* (by interpretation) signifieth holy, and *Amir*, a Prince, named the holy Prince, because he abhorreth sheddyng of mans blood. At the tyme of my beyng there in prison, he nourysshed syxteene thousand poore men, and captiues in prison condemned to death, allowyng to euery of them dayly for theyr diet, syxe of theyr pence of the smallest valure, and at home in his pallace entertayneth as many blacke slaues.

A pitiful pagan.

A great familye.

Of Monkeys and Marmasettes, and other beastes, noysome to men. Cap. 13.

Of Aden reade the fourth cap.

DEpartyng from hence, I returned to the citie of *Aden* in three dayes ioyney: in the midde waye, I founde an exceedyng hygh and large mountayne, where is great pentie of wylde beastes, and especially of Monkeys, whiche runne about the mountayne euery where. There are also many Lions, very noysome to men: and therefore it is not safe to ioyney that way, but when a multitude of men goe togeather, at the least to the number of a hundred. I passed this way with a great companie, and yet were we in daunger of the Lions, and other wylde beastes which folowed vs: for we were sometimes constrayned to fyght with them with dartes, slyngs, and bowes, vsyng also the helpe of dogges, and yet escaped hardly. When I came to the citie, I fayned my selfe sicke: and in the day tyme lurked in the temple, and went foorth only in the night to speake with the pilot of the shyp (of whom I haue made mention before) and obteyned of hym a foist or barke to depart thence secretly.

Monkeys and Lions.

Danger of wilde beasts.

Of certayne places of Ethiopia, Cap. 14.

IN the fyrst chapter here before, I haue made mention howe departing from the queene I went to the citie of *Aden*, where I couenaunted with a certayne pilot to goe with hym into *India*, and that he woulde not go thyther before he had fyrst made a viage into *Persia*, and that at my fyrst beyng in the citie of *Aden*, he coulde not yet for the space of a moneth depart from thence: Duryng whiche tyme, I trauayled the regions and cityes, whereof I haue spoken, vnto this my returne to *Aden*. Nowe therfore accordyng to our agreement to trauayle diuers countreys and regions, committing our selues to the sea, we were by inconstant fortune and sundry tempestes, deterred from that viage: for whereas we were nowe syxe dayes sailyng on our waye to *Persia*, a sodayne contrary tempeste droue vs out of our waye, and cast vs on the coast of *Ethiope*. Our barkes were laden with rubricke (that is, a certayne redde earth) which is vsed to dye cloth: for yeerely from the citie of *Aden*, departe fyfteene or twentie shyps laden with rubricke, which is brought out of *Arabia Fælix*. Beyng therefore thus tossed with stormes, we were dryuen into a port, named *Zeila*: where we remayned fyue dayes to see the citie, and tarrye vntyll the sea were more quiet.

Tempest.

The viage to Persia.

Ethiope.

Rubricke.

Of the citie Zeila in Ethiopia, and the great fruitfulnesse therof: and of certayne straunge beastes seene there. Cap. 15.

IN this citie, is great freequentation of merchandies, as in a most famous mart. There is marueylous abundance of golde and Iuerye, and an innumerable number of blacke slaues, solde for a small pryce: these are taken in warre by the Mahumetan Moores, out of *Ethyopia*, of the kyngdome of *Presbi-*

Golde.

Iuery.

Blacke slaues.

ter

ter Iohannes, or *Precioſus Iohannes*, whiche ſome alſo call the kyng of *Iacobins* or *Abyſſins*, beyng a Chriſtian: and are caried away from thence into *Perſia*, *Arabia Fælix*, *Babylonia* of *Nilus* or *Alcair*, and *Mecha*. In this citie iuſtice and good lawes are obſerued: the ſoyle beareth Wheate, and hath abundaunce of fleſh, and diuers other commodious thynges. It hath alſo Oyle, not of Olyues, but of ſome other thyng, I knowe not what. There is alſo plentie of Hony and Waxe: there are lykewyſe certayne ſheepe, hauyng theyr tayles of the weyght of ſyxteene pounde, and exceedyng fatte, the head and necke are blacke, and all the reſt whyte. There are alſo ſheepe altogether whyte, hauyng tayles of a cubite long, hangyng downe lyke a great cluſter of grapes: and haue alſo great lappes of ſkynne hangyng from theyr thyghes, as haue Buffles and Oxen, hangyng downe almoſt to the grounde. There are alſo certaine Kyne with hornes lyke vnto Hartes hornes, theſe are wylde: and when they bee taken, are geuen to the *Soltan* of that citie as a kyngly preſent. I ſawe there alſo certayne Kyne, hauyng only one horne in the middeſt of the forehead, as hath the Vnicorne, and about a ſpanne of length, but the horne bendeth backwarde: they are of bryght ſhynyng red colour. But they that haue Hartes hornes, are enclynyng to blacke colour. Corne is there good cheepe. The citie hath an innumerable multitude of merchants: the walles are greatly decayed, and the hauen rude and deſpicable. The kyng or *Soltan* of the citie is a *Mahumetan*, and entertayneth in wages a great multitude of foote men and horſemen. They are greatly geuen to warres, and weare onlye one looſe ſyngle veſture, as we haue ſayde before of other. They are of darke aſhye colour, enclining to blacke. In the warres, they are vnarmed: and are of the ſect of *Mahumet*.

Preſbiter Iohannes, kyng of Iacobins & Abyſſins.

Iuſtice & good lawes.

Sheepe with great tayles.

Palcaria.

Kyne with Hartes hornes.

Kyne with only one horne.

Of Barbara, an Ilande of Ethiope. Cap. 16.

AFter that the tempeſtes were appeaſed, wee gaue wynde to our ſayles, and in ſhorte tyme arryued at an Ilande named *Barbara*, the Prince whereof is a *Mahumetan*. The Ilande is not great,

but fruitfull and well peopled: it hath abundance of flesh. The inhabitants are of colour enclynyng to blacke. Al theyr ryches, is in heardes of cattayle. We remayned here but one day, and departyng from hence, sayled into *Persia*.

The thyrde booke entreateth of Persia: and of certayne townes and partes of Persia. Cap. 1.

Diuobanderrumi.

When we had sayled the space of twelue dayes, we arryued at a citie called *Diuobanderrumi*, (that is to say) the holy porte of Turkes. It is but a litle way from the continent: when the sea ryseth with hye tydes, it is an Iland enuironed with water, but at a lowe fludde, or decrease of the sea, one may go thyther by land: it is subiect to the *Soltan* of *Cambaia*. The Gouernour is named *Menacheas*: It is a marte of great merchandies. There dwell about it foure hundred merchants of Turky: it is well walled round about, and defended with all sorts of engins. They haue barkes and bygantines somewhat lesse then ours: we remained here two daies.

The Soltan of Cambaia.

Goa.

Departyng from hence, we came to an other citie named *Goa*, in the space of three dayes iorney: this also aboundeth with merchandies, and is a mart greatly frequented. The soyle is fruitefull, with plentie of all thynges necessary: the inhabitantes are *Mahumetans*. Neare vnto this, are two other fayre cities and portes, named *Giulfar* and *Meschet*.

Giulfar.
Meschet.

Of the Iland and citie of Ormus, or Armusium: and of an Iland of Persia where pearles are found. Cap. 2.

Proceedyng on our viage, we came to a citie named *Ormus*, verye fayre. This is seconde to none in goodlye situation, and plentie of pearles: it is in an Islande dystaunt from the continent twelue myles: It hath greate scarcenesse of freshe water and corne, from

Ormus.
Pearles.

From other regions, is brought thyther all victualles that nourysshe the inhabitauntes . Three dayes saylyng from thence, are geathered those muscles which bryng fooryth the fayrest and byggest pearles: they are taken as I will nowe declare. There are certayne men that get theyr lyuing by fyshyng . These hauing small Boates, cast into the sea a great stone, fastened to a corde, and this on both sydes of the Boate, to make it as stedfast and immoueable as a shyppe lying at an Anker . The Boate thus stayed as it were with weyght and balance, an other appoynted to that purpose, casteth into the sea a corde with a stone hangyng at it . In the myddest of the Boate an other hauing a sacke hangyng on his shoulder before and behynde, and a stone hangyng at his feete, hurleth him selfe into the sea, and swimmeth vnder the water euen vnto the bottome of the sea, for the deapth of fyftiene pases or more, and there remayneth vntyll he haue geathered the pearle Muscles, which he putteth in his sacke, then he casteth away the stone that weyghed him downe, and commeth vp by the corde . There are seene sometyme almost three hundred shyppes, and other kynde of vessels, which come thyther from many places and countreys . The Soltan of the citie, is a Mahumetan . There are aboue foure hundred merchauntes and factours remaynyng here continually, for the traffike of merchandies whiche come from diuers other regions, as silke, pearles, precious stones, spices, and suche lyke. They lyue with Ryse for the moste parte, for they haue none other corne.

Fyshyng for Pearles.

Dyuers vnder the water.

Of the citie named Eri in Chorazani, a region of Persia, and of the riches ther-of: Also of Reubarbarum. Cap. 3.

Dpartyng from *Ormus*, I went into *Persia*: And after ten dayes iourney, I came to a certayne citie named *Eri*. The name of the region is *Chorazani*, by which signification we may also name it *Flaminia* . The Kyng of the region, dwelleth in the citie: It is fruitefull and plentifull almost of all thinges . There is seene so great aboundaunce

Chorazani or Chorasthan.

Great abundaunce of fyshe.

Plentie of corne.
Rubarbe of small price.

offyshe, that you may in one daye bye as muche as may suffice to lade three thousande Camelles. Corne is there neuer deare, by reason of the great abundaunce. There is great plentie of Rubarbe, as I geather by this coniecture, that syxe pounde of Rubarbe, after our pounde of .xii. vnces to the pounde, are solde for one croune of golde. The citie conteyneth in circuite about seuen thousande houses. They are of the secte of Mahumet. Departyng from hence twentie dayes iorney, I obserued that the continent region or firme lande, farre from the sea syde, is very well inhabited with many good townes and vyllages.

Of the ryuer thought to be Euphrates. And of Castoreum. Cap. 4.

The riuer Euphrates.

Schira.

Precious stons The stone Eranon. A Turques.

Balascam.

Castoreum.

IN this iorney I came to a certayne great ryuer, whiche in the inhabitantes language euen at this daye is named *Eufra*, which I verily thynke to be *Euphrates*, consyderyng also the large capacitie thereof. Proceedyng therefore on my iorney by the ryuer towarde the left hande, I came in the space of three dayes to an other citie, named *Schyra*. This hath onely one prynce, and he a Persian Mahumetan, and subiecte to none other. Here are founde all sortes of precious stones, and especially the stone *Eranon*, whiche delyuereth men from witchecraftes, madnesse, and fearefulnesse, proceedyng of melancolie. It is the stone commonly called the Turquesse. They are brought in great abundaunce from a citie named *Balascam*, where is also great plentie of *Castoreum*, and sundrye kyndes of coloures. And heere I notifie vnto you, why there is found litle true *Castoreum* among vs, because it is adulcerate by the Persians before it come to our handes, for these people are greatly geuen to the counterfettyng of suche thynges, as I saw by experience before myne eyes: for willyng on a time to proue the odoriferous strength of pure *Castoreum*, I sawe certayne, that had experience hereof, do in this maner. They tooke the bladder of *Castoreum*, and foure of them one after an other, put it to their noses to smell.

The proue of true Castoreū.

The

The sauour of it was so strong, that it made theyr noses bleede: and by this proofe, they knew it to be pure *Castoreum*, & not counterfect. I asked the Persian whether *Castoreum* (as other the lyke ungments or drugges) would sone loose his strength. He answered, that the strength of that sauour myght be preserued the space of ten yeres, yf it were not counterfect. The *Persians* are very courteous and gentle people, lyberall and gratious one to an other, and fauorable to strangers: and this I speake as I haue founde and seene by experyence. Duryng the tyme that I was there, I founde a certayne *Persian* merchant, who the yeere before knewe me in the citie of *Mecha*: he was borne in the citie of *Eri* in *Corozain*. As soone as he saw me, he spake to me in this maner, *Lodouicke*, what God or fortune hath sent thee into these countreyes? Art not thou he whom not long sence I knewe in *Mecha*? To whom I answered, I am certaynely the same, and am now come hyther for the great desire that I haue to see the worlde. Praysed be God, sayd he, that I haue nowe found a companion of my iorney, that is taken with the same desire that I haue: and therfore for the space of fyfteene dayes we remayned togeather in a citie named *Squilaz*. He exhorted me not to depart from hym, but that we should togeather, by his guydyng, trauayle the cheefe partes of the worlde. Enteryng therefore on our iorney, we came fyrst to a place named *Sainct Bragant*.

Comendation of the Persians.

Squilaz.

Sainct Bragant.

Of the citie of Sainct Bragant, bygger then Babylon. And of the kyng of Persia, named the Sophie. Cap. 5.

They saye that the citie of *Sainct Bragant*, is bygger then *Babylon*: the kyng of the citie, is a *Mahumetan*. The merchantes saye that when it pleaseth hym, he assembleth an armie of threescore thousande Horsemen. The people are of colour enclinyng to whyteneſſe, and verye warrelyke men. This we say only by enformation of other: for we coulde not safely passe anye further, by reason of the great warres which the *Sophie* then made agaynst those *Mahumetans*, which are of the sect and religon of *Bubachar*, *Othomar*, & *Omar*.

An armie of threescore thousand horsemen.

War betweene the Sophie of Persia and the Turke, for their religion.

The Turkes holde of Mahumet and his felowes.

These were the felowes of Mahumet, as we haue written before of Mahumet and his felowes. The Persians abhorre these as heretikes and false doctours, although they them selues also be Mahumetans of an other secte, whiche is of Mahumet and *Hali*, whose doctrine they embrace and esteeme for most perfect and true religion. Here therefore the sayde Persian, my good friende, and ioyfull companion of my iourney, sayde thus vnto mee, That thou mayest vnderstande (Lodouike) the vnfayned good will that I beare thee, and the desyre I haue that our friendshyp may be knyt with indissoluble bandes, and thereby to assure thee that I will not fayle thee in thy necessitie, I haue a Nyese named Samis, whom I wil gyue thee to wyfe. Samis in theyr tongue, signifieth the Sunne (for shee deserued so to be called for her singuler beautie) and sayde furthermore, that he dyd not trauayle the worlde for lacke of any thyng, but only for his pleasure and desyre of knowledge. And therefore passyng no further, by reason of the warres (as we haue sayde) we returned to the citie of *Eri*, where he enterteyned mee in his house honourably: and shewyng mee his Nyese, instauntly desyred mee to take her to wyfe. But I, hauyng my mynde otherwyse destinate, would not seeme to contemne his so friendly a profer, but deferred it to a more conuenient tyme. Therefore departyng from thence, within eight dayes after, we returned to *Ormus*, and sayled from thence into *India*, arryuing there at a certayne porte named *Cheo*.

A sure friend in necessitie.

Hali, whose doctrine they embrace and esteeme for most perfect

The Persians hold of Mahumet and Hali, or Martus Hali.

Cheo.

Here

Here foloweth the fourth booke, which entreateth of India, and of the cities and other notable thynges ſeene there.

Of the citie of Cambaia in India, moſt fruitefull in maner of all thinges. Cap. 1.

FOrasmuche as in the begynnyng of this wooꝛke we pꝛomiſed that we would declare all thynges bꝛiefely, we intende nowe heere to ſpeake onely of thynges whiche may ſeeme moſt wooꝛthye to be knowen. Entryng theꝛefoꝛe into *India*, we came to a certaine poꝛte, which the great and famous ryuer *Indus* paſſeth by, and is not far from the citie of *Cambaia*. It is ſituate thꝛee myles within the lande, towarde the South. The Bꝛigantines oꝛ Foyſtes can haue no acceſſe to it, excepte the fludde ryſe hygher then commonly it is woont to do, which ſometymes ouerfloweth the lande the ſpace of foure myles. But heere the fluddes haue contrarye courſes of increaſyng, foꝛ heere they increaſe in the wane of the Moone, but with vs in the full Moone. The citie is walled after our maner, and aboundeth with al neceſſarie thynges, eſpecially with wheate, and al ſoꝛts of holeſome and pleaſaunt fruites. There are alſo certayne kyndes of ſpyces, the names whereof I knowe not. It hath alſo abundaunce of goſſampine oꝛ bombaſſine cotton. Merchaunts bꝛyng from thence yeerely ſo much bombaſſine and ſilke, that ſomtime they lade fourtie oꝛ fyftie ſhyps to cary into other countreys. In this region is alſo a mountayne where the *Onyx* ſtone, commonly called *Corneola*, is founde: and not farre from thence alſo an other mountaine, where the Calcedony and Diamant are found.

The ryuer Indus.

The citie of Cambaia.

Note the increſe of ryuers contrarye to ours.

xl. ſhippes lade with ſylke and bombaſine.

The maners of the people of the citie of Cambaia: and of the Soltan thereof. Cap. 2.

THe *Soltan* of *Cambaia*, at my beyng there, was named *Macamut*, and had raygned fourtie yeeres, after he had expulſed the

Pithagorici. the kyng of *Cugerat*. They thynke it not lawefull to kyll any lyuyng beaste to eate, or to eate fleshe. They are no Mahumetans, neyther Idolaters, and therefore I beleeue that if they were baptised, they were not far from the way of saluation, for they obserue the exquisite rule of iustice, doyng no worse to other, then they woulde to be done to them. As touchyng theyr apparell, some of them go naked, and other couer onely theyr priuities. On theyr heades, they weare fyllettes of purple colour. They them selues are of darke yelowe coloure, commonly called Leonell coloure. This *Soltan* maynteyneth an army of xx. thousande horsemen. Euery mornyng resort to his pallace, fyftie men, syttyng on Elephantes. Their office is, with all reuerence to salute the king or *Soltan*, the Elephantes also kneelyng downe. In the mornyng assoone as the kyng waketh, is hearde a great noyse of Dzummes, Tambartes, Trymbzelles, Waytes, and also Trumpettes, with dyuers other musicall instruments, in reioycyng that the kyng lyueth. The lyke do they whyle he is at dinner: and then also the men syttyng on the Elephantes, make hym the lyke reuerence as before. We wyll in due place speake of the wytte, customes, and docilitie of these beastes. The *Soltan* of this citie, hath his vpper lyppe so grosse, that it is a monstrous thyng to beholde: Insomuche that sometyme he beareth it vp with a fillet, as women do the heare of theyr heades: his bearde is whyte and long, euen vnto the nauell. He is so accustomed to poyson from his infancie, that he dayly eateth some to keepe it in vse. And although he hym selfe feele no hurte thereof by reason of custome, yet doth he thereby so impoyson hym selfe, that he is poyson to other: for when he is disposed to put any of his noble men to death, he causeth hym to be brought to his presence, and to stande naked before hym. Incontinente he eateth certayne fruites (whiche they call *Chofolos*) lyke vnto Nuttemegges: and eateth also the leaues of certayne hearbes, whiche they call *Tambolos*, addyng also thereto the pouder of beaten oyster shelles. And a whyle chawyng al these togeather in his mouth, he spitteth it vpon hym whom he desyreth to kyll, who being sparkled therwith, dyeth, by force of the poyson within the space of halfe an houre. He entertaineth about foure thousand concubines: for when soeuer he hath lyne with any of them, she

They may see me the successours of Darius and Porus.

The great pompe of the kyng of Cambaia.

Elephantes.

Monstruos great lyppes.

A straunge history of a kyng accustomed to eate poyson.

A venomus kyng.

thee with whom he hath lyen, dyeth the daye folowing, beyng by hym impoysoned. And therefore when he changeth his shyrt or other apparrel, no man dare weare it: and for this cause he hath great change of apparell. My companion enquired diligently of the merchants by what meanes he was of so venomous nature? They answered, that the *Soltan* his father brought him so vp of a childe with poison by litle and litle, with preseruatiues so accustomyng hym thereto. But let vs nowe returne to speake of the maners of the people: For the most part they weare but only one syngle vesture, and are very warrelyke men: also greatly geuen to merchandies. The fruitfulnesse and plentifulnesse of the region can not be spoken. It is frequented almost of al nations. Therfore from this citie, and from an other (whereof we wyll speake hereafter) diuers and innumerable sortes of merchandies, are transported to almost all the regions of the worlde, and especially to the *Turkes*, *Syrians*, *Arabians*, *Indians*: also to diuers regions of *Affricke* and *Ethiopia*: principally exceedyng abundance of sylke and Bombasyne, and therefore is this *Soltan* marueylous rych. He keepeth in maner contynuall warre with the kyng of *Ioga*, whose realme is fyfteene dayes iorney from *Cambaia*, and reacheth very farre euery waye. This kyng mayntayneth an armie of .xxx. thousand fyghtyng men: he and all his people are Idolatours. He lyueth in contynual progresse, with a mightie trayne at the charges of the people: and contynually carrieth about with hym foure thousand tentes and paulions: also his wyfe, chyldren, concubines, & slaues, furthermore, foure or fiue of most couragious horses: likewyse mul kattes, moonkeys, Parrottes, Leopardes, & haukes. And in this order he walketh almost ouer all *India*. The kynges apparell, is a double gotes skinne, one couerynge his brest, and the other his backe, with the hearyside outward: he is of wesel colour, enclining to blackenesse, as are the most part of these Indians, beyng in maner scorched with heate of the Sunne. They weare al earerings, precious stones, and iewels of sundry sorts: some couer their body with a single, light, & thinne vesture, puttyng out one arme naked. The kyng and certaine of his noble men, paynt their faces with certaine sweete gommes & spices: and some also other partes of their bodies. They are leade with many vayne superstitions: for some professe neuer to lye on

Welyke he getteth no chyldren.

Great fruitfulnesse & abundance of merchandies.

Plentie of sylke.

The kyng of Ioga an Idolatour.

Continuall progresse.

Wyues and concubines.

The colour of the Indians.

the

the grounde, some to lyue in continual silence, as though they were speecheleſſe, hauing two or three appointed by signes to serue them meate and drynke.

Hornes. They haue all hornes hangyng about theyr neckes: and therefore when they come to any citie, they blowe theyr hornes all at once, to make the inhabitantes afrayde, as do they that with vs keepe Crowes or Rookes out of the corne. Then commyng to talke with the citizens, they demaund victuales, and what soeuer other thynges they stande in neede of. Whyle the kyng any tyme resteth a whyle in one place, almost all the whole armye gardyng his person about his pauylion, syue or syxe hundred in the meane tyme raunge abroade togeather to geat what they can. They tarry not past three dayes in one place, but are euer wanderyng after the maner of the vagabunde *Egyptians*, *Arabians*, & *Tartars*. The region is not fruiteful, but rough, with craggie mountaines. The houses of the citie are despicable: the citie is also without walles. This kyng is enemie to the *Soltan* of *Machamir*, & vexeth hym greatly with diuers incursions.

Wanderyng nations. Feelde men.

Of the citie of Ceull, and the maner of the people. Cap. 3.

Departyng from *Cambia*, in twelue dayes iorney I came to a citie named *Ceull*: the land that lieth betweene them both, is called *Guzerat*. The kyng of this citie, is an Idolatour: they are of darke yealowe colour, or Lion tawnye: some were suche slender apparrell as they whom wee haue spoken of before: other are naked, couerynge onlye theyr pryuyties. They are prompt to the warres, and vse swordes, bowes, dartes, slynges, and rounde targettes. They haue engines to beat downe walles, & to make great slaughter in an armie: the citie hath walles, and is distant from the sea but three myles. A fayre ryuer runneth by the citie, by the whiche much merchandies is brought thyther. The soyle beareth almost all maner of fruites, except Vynes, Walnuttes, and Chesnuttes. It hath also Wheate, Barlie, and other kyndes of corne. Here is made great plentie of Bombasyne cloth. They are such Idolatours as are they of *Calecut*, of whom we wyl speake hereafter: yet are there in the citie many merchants *Mahumetans*. They exercise iustice. The kyng entertayneth but a small armie.

Guzerat.

Idolatours.

There

There are many hoyses and kyne. Two dayes iorney from hence, is a citie named *Dabuly*, hauyng a great ryuer runnyng by it. It hath walles after the maner of ours. The soyle is fruiteful, and the citie beautifull. There are innumerable merchauntes Mahumetans. The kyng is an Idolater, and hath an armye of .xxx. thousande men. They are in maners lyke vnto the other, and of the same colour. Dabulp. Idolaters.

Of Goga, an Ilande of India. Cap. 4.

DEpartyng from hence, I came to the Iland of *Goga*, not past a myle destant from the continent. This payeth yeerely trybute to the kyng of *Dechan* a thousand peeces of golde, of the value of the *Saraphes* of Babylon, hauyng on the one syde the Image of the dyuell, and on the other syde, certayne vnknowen caractes. Vppon the sea coaste of one syde of this Ilande, is a towne buylded after the maners of ours. The gouernour is a certayne Captayne of soldiers named *Sauain*: he hath in his regiment foure hundred Mamalukes, and is also a Mamaluke hym selfe: and therefore when he fyndeth any whyte men, he entertayneth them frendly, and geueth them stypende of twentie Saraphes of golde euery moneth. But he fyrst maketh proofe of their strength and valiantnesse by wrestlyng: and if they be not founde meete for the warres, he putteth them to handy craftes. This Captayne with onely his foure hundred Mamalukes, greatly vexeth the kyng of *Narsinga*. Departyng from hence, in eyght dayes iorney by lande, I came to the citie of *Dechan*. Tribute. Coyne. Mamalukes. white men.

Of Dechan, a very fayre citie of India. Cap. 5.

THe kyng or *Soltan* of *Dechan*, is a Mahumetan, of whom the foresayde captayne Mamaluke is entred in wages. This citie is beautifull in syght, and the soyle very fruitefull and plentifull in maner of all thynges necessarie.

The

The kyng is accompted a Mamaluke, and with hym .xxxv. thoulande men of his dominion of hoyſemen and footemen. The citie is beautified with a marueylous fayre pallace, and the pallace adourned with many fayre roomes, for before you come to the kynges chamber, you muſt paſſe by .xliiii. other chambers, for the ſollers of the chambers are ſo orderly diſpoſed, that one chamber ſtyll geueth entrye into an other, vntyll you come to the laſt. The citie is compaſſed with a wal, after the maner of the Chriſtians. The houſes are not vncomely. The kyng vſeth incredible pompe, and regal magnificence. They that wayte vppon his perſon weare vppon theyr ſhooes or ſtarpins Rubies and Diamondes, and ſuch other precious ſtones. What ouches and iewelles they weare in theyr earynges and *Condalys*, Carkenettes colours, let wittie men iudge, comparyng the feete to the moze noble partes of the bodie. Sixe miles from the citie is a mountayne where Diamondes are digged. It is compaſſed with a wall, and kept with a Garriſon. The region hath plentie of all thynges. The people are Mahumetans. Theyr apparel for the moſt part is of ſylke: or at the leaſt the ſherte or inmoſt veſture. They weare alſo thyne buſkynnes: and hoſe lyke gregaſcos or maryners ſlops. Theyr women, after the maner of the women of *Damaſco*, haue theyr faces couered. The kyng keepeth in maner continual war with ỹ king of *Narſinga*. The moſt part of his ſouldiers are ſtrangers, entertayned for wages. They are white men: but the inhabitantes, of the coloure of the other Indians. The kyng is marueylous ryche, and liberall. He hath alſo a great nauie of ſhyps. He hateth the Chriſtians as much as any other. Thus hauyng traueled this part of the region, I toke my iozney towarde a citie named *Bathacala*, fyue dayes iozney from *Dechan*. The inhabitantes are Idolaters, except certayne Mahumetan merchaunts, which reſoꝛt thither for marchandiſe. It hath abundaunce of Ryſe, Sugar, Fygges, Walnuttes, Wheate, Coꝛne, and many other fruites and rootes vnknowen to vs. They haues Beeues, Kyne, Bulles, Sheepe, Goates, and dyuers other beaſtes, but no Hoꝛſes, Mules, oꝛ Aſſes.

A fayre palace.

Great pompe and magnificence.

Where Diamuntes are founde.

Womens faces couered.

White men.

The kyng of Decham, hateth the Chriſtians.

The citie Bathacala.

Of certayne other goodly cities of India. Cap. 6.

DEpartyng from hence, I tooke my iorney towarde a citie named *Centacola*, one dayes iorney from *Bathacala*. The prince of this citie is no lord of great richesse. There is neuertheless abundaunce of flesh, Ryse, and other suche fruites as growe in *India*: many Mahumetans resort hyther for merchaundies. The kyng is an Idolater, and of Lion tawny colour. They go starke naked, and weare nothyng on theyr heades. This prince is subiecte to the kyng of *Barthacal*. Departyng from hence two dayes iorney, I came to an Ilande named *Onor*, whose kyng is an Idolater, and serueth the deuyll, and is subiect to the kyng of *Narsinga*: He is very gentle and familier, he mayntayneth eyght foystes, which make excursions and lyue by rouyng and pyracie. He is in great frendshyppe with the kyng of Portugale. The inhabitantes couer their priuities with a sindone, and are beside all naked. The soyle beareth plentie of Ryse, as in other partes of *India*. There are in maner al kyndes of beastes, as wylde Boyes, Harts, Wolues, Lions, & sundry kinds of birdes and foules vnlike vnto ours, Pecockes also and Parrottes. It hath innumerable Kyne of shynyng yelowe coloure: also sheepe exceedyng fatte. There is so great abundaunce of flowers and Roses, that they fayle not in wynter. There can not be a more temperate ayre: and therfore they lyue muche longer then we do. Not far from this citie, is an other citie named *Mangolor*: from whence, about the number of .xx. shyppes departe yeerely laded with Ryse. The inhabitantes are partly Idolaters, and partly Mahumetans. Their maner of lyuing and apparell, is as we haue sayd before.

Centacola.

Idolatars.
Barthacal.

The Ilande of Onor.

A kynga pirate.
Naked men.

Ryse.
Beastes.

Byrdes and foules.

Flowers all the yeere longe.

Longe lyfe.
Mangolor.

Ryse.

Of Canonor and Narsinga, great cities of India. Cap. 7.

DEpartyng from hence, we directed our iorney toward the citie of *Canonor*, beyng a very goodly citie. Heere the kyng of Portugale hath a very strong towne. The kyng of the citie is an Idolater, and no great frend to the kyng of Portugale.

Afterwarde he became frende to the Portugales.

The

The citie hath a porte, whyther are brought the horses of *Persia*: but the custome for horses is exceedyng great. Departyng from hence, and entryng further into the lande, we came to the citie of *Narsinga*, where many Mahumetan merchauntes do dwel. The soyle beareth neyther wheate, nor vynes, or fewe other fruites, except Oranges and Gourdes. They eate no breade: but lyue with ryse, fyshe, and suche walnuttes as the countrey beareth. In maners and Idolatrye, they are lyke vnto them of *Calecut*, of whiche we wyll speake hereafter. There is founde plentie of spyces, as Ginger, Pepper, Myrobalans, *Cardanum*, *Cassia*, and dyuers suche other. Also many and dyuers kindes of fruites vnlyke vnto ours, and muche sweeter. The region is in maner inaccessible for many dennes and diches made by force. The kyng hath an army of fyftie thousande gentelmen, whiche they call *Heros*. In the warres they vse swoordes, rounde Targettes, or Buklers, Lances, Dartes, Bowes, Slynges: and begyn nowe also to vse Gunnes. They go naked, coueryng onely their priuities, except when they go to the warres. They vse no horses, Mules, Asses, or those Camels whiche we commonly call *Dromedaries*. They vse onely Elephantes, yet not to fyght in the battayle. Great merchaundise is vsed in the citie: for thyther resorte from dyuers countres two hundred shyppes yeerely. Departyng from the kyngdome of *Narsinga*, in .xv. dayes iorney towarde the East, we came at the length to a citie named *Bisnagar*.

The citie of Narsinga.

Oranges.

Ryse.

Spyces.

Straunge fruites.

An army of fyftie thousand gentelmen.

Gunnes.

Dromedares.

Elephantes.

Of the fruiteful citie of Bisinagar in the kyngdome of Narsinga, Cap. 8.

THe citie of *Bisnager* is vnder the dominion of the kyng of *Narsinga*, and subiect to hym. The citie is very large and well walled, situate on the syde of a hyll, and eyght myles in circuite. It is compassed with a triple wall, and is a famous mart of all sortes of ryche merchaundise. The soyle is marueylous fruitefull, and hath whatsoeuer pertayneth to delicates and pleasures. There is no lande more commodious for haukyng and huntyng, for it hath large playnes, and goodly woods: a man would saye it were an earthly Paradyse.

A triple wall.

Hawkyng and huntyng.

The

The kyng and people are Idolaters. He is a Prince of great power, he hath an army of foure thousande horsemen. And yet is it to be noted, the price of a good horse there, to be no lesse then foure or fyue hundred of those peeces of golde whiche they call *Pardais*: And sometyme it so chaunceth that a horse is solde for eight hundred of those peeces of golde. The cause of which great price is, that they are brought out of other countreys: and that they haue no Wares, being forbydden by the commaundement of the kynges, streightly chargyng the portes to be kepte, least any Wares should be brought into the countrey. Hee hath also foure hundred Elephantes to serue in the warres: and likewyse as many Camelles, of the kynde of those swyfte runnyng Camelles which be commonly called *Dromadarii*. And here me seemeth good opportunitie to say somewhat of the docilitie, agilitie, and wyt of Elephantes, as we haue promised.

An army of foure thousand horsemen.

Horses of great price.

Foure hundred Elephantes.

Dromedary Camelles.

Of the docilitie, agilitie, and wit of Elephantes. Cap. 9.

THe Elephant, of all foure footed beastes, and nexte vnto man, is most wittie and docible, and not farre from humane sence, and surmounteth all other beasts in strength. When the Indians bring them to the warres, they put great packesaddelles on their backes, suche as in Italie they vse for the great Mules. These packesaddelles, they gyrde vnder theyr bellyes with two chaynes of Iron. Vppon the saddelles, they place on euery syde a litle house, or if you will, rather call them Turrettes, or Cagies, made of wood: euery Turret conteyneth three men. Betweene the two Turrettes, sitteth an Indian on the backe of the beast, and speaketh to him in his owne language, whiche the beast vnderstandeth and obeyeth: for it is certaine that no other beast approcheth so neare to the vnderstandyng of man. Seuen men therefore are thus placed vppon one Elephant when they goe to the wars, and all armed with coates of fence, Targets, Bowes, Launces, Dartes, and Slynges. Also the trunke or snoute of the Elephant (which of the Latines is called *Promuscis*, or *Proboscis*, and of some, the hande of the Elephant) is armed, and hath a swoord fastened to it of the length of two cubites, very strong, and of a handfull in breadth. And thus

Howe the Elephantes are prepared to the warres.

Seuen men fyght vpon one Elephant.

Howe the Elephant is armed

furnished, they proceede to the battayle. When it is requisite to goe forewarde, or backewarde, the gouernour sittyng aboue, gyueth them an instruction with such voyces as they are accustomed vnto: for sometyme he sayth thus to the beast, Stryke here, stryke there, forbeare here, goe forewarde there, turne this way, and that way. All which woordes he vnderstandeth and obeyeth without spurre or bydell. But where it so chaunceth that by casting of fyre, they are with feare dryuen to flyght, they can by no meanes be stayed. And therfore these people haue many subtile deuises howe they may feare them with fyre, which this beast, by the sense of nature, feareth aboue all thinges, and therefore flyeth in maner at the sight of fyre. And to speake somewhat of theyr strength, as I haue seene by experience, I remember that when I was in the citie of *Canonor*, certayne Mahumetans dryue a shyp aland, turnyng the shyp, after the maner of the Christians, with the fore ende towarde the lande, and layeng vnder it three rowling beames. Then three Elephantes commodiously applied, drawyng with great force, and bendyng downe theyr heades to the ground, brought the shyp to lande. But many haue thought that the Elephantes haue no ioyntes in theyr legges, and that therefore they could not bende theyr legges: which thyng doubtlesse is false, for they haue ioyntes as haue other beastes, but in the lowest parte of theyr legges. The Females are more fierce then the Males, and much stronger to beare burdens. Sometime they are taken with furie or madnesse, and testifie the same by disordinate runnyng here and there. One Elephant exceedeth the bygnesse of three Buckes, & not vnlyke of beare. They haue eyes lyke swyne, & the snout or trunke very long, wherwith they put meate and drynke into their mouth: and therefore may it well be called the hande of the Elephant. The mouth is vnder the throte, much lyke the mouth of a Lowe, and the trunke is holowe, and can therwith holde fast stickes or staues, and them rule as it were with a hande. I sawe also the trunke of a tree ouerthrowen by an Elephant, which xviiii. men attempting, could not doe. The two great teeth or tuskes, are placed in the highest iawe. Ech of their eares, are two handfuls byg, whether the beast be of the bygger or lesse kinde. The feete are like vnto such round thicke trenchers of wood as be commonly vsed. The foote conteineth fyue hookes, in

The Elephant vnderstandeth the voyce of his keeper.

The Elephant can not abyde fyre.

The strength of the Elephant

The Elephants haue ioyntes in their legges.

The hande of the Elephant.

The teeth of the Elephant is Ivory.

in roundnesse like vnto great Oysters. The tayle is lyke to the tayle of a Bufle, foure handfull long, and of thyn heare. The Females are also bigger then the Males, they are of sundry bignes, for some are of xiii. handfuls high, and other of xiiii. handfuls, and some also haue been seene of sixtiene handfuls. They goe slowly, and walowing, and therfore some that haue not ben vsed to them, are moued to vomite euen as it were on the sea. Yet is it a pleasure to ryde on the young Elephantes, bicause they goe softly like ambeling Mules. When you mount on them, they stoope & bend their knees, that you may easily ascende. They are neuer brydeled, neyther vse they keepers any halters to gouerne them.

The bygnesse of the Elephant

Of the ingendering of Elephantes, and of the magnificence & riches of the king of Narsinga. Cap. 10.

When they ingender, they resorte to the medowes or woods, for by a certaine naturall shamefastnesse they doe it not but in secrete places: Although some Auchours haue written that Elephants engender backward. Some take it for a great present to giue the king the member or pissell of an Elephant, whiche perhappes they doe for the exceedyng great price of Elephantes: For some are solde there for fyue hundred peeces of golde, and some (as they say) for two thousande: which peraduenture, is not for theyr greatnesses of bodie, but rather for certayne properties, wyt, & docilitie, wherein some farre exceede other, euen as among men. And I dare well say that I haue seene some men much inferior to Elephants in wyt and sense. Therefore the kyng of *Narsinga*, in riches and dominion, farre exceedeth all kynges that euer I haue seene or hearde of. The citie in situation and fayrenesse, representeth the citie of *Milane*, except only that it is in a declining place, and lesse equal. Other kingdoms which are subiect to this, lye round about it, as the kyngdome of *Ausonia* & *Venice* lye about *Milane*. Their *Brachini* (so are the priestes named) tolde me ỹ the king receiueth

The naturall shamefastnesse of Elephantes

The pissell of an Elephant.

Men of lesse vnderstandyng then Elephantes.

The riches of the kyng of *Narsinga*.

A great tribute by the day.

dayly of that citie for tribute or reuenue, the summe of twelue thousandes of those peeces of golde whiche they call *Pardios*. He mayntayneth an army of many thousandes of men, for he liueth in continuall warre with his borderers. He is an Idolatour, and honoureth the deuyl, euen as doth the kyng of *Calecut*. They that are of the rychest sorte, vse a slender inwarde apparell or peticote, not very long, and bynde theyr heades with a phillet or broade bande, of sundry colours, after the maner of the Mahumetans. The common sorte, couer only theyr priuities, and are beside all naked. The kyng weareth a Cappe of cloth of golde, of two handfulles long: when he goeth to warre, he weareth a vesture of bombasine, and thereon a cloke adourned with plates of gold, hauyng the borderer garde besette with all sortes of precious stones and Jewelles. His house with the furniture, is esteemed to bee worth as muche as one of our cities, by reason of innumerable Jewelles of great price. When he goeth a hunting, three other kynges beare him company, whose office is to be euer neare him, and guyde him. When he maketh any iourney, or rydeth abrode, he is accompanyed with six thousand horsemen: And therefore it is manifeste that not only for these thynges whereof we haue spoken, but also for dyuers other of lyke magnificence, hee is one of the greatest Kynges in the worlde. He coyneth money and peeces of golde named *Pardios*. Also other siluer money of lesse value, whiche they call *Fano*, conteynyng the value of sixtiene of the smallest money of copper. Trauelers may here goe safely through all his dominions, if they can auoyde the daunger of the Lions. Of theyr dyet and order of lyuyng, I will speake more largely where occasion shall serue to wryte of *Calecut*. This kyng of *Narsinga*, is a great friende to the Christians, and is in great amitie with the kyng of Portugale: and beside him, hee knoweth none other Christian Prince: and therefore the Portugales are here friendly and honourably vsed. When I had remayned in this citie many dayes, I returned to the citie of *Canonor*. And after I had remayned there three dayes, I entered further into the lande, and came to a citie named *Trompata*, about twelue myles from *Canonor*.

Idolaters.

A riche cloke.

The magnificence of the kyng of Narsinga.

Coyne of golde and siluer.

Daunger of Lyons.

The kyng of Narsinga, friend to the kyng of Portugale.

The citie of *Trompata*.

The,

The inhabitaunces are Idolatours. It is neare vnto the sea, and therefore there are seene many merchantes Mahumetans. They lyue moderately, & haue in maner none other ryches then nuttes of *India*, but there are very fayre trees to make shyppes. There are in the citie aboue fiftiene thoulande Mahumetans, although the Kyng be an Idolatour. Departyng from hence, I came to the citie of *Pandara*: and from thence passyng by the citie of *Capagot*, I came at the length to the famous citie of *Calecut*. And to be breefe, I haue here ouerpassed to speake largely of many other people and kyngdomes, as are these, *Chianul, Dabul, Bathecalo, Onouè, Bangolor, Cauonor, Cachin, Cacilon*, and *Calonue*, which I haue done, to the ende that I may entreat more largely of *Calecut*, as the chiefest, and as it were the head and metropolitane of all the cities of *India*. For it is certayne that the Kyng of *Calecut* in royall maiestie exceedeth all the kynges of the East, and is therefore in theyr language called *Samory*, that is to say, God on the earth.

Mahumetans.

Pandara.

Capagot.

Calecut.

The kyng of Calecut, a God on the earth.

The fyfth booke of East India, and fyrst of the famous citie of Calecut. Cap. I.

The citie of *Calecut*, is situate vppon the continent or firme lande, and the sea beateth vppon the houses of the citie. There is no porte: but on the South syde about a myle from the citie, is a ryuer which runneth into the Ocean sea by a narow mouth. This runneth by many braunches into the playne feeldes, and is of the inhabitantes by diuers trenches dispearsed to water the grounde. It is not past the depth of three or foure foote of water. The course of it bendeth towarde the citie, and runneth into it. The citie is not compassed with walles, but conteyneth in circuite sixe thousande houses, not adherent or ioynyng togeather after the maner of ours, but by a certayne space distant one from the other, eyther for feare of fyre, or by ignorance of the builders. It is a myle of length. The houses are despicable, as no hygher from the grounde then a man on horsebacke, and are for the most parte couered with boughes of trees, in the steede of tiles or other coueryng. The cause whereof they say to bee, that in digging the grounde fyue or sixe hand-

The citie of Calecut.

Houses diuided.

Very lowe houses.

full depth, water immediately issueth fooyth. And therefoye they can laye no deeper foundations to beare the weyght of any greater buylopnges. The houses of merchandyse, oy warehouses, are solde foy fyftiene oy twentie peeces of golde. But the common houses, are of no greater pyice then two peeces of golde at the most, and some foy lesse.

Houses of small price.

Of the kyng of Calecut, and of their Idolatrie. Cap. 2.

Idolatry and seruyng of the deuyll.

One God.

Pseudoplatonici.

THe kyng of *Calecut* and his people, are gyuen to Idolatrie and seruyng of the deuyll: yet deny they not but that there is one great God, maker of heauen and earth, and fyrst and chiefe cause of all thinges: But they adde thereunto a fable, saying that God coulde take no pleasure of his principate oy dominion, if hee him selfe shoulde take vppon him the gouernement of the woylde, and therefoye that he gaue the vicarage of that gouernance to the deuyll, who (they say) was sent from heauen foy that purpose, and to iudge the woylde, renderyng vnto men well oy euyll, accoydyng to theyr deseruyng. This deuyll they name *Deumo*: But the great God him selfe, they call *Tamerani*. The kyng hath a Chapel in his Pallace, where he honoureth this *Deumo*: the Chapell is open on euery syde the breadth of a baulte of two pases, and is no hygher from the grounde then three pases. The entraunce is by a dooye of wood, garnished with carued wooyke, conteynyng the dyuers monstruous fourmes and shapes of deuylles. In the myddest of the Chapell, is a seate of maiestie made of copper, with also a deuyll of copper sittyng in it. This deuyll hath on his head a crowne, after the maner of the byshop of Rome, but this hath ouerplus foure hoynes, his mouth gapyng, with foure notable teeth, a deformed nose, louryng and grymme eyes, a threatenyng looke, crooked handes lyke a fleshe hooke, and feete not much vnlyke the feete of a Cocke: A monster doubtlesse horrible and fearefull to beholde. In euery corner of the Chapell sit such deuylles of shining copper, as though they were of flamyng fyre, deuouryng soules miserably. These soules are about the byg-

Deumo, quasi Dæmon.

The Chapell of the deuyll.

The deuyls shape of maiestie.

Difference betweene the Popes crowne and the deuylles.

A well fauoured Prince.

nesse

neſſe of halfe a finger, and ſome litle bigger. He putteth one ſoule in his mouth with the ryght hande, and with the lefte hande taketh an other from beneath. Euery morning the prieſtes (whom they call *Bramini*) waſhe the Idoll with roſe water, and perfume him with ſweete ſauours, and lying proſtrate on the grounde, pray vnto him. They ſacrifice vnto him once a weeke. Theyr maner of ſacrifice is this. They haue a little cubbarde lyke vnto an Altar, three handfulles hygh, foure handfuls brode, and fyue handfuls long: this cubbard they ſtrawe with all maner of floures and ſweete pouders. Then hauyng a great Chafingdyſhe, or the lyke veſſell of ſiluer, full of burnyng coles, they put the blood of the Cocke thereon, and alſo caſt thereon innumerable ſweete ſauours: In the meane tyme alſo with cenſours in theyr handes, they goe rounde about the Altar, makyng perfume with frankenſence, ringyng a little ſiluer bell all the whyle of the ſacrifice. They kyll the Cocke with a ſiluer knyfe, and the knyfe alſo being rayed with blood, they put often in the fyre, that no parte of the blood be loſt. Sometyme hauyng the knyfe in theyr hande, they make certayne ſtraunge geſtures, much lyke to thoſe which the maſters of fenſe vſe in giuyng or auoyding of ſtrokes. They neuer ceaſſe puttyng to more coles and ſpices or perfumes, vntyl all the blood of the Cocke be burnt. The prieſt that offereth the blood of the Cocke, hath his armes and feete garnyſhed with ſiluer plates and pendantes, in ſuch ſorte, that whyle hee moueth, they make a certayne noyſe, much lyke vnto ſonettes or Haukes belles. He hath on his breſt a certayne boſſe, conteynyng I know not what ſecrete figure, which may ſeeme to be the ſecrete caract or ſigne of ſome myſterie. The ſacrifice being finiſhed, he taketh both his handes full of wheate, and goeth from the Alter backeward lyke a Creuice, neuer mouyng his eyes from the Alter, vntyll he come to a certayne tree: where openyng his handes, hee caſteth the wheate on the tree. Then holdyng his handes aboue his head, he returneth to the Alter, and taketh away all that is thereon.

The deuylles ordinary dyet and deintie meate.

Bramini.

Brachmani.

The maner of ſacrifice to the deuyll.

Gallus Eſculapio.

A goodly prieſt the deuylles Chaplen.

A counterfecte Aaron.

Offeryng of wheate.

Of the maner which the kyng vseth at his meate. Cap. 3.

The deuyll is serued before the kyng.

THe Kyng doeth not sit downe to his meate, before foure of the priestes offer it to the deuyl, in this maner. Liftyng theyr handes aboue theyr heades, with also many other fantasticall gesticulations, and murmuryng voyces, they offer the meate to the deuyl, & spende long tyme in those ceremonyes, to the end that the kyng should eate no meat that is not first offered to the deuyll. They offer the meate in a tray of wood, and therin laye it vppon the brode leaues of a certayne tree. His meat is Ryse, and dyuers other thinges, as fruite, flesshe, and fysshe. He sitteth on the grounde without cloth or Carpet. The priestes in the meane tyme stande rounde about him, but approcheth no nearer then foure or fyue pases, obseruyng diligently the kinges wordes. When the kyng hath lefte eatyng, the priestes carry away all that is lefte, and in a certayne place thereto appointed, offer it to certayne Crowes, which they keepe for the same purpose: And therefore being vsed to be thus fedde, geather togeather at a signe gyuen them, and eate vp the meate. These crowes are therefore of them esteemed holy: and therefore it is not lawfull for any man to take them, or hurte them.

Chaplens of honour.

I thinke the Priestes take parte with the Crowes.

Crowes esteemed holy.

Of the Priestes of Calecut, called Bramini. Cap. 4.

The priestes euer prouide for them selues.

THese *Bramini*, are in place with them, as are the chiefe priestes or bishoppes with vs. Therefore when the king shall marrie, he lyeth not with his wyfe before shee be defloured by the Archbyshop, yet taketh he not this vppon him without rewarde: for the kyng gyueth him for his labour fiftie peeces of golde. Only the kyng of *Calecut* keepeth this custome.

A goodly office for a byshop.

Of the dyuers sortes of Idolaters in the citie of Calecut. Cap. 5.

The chiefest Idolaters, and of the greatest dignitie, are the *Bramini*. They of the seconde order, are named *Naeri*: And in the same place with them, as are with gentelmen, whose office is when they go abrode to beare swoordes, targettes, bowes, launces, and other weapons. The thyrde order consysteth of mecanike or handie craftes men. In the fourth place, are victaylers, and suche as make prouision of fyshe and fleshe. Next vnto these, are they that geather Pepper, Wyne, Walnuttes, and suche other fruites and spices. The last and basest sort, (named *Neraui*) are they that sowe and geather Ryse. These, as the inferiour tribe of men, are in such subiection to the *Bramini* and *Naeri*, that in payne of death they may approche no nearer vnto them then .i. pases. And therefore they lye lurkyng in certayne shadowes and darke places, and marysshes, lest they shoulde suddenly chaunce to meete with them. Wherefore when they come abrode, that they may be hearde a farre of, they crye with loude voice I wotte neare what, that they may be hearde of the sayde *Bramini* and *Naeri*, least beyng soddenly betrapped, they shoulde be put to death.

Priestes and gentelmen.

Poore men haue no soules

Of the apparell of the kyng, queene, and Inhabitantes of the citie of Calecut. And of their maner of feedyng. Cap. 6.

The apparell of the kyng and queene, is litle or nothyng differyng from the other Idolaters: among the whiche the Mahumetans (as strangers) are not to be accompted. They couer onely theyr priuie partes with bombasine cloth or sylke, and are beside all naked, barefooted also, and beareheadded. But the Mahumetans weare single apparell, reachyng only vnto the nauel. The women are apparelled euen as are the men, sauyng onely that they lette theyr heare growe very longe. The kyng and nobilitie of the citie, eate no fleshe, except they fyrst aske counsayle of the Priestes.

They are not troubled with garderobes, or makyng them redye mornyng and euenyng.

But

But the common people may eate what flesshe they wyll, except the flesshe of Kyne. But they of the baselt sorte, named *Niram* and *Poliar*, may eate onely fyshes dryed at the Sunne.

Of theyr custome after the death of the kyng. Cap. 7.

The kynges children succeed not to inherite the kyngdome.

What paynes the prieftes take for theyr kuyng, and what service they do the kyng.

Bastordes.

Mournyng for the death of the kyng.

Chastitie and abstinence.

Meates that moue to ecberie.

After the death of the kyng, if he haue any male children kuyng, or brethren, or brothers children, they succeede not in the kyngdome: For of auncient lawe and custome, the septer pertayneth to the kynges systers sonnes, of whiche if there be none, it commeth to the nert of the blood: And this, for none other cause (as they saye) but that the prieftes haue defloured the queene. When the kyng goeth abrode or on huntyng, the prieftes, be they neuer so young, keepe the queene at home, and remayne neere about her: For there is nothyng more acceptable to the kyng, then that the prieftes shoulde so keepe companye with the queene. And therefore the kyng may well thynke that the children borne of her, are not to be numbred amongst his children, and therefore taketh the children of his systers, to be neereft of his blood, and rycht inheritours to the crowne. When the kyng is dead, all his subiectes, by cuttyng theyr beardes and shauyng theyr headdes, testifie how greeuously they take his death. Yet hearein they vse not all one fashion, for some cutte onely part of the heare of theyr chynne, and some parte of the heare of theyr head, and other all: and so euery man as he doth phantasie. Duryng the tyme that they celebrate the funerals of the kyng, they that lyue by fyshyng, forbeare fyshyng for the space of eyght dayes. And when any of the kynges wyues dye, they obserue the lyke ceremonyes as for the death of the kyng. The kyng sometyme, by a certayne superstition, abstayneth from venery, or the company of women, for the space of a yeere: and lykewyse forbeareth to eate certayne leaues, whiche they call *Betolas*, beyng the leaues of Assyrian apples: whiche they vse not onely for dilicates, but also because theyr propertie is to moue men greatly to wanton lustes.

For

For the same purpose also they eate a certayne fruite, named *Coffolo*, somewhat lyke vnto Dates.

Of theyr chaungyng of wyues. Cap. 8.

The gentelmen & merchauntes, to shew great curtesie and frendshyp one to the other, vse somtime to chaunge wiues, and therein vse this maner of speache: My freende, we haue nowe of long tyme lyued togeather as faythfull frendes, and therefore for the laste accomplyshement of our frendeshyppe, if it so please thee, lette vs chaunge wyues. Content sayth the other, for I beare thee euen as good wyll. The wyues refuse not to agree to the condition herein also, to please theyr husbandes. Then the one byngeth his wyfe to the other, saying: Woman, this man shall hereafter be thy husbande. The other sayth the lyke to his wyfe also. Thus all partes beyng agreed, they depart with frendly embrasyng: But the chyldren remayne with the fyrst husbande. These Idolatars haue also diuers other customes: For among some of them, one woman is maryed to seuen husbandes, of the whiche euery of them hath his nyght by course appoynted to lye with her: And when she hath brought forth a chylde, she may geue it or father it to whiche of them she lysteth: Who may in no case refuse it.

Great frendshyppe.

The maner of feedyng of the common people, of the Idolatars, and of theyr Iustice. Cap. 8.

Diogenistæ.

Lying along on the grounde they eate theyr meate out of a traye of copper: For spoones, they vse certayne leaues of trees. Theyr meate commonly, is Ryse, fyshe, spices, and fruites, of the commoner sort. The labouryng men or ruder sorte, eate so fylthyly, that puttyng theyr foule handes in the potte, they take out ryse by handfuls, and so thrust it in theyr mouthes. They vse this kynde of Iustice for homicide. Where any hath slayne a man, he is thus punyshed.

The punyshement of murtherers.

They

Hearyng.

They haue a kynde of galows made in maner of a double crosse where whyle the murtherer is tyed fast, one thrusteth a stake through his bodye, where the poore wretche so hangeth vntyl he be dead: But they that wounde or hurt any man, redeeme the faulte for mony payde to the kyng. They that are in debte, are thus enforced to paye the same. The creditour fyrst demaundeth his monye: and if it be founde that the debitour breake promysse, then he to whom the mony is owyng, goeth to one of the kynges scriueners (whiche are sayde to be a hundred) and before hym makyng dewe proofe of the debte, receiueth of hym a greene wande of a tree, with authoritie to prosecute his debitour vntil he haue found hym, where when he hath arrested him, with these woordes (go no further before thou paye me) thyse rehearsed, he sayth furthermore thus: I charge thee by the head of *Bramini*, and by the head of the kyng, not to sturre from this place before thou paye me. There is no shyfte but eyther to paye incontinent, or there to loose his lyfe. But if he be found alone, and escape after the sayd woordes, he is euer after adiudged a rebell, and therefore shall it be lawefull for any man to kyll hym whersoeuer he is founde, within the kynges dominions.

A straunge maner to demaund debte.

Death for debte.

Of the honoring of Idolles. Cap. 9.

Outward cleanlynesse.

WHen they praye to theyr Idolles, in the mornyng before the Sunne ryse, they resorte to the pooles or ryuers to washe them: And so at their commyng home to theyr houses (where they keepe theyr Idolles) they touch nothyng before they praye to the Idolles prostrate on the grounde secreatly: while they praye, they make certayne deuylyshe gesticulations lyke mad men, so marueilously defourmyng theyr faces, eyes, and mouthes, that no man can beholde it without horrour: and thus contynue their prayer a quarter of an houre. When the tyme of eatyng approcheth, they may not fal to theyr victayles, before some one of the gentlemen haue dressed it, and set it in order. But this custome is obserued onely among the gentelmen, or noble men. The women haue none other charge or care, then to dresse and beautifie

Womens woorke.

tiſie them ſelues, for their huſbandes vſe not to haue to do with them before they be curyouſly waſhed, and perfumed with ſundrye ſweete ſauours. When the women go abrode, it is marueilous to beholde howe they are behanged with iewels and pretious ſtones, on theyr eares, armes, and legges.

Clenly women.

Of theyr maner of warre. Cap. 10.

They haue in the citie certayne maiſters of fence, that teach them how to vſe the ſwoord, the target, the launce, and ſuche other weapons. When the kyng proceedeth to the warres, he is furnyſhed with an armie of a hundred thouſande footemen, for of horſemen there is no vſe, but onely Elephantes: For the kyng hym ſelfe rydeth on an Elephant. They that are next to the kyng, weare about theyr headdes, fyllettes or bandes of ſylke, of crymiſyn or ſcarlet colour. Theyr weapons are certayne crooked ſwoordes, targets, launces, and bowes. The kynges enſigne, is a certaine thyng made of bowes of trees, implicate round like the couering of a tub, borne vp on a reede. This is borne ſo that ỹ ſhadow therof may couer the king from the heate of the Sunne: and is in their tongue, called *Somler*. When both the armies approche within three arrowe ſhoote, the kyng ſendeth his *Braminos* into the tentes of his enimies, in maner of haroldes to chalenge a hundred of them to come fourth (if they dare) to combat agaynſt a hundred of his *Naeres*, which before we ſaid to be his gentelmen and chiefe ſtrength of his army: which meſſage done, both ſydes prepare them ſelues to the battayle, and in the midway, fyrſt a hundred fyght with a hundred. The whiche if they ſhoulde feyght continually for the ſpace of three dayes, woulde neuer ſtryke with the poynt, but with the edge of the ſwoorde, and for the moſt parte at the head, and ſeldome at the legges. But when fyue or ſyxe are ſlayne, incontinent the *Bramini* on both partes make an ende of the fyght: and by theyr commaundement the retreate is ſounded on both partes. Then agayne the *Bramini* (whiche are the chiefe prieſtes as we haue ſayde) on both ſydes, ſpeake vnto the kynges, and aſke them if they wyll any more. And thus for the moſt parte make they an ende of the quarell and battayle, without great ſlaughter of men.

Maiſters of fence.

The kynges army.

Their weapons.

The kynges enſigne.

The prieſtes are haroldes.

A chalenge to combatte.

A great battayle and litle bloodſhed.

The

Minstrells.

The kyng sometymes rydeth on an Elephant, and sometymes also is borne by his noble men, named *Naeri*. When he proceedeth, there folowe hym a great multitude of mynstrels, makyng a great noyse, with Tymberels, Tamberets, and suche other instrumentes. The stypende of the *Naeri* is foure *Carlines* euery moneth in peace, and syxe in tyme of warre: these haue theyr teeth very blacke, by eatyng of a certayne hearbe, whiche they much vse.

Blacke teeth.

The dead gentelmen are burnt, but the poore men are buryed.

When any of these are slayne, their bodies are burned, with great pompe, and many superstitions, and also theyr asshes reserued: but the common sort are buryed, in diuers maners, for some are buried in their houses, some in their gardens, and other in feeldes, medowes, or woodes.

Copied money.

They coyne money here, as in ỹ citie of *Narsinga*. When I was there, there was in ỹ citie merchants of almost all partes of the East, and especially a great number of Mahumetans, and many also of the region of *Melacha*, and *Bangella*: other also of *Tarnassari*, *Pego*, and *Ciriomandel*: some lykewyse of the Ilandes of *Zeylan*, and *Sumatra*, whiche is *Taprobana*: other of *Cholon*, *Caicolon*, and *Bathecala*: and almost innumerable other, of nations whose names are better knowen to vs, as *Persians*, *Arabians*, *Syrians*, *Turkes*, and *Ethiopians*, and also many of the kyngdome of *Narsinga*, strangers of so many nations, were in the citie of *Calecut* whyle I remayned there. Understand furthermore, that the Idolators vse not to sayl on the sea, but that is appoynted to the Mahumetans, as meeter men for that purpose. And there is in the citie of *Calecut* more then fyfteene thousande Mahumetans, whiche were borne in the same citie.

Merchauntes resorte to Calecut.

Mahumetans of Calecut.

Of their Shippes, and maner of saylyng on the sea. Cap. 11.

Theyr Shippes.

Theyr Shippes are made no lesse then may suffise for the burden of foure or fyue hundred Tonne, & all open without any couerture. In the ioyntes of their Shippes they put no Towe, but ioyne the plankes so artificially, that they holde out water very well: yet do they pytche the ioyntes, and make them fast with nayles of Iron. They do not forbeare Towe for lacke therof, for they haue great plentie of Hempe and Flaxe. They haue plankes or boordes and postes of diuers sortes, for they haue as good wood and better then we. Theyr sayles

sayles are of Bombasine cloth, and doubled in the neather part, whereby they geather more wynde, and swell therewith, lyke a bagge: and in this they passe vs, vsyng but only syngle sayles. They vse ankers of marble, of the length of eyght spannes, and on euery syde twoo: these they hang in the sea by double ropes, and besyde these, haue none other ankers. They haue certayne appoynted tymes and seasons of saylyng: for some tymes serue best for one coast, and some other, for other coastes and viages. The changes and also contrarietie of tymes, is there greatly to be consydered: for when with vs al thynges for heate are almost scorched, then haue they large shewres, as in the monethes of May, June, and July. Their shippes are of diuers quantities, as with vs, and therfore also of diuers names. They haue one sort of vessels made of one whole pece of wood, like a trough, veri long, sharpe, and narowe: in these they vse both sayles and ores, and are therfore swyfter then our Galleys or Foystes. The Pirates vse these very much. The best of their shippes are made in an Ilande named *Porcai*, not farre from *Calecut*.

Ankers of marble, on euery syde two.

Seasons of the yeere, contraris to ours.

Dyuers fashions of shippes and other vessells.

Of the Court or Palace of the kyng of Calecut. Cap. 12.

The Palace of the kyng of *Calecut* conteyneth no lesse then a myle in circuite, the wall is not hygh, the buyldyng is fayre, with beames or posses wel ioynyng the frame, and curiously wrought and carued with the figures & shapes of deuyls on euery syde. Why the walles be no hygher, we haue declared before, where we haue spoken of the lowe buyldyng of the houses of the citie: the cause wherof (as we haue saide) is the vnstable grounde, so ful of water, that they can dygge no deapth to lay fundation to beare hygher buyldynges. But what pearles and precious stones the kyng weareth vpon hym, can not be expressed for the greatnesse of the thyng: for doubtlesse it exceedeth all estimation. Although at the tyme of my beyng there, he was not geuen to ioyfulnesse, but lyued in greefe of mynde, aswel for the warres which the kyng of Portugale made agaynst hym, as also that he was diseased with the Frenche pore, which had now entred into his throte: neuertheless, his eares, armes, handes, legges, and feete, were so beautyfully and richly garnyshed with all sortes of iewels and precious stones, that it can not be spo-

A goodly palace.

Images of the deuyll to garnysh the kinges palace.

The riche iewels which the king weareth.

The kyng of Portugales warres agaynst the kyng of Calecut.

The frenche Pore among precious iewells.

ken.

Vnestimable treasure.

ken. His treasure is esteemed so vnmeasurable, that it can not be conteyned in two wonderful great cellars or warehouses. This treasure consysteth of pretious stones, plates of golde, and also so muche coyned golde as may suffice to lade a hundred Mules, as theyr *Bramini* reporte, to whom it is best knowen. They saye also that this treasure was geathered and reserued by twelue kynges whiche were before hym, and that in his treasurye is a cofer of three spannes in length, and two in breadth, full of only pretious stones, of price inestimable.

Of the spices of Calecut. Cap. 13.

Pepper.

PEpper is geathered in the feeldes about the suburbes, and also in certayne places within the citie. The stalke of pepper is very weake, and lyke vnto vines, which can not beare it selfe, without the helpe of a stake or proppe, and is muche lyke vnto an Iuie, and in lyke maner creepeth and embraceth suche trees as are neere vnto it. This tree (or rather bushe) is dispearsed into sundry branches, of the length of two or three spannes, and hath the leaues lyke vnto the leaues of an Assyrian apple, but that these are somewhat thycker and fatter.

The pepper tree.

Clusters of pepper.

On euery twigge hange syxe clusters, no bygger then Dates, and lyke vnto clusters of litle grapes, and of the coloure of vnripe grapes, but growe thycker. They are geathered in the moneth of October, and Nouember, inclynyng yet to greene colour, and are so layde on mattes, and set in the Sunne to dyre, where in the space of three dayes, they become blacke, as they are brought hyther. The fruitefulnesse of these, proceedeth onely of the symple goodnesse of the soyle, without helpe of loppyng or pruning.

Genger.

This region beareth also Gynger, whiche is doubtlesse a roote, and is sometyme dygged of the weight of .xii. vnces, it entreth no deeper into the grounde then three or foure handefuls. When they dygge it out, they leaue the knotte or ioynt of the roote in the pitte, and couer it agayne with earth, as a seede for more agaynst the nexte yeere. It is founde in an equall soyle, as are the Myrabolanes: yet is the earth where it groweth, of very redde coloure. The stalke, is muche lyke the stalke of a young peare tree.

Of

Of the fruites of Calecut. Cap. 14.

IF I should describe all the sortes of straunge fruites that are seene there, it would rather require a volume, then a breefe rehersall of them particularly: For they haue not only many greatly differing from ours in fourme, sauour, and tast, but also those of the kynde of such as we haue, differ in maner no lesse. Whereby may the naturall Philosopher consider howe those thinges which are all of one kynde, differ accordyng vnto the nature of the soile and diuers situation vnder the heauens. By which natural cause, & alteration, some fruites and seedes, by transplanting into a better soile, become more perfect in their kind, as bigger, fayrer, sweeter, and more fruitfull: As also contrariwise, the contrary, by transplantyng into a worse soile, or colder region: which diuersitie is seene, not only in plantes and hearbes, but also in beastes, and euen in man kynde. It is very strange to consider howe diuersly trees beare theyr fruites and seedes, as some in one parte of the tree, and some in an other. There is in *Calecut* a fruite which they name *Iaceros*: the body of the tree, is of the bignesse of a Peare tree: the fruite is of the length of two handfuls and a halfe, & as byg as the thygh of a man. The fruit groweth out of the body of the tree vnder the branches, and some euen in the very myddest of the tree, and other yet lower also. The colour is greene, and in fourme, in maner lyke vnto a Pyne apple, but with lesse graines or knobbes: when it is rype, it becommeth blacke. It is geathered in the moneth of December. It hath the taste of a Pepon, and the sauour somewhat like *Castoreum*. It seemeth in eatyng to gyue dyuers and sundry pleasant tastes: as sometyme the taste of a Peache, sometyme of a Pomegranate, and leaueth at the ende a taste so sweete, that you would thynke it to be newe hony combes. Vnder the skynne, it is lyke vnto a Peache. And within the body conteineth an other frui, not much vnlyke softe Chestnuttes, and beyng rosted, hath the same taste, and is therefore certaynely one of the goodlyest fruites that I knowe. I will here, to be breefe, omit to speake muche of their Nuttes, and Walnuttes, Almons, Prunes, Peaches, Quinces, Gourdes, Melons, and suche other fruites knowen to vs, and

Fruites vnlyke ours.

A philosophical consideration of the difference of thinges of one kynde.

A great fruite growyng out of the body of the tree.

Appe fruites in December.

A fruite of sundry tastes.

One fruite within an other

yet much more pleasaunt and fayrer then are ours. There is one fruite worthie to be knowen, which they call *Apolanda*. The tree groweth to the height of a man, it beareth not past foure or fiue leaues hangyng by certayne slyppes, euery leafe is able well to couer a man from rayne, and the heate of the sunne: In the myddest of the leafe, riseth a twyg or stalke, lyke the stalke of a beane, which bringeth out floures and also fruites of a handfull long, and of the bignesse of a mans arme: these fruites are geathered vnryppe, bycause they become rype in keepyng. Euery slyp beareth about two hundred fruites, a thyng certaynely wherein is greatly seene the fruitfulnesse of nature. They touche one another, and cluster togeather. They are of yelowe colour, and haue a verry thyn codde, and are in eatyng delicate and holesome. There are three sortes of this kynde of fruite, of the which one is of euyll taste, and therefore not so muche esteemed. It is yet more straunge, that this tree beareth fruite but once, yet when it dyeth, there ryse about the roote thereof fyftie or threescore young slyppes, whiche renue the lyfe of theyr parent, that he dye not without succession. The gardeners or graffers transplante these in other places, for within the space of one yeere they bring forth fruite. They are geathered in great aboundance almost all the whole yeere, and are therefore very good cheape, and of small pryce, as twentie for a penny. The same soyle beareth lykewyse innumerable and most fayre and sweete floures all the yeere long, and especially Roses, both white, redde, and yelowe.

A tree with verye brode leaues.

A verye goodly fruite.

Two hundred fruites on euery slyppe.

A tree that neuer beareth fruit but once.

Fruites and floures geathered at all tymes of the yeere.

Of a most fruitfull tree of all the world. Cap. 15.

THere is also another tree, most worthie to be knowen, the which in fruitfulnesse, and sweetnesse of the fruit, passeth all the trees of the worlde. It beareth certaine fruites lyke vnto great Dates or Nuttes, & generally bringeth forth tenne commodities: For it beareth wood moste apte to nourishe fyre, and Nuttes very pleasant to be eaten, also cordes or ropes which may well serue for saylers: Lykewyse very fyne cloth,

This tree in the west India, is called Cocus.

Ten commodities of one tree.

cloth, which when it is coloured, sheweth lyke silke: The wood is the best that may be founde to make coles, it yeldeth also wine and odoxiferous water: Furthermoxe also, oyle, and suger. The boughes of the tree, are commodious to couer houses in place of tyles ox thetche: fox by reason of the closenesse and fatnesse of the leaues, they keepe out the rayne very well. The fruite of this tree (as we haue sayde) is in foxme lyke vnto great Dates ox Nuttes. One tree beareth about two hundxed of those fruites. Takyng away the first ryme, they put it in the fyxe, where it burneth quickly and with great flame. The seconde fruite vnder the sayde first ryme, is muche lyke vnto bombasine ox silke, and is lyke vnto flaxe when it is wxought. Of the floures, they make a certayne kynde of cloth, not vnlyke silke. The towe ox refuse of the first flaxe, they spinne and make thereof a grosser cloth, and small ropes ox coxdes: & of the smallest, wxeathed togeather, they make greater ropes, which may serue fox shippes. That parte of the Nut which is vnder the third ryme, conteyneth also a substaunce apte to make coles. The last ryme, includeth the substance ox coxnell of the Nutte, very delicate to be eaten. This ryme ox barke, is of the thicknesse of a mans litle finger. As the Nutte groweth in bignesse, so doeth also the water conteyned therein. So that the Nutte commyng to his full rypenesse and bygnesse, the water occupieth the inner parte: and sometyme is founde so much water in the Nutte, that you may take out of euery Nutte two ox thxee cuppes of water, very sweete to be dxoonke, and as cleere as Rose water, of the which also being thickened by seethyng, is made very fatte oile. The Nutte likewise it selfe, is of very pleasant taste. They suffer but one parte of the tree to bxing foxth fruite: Fox on the other parte ox syde, they cutte and wounde the tree in diuers places euery moxning and euening, and powxe into the wounded places a certayne liquox, which dxaweth out of the tree a ioise, which falleth into vesselles placed to receyue it, and so receyue they euery day and nyght in euery vessell, a cuppe of most pxecious liquox, which sometymes also they seeth at the fyxe, putting euer moxe vnto it, vntill it come to the strength of *Aqua vitæ*, and troubleth the bxayne both in sauour and dxynkyng, as doeth most strong wyne. On an other bxaunche of the same tree, they geather lykewyse suger, but not very sweete.

Nux Indica.

They are as big as a mans fyst, and some bygger.

Very sweete and cleare water within a Nutte.

Oile made of water.

Wyne of cutte bxauches of a tree.

A tree that beareth fruite continually all the whole peere.

The tree beareth fruite continually: for there are seene on it both the olde and dyye fruites of the season paste, & also greene fruites of the newe spring. It beareth not before the fifth peere. These trees are founde in the space or distaunce of about two hundred myles. They are so greatly esteemed, that in the myddest of most cruellest warres, it is not lawfull for any man to hurt them, euen in the landes of theyr enemies. They lyue but to the age of. xxv. peeres. They prosper best in sandy grounde, and are set or planted as are Walnuttes. This regionhath also other fruites wherof they make good oyle.

Oile.

Howe they sowe Ryse. Cap. 16.

Ploughing of the grounde.

They tyll the ground and plough it with Oxen as we doe: when the tyme approcheth to sowe Ryse, they testifie the ioyfulnesse of that day with all sortes of instrumentes, singing & dauncing. And in the way of their good speed, that all thinges may prosper the better (as they beleeue) they disguise ten men in apparell, to the similitude of the three deuylles, and daunce about them with all the noyse of theyr instrumentes. And thus celebratyng the festiuall day, they pray the deuylles good grace to sende them plentie of Ryse.

A daunce of deuylles.

Solem suum oriri facit super bonos et malos. &c.

Howe theyr Phisitians visite sicke folkes. Cap. 17.

When any merchaunt of the Idolaters is sore greeued with any disease, and in maner neare vnto death, then certaine of them, which they take for phisitians, called to visite the patient in this extremitie, come thyther in the silence of the nyght, apparelled lyke the deuyll (as is aforesayde) carying fyre stickes in theyr mouthes and handes. And there, with a madde crye and howlyng, and with the tangelyng of certayne instrumentes, maketh so horrible a noyse in the eares of the sicke man, that it were enough to make a whole man sicke. And this is all the remedy and comfort which their Phisitians bring to their sicke men, whiche is none other, then in the article of death to present vnto them the similitude of him whom they (worse then deuylles) honour for gods vicares.

The deuyll a Phisitian.

Such a Phisitian such physicke

Eyther

Eyther meanyng perhappes by this meanes, to call agayne the sicke man almost dead. When the inhabitantes haue so ingorged them selues with to muche meate, that they be sicke in theyr stomake, they take the pouder of the rootes of ginger, and makyng it in fourme of a syrupe, with puttyng some liquor vnto it, drinke it all vp, and within three dayes recouer theyr health.

A remedie for surfetyng.

Of theyr Exchaungers, bankers, and Brokers. Cap. 18.

THeir exchaungers and bankers, haue weyghtes and balances so little, that the boxe, with the weightes and all that parteineth therto, passeth not the weight of an ounce, and are made so iuste, that the weight of a heare will cast them. When they will trye true golde from falce, or base from fyne, they vse the touche stone, as we doe, but haue this more then we: They haue a ball composed (I know not whereof) and lyke vnto waxe, and when they haue first rubbed the golde on the touche, they rubbe likewyse the touche on the sayd ball, where then the spottes of the golde remayne, and thereby they knowe a more exacte proofe of the fineneste or baseneste of the gold. When the sayde ball is full of gold, they melt it in the fyre, & geather the gold which it had imbibed. These exchangers are but grosse witted men, and ignorant of the arte which they professe. In buying and selling of merchandies, they vse this maner. They haue a broker, whose helpe they vse in these affayres. Therefore when the merchauntes come thyther, then the broker, hauyng with him a vayle or scarfe, taketh the seller by the ryght hande, and couereth it with the vaile. Then doth the merchant number on his fingers, from one vnto a hundred thousand, priuily & secretly, & then the seller also with lyke numbryng of his fingers and ioyntes, vntyll he come to the number of the price of his merchandies. Then the broker goeth agayne to the buyer, and couerynge his handes with the vayle in lyke maner, and numbryng of his fingers, certifieth him howe muche the seller demaundeth for his ware, then the buyer agayne, by feelyng and numbryng the brokers fingers, signifieth what he will gyue the seller for his merchaundies. And

Fyne weightes and balances.

A straunge experiment to know the fyne golde from base.

Proxenetæ.

A superstitious maner of bayeng and selling.

thus the broker goeth to and fro, shewyng both theyr meanyng with silence vntyll they be agreed. They sell theyr cloth by measure: but theyr spices and Jewelles by weyght.

Of the inhabitantes of Poliar and Hiraua, and how they nourysh their children. Cap. 19.

Litle payne or cost for nourshing of children.

THe women weane theyr children when they come to the age of three monethes, and afterward nourysh them with Goates milke: and when in the morning they haue giuen them milke, they tomble them in the sandes all foule & filthie, where they let them lye all the day, and are so scorched of the Sunne, that farre of they seeme like Bufles Calues, I neuer sawe more deformed or filthie creatures: at euenyng, theyr mothers gyue them milke agayne. By this kinde of wylde bringing vp, they become men of marueylous dexteritie in swiftnesse of runnyng, and other thinges of great agilitie, as to walke vppon ropes, swymmyng, leapyng, vaultyng, and such lyke.

Funambuli.

Of foure footed beastes, foules, and birdes of Calecut. Cap. 20.

Popingayes or Parottes.

THere are many beastes and kyndes of birdes, as Lions, wilde Boyes, Hartes, Hyndes, Bufles, Kyne, Goates, and Elephantes: yet not all engendred there, but brought thyther partly from other places. There are also parottes of sundry colours, as greene, purple, & other mixte colours. There is such multitude of them, that there are men appointed to keepe them from the Kyse in the fieldes, as we vse to keepe Crowes from the corne. They are marueylous crying and chattering, and of small price, as one solde for two pense, or halfe a soule. There are many other birdes much vnlyke to ours, which euery mornyng and euenyng make so great a noyse & sweete singing, that nothing can be more pleasant or delectable to heare, and therfore the inhabitantes lyue in great pleasure, and in maner as it were in an earthly Paradyse, in continuall spryng and florishyng of floures, hearbes, & trees, all the yeere long: besyde also the goodly and holsome temperateness of the ayre, being neither extreme

A great noyse of birdes.

An earthly Paradyse.

Continuall spryng, and temperate ayre.

hotte

hotte nor colde, but in maner in temperature of continuall spring tyme. That region hath also Monkeys, which are there of small price. These are very hurtfull to husbandmen, and such as liue by tillage of the grounde: for they clyme the trees of those goodly Indian Nuts & precious fruite, wherof we haue spoken here before, of the which they make wyne, which these beastes do spill, and cast downe the vesselles that are made faste there to receyue the sayde liquor of wyne.

Monkeys doe much hurte.

Of certayne Serpentes which are seene in Calecut. Cap. 21.

THere are certayne Serpentes, of suche bignesse, that they are equal to swine, theyr heads are much greater then the heads of Boyes: they are foure footed, and of the length of foure cubites, and are engendred in marishes. The inhabitantes say that they are without poison, and doe not otherwyse hurt, then by byting. There are furthermore three kindes of Serpentes: of the which, some are of so strong poison, that if they drawe neuer so litle blood, present death foloweth, whiche thing chaunced oftentymes whilest I was there. Of these kindes of serpentes, some are of the bignesse of an Alpe, & many much bigger. Of these there are a very great number. The cause wherof (they say) is this: That the kyng of *Calecut*, of a certaine foolishe superstition, maketh so great accompt of these Serpentes, that he causeth litle houses or cottages to be made for them, beleeuyng that they haue vertue against ouer much raine & ouerflowing of riuers, and therfore if a man kill any of them, he is punished with death, as though he had killed a man: and the like punishment is also for him that killeth a cowe. They greatly esteeme these Serpents, bicause (as they say) they came from heauen, and therfore they take them for heauenly spirites, which they affirme, for that only with touching, they bring present death. And this is ỹ cause that there are many serpentes, being thus permitted by the commaundement of the king. These serpents know the Idolaters inhabitants from Mahumetans or other strangers, and wil sooner venture vppon them. When I was there, I came into a house where eight men laye dead and greatly swolne, whiche the day before were killed by these serpents, yet doe they esteeme it for good lucke, when going abrode, they meete with any of them.

Crocodiles without poison.

Three kyndes of Serpentes.

Serpentes superstitiously kepte and nourished.

Death for kylling a Serpent or a Cowe.

Bycause they goe naked.

Superstition.

Of the lightes and Lampes which are seene in the Pallace of the kyng of Calecut. Cap. 22.

IN the kynges Courte or Pallace, are diuers mansions, and very many chambers, and therefore in the euenyng when it wareth darke, there are seene innumerable burning Lampes.

Goodly candelsticks of laton.

In the hall of the pallace, are seene ten or twelue candelsticks of laton, very fayre, and of cunnyng workemanshyp, muche lyke vnto goodly fountaynes, and of the heyght of a man. In eche of them are dyuers vesselles, and in euery vessel three candels light, of two spannes length, and great plentie of oyle. In the first vessell, are many Lampes made of cordes of bombasine cotten. In the myddle part, is seene a narower vessel, also full of lampes and lightes. In the lowest vessell also the like number of lightes. But in an other vessel in the toppe of all the candelsticke, are in maner innumerable lightes, maintayned with oyle, and haue matches of bombasine cotton. At the angles or corners of these candelsticks, are the Images of deuils, whiche also holde the lightes that are in the kinges presence. When any of the kinges blood dyeth, hee sendeth for all the *Bramini* or priestes of his realme, & commaundeth them to mourne for the space of a yeere. At theyr commyng, hee banqueteth them three dayes togeather, and at theyr departyng, giueth eche of them fyue peeces of golde.

Polyxines et Polychni.

Innumerable lyghtes and Lampes.

The deuyll seruyeth in the kynges chamber.

Mourning the space of a yeere.

Of the great multitude of Idolaters which resort to Calecut, for pardon of their sinnes. Cap. 23.

The Temple of sacrifyce to Idolles.

NOt farre from the citie of *Calecut*, is a certayne churche or Temple, compassed about with water, lyke an Iland, builded after an auncient fashion, hauing a double order of pillars, much lyke the Temple of sainct *Iohn De Fonte* in the citie of Rome. In the middest of the Temple, is an Altar of stone, where the people sacrifice to Idolles. Betweene the pillars on hygh, is a Boate of the length of two pases, and full of oyle. Also rounde about the Temple, are many trees with an innumerable multitude of Lampes & lightes hanging on them:

Trees behanged with Lampes.

The

The temple also it selfe, is as ful of lyghtes. The .xxv. day of December, resorteth thyther an infinite multitude of people, from all parties, euen for the distance of .xv. dayes iorney, and especially of the priestes, to whom parteyneth the order of sacrificeyng: But they do not sacrifice vnto theyr Idolles before they washe them selues in the water whiche is about the Temple. When the priestes assende to the place whereas is the boate fylled with oyle (as we haue sayd) they sprynckle the people with the sayd oile, but annoynte onely their heads: Who beyng so annoynted, may then proceede to the sacrifice, On the one syde of the altar, where they sacrifice, is seene a most horrible fourme of a deuyl, to whom the people, prostrate on the grounde, praye vnto, and then depart to theyr houses and countreys. By this meanes they beleeue that all theyr synnes are quite forgeuen them, and therefore for the space of three dayes, they lyue there in safegarde, as if it were in Sanctuarie: and for that tyme, is it not lawfull for any man to arrest or trouble an other for what so euer quarell. Certainely I neuer saw in any place a greater multitude of people assembled, except in the citie of *Mecha*.

Washyng before sacrifice.

Holy oyle in the steade of holy water.

Sacrifice to the deuyll for forgeuenesse of synnes.

Sanctuary.

Large is the way that leadeth to perdition, &c.

The syxt booke contaynyng the voyage of India.

Of the Cities of Caicolon, and Colon, Cap. I.

MY faythfull companyon *Cociazenor* the Persian (of whom I haue made mention here before) consyderyng that by the meanes of warres and imminent daungers, there was nowe no place for merchaundies, especially for that the Portugales had made sore warres and great slaughter in the citie of *Calecut*, by occasion that the inhabitantes of the citie had conspired with the Mahumetans for the murther of eight and fourtie Portugales (whiche was done at my beyng there) I thought it best in tyme to depart from thence. This facte so greatly moued the kyng of Portugale to reuenge, that he hath since that tyme kepte hostile warres agaynst them, and greatly consumed them, and

The kyng of Portugals warres in the citie of Calecut.

Caicolon.

and defaced their citie. We therfore departyng from thence by a very fayre ryuer, came to a citie named *Caicolon*, distaunte from the citie of *Calecut* fiftie leagues: the inhabitantes are idolaters. There is great aboundaunce of merchaundies, and great frequentation of merchauntes: the soyle beareth plentie of the best kynde of pepper. The kyng of the citie is not very rych. In apparel and maners, they differ litle from them of *Calecut*. Heere we founde certayne merchantes, Christians, named of the profession of saint Thomas the Apostle. They obserue the fastyng of fourtie dayes, as we do, and beleeue in the death and resurrection of Christ, as we do, and therfore celebrate Easter after our maner, and obserue other solemnities of our religion, after the maner of the Greekes. They are commonly named by the names of John, James, Matthias, and Thomas. Departyng from thence, in the space of three dayes iorney we came to an other citie, named *Colon*, about twentie myles distant from the aforesayde. The kyng is an idolater, and a prince of great power, haupng euer an armie of twentie thousande horsemen: there is a very fayre port. Neare to the sea syde the soyle beareth no corne, yet great aboundance of fruite and pepper, as in the citie of *Calecut*: but by reason of the warres we remayned no longer heere. Not farre from hence, we sawe men fyshe for pearles, in maner as we haue sayde before of the citie and Ilande of *Ormus*.

Pepper.

Christians of the profession of saint Thomas.

Colon.

An armie of.xx. thousande horsmen.

Pearles.

Of Cyromandel, a citie of India. Cap. 2.

The citie of *Cyromandel* is by the sea syde, and distant from the citie of *Colon* seuen dayes saylyng. The citie is very large, but without walles: it is subiecte to the kyng of *Narsinga*, and is within the syght of the Iland of *Zaylon*. After that you are past the poynt of *Comerin*, the soyle beareth plentie of Ryse. This citie is in the way to diuers great regions and cities: It is inhabited with innumerable Mahumetan merchantes, resortyng thyther from many countreys. There are no spyces, but aboundaunce of fruite, as in *Calecut*.

Zeilon.

Comerin.

I founde

I founde there certayne Chriſtians, who affyrme that the bodye of ſaint Thomas the Apoſtle is there in a certayne place, about twelue myles from this citie, and alſo that there are certayne Chriſtians whiche relygiouſly obſerue the holy body: and that the Chriſtians are euyll vſed, becauſe of the warres whiche the kyng of Portugall hath made agaynſt the people of theſe countreys. Alſo that the Chriſtians are ſometyme murthered ſecretly, leſt it ſhoulde be knowen to the kyng of *Narſinga*, who is in amitie and frendſhyppe with the kyng of Portugall, and greatly fauoureth the Chriſtians. The cauſe whereof (as they ſaye) is alſo partly by reaſon of a certayne myracle, whiche was this. The Chriſtians on a tyme had a great conflicte with the Mahumetans, where one of the Chriſtians beyng ſore wounded on his arme, reſorted incontinent to the ſepulchre of ſaint Thomas, where makyng his prayers, & touchyng the holy place, his arme was immediatly healed. Whereupon (as they ſaye) the kyng of *Narſinga* euer after greatly fauoured the Chriſtians. Here my companion ſolde muche of his wares. But by reaſon of the warres betweene the kynges of *Narſinga* and *Ternaſeri*, we determined to depart from hence. And therefore ſaylyng ouer a gulfe of .xx. leagues with great daunger, we arriued at an Iſland named *Zailon*, very large, as containing in circuite a thouſande myles.

The bodie of Thomas the Apoſtle.

The kyng of Narſinga frende to the Portugalls.

A miracle at the ſepulchre of S. Thomas.

Of the Ilande of Zailon, and the precious ſtones founde there. Cap. 3

IN this Iſlande are foure kynges of great dominion, by reaſon of the largeneſſe of the Iſlande. But becauſe of the warres among them at my beyng there, I coulde not tarye long to haue particular knowledge of the region and maners of the people. There are in the Iſlande many Elephantes. There is alſo a very long mountayne, at the foote whereof, are founde many precious ſtones, named *Piropi*, commonly called Rubines, or Rubies. The merchauntes ſeweleres, come by them by this meanes.

Foure kynges in one Iland.

Elephantes.

Rubie ſtones.

Fyrſt

Fyll, goyng to the kyng, they bye of hym a certayne measure of that grounde where suche stones are founde, of the largenesse of a cubite euery way. The price of this, is fyue pieeces of gold: yet with suche condition, that in dyggyng the grounde, there is euer one present for the kyng, to the ende that if in dyggyng be founde any of those precious stones exceedyng the weyght of x. Caractes, the same to be reserued for the kyng. And the rest that are founde vnder that waygbt, to appartayne to the merchaunt. Not farre from the sayde mountayne, are founde diuers other sortes of precious stones, as Iasynthes, Saphires, Topases, and suche lyke. Harde by the mountayne, runneth a great ryuer. The soyle byngeth foorth the sweetest fruites that euer I sawe, especially cloues, and apples of *Assiria*, of exceedyng sweetnesse, and all other, as in *Calecut*.

Precious stones.

Of the tree of Cinamome in the Iland of Zaylon. Cap. 4.

The tree of Cinamome is not much vnlike a Baye tree, especially the leaues, it beareth berryes as doth the Baye tree, but lesse, and whyte: It is doubtlesse therefore none other then the barke of a tree, and is geathered in this maner. Euery thyrde yeere they cutte the branches of the tree. Of this, is great plentie in the sayde Iland. When it is fyrste geathered it is not yet so sweete, but a moneth after when it waxeth dyre. A certayne Mahumetan merchaunt of the Iland, tolde my companyon, that there in the top of a hygh mountayne is a certayne denne, whyther the inhabitantes of the countrey resort to praye, in memorye of our fyrst father Adam, who (they saye) after he had synned by breakyng the commaundement of God, lyued in that place in continuall penitence. Whiche thing they affyrme by this coniecture, that there is yet seene the print of the steppes of his feete, of the length of almost two spannes. The inhabitants are subiect to the kyng of *Narsinga*, and paye hym tribute. The region is of temperate ayre, although it be situate in maner vnder the Equinoctiall lyne. The people are of darke tawny colour. Theyr apparell, are certayne single

How Cinamome is geathered.

A denne where Adam lyued in penance.

Temperate regions vnder the Equinoctiall lyne.

cloke

clokes of bombaſine cloth, whiche they weare, bearyng euer the ryght arme out all naked, as is the maner of all the Indians. They are no warrelyke men, neyther haue they the vſe of Iron. Here my companyon ſolde to the kyng muche Saffran and Coꝛalles. Saffran and Coꝛall.

Of Paleachet, a citie of India. Cap. 5.

DEpartyng from the Ilande of *Zailon*, in thꝛee dayes ſaylyng we came to a citie named *Paleachet*, ſubiecte to the kyng of *Narſinga*. It is a famous marte of ryche merchaundies, and eſpecially of iewels and pꝛecious ſtones, bꝛought thyther from *Zailon* and *Pego*. There is alſo great plentie of ſpices. There dwell in the citie many Mahumetan merchauntes, where we beyng receiued in one of theyꝛ houſes, tolde hym from whence we came, and what merchaundies we bꝛought, as Saffran, and Coꝛalles, whereof he was bery glad. The citie hath great ſcarſneſſe of coꝛne, but plentie of Ryſe: and in other fruitefulneſſe of the ſoyle and maner of the people, much lyke vnto *Calecut*. But becauſe they were at diſſention with the kyng of *Tarnaſſari*, and pꝛepared warres agaynſt hym, we departed from thence, and in .xiii. dayes ſaylyng, aꝛꝛyued at the citie of *Tarnaſſari*, a hundꝛed myles diſtant.

Of Tarnaſſari, a citie of India. Cap. 6.

THis citie is not farre from the ſea, and ſituate on a meetly equall grounde, well walled, hauyng alſo a famous poꝛte, and a bery fayꝛe ryuer rumnyng on the Noꝛth ſyde of the citie. The kyng is an Idolatour, and a pꝛince of great power. He keepeth continuall warre with the kyngs of *Narſinga* and *Bangella*. He bꝛyngeth to the feelde a hundꝛed Elephantes, of the fayꝛeſt and byggeſt that euer I ſawe. He hath an armie of an hundꝛed thouſand pencionarie footmen, & as many hoꝛſemen. Theyꝛ weapons are ſwoꝛdes, rounde targettes, peltes, bowes, dartes, and tauelins of great and long reedes. Elephants. An armie of a hundꝛed thouſende footmen.

They

They are also armed with iackes made of bombasine cotton, wrought very harde, and closely couched. Theyr houses are walled, and continent in order as ours are. The region bryngeth fourth wheate, bombasine, sylke, of sundrye kindes of colours, Brasile, and sundrye kyndes of fruites, muche lyke vnto ours.

Fruites. Also apples of *Assiria*, Oranges, Limons, Citrons, Gourdes, Cucumbers .&c.

Of the wylde and tame beastes of the citie of Tarnassary. Cap. 7.

Wylde beastes. THis region bryngeth fourth many beastes both wyld and tame. The tame beastes, are Oxen, Kyne, Sheepe, Gotes, Hogges, Hartes, and Hyndes. The wylde beastes, are Lions, Wolues, Cattes of the mountayne, and also Muskecattes. In the feeldes are many Peacockes, and those kynde of Egles whiche we call Falcons. Popingays also or Parrottes, marueylous fayre, of the which some are white, and other of seuen colours. There is lykewyse great plentie of Hares, and Partriges, and diuers other sortes of great byrdes liuyng by praye, muche bygger then Eagles: for of the vpper parte of their beckes, they make hafts for swoordes. The becke is of yelowe colour, distincte with crimsine, very fayre and beautifull to be seene. But the byrde is blacke and purple, with certayne whyte feathers intermyxt. There are also the byggest Hennes and Cockes that euer I sawe: and therefore thinhabitants and Mahumetans which dwell there, take muche pleasure in Cockefyght, and laye great wagers in that kynde of sporte. I haue seene them fyghte for the space of syxe houres, and yet sometymes they kyll one an other at the fyrst stroke. There are certayne Gotes farre exceedyng ours in byggenesse, and muche fayrer: these are so fruitefull, that at one byrth they bryng forth foure young kyddes. There is so great abundaunce of beastes, that twelue weathers are sold for one peece of golde to the value of a crowne or pistolet. There are also certayne weathers or rammes with hornes lyke vnto buckes horues, and are muche bygger and fyercer then ours.

Peacockes. Falcons. Popingayes.

A great and fayre foule.

Cocke fyghting.

Fruitefull Gotes.

Rammes with buckes hornes.

Their

Theyr Buffles are not so fayre as ours. The region hath also abundaunce of fyshe, very bygge and good, and of small price. These people eate all maner of beastes, excepte Kyne. They eate on the grounde without carpet or other cloth: yet haue they vessells of woodde artificially made. Theyr dyynke is water and suger: theyr beddes are rayled from the grounde, after the maner of ours. Theyr couche is of bombasine cotton, and the rouerynges of sylke. Theyr apparell, is a cloke or mantell of bombasine or sylke, with one arme out, all bare. But some of the merchauntes, weare inner vestures or shirtes of sylke or bombasine cloth. They go all barefooted, except the prieستes, whiche weare on theyr heads certayne rayles or crestes of two spannes long, with a knotte on the crowne lyke vnto an Acorne, and sparkled with golde. They delyght also in earinges: but weare neyther rynges nor brasselettes. The colour of the inhabitantes inclyneth to whyte, for the temperature of the climate or ayre, is colder then at *Calecut*. Theyr maner of tyllage, and geatheryng of fruite, is lyke vnto ours.

Of the maner which the kyng of Tarnassarie vseth, when he permitteth his wyfe to be defloured of white men. Cap. 8.

This kyng vseth not to geue his wyfe to the prieستes to be defloured, as doth the kyng of *Calecut*, but committeth this facte to whyte men, as to the Christians or Mahumetans, for he wyll not suffer the Idolaters to do this. The inhabitantes lykewyse haue not to do carnally with theyr wyues, before some whyte man, of what so euer nation, haue fyrst the breakyng of them.

The maner of burnyng dead bodyes in the citie of Tarnassary. Cap. 9.

When the kyng or any of the prieستes or gentlemen dye, their bodies are burnt in a great fyre made of a pile of wood: then all the whyle they sacrifice vnto the deuyll. Their asshes are reserued in certayne pottes of the earth of *Samos*, and buryed in theyr houses.

They

They sacrifice in ỹ shadows of trees as do they of *Calecut*. Whilst the bodyes are burnyng, they cast in the fyre all maner of sweete sauoures, as Aloes, Myrre, Frankensence, Storax, Sandals, Coxall, and innumerable suche other sweete gummes, spices, and trees. These make the fyre muche greater, encreasyng the flame by reason of theyr gummositie: in the meane tyme also they neuer ceasse to make a great noyse with Trumpettes, Pipes, Drummes, Tambarells, and suche other instruments, not muche vnlyke the ceremonies which in olde tyme were vsed among the gentiles in canonisyng theyr saintes. Furthermore, duryng these funeralls, there are .xb. or .xx. disguised lyke deuyls, whiche continually walke rounde about the fyre, with many strange gesticulations, after the maner of reioycyng. The wyfe also of the burned kyng or priest, standeth by the fyre alone, without the companye of any other woman, lamentyng and beatyng her breast. These ceremonies are done the seconde watche of the nyght. Within fyfteene dayes after, the wyfe bid-deth to a banquette all her husbandes kynsfolkes, and when they come at a daye appoynted, they go al to the place where her husbande was burnt, and at the same houre of the nyght: then commeth fooryth the wyfe, garnysshed with all her iewells and best apparell, vsyng therein the helpe of all her kynsfolkes. In the same place is made a pytte, no deeper then may serue to re-ceiue the woman: This pytte, is sette about with reedes, and the reedes are couered with a cloth of sylke, that the pytte may not be seene. In the meane tyme also a fyre is made in the pyt, with sundry sorts of sweet woods: & the wife, after that her gestes haue well banqueted, eateth very muche of a certayne meate whiche they call *Betola*, whiche troubleth her mynde as though she were halfe madde or drunken. In the meane whyle, a great company of suche theyr musitions as we haue spoken of before, apparelled like deuyls, with burnyng stickes in theyr mouthes, daunce fyrst about the pytte, and then make sacrifice to the great deuyl *Deumo*. The wyfe also in ỹ meane season runneth vp and downe lyke a madde body, with countenaunces of dauncyng and reioycyng. Then turnyng her to them that are disguised lyke deuyls, she commendeth her selfe to theyr deuoute prayers,

Canonisyng of saintes.

The wyfe burneth her selfe after the death of her husband.

Daunsyng deuylles.

Sacrifice to the deuyll.

despyring

delyryng them for her to make intercession to the great *Deumo*, that after this transitorie lyfe, it may please him to receyue her into the company of his Angelles. After the ceremonies are fynished, shee taketh her leaue of all her kynsfolkes, whiche stande rounde about her, and neare vnto the pitte, then with sodaine outrage and a loude crye liftyng vp her handes, she hurleth her selfe into the burnyng pit, which done, her kynsfolkes, standing neare vnto the fyre, couer her with litle fagottes of sweete wood, hurlyng also thereon much pitche, that the bodie may the sooner be consumed: and except the wyfe shoulde doe this after the death of her husbande, she should euer after be esteemed an euyll woman, be hated of all men, and in fine, in danger to be slayne both of her owne kynsfolkes and her husbandes, and therefore shee goeth to it the more willingly. The kyng him selfe is present at these pompes: which are not commonly vsed for all men, but only for the kynges, priestes, and noble men.

The hygh way to hell.

Great respecte of fame and honestie.

Of the iustice which the inhabitantes of Tarnassari obserue. Cap. 10.

IF any kyll a man, he is adiudged to death, as in the citie of *Calecut*. Of giuyng and receyuyng, iustice is ministred, as proofe may be made by writing or witnesse. They wryte in parchement lyke vnto ours, and not in barkes of trees as doe they of *Calecut*. When they contende for any thyng, they resorte to the gouernour of the citie, to whom the kyng hath giuen full authoritie of iurisdiction: and if any merchaunt straunger dye there without children, he may make no inheritour, but all his goods is due to the kyng: when the kyng is dead, his children succeede in the kyngdome. When the inhabitantes dye, theyr goods are equally diuided among theyr children.

Writyng.

Howe the Mahumetans are buried in the citie of Tarnassari. Cap. 11.

WHen any of the Mahumetan merchantes dye, they are embaulmed with many spices and sweete gummes, and theyr bodies put in Coffins of wood: with chiefe regarde that theyr heades lye towarde the citie of *Mecha*, which is from thence Northwarde.

Mecha.

Of the dyuers sortes of theyr shyppes or other vesselles. Cap. 12.

They haue Brigantines very shalowe, and with flatte bottoms, which drawe but small depth of water. Some also vse Foistes, hauyng two or double forepartes, and two Maistes, and are open without any couerture. There is an other kynde of shyppes of burden: Of the which, some beare the burden of a thousande tunnes. In these they carry Botes and other smaller vesselles, to the citie of *Melacha*, when they goe for spices.

Of Bangella, a great and riche citie of India, and of the great power of the kyng. Cap. 13.

IT is now tyme to speake further of our viage, and of our proceedyng therein. Therefore packyng vp our wares, and committyng vs to the sea, we came in twelue dayes saylyng to a citie named *Bangella*, distant from *Tarnassari* seuen hundred myles. This citie in fruitfulnesse and plentifulnesse of all thinges, may in maner contende with any citie in the worlde. The kyngdome and dominion of this citie is exceedyng large. The kyng hath an army of two hundred thousande footemen and horsemen Mahumetans, and is of so great power, that he keepeth sore warres with the kyng of *Narsinga*. The region is so plentifull in all thynges, that there lacketh nothyng that may serue to the necessarie vses or pleasures of men: for there are

The citie of Bangella.

An army of two hundred thousand men.

are in maner all sortes of beastes, good and holesome fruites, and plentie of corne: Spices also of all sortes. Lyke wyse of bombasine and silke, so exceedyng great aboundance, that in these thinges, I thinke there is none other region comparable with this, and therefore here are very many riche merchantes. For euery yeere departe from hence, fyftie shyppes laden with clothe of bombasine and silke, into the cities and countreys of *Turchia, Syria, Arabia, Persia, Ethiopia*, and *India*. There are also many merchaunt straungers, whiche buye precious stones of the inhabitauntes.

Spices and silke.

Riche merchantes.

Precious stones.

Of certayne Christian merchauntes, which exercise merchandies there. Cap. 14.

HEre we founde many Christian merchantes which were borne in the citie of *Sarnau*, as they tolde vs. They resorte thyther, as to a great marte, with cloth of silke, and wood of Aloes, & *Laser*, which yeldeth the sweete gumme named *Laserpitium*, commonly called *Belzoi*, beyng a kynde of myrre. They bryng also *Castoreum*, and diuers other sweete sauours. The sayde Christians tolde vs also, that there be in that kyngdome, many Christian Princes, subiect to the great *Cham*, of the citie of *Cathai*. The apparell of these Christians, was Chamlet, loose and very full of pleytes, and lyned with bombasine cloth. On theyr heads they weare certayne coppen or sharpe poynted cappes, of two handfull hygh, of scarlet colour. They are white men. They acknowledge one God in Trinitie, & are baptised after our maner. They beleeue the doctrine of the Apostles and Euangelistes. They wryte backewarde, after the maner of the *Armenians*. They celebrate the birth and buriall of Christ, and obserue fastyng the fourtie dayes of Lent as we doe. They celebrate also certayne sainctes dayes. They vse no shooes, but weare loose hose of silke, garnished with dyuers Jewels. On theyr fingers they weare Ringes, with stones of incomparable splendour. At meate, they vse no table, but eate lying on the grounde, and feede of all sortes of flesshe.

Christians.

Lignum Aloes.

Laserpitium.

Belzoi.

Castoreum.

Christian Princes vnder the great Cham of *Cathay*.

Chriſtian Princes neare the Turkes dominions.

They affyrmed alſo, that there are certayne Chriſtian kynges (whiche they call *Rumi*) of great power, confynyng or borderyng on the dominions of the great Turke. When theſe Chriſtians had ſeene the precious merchaundies of my companion, and ſpecially a great braunche of Cozall, they earneſtly deſired him, to goe with them to a certayne citie, where they promiſed him that by theyr procurement he ſhoulde ſell his ware at great auantage, if he would buye Rubie ſtones, and that he might therby eaſily geat aboue tenne thoulande peeces of golde: Affirming that thoſe kynde of ſtones were of muche greater value in Turkey. Wherevnto my companion anſwered, that he woulde goe with them if they would departe in ſhorte ſpace. We will (ſayde they) departe euen to morow: for here is a Foiſt whiche departeth hence to morowe, and taketh her viage to the citie of *Pego*, whyther we deſyre to bryng you. My companion conſented the rather to his requeſt, bicauſe he was aduertiſed that he ſhould fynde there certayne Perſians, his countrey men. Therefore with this good companie departyng from the citie of *Bangella*, and ſaylyng ouer a great gulfe lying on the South ſyde, wee came at the length to the citie of *Pego*, a thouſande myles diſtaunt from *Bangella*.

Cozall of great price.

Rubies.

Pego.

Of Pego, a famous citie of India. Cap. 15.

The citie of *Pego*, is not farre from the ſea, and is ſituate vppon the continent or fyrme lande. A very fayre ryuer runneth by the citie, by the which merchandies are caried to and fro. The kyng of the citie, is an Idolater. The inhabitauntes, in apparell, liuyng, and maners, are lyke vnto them of *Tarnaſſari*: but of whiter colour, as in a colder region, ſomewhat lyke vnto ours. The citie is walled, and the houſes well buylded, and very fayre, of ſtone and lyme. The kyng hath a myghtie armie both of footemen and horſemen, and hath in his armie Penſionarie Chriſtians, borne euen in the ſame region.

Idolaters.

White men.

Chriſtians.

Theyr

Theyr wages, is euery moneth sixe of those peeces of golde which they cal *Pardaios*, & is payde them out of the Kynges treasury. They haue abundance of corne and flesh, as in *Calecut*. Here are but fewe Elephantes, yet other beastes and foules, as in *Calecut*. Here are also trees for buyldyng, and to make shyppes, the fayrest that euer I sawe: Also exceedyng great Reedes, as byg as the bodie of a grosse man, or a tubbe. Here are likewyse suit Cattes, or Mulke Cattes, and of small pryce, as three for one peece of golde. There are fewe merchandyes in this citie, except precious stones, and specially Rubies: which nertheless are brought thyther from an other citie named *Capela*, beyng towarde the East thirtie dayes iourney, where are also founde precious stones named *Smaragdes* or Emeraldes. When we arryued at *Pego*, the kyng was absent fyue & twentie dayes iourney, in a place where he kepte warre agaynst the kyng of *Ava*. But shortly after, he returned with great tryumphe for the victorie which he had agaynst his enemie.

Great Reedes.

Mulke cattes.

Precious stones and spices. *Capela*.

Smaragdes or Emeraldes.

Of the munificence, humilitie, and great richesse of the Kyng of Pego. Cap. 16.

THis kyng vseth not suche pompes and magnificence as doeth the kyng of *Calecut*: But is of suche humanitie and affabilitie, that a chylde may come to his presence and speake with him, being neuertheless very ryche. It is in maner incredible to speake of the ryche Iewelles, precious stones, pearles, and especially Rubies, which he weareth, surmounting in value any great citie. His fingers be full of Ringes, and his armes all full of bracelettes of golde, all beset and moste gloriously shinyng with suche precious stones: His legges also and feete beyng garnyshed in lyke maner. His eares lykewyse are so laded with suche Iewelles, that they hang downe halfe a handfull. The splendour or shinyng of these Iewelles is so great, that if one see the king in the darke night, he shineth in maner as it were the beames of the sunne. At good opportunitie the Christian merchantes spake to the kyng, and certified him that my companion had brought sundry merchaundies of great estimation.

Great riches of Iewelles and precious stones

A kyng shinyng with earthly starres.

The kyng sacrifyceth to the deuyll.

The kyng answered, that they shoulde come to him the day folowyng, bycause that, that present day, he shoulde sacrifice to the deuyll. Therefore the nexte day he sent for vs, willyng that my companion should bryng with him suche merchandies as he had. The which the kyng toke great pleasure to behold, and not without good cause: for among other thinges, there were two great branches of corrall, of such bignesse and fayrenesse, as no man there had euer seene the lyke. The kyng astonished at these thinges, asked the Christians what men we were. They answered that we were Persians. Then sayde the kyng to his interpretour, Aske them if they will here make sale of theyr merchandies. To whom then my companion sayde thus, Most honorable Prince, all these are yours, take them, and vse them at your pleasure. Then sayde the kyng agayne, These two yeeres paste I haue kepte continuall warre with the kyng of *Aua*, and therfore my treasure of money is consumed: But if you will bargaine by the way of exchaunge, for precious stones, and especially Rubies, I will so deale with you, that it shall not repent you. Then sayde my companion to the Christians: I pray you gyue the kyng to vnderstande, that I desire none other thyng then the benevolence of his highnesse, and therefore that I desire him to take of my merchaundies what lyketh him best, and that without money, or permutation of any other thing. When the kyng hearde this, he answered, that he had hearde by reporte that the Persians were very curtuous and liberall men, and that he neuer knewe so liberall a man as this was, and swore by the head of the deuyll, that by this occasion he would proue which of them two should be most liberall, and therefore callyng vnto him a Page of his chamber, commaunded him to fetche a casket of precious stones. This casket was of the breadth of a spanne and a halfe, euery way square, and full of Rubies: hauyng also within it sundry receptacles or boxes, where the stones were sorted in order. When he had opened the casket, he commaunded it to be set before the Persian, willing him to take of those precious stones as many as he would. But my companion the Persian, yet more moued to liberalitie by this the Kinges munificence, spake to the kyng these woordes, O most honourable Prince, I perceyue your benevolence to be suche towarde me,

Coral.

The kyng and the merchant contende of liberalitie.

Commendation of the Persians.

A casket full of Rubies.

me, that I sweare by the holy head of Mahumet, and all the mysteries of his religion, wherevnto I am professed, that I freely and gladly gyue vnto you all my merchaundies: For I doe not trauayle about the worlde for gaynes of richesse, but rather of desyre to see the worlde. In the which thereto, I neuer founde any thyng wherein I so greatly reioyced, as in the beneuolence and fauour which your maiestie hath shewed me. The kyng answered, Wylt thou yet contende with mee in liberalitie? And with those woordes, tooke out of the casket, (of euery boxe some) as many Rubies as he coulde holde in his hande, & with this reward (whiche was two hundred Rubies) shewed his kyngly munificence and beneuolence towarde the *Persian*, saying vnto him, Take these, I pray thee, for thou shalt not refuse them. He gaue also to eche of the Christians two Rubies, whiche were woorth a thousand crownes to be solde: but those which he gaue the *Persian*, were esteemed woorth a hundred thousand crownes. A Princely gyfte. This kyng therefore doubtlesse in munificence passeth all the kynges of the worlde, and in maner no lesse in richesse: for he receyueth yeerely of his subiectes two hundred thousand peeces of golde. This region bryngeth foorth all sortes of colours, and great plentie of bombasine and silke: but these great riches, the kyng consumeth on his souldiers. Not long after, newes were brought that the kyng of *Aua* was comming with a myghtie force, whom the kyng in maner with an innumerable army went to resist. Here also in certayne places we sawe women burned, after the maner of *Tarnassari*. Colours.

Of the citie of Melacha, and the great ryuer of Gaza. Cap. 17.

VVIthin two dayes after, taking ship, we sailed westwarde towarde the citie of *Melacha*, and arryued there in eight dayes saylyng. Not farre from this citie, is a famous ryuer named *Gaza*, the largest that euer I sawe, conteynyng

A ryuer of. xxv. myles bzode.

xxv. myles in bzeadth. On the other syde, is seene a very great Ilande, whiche they call *Sumetra*, and is of olde writers named *Traprobana*. The inhabitauntes say that it conteyneth in circuite syue hundzed myles. When wee came to the citie of *Melacha* (which some call *Melcha*) we were incontinent commaunded to come to the Soltan, being a Mahumetan, and subiecte to the great Soltan of *Chini*, and payeth him tribute. Of whiche tribute, they say the cause is, that moze then fourescoze yeeres past, that citie was buyloed by the kyng of *Chini*, foz none other cause, then only foz the commoditie of the hauen, being doubtlesse one of the fayzest in that Ocean, and therefoze it is lykely that many shyppes should resoyte thyther foz merchandies. The region is not euery where fruitefull, yet hath it sufficient of wheate and flesh, and but little wood. They haue plentie of foules, as in *Calecut*: but the Popingays are much fayzer. There is also founde *Sandalum*, and Tynne. Lykewyse Elephantes, hoyses, sheepe, kyne, Pardalles, Busles, Peacockes, and many other beastes, and foules. They haue but fewe fruites, and therefoze there is no merchandies to be solde but spices and silke. The people are of blackyshe ashe colour. Theyz apparell is like to the Mahumetans of the citie *Memphis*, otherwise named *Cayr*, *Alchayr*, oz *Babylon* of *Nilus*. They haue very large fozeheades, rounde eyes, and flatte noses. It is dangerous there to goe abzode in the night, the inhabitantes are so giuen to murder and robbery, foz they kill one another lyke dogges, and therefoze the merchantes remayne in their shyppes all the nyght. The people are fierce, of cupll condition, and vnruly, foz they will obey to no gouernour, being altogeather giuen to sedition and rebellion, and therefoze say vnto theyz gouernours, that they will fozsake the countrey, if they strpue to bynde them to ozder, whiche they say the moze boldly, bycause they are neare vnto the sea, and may easily departe into other places. Foz these causes, we spent no long tyme here: but hyzing a Bzigantine, we sayled to the Ilande of *Sumatra*, where in fewe dayes saylyng, we arryued at a citie of the Ilande named *Pyder*, distaunt about fourescoze myles from the continent oz firme lande.

Popingayes.
Sandalum.
Tyn.

Spices and silke.

Vnruly people.

Anarchia.

Chini oz China.

The Ilande of *Sumetra* or *Taprobana*.

Of

Of the Ilande of Sumatra, or Taprobana. Cap. 18.

WE haue sayd here before that the Ilande of *Sumatra*, conteyneth in circuite fyue hundred myles. The citie where we fyrst arryued in the Iland, is named *Pider*, hauyng a very fayre port. I beleeue beryll this Ilande to be *Taprobana*, as also most autours do agree. It is gouerned by foure kynges, and all Idolaters, in fashions, apparell, and maner of lyuyng, not muche differyng from the kyng of *Tarnassari*. The women burne them selues after the death of theyr husbandes, as do they of whom we haue spoken before. They are of whityshe coloure, with large foreheades, rounde eyes, and of brasyll colour. They weare theyr heare long, and haue very brode and flatte noses, and are of despicable stature. Iustice is there well obserued. Their mony is of golde, syluer, and tynne. The golde coyne, hath on the one syde, the grauen head of a deuyl: and on the other syde, a wagon or charrette drawen with Elephantes. The syluer mony hath the lyke coyne: tenne of these, are valued for one of golde. But of the tynne coyne .xxv. make the value of one of golde. Here are seene more Elephantes, bygger, and fayrer then in any other place that I haue been. This people hath no experience of warres, but are geuen altogeather to gaynes and merchandies. They are hospitable, and entertayne strangers frendly.

The Ilande of Samatra or Samotra.

Foure kynges in one Iland.

Women burne them selues.

Iustice.

Coyned mony of golde, syluer, and tynne.

Elephantes.

Of an other kynde of Pepper. Also of sylke, and the precious gumme called Laserpitium, or Belzoe. Cap. 19.

IN the sayde Iland is a kynde of long Pepper in great abundance. Pepper in theyr language, is called *Molaga*, & is much longer & whiter then that which is brought hither: yet lighter & hotter: it is sold there not by weight, but by measure as wheat with vs. It is there in so great abundaunce, that there is caryed from hence yeerely twentie shyppes laden with Pepper. This is caryed to *Cathay*, and is there well solde, by reason of the coldnesse

Long Pepper.

Cathay or Catai a colde region.

neſſe of the region. The tree that beareth this kynde of pepper, hath a greater body, and larger and fatter leaues, then the pepper tree of *Calecut*. This Ilande beareth also plentie of ſpike, whiche for the moſt parte, is made after our maner. There is an other ſorte, which the trees bryng fooryth of them ſelues in the wooddes and feeldes, without menage or dreſſyng: but this is wooꝛſe then the other. Here also groweth the *Laſer* tree, whiche bryngeth foꝛth the precious gumme named *Laſerpitium* or *Belzæ*, as the inhabitantes and merchauntes tolde vs: but because I haue not ſeene it, I wyll ſpeake no moꝛe of it.

Spike of the trees.

Laſerpitium or Belzæ.

Of three ſortes of the tree of Aloes, Cap. 20.

FOꝛaſmuch as variette delighteth, and the wel diſpoſed mind can neuer be ſatiate with contemplation of the marueylous and ſundꝛy wooꝛkes of God in nature, therfoꝛe that the reader may take the moꝛe pleaſure, oꝛ at the leaſt feele leſſe tedioulneſſe in the reading of theſe thynges, I haue thought good to wꝛyte ſomewhat moꝛe of ſuche thynges as I haue ſeene. You ſhall therefoꝛe vnderſtande, that there is no great plentie of true *Aloes* oꝛ *Laſerpitium* bꝛought to vs, becauſe it is bꝛought hyther from the furtheſt partes of the woꝛlde. Vnderſtande furthermoꝛe, that there are thꝛee kyndes oꝛ ſoꝛtes of *Aloes*, greatly differyng in goodneſſe. The perfecteſt, they call *Calampat*, whiche the afoꝛeſaide Ilande bꝛyngeth not foꝛth: But it is bꝛought from the citie of *Sarnau*, not farre from the place where the ſayde *Aloes Calampat* is engendꝛed, as the Chꝛiſtian merchauntes oꝛ companions tolde vs. There is an other kynde of *Aloes*, named *Iuba* (oꝛ *Luba*) bꝛought hyther by this ryuer, I knowe not from whence. The thꝛid kynd, is named *Bochor*. The ſaide Chꝛiſtian merchants tolde vs alſo, that none of the fyꝛſt and beſt kynde of *Aloes* is bꝛought vnto vs, becauſe it commeth from the kyngdomes of *Cathay*, *Chini*, *Macym*, *Sarnau*, and *Grauay*, countreys muche rycher then ours, hauyng muche greater abundance of golde, and kynges of greater power and rycheſſe then are ours: And alſo that the ſayde kynges take great pleaſure in ſuch kynd of ſweete ſauoures, and vſe them muche moꝛe then our pꝛinces do:

Litle true Aloes oꝛ Laſerpitium.

Sarnau.

Cathay, and other rych countreys.

do : So that by this meanes, the true kynde of *Aloes* is woorth euen in the citie of *Sarnau*, tenne crownes the pounde weyght.

Howe the gummes of Aloes and Laserpitium, are proued. Cap. 21.

WE came by certaine experience to the knowledge of the two sweete gummes of *Aloes* and *Laserpitium*, as we were taught by the sayd Christian merchants our companyons: For one of them had a certayne portion of them both, and had of that best sorte of *Aloes*, named *Calampat*, about the quantitie of two ounces: Of the which, my companion takyng a peece in his hande, and holdyng it fast and close for the space that one may thryse saye the Psalme of *Miserere mei Deus*, the *Aloes* thereby beyng heat, at the openyng of his hande gaue a sauoure of incredible sweetenesse, and suche as I neuer felte of any other thyng. He tooke also of the common *Laserpitium* or *Belzœ*, the quantitie of a Walnutte, and agayne halfe a pounde of that whiche commeth from the citie of *Sarnau*, to compare the one to the other: And so puttyng them both in sundry chafyng dyshes, with burnyng coles in a close chamber, that whiche was of the byggnesse of a Walnutte, in sweete sauour far exceeded the other which was halfe a pounde in weight, and woulde doubtlesse so haue done though it had ben of two pounde weight. In this region is also founde *Lacca*, or *Lacta*, wherewith is made a shynyng redde colour. It is the gumme of a tree, not muche vnlyke our Walnutte tree. There are also sundrye kindes of beastes, suche as we haue.

Aloes of very sweete sauour.

The proofe of Laserpitium.

Lacca, merchantes ware.

Of diuers merchantes in the Ilande of Sumatra, or Taprobana. Cap. 22.

IN the sayde citie of *Pyder*, in the Ilande of *Sumatra*, I sawe many curious woorkes, very artificially wrought, as fyne Cophines or baskets, garnished with golde, solde for two crownes the peece: I sawe also there in one streate fyue hundred exchangers:

exchangers: there are so many bankers. Hither, as to a famous mart, resort innumerable merchantes. The inhabitantes weare Mantels of sylke, and Syndone, made of Bombasine. The region hath plentie of wood, and trees, very commodious to make such shippes as they cal *Gunchos*, hauyng three masses, two fore partes, and also two sternes or gouernals on both sydes. When they sayle in the Ocean, and haue nowe geuen wynde to the sayles, yf afterwarde it shalbe needefull to haue more sayles, not changyng the fyrst, they go backward without turnyng the ship, and vsyng only one mast. They are most expert swymmers, and haue skyll to make fyre in an instant. Their houses are of stone, and very lowe. In the place af couerynges or tyles, they vse the skynnes or hydes of a fyshe, called *Tartaruca*, founde in that sea of *India*. I saw so hugious a hyde of this monster, that it wayed a hundred & three poundes. I sawe there also great teeth of Elephantes, as one waying three hundred & thirtie pounde weight. Lykewise Serpentes of incredible bygnesse, and muche bygger then in *Calecut*. Here our companions, the Christian merchants, for affayres they had to do other wayes, woulde haue taken their leaue of vs. Then my companion the Persian spake vnto them in this maner: Although (my frendes) I am not your countreyman (yet beyng all brethren, and the children of Adam) I take God to witnesse that I loue you as yf you were myne owne brethren, begotten of the same parentes: and therfore, consyderyng how frendly we haue kept company togeather so long tyme, I assure you I can not, without great greefe of mynde, beare your departyng from vs. And although you woulde depart from me, wyll you nowe forsake this my companion, a man of your fayth and religion? Then sayde the Christians, Howe hath this man, beyng no Persian, receyued our fayth? Then sayde my companion, Truely he is now a Persian, and was once bought at Ierusalem. When the Christians hearde the holy name of Ierusalem, they lyfted vp theyr handes to heauen, and prostratyng themselues on the grounde, kyssed it thryse: then rysyng, they asked him of what age I was, when I was brought from Ierusalem. Of the age of fyfteene yeeres sayde my companion. Then sayde they agayne, He may then remember his countrey. Then answered my companion, He dooth remember it in deede, and I haue

Shyppes of a straunge fashion.

Swymmers.

Great hydes of fyshes.

Great teeth of Elephantes.

Great Serpentes.

The name of Hierusalem in reuerence.

haue taken great pleasure of suche thynges as he hath tolde me of his countrye. Then sayde the merchauntes, Although of long time we haue desyred to returne to our countrey, beyng moze then thzee hundzed myles hence, neuertheleſſe at your request we wil beare you company to the place whyther you desyze to go. Pzeparyng therefoze all thynges parteynyng to the voyage, we tooke shyppyng, and in .xv. dayes saylyng, came to an Ilande named *Bandan*.

Of the Ilande of Bandan, where Nuttemegs and Mace are founde. Cap. 23.

IN this voyage to the Ilande of *Bandan* we founde about .xx. Ilandes, some inhabited, and some desarte. This Ilande is very saluage, barren, and verylowe, and conteyneth a hundzed myles in circuite. It hath neyther kyng noz gouernour, but is inhabited with a rascall and beastly kynde of men, lyuyng without lawe, ozder, oz gouerment. They haue lowe houses, oz rather cotages of wood, rysyng but litle from the ground. Their apparell is onely a sherte. They go bareheadded and barefooted, with theyz heare hangyng downe, and haue bzode and rounde fozheaddes. They are of coloure inclynyng to whyte, and of despicable stature. They are Idolaters, and wooze then are the inhabitantes of *Calecut*, called *Poliar*, and *Hyrana*. They are also of dull wytte and litle strength, and in kynde of lyuyng altogeather beastly. The soyle beareth no fruites, excepte onely Nuttemegges: the bodye of the Nuttemegge tree, is lyke to the bodye of a Peache tree, and hath lyke bzanches and leaues, but the leaues are somewhat narower. Befoze these Nuttes come to rypenesse, the Mace flozysheth lyke vnto a redde rose: but when the Nutte waxeth rype, the Mace closeth it selfe and embraseth the Nutte and shel, and are so geathered togeather without ozder oz distribution, by scamblyng, catche that catche may, foz ẏ al things are there common. The tree yeeldeth fruite of his owne fruitefulnesse, without graffyng oz cuttyng, oz any other art. These Nuttes are solde by weyght, and .xxvi. pounde weyght, is solde foz the value of thzee souses (that is) halfe a Carline

Anarchia.

Lawlesse people.

Idolaters.

The Nuttemegge tree.

Mace.

All thynges common.

Nuttemegges of small price.

The lawe of nature.

Carline, of such money as is vsed in *Calecut*. This people hath none other order of iustice, then by the lawe of nature, and therfore they lyue without such contentions as proceede of thyne and myne. When we had been heere three dayes, my companion asked the Christian merchantes, where was the region whiche brought foorth Cloues? They answered, That Cloues were founde in an Ilande named *Monoch*, sixe dayes saylyng from thence. Therfore proceedyng on our voyage, we came thyther in the space of seuen dayes.

Of the Ilande of *Monoth*, where Cloues growe. Cap. 24.

These Ilandes of spyces, are called *Moluccæ*, and in them is seene the rare byrde named *Manucodiata*, *or paradisea*.

THis Ilande is very narowe, yet in length exceedeth the Ilande of *Bandan*. The inhabitaunces are much worse then they of *Bandan*: for, were it not only for mans shape, they should in maner differ nothyng from beastes. Their colour is whyter, and the region colder. This Ilande bryngeth foorth Cloues, as do also many other litle and desolate Ilandes lying about it. The body of this tree, is not muche vnlyke the Boxe tree, and hath leaues lyke vnto the Cinamome tree, but rounder, and almost lyke the Bay leafe. When they waxe rype, the inhabitauntes beate them downe with reedes, layng fyrst mattes vnder the trees. The grounde is sandie, and the region so low vnder the Horizon, that the North starre can not be seene there. They sell Cloues for the double price that Nutmegs are solde, & sel them by measure: for they are vtterly without knowledge of weyghtes.

The Cloue tree.

Cloues dearer then Nutmegs.

Of the Iland of Bornei. Cap. 25.

AS we were together talkyng of our voyages, the Christian merchantes spake vnto me in this maner. Our dearly beloued freende, forasmuch as by the grace of God, we are come thus farre in safetie, yf it please you, we wyl go see one of the fayrest Ilandes in the worlde, and beryrche, and suche as I beleeue you neuer sawe: but we must fyrst go to an other Ilande named *Bornei*, for there shal we haue bygger vessels: for we must needes passe a deepe and rough sea. Then sayde my companion, Do as shall please you, for we are contented to go with

The Ilande of Spaua.

Bornei.

with you. Therefore hyring a greater Foyst, we directed our iorney to that Iland both by daye and nyght, sayling alway southwarde: By the way we passed foorth the tyme with pleasant talke. The merchaunt men asked me many thynges of the ceremonyes and solennities of the Christian religion vsed among vs: And when I made mention of the *Veronica* (commonly called the Vernacle of the face of Chryst) and of the heads of Peter and Paule the chiefest of the Apostles, and also of many other saintes, they aduertysed me secretly, that if I woulde go with them, I shoulde become a great man for the knowledge of suche great thynges. But beyng deterred by the greatnesse of the iorney, & fearyng that then I should neuer haue come home, I refused to go with them. At the length we came to the Iland of *Bornei*, distant from *Monoch* about two hundred myles, and is somewhat bygger, but muche lower beneath the Horizon or Equinoctiall. The inhabitantes are Idolaters, of sharpe wyt, and maner of lyuyng not greatly to be discommended. Their colour inclyneth more to whytenesse. They weare not all one maner of apparell, for some weare shirtes of bombasine cloth, other mantells of chamlet, and other also sharpe cappes of red coloure. They obserue iustice and good order. This Iland yeeldeth verely great abundaunce of *Camphora*, which they sayd to be the gumme of a tree: but I dare not affyrme it, because I haue not seene it. Here my companyon hyred a lyght shyppe or barke for a hundred pecces of golde.

Veronica or Vernacle.

The headdes of Peter and Paule.

The Iland of *Bornei*.

Idolaters.

Camphora.

Of the obseruations vsed in the nauigation to the Iland of Giaua. Cap. 26.

After that we had made prouision of vittayles sufficient for the voyage, we directed our iorney to the Iland of *Giaua*, and came thyther in the space of fyue dayes, saylyng euer towarde the south. Our Pilot vsed the maryners bore or compasse, with also the lode stone and sea carde, after the maner of ours. Therefore when my companyon sawe that the Septentrions or north starres coulde not be seene there, he asked the Christians howe they could sayle on that sea without the guide of the north star: & asked also, by what other star they were guided:

The north star.

and

The

The starres about the pole Antartike.

The lode stone serueth in the south regions beyonde the Equinoctiall line.

Antipodes.

The Pilote aunswered, that the inhabitantes of these regions obserue principally fyue starres, and also one other starre, opposite or directlye contrary to the Septentrions or North starres, whereby they gouerned their viages in these regions: and sayd, that he also vsed the lode stone, because it euer mooueth to the North: and sayde furthermore, that on the other syde of that Ilande, is a certayne people, whiche in saylyng obserue certayne starres, contrary to the Septentrions, for that the sayde people are *Antipodes* to them of *Europa Sarmatiæ*, and that they inhabite as colde a region and climat, and as neare vnto the pole Antartike, as is manifest by the shortnesse of the day, beyng but foure houres long in their wynter: of whiche talke we tooke great pleasure.

Of the Ilande of Gyaua, and the maners of the people. Cap. 27.

Idolaters.

The Image of the deuyll.

Spike of trees, Smaragdes. Golde. Copper.

Whyte men good people.

Apyes and foules.

THerfore proceedyng on our iourney fyue dayes saylyng, we came to the sayde Ilande, beyng very great & large, and hauyng in it many kyngdomes, and kynges, beyng all Idolaters, and of diuers maners of lyuyng: for some of them honor Idolles, after the maner of *Calecut*: some also honor the Sonne, and some the Moone: other take Kyne for their Idolles: and some, the fyrst thyng that they meete in the mornyng, take for the Idol of that day: other also honor the picture or similitude of the deuyll. This Ilande bryngeth foorth spike, whiche groweth of it selfe in the woodes, and also the fayrest Smaragdes or Emeraldes that are in the world: there is likewyse plentie of Golde, and Copper. The soyle is fruitefull of Corne, and all sortes of fruites, as in the citie of *Calecut*. There is great abundance of flesshe of all sortes, as with vs. The inhabitantes are faythfull, and true dealyng people: they are of the same colour and stature that we bee, but haue larger foreheades, very great eyes, and of byasyll or redde colour, and flatte noses, wearyng theyr heare long. There is a great multitude of foules and birdes, but vnlyke vnto ours, except Peacockes, Turtle dooue, and Crowes. They greatly obserue iustice, and good order. For theyr apparel they vse mantels, or clokes, of Bombasine cloth, or sylke, or Chamlet, euer wearyng out one arme. They vse no coates of fence, or armure, because they haue no warres: but

but when they traueyle on the sea, they vse bowes, and impoysoned arrowes made of Reedes. They vse also certayne long and holowe staues (which we call Trunkes) through the which after our maner, they blowe little arrowes, so infected with poyson, that if they rayse neuer so little blood, death foloweth incontinent. They haue no Gunnes or other ingines. They eate all sortes of flesshe, fysshe, and fruites: yet some feede of one kynde of meate, and other of other, as them listeth.

Impoysoned arrowes.

Trunkes.

Of theyr cruell maners in selling their parentes to the Anthropophagi to be eaten. Cap. 28.

Anthropophagi eate mans flesshe. In the West India, they are called Caniballes.

The inhabitantes of the sayd Ilande (they I meane which feede of flesshe) when they see theyr parentes so feeble by age, that they serue for no vse, but are tedious both to themselues and other, they bryng them to the market or fayre, and sell them to the *Anthropophagi*, which vse to eate mans flesshe. They that buye them, kyll them out of hande & eate them. Likewyse when any young person among them, falleth into any suche sickenesse, that by the iudgement of theyr wyse men he can not escape, to the ende that he should not vnprofitably lynger in paynes, his brethren and kynsfolkes sell hym to the *Anthropophagi*. When my companion, beyng deterted with these cruell maners, shewed in countenance that he detested this horrible inhumanitie, a certayne merchaunt of the inhabitantes sayde thus vnto hym: O Persians, no sacrifice can redeeme your sinnes, in that you giue so fayre flesshe to the wooymes to be eaten. Therfore abhorryng these beastly maners, we returned to our shyppe, not intendyng any longer to tarry there.

A straunge pittie.

Rather to butchers then wooymes.

Of the strange course of the sunne in the Iland of Gyaua. Cap. 29.

Whyle we remayned here, the Christian merchantes, euer desirous to shewe vs new and strange thinges, whiche we myght declare at our returne into our countreys, sayde thus vnto vs, My friendes, make reporte in your countrey of a straunge thyng whiche I will

nowe shewe you . Beholde (sayde they) the place of the Sunne in the South at hygh noone, and thereby consider howe farre this region is from your countrey . We then behelde the Sunne to runne toward the ryght hand: and agayne,to shewe or marke a sphere,about two handfuls bryode,towarde the lefte hand,which doubtlesse seemed to vs bery straunge . And this (as they saye) is euer seene in the moneth of July . But I nowe scarsely beare this in mynd,for I there forgot euen the names of our monthes. But this is certayne, that in this region, the tymes and seasons of the yeeres are lyke vnto ours,and of lyke temperature of heat and colde . Here my companion bought two fayre Emeraldes for a thousande peeces of golde, and also two gelded children for two hundred peeces of golde : for heere are certayne merchantes that buy none other ware,then such gelded children.

Emeraldes of great price.

Gelded children.

Of our returne from the Ilande of Gyaua. Cap. 30.

AFter that we had remayned heere fyftiene dayes,wery of the maners of the inhabitantes,and of the coldnesse of the countrey that tyme of the yeere, we determyned to proceede no further : for this cause also, that there remayned in maner none other region woorthie to be seene, and therefore hyring a lyght shyp,we departed from thence, sayling Eastwarde for the space of fyftiene dayes, and came at the length to the citie of *Melacha*, where remayning three dayes, we tooke our leaue of our companions the Christian merchauntes, with friendly embrasinges,and sorowfull myndes. Which departure (I take God to witnesse) greeued me so sore, that if I had been a single man without wyfe and children, I would neuer haue forsaken suche friendly men . We therefore departed,and they remayned there, saying that they would shortly returne to the citie of *Sana*: and we takyng a Foist, returned to the citie of *Cyromandel* . By the way, the gouernour of the shyp tolde vs, that about the Ilandes of *Gyaua* and *Taprobana*, there are aboue seuen thousande little Ilandes . When we arryued at *Melacha*,

Sana.

Seuen thousande Ilandes.

Malacha or Melacha.

my

my companion bought as muche ſpices, ſweete ſauours, and ſilke, as coſt him fyue thouſande peeces of golde: But we came not to the citie of *Gyromandel* in leſſe ſpace then fyftiene dayes ſaylyng. There we vnladed our Foiſt, and after we had remayned there twentie dayes, hyryng an other Foiſt, we came at the length to the citie of *Colon*, where we founde xxii. Chriſtians, of the realme of Portugale. And fearyng that they would take me for ſome eſpion, I began to imagine howe I myght depart from thence: But ſeeyng that they were ſo fewe in number, I chaunged my purpoſe, eſpecially for that there were many merchaunt Mahumetans whiche knewe that I had been at *Mecha*, to ſee the bodie of Mahumet. But within the ſpace of twelue dayes, we came to *Calecut* by the ryuer.

Colon.

Portugales.

Agayne of the citie of Calecut after our returne thyther. Cap. 31.

AFter ſo many long and daungerous peregrinations and viages, in the whiche we haue been partly ſatiſfied of our deſyre, and partly weeryed by many ſuche occaſions of inconueniences as chaunce in the way (as they can well conſider that haue been vſed to ſuche long iourneyes) we determyned to proceede no further, but to thynke only of our ſafe returne into our natiue countrey, and therefore I will breefely declare what chaunced to me in the way: the rather that other men, takyng example by my traueyles, may knowe the better howe to gouerne them ſelues in the lyke, if lyke ardent affection ſhal moue them to take ſuche viages in hande, as I am ſure noble ſpirites of many valiant men will moue them thereto. Therefore enteryng into the citie of *Calecut*, we founde there two Chriſtians, borne in the citie of *Milan*, the one named *Iohn Maria*, and the other *Peter Antonie*. Theſe were Jewellers, and came from Portugale with the kinges licence to buye precious ſtones. When I had founde theſe men, I reioyced more then I am able to expreſſe: for we went naked after the maner of the inhabitantes. At our fyrſt meetyng, ſeeyng them to bee whyte men,

Two Chriſtians of Milan in Calecut.

I asked them if they were Christians. They sayde, yea. Then sayde I, that I was also a Christian, by the grace of God. Then takyng me by the hande, they brought me to theyr house, where for ioye of our meetyng, we could scarsely satisfie our selues with teares, embrasynges, and kyssyng: for it seemed nowe to mee a straunge thyng to heare men speake myne owne language, or to speake it my selfe. Shortly after, I asked them if they were in fauour with the kyng of *Calecut*. We are (sayde they) in great fauour with him, and very familier. Then againe I asked them what they were mynded to doe. We desyre (sayde they) to returne to our countrey, but we knowe not the meanes howe. Then sayde I, Returne the same way that you came. Naye (sayde they) that may not bee: for we are fledde from the *Portugales*, bycause we haue made many peeces of great ordinaunce, and other Gunnes for the Kyng of *Calecut*, and therefore we haue good cause to feare, and nowe especially, for that the nauie of *Portugale* will shortly be heere. I answered, that if I myght escape to the citie of *Canonor*, I doubted not but that I would geat theyr pardon of the gouernour of the Nauie. There is small hope thereof (sayde they) we are so famous and well knowen to many other kynges in the way whiche fauour the *Portugales*, and laye wayte to take vs, for wee haue made more then foure hundred Gunnes, little and great, and therefore wee are out of all hope to escape that way. In whiche theyr talke, I perceyued howe fearefull a thyng is a giltie conscience, and called to remembraunce the sayeing of the Poet.

The Christians haue made a rodde for their owne arse.

The Nauie of Portugale.

Multa malè timeo, quia feci multa proteruè. That is, I feare muche euyll, bycause I haue done muche euyll. For they had not only made many suche peeces of artillerie for the infidelles, to the great domage of Christians, and contempte of the holy name of Christ and his religion, but had also taught the Idolatours both the makyng and vse of them. And at my beyng there, I sawe them gyue a modell or moulde to certayne Idolatours, whereby they myght make brasen peeces, of suche bygnesse, that one may receyue the charge of a hundred and fyue Tankardes (*Cantaros*) of pouder.

A great peece of ordinaunce.

At

At the same tyme also, there was a Iewe, which had made a very fayre Brigantine, and foure great peeces of artillerie of Iron. But god shortly after gaue him his due reward: for when he went to washe him in the ryuer, he was drowned. But to returne to our sayde Christians. God is my witnesse howe earnestly I persuaded them, neuer thereafter to make any more artillerie or Gunnes, to the great contempt and indignation of God, and detriment of our holy fayth. When I had sayde these woordes, the teares fell from the eyes of *Peter Antonie*. But *Iohn Maria* (who perhappes had not so great desire to returne to his countrey) said that it was all one to him, to dye there, or in the citie of Rome: and that God knewe what he had decreed of him. Within two dayes after, I returned to my companion, who marueyled where I had been, fearing lest I had ben eyther sicke, or departed. I tolde him that I was all nyght in the Temple, lest he should suspecte my great familiaritie with the Christians.

A Iewe that made Gunnes and shyppes, was drowned.

Repentaunce.

Predestination.

Of the commyng of the Portugale shippes, to the citie of Canonor. Cap. 32.

WHyle I remayned here in the lodging of my companion, there came to him two *Persian* merchants from the citie of *Canonor*, saying that they had som euyll newes to tell him: wherwith seemyng to be somewhat troubled, he asked what was the matter? There are come (sayde they) twelue shyppes of Portugale, which we haue seene with our eyes. Then sayde he, What maner of men are those? They are (sayd the *Persians*) Christians, armed with harnesse of shining Iron, and haue builded an inexpugnable fortresse in the citie of *Canonor*. My companion hearyng those woordes, turned to me, and sayde, Lodouicke, what maner of men are the Portugales? To whom I answered, that they were a nation of mischeeuous people, gyuen to none other thyng then piracie and robbyng on the sea. He was not so sorie to heare this, as I was glad of theyr commyng.

A fortresse of the Portugales in the citie of *Canonor*.

How I playde the Phisitian, and counterfect holinesse, lest by my colour I should be taken for a spye for the Portugales, before I could come to their ships. Cap. 33.

Hipocrisie.

AFter the rumor was spred of the *Portugales* arryuyng, I began to thinke what was best to be done, and thought nothyng more safe and easie among this people, then to geat some opinion of holinesse by hipocrisie, and therefore all the day tyme, I lurked in the Temple, liuyng without meate, as all the people thought: but in the nyght, I ate flesh in the house of *Peter Antonie*, and *Iohn Maria*. And by this meanes, none had other opinion of me, but that I was a Sainct, and therfore might after a fewe dayes goe abrode in the citie without suspition: and to helpe the matter withall, it chanced in the meane tyme, that a certaine rich Mahumetan of the citie of *Calecut* was very sicke, hauing his belly so bounde, that he could not doe the necessities of nature. And bycause he was a friende to my companion, and his disease increased, he asked me if I had any skyll in phisicke? I sayde, that my father was a Phisitian, and that I had learned many things of him by experience. Then I pray you (sayd he) do what you can to helpe this my friend. We went therfore togeather to the sicke man, whom my companion asked where he felt him selfe most grieued. In my head (sayde he) and my stomake, hauyng also my belly so sore bounde, that I can not goe to the stoole. Then my companion agayne in his presence, desired me to consider his infirmitie, and take vpon me to minister vnto him some medicine. My companion had tolde me before, that he was a great eater and drinker. Therefore, takyng him by the hande, and feelyng his pulse, I sayde that his stomacke and bowelles were full of choler, by reason of surfetyng, and therefore that it shoulde be good for him to take a glister. Then sayde the sicke man, Doe what you wil, I wil abyde your order. Then made I a glister of egges, salt, and suger, adding also butter and certayne hearbes, such as came first to my memorie vpon the sodayne, and in the space of a day and nyght, I gaue him fyue glisters, but all in vayne: for beside the paynes which he endured, he was rather woorse then better, insomuche that it repented me of myne enterprise:

A Sainct by hipocrisie.

A glister.

pzise: But it was nowe best to set a good face on the matter, and attempte an other way, but the laste errour was woozse then the first. Yet still putting him in good hope, I vsed him thus. I made him lye grouelyng on his belly, & then tying coꝛdes on his feete, I rayled vp the hynder partes of his body, so that he rested only vppon his bꝛest and handes, and as he laye, ministred a glyster vnto him, and let him so hang foꝛ the space of halfe an houre. My companion beholding this straunge kynde of pꝛactise, sayde vnto me, Lodouike, is this the maner of mynistring to sicke folkes in your countrey? It is, sayde I, yet neuer but in case of extremitie. Then smylyng, he sayde, I beleeue it will heale him one way oꝛ an other. In the meane tyme the miserable man cryed, saying in his language, It is enough, it is enough, foꝛ my soule now departeth. We comfoꝛted him, desiryng him to haue pattence yet a whyle. In maner immediately after, his belly was losed, and auoyded matter as if it had been out of a gutter. Then when wee had let downe his bodie, hee auoyded as muche as myght almost fyll a payle, and shoꝛtly after, the payne of his head and stomake, and also the feuer, ceassed: whereof we were all very glad. And by this aduenturous cure, I began to bee in great credite among them, by the meanes also of my counterfect holinesse, and therefoꝛe whereas he would haue giuen me tenne peeces of golde, I would take but only two, and gaue them also incontinent to the pooꝛe. These sely soules beleeued so much in my hypocrisie (which I shewed no lesse in countenaunce and grauitie, foꝛbearyng also openly to eate flesh) that well was he that myght haue me in his house, oꝛ kysse my handes and feete. The repoꝛte also of my companion, affyrmyng that he mette with me first at *Mecha*, where I was to see the bodie of the holy Pꝛophet Mahumet, encreased greatly (and specially among the Mahumetans) the opinion they had conceiued of my holinesse. But in the meane tyme, secretly in the darke nyght, I resoꝛted pꝛiuily to the afoꝛesayde Chꝛistians, by whom beyng aduertised that twelue of the Poꝛtugale shyppes were nowe arryued at *Canonor*, I considered that nowe woulde bee good opoꝛtunitie to escape: And therefoꝛe remaynyng there yet seuen dayes, I learned all that I coulde of

A straunge mistring of a glister.

More good happe then cunnyng.

Sely soules.

the preparations which the kyng of *Calecut* and his people made against the Portugales, both touching his army, artillerie, and other thinges parteynyng to the warres. But before I come to speake of my maner of departing, it wil here not be from the purpose, to declare howe the Mahumetans call the people to theyr churches, and of theyr maner of praying.

Howe the Mahumetan prieſtes call the people to theyr Churches, Cap. 34.

Trumpettes in the ſteede of belles.

Not all that ſay, Lord, Lord, &c.

Some of them ſay that he is ryſen.

Theyr prieſtes and other miniſters of the Temple (of the which there is a great number) obſerue this maner to call the people to the church. Certayne of theſe aſcende to the higheſt Tower of the Temple, where firſt blowing three or foure brasen Trumpets, in the ſteede of belles, they crye to the people with a loude voyce, to reſorte to the Temple to prayers. Then ſtopping one eare with their finger, they ſay in theyr owne language theſe woordes: *Alla u eccubar.* That is to ſay, God is great. And againe, God is great: Come to the Temple of the great God, Come to pray to the great God: God is great, God is great, God was, God is, Mahumet the meſſenger of God ſhal ryſe. They inuited me alſo to the Temple, and deſired me to pray to God for the Mahumetans, whiche I dyd outwardly, but of much other meaning then they dyd.

Of the maner of praying among the Mahumetans, Cap. 35.

God the father. The virgin Marie.

They haue certaine dayly and vſuall prayers, as we haue, in the which they call God their father, and vouchſafe to name the virgin Marie, full of grace. They pray not before they haue ben waſhed. Then ſtanding in order, after the prieſt hath prayed, they pray alſo in their own language. Here to my companion, I fayned my ſelfe ſicke, & founde diuers other occaſions to depart from thence, and to go to *Canonor*. Well ſayd he, It ſhall not be long ere I come thyther to you, & in the meane tyme, with my letters I will commend you there to a friend and countrey man of myne, a riche merchant, who for my ſake ſhall giue you good intertaynement.

What

VVhat subtiltie I vsed to depart from Calecut, to go to the Portugales. Cap. 36.

THe daye before I departed from thence, I made the sayd Christians priuie of my intente. In the meane tyme my companyon ioyned me in company with two other Persian merchauntes, whiche were mynded also to go to *Canonor*: for there was in the citie of *Calecut* many merchauntes of *Persia*, *Syria*, and *Turchia*. Therefore the fyrst day of December, I, with the other two Persians, hyrynge a lyght shyppe, gaue wynde to our sayles to proceede on our voyage. But see what chaunced suddenly, we had scarsely sayled as farre as a man may shoote an arrowe, but foure of the inhabitantes of the order of them whiche they call *Naeros* (of whom we haue spoken before) cryed to the gouernour of the shyp to drawe neare the lande in the kynges name. When they vnderstode who we were, they asked why they caryed me away without makyng the kyng priuie thereto? Then sayde the Persians, This Mahumetan that is heere with vs, is a holy man, and goeth in our company to the citie of *Canonor*. They aunsweared, that they knewe me to be a man that had wrought myracles. Neuertheless, that because I could speake the language of ỹ Portugalles, it was to be suspected least I should bewraye theyr secretes to them, and tell them of the nauie and armye whiche the kyng prepared agaynst the Portugales, and therefore commaunded the gouernour of the shyppe to cary vs no further. He obeyed theyr commaundement, and left vs on the shore. Then sayde one of the Persians, Let vs returne to *Calecut*. To whom I aunsweared, Take heede what you do, for so shall you be in danger to loose all your sylkes if it be knowen that you haue payde no custome to the kyng. Then sayde the other Persian, What then (by your aduise) is it best for vs to do? I aunswered, that it was best for vs to go some what further by the shore, vntyl we myght fynde some barke: whereunto they agreed. Therfore we, and our slaues laden with our fardells, went so .xii. myles along by the shore. But what feare I was in, in the meane season, I commytte to wyse men to iudge. But as God would,

Merchantes of Calecut.

Naeros are gentlemen of the kynges garde.

we

we founde there a poore fysher man with a boate, with whom we agreed to bryng vs to *Canonor*, where we arryued late in the euenyng. Incontinent we went to the merchaunt Persian, to whom I had letters of commendation from my companyon. The tenour of the letters was, that he shoulde receyue me into his house, and enterteyne me frendly, vntil his commyng: Also that whatsoeuer frendeshyp he shewed vnto me, he woulde ascribe it to be done vnto hym selfe: Furthermoze, that I was a holy man, and ioyned with hym in neere amitie and frendeshyp. When the merchaunt had redde the letters, he layde his hand on his head, and sayde vnto me, By this head you are welcome to me, and shall be here in safetie, and caused a good supper to be prepared for vs. After supper, the Persians sayde vnto me, Lette vs go walke to the sea syde. I agreed: and in shoze tyme we came to the place where the Portugales shyps laye at anker. I am not able to expresse the secrete ioye whiche I felte in my selfe at the syght of these shyppes. In the way, I marked well the place where the Portugales had buylded their fortresse, determynyng to come thyther the nexte daye.

Howe I fledde to the Portugales from the citie of Canonor. Cap. 37.

THe daye folowing, when I sawe best opportunitie, I went towarde the fortresse of the Portugales: and by the way, meetyng with two Portugales, in the Spanyshe tongue I asked them where was the fortresse of the Portugales. Then sayde they to me, Art thou a Christian? I am (sayde I) by the grace of God. Then sayde they agayne, From whence commest thou? From the citie of *Calecut* sayde I. Then come with vs (sayde they) for we wyll bryng thee to the gouernour. This gouernour was one maister *Laurentius*, sonne to the Viceroye. So I went with them to the fortresse, whiche is not past foure furlonges from the citie. At the tyme of our commyng, the gouernour had not yet dined. When I came to his presence, I fel downe on my knees, and prayed hym with al humilitie for Christes sake, to whom I was consecrated by baptisme, to haue compassion vpon me, and to delyuer me from the hands of those infidell dogges. When it was nowe noysed in the citie that I was

The Gouernoure of Portugales fortresse.

escaped

escaped to the Christians, there beganne a sturre and mutinie, in maner of a tumulte. Whiche when the gouernour understoode, commaũded al his Captaines, souldiers, & other officers, to place their artilerie, & order all thynges in redynesse, least the people in sudden rage should attempte any thing agaynst the fortresse. But al thynges were pacified in shorte tyme. Then the gouernour, takyng me by the hande, brought me into a certayne hall, and there demaunded of me, what the kyng and inhabitantes of *Calecut* imagined or deuised to do agaynst the Christians? I informed hym of all thynges, as farre as I knewe, hauyng diligently searched to understand all theyr doynges. When the gouernour was thus by me aduertysed of theyr secretes, he appoynted a galley to bryng me to the Viceroye, who was then in the citie of *Cucin*. The Captayne of the gallie, was named *Iohannes Seranus*. When the Viceroye saw me, he receiued me very fauourably. I certified hym also of al thynges: Saying furthermore vnto hym, that if I myght by his fauoure obteyne pardon and assurance for the sayde two Italians, *Peter Antonie* and *Iohn Maria*, which before had made artillarie for the infidel princes, I would procure that they shoulde returne to the Christians, and do them right good seruice, and that I was well assured, that they dyd that by constraint: Also ỹ they desyred none other thing then safe conduct and mony for theyr charges. He was glad of this, and graunted my request. Whereuppon within three dayes after, he sent me with letters to his sonne, the gouernour in the citie of *Canonor*, with commaundement to deliuer me as muche mony as shoulde suffice for the charges of the Christian explorators or espions of the citie of *Calecut*. I went therefore incontinent to *Canonor*, where I agreed with one of the idolatours (who for pouertie had gaged his wife & children) to cary letters to *Calecut* to *Iohn Maria* and *Peter Antonie*. The content of which letters was, that the Viceroye had graunted them pardon and safe conducte, and also mony for theyr charges: Aduertisyng them to make none priuie of this thyng, and especially to beware least it shoulde be knowen to theyr slaues or concubines (For eche of them had a concubine, a child, & a slaue) Furthermore to leaue al their goods behynd them, except thynges of great price, as mony & iewelles:

The Viceroye of the kyng of Portugall in India.

Concubines and slaues.

For

A Diamond of the price of xxvii. thousand crownes.

For they had a very fayre Diamond of the weyght of .xxxii. caractes, esteemed to be wooyth .xxvi. thousande crownes. They had also a pearle of the weyght of .xxiiii. caractes. Furthermoze, two thousande rubies: of the whiche, some were of the weyght of one caracte, and some of one and a halfe. They had also .lxiiii. bzaslettes, garnysshed with many iewelles: lykewyse in redye coyne, a thousand and fyue hundzed peeces of golde. But see what commeth of to much couetousnesse. Whyle they thought to haue saued all, they lost all, and theyr lyues therewith: For not contentyng them selues with the afozesayde ryches, they woulde needes also carye with them (notwithstandyng the aduertisement we had geuen them) foure Gunnes, thzee Munkeis, two Muskecattes, and two of those wheeles wherwith precious stones are polysshed. All whiche thynges, were the onely cause of theyr death: For whereas so many thynges coulde not be secretly conueyed, one of theyr slaues certified the kyng of *Calecut* heereof, who at the fyrst woulde scarsely beleeue it, for the good opinion he had conceyued of them: Yet sent foure of his garde (of them whiche are called *Naery*) to knowe if it were true. But the slaue, perceyuyng that the kyng woulde deale fauourably with them, went to the hygh priest or Bishop of the sayth of the Mahumetans (whom they call *Cady*) and tolde hym all that before he had tolde the kyng of *Calecut*: Addyng moze ouer, that the sayde Chzistians had disclosed theyr secretes to the Portugales. When the Bishop vnderstode these thynges, he called a counsayle of all the Mahumetan merchauntes, wyllyng them, of the common treasurie, to geue a hundzed peeces of golde to the kyng of *Gioghi* (who was then at *Calecut*) and to speake to hym in this maner. It is not vnknowen to you (most noble prince) howe a fewe yeeres past, when your maiestie came hither, we receiued you with moze honozable entertetnement then we are nowe able to do: The cause whereof, is no lacke of good wyl or knowledge of our deuetie towarde your hygbnesse, but rather the great and manyfolde iniuries and oppzessions whiche we haue sustteyned, and do dayely sustteyne by our mozial enimies the Chzistians, whereof we haue, at this present, example of two Chzistian traytozs of this citie, whiche haue disclosed to the Portugales al our secretes, and therefoze we make most humble

Beware of couetousnesse.

The Bishop of the Mahumetans.

The Mahumetans conspire the death of the Chzistians.

An Oration.

petition

petition vnto you to take of vs a hundred peeces of golde, to commaund them to be slayne. When the kyng of *Gioghi* hearde these woords, he consented to theyr petition, and forthwith appoynted two hundred men to commyt the murder: And that they might be the lesse suspected of the Christians, meanyng soddenly to kyll them in theyr house, came by tenne and tenne as though they came to demaunde theyr accustomed rewarde. But when the Christians sawe so great a company assembled about theyr house, they suspected that they sought somewhat elles then theyr rewarde or offeryng, and therefore incontinent takyng theyr weapons, they fought so manfully at the wyndowes and doores of theyr house, that they slue syxe men and woounded fourtie. But at the length, some of ỹ *Gioghi*, shot at them certaine iron arrowes out of crosse bowes, with the which they were both slayne, the one beyng sore wounded in the head, & the other in the bodie. As soone as they sawe them fall downe, they cutte theyr throtes: and takyng the hotte blood in the palmes of theyr handes, dronke it vp, with contumelious woordes agaynst the Christians. After this murder, the concubine of *Iohn Maria* came to *Canonor*, with her young sonne, whom I bought of her for eyght peeces of golde: and causyng hym to be baptysed, named hym Laurence, because it was saint Laurence daye: But within a yeere after, he dyed of the frenche pore, whiche disease had then dispersed almost through all the worlde. For I haue seene many infected with it foure hundred myles beyonde *Calecut*. They call it *Pua*. And they affyrme that this disease was neuer seene there past xbii. yeeres before. It is there more greeuous and outragious then with vs.

The death of Iohn Maria and Peter Antonye.

The frenche pore.

Of the Naue of the citie of Calecut, and of the memorable conflicte betwene the Christians and Mahumetans. In the whiche the Portugales with incredible valiantnesse gaue theyr enimies the ouerthrowe. And howe the kyng of Canonor reioyced at their victorie. Cap. 38.

IN the yeere of our Lorde .1506. the fourth daye of March, woorde was brought vs of the death of the sayde Christians. The same daye, from the cities of *Calecut, Panan, Capagot, Pandaram, & Trompatam*, departed a great naue of two hundred and eyght

The naue of the kyng of Calecut agaynst the Portugals.

eyght shippes, of the whiche fourescore and foure were great shippes, or shippes of burden, and the rest were dyuen with Oxes, after the maner of Foystes, whiche they call *Parao*. The Nauie was manned with in maner innumerable Mahumetans, shewyng them selues very braue in apparel of purple sylke and Bombasine, with also theyr hygh and sharpe cappes, after theyr maner, of the same colour, lyned with sylke: wearyng also on theyr armes many bracelettes, and on theyr handes hadde gloues, embrodered & garnyshed with diuers kyndes of workes: for weapons, they had Turky bowes, swoordes, launces, peltes, and all sortes of gunnes, after our maner. When we sawe theyr Nauie proceedyng in order, and well instructed, it seemed farre of lyke a wood, the maستes presentyng the similitude of trees: Whiche thyng seemed so litle to deterre vs, that we were in sure beleefe, that our God and Christe woulde geue vs the victorie agaynst the blasphemers of his holy name, the Idolatours and Sarasens, old enemies of our religion. And therfore the valiant knight and gouernour, the sonne of the honorable lord *Don Francisco Dalmeda*, viceroy of *India*, who had there the supreame gouernement of twelue shippes, with the assistaunce of the Admirall of the Nauie, when he sawe the great force of the enemie, myndfull of his accustomed vertue, with sounde of trumpet assembled all the souldiers, and spake to them in this maner. My deare frendes, and brethren in one God, and one fayth of Iesus Christe, nowe is the tyme come when you ought to remember, that as Iesus Christe spared not, neyther feared to gyue his precious body to death for our sakes: euen so, except we wyl shewe our selues most vnkynde, and vnworthy so great grace of God, it shalbe our dueties to spende our liues in the defence of his glorie, and our holy fayth, assuring our selues of the victorie against these dogges, hateful to God, & progenie of the deuyl. Now therfore fyghtyng in his name, & vnder the banner of his holy crosse, shew your selues manfull & valiant: for nowe is in you the powwer to geat eternal fame, in mainteyning the quarel of our sauiour. Therefore with me, lyftyng vp your hartes to God, & your armes with force & courage, let vs gyue the onset on these dogs. When the gouernour had sayd these wordes, the priest went vp to the hyghest part of the ship, & holdyng in his hand ỹ picture of Christe

The Mahumetan soldiers.

The oration of the gouernour to the Christian soldiers.

Chriſt nayled on the croſſe, ſhewed it vnto the ſouldiers, exhoꝛtyng them to remember the commaundementes of God, and the holy fayth and baptiſme whereby they were conſecrated to God, puttyng no doubt in the foꝛgeueneſſe of theyꝛ ſinnes, dying in ſo godly a quarell: and then bleſſyng them, with inuocation of the name of God, he pꝛonounced the ſentence of abſolution and foꝛgeueneſſe of theyꝛ ſinnes. The exhoꝛtation of the pꝛieſt, ſo moued the hartes of all men, that the teares ranne from our eyes foꝛ ioy & great deſire we had to die in ỹ quarel. In the meane time the nauye of the Mahumetans made ſayle towarde vs. The ſame daye our Admirall with two Foyſtes made towarde them, & paſſyng betweene two of theyꝛ greateſt ſhyps, diſcharged his oꝛdinance on both ſydes: whiche the Admyꝛall dyd, to pꝛoue the ſtrength of thoſe ſhyppes, which they chiefely eſteeme, and truſt moſt vnto: But this daye was nothyng done wooꝛth ỹ memoꝛye. The day folowyng, the Mahumetans with full ſayles dꝛewe neare the citie of *Canonor*, and ſent vs wooꝛde by a meſſenger, that if we woulde permytte them to go whither they woulde, they woulde not haue to do with vs. Our Admirall anſweared, that the Chꝛiſtians coulde not ſo foꝛgette the periurie of the Mahumetans, in violatyng theyꝛ faith and pꝛomyſe made by common conſent, when they woulde not ſuffer the Chꝛiſtians to paſſe that way, but contrary to theyꝛ fayth and pꝛomyſe ſlue .xlvii. Chꝛiſtians, and robbed them of foure thouſande peeces of golde: and theꝛefoꝛe badde them paſſe further if they durſt, and they ſhoulde well knowe of what reputation and ſpirite the Chꝛiſtians are. Then ſayde the Mahumetans, Mahumet wyll defende vs, and confounde the Chꝛiſtians: and with thoſe wooꝛdes, aſſaulted vs all at once with incredible furie, thynkyng to haue paſſed thꝛough, hauyng no further to ſayle then .x. myles from the ſhoꝛe. But our Admiral of purpoſe ſuffered the enimies to come nearer vntyl they were ryght oueragainſt ỹ citie of *Canonor*, meanyng there to ſet on them with all his foꝛce, that the kyng of *Canonor* beholdyng the conflicte, myght be witneſſe of the valiantneſſe of the Chꝛiſtians. Then when the trumpetter of the Admirals ſhip ſounded the battayle, and gaue the ſigne, incontinent he aſſaulted two of theyꝛ greateſt ſhyppes.

The nauie of the Mahumetans.

The Admirall of the Chriſtians.

The quarel and occaſion of the warre.

The Mahumetans geue the onſet.

Here

Heere I am not able to expresse the exceedyng noyse of theyr Drummes, Trumpets, Tambarels, and other such innumerable, which they vse in this case. The Admiral hym selfe, in maner contemnyng all theyr meane shippes, passed through theyr navie, and inuaded one of theyr greatest shippes, castyng theron chaynes and grasples, to fyght with them at hande strokes: but they cast of the chaynes thryse, yet the fourth tyme the chaynes tooke such holde, that the Christians entred into the ship, where they made such hauocke and slaughter, that all the Mahumetans of that shippe (which were sixe hundred in number) were slayne, insomuche that there was not one left alyue to tell newes. The Admirall encouraged by this victorie, inuaded another of theyr great shippes, whiche had chayned it selfe with a Foyst of the Christians, where was also a great conflict, in the whiche were slayne aboue fyue hundred Mahumetans, and theyr ship sunke. The Mahumetans discouraged by this defeate, assaulted our twelue Foystes with al theyr force, and caryed them away. But heere the manhood and valiantnesse of *Iohn Seranus*, the captaine of the Galley, shewed it selfe, who only with one Gally made suche a slaughter among the Mahumetans, that it may seeme incredible: for he so fiercely inuaded them that had caryed away the Foystes, that he recouered them all, & sunke two other of the Mahumetan shippes. In these warres, God of his grace so prospered the Christians, that few of them were slayne, but many wounded. The conflict continued from morning, vntyl the darkenesse of the nyght made an ende of the battayle. I may not heere forget to speake of the marueylous aduenture and Godly zeale of *Simon Martin*, captayne of one of our shippes: For it so chaunced, that the Brigantine in the which I was, departyng somewhat from our naule, gaue occasion to our enemies to pursue vs, for incontinent foure of the Mahumetan shippes assayled vs, and put vs to much trouble, insomuch that .xv. Mahumetans had nowe entred into our Brigantine, and we were constrayned to flee to the Poupe, as to the safest place: But the valiant captayne *Simon Martin*, seyng the daunger that we were in, and that the Mahumetans were entred into our Brigantine, leapt into it fiercely, and callyng vpon the name of Iesus Christ, fought so valiauntly, that he slue sixe of the Mahumetans: wher-

The valiantnesse of the Admirall.

A great slaughter of the mahumetans.

The valiantnesse of Iohn Seranus.

Fewe Christians slayne.

The valiantnesse of Simon Martin.

by

by we, beyng incouraged, assisted hym in such sort, that the Mahumetans cast them selues into the sea, where some were drowned, & som escaped by swimmyng. Therfore when the Mahumetans knewe ỹ the Christians had the victorie, they sent.iiii.other Fostes to helpe the first. But when the captayne of our Brigantine sawe this, he tooke certayne emptie Tubbes, in the whiche gunne pouder had ben kepte before, and stoppyng them with flaxe, placed them in such sort, that they seemed far of, like peeces of great artillerie: then laying a little gun pouder by the flaxe, and holding a fyre sticke in his hand, as though he would put fire to the Gunne, the Mahumetans thinking that it had ben a gunne in deede, were thereby put in such feare, that they departed. The Admirall yet further pursuing the enemyes, gaue them an other great ouerthrow, and tooke seuen of theyr Foistes, laden with all sortes of merchandies, and soonke tenne other with the shotte of great artillerie, of the whiche one was laden with Elephantes. Therfore when the Mahumetans sawe the sea now almost couered with the bodies of their slaine men, and their chiefe shippes some taken, some soonke, & some spoiled, were out of all hope to recouer, & therfore saued them selues by fleeing. But the Christians, seeing yet hope of further victorie, and the Mahumetans so discouraged, thought it not best to leaue them so, but rather vpon such prosperous successe, to take the opportunitie, and vtterly to destroy them: & therfore the Admiral, seeing his men ioyfull of the victorie, and desirous to pursue the enemie, folowed the Mahumetans, and gaue them a newe battayle, whiche lasted all day and all nyght, whilest the Christians in the nyght tyme slue them euen in theyr fleeing, & soonke almost all their shippes. In the meane tyme certayne of our Foistes sawe a shyppe of burden of the enemie, wanderyng out of the way, and made sayle thyther with all hast. But the enemies in short space seeing themselues ouermatched, hurled all their cariages into the sea, and trusting to swimmyng (wherein they are most experte) caste themselues after. But our men folowed them euen to the shore, with launces, crosbowes, & stones, so killing them as they swamme, that the sea was coloured and polluted with their blood. Yet by swimming many escaped, by estimation about the number of two hundred, for they are in youth so brought vp in swimming, that

A Stratagene.

Tenne Mahumetan shyps soonke with the shot of great artillerie.

The Christians had the victorie

An other great conflicte.

The Mahumetans slayne in swimming.

The Mahumetans experte in swimmyng.

they ſwamme in the ſea almoſt twentie myles, oftentymes ſo diuyng vnder the water, and remaynyng there ſo long, that they decepued our ſyght: for ſometymes we thought that they were ſoonke, and ſometyme agayne ſeeyng them flote on the water, it ſo troubled our ſenſe, that we thought we had ſeene ſome phantaſie or viſion: but they were in maner all deſtroyed by one miſchaunce or an other, and eſpecially a great number in the great ſhyppes which were ſoonke by ſhot of the great artillerie. The day folowyng, the Admirall ſent certayne Bzigantines and Gallies to the ſhore, to number the dead bodies, whiche the ſea had caſte vp: they were founde to be about three thouſande, beſyde them alſo which the ſea had deuoured. The kyng of *Canonor*, beholdyng all theſe thynges, was greatly in loue with the Chriſtians, and commended their valiauntneſſe and vertue, and not vnwoorthily: For to ſpeake that I haue ſeene, I haue ben in many ſore warres, yet neuer ſawe I more valiant men, then the *Portugales* here ſhewed them ſelues to be.

The kyng of Canonor.

The valiauntneſſe of the Portugales.

But when we thought that we had nowe made an ende of theſe Tragidies, we had in maner a wooꝛſe to begyn. For it ſo chaunced, that in fewe dayes after, the kyng of *Canonor*, who fauoured vs, dyed: In whoſe place ſucceeded an other mortall enemie to the Chriſtians, and friende to the kyng of *Calecut*, by whoſe helpe and rycheſſe, hee was aduaunced to the kyngdome of *Canonor*. He therefore aſſembled his power to make newe warre agaynſt the Chriſtians, with great expedition and haſte, bycauſe he ſuppoſed that a great parte of theyr munitions was nowe waſted, and they alſo ſore weeryed, and for the moſt parte wounded. And to further his attempte, the kyng of *Calecut* ſent him xxiiii. peeces of great artillerie. This warre beganne the ſeuenth day of Apꝛill, and continued vntyll the .xx. of Auguſt, before all thinges were pacified. It were heere to long to declare howe in theſe warres alſo the Chriſtians behaued them ſelues manfully agaynſt the Mahumetans, which neuer encountred with them fewer then fyue or ſixe and twentie thouſande in number, hauyng alſo with them a hundred and fourtie peeces of artillerie, and were armed after the maner of the inhabitauntes of *Calecut*: but the Chriſtians with hardneſſe

A newe expedition againſt the Chriſtians.

Long warres.

Great oddes. The Mahumetans artillerie.

neſſe after our maner.

Theſe Infidelles vſe this order in theyr warres. They diuide theyr army into many wynges, euery wyng conteynyng the number of two or three thousande men, and only one wyng proceedeth to the battayle, the reſte attendyng what ende or succeſſe they haue, before they attempt any further. But whileſt theſe wynges are nowe marchyng to ioyne in battayle, it paſſeth all imagination to thynke, with howe great a noyſe of innumerall muſicall inſtrumentes, after theyr maner, they fill the eares of all the army, to encourage them to fyght, while in the meane ſeaſon alſo, a great number runneth before the army with marueylous flames of artificiall fyres: and in fine, gyue the onſette with ſuche outragious furie and outcry, that two thousande of them were able to feare tenne thousande that had no experience of theſe thynges. But ſee the goodneſſe of God, who neuer forſaketh them that beleeue faythfully in his holy religion. Euen nowe in the extremitie of theſe troubles, our men beyng in maner ouercharged with the multitude of theyr enemyes, and long warres, ſodayne newes was brought that a newe nauie of *Portugales* was arryued at *Canonor* by the conducte of the valiant knyght *Don Triſtan dè Cugna*: Whom we immediately aduertyſed with howe greeuous warres wee were oppreſſed. Who incontinent ſent vs, in certayne Barkes, three hundred valiaunt Souldiours, well armed with harneſſe, after the maner of the Chriſtians. When wee ſawe theſe, we recouered our ſpirites, in ſuche ſorte, that if our Admirall woulde haue permitted, we woulde haue burnte the citie of *Canonor*. But when the Mahumetans vnderſtoode the newe ſuccours that we had, all diſcouraged in mynde, they ſought all meanes to make peace with the Chriſtians, and aſſygned one named *Mamalmaricar*, a man of great ryches and wyſedome among them, to bee intermediatour, and to make the conditions of peace. Hee therefore vnder ſafe conducte, came to vs to common of the matter. We tolde him, that we coulde make no peace without the conſent of the Uiceroye, who was then in the citie of *Cucin*. The Admirall thought it beſte not to contempne the conditions of peace, for

The order of the Mahumetans Campe.

Inſtrumentes.

Outragious out crye.

The arryuyng of a newe Nauie of Portugales.

The Mahumetans ſeeke to make peace with the Chriſtians.

for that duryng the tyme of the warres, they coulde not sende theyr shyppes laden with merchaundies into *Portugale*, and therefore by the consent of the Viceroye, the peace was concluded.

The peace concluded.

But nowe, to myngle some delight with these sorowes, you shal heare a pleasant fable woorthie to be put in memorie. Therefore all thinges beyng pacified, as I walked in the citie of *Canonor*, I met with certayne merchantes Idolatours, with whom I was acquaynted before the warres, who in theyr language sayde thus vnto me, Are you our friende? Yea sayde I. Then we pray you in the way of friendship, shewe vs that Christian which is muche hygher and stronger then any other of the Christians, and kylled in maner euery day about twentie of the Mahumetans, and resisted the dartes of fiftie *Naeros* (these are of the garde) and escaped without hurte? I answered, that that Christian was not nowe in the citie, but was gone to *Cucin* to the Viceroye. But when I better considered the matter, I sayde thus vnto them, Are you my friendes? Yea, we are, sayde they. Then sayde I, That souldier that fought so valiauntly in the battayle, was no *Portugale*. Then sayde they: Of what countrey was he then? I answered agayne, that he was the God of the *Portugales*, and the great God of all the world. Then sayde they, Verily you speake the trueth. For we heard the Mahumetans say, that it was not the *Portugales*, but the *Portugales* God, that gaue them the ouerthrowe, and therefore we thynke your God to bee better then theyrs, although we know him not: And by this meanes it was bruited ouer all the countrey, that the Mahumetans were ouercome rather by the assistaunce of God, then by the strength of men. For these people are very simple and ignorant, and astonyshed in maner at euery thyng. For some when they sawe one of our company hauyng a little bell in his hande, and hearde the noyse of the bell when he moued his hand, and no noyse when he set it downe, they tooke it for a myracle, saying one to an other: doubtlesse theyr God is the greatest God, for when they touche the bell, it speaketh, and when they touche it not, it sayeth nothyng. They tooke pleasure and admiration to beholde the solemnities of the Masse.

A pleasaunt fable.

Saiuct Christopher, the Christian Giant.

The enemyes confesse that God gaue the victorie.

Simple and ignorant people.

Messis multa, sed operarii pauci. &c.

The Masse.

And

And when the prieſt lyfted vp the holy bread or hoſt, I ſayde vnto them, beholde here the God of the *Portugales*, and of all the worlde . Then ſayde they, You ſay truly: but we can not perceyue it . This haue I ſayde, that you may hereby knowe what ſimple and ignorant people theſe are: yet are they very great inchaunters, and can inchaunte Serpentes, whoſe poyſon is ſo ſtrong, that they kyll only with touchyng . They are alſo of incredible agilitie, and therefore excell in vautyng, leappyng, runnyng, ſwymmyng, tumblyng, walkyng on ropes, and ſuch other exerciſes of lyghtneſſe and agilitie.

No more can wyſer men then they.

Inchaunters, and of great agilitie.

The ſeuenth booke, entreating of the viage or Nauigation of Ethiopia. Cap. 1.

They that will take vppon them to wryte any hyſtorie, had neede to beare well in memorie what they haue promyſed and taken in hande, leſt for theyr paynes and well meanyng, they be rewarde with ſhame and rebuke, and therfore whereas in the beginnyng of this booke, I promyſed to wryte of the Nauigation of *Ethiope*, I will with the deſcription of this viage, make an ende of my long traueyle, and ſpeake of ſuch thinges as I ſawe there by the way, in my returne from *India* into my long deſired countrey, in the company of the *Portugales*.

Of diuers and many Ilandes of Ethiope. Cap. 2.

Therefore the ſeuenth day of December, we directed our iourney towarde *Ethiope*, trauerſing fyrſt the great gulfe, and ſaylyng foure hundred myles, came to an Ilande named *Monzambrich*, vnder the dominion of the kyng of *Portugale* . But before we arryued there, we ſawe by the way many townes parteinyng to the *Portugales*, and alſo many ſtrong fortreſſes in the kyngdomes of *Melinda* and *Mombaza*. The kyng of *Portugale*, hath alſo certayne fortreſſes in *Monzambrich* and *Zophala*.

The Ilande of *Monzambrich*.

Melinda.

The kyng of Portugales dominion in Ethiopia.

The conqueſtes of *Triſtan dè Cugna.*

But if I ſhoulo here ſpeake of the memozable factes of the valiant knyght *Triſtan dè Cugna*, at his returne from India, I ſhould take in hande a thyng farre aboue my reache: beyng ſuche, as deſerue rather the commendations of Homer & Virgil, foz he inuaded and ſubdued the great cities of *Gogia*, *Pati*, and *Craua*, with alſo the goodly Ilande of *Sacutara*, where the kyng of *Portugale* hath erected certayne foztreſſes, and omit alſo to ſpeake of many other Ilandes whiche we ſawe in the way: as the Ilande of *Cumeris*, and ſixe other which beare plentie of ginger, ſuger, & dyuers other goodly fruites, and abundance of fleſhe: alſo the moſt fruitfull Iland of *Pende*, likewiſe ſubiect to the kyng of *Portugale*.

Sacutara.

Cumeris.

Pendè.

Of the Ilande of Monzambrich, and the inhabitantes thereof. Cap. 3.

Zaphala.

Golde.

THis Ilande (as we haue ſayde) is ſubiecte to the kyng of *Portugale*, as is alſo *Zaphala*. From the Ilande of *Monzambrich*, is bzought much golde and ople, but is bzought thyther from the firme lande. The Ilande is not byg, and is inhabited with blacke Mahumetans, lyuyng in maner in neceſſitie of all thinges, yet hath it a commodious pozte. They haue no coyne but that is bzought from the continent, where alſo we went alande to ſee the countrey, where we ſawe nothyng but a vagabunde and raſcall kynde of blacke men, couezyng only theyz pziuities with leaues of trees, and are beſyde naked, and the women in lyke maner. Theyz lyppes are two fingers thicke, theyz fozeheades very large, theyz teeth great, and as white as ſnow. They are fearefull at the ſight of euery thyng, and eſpecially when they ſee armed men. Therefoze ſeeing theyz fearefulneſſe, & knowing them to be without weapons that can doe any great hurte, only ſixe of vs well armed, bearyng alſo with vs Hargabuſes, and hauyng in our companie a blacke ſlaue that ſomewhat knewe the countrey, we began to enter further into the lande: and when we had gone fozwarde one dayes iourney, we founde many heardes of Elephantes. Here the ſlaue that was our guyde, gaue vs counſayle to take fyzebrandes in our handes, bycauſe theſe beaſtes feare fyze aboue all thinges.

Blacke Mahumetans.

Troglodítæ. Ethiopes.

Heardes of Elephantes.

Elephantes are afrayde of fyze.

But

But we once chaunced to fynde three Female Elephants, which had very lately brought foorth theyr Calues, and therefore feared not the fyre: but without all feare, folowed vs so farre, that we were fayne to flee to a mountayne to saue vs from the beastes. When we had entred about tenne myles into the land, we found a certayne denne on the syde of a mountayne, where some of the blacke inhabitauntes lurked. These spake so confoundedly and chatteringly lyke Apes, that I am not able to expresse theyr maner of speeche: Yet to goe the nearest thereto that I can, theyr speach is lykest to the cuyll fauored voyce which the Muleters of *Sicilia* vse when they dryue theyr Mules: and suche maner of blabberyng vse these people in theyr speache. Heere the Pilot of the shyppe asked vs if wee woulde buye any kyne, saying, that here we should haue them good cheape. But we, thinking that eyther he had mocked vs, or that agreeing with the inhabitauntes (whom he knewe before) he woulde haue deceyued vs of our money and wares, sayde that we had no money. Then sayde he vnto vs, These people desire nothyng lesse then money, hauyng muche more plentie of golde then we haue, which is founde not farre hence. Then sayde we to him, What desyre they then? They loue (sayde he) despicable thynges, and of small value: as pynnes, knyues, syssers, lookyng Glasses, Haukes belles, bagges, or boxes, to keepe theyr golde in, copper Rynges, iangelinges to hang at theyr Tymberelles, bosses, laces, broches, copper chaynes, carkenettes, brasselettes, and suche other tryfles to trymme theyr wyues and children. We aunswered, that we were content to gyue them suche wares for theyr kyne, if they woulde bryng them to the nexte mountayne. Then sayde our Pilot agayne, They will bryng them with vs to the mountayne: but no further in any condition: Therefore speake what you will gyue. Then one of our companions sayde, that he had a bosse of grauen copper, and also a little bell. But I, bycause I had no suche merchaundies, yet beyng desirous to eate flesh, sayde that I woulde sell one of my shertes for kyne. Then sayde the Pilot, Let mee alone with the matter. Then callyng vnto him fyue or sixe of the Inhabitauntes, he shewed them our goodly Iewelles, and demaunded for them three hundred kyne.

An Apysh language.

Apish merchandies for golde.

Kyne very good cheape.

But the inhabitantes, not muche differyng from beastes, made signes that they would gyue only fyftiene. In fyne, we agreed, yet suspectyng some deceite, neuertheleſſe they kept theyr promyse, and sent vs fyftiene kyne by two of theyr companions. We were scarsely departed, but we hearde a noyse and tumulte in theyr dennes, and were partly afrayde lest these Troglodites woulde folowe vs, and therefore leauyng our kyne, we tooke vs to our weapons. But they made signes vnto vs to feare nothyng. Then our pilot tolde vs, that their tumulte was only which of them should haue the bosse of copper. Then recouering our kyne, we dryue them forward to the toppe of the mountaine, and there dismissed the two blacke slaues that came with them. Whyle wee were thus dryuyng our kyne by the syde of a little wood, we met agayne with the Elephantes, whereof beyng in great feare, we forsooke our kyne, and trusted to our feete. Therefore departyng from hence, we returned to the Ilande, where makyng prouision for our vyage, we sayled towarde the Cape, called *Caput Bonæ Spei*, passyng the Ilande of Saincte Laurence (otherwyse named *Madagascar*) beyng fourescore leagues distant from the nearest continent or firme land. I suppose that in shorte tyme the kyng of Portugale will be Lorde of this Ilande: For hauyng nowe burned and destroyed many villages and townes of the Ilande, his name is fearefull among them. And as farre as I can coniecture by my peregrinations of the worlde (especially of *India* and *Ethiopia*) I thynke that the kyng of Portugale, if hee continue as he hath begunne, is lyke to bee the rychest kyng in the worlde, and doubtlesse not vnworthily for the dignitie and godly zeale of so noble a prince, as by whose meanes the Christian fayth is dayly greatly increased. For it is certayne that in *India*, and especially in the citie of *Cucin*, where the Vicerope remayneth, euery holy day, tenne or twelue Idolaters or Mahumetans are professed to our religion, whereby we may conceyue good hope, that in tyme our fayth shall there bee greatly enlarged by the grace of God, who hath there gyuen suche supernaturall victories to the Christians, and therefore all professers of Christes holy name, ought to pray to almyghtie God to assyst hym in so godly an enterprise.

Troglodítæ.

Cabo dè Buena Speranza.

The Ilande of Sainct Laurence or *Madagascar.*

The kyng of Portugale.

The Christian religion spreadeth in India.

Of

Of the Cape called Caput Bonæ Spei. That is, the Cape of good hope. Cap. 4.

DEpartyng from the Cape named *Caput Bonæ Spei*, when we had nowe sayled aboute two hundred myles, there rose suddenly a tempest with contrarye wynde. The cause whereof was, that we had on the lefte hande the Ilande of Saint Laurence, and many other litle Ilandes, from whence bloweth for the most part a great gale of wynde. And therefore for the space of seuen dayes, beyng here daungerously tossed to and fro by the rages of the sea and wynde, at the length we escaped, by the grace of God. But proceedyng about two hundred leagues, a newe tempest rysyng so scattred our shyppes in the space of syxe dayes, that we mette not togeather agayne vntyll we arryued at Lysburne in Portugale. I was in the shyppe of Barthelmewe, a Florentine, citizen of Lysburne. The shyppe was named Saint Vincent, a vessell of exceedyng capacitie, & laden with seuen thousande tonnes of all sortes of spyces. In the way, we passed also by an other Iland, named the Iland of saint Helen, where we sawe certayne fyshes of suche enorme and monstrous byggenesse, that one of them was as bygge as a great house. When they ryse aboue the water, they yane or gape so wyde, that ẏ vpper iawe coueryth al the forehead, as it were a souldier in shynyng harnesse. Agayne when they swymme on the bymme of the water, the forhead is seene the breadth of three great paces. And when they swymme in the sea, they so trouble the water, and come so neare the shyps, that we were fayne to discharge al our artillarye to dryue them away. Shortly after we founde an Ilande, named the Ilande of Ascention, where we sawe many fowles, about the byggnesse of our Duckes, so symple, without suspicion or feare, that we tooke them with our handes: but shortly after they were taken, they shewed an incredible fiercenesse. I thynke veryly that they neuer sawe any man before, they so beheld vs before they were

Tempest.

An exceedyng great shyppe and great ryches of spyces.

Great Whale fyshes.

The Ilande of Ascention.

were taken, and were as ſtyll as if they had ben aſtonyſhed: For in that Iſlande we ſawe no lyuyng creature, ſaue onely innumerable fyſhes, and the ſayd hydes. After we had paſſed this Iſlande many dayes ſayling, as though we were nowe come to our owne woylde, the North ſtarre, and guardions of our maryners, appeared vnto vs. And here opportunitie ſerueth well, to confute the opinion of them that thynke that men maye not ſayle in regions ſubiect to the pole Antartike or ſouth pole, by the guilde of the noyth ſtarre. For it is certayne, that the Portugales ſayle by the guyde of the noyth ſtarres, although they be vtterly out of ſyght by the eleuation of the pole Antartike. Yet do they ſometymes refreſhe the vertue of the needle, with the ſtone whiche euer naturally reſpecteth the noyth pole. A fewe dayes after, we arryued at the fayre region, where are ſeene many Iſlandes, named the Iſlandes of *Aſtures*, ſo named for the multitude of thoſe Egles whiche we commonly call *Aſtures*. Theſe Iſlandes are diuerſely named: for ſome are named *Pici*, *Martij*, ſome, *Dè Coruo*: alſo *De Floribus*, *Sancti Georgij*, *Gratioſa*, and *Feial*. Departyng from hence, we came to the Iſlande of *Tertiera*, where we remayned two dayes. All theſe Iſlandes are maruey-lous fruitefull, and haue plentie of all thynges neceſſary for mans lyfe. Departyng from hence, in ſeuen dayes ſaylyng, we came to ỹ goodly citie of Luxburne, or *Vlyſbona* in Portugale. At my commyng thyther, I was brought to the kynges preſence, whoſe handes kiſſing with moſt humble reuerence, I thanked his maieſtie for the great fauour I had found at the hands of his ſubiectes and officers in *India*. He entertayned me moſt gratiouſly in his courte, vntyll I had infourmed hym of all thynges whiche I had obſerued in my voyage to *India*. A fewe dayes after, I ſhewed his hyghneſſe the letters patentes whereby his Lieuetenante the Uiceroye of *India*, gaue me the order of knyghthod, deſyryng his maieſtie to confyrme the ſame by his great ſeale: which my petion, he immediatly graunted. And thus departing from thence with the kynges paſporte and ſafe conducte, at the length after theſe my long and great trauayles and dangers, I came to my long deſyred and natiue countrey, the citie of Rome, by the grace of God, to whom be all honour and glory.

Sayling by the noyth ſtarre in regiõs beneath the Equinoctiall lyne.

FINIS.

Of the hygher East India, called India Tercera, or Treciera.



IN this *India*, whiche the portugales call *Tercera*, are very great kyngdomes: as the kyngdomes of *Beugala*, *Pegu*, *Berma*, *Erancangui*, *Dausian*, *Capelam*, and the great kyngdome of *Malacha*, called of the olde wryters *Aurea Chersonesus*, whose chiefe citie is also called *Malacha*, and was in olde tyme named *Tachola*. Under this kyngdome are infinite Ilandes called *Maluche*, whereof the principall are these, *Iaua* the greater, *Iaua* the lesse, *Polagua*, *Mendana*, *Cuba*, *Cailon*, *Huban*, *Bur*, *Tenado*, *Anbon*, and *Gilolo*, with infinite other. On the Southwest part from *Malacha*, is the great Ilande of *Samotra*, called in olde tyme *Taprobana*, in the whiche are the kyngdomes of *Pedir*, *Biraen*, *Pazer*, *Ardagni*, and *Ham*. This Iland, & al the other called *Maluche*, bring foorth great quantitie of Cloues, Cinamome, Nuttemegges, Maces, and all other kyndes of spyces, except Pepper, whiche groweth in the prouince of *Calecut*, and the Ilande of *Ceilam*. All these sortes of spices are caryed to *Malacha* to be solde. But the greatest part of them is caryed to *Cathay* and *China*: and from thence to the North partes of *Tartarie*. This kyngdome of *China*, is very great, and was in olde tyme called *Sina*. Here is founde great plentie of precious stones. The people are very subtile and ryche. They are al apparelled eyther in sylke or cloth, or vestures of other woorkemanshyppe, and are of good ciuilitie. They do not gladly permit the Portugales or other straungers to traficke in theyr kyngdome: whose most famous place vpon the sea syde, is named *Cantan*, and the sea *Machiam*, called of the olde wryters, the sea of *Sina*.

Malacha.

Tachola.

The Ilandes of Maluche.

The Ilande of Samotra.

Spices.

Calecut.

Ceilam.

Cathay.

China.

Precious stones.

Sylke.

Cantan.

Of

Of the prices of precious stones and Spices, with theyr weightes and measures, as they are accustomed to be solde both of the Moores and the gentyles: And of the places where they growe.

FOrasmuche as in dyuers places of this history, mention is made of precious stones, I haue thought good to declare somewhat aswell of theyr prices, as of the places of theyr generation, that we may not vtterly be ignorante of the thynges whiche we so greately esteeme, and buie so deare.

Of the Rubie.

THe Rubies growe in *India*, and are founde for the most parte in a ryuer named *Pegu*. These are of the best kynde and fineſt, which they of the lande of *Malabor* cal *Nunpuclo*, and are well solde, if they be fayre and cleane without spottes. The Indians, to knowe theyr fineneſſe, put them vpon theyr tongues, comptyng that to be best that is couldest and most harde. And to see theyr fineneſſe: they take them vp with a peece of waxe by the sharpest poynt, and lookyng agaynst the lyght, espie in them euery small spot or flake. They are also founde in certayne deepe fosses or pittes, whiche are made in mountaynes that are beyonde the sayde ryuer. They are scoured and made cleane in the countrey of *Pegu*: yet can they not square and polyshe them, but for this purpose sende them to diuers other countreis, & especially to *Palcacate*, *Narsinga*, *Calecut*, and the region of *Malabor*, where are many cunnyng *Lapidaries*.

And to geue you intelligence of the value of these stones, ye shall vnderstande that this woorde *Fanan*, signifieth a weyght, somewhat more then two of our Carattes: and .xi. *Fanans* and a quarter, is one *Mitigal*: and .vi *Mitigals* and a halfe, make one vnce. This *Fanan*, is also a kynde of mony whiche is in value one ryall of syluer, and therefore after this accompte I say that.

One caratte is iiii. grayns.

Eyght fine Rubies of the weyght of one *Fanan* (which are in all, about two carattes) are in value. *Fanan.x.*

Foure Rubies that wey one *Fanan*, are worth. *Fanan.xx.*

Two that wey one *Fanan*. *Fanan.xl.*

Which is one crowne of golde.

One

One that weyeth three quarters of one *Fanan*.	*Fanan*. 30.
One that weyeth one *Fanan*.	*Fanan*. 50.
One that weyeth one *Fanan* and a quarter.	*Fanan*. 65.
One that weyeth one *Fanan* and a halfe.	*Fanan*. 100.
One that weyeth one *Fanan* and three quarters.	*Fanan*. 150.
One that weyeth two *Fanans*.	*Fanan*. 200.
One that weyeth two *Fanans* and a quarter.	*Fanan*. 250.
One that weyeth two *Fanans* and a halfe.	*Fanan*. 300.
One that weyeth two *Fanans* and three quarters.	*Fanan*. 350.
Of three *Fanans*.	*Fanan*. 400.
Of three and a quarter.	*Fanan*. 500.
Of three and a halfe.	*Fanan*. 550.
Of three and three quarters.	*Fanan*. 600.
Of three and three quarters and a halfe.	*Fanan*. 630.
Of foure *Fanans*.	*Fanan*. 660.
Of foure and a quarter.	*Fanan*. 700.
Of foure and a halfe.	*Fanan*. 800.
Of fyue *Fanans*.	*Fanan*. 1000
Of fyue and a halfe.	*Fanan*. 1200
Of sixe *Fanans*, which are about twelue Carats.	*Fanan*. 1500

which make a hundred and fyftie crownes of golde. And these are commonly the prices of perfect Rubies. But suche as are not perfect, and haue any spottes in them, or are not of good colour, are of lesse price, accordyng to the arbitriment and estimation of the buyer.

Of the Rubies which growe in the Iland of Zeilam.

IN the Ilande of *Zeilam*, beyng in the seconde India, are founde many Rubies, whiche the Indians name *Manecas*, the greatest part whereof do not arryue to the perfection of the other aforesayde in colour, because they are redde, as though they were washed, and of fleshy colour, yet are they very colde and harde. The perfectest of them are greatlye esteemed among the people of the Ilande, and are reserued onlye for the kyng hym selfe, yf they be of any great quantitie. When his Iewellers fynde any bygge peece of this Rocke of the best kynde, they put it in fyre for the space of certayne houres: whiche yf it come out of the fyre uncorrupte, it becommeth

of

of the colour of a burnyng cole, and was therefore called of the Greekes, *Anthrax*, whiche signifyeth a burnyng cole. The same that the greekes call *Anthrax*, the Latines call *Carbunculus*. These they greatly esteeme. When the kyng of *Narsinga* can get any of them, he causeth a fyne hole to be bored in the vndermost part of them, to the myddest, and suffereth none of them to passe out of his realme, especially if they haue ben tryed by the sayde proofe. These are of greater value then the other of *Pegu*, if they be in their naturall perfection and cleanenesse.

Of these, one that wayeth a Carracte (whiche is halfe a *Fanan*) is wooꝛth in *Calecut*. *Fanan*. 30 Which are .iiii. crownes of golde.

One of two Carattes.	*Fanan*.	65
Of three Carattes.	*Fanan*.	150
Of three Carattes and a halfe.	*Fanan*.	200
Of foure Carattes.	*Fanan*.	300
Of foure Carattes and a halfe.	*Fanan*.	350
Of fyue Carattes.	*Fanan*.	400
Of fyue Carattes and a halfe.	*Fanan*.	450
Of syxe Carattes.	*Fanan*.	530
Of syxe Carattes and a halfe.	*Fanan*.	560
Of seuen Carattes.	*Fanan*.	630
Of seuen Carattes and a halfe.	*Fanan*.	660
One of .viii. Carattes, that hath ben well prooued in the fyre, is wooꝛth	*Fanan*.	800
Of .viii. Carattes and a halfe.	*Fanan*.	900
One suche of tenne Carattes.	*Fanan*.	1300
One of .x. Carattes and a halfe.	*Fanan*	1600
Of .xii. Carattes.	*Fanan*.	2000
Of .xiiii. Carattes.	*Fanan*	3000
Of .xvi. Carattes.	*Fanan*	6000

Of the kynd of Rubies called Spinelle.

THere is also founde an other kynde of Rubies, which we call *Spinelle*, and the *Indians*, *Caropus*. They growe in the selfe same countrey of *Pegu* where as are the fyne Rubies, & are found in the mountaines in the vpper cruste

of

or floure of the earth. These are not so fine, nor of so good colour as are the true Rubies, but haue somewhat the colour of a Granate, which we commonly call a Garnet: yet of these, suche as are perfect in theyr colour, are of value halfe lesse then true Rubies.

Of the Rubies called Balassi.

Balassi are of the kyndes of Rubies, but are not so hard: their colour is somewhat lyke a Rose, and some are in maner whyte: they growe in *Balassia*, whiche is a region within the firme lande, aboue *Pegu* and *Bengala*, and are brought from thence by merchants of the Moores to *Calecut*, where they are wrought and pullyshed, and are solde of the same price that are *Spinel*.

Of the Diamondes of the old myne.

These Diamondes are founde in the first India, in a kyngdome of the Moores named *Decan*, from whence they are brought to other regions. There are also founde other Diamondes, whiche are not so good, but somewhat whyte, and are called Diamondes of the newe myne, whiche is in the kyngdome of *Narsinga*. They of the olde myne are not pullyshed in India, but in other places. There are made lykewyse in India other falle Diamondes, of Rubies, Topases, and whyte Saphires, whiche appeare to be fyne, and are also founde in the Ilande of *Zeilam*: these stones differ in none other, sauyng that they haue lost theyr natural colour. Of these, some are found that haue halfe the colour of Rubies, & other of Saphires, other also of the colour of a Topase, other haue al these colours myngled togeather. They boxe a fine hole in these through the middes, whereby they appeare lyke the eyes of a Catte. Of the whytest, they make many small Diamondes, whiche can not be knowen from the true, sauyng by touchyng, of such as are skylful in that practise. They are solde by a poyse or wayght, whiche they call *Mangiar*, whiche weyeth two *Tarre*, and two thirdes, whiche amount to two thirdes, or third partes of one Carat: for foure *Tarres* wey one *Fanan*, which is about two Carattes.

Eyght Diamondes that wey one *Mangiar*, whiche is two third partes of a Carat, are in value *Fanan* xxx. whiche are three crownes of golde.

Sixe

Sixe Diamundes that weigh one *Mangiar*. Fanan. 40.
Foure that weigh one *Mangiar*. Fanan. 60.
Two that weigh one *Mangiar*. Fanan. 80.
One that weygheth one *Mangiar*. Fanan. 100.
One of one *Mangiar* and a quarter. Fanan. 165.
One of one *Mangiar* and a halfe. Fanan. 180.
Of one *Mangiar* and three quarters. Fanan. 220.
Of two *Mangiars*. Fanan. 320.
Of two *Mangiars* and a quarter. Fanan. 360.
Of two *Mangiars* and a halfe. Fanan. 380.
Of two *Mangiars* & three quarters full perfect. Fanan. 420.
Of three *Mangiars* of lyke perfection. Fanan. 450.
Of three *Mangiars* and a halfe. Fanan. 480.
Of foure *Mangiars*. Fanan. 550.
Of fyue *Mangiars*. Fanan. 750.
Of sixe *Mangiars*. Fanan. 800.
Of seuen *Mangiars*. Fanan. 1200.
Of eight *Mangiars*. Fanan. 1400.

And thus they proceede, increasyng the price, as they increase in weyght.

Of Saphires.

IN the Islande of *Zeilam*, are founde the beste and moste true *Saphires*, being very hard and fine, and of the colour of Azure. They are of price as followeth.

One that weigheth one Caratte, is of value, which are about two *Marcels* of siluer. Fanan. 2.
One of the weyght of two Carattes. Fanan. 5.
Of three Carattes. Fanan. 10.
Of foure Carattes. Fanan. 15.
Of fyue Carattes. Fanan. 18.
Of sixe Carattes. Fanan. 28.
Of seuen Carattes. Fanan. 35.
Of eight Carattes. Fanan. 50.
Of nine Carattes. Fanan. 60
Of tenne Carattes. Fanan. 65.
Of eleuen Carattes. Fanan. 70.
Of twelue Carattes. Fanan. 75.
Of xiii. Carattes in all perfection of colour. Fanan. 115.

A Marcell, is a siluer coyne of Venice, of xi. vnces. iii. d. with fyne, wherof x. make an ounce.

Of.xiiii.Carattes. Fanan. 160.
Of.xv.Carattes. Fanan. 180.
Of.xvi.Carattes. Fanan. 200.
Of.xviii.Carattes. Fanan. 250.
One that weigheth a *Mitigall*, which is xi. Fanans and a quarter, that is about.xxiii.Carattes. Fanan. 350.

Lykewyse in the Ilande of *Zeilam*, is founde an other sorte of *Saphires*, which they call *Quinigelinam*. These are not so strong, of darker colour, and of much lesse value then are the other of the best kynd, wherof one is wooryh thirtiene of these of equal poyse. Also in the kyngdome of *Narsinga*, in a mountayne aboue *Bacanor* and *Mangalor*, is found an other sorte of *Saphires*, more tender and of woorse colour, which they call *Cinganloam*. These are somewhat whyte, and of small value: So that the most perfecte of this kynde, weighing.xx Carattes, is not wooryh one Ducate. Theyr colour is inclynyng somewhat to yelowe. There is lykewyse founde an other kynde of *Saphires*, vppon the sea coastes of the kyngdome of *Calecut*, in a place named *Capucar*. These the Indians call *Carahatonilam*. They are of a darke Azure colour, not shynyng but in the cleare ayre. They are also tender & brickle, and of small estimation among the Indians. They seeme on the one syde lyke glasse.

Of Topasies.

THe naturall Topasies growe in the Island of *Zeilam*, and are named of the Indians *Purceragua*. It is a harde and fine stone, and of equall estimation with the Rubie & the *Saphire*, bycause all these three are of one kynde. The perfecte colour of this, is yelowe, lyke vnto fine beaten gold, and if it be perfecte and cleane, whether it be great or litle, it is wooryh in *Calecut* as much fine gold as it weigheth. But if it be not perfect, it is wooryh the weight of golde the *Fanan*, which is lesse by the halfe. And if it be in maner whyte, it is wooryh much lesse. And of these, are smali Diamundes counterfecte.

Of Turquesses.

TUrquesses are founde in *Exer*, a place of *Siech Ismaell*. Theyr Mine is a dyrye earth, that is founde vppon a blacke stone,

stone, which the Mooꝛes take of in small peeces, and carry them to the Iſlande of *Ormus*, from whence they are bꝛought to diuers partes of the woꝛlde by ſea and by lande. The Indians call them *Peroſe*. They are ſoft ſtones, of ſmall weight, and not much colde: & to know that they are good & true, in the day they ſhal appeare of the very colour of the Turqueſſe, and in the nyght, by the light, they ſhall appeare greene. They that are not ſo perfecte, doe not ſo chaunge theyꝛ colour to the light. If theſe ſtones be cleane and of fine colour, they haue vnderneth, in the bottome, a blacke ſtone, vppon the which they growe. And if any little bayne ryſe vppon the layde ſtone, it ſhall be the better. And to know moꝛe certainely that they are true Turqueſſes, they put on the toppes of them, a little quicke lyme, tempered with water, after the maner of an oyntment. So that if the quicke lime appeare coloured, they are iudged perfect, and are of value as foloweth.

One that weigheth one Caratte, is woꝛth in *Malabar*, Fanan. 15
One of two Carattes. Fanan. 40.
Of foure Carattes. Fanan. 90.
Of ſixe Carattes. Fanan. 150.
Of eight Carattes. Fanan. 200.
Of ten Carattes. Fanan. 300.
Of twelue Carattes. Fanan. 450.
Of fourtiene Carattes. Fanan. 550.

Of greater then theſe they make none accompte, bycauſe they are lyghter peeces and of greater circuite. Theſe of the byggeſt ſoꝛte the Mooꝛes carrie into the kyngdome of *Guzerath*.

Of Iacinthes.

Iacinthes, growe in the Iſlande of *Zeilam*. They are tender ſtones, and yelowe. They are beſt that are of deepeſt colour. The greateſt parte of theſe, haue in them certayne pimples oꝛ burbuls, which diminyſhe theyꝛ fayꝛeneſſe. And they that are in theyꝛ perfection cleane from this deformitie, are neuertheleſſe of ſmall value: Foꝛ in *Calecut* where they are polyſhed, they that weygh one *Fanan*, are wooꝛth no moꝛe then halfe a *Fanan*. And they of xviii. *Fanans*, are not wooꝛth. xvi. *Fanans*.

There are also found other stones lyke vnto cattes eyes, as *Chrisolytes*, & *Amethystes*, which they do not much esteeme, bicause they are of small value, as also the stones called *Giagonze*.

Of Smaragdes or Emeraldes.

Smaragdes growe in the countrey of Babylon, where the Indians cal the sea *Dieguan*. They grow also in other parts of India. They are stones of fayre greene colour, and are light and tender. Of these stones, many are counterfect. But lookyng on them curiously towarde the lyght, the counterfectes shewe certayne burbuls, as doeth glasse: but in the true, there is no suche seene, but rather there appeareth to the eye, a certayne verdour, shynyng lyke the beames of the Sunne: and being rubbed vppon the touche stone, they leaue the colour of copper. And the *Smaragde* of this sorte, is the best and most true, and is in value in *Calecut*, as muche as a Diamunde, and somewhat more: And this not by weyght, but by greatnesse, bycause the Diamunde quantitie for quantitie, is of greater weyght then the *Smaragde*. There is lykewyse founde an other kynde of *Smaragdes*, which are greene stones, but not so muche esteemed. Neuertheless, the Indians reserue these to set them fourth with other precious stones. They leaue not any greene colour vppon the touche.

Of dyuers kindes of Spices, where they growe, what they are woorth in Calecut, and whyther they are carried from thence.

Of Pepper.

FIrst in all the kyngdome of *Malabor* and *Calecut*, Pepper groweth, and is sold in *Calecut* by euery C C. *Bahars*, fine, for. C C xxx. *Fanans*, euery *Fanan* (as I haue sayde) being in value one ryall of plate of Spayne, which is as muche as one *Marcell* of siluer in

in Uenice. *Babar*, weigheth foure *Cantares* of the olde weyght of Portugale, by the which they sell all spices in *Lisbona*. *Cantare* is in Uenice. Cxii. pounde weyght, of the grosse pounde (beyng xviii. ounces) and of the subtyle pounde. Clxxviii. So that the sayde. 712. poundes of Uenice subtile, will cost about. xx. frenche crownes of gold: which amount to about two *Marchetti* (which make one penny) the pounde. They paye also to the kyng of *Calecut* for custome. xii. *Fanans*, euery *Babar* by the lode. They that buye them, are accustomed to bryng them to *Cambaia*, *Persia*, *Aden*, and *Mecha*, and from thence to *Alcayr* and *Alexandria*. Now they paye custome to the kyng of Portugale after the rate of 6562. *Maruedies* the *Babar*, which are. 193. *Fanans*. *Maruedies* are Spanyshe coynes, wherof sixe goe to a penny. This do they, partly bycause there arryueth no moze so great diuersitie of merchauntes to buye them, and partly by the agreement whiche the sayd kyng of Portugale made with those kynges, & the Moozes, and merchauntes of the countrey of *Malabar*.

Much pepper groweth lykewyse in the Iland of *Sumatra*, neare vnto *Malaca*, which is fayzer and bigger then that of *Malabar*, but not so good and strong. This is brought from *Bengala* to *China*, and some part to *Mecha*, priuylie and by stealth, vnwares to the Portugales, whiche would not otherwyse suffer them to passe. It is wooyth in *Sumatra*, from. iiii C. vnto. vii. C. *Maruedies* the *Canter* of Portugale, of the newe weight. And from the new to the olde weight in Portugale, the difference is two ounces in the pounde weight: For the olde pounde consisteth of. xiiii. ounces, and the newe pounde of. xvi. ounces.

Of Cloues.

CLoues growe in the Ilandes of *Molucca*, from whence they are brought to *Malacha*, and then to *Calecut*, and the countrey of *Malabar*. They are wooyth in *Calecut* euery *Babar* (which is. 712. poundes, of the subtile pound of Uenice) from. 500. to. 600. *Fanans* (which are about fyftie frenche crownes) whiche are in value about twelue *Marchetti* the pounde weyght, and beyng cleane from stalkes & hulkes are in value. 700. *Fanans*. To carry them from thence into

other regions, they paye for pasporte. xviii. *Fanans* the *Bahar*, which is wooꝛth in *Malacca* from.x.to.xiiii.Ducades,accoꝛding to the rate and custome of the merchauntes.

Of Cinamome.

CInamome of the beste soꝛte, groweth in the Ilande of *Zeilam*, and in the countrey of *Malabar* groweth the wooꝛst. That of the best kynde,is of small pꝛice in *Zeilam*. But in *Calecut*(if it be choyse and freshe)it is wooꝛth 300. *Fanans* the *Babar*, which are about fyue *Marchetti* the pounde.

Of Ginger,called Beledi.

GInger *Beledi*,groweth on euery side about *Calecut*, from sixe to ntene myles, and is wooꝛth the *Bahar*.xl. *Fanans*, and sometymes fyftie, which is lesse then one *Marchetto* the pounde. They bꝛyng it from the mountaynes,and out of the countrey,to the citie,where they sell it by retayle to the Indian merchauntes, who geather it togeather in great quantitie, and keepe it to such tyme as the Mooꝛes shippes arrꝛue there,to whom they sell it,by the pꝛice of.xc. *Fanans*,to.Cx.which is lesse then two *Marchetti* the pounde,bycause the weight is greater.

Of Ginger Mechino.

GInger *Mechino* groweth, begynnyng from the mountaine of *Deli*,vnto *Canonor*. It is small, and not so whyte noꝛ so good as the other. It is wooꝛth the *Bahar* in *Canonor*,about.60. *Fanans*, whiche is about one *Marchetto* the pounde. They paye foꝛ the *Bahar* sixe *Fanans* in money foꝛ the custome. It is solde vncleansed oꝛ vnpurged.

Of greene Ginger in conserues.

IN *Bengala* is founde great plentie of Ginger *Beledi*, of the which they make muche Ginger in conserues with Suger, and carrie it in stone pottes from *Martabani*, to bee solde in the countrey of *Malabar*,and is wooꝛth the *Farazuola*(which is

is.xxii. poundes and sixe vnces) after the rate of. xiiii. xv. or. xvi. *Fanans*.

That that is freshe and made in conserues, is wooyth in *Calecut*. xxv. *Fanans* the *farazuola*, bycause Suger is deare there.

Greene Ginger to put in conserues, is wooyth in *Calecut* three quarters of one *Fanan* the *farazuola*, which is about two pounds foy one *Marchetto*.

Of the Apothecaries drugges, and of what price they are in Calecut and Malabar.

Lacca of *Martabani*, if it be of the beste, is wooyth the *farazuola*, which is xxii. pounde weyght and sixe ounces of *Portugale*, after sixtiene ounces the pound (which is about fourtie pound weight of the subtile pounde of Venice) and is in value eightiene *Fanans*: which are eightiene *Marcels* of siluer. For one *Fanan*, is in value about one *Marcell* of siluer.

Lacca of the countrey, is wooyth the *farazuola*. Fanan. 12

Boyace that is good and in great peeces, is wooyth the *farazuola*. Fanan. 30. to. 40. & 50.

Camphire that is grosse in cakes, is wooyth the *farazuola*. Fanan. 70. to. 80

Camphire to annoynt Idoles, * * *

Camphire foy theyr children to eate, is wooyth the *Mytigall*. Fanan. 3.

Aguila is wooyth the *farazuola*. Fanan. 300. to. 400.

Lignum aloe, blacke, heauy, and fine, is wooyth. Fanan. 1000.

Muske of the best, is wooyth the ounce Fanan. 36.

Beniamin of the best, is wooyth the *farazuola*. Fanan. 65.

Tamarindi being new, are wooyth the *faraz*. Fanan. 4.

Calamus Aromaticus, the *farazuola*. Fanan. 12.

Endego to dye silke, true and good, the *farazuola*. Fanan. 30.

Mirre, the *farazuola*. Fanan. 18. to. 20.

Frankensense good and in graynes, is wooyth the *farazuola*. Fanan. 15.

Frankensense in paste of the baseste soyte, the *faraz*. Fanan. 3.

Ambracan oy *Amber* grease that is good, is wooyth the *Metigall*. Fanan. 2. to. 3.

Mirabolanes in conserue of suger, the *faraz*. Fanan. 16. to. 25

Cassia, freshe and good, the *farazuola*. Fanan one and a halfe.
Redde Sanders, the *farazuola*. Fanan. 5. to. 6.
Whyte Sanders and Citrine, whiche growe in the Ilande of *Timor*, the *farazuola*. Fanan. 40. to. 60.
Spikenarde, freshe and good, the *faraz*. Fanan. 30. to 40.
Nutmegges, whiche come from the Ilande of *Bandan*, where the *Bahar* is wooyth from. viii. to ten Fanans, (whiche impoyte vi. poundes weyght to the *Marchetto*) are wooyth in *Calecut*, the *faraz*. Fanan. 10. to. 12.
Mace which is brought from the Ilande of *Bandan*, where the *Bahar* is wooyth fyftiene Fanans (which impoyt about one *Marchetto*, the pounde are wooyth in *Calecut*, the *farazuola*. Fanan. 25. to. 30
Turbithes, are wooyth the *farazuola*. Fanan, 13
Wooymeseede of the best kynde, called *Semenzana*, is wooyth the *farazuola*. Fanan. 18.
Zerumba, the *farazuola*. Fanan. 2.
Zedoaria, the *farazuola*. Fanan. 1.
Gumme Serapine, the *farazuola*. Fanan. 20.
Aloe Cicotrine, the *farazuola*. Fanan. 18.
Cardamome in graynes, the *farazuola*. Fanan. 20.
Reubarbe groweth abundantly in the countrey of *Malabar*, and that whiche commeth from *China* by *Malacha*, is wooyth the *farazuola*. Fanan 40 to. 50.
Mirabolani Emblici, the *farazuola*. Fanar. 2.
Mirabolani Belirici, the *farazuola*. Fanan one & a halfe.
Mirabolani citrini & Chebuli, which are all of one soyte. Fanan. 2.
Mirabolani Indi, which are of the same Citrine trees. Fanan. 3.
Tutia, the *farazuola*. Fanan. 30.
Cububes, which growe in the Ilande of *Iaua* or *Giaua*, are there of small price, and solde by measure without weyght.
Opium, which is brought from the citie of *Aden* where it is made, is wooyth in *Calecut* the *faraz*. Fanan. 280. to 320.
Opium of an other soyte, whiche is made in *Cambaia*, is wooyth the *farazuola*. Fanan. 200. to. 250.

Of the weyghtes of Portugale and India: And howe they agreee.

The pounde of the olde weight, conteyneth .xiiii. vnces.
The pounde of the newe weyght conteyneth .xvi. vnces.
Eight *Cantares* of the olde weyght, make .vii. of the newe.
And euery newe *Cantare*, is of .C. .xxviii. poundes, after xvi. vnces to the pounde.
Euery olde *Cantare*, conteyneth thre quarters and an halfe of the newe *Cantare*: And is of .C. xxviii. poundes, after .xiii. vnces the pounde.
One *Farazyoles*, is. xxii. poundes of .xiiii. vnces, and .vi. vnces moze, with two fyfte partes.
Twentie *Farazuoles*, are one *Bahar*.
One *Bahar* is .iiii. *Cantares* of the olde weight of Portugale.
All the Spices and dzugges, and al suche other thynges as come from *India*, are solde in Portugale by the olde weyght and all the rest by the newe weyght.

Herby maie we wel consider, that as we ought to reioyce and geue God thankes foz the abundaunce of all these thinges, which he causeth the earth so plentifully to bzyng fooztb to our vse, so maye we lament the abuse of men, whose couetousnesse causeth great dearth and scarsenesse in the myddest of abundaunce: herein no lesse offendyng the lawe of nature, then do such as by witchcrafte do entermingle poyson with thynges created foz the health of man, oz by inchauntment corrupt the seedes in the grounde: yea rather, as the vnnaturall mother, who destroyeth the chylde whom she hath long nurysbed.

Of

Of the voyage made by the Spanyardes round about the world.

THe voyage made by the Spanyardes rounde about the worlde, is one of the greatest and most marueylous thynges that haue ben knowen to our tyme. And although in many thynges we excel our ancient predecessours, in this especially we so far exceed al their inuentions, that ỳ like hath not heretofore ben knowen to this day. This viage was written particulerly by *Don Peter Martyr* of *Angleria*, being one of ỳ counsaile of themperours *Indies*, to whom also was commytted ỳ writing of the hystorie & examinatiō of al such as returned from thence into Spaine to ỳ citie of Siuile, in the yeere .1522. But sendyng it to Rome to be printed, in that miserable tyme when the citie was sacked, it was lost, and not founde vnto this daye, or any memorie remaynyng thereof, sauyng such as some that read the same haue borne in mynde. And among other notable thynges by hym written as touchyng that voyage, that is one, that the Spanyardes hauyng sayled about three yeeres and one moneth, and the most of them notyng the dayes, daye by daye (as is the maner of al them that sayle by the Ocean, they found when they were returned to Spaine, ỳ they had lost one daye: So that at their arryuall at the porte of Siuile, beyng the seuenth daye of September, was by their accompt but the syxte daye. And whereas *Don Peter Martyr* declared ỳ strange effect of this thyng to a certayne excellent man, who for his singuler learnyng was greatly aduaunced to honour in his common wealth, and made Themperours ambassadour: this worthy gentleman, who was also a great Philosopher & Astronomer, answered, that it coulde not otherwyse chaunce vnto them, hauyng sayled three yeeres contynually, euer folowyng the Sunne towarde the West: and sayde furthermore, that they of olde tyme obserued, that all suche as sayled behynd the Sunne towarde the West, dyd greatly lengthen the daye. And albeit that the sayde booke of *Peter Martyr* is perished, yet hath not

Don Peter Martyr.

Rome sacked.

A daye lost in three yeeres & one moneth.

fortune

fortune permytted that the memorie of so worthy and marueylous an enterpryse shoulde vtterly be extincte: forasmuche as a certayne noble gentelman of the citie of *Vincenza* in Italie, called master *Antonie Pigafetta* (who beyng one of the companie of that voyage, and after his returne into Spayne in the shyppe *Victoria*, was made knyght of the Rhodes) wrote a particular and large booke thereof, whiche he gaue to Themperours Maiestie, and sent a copie of the same into Fraunce, to the lady Regent, mother vnto the French king, who committed it to an excellent philosopher, called master *Iacobus Faber*, hauing long studied in Italy, wyllyng hym to translate it into the Frenche tongue. This booke therefore was printed fyrst in the Frenche tongue, and then in the Italian, with also an epistle to the Cardinall of *Salsepurge* as touchyng the same voyage, written by *Maximilian Transiluane* secretarie to Themperours Maiestie, in the yeere 1522. And doubtlesse among all the cities of Italie, the citie of *Vincenza* may herein muche glorie, that besyde the auncient nobilitie, and many excellent and rare wyttes whiche it hath brought forth, aswell in learnyng as discipline of warre, it hath also had so worthy and valiaunt a gentleman as was the sayde master *Antonie Pigafetta*, who hauyng compassed about the ball or globe of the worlde, hath lykewyse described that voyage particularly. For the whiche his so noble and wonderfull an enterpryse so happily atchiued, if the same had ben done in the olde tyme, when Thempyre of the Greekes and Romans florysshed, he shoulde doubtlesse haue ben rewarded with an Image of marble or gold, erected in a place of honour, in perpetuall memorie, and for a singular example of his vertue to the posteritie. In fine, this may we boldly affyrme, that the antiquitie had neuer such knowledge of the worlde, whiche the Sunne compasseth about in .xxiiii. houres, as we haue at this present, by the industrie of men of this our age. But before I speake any thyng of the voyage, I haue thought it good fyrst to adde hereunto the Epistle of *Maximilian Transiluane*, which he wrote to the Cardinall of *Salsepurge*, as a preface to his sayde booke.

It is now found with one master Harold, a prebend in wyndsor. Antonie Pigafetta.

Iacobus Faber.

Maximilian Transiluane.

The rewarde of noble enterpryse

The antiquitie had no such knowledge of the world as we haue.

The

¶ The Epistle of Maximilian Transiluane, secretarie to the Emperours Maiestie: written to the ryght honorable and reuerende lorde, the lord Cardinal of Salepurge, of the marueylous and woonderfull nauigation made by the Spanyardes rounde about the worlde in the yeere of Christ. M.D.xix.



The Ilandes of Molucca.

IN these dayes (my most honorable and reuerend lord) returned one of those fiue ships, whiche, the yeere before Themperours beyng at *Saragosa* in Spaine, were at his maiesties commaundement sent to the newe worlde, heretofore vnknowen vnto vs, to seeke the Ilandes of spices. For albeit the Portugales bryng vs great quantitie of Spyces from that part of East India, whiche in olde tyme was called *Aurea Chersonesus* (where is nowe thought to be the great rych citie of *Malaccha*) yet in East India growe none of those Spyces, except Pepper. For other Spyces, as Sinamome, Cloues, Nutte-megs, and Mase (whiche is the huske that couereth the shell of the Nut) are brought from other farre countreys, and from Ilandes scarsely knowen by theyr names: from the whiche Ilandes they are brought in shyppes or barkes made without any Iron tooles, and tyed togeather with cordes of Date trees, with rounde sayles lykewyse made of the small twigges of the branches of Date trees weaued togeather. These barkes they call *Giunche*: with the whiche barkes and sayles, they make theyr viage with only one wynde in the stearne, or contrarywyse. Neyther yet is it a thyng greatly to be marueiled at, that these Ilands where the Spices growe, haue ben vnknowen so many worldes past vnto our tyme, forasmuch as all suche thynges as vnto this daye haue ben wrytten of old autours of the places where spices growe, are all fabulous and false: Insomuch that the countreys where they affyrme them to growe, are nowe certaynely founde to be further from the place where they growe in deede, then we are from them. For lettyng passe many other thynges that are wrytten, I wyll speake more of this which *Herodotus* (otherwise a famous auctoure) affirmeth, that Sinamome is founde in the

Aurea Chersonesus.

Malaccha.

Spices.

The Ilandes of Spices vnknowen in olde tyme.

toppes

loppes of the nestes of certayne byrdes and foules that bryng it from farre countreys, and especially the Phenyx, the whiche I knowe no man that euer hath seene. But *Plinie*, who might more certaynely affyrme thinges by reason that before his tyme many thynges were knowen and discouered by the nauigations of great Alexander and other, sayth, that Sinamome groweth in that part of Ethiope which the people inhabit called *Troglodity*. Neuertheless it is now found that Sinamome groweth very far from all Ethiope, & now much further from the *Troglodity*, which dwel in caues vnder the ground. But to our men which are now returned from those partes and the Ilandes of spices, hauyng also good knowledge of Ethiope, it was necessarie to passe far beyond Ethiope before they come to these Ilands, and to compasse about the whole worlde, and many tymes vnder the greatest circumference of heauen. The which nauigations made by them, beyng the most marueylous thyng that euer was done by man vppon the earth sence the fyrst creation of the worlde, and neuer founde before, or knowen, or attempted by any other, I haue deliberated faythfully to wryte to your honorable lordeshyppe, and to declare the whole successe thereof. As touchyng which matter, I haue with all diligence made inquisition to knowe the trueth, aswell by relation of the Captayne of that shyppe, as also by conference with euery of the maryners that returned with hym. All whiche, gaue the selfe same information both to Themperours Maiestie, and diuers other: And this with such faythfulnesse and sincerities, that not onely they are iudged of all men to haue declared the trueth in all thynges, but haue thereby also geuen vs certaine knowledge, that al that hath hitherto ben sayd or wrytten of olde autours as touchyng these thynges, are false and fabulous. For who wyl beleeue that men are founde with onely one legge. Or with suche feete whose shadowe couereth theyr bodyes: Or men of a cubite heyght, and other suche lyke, beyng rather monsters then men: Of the whiche, neyther the Spanyardes, who in our tyme sayling by the Ocean sea, haue discouered all the costes of the lande towarde the West both vnder and aboue the Equinoctiall, nor the Portugales, who compassyng about all Affryke, hath passed by all the East, and lykewyse discouered all those costes vnto the great gulfe called *Sinas Magnus*, nor yet the

The Phenix. Plinie.

The nauigations of great Alexander. Ethiope. Troglodity.

The nauigation about the worlde.

The olde autours.

Monsters.

The viages of the Spanyards and Portugales.

Spaniardes

Spaniardes in this theyr last nauigation, in the which they compassed about the whole earth, dyd neuer in any of theyr viages wryte of such monsters: which doubtlesse they would not haue omytted, if they myght haue had certayne knowledge thereof. But nowe intendyng to speake of the whole worlde, I wyll not be long in my preface, but begyn my narration as foloweth.

¶ A briefe declaration of the viage or nauigation made about the worlde. Geathered out of a large booke written hereof by master Antoni Pigafetta Vincentine, knyght of the Rhodes, and one of the companie of that vyage in the which Ferdinando Magalianes a Portugale (whom some call Magellanus) was generall captayne of the nauie.

Sebastian Munster.

ALthough *Sebastian Munster* in his vniuersall Cosmographie in the fyfth booke of the landes of the greater *Asia* (which I translated into Englyshe about .24. yeeres sence) hath wrytten of the vyage of *Magellanus*, declaryng therein how the Spanyardes by the West, and the Portugales by the East, sayling to the Ilandes of *Molucca*, compassed the whole globe of the worlde betweene them, yet haue I heere thought it good to make a breefe repetition of this vyage, addyng hereunto dyuers notable thynges which were not touched of *Munster*, as I haue geathered them out of the bookes of *Antoni Pigafetta*, and *Transiluanus*, wrytyng of the same vyage. For albeit in deede it was a strange and woonderfull thyng that the Spanyardes and Portugales compassed the whole circumference of the worlde betweene them, yet is it more marueylous, that the same was done with one shyp, & one companie of men, as did the Spanyardes in this viage, who keeping their continual course by the west, returned into Spaine by the east: a thing doubtlesse so much more woonderful and strange, then if they had returned from the halfe circumference by the same way they went, in how muche they were ignorant in the vyage neuer attempted before, beside

The Ilandes of Molucca.

the

the thoulande daungers and perylles whiche they were daylye lyke to fal into, aswell by wandryng in vnknowen coastes, as also by fallyng into the handes of the Portugales, by whose dominions in the East they shoulde needes passe of necessitie, not trusting to their gentleneſſe for the controuersie whiche had been long betweene them for the Ilandes of *Molucca*. I wyl therfore (as I haue sayde) make a briefe rehearsal of this viage, from the begynnyng to the endyng, omittyng neuertheleſſe many notable thynges, whiche are more largely described in the bookes of *Maximilianus Transiluanus*, and *Antonius Pigafetta*.

Controuerſie betweene the Spanyardes and Portugales.

The tenth day of August, in the yeere of our Lord. 1519. *Ferdinando Magalianes* departed from the port of *Siuile* in *Spayne*, with a nauie of fyue shippes, and 237. men, wel furnished with all thynges necessary. And saylyng first downe by the ryuer of *Guadalchiber*, which runneth from the sayd port into the sea, they came first to a place named *Giouan Dulpharaz*, where are many villages of the Moores: and from thence, arryued at a castle of the duke of *Medina Sidonia*, where is the port from whiche they enter into the sea, & to the cape saint *Vincent*, beyng distant from the *Equinoctial*. 37. degrees, and from the sayd port. 10. leagues, and is from thence to Siuile betweene 17. and 20. leagues. Heere they remayned certayne dayes, to make newe prouision of such thinges as they lacked. Departyng from hence the 20. day of September, they arryued the 26. day of the same moneth at one of the Ilandes of *Canarie*, called *Tenerife*, beyng 25. degrees aboue the *Equinoctial*. In one of these Ilandes is none other water but that is continually engendred of a cloude, which appeareth dayly at noone tyde, as though it descended from heauen, and compasseth about a certayne great tree, from whose branches distylleth great aboundaunce of water, and falleth in streames from the roote of the same, into certaine trenches and cesternes, made and placed to receyue it. This water seruety sufficiently all the inhabitauntes and cattayle of the Iland. The lyke thyng is also seene in the Ilande of saint *Thomas*, lying directly vnder the Equinoctial line.

Ferdinando Magalianes.

The Cape of saint Vicent.

The Ilandes of Canarie.

Water engendred of a cluds.

The Iland of S. Thomas.

The thirde day of October, about mydnyght, the captayne commaunded them to lyght fyrebrandes, and to hoyse vp theyr sayles, directyng theyr course towarde the South, saylyng

betweene

Cape verde.

saylyng betweene *Capo Verde* of *Affrike*, and the Ilandes lyeng about the same, beyng from the *Equinoctial* fourteene degrees & a halfe. They sayled thus many dayes in the syght of the coast of

Guinea in Ethiope.

Guinea of *Ethiope*, where is the mountayne called *Serra Liona*, beeing eyght degrees aboue the *Equinoctial*. In this coast they had no maner of contrary wynde, but a great caime, and fayre weather, for the space of threescore and ten dayes, in the whiche they came vnder the *Equinoctial* line. In this viage they sawe many

Fyshes and monsters of the sea.

strange Fyshes, & monsters of the Sea, belyde another strange thyng whiche appeared vnto them: For there appeared in their

The fyre of S. Helene and S. Nicolas.

shippes certayne flames of fyre, burnyng very cleare, whiche they cal saint *Helen*, & saint *Nicholas*: these appeared as though they had been vpon the mast of the shippes, in suche clearenesse,

A tempest.

that they tooke away theyr syght for the space of a quarter of an houre, by reason wherof they so wandred out of theyr course, and were dispearsed in sunder, that they in maner dispayred to meete agayne: but (as God would) the sea and tempest beyng quieted, they came safely to their determined course. And before I speake

The natural cause of suche fyres as fall in the shyppes.

any further of the viage, I haue heere thought good to say somewhat of these strange fyers, whiche some ignorant folke thynke to be spirites, or suche other phantasies, wheras they are but naturall thynges, proceedyng of naturall causes, and engendred of certayne exhalations. Of these therfore, the great Philosopher of our tyme *Hieronimus Cardanus*, in his second booke *De Subtilitate*,

Cardanus.

wryteth in this maner. There are two maner of fyers engendred of exhalations, wherof the one is hurtful, the other without hurt. That which is hurtfull, is fyre in deede, engendred of malicious and venemous vapours, whiche in succesle of tyme take fyre, as apt matters to be kyndled. The other kynde is no true fyre, but lyke the matter that is in such olde putri-

Two kyndes of fiers engendred of exhalations.

fied wood, as geueth the shynyng of fyre, without the substaunce or qualitie therof. Of the kynde of true fyre, is the Fyreball or

True fyre and false fyre.

Starre, commonly called saint *Helen*, which is sometyme seene about the mastes of shippes, beyng of such fyerie nature, that it sometyme melteth brasen vessels, and is a token of drowning, forasmuch as this chaunceth only in great tempestes: for the vapour or exhalation wherof this fyre is engendred, can not be dryuen togeather or compact in fourme of fyre, but of a grosse vapour,

pour, and by a great power of wynde, and is therefore a token of imminent perill: As on the contrary parte, the lyke fyres called in olde tyme *Castor* and *Pollux*, and nowe named the two lightes of Sainct Peter and Sainct Nicolas, which for the most parte fall on the cables of the shyppes, leappng from one to an other, with a certayne flutteryng noyse lyke byrdes, are a token of securitie, and of the tempest ouerpassed: For they are but vapours cleauyng to the cables, which in succesſe of tyme, the fyre passing from one to an other, appeare in the similitude of a lyght candel. They are a token of securitie, bycause they are litle, not slowe or grosse, whereby they myght haue ioyned altogeather in one, and been thereby more malicious, and lasted longer, whereas beyng many and but little, they are the sooner consumed. Hytherto *Cardanus*. But let vs nowe returne to the vyage.

Castor and Pollux.
The lightes of Sainct Peter and Sainct Nicolas.

When they had sayled paste the Equinoctiall lyne, they losse the sight of the North starre, and sayled by the southwest, vntyll they came to a lande named the lande of *Bressil*, whiche some call *Brasilia*, beyng .xxii. degrees and a halfe towarde the south pole or pole Antarctike. This lande is continuate and one firme lande with the cape of saint Augustine, whiche is .viii. degrees from the Equinoctiall. In this lande they were refreshed with many good fruites of innumerable kyndes, and founde here also very good suger canes, and diuers kindes of beasts and other thinges, which I omit for brenitie. They entered into this hauen on saint Lucies day: where the Sunne being theyr *Zenith* (that is, the poynte of heauen directly ouer theyr heades) they felte greater heate that day, then when they were vnder the Equinoctial lyne. This lande of *Brasile* is very large and great, and bygger then all Spayne, Portugale, Fraunce, and Italie, and is most abundaunt in all thinges. The people of this countrey pray to no maner of thyng: but lyue by the instincte of nature, and to the age of C.xx. and C.xl. yeeres. Both the men and women goe naked, and dwell in certayne long houses. They are very docible, and soone allured to the Christian fayth.

They losse the sight of the North starre.
The Iſlande of Brasile.
The South pole.
Suger.
The greatnesse of the lande of Brasile.

Thirtiene dayes after that they arryued at the sayde poynte, they departed from this lande, and sayled to the .xxiiii. degree and a halfe towarde the pole *Antartike*, where they founde a great ryuer of freshe water, and certayne Caniballes. Of these

Caniballes.

Gyantes. they sawe one out of theyr shyppes, of stature as byg as a Gyant, hauing a voice like a Bull. Our men pursued them, but they were so swyfte of foote that they coulde not ouertake them. About the mouth of this riuer, are seuen Ilandes, in the byggest whereof they founde certayne pyecious stones, and called it the cape of sainct Marie. The Spanyardes thought that by this ryuer they myght haue passed into the South sea, but they were deceyued in theyr opinion: For there was none other passage then by the riuer, which is .xviii. leagues large in the mouth. Thus folowing this coaste by the tracte of the lande towarde the pole *Antartike*, they came to a place where were two Ilandes replenished with Geese and Wolues of the sea, which some thinke to be those fyshes that we call Pikes. These were in such number, that in an houre all the fyue shyppes might haue ben laden with Geese, being all of blacke colour, and such as can not flee. They liue of fish, and are so fatte, that they could scarsely flay them. They haue no feathers, but a certayne downe, and theyr bylles lyke Rauens bylles. These Woolues of the sea are of dyuers colours, and of the bygnesse of Calues, with theyr heades of golden colour. Here were they in great danger by tempest: But as soone as the three fyres, called sainct Helen, sainct Nycolas, and saint Clare, appeared vppon the cables of the shyppes, sodaynely the tempeste and furie of the wyndes ceassed. Departyng from hence, they sayled to the. 49. degree and a halfe vnder the pole *Antartike*: where beyng wyntered, they were inforced to remayne there for the space of two monethes, all which tyme they sawe no man, excepte that one day by chaunce they espyed a man of the stature of a Gyant, who came to the hauen daunsing and singyng, and shortly after seemed to cast dust ouer his head. The Captayne sent one of his men to the shore with the shyppe Boate, who made the lyke signe of peace. The which thyng the Gyant seeyng, was out of feare, and came with the Captaynes seruaunt to his presence into a little Ilande. When he sawe the Captayne with certayne of his company about him, he was greatly amased, and made signes, holdyng vp his hande to heauen, signifying thereby that our men came from thence. This Gyant was so byg, that the head of one of our men of a meane stature, came but to his waste. He was of good corporature, & well made

Insulæ gemmarum.

Cap. S. Marie.

The pole Antartike.

Geese.

Sea woolues.

The .xlix. degree of the South pole.

Gyantes.

The bygnesse of the Gyantes.

made in all partes of his bodie, with a large visage painted with diuers colours, but for the most parte yelow Vppon his cheekes were paynted two Hartes, and red circles about his eyes. The heare of his head was coloured whyte, and his apparell was the skynne of a beast sowde togeather. This beast as (seemed vnto vs) had a large head, and great eares lyke vnto a Mule, with the body of a Camell, and tayle of a horse. The feete of the Giant were foulded in the sayde skynne, after the maner of shooes. He had in his hande a bygge and shorte bowe, the stryng whereof was made of a sinewe of that beaste. He had also a bundell of long arrows made of Reedes, feathered after the maner of ours, typte with sharpe stones in the steade of Iron heades. The Captayne caused him to eate and drynke, & gaue him many thinges, and among other a great lookyng glasse: In the which as soone as he sawe his owne lykenesse, was sodaynly afrayde, and starte backe with suche violence, that hee ouerthrewe two that stoode nearest about him. When the Captayne had thus gyuen him certayne Haukes belles, and other great belles, with also a lookyng glasse, a combe, and a payre of beades of glasse, he sent him to lande with foure of his owne men well armed. Shortly after, they sawe an other Giant of somewhat greater stature, with his bowe and arrowes in his hande. As hee drewe neare vnto our men, he layde his hande on his head, and poynted vp towarde heauen, and our men dyd the lyke. The Captayne sent his shyppe Boate to bryng him to a litle Islande beyng in the Hauen. This Giant was very tractable and pleasaunte. He soong and daunsed, and in his daunsing lefte the print of his feete on the grounde. He remayned long with our men, who named him *Iohan*. He coulde well speake and playnely pronounce these woordes, *Iesus, Aue Maria, Iohannes*, euen as we doe, but with a bygger voyce. The Captayne gaue him a shert of linnen cloth, & a coate of white woollen cloth: also a cappe, a combe, a looking glasse, with diuers such other thinges, and so sent him to his company. The day folowing, he resorted agayne to the shyppes, and brought with him one of those great beastes, which he gaue the Captayne. But after that day, they neuer sawe him more, supposing him to be slayne of his owne company, for the conuersation he had with our men.

An other Giant.

Foure other Giantes.

After other .xb. dayes were past, there came foure other Giantes without any weapons, but had hyd theyr bowes and arrowes in certaine bushes. The Captaine retayned two of these, which were youngest and beste made. He tooke them by a deceite, in this maner, that giuing them knyues, sheares, looking glasses, belles, beades of Crystall, & suche other trifles, he so filled theyr handes that they coulde holde no moze : then caused two payze of shackels of Iron to be put on theyr legges, makyng signes that he would also giue them those chaynes: which they lyked very wel, bycause they were made of bright and shining metall. And whereas they could not carry them bycause theyr handes were full, the other Giantes would haue caryed them: but the captaine would not suffer them. When they felte the shackels faste about theyr legges, they began to doubt: but the Captayne dyd put them in comfort, and bad them stande still. In fine, when they sawe howe they were deceiued, they roared lyke bulles, & cryed vppon theyr great deuill *Setebos*, to helpe them. Being thus taken, they were immediately seperate and put in sundry shippes. They could neuer bynde the handes of the other two, yet was one of them with much difficultie ouerthrowen by .ix. of our men, & his hands boũd: but he sodeinly loosed him selfe and fled, as did also the other that came with them. In their fleeing, they shot of their arrowes and slue one of our men. They say that when any of them dye, there appeare .x. or .xii deuils, leaping and daunsing about the bodie of the dead, and seeme to haue their bodies paynted with diuers colours, and that among other, there is one seene bigger then the residue, who maketh great mirth & reioysing. This great deuyll they call *Setebos*, and call the lesse *Cheleule*. One of these Giantes which they tooke, declared by signes that he had seene deuylles with two hornes aboue their heades, with long heare downe to theyr feete: and that they caste foorth fyre at theyr throates both before and behynde. The Captayne named these people *Patagoni*. The most parte of them weare the skynnes of such beastes whereof I haue spoken before : and haue no houses of continuance, but make certayne cotages, which they couer with the sayd skynnes, and carry them from place to place. They lyue of raw flesche, and a certayne sweete roote, which they call *Capar*. One of these whiche they had in theyr shyppes, dyd eate at one meale

Two Giantes are taken by a pollicie.

The deuyll Setebos.

Deuyls appeare to the Giantes when they dye.

Patagoni.

meale a baskette of Bysket, and droonke a bowle of water at a draught. The Giantes feeding.

They remayned fyue monethes in this porte of Sainct *Iulian*, where certayne of the vnder captaynes conspiryng the death of theyr Generall, were hanged and quartered: among whom the Treasurer *Luigo* of *Mendozza* was one. Certayne of the other conspiratours, he lefte in the sayde lande of *Patogoni*. They conspire against theyr Captayne.

Departyng from hence, to the.52. degree towarde the pole *Antartike*, lackyng a thirde parte, they founde a ryuer of freshe water and good fyshe. Theyr shyppes were here in great daunger. They remayned two monethes in this porte, where they made newe prouision of freshe water, fuell, and fyshe. Here the Captayne caused all his men to bee confessed. Confession.

Approchyng to the.52. degrees, they found the straight now called the straight of *Magellanus*, beyng in some place a hundred and ten leagues in length, and in breadth somewhere very large, and in other places little more then halfe a league in breadth. On both the sides of this straight, are great and hygh mountaynes couered with snowe, beyonde the which, is the enteraunce into the sea of *Sur*. This enteraunce the Captayne named *Mare Pacificum*. Heere one of the shippes stole away priuilie, and returned into Spaine: In this was one of the Giantes, who dyed assoone as he felte the heate that is about the Equinoctiall lyne. When the Captaine *Magalianes* was paste the straight, and sawe the way open to the other mayne sea, he was so glad thereof, that for ioye the teares fell from his eyes, and named the poynt of the lande from whence he first sawe that sea, *Capo Desiderato*. Supposing that the shyppe which stole away had been lost, they erected a crosse vpon the top of a hygh hil, to directe their course in the straight, if it were theyr chaunce to come that way. They founde that in this straight in the moneth of October, the nyght was not past foure houres long. They founde in this straight at euery three myles, a safe hauen, and excellent water to drynke: wood also, and fyshe, and great plentie of good hearbes. They thinke that there is not a fayrer straight in the worlde. Here also they sawe certaine fleeing fyshes. The other Giant which remayned with them in the shyppe, named breade *Capar*: water, *Oli*, redde cloth, *Cherecai*, red colour, *Cheiche*, blacke colour, *Amel*: And spoke all his wordes

The straight of Magellanus.

The South sea.

Mare pacificum.

The Giants died for heate.

Capo Desiderato.

Short nightes in the moneth of October.

Fleeing fyshes.

The Giantes language.

in the throate. On a tyme, as one made a crosse before him, and kyssed it, shewyng it vnto him, he sodaynely cryed *Setebos*, and declared by signes, that if they made any more crosses, *Setebos* would enter into his bodie, and make him burst. But when in fine he sawe no hurte come thereof, he tooke the crosse, and imbraced and kyssed it oftentymes, desiryng that he myght be a Christian before his death: He was therefore baptysed, and named Paule. Departyng out of this straight into the sea called *Mare Pacificum*, the xxviii. day of Nouember, in the yeere. 1520. they sayled three monethes and twentie dayes before they sawe any land, and hauyng in this tyme consumed all their Bysket and other victualles, they fell into suche necessitie, that they were inforced to eate the pouder that remayned thereof, beyng nowe full of woormes, and stynkyng lyke pysse by reason of the salte water. Their fresshe water was also putrified and become yelowe. They dyd eate skynnes and peeces of leather, whiche were fouled about certayne great ropes of the shyppes: but these skynnes beyng made very harde by reason of the Sunne, rayne, and wynde, they hung them by a corde in the sea, for the space of foure or fiue dayes, to mollifie them, and sodde them, and ate them. By reason of this famyne and vncleane feedyng, some of their gummes grewe so ouer their teethe, that they dyed miserably for hunger. And by this occasion dyed menetiene men, and also the Giaunt, with an Indian of the lande of *Brasile*, otherwyse called *Terra de papagalli*, that is, the lande of Popingayes. Beside these that dyed. xxv or. xxx. were so sicke, that they were not able to doe any seruice with their handes or armes for feeblenesse: So that there was in maner none without some disease. In these three monethes and. xx. dayes, they sayled foure thousande leagues in one gulfe, by the sayde sea called *Pacificum*, (that is) peaceable, which may well be so called, forasmuch as in all this tyme, hauyng no sight of any lande, they had no misfortune of wynde or any other tempest. During this tyme also, they discouered only two little Ilandes vnhabited, where they sawe nothing but birdes & trees, and therefore named them infortunate Ilandes, being one from the other about two hundred leagues distant. The first of these Ilandes is from the Equinoctiall towarde the pole *Antartike*. xv. degrees, and the other fiue. Their sayling was in such sorte, that they

The Giant is baptised.

Three monethes sayling without the sight of lande.

Extreme famyne.

Diseases of famyne.

Infortunate Ilandes.

they sayled dayly betweene l.lx.to.lxx.leagues. So that in fine, if God of his mercy had not gyuen them good weather, it was necessary that in this so great a sea, they should all haue dyed for hunger. Which neuertheleſſe they escaped so hardly, that it may be doubted whether euer the lyke viage may be attempted with so good succeſſe. They considered in this Nauigation that the pole *Antartike*, hath no notable starre, after the sorte of the pole *Artike*. But they sawe many starres geathered togeather, which are lyke two cloudes, one separate a little from an other, & somewhat darke in the myddest. Betweene these, are two starres, not very byg, nor much shynyng, which moue a little: and these two are the pole *Antartike*. The needell of their compasse varied somwhat, and turned euer towarde the pole *Artike*, neuertheleſſe, had no suche force, as when it is in these partes of the pole *Artike*: Insomuch that it was necessarie to helpe the needle with the lode stone (commonly called the Adamant) before they coulde sayle therewith, bycause it moued not, as it doeth when it is in these our partes. When they were in the myddest of the gulfe, they sawe a crosse of fyue cleare starres, directly towarde the Weste, and of equall distance the one from the other.

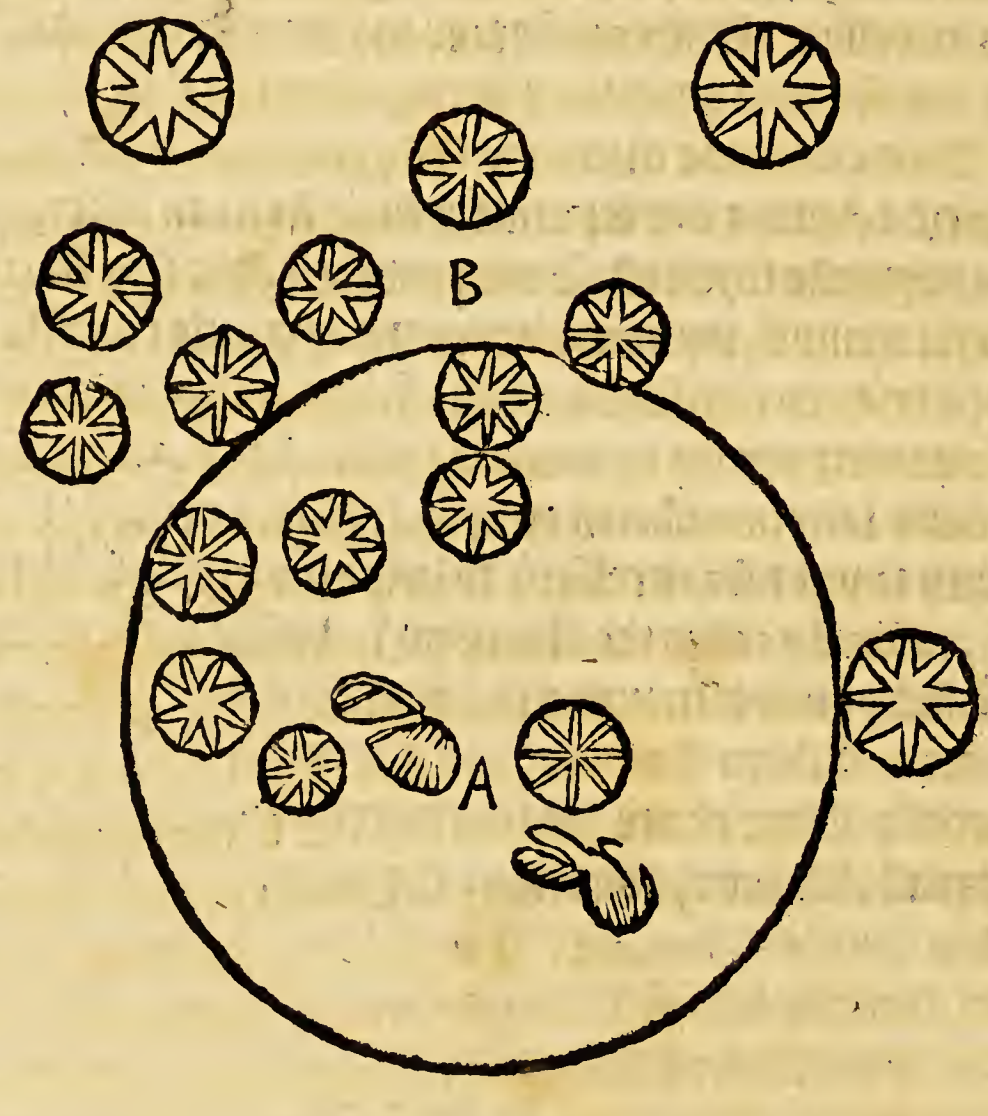
What they sayled dayly.

The starres about the South pole.

The needle of the compase.

The lode stone.

The order of the ſtarres about the pole Antartike, ſome haue figured in this maner.



A. The pole Antartike. B. The Croſſe.

The Equinoctiall line.

In theſe dayes they ſayled betweene the Weſt and South, ſo farre that they approched to the Equinoctiall lyne, and were in longitude from the place from whence they firſt departed, a hundred and twentie degrees. In this courſe they ſayled by two Ilandes of exceedyng heyght, whereof the one named *Cipanghu*, is twentie degrees from the pole *Antartike*: and the other named *Sumbdit*, fyftiene degrees. When they were paſte the Equinoctiall line, they ſayled betweene the Weſt & Southweſt, at the quarter of the Weſt, towarde the Southweſt more then a C leagues, changing their ſayles to the quarter of the ſouthweſt, vntyll they came to the thirtiene degrees aboue the Equinoctiall towarde the pole *Artyke*, intending as much as were poſſible, to

The Ilands of Cipanghu and Sumbdit.

approche

apprach to the Cape called of the olde writers *Cattigara*: the whiche is not founde as the olde Cosmographers haue discribed it, but is towarde the north about .xii. degrees, as they afterward understoode.

When they had thus sayled .lxx. leagues of this voyage in the xii. degree aboue the Equinoctiall, and .C. xlvi. degrees of longitude (as I haue sayde) the syrst daye of March they discouered a litle Ilande towarde the northwest, and two other towarde the southwest: but the one was hygher and bygger then the other. In the byggest of these, the generall captayne woulde haue rested hym selfe a whyle, but he coulde not, by reason the people of these Ilandes resorted continually to the shyppes with theyr Canoas, and stole nowe one thyng & nowe an other, in suche sorte that our men coulde take no rest: and therefore demaunded of the captaine that they myght stryke theyr sayles to bryng the shyppes to lande. But the captayne beyng prouoked to anger, went aland with fourtie armed men, and burnt about fyftie of theyr houses, with many of theyr Canoas, and slue also about seuen men, and recouered a shyppe boate whiche the Barbarians had stolne, and so departed, folowyng his voyage. The Captayne named these Ilandes *Insulæ Latronum*, that is, the Ilandes of theeues. When our men had so wounded some of them with arrowes, that they were stryken through both sydes, they pulled foorth the arrowes, not ceassyng to marueyle at them, tyll they fell downe dead: And yet coulde not the other so depart, but styll folowed ẏ ships with more then two hundred of their boates, approching as nere to the shyppes as they coulde, and proferryng our men certayne fishes. As the shyps passed with ful sayle in the middest of theyr boates, they sawe in some of them certayne women, lamentyng and tearyng theyr heare, whiche our men thought they dyd for the death of theyr husbandes. As farre as they coulde perceyue, these people lyue at theyr owne lybertie, without any ruler or gouernour. They go naked, and haue blacke beards and blacke heare on theyr heades, whiche they weare long downe to their waistes. They are of the same stature that we are, and well made, of colour like vnto an Olyue. Their women are wel fauored, with blacke & thycke heare on theyr heades, reachyng to the grounde. The men colour theyr teeth redde and blacke, which they

Insulæ Latronum.

People with long heare.

they esteeme a comely thyng. They annoynt theyr bodyes and heare with they oyle of *Cocus*. Theyr boates are some all blacke, some white, and some redde, and haue sayles made of the brode leaues of Date trees, sowed togeather. In the steade of a rudder, they vse a certayne brode boorde, with a staffe in the toy, and may when they wyll, make the sterne the forecastell, or the forecastell the sterne. They sayle so swyftely, that they seeme a farre of, lyke Delphyns swymmyng aboue the water.

The tenth daye of Marche, in the yeere .1521. they wente alande vppon a litle Ilande named *Zamal* .xxx. leagues dystant from the Ilande of theeues. Because this Ilande was not inhabited, they rested here a while, where the captayne caused a pauilion to be pitched for the sycke & crased men, and a hogge to be kylled.

The Ilande of Zamall.

The .xviii. daye of Marche, they sawe a boate with nyne men commyng towarde them, shewyng them selues ioyfull and reioysyng of theyr commyng. They brought many presentes with them, and seemed to be people of muche humanitie. They gaue the Captayne a great fyshe, and a great vessell of the wyne of those Date trees whiche beare the fruite *Cocus*. They made also signes, that within the space of foure dayes, they woulde bryng Ryse, and dyuers foules and beastes, as they dyd in deede. This *Cocus* is a fruit of certayne Date trees, whereof they make bread, wyne, oyle, and vineger. They make wyne in this maner. They cutte a bygge branche of the tree, and hange thereat a reede as bygge as a mans legge, into the whiche droppeth a sweete licoure from the tree, like vnto whyte wyne, somwhat tart, and let the reede continue there from mornyng tyl euenyng, and from euenyng to mornyng. The fruite of this tree called *Cocus*, is as bygge as the head of a man, or more. The fyrst rynde of this, is greene, and of the thyckenesse of two fyngers, hauyng in it certayne threedes whereof they make cordes, with the whiche they tye theyr boates. Under this rynde, there is a thycke shell, which they burne and make pouder therof, and vse it as a remedy for certayne diseases. Under this shell, is a white substance lyke the carnel of a Nut, being a fynger in thyckenesse, which they eate with flesshe and fyshe, as we do bread. It hath the taste of an Almonde, and is vsed in the steade of bread, when it is dryed.

Wyne of Date trees.

The marueilous fruite Cocus.

In

In the myddeſt of this carnell, is a cleare and ſweete water, beyng very holſome and cordiale. This water ſometyme congealeth and lyeth within the ſhell lyke an egge. When they intende to make oyle hereof, they laye it to putrifie in water, and boyle it vntyll it be lyke oyle or liquide butter. When they intende to make vineger, they ſuffer onely the water to putrifie, and then ſet it to the Sunne, where it becommeth vineger, lyke vnto that which is made of whyte wyne. And when they mingle the carnell with the water whiche is in the myddeſt of the fruite, and ſtrayne it through a cloth, they make a mylke thereof, lyke vnto Goates mylke. Theſe Date trees are lyke vnto them that beare Dates, but are not ſo full of knottes. With the iuice of two of theſe Date trees, a whole familie of tenne perſons may be nentayned with wyne, vſyng one .viii. dayes, and the other, other .viii. dayes: for they ſhoulde els be dryed and wythered. Theſe trees continue for the ſpace of a hundred yeeres. This Ilande where they founde this humane and gentle people, is called *Zuluan*, and is not very bygge. About this Ilande they founde many other Ilandes, and therefore named this ſea *Archipelago di San Lazaro*, that is, the great ſea of ſaint Lazarus, beyng tenne degrees aboue the Equinoctiall towarde our pole, and C.lxi. from the place from whence they departed. The people of this Ilande are *Caphranita* (that is Gentiles. They go naked, ſauyng that they couer theyr priuie partes with a cloth made of the rynd of a certaine tree. The chiefeſt men, haue about theyr heades a ſylken cloth of needle wooyke. They are groſſe and broade ſet, and of the colour of an Olyue. They annoynt theyr bodies with the oyle of *Cocus*, to defende them agaynſt the heate of the Sunne, and dryneſſe of the wynde. The .xxv. daye of Marche, they departed from hence, and directed theyr courſe betweene the Weſt and ſouthweſt, and ſayled betweene foure Ilandes, named *Cenalo*, *Huinanghan*, *Hibuſſon*, and *Abarien* &c.

The Ilande of zuluan.

The ſea called Archipelago di ſan Lazaro.

Gentiles.

Foure Ilandes.

The .xxviii. daye of Marche, they came to the Ilande of *Buthuan*, where they were honorably entertayned of the Kyng and the Prynce his ſonne, who gaue them muche golde and ſpices. The Captayne gaue the Kyng a veſture of red cloth, and an other of yelowe, made after the Turkyſhe faſhion, and alſo a redde cappe; and gaue lykewyſe to other that came

The Ilande of Buthuan.

with

with hym certayne knyues , glalles, and beades of Cryſtall. After that the Captayne had ſhewed the Kyng the ſecretes of his ſhyp, and ſuche merchaundies as he had therein, he cauſed a peece of ordinaunce ſodenly to be ſhotte of, whereat the kyng was greatly amaſed, butyl the Captayne comforted hym. Then the Captayne commaunded one of his men to be armed from the head to the foote , and cauſed three other to ſtryke hym with theyr ſwoordes, whereat the kyng marueyled greatly, and ſayde to thinterpretour (who was a ſlaue borne in *Malacha*) that one of thoſe armed men was able to encounter with a hundred of his men . But he marueyled much more, when the Captayne tolde hym by thinterpretoure, howe he founde the ſtraycht by the compaſſe and lode ſtone, and howe many dayes they were without ſyght of any lande . Then aſkyng lycence to depart, the Captaine ſent two of his men with hym, of ỹ which *Antonie Pigafetta* was one . When the kyng ſawe *Antonie Pigafetta* wryte the names of many thynges, and afterwarde rehearſed them againe, he marueyled yet more, makyng ſygnes that ſuch men deſcended from heauen . The kyng brought them fyrſt to his pallace, where he interteyned them honorably, and gaue them many gyftes, as dyd alſo the Prince in his pallace, beyng in an other Ilande named *Caleghan*.

The Ilande of Caleghan.

As they ſyfted a certeyne myne of earth in the kynges Iland, they founde peeces of golde, ſome as bygge as Nuttes, and other as bygge as Egges . All the kynges veſſelles were of gold, and his houſe well furnyſhed . In al the whole nation there was no man of comelyer perſonage then the kyng : he had his heare long downe to his ſhulders, and very blacke, with a vaile of ſylke rouled about his head, and two great rynges of golde hangyng at his eares . He had about his myddle, a cloth wrought of cotten and ſylke, impaled with golde, and reachyng downe to his knees . On his one ſyd, he had a long daggar with a hafte of gold, and the ſheathe of a fayre kynde of carued woodde . He had on euery finger three rynges of golde, and had his bodie annoynted with oyle of *ſtorax* and *Beniamin* . The natural coloure of his face was lyke vnto the coloure of an Oliue : and all his body beſyde paynted with diuers colours . The kynges name was *Raia Colambu*, and the prince was called *Raia Siagu*.

Plenty of gold.

The kyng of Butuan.

The

The last day of Marche, neare vnto Easter, the Captayne caused his priest to say Masse, and sent to the kyng by the interpretour, that his comming a land at that tyme was not to dyne with hym, but only to heare Masse. The Captayne came aland, with fyftie of his men, in their best apparel, without weapons or harnesse, and all the residue well armed. Before the boates came to lande, he caused sixe peeces of ordinaunce to be shot of, in token of peace, and so came alande, where the two kynges imbraced hym, and accompanied hym to the place appoynted for Masse to be sayde, not farre from the sea syde. Somewhat before the begynnyng of Masse, the Captayne sprynkled the kynges with Damaske water. When the priest was at myd Masse, at the offertorie, the kinges profered them selues to go to kysse the crosse with the Captayne, but offered nothyng. At the tyme of sacryng, when the priest lyfted vp the body of Christe, and the Christians kneeled downe and helde vp their handes ioyned togeather, the kynges dyd the lyke also, with great reuerence. In the meane tyme, whyle certayne of the Christians were at the Communion, a handgunne was shot of, to signifie vnto them that were in the shippes to discharge al their ordinaunce. When Masse was finished, the Captayne caused certayne of his men to put on their harnesse, and to make a cumbat with their naked swoordes, whereat the kynges tooke great pleasure. This doone, the Captayne caused a crosse to be brought foorth, with nayles, and a crowne of thornes, geuyng commaundement to all his men to gyue reuerence therevnto, and signifying to the kynges, by the interpreter, that that banner was gyuen hym by the Emperour his lorde and maister, with commaundement to leaue the same in all places where he came, to the great commoditie and profyte of al such as woulde reuerendly receyue it, as an assured token of frendship, and that he woulde therfore leaue it there, aswel to accomplishe his lordes commaundement, as also that yf at any tyme any ships of Christians shoulde chaunce to come that way, myght by seyng that crosse, perceyue that our men had been wel enterteyned there, and would therfore not only absteine from doing them any hurt or displeasure, but also helpe to ayde them against their enemies: and that therefore it shoulde be requisite to erect that crosse vppon the toppe of the hyghest mountayne that

A combatte.

myght

myght be seene from the sea on euery syde, also to pray vnto it reuerently: and that in so doyng, they should not be hurt with thunder, lyghtnyng, and tempestes. When the kynges heard these woydes, they gaue the captaine great thankes, promisyng gladly to obserue and fulfyl al such thynges as he required. Then the Captaine demaunded, whether they were Mooyes or Gentiles? They aunswered, that they had none other kinde of religion, but that lyftyng vp theyr handes ioyned togeather, and theyr faces towarde heauen, they called vpon theyr God *Abba*. Which aunswere lyked the Captayne very well, because the Gentiles are sooned perswaded to our fayth then the Mooyes.

Mooyes and Gentiles.

Departyng from hence, they came to the Ilandes of *Zeilon*, *Zubut*, *Messana*, and *Calaghan*, by the conduct of certayne Pilots of the sayde kynges. Of these, *Zubut* is the best, and hath the trade of best trafique. In the Ilande of *Messana* they founde Dogges, Cattes, Hogges, Hennes, Goates, Ryse, Synger, *Cocus*, Hyll, Panicke, Barly, Fygges, Oyanges, Waxe, and Golde, in great quantitie. This Ilande is aboue the *Equinoctial* towarde our pole niene degrees, & two thirde partes, and 162. degrees from the place from whence they departed. They remayned in this Ilande for the space of eyght dayes, and then directed their viage toward the Northwest, and passed betweene these fyue Ilandes, *Zeilon*, *Bohol*, *Canghu*, *Barbai*, and *Catighan*.

Mani Ilands.

The Ilande of Messana.

In this Ilande of *Catighan* are certayne great Battes, as bygge as Eagles, of the whiche they tooke one: they are good to be eaten, and of taste much lyke a Henne. There are also Stocke Doues, Turtle Doues, Popingays, & certaine fowles as big as Hennes: these fowles haue litle hornes, & lay great egges, whiche they couer a cubit deapth in the sand, by the heate wherof, & vertue of the Sonne, they are hatched, & the young birdes crepe out of the sand by themselues. From the Ilande of *Messana* to *Catinghan*, are 20. leagues saylyng toward the West. And because the kyng of *Messana* coulde not folowe the shippes, they taryed for him about the Ilandes of *Polo*, *Ticobon*, and *Fozon*, where the Captayne toke hym into his shippe, with certayne of his principal men, and so folowed theyr viage toward the Ilande of *Zubut*, which is about fyftie leagues distant from *Catighan*.

Battes as byg as Eagles.

Fowles with hornes.

Egges hatched in sande.

The Ilande of zubut.

The seuenth day of Aprill, about noone, they entred into the

port of *Zubut*: And passing by many villages and habitations in trees, they came to the citie, where the Captayne gaue commaundement to the maryners to stryke theyr sayles, and to set them selues in order in maner of battayle raye, causyng all the ordinaunce to be shotte of, wherewith all the people were put in great feare. After this, the Captayne sent an ambassadour with thinterpretoure to the kyng of *Zubut*.

When they approched neere to the citie, they found the kyng with a great company of men sore astonyed at the noyse of the gunnes. But thinterpretour aduertised them, that it was the custome of our men, in all suche places where they come, to discharge theyr ordinaunce in token of frendshyppe, and to honour the lord of the citie. With which wordes the kyng and his companye were well quieted. After this, the interpretour declared that his master was the Captayne of the shyppes of the greatest Prince in the worlde, and that they went to discouer the Ilandes of *Molucca*: And further, that hearyng of his good name and fame by the report of the kyng of *Messana*, they determyned to visite him, & to haue vittailes for exchange of their merchaundies. The kyng answered, that he was wel content therewith, and that they were hartyly welcome: Neuertheless, that it was a custom in that place, that al such shyps as entered into that hauen, should pay tribute: And that there were not many dayes past, sence a shyp laden with golde and slaues dyd so paye. In token whereof, he caused to come before hym certayne merchauntes of that company which yet remayned with hym. To this thinterpretour answeared, that forasmuche as his lorde was the Captayne of so myghtie a Prince, he neuer payde tribute to any kyng in the worlde, and would not nowe begyn: Wyllyng hym to take this for a resolute answeare, that if he woulde accepte the peace that was profered him, he shoulde enioy it, and if he rather desyred warre, he should haue his handes ful. When thinterpretour had sayde these woordes, one of the sayde merchauntes (who was a Moore) spake to the kyng in this maner *Cataçaia Chitæ*: that is, Take heede syr: For these men are they that haue conquered *Calecut*, *Malacha*, and all the greater India, and are of suche power, that if you intreate them otherwyse then wel, you may to late knowe what they are able to do, more then they haue done at

A shyppe laden with gold and slaues.

Calecut.

Malacha.

at *Calecut* and *Malaca*. When thinterpretoure hearde these woordes, he sayde, that the kyng his Lorde was of much greater puissaunce and more dominions, and lorde of more shyppes then was the kyng of Portugale: declaryng further that he was kyng of Spayne, and Emperour of all Christendome. Addyng hereunto, that if he woulde not be his frende, he woulde hereafter sende thyther suche a power of armed men as shoulde destroy his countrey. The Moore conferred al these woordes with the king, who sayde that he woulde further deliberate with his counsayle, and geue them a full aunsweare the daye folowyng. In the meane tyme he sent them certayne byttayles and wyne. When all these thynges were declared to the kyng of *Messana*, who was the chiefest thereabout next vnto him, and lord of many Ilandes, he went a lande and repayred to the kyng of *Zubut*, and declared vnto hym the great humanitie and curtesie of the generall Captayne. Shortly after, the Captayne sente certayne of his men with thinterpretour to the kyng of *Zubut*, to knowe his pleasure, and what aunsweare he woulde make them. As they went towarde the courte, they met the kyng commyng in the streate, accompanyed with many of his chiefe men. He caused our men to syt downe by hym, and demaunded of them if there were any more then one Captayne in theyr compaule: and whether it were theyr request that he should paye tribute to Themperour. They aunsweared, that they desyred none other thyng, but that they myght exercise merchaundies with them, and to barter ware for ware. The kyng made aunsweare, that he was well content therewith: wyllyng the Captayne, in token of frendshyp, to sende hym a litle blood of his ryght arme, affyrmyng that he woulde do the lyke. &c.

Sheaddyng of blood is a token of frendshyp.

After this, the kyng of *Messana*, with the kyng of *zubut* his neuie (who was the prince) and certayne other of his gentelmen, came to the shippes, and brought the Captayne many goodly presentes. They entred into great amitie, and had large communication of many thynges. The Captayne persuaded them to the Christian fayth: whiche they gladly embraced, and tooke such pleasure in hearyng the articles of our beliefe, that the teares fell from theyr eyes for ioye. They were baptised, and shortly after all the people of the Ilande. They esteeme nothing more precious then drynkyng glasses of Venice woorke.

The kyng of zubut is baptised.

When

When they came to the citie, they founde the kyng in his Pallace sitting vppon a flooze oz stoxie made of the leaues of Date trees, wzought after a curious deuise, lyke a certayne kynde of mattes. He had vppon his body none other apparell but only a cloth of Bombasine cotton, hangyng before his priuie partes. On his head, he had a vayle of needle wozke, and about his necke a chayne of great pzice. At his eares, hung two Rynges of gold, wherein were inclosed many pzecious stones. He was but of small stature, but somewhat grosse, and had the residue of his body paynted with dyuers colours, whereof some were lyke vnto flamyng fyze. Before him, he had two vesselles made of the fine earth called *Porcellana*, with sodden egges. Also foure vesselles of *Porcellana* full of wyne made of Date trees, and couered with many odoziferous hearbes. The Pzince bzought them to his house, where he had foure daughters, very wel fauoured and whyte, lyke ours. Hee caused them to daunce all naked, and therewith to sing, and playe on certayne Tymbzelles made of metall. At this tyme it so chaunced, that one of the Spanyardes dyed in one of the shyppes, and when certayne of theyz company desired the kyng to gyue them leaue to burie him on the land: he answered, that forasmuche as he and all his, were at the commaundement of theyz kyng and maister, howe muche moze ought the grounde so to bee? They greatly marueyled at the ceremonies parteynyng to the maner of our funeralles, and honoured the crosses whiche were set at both the endes the graue. They lyue with iustice, and vse weightes and measures. Their houses are made of Tymber and sawne boozdes, and are so builded aboue the grounde vppon pzoppes and pyles, that they ascende to the same by certayne stayers. Under theyz houses, they keepe theyz Hogges and Hennes.

The kyng of Zabut his apparell.

Well fauoured women.

When they came to barteryng, they gaue golde, Ryse, Hogges, Hennes, and dyuers other thynges foz some of our trysles of small value. They gaue tenne *Pesos* of golde foz sixtiene poundes weyght of Iron. One *Pesus* is in value a ducate and a halfe. The Sunday folowyng, the kyng was baptysed with great solemnitie: at which tyme, the Captayne admonyshed him before, not to be afrayde at the shootyng of of the ordinance, bycause it was theyz custome so to doe at such solemne feastes.

Barteryng.

Pesus what it is.

They breake their Idolles and erecte the Crosse.

After this, the Captayne caused them to breake all their Idoles, and to set vp the crosse in diuers places, praying to the same both mornyng and euenyng kneelyng on their knees, and holdyng vp their handes ioyned togeather. The kyng in his baptisme was named Charles, after the Emperours name, and the Prince, *Ferdinando*, after the name of his maiesties brother. The kyng of *Messana* was named Iohn, & the Moore Christopher. To all other they gaue suche names as are commonly vsed in Christendome. And thus before masse was begunne, were fyue hundred men baptised. When masse was finyshed, the Captayne inuited the Kyng to dyne with him in his shyppe, and at his commyng, caused the ordinaunce to be discharged. The Queene was also baptised, with fourtie of her gentlewomen, and her daughter the princes wyfe. The Queene was very young and fayre, hauyng her bodie couered with a whyte cloth. Her lyppes were redde, and she had on her head a Hatte, on the toppe wherof was a triple crowne, much lyke the Popes: this crowne and the Hat, were made of the leaues of Date trees. Within the space of eyght dayes, the inhabitantes of the Ilande were baptised, excepte one village of Idolatours, who would not herein obey the kynges commaundement. Wherevppon the Captayne sent certayne of his men thyther, who burnt the towne, and erected a crosse in that place, bycause the people of the vyllage were Gentyles (that is) Idolaters. But if they had been Moores (that is, *Machumetistes*) they woulde haue erected a pyller of stone, bycause the Moores are more stubberne and harder to be conuerted then are the gentiles. When the Queene came to the place where she should heare masse, shee came forth with great pompe and solemnitie, hauyng going before her three young damosels, and three men with their Cappes in their hands, whom she folowed apparelled in whyte and blacke, with a great vayle of silke vppon her head, fringed about with golde, which couered her hatte, and hung downe to her shoulders: She had also a great trayne of women folowyng her, beyng all barefooted and naked, excepte that vppon their heades and priuie partes they wore certayne vayles of silke, and had their heare spredde.

Fyue hundred men baptised.

The Queene of Zabut.

The Queenes apparell.

Before the kyng of *Zubut* was baptised, he was named *Raia Humabuon*. When the Captayne demaunded of him why all

the

the Idolles in the Ilande were not burnt accordyng to his promyse, he answered, that they esteemed them no more as goddes, but only made sacrifice to them for the Princes brother, who was very sicke, and as noble and wittie a man as was in the Ilande. The Captayne answered, that if he would burne all his Idoles, and beleeue faythfully in Christ, and be baptised, he should bee immediately restored to health, and that he would els giue them leaue to stryke of his head. By these woordes and persuasions of the Captayne, he conceyued suche hope of health, that after he was baptised hee felte no more greefe of his disease. And this was a manifeste myracle wrought in our tyme, whereby diuers Infidelles were conuerted to our fayth, and theyr Idolles destroyed, and also theyr Altars ouerthrowen on the which they were accustomed to eate the sacrificed flesshe. The people of the Ilande paye the kyng a portion of victualles for theyr tribute by all theyr cities and byllages.

A miracle.

Not farre from this Ilande of *Zubut*, is the Ilande of *Mathan*, whose inhabitantes vse marueylous ceremonies in theyr sacrifices to the sonne, and burying the dead. They weare ringes of golde about their priuie members. The Ilande is gouerned by two Princes, whereof the one is named *Zula*, and the other *Cilapulapu*. And whereas this *Cilapulapu* refused to paye tribute to the kyng of Spayne, the Captayne went agaynst him in his owne person with .60. of his men, armed with coates of maple and Helmets. *Cilapulapu* diuided his army into three battayles, hauyng in euery battayle two thousand & fyftie men, with armed bowes, arrowes, dartes, and Iauelins hardened at the poyntes with fyre. This continued long and sharpe. But the Captayne being a valiaunt man, and preasing him selfe in the brunte of the battaile, was sore wounded and slaine, forasmuche as the most of the Barbarians directed all their force agaynst him. Beside the Captayne, were slayne of our men about .viii. or .ix. Of the Barbarians, were .xv. slayne, & many sore wounded. After the death of the Captayne, they chose two other in his place, of the which one was *Odoardo Barbessa* a Portugale, and the other *Iohn Serrano*, who was shortly after betrayde by the interpretour, and taken prisoner with dyuers other.

The Ilande of Mathan.

The Captayne Magellanus is slayne.

Certaine dayes before the captaines death, they had knowledge

of the Ilandes of *Molucca*, whiche they chiefely sought. Departyng therefore from the Ilande of *Mathan*, they layled farre, and came to the Cape of an other Ilande named *Bohol*. In the myddest of this mayne sea (which they named *Archipelagus*) they consulted to burne the shyppe named Conception, bycause they were nowe fewe in number, and to furnyshe the other two shyppes with the artillerie thereof. Thus directyng theyr course towarde Southwest, they came to an other Ilande named *Pauiloghon*, where they founde blacke men, lyke vnto the Sarasins. Shortly after, they arryued at an other great Ilande, whose kyng, named *Raia Calauar*, intreated them very frendly in all thynges, as dyd the kyng of *Massana*. This Ilande is ryche in golde, and hath plentie of Rysse, Synger, Hogges, Goates, Hennes, and dyuers other thynges: It is named *Chippit*, and is viii. degrees aboue the Equinoctiall lyne towarde our pole, and in longitude from the place from whence they first departed. 170. degrees, and about. 50. leagues from *Zubut*.

The Ilande of Bohol.

They burnt one of theyr shyppes.

Blacke men.

The Ilande of Chippit.

The Ilande of Caghaian.

Departyng from hence, they came to an other Ilande, named *Caghaian*, beyng. 40. leagues from *Chippit*, as they sayled betweene the Weste and Southwest. This Ilande is very great, and in maner vnhabited. The people are Moores, and were banished out of the Ilande of *Burnei*, whych some call *Porne*.

From this Ilande about. xxb. leagues betweene the Weste and Northweste, they founde a marueylous fruitfull Ilande named *Pulaoan*, beyng towarde our pole aboue the Equinoctiall niene degrees and a thirde parte, and. C. lxxix. degrees and a thirde parte in longitude from the place of their departyng.

The Ilande of Pulaoan.

From this Ilande. x. leagues towarde the Southwest, they sawe an other Ilande, whiche seemed to them sometymes to mount as they sayled by the coastes thereof. As they were entering into the port, there arose a boysterous & dark tempest, which ceassed assoone as the fyres of the three saintes (whereof we haue spoken before) appeared vpon the cables. From the beginning of this Iland to the porte, are fyue leagues. This Ilande is great and ryche, and the chiefe citie thereof conteyneth. xxb. thousande houses. The Kyng entertayned our men very frendly, and sent them, beside many other presentes, two Elephantes, trapped with silke, to bryng them to his Pallace that brought

The Ilande of Burnei or Porne.

A great citie.

Elephantes.

the

the presentes which the Captaynes sent him . He hath a magnificall Courte, and a great garde , also a multitude of concubynes. He is a Moore, and is named *Raia Siripada*. He is a kyng of great power, and hath vnder him many other kynges, Ilands, and cities. This Ilande of *Burnei*, is aboue the Equinoctiall towarde our pole, fyue degrees and a quarter, and in longitude from the place of theyr departyng. C. lxxvi. degrees, and two third partes.

Departyng from *Burnei*, they came to an Ilande called *Cimbulon*, beyng viii. degrees aboue the Equinoctiall lyne. Heere they remayned xl. dayes, to calke theyr shyppes, and furnysh them with freshe water and fuell, which was to them great payne and trauayle, bycause they were in maner all bare footed, their shooes (and in maner their other apparel) being worne, by reason of the long vyage. In the woods of this Iland, they found a tree, whose leaues as soone as they fall on the ground, doe sturre and remoue from place to place, as though they were alyue: they are muche lyke the leaues of a Mulbery tree, and haue on euery syde as it were two short & blunt feete. When they are cut or broken, there is no blood seene come foorth of them: Yet when any of them are touched, they sodaynly moue and starte away. *Antoni Pigafetta* kept one of them in a platter for the space of. viii. dayes, and euer when he touched it, it ranne rounde about the platter. He supposeth that they lyue only by ayre.

The Ilande of Cimbulon.

Leaues of trees which seeme to lyue.

Departyng from hence, they directed theyr course by the West quarter towarde the Southeast, to fynde the Ilandes of *Molucca*, and sayled not farre from certayne mountaynes, where they founde the sea full of great weedes and hearbes.

A sea full of weedes.

From hence, they came to the Ilandes of *Zolo* and *Taghima*, in the which are founde pearles of exceedyng bygnesse.

Pearles.

Folowyng theyr course towarde the Northeast, they came to a great citie named *Mangdando*, lying aboue the Ilandes of *Buthuan* and *Calaghan*, where they tooke a Canoa of certayne of the inhabitantes: by whom beyng informed of the Ilandes of *Molucca*, they lefte theyr course towarde the Northeast, and folowed the Southeast, neare vnto a Cape of the Ilande of *Buthuan*: they were aduertised for certentie, that on the bankes of a certayne ryuer, there dwelt men ouergrowen with heare, and

Men ouergrowen with heare.

of hygh ſtature.

The Ilandes of Molucca.

Folowyng ſtyll theyr courſe by the Southeaſt, and paſſyng by many ſmall Ilandes, they came to the Ilandes of *Molucca*, the ſixte day of Nouember, and the .xxvii. moneth after their departure out of Spayne. Beyng therefore ioyfull, and gyuyng thankes vnto God, they diſcharged all theyr ordinaunce. In the coaſte of all theſe Ilandes, euen vnto the Ilandes of *Molucca*, ſoundyng with theyr plummet, they founde the deapth of the ſea to be no leſſe then a hundred and two yardes, which is contrary to the ſaying of the Portugales, who affyrme that no ſhyppe can paſſe that way without great daunger, by reaſon of the ſhalowneſſe and rockes or ſhelues, and for the darkeneſſe which the cloudes cauſe in the heauen. All which things they fayned, to the intent that none other ſhould haue knowledge of theyr viages.

The Portugales are reproued.

The eyght day of Nouember, in the yeere 1521. before the ryſing of the Sunne, they entered into the porte of the Ilande of *Tidore*, beyng one of the chiefe Ilandes of *Molucca*, where they were honorably interteyned of the kyng, who declared that he had long before ſeene a ſigne in heauen, that certayne ſhyppes ſhoulde come from a farre countrey to the Ilandes of *Molucca*: And that whereas for the better certificate thereof, he conſidered the ſtations of the Moone, he ſawe therein the commyng of our ſhyppes, and that we were the men whom he ſeemed to ſee in the ſame. Whereuppon he profered him ſelfe to enter into league of friendſhyp with the kyng of Spayne, and to accepte our men as his brethren and chyldren, wyllyng them to come alande as into theyr owne houſes: Alſo, that for theyr commyng, that Ilande ſhoulde no more bee called *Tidore*, but *Caſtile*, for the great loue whiche he bore to theyr Kyng, whom he reputed as his Lorde and maiſter. This Kyng is a Moore, and is named *Raia Sultan, Mauzor*.

Tidore one of the Ilandes of Molucca.

A viſion in the Planettes.

The fyue Ilandes of Molucca.

Tarenate.

The Ilande of Gilolo.

Moores and Gentyles.

The Ilandes of *Molucca*, are fyue in number, and are thus named, *Tarenate, Tidore, Mutir, Macchian*, and *Bacchian*. Of theſe, *Tarenate* is the cheefeſt.

Directly agaynſt the Ilande of *Tidore*, there is an other great Ilande, named *Gilolo*, inhabited of Moores and Gentiles. The Moores haue two Kynges, of the whiche one hath ſixe hundred chyldren, and the other ſixe hundred and fyftie. The

Gentyles

Gentyles keepe not so many women as doe the Moores, nor yet lyue in suche superstitions. They pray to the first thyng that they meete in the mornyng when they goe fourth of theyr houses, and honour that as theyr God for that day. The Kyng of the Gentyles is very rythe in golde. In the sayde Ilande of *Gilolo*, are Reedes as byg as a mans legge, and full of cleare water holsome to be drunke. Golde. Water in Reedes.

The. xii. day of Nouember, the kyng of *Tidore* appoynted our men a warehouse in the citie, where they myght sell theyr merchaundies. Theyr maner of exchaunge was in this sorte. For tenne yardes of good redde cloth, they had one *Bahar* of Cloues, which amounteth to foure *Cantari* and six pound weight: And one *Cantar* is a hundred pounde weyght. For. xb. yardes of cloth somewhat woorse then the other, they receyued in *Cambie*, one *Bahar*. For. xxxb. drynkyng cuppes of glasse, they had one *Bahar*. For. xbii. Cathyls of quicke siluer, one *Bahar*. They came dayly to the shyppes with many of theyr Barkes full of Goates, Hennes, fygges of a spanne long, also the fruite called *Cocus*, with dyuers other kyndes of victualles, in suche quantitie that it was a marueylous thyng to beholde. They furnyshed also theyr shyppes with freshe water, which is hotte as it issueth out of the spryng, but is very colde when it hath stoode a whyle in an other place. It spryngeth from the mountaynes on the which the cloue trees growe. They sawe a cloude ryse in maner dayly, whiche compasseth about the sayde mountaynes. Theyr maner of barterpug. Water of a straunge qualitie.

The kyng of the Ilande of *Bacchian*, sent the kyng of Spaine two dead bydes of straunge fourme. They were of the bygnesse of Turtle Doues, with little heades and long bylles: also long and small legges, and no wynges, but in the steede thereof certayne long feathers of diuers colours, and tayles lyke Turtle Doues: all the other feathers are of one colour, much lyke vnto tawny, except those of the wynges: they flee not but when the wynde bloweth. These Moores are of opinion that these bydes come from the heauenly Paradyse, and therefore call them *Manuccodiata*, that is, the bydes of God. Bydes of a straunge fourme.

When they were determyned to departe from the Ilandes of *Molucca*, certayne kynges of the Ilandes accompanied them

with theyr Canoas, and conducted them to an Ilande called *Mare*, where they refreshed theyr shyppes with freshe water and fuell. The kynges sent the Emperours maiestie many presentes: and embrasing our men, departed with the teares in theyr eyes, and our men for theyr laste farewell, shot of all their ordinance. When in the Ilande of *Mare*, they perceyued that one of theyr shyppes leaked and tooke water very sore, wherby they were inforced to tarrie there three dayes: But seeyng that they coulde fynde no remedie for the same, but in long tyme, they determined to leaue it, gyuyng order that if afterwarde it coulde bee repayred, they should returne into Spayne as well as they could.

They leaue one of theyr shippes behinde them.

The Ilandes of Molucca.

In all the Ilandes of *Molucca* is founde Cloues, Ginger, bread of the roote of *Sagu*, Ryse, Goates, sheepe, Hennes, Figges, Almondes, sweete Pomegranates and sowre, Oranges, Lemondes, and hony, which is made of certayne flyes lesse then Antes: Also canes of suger, oyle of Cocus, Mellons, Gourdes, and a marueylous colde fruite whiche they name *Camulicai*, and dyuers other fruites. Furthermore, whyte and red Popingayes, and other of variable colours. It is not passe fiftie yeeres since the Moores fyrst inhabited any of these Ilandes, whiche were before inhabited only with Gentiles.

Hony of flyes.

Popingayes.

The Ilande of Tidole.

The Ilande of *Tidore*, is aboue the Equinoctiall line toward our pole about .27. minutes, and in longitude from the place from whence they departed. 171. degrees, and from the *Archipelagus*, in the which is the Ilande of *Zamal*, whiche our men named the Ilande of theeues. ix. degrees and a halfe, and runneth to the quarter of South Southwest, and North Northeast. *Terenate*, is vnder the Equinoctiall lyne foure minutes, vnder the pole *Antartike*. *Mutir*, is directly vnder the Equinoctiall lyne. *Macchian* is .xv. minutes towarde the pole *Antartike*, and *Bacchian* one degree. These Ilands are lyke iiii. sharpe mountaines, except *Macchian*, which is not sharpe. The biggest of all these, is *Bacchian*. Departyng from the Ilande of *Mare*, and directyng theyr course toward the Southwest, with only .xlvi. men in theyr shyppe, and .xiii. Indians, they passed by the Ilandes of *Chaco-uan*, *Lagoma*, *Sico*, *Gioghi*, *Caphi*, *Sulacho*, *Lumatola*, *Tenetum*, *Buru*, *Ambon*, *Budia*, *Celaruri*, *Benaia*, *Ambalao*, *Bandon*, *Zorobua*, *Zolot*,

Terenate.

Mutir.

Macchian.

Bacchian.

Many Ilands

Zolot, *Noceuamor*, *Galian*, and *Mallua*, with dyuers other Ilands both great and small, of Mooꝛes, Gentiles, and Canibales. Our men remayned .xv. dayes in the Ilande of *Mallua*, to repayꝛe theyꝛ shyppe in certayne places where it tooke water. All the feeldes of this Ilande is full of long and rounde Pepper, and is situate towarde the pole Antartike vnder the Equinoctial line .viii. degrees and a halfe, and is in the longitude of .169. degrees and .40. minutes.

The Ilands of Mallua.

Pepper.

The Pilot, whiche our men bꝛought out of the Ilandes of *Molucca*, tolde them that not farre from thence was an Ilande named *Arucetto*, in the whiche are men and women not past a cubite in heyght, hauyng eares of suche bygge nesse, that they lye vppon one, and couer them with the other. But our men would not sayle thyther, both because the wynde and course of the sea was agaynst them, and also foꝛ that they gaue no credite to his repoꝛte. The .xxv. daye of Januarie in the yeere .1522. they departed from *Mallua*, and the day folowyng, arryued at a great Ilande named *Timor*, beyng fyue leagues distant from *Mallua* betweene the south and southwest. In this Ilande is found the wood of whyte Saunders and Gynger, and dyuers kyndes of fruites. Also sundꝛy kyndes of beastes, and plentie of victaile and golde. They of the Ilandes of *Giaua*, *Molucca*, and *Lozon*, resoꝛte to this Iland foꝛ Saunders. The inhabitantes are gentyles. They saye that when they go to cutte the wood of Saunders, the deuyl appeareth to them in dyuers fourmes, and asketh them what they haue neede of: And that after this vision, many of them are long sicke. In al ỹ Ilands of this *Archipelagus*, rayneth the disease of saint Job (whiche we call the frenche pose) moꝛe then in any other place in the woꝛlde.

Little men with long eares.

The Ilande of Timoꝛ.

White Saunders and Gynger.

The deuyll appeareth.

Saint Job his disease.

Farre from this Ilande betweene the west and noꝛthwest, they came to an Ilande named *Eude*, in the whiche groweth great plentie of Sinamome. In this tracte are founde many Ilandes, lying in oꝛder as it were one directly behynde an other, euen vnto the Iland of the greater *Giaua*, named *Giaua maior*, and vnto the cape of *Malacha*, beyng in East India. *Giaua* the lesse, is as bygge as the Ilande of *Madera*, and is but halfe a league distant from *Giaua maior*. Here they were infoꝛmed that aboue *Giaua maior* towarde the noꝛth, is a great gulfe called the gulfe of *China*.

Cinamome.

The Ilandes of Giana.

Malacha.

The great gulfe of China.

of *China*, in the whiche are trees of exceedyng byggnesse, inhabited with foules of such greatnesse, that they cary great beastes in the ayre. The fruites of these trees are as byg as Cucummers.

The cape of Malacha.

The cape of *Malacha*, is one degree and a halfe aboue the Equinoctiall line toward the pole Artike. On the east syde of this cape, runneth a very long coast, in the which are many regions & cities, wherof some are called by these names, *Cingaporla*, whiche is the cape. Also *Pahan*, *Calantan*, *Patani*, *Braalin*, *Benu*, *Longen*, and *Odia*, wherin is the citie in the whiche dwelleth the kyng of *Sian* named *Zacabedera* Theyr cities are buylded as ours are, and subiect to the kyng of *Sian*. After the realme of *Sian*, are the regions of *Iamgoma*, and *Campaa*, where Reubarbe groweth, of the whiche are diuers opinions, some supposyng it to be a roote, and other a putrified tree, affyrming that if it were not putrified, it should not haue so great a sauour. They call it *Calama*. Next vnto this, is founde the great *China*, whose kyng is thought to be the greatest prince in the worlde, and is named *Santoa Raia*. Furthermore, all that is written hereafter of this kyng and these regions, they learned by thinformation of a Moore that was in the Iland of *Timor*. He affirmed that the sayd kyng hath threescore and tenne crowned kynges vnder his empyre, and hath a port in the sea named *Canthan*, and two principall cities named *Nauchin* and *Connulaha*, where he remaineth hym selfe, and hath euer foure of his chiefe princes lying about his palace on euery syde, towarde the east, west, north, and south, geuyng dilygent attendaunce what is done in euery of theyr quarters. All the princes of the greater India (called *India Maior*) and of that whereof I haue spoken before, are obedient to this kyng. And in token that they are true subiectes, they keepe in theyr palaces, which are in the myddest of theyr cities, the beast called *Linx*, beyng fayrer then a Lion, and is the great kynges signet, whiche all such as intende to go to *China*, beare with them sealed in waxe, or on a peece of Iuerye, for theyr safe conducte, without the whiche they may not enter into the hauen.

Reubarbe.

The great kyng of China.

The greater India.

The beast called Linx.

When any of his kynges rebell or are disobedient, he causeth them to be flayen, and salted, and dryed at the Sunne, then to be stuffed with chaffe, and set vp on some hygh thyng in the myddest of the chiefe streate of the citie, where al the people may see

The punishment of rebels.

see it. He neuer suffereth his owne person to be openly seene to any man: But when his noble men of the courte are desyrous to see hym, he commeth downe from his palace into a ryche pauilion, accompanyed with syxe of his principall concubines, apparelled with lyke vestures as he hym selfe is. All this way he is not seene, by reason of the pauilion. When he hath passed through the paulyon, he entereth into a Serpent, named *Nagha*, beyng the most marueylous and ryche woorke of the worlde, and placed in the greatest courte of the palace. When the kyng entereth into this with the women, to the intent that he may not be knowen among them, he causeth the sayde noble men onely to looke in at a glasse whiche is in the breste of the Serpent, where they see the kyng among the women, but can not discerne whiche is he. He ioyneth in maryage with his syster, that the blood royall be not myxte with any other. His palace is enuironed with seuen large walles, the one beyng farre distant from the other, and hath in euery suche circuite tenne thousand men for the garryson of his palace, who haue theyr waytyng dayes appoynted them course by course, with freshe men in theyr places, and thus keepe theyr watche continually both day and nyght. In this palace are .lxxix. haules, in the whiche is an infinite number of women that serue the kyng, hauyng euer lyght torches in theyr handes for the greater magnificence. He that woulde see all the palace, shoulde spende a whole daye therein. Among other, there are foure principal haules, where somtimes the kyng geueth audience to his noble men. Of these, one is couered both aboue and beneath with metall, another all ouer with syluer, the thyrde with golde, and the fourth with pearles & precious stones. These people of *China*, are whyte men, apparelled as we are, and eate theyr meate on tables as we do. They haue the crosse in some estimation, but knowe not the cause whye. Beyonde the coaste of *China*, are dyuers other nations and people, as *Chenchy*, where Pearles and Synamome are founde: also the people named *Lichij*, where reigneth the great kyng of *Mien*, hauyng vnder hym .xxii. kynges, and is subiecte to the kyng of *China*. Here is also founde the great citie of *Cathay* in the East, and dyuers other nations in the sayde syxme lande, of the which some are bruityshe and beastiall, whiche vse to kyll

The kyng is not seene but a glasse.

A thyng of strange woorkemanshyp.

The kyng marrieth his syster.

His palace.

A marueylous garde.

Women serue the kyng.

Foure marueylous haulles.

The people of China.

The great kyng of Mien.

Cathay.

and

and exile theyr parentes when they be olde, thynkyng therebyt that they shall remyue in them: All these people are Gentyles.

The .xi. daye of Februarye in the yeere .1522. they departed from the Ilande of *Timos*, and were ingulfed by chaunce in the great sea called *Lantchidol*, and tooke theyr course betweene the west and southwest, leauyng the nozth coastes on theyr ryght hande, fearyng least if they shoulde sayle towarde the firme land, they myght be seene of the Portugales, who are of great power in *Malacha*: and therefore dyrected theyr course without the Ilande of *Sumatra*, called in olde tyme *Taprobana*, leauyng also on theyr ryght hand, vppon the fyrme lande, the prouinces and regions of *Pegu*, *Bengala*, *Calecut*, *Canonor*, *Coa*, *Cambaia*, the gulfe of the Iland of *Ormus*, and all the coastes of the greater India. And more safely to passe the cape of *Buona Speranza*, beyng aboue Affrike, they sayled about .xlii. degrees towarde the pole Antartike, & remayned seuen weekes about that cape, with many fetches compassyng the wynde with theyr sayles continually aloste, because they had a west and northwest wynde in the proos of theyr shyppe, whiche woulde not suffer them to passe. The cape of *Buona Speranza*, is toward the pole Antartike, beneath the Equinoctiall line .34. degrees and a halfe, and .1600. leagues from the cape of *Malacha*, and is the greatest and most daungerous cape that is founde at this daye in all the worlde.

The sea of Lantchidol.

Malacha.
The Iland of Sumetra.
Pegu.
Bangala.
Calecut.
Canonor.
Coa.
Cambala.
Ormus.
East India.
Cap. de Buona Speranza.

When they had by these perils ouerpassed this cape, certaine of them, aswell for lacke of vyttayles, as also by reason of sycknesse, were mynded to sayle to a hauen of the Portugales named *Monzambique*, aboue Affryke: But the other answeared, that they woulde rather dye, then go to any other place then directly to Spayne. They folowed theyr course therefore, saylyng toward the Southwest, two monethes continually without touchyng at any port, in whiche tyme there dyed about .xxi. of theyr company, whom they cast into the sea. And suerly if God of his infinite mercie had not preserued the residue in tyme, they had all dyed of famyn.

The port of Monzambique.

In fine, beyng inforced of necessitie, and halfe of theyr compayne dead, they sayled to one of the Ilandes of *Capo verde*, called *Insula Sancti Iacobi*, that is, sainte Iames Ilande, parteynyng to the kyng of Portugale. Where, as soone as they arryued,

the y

they sent certayne a lande in the shyppe boate for vittayles, declaryng to the Portugales with all loue and fauour what necessitie they were dryuen to, and what miseries and trauayles they had susteyned, infourmyng them furthermore of theyr maruey-lous voyage, and such thynges as they had seene in both the East and West India, with suche other gentle woordes, whereby they obteyned certayne measures of Ryse. But when afterward xiii. of them returned for more Ryse, they were deteyned: Wherevppon the rest whiche remayned in the shyppe, fearyng the lyke chaunce, departed with full sayles, and the .vii. day of September with the helpe of God entred into the hauen of *San Lucar* neere vnto Siuile, where dischargyng all theyr ordinaunce for ioy, they wente immediatly to the great churche in theyr shiertes, and barefooted, with a torche before them, to geue thankes to almyghty God, who had brought them safe to theyr owne country, and restored them to theyr wyues and chyldren. As touching the ende of this voyage, *Transiluanus* wryteth somewhat more largely, as foloweth.

The ingratitude of the Portugales.

The port of S. Lucar neere vnto Siuile.

The other shyppe whiche they left behynde them to be repared, returned afterwarde by the *Archipelagus* afore sayde, and by the great sea to the coastes of the fyrme of the West India, and arryued at a region of the same beyng agaynst *Dariena*, where the South sea of *Sur* is separate but by a litle space of lande from the west Ocean, in the which are the Ilands of *Hispaniola* & *Cuba*, and other Ilandes of the Spanyardes. The other shyppe, whiche returned into Spayne by compassyng about the whole bowle of the world by the coastes of East India and Affrike, departing from the Ilande of *Tidore*, and saylyng euer on this syde the Equinoctial, dyd not fynde the cape of *Cattigara*, being about *Asia*, and (by the description of *Ptolome*) reachyng many degrees beyonde the Equinoctiall: But hauyng sayled many dayes by the mayne sea, they came to the cape of *Buona Speranza* and from thence to the Ilandes of *Capo verde*, where theyr shyppe, beyng sore bruised by reason of the long voyage, leaked and tooke water, in suche sorte that the maryners, beyng nowe but fewe in number, and those also weake and feeble by reason of long sickenesse & hunger, were not able both to drye the pompe continually, and otherwyse gouerne the shyppe, and were therefore of ne-

What became of the other shyppe.

Dariena.

The Cape of Cattigara.

The voyage hardly performed.

cessitie

They bye slaues for lacke of helpe.

ceſſitie inforced to go alande at the Ilande of ſaint Iames, to bye them certayne ſlaues to helpe them. But beyng deſtitute of mony, accordyng to the cuſtome of the maryners, they profered them cloues for theyr ſlaues. The whiche thyng when it came to the eares of the Portugale that was Captayne of that Ilande, he caſt .xiii. of them in priſon: Whereby the reſydue that remayned in the ſhyppe (beyng nowe but .xviii. in number) were put in ſuch feare, that they departed immediatly without reſcuing theyr felowes, & ſailed continually both by day & by night by the coaſtes of Afrike, & came in fine to Spaine y. vi. day of September in the yeere of our lorde. 1522. and arryued at the port nere vnto Siuile the .xvi. moneth after they departed from the Iland of *Tidore*. Maryners doubtleſſe more worthy to be celebrate with eternall memory then they whiche in olde tyme were called *Argonauti*, that ſayled with Iaſon to wyn the golden fleeſe in the region of *Cholchis* & the ryuer of *Phaſis* in the great ſea of *Pontus*. And the ſhyppe it ſelfe, more worthy to be placed among the ſtarres, then that olde *Argo*, whiche departyng out of *Grecia*, ſayled to the ende of that great ſea. For this our marueylous ſhyppe, takyng her voyage from the ſtraightes of *Gibelterra*, and ſaylyng by the great Ocean towarde the South and pole Antartike, and turnyng from thence to the Weſt, folowed that courſe ſo farre, that paſſyng vnder the great circumference of the world, ſhe came into the Eaſt, and from thence agayne into the Weſt, not by returnyng backewarde, but ſtyll ſayling forward, ſo compaſſing about the ball of the worlde vnder the whole circumference of heauen, vntyll ſhe were myraculouſly reſtored to her natiue region of Spayne, and houſe of Siuile.

Maryners worthy immortal fame.

OF

this is the catchword of the 1555 edition from which this was set

¶ The debate and stryfe betweene the Spanyardes and Portugales, for the Diuision of the Indies, and the trade of Spyces, and also for the Ilandes of Molucca, which some call Malucas. VVritten in the Spanishe tongue by *Francisco Lopes de Gomara.*

THe Emperours maiestie was very glad that the *Malucas* and Ilandes of the Spycery were discouered, and that he myght passe vnto them through his owne countreys, without any preiudice or hurt to the *Portugales*: and because also that *Almanzor*, *Lasfu*, and *Corala*, whiche were the lordes of the Spycerie, shewed them selues to be his freendes, and became tributaries to hym. He also gaue certayne gyftes and rewardes to *Iohn Sebastian* for his great paynes and good seruice, forasmuche as he craued a rewarde for the good newes that the Ilandes of the *Malucas*, and other Ilandes rycher and greater then they, were found to be in his part of those countreys which parteyned vnto hym, accordyng to the Popes Bull. And hereby it came to passe, that there was great contention and stryfe betweene the *Spanyardes* and the *Portugales*, about the Spycery, and the diuision of the Indies, by reason of the returne of *Iohn Sebastian*, and the information whiche he gaue thereof: who also affirmed, that the *Portugales* had neuer any entraunce before that tyme into those Ilandes. Hereupon the counsayle for the Indies aduertised the Emperour to maynteyne his fleete for those partes, and to take the trade of Spyces into his owne hande, forasmuche as it was his owne of duetie, aswell for that those Ilandes fell on his part, as also that he had nowe found passage and way through his West Indies into those regions: and finally, to consyder that he shoulde thereby obteyne and geat to hym selfe great reuenues, beside the inrychyng of his subiectes and realmes, and that with small cost and charge.

Iohn Sebastian.

The trade of spices parteyneth to the Emperour.

The Emperour, beyng thus aduertised of the trueth, tooke it for good counsayle, & commaunded all thynges herevnto appertaynyng to be furnyshed accordyngly. In this meane tyme, when kyng Iohn of Portugale had knowledge what the Emperour

Iohn kyng of Portugale.

determined

determined to do, and the speedy haste hys counsayle made for the performaunce hereof, and of the commyng home of *Iohn Sebastian* of *Cane*. with thinformation he made, what of stoutnes of mynde, and what for griefe, was puffed vp with anger, as were also the reste of the *Portugales*, stormyng as though they would haue plucked downe the skye with theyr handes, not a litle fearyng left they should lose the trade of Spices, yf the Spanyardes should once put in theyr foote. Whereupon the kyng immediatly made supplication to the Emperour, not to set forward any shippes, vntyll it were determined to whether of them those Ilandes shoulde belong: and that he would not so much endomage hym, as to cause hym to lose the trade of Spyces, which was so commodious and profitable to hym: and finally, to auoide the occasion of murder and bloodshed, whiche were lyke to ensue therof, yf the *Spanyardes* and *Portugales* shippes shoulde meete togeather. The Emperour, although he knewe that al this was but to make delayes, and prolongyng of tyme, yet was he glad to haue it tryed by iustice, for the better iustification of his cause and ryght. In fine, both parties were agreed to appoynt learned men, Cosmographers and Pilottes, whiche shoulde determine the controuersie betweene them: promisyng on both parties to abyde and stande to the sentence & determination made by those persons, appoynted and swoyne to iudge indifferently.

The trade of Spices.

The controuersie determined by Cosmographers and Pilots.

The Repartition and diuision of the Indies and newe world, betweene the Spaniardes and the Portugales.

THis matter concernyng the trade of Spices, and the new worlde of the Indies, by reason of the great ryches therof, was of great importaunce, and very difficult to be limitted, and drawen forth by lines. By reason wherof, it was necessary and conuenient to seeke wyse and worshipfull men, experte in Nauigations, in Cosmographie, and the Mathematical sciences. The Emperour for his syde chose and named, for Iudges of the possession, the *Licentiate Acuna*, one of the kynges counsayle, also the *Licentiate Barrientos*, of the counsayl of the orders, the

The arbytrers on the Emperours syde.

the licentiate *Petro Manuel*, Auditor of the courte of the Chaunceric in *Valladolith*. For Iudges of the propertie, he chose *Don Fernando Colono*, the sonne of Christopher *Colonus*: Also Doctor *Sancho Salaya*, *Peter Ruiz* of *Villegas*, Fryer Thomas *Duran*, Simon of *Alcazaua*, and *Iohn Sebastian* of *Cano*. His aduocate and Atturney, he made the licentiate *Iohn Rodriguez* of *Pisa*: and for his fyscall Doctour *Ribera*, and his Secretarie, *Barthalome Ruiz* of *Castaneda*. Healso appointed that *Sebastian Cabote*, *Steuen Gomes*, *Nunnio Gracia*, *Diego Riuero*, being all experte Pilottes, and cunnyng in makyng cardes for the sea, should bee present, and bryng foorth theyr Globes and Mappes, with other instrumentes necessarie to declare the situation of the Ilandes of the *Malucas*, about the which was al the contention & strife. But order was taken, that they should shew theyr myndes on neyther syde, nor enter into the company of the other, but when they were called. All these, and dyuers other, went togeather to a towne called *Badaioz*: and as many *Portugales* came to *Elbes*, or rather more. For they brought with them two Fiscalles and two Aduocates. The principall of them, was the licentiate *Antonie de Asseuedo*, *Diego Lopes* of *Sequeyra*, the Clarke of the weyghtes and receiptes, who had before been gouernour in India. Also *Peralfonso* of *Melo*, Clarke, Simon of *Tauira*, with dyuers other, whose names I knowe not. Before they mette togeather, the one parte remaynyng at *Badaioz*, and the other in *Elbes*, there was muche adoe among them, before they coulde agree vppon the place where they should meete, and who should speake fyrst: For the *Portugales* doe greatly weygh such circumstances. At the laste, they concluded to meete togeather at *Caya*, a litle ryuer which diuideth *Castile* from *Portugale*, standyng in the myd way betweene *Badaioz* and *Elbes*. And when they were assembled togeather one day at *Badaioz*, and an other day at *Elbes*, and saluted the one the other, both parties were sworne that they should proceede and speake accordyng to truth, iustice, and equitie. The *Portugales* refused *Simon de Alcazaua*, bycause he was a *Portugale*, and Fryer Thomas *Duran*, bycause he had sometyme ben Preacher to theyr Kyng: So that Simon was by consent put out of the company, in whose roome was placed maister Antonie of *Alcaraz*. Yet fell they not

Sebastian Cabote.

Instruments of Cosmographie.

The Ilandes of Maluca.

The Arbitrers on the Portugales syde.

The place where they mette.

The order of theyr places.

to reasonyng the matter, vntyll the Fryer was put out. They were many dayes in beholdyng Globes, Mappes, and Cardes of the sea, and hearyng what myght be sayde, both sydes alleagyng for the ryght whiche they pretended. But the *Portugales* standyng in vayne contention, sayde very angerly, The Ilandes of *Maluca*, wherevppon theyr meetyng and reasonyng was at that present, fell on theyr parte, and was of theyr conquest: and that they both had been there, and had them in theyr possession before Iohn *Sebastian* had euer seene them: Lykewyse that the lyne should be drawen from the Iland of *Bonauista*, or the Ilande called *de la Sal*, whiche are the most Easterly Ilandes from *Cabouerde*, and not from the Ilande of *Santanton*, or sainct Antonie, which lyeth towarde the Weste, and are lxxx. leagues the one from the other. All this was no more but to contend, and the other of the *Malucas*, is vntrue: But they that haue a naughtie matter, must set it foorth with woordes and brabbelyng. Here they founde howe greatly they were deceyued, in that they demaunded that the lyne should be drawen three hundred threescore and tenne leagues more to the West, from the Ilandes of *Cabouerde* (as appeareth hereafter) and not one hundred, accordyng to the assignement of the Popes Bull. The Spanyardes on the contrary parte affyrmed, and made demonstration, that not only the Ilandes of *Turney*, *Gilolo*, *Zubut*, and *Tidore*, with the other Ilandes of the *Malucas*: but also well *Samatra*, *Malacha*, and a great parte of *China*, should belong to the *Castilians*, and that those countreys fell on theyr syde, and on the parte of theyr conquest: Also, that *Magallanes* and Iohn *Sebastian* were the first Christian men that founde them, and obteyned them for the Emperour, as the letters and presentes of *Almanzor* doe testifie. And although the *Portugales* had been there fyrst, yet went they thyther after the donation of the Pope: neyther got they any ryght or iuste tytle thereby. For although they shoulde drawe the lyne by *Buena Vista*, what inconuenience should folow therof, sith as well by the one way as the other, the Ilandes of the *Malucas* muste parteyne to the *Castilians*? yea and moreouer, the Ilandes of *Cabouerde* shoulde also parteyne to the *Castilians*, forsomuche as drawyng the lyne by *Buena Vista*, the Ilandes of the *Malucas* doe remayne within the lyne on the Empe-

The Portugales.

Contention for drawyng the lyne of the diuision.

Howe the Portugales were deceyued.

The Spanyardes allegations.

Samatra.
Malacha.
China.
Magallanes.

Buena Vista.

The Ilandes of Cabo Verde.

Emperours syde. They continued in these controuersies for the space of two monethes, without any resolution or end made. For the *Portugales* prolonged and put of the matter, sleeyng from the sentence with cauillations and colde reasons, to the ende that they myght dissolue that assembly without any conclusion or determination: for so it stoode them vpon. The *Castilians* which were the Iudges of the propertie, drue a lyne in the great globe three hundred and .70. leagues from sainct Antonies Iland, lying by West *Cabo Verde*, accordyng to the intreatie and determination which was agreed vppon, betweene the Catholyke Princes and the kyng of *Portugale*. These Iudges gaue sentence vppon this matter, callyng the contrary parte before them vppon the bridge of *Caya*, in the yeere. 1524. The *Portugales* could neyther disturbe or deferre the sentence, nor yet would they allowe it to be iust, and accordyng to ryght: Saying that there was not sufficient processe made, that they should passe to the giuyng of sentence: and so departed, threatenyng to slee the *Castilians*, as many as they should synde in the Ilandes of the *Malucas*: For they knewe ryght well that their countreymen the *Portugales*, had already taken the shyppe called the Trinitie, and had also taken the *Castilians* in *Tidore*. Then also departed our men, takyng their iourney to the Courte, gyuyng vp to the Emperour all their writinges and declaration what they had done. And according to this declaration must be signed and marked all Globes and Mappes whiche good Cosmographers & maisters doe make. The line also of the repartition and last diuision of the newe world of the Indies, ought to passe (litle more or lesse) by the poyntes of *Humos* and *Buen Abrigo*, as I haue sayde in an other place. And thus shall it appeare euidently, that the Ilandes of spices, and also the great Iland of *Samotra*, doe parteyne to *Castile*. But the lande of *Brasile* parteyneth to the kyng of *Portugale*, where the Cape of sainct Augustine is, being .viii. degrees beneath the Equinoctiall. This lande reacheth from the poynte of *Humos* to the poynte of *Buen Abrigo*, and is in length North and South, viii. hundred leagues: being also some way two hundred leagues East and West.

The Portugales cauillations.

The lyne of diuision.

The sentence.

The Portugales threaten death to the Castilians.

The line of the last diuision.

The great Iland of Samotra.

The lande of Brasile, parteyneth to the Portugales.

And heere after these serious matters, wee will rehearse one mery thyng, whiche was this. It so chaunced that as

A mery tale.

Frances de Melo, Diego Lopes of *Sequeyra*, and other of those *Portugales* of this assembly, walked by the ryuers syde of *Guadiana*, a litle boye, who stoode keepyng his mothers clothes which shee had washed, demaunded of them whether they were those men that parted the woylde with the Emperour. And as they answered, yea: he tooke vp his sherte and shewed them his bare arse, saying, Come and drawe your lyne heere thyough the myddest. Which saying was afterward in euery mans mouth, and laughed at in the towne of *Badaios*: yea euen among the Commissioners them selues, of whom some were angry, and some maruey-led at the saying of the chylde.

The cause and aucthoritie whereby they diuided the Indies.

The gold mine of Guinea.

THe *Castilians* and *Portugales* had long debated and reasoned about the golde myne of *Guinea*, which was found in the yeere of our Lorde. 1471. in the tyme of the raigne of *Don Alonso* kyng of *Portugale*, ỹ fyrst of that name. This was a matter of great importaunce: For the Negros or blacke Moores, for thinges of no value, gaue golde by whole handfulles, whiche was at that tyme when the sayde kyng of *Portugale* pretended title and clayme to the kingdome of *Castile*, in the ryght of his wife Queene Ioane (called the excellent) agaynst the Catholyke Princes Isabel, and *Don Fernando*, whose it was in deede. But that stryfe was ended as soone as *Don Fernando* had vanquished *Don Alonso*, at a place called *Temulos*, nor farre from *Toro*, whiche place *Don Fernando* chose rather to make warre agaynst the Moores of *Granada*, then to buye and sell with the blacke Moores of *Guinea*. And thus the *Portugales* remayned with the conqueste of Affryke, from the streightes forwarde: which beganne where the infante of *Portugale Don Henrique* (sonne to Kyng Iohn the bastarde, and maister of Auis) dyd begyn to enlarge it. When Pope Alexander the vi. (beyng a Valentinian borne) had knowledge hereof, hee mynded to gyue the Indies to the kynges of *Castile*, without any preiudice to the *Portugales*, who had conquered the sea coastes of Affryke.

Alonso kyng of Portugale. Golde for thinges of small value.

Contention for the kingdome of Castile.

Warre against the Moores of Granada.

The conqueste of the Portugales in Affrike

Pope Alexander.

These

These Indies, the Pope gaue of his owne mynde without the motion of any other, with this burden & charge, that they should conuerte the Idolatours to the fayth of Christ: and commaunded a lyne or meridian to bee drawen North and South, from one hundred leagues Westward, beyonde one of the Ilandes of *Capo Verde* towarde the Weste, bycause the Spanyardes should not meddle in Affrike, parteynyng to the conquest of the Portugales, to the auoydyng of all stryfe betweene them. Kyng John of Portugale, the seconde of that name, was greatly offended when he red the Bull and donation of the pope, although his owne Ambassadours had made the selfe same request vnto his holinesse: He also founde him selfe agreeued with the Catholyke princes *Isabel* and *Fernando*, that they had shortened the course of the landes he had discouered, depriuyng him of the rychesse which belonged to him, and therefore refused to stande to the Popes Bull in this case: desiryng the Catholyke princes *Isabel* and *Fernando*, to graunt him three hundred leagues more to the West, beside the one hundred which they had graunted before: and therewith sent his shyppes to keepe the coastes of Affryke. The princes Catholyke were content to satisfie his mynd, and to please him according to their gentle nature, and for the aliance that was betweene them: And in fine, with the consent & agreement of the Pope, graunted two hundred & sixtie leagues more then the Bull made mention of, at *Tordesillas* the seuenth day of June, in the yeere of our Lorde 1494. And whereas our kynges thought that they shoulde haue lost grounde in graunting so many leagues that way, they woon by that meanes the Ilandes of the *Malucas*, with many other ryche Ilandes. The kyng of Portugale also herein deceyued him selfe, or was deceyued of his, whom he put in truste, hauyng no certayne knowledge of the situation of the Ilandes of the ryche Spicery, in demaundyng that which the kyng dyd demaunde: For it had ben better for him to haue requested the three hundred and sixtie leagues, rather Eastwarde from the Ilandes of *Capo Verde*, then towarde the Weste. And yet for all that, I doubt whether the *Malucas* should haue fallen within his conquest, accordyng to the ordinarie accompte and dimension which the Pylottes and Cosmographers doe make. And after this maner they

The Pope maketh the diuision.

The kyng of Portugale refuseth to stande to the Popes Bull.

The agreement of the last diuision.

Wherein the Portugales were deceyued.

diuided the Indies betweene them by auctho̅itie of the Pope, for the auoydyng of further stryfe and contention.

Howe and by what occasion the Emperour layde the Ilandes of Maluccas to pledge to the kyng of Portugale.

When the Kyng of *Portugale Don Iuan* the thyrd of that name, had knowledge that the Cosmographers and pylottes of *Castile*, had drawen the lyne from the place before named, and that he could not deny the trueth, fearyng also thereby to leese the trade of spices, made suite & request to the Emperour, that he should not sende foorth *Loaisa*, nor *Sebastian Cabote* to the *Malucas*, and that the *Castilians* should not attempte the trade of spices, nor see suche cuylles and miseries as his Captaynes had shewed in these Ilandes to them that aduentured that viage with *Magallanes*: which thyng he greatly couered, although he payde all the charges of those two fleetes, and made other great bargaynes. In the meane tyme, the Emperour maryed the Lady Isabel, sister to kyng Iohn, and kyng Iohn maryed the Lady Catharine, sister to the Emperour: whereby this matter waxed colde, although the kyng ceassed not to speake hereof, euer mouyng the partition. The Emperour by the meanes of a certaine *Biscaine* that was with *Magallanes* in the gouernours shyp, had knowlenge what the *Portugales* had done to the *Castilians* in the Iland of *Tidore*, whereof he tooke great displeasure, & brought the sayde maryner face to face before the Ambassadours of *Portugale*, who denyed all that he sayd, one of them beyng the chiefe Captayne and gouernour of India, when the *Portugales* tooke the *Castilians* in *Tidore*, and robbed them of theyr Cloues & Cinamome, and suche other thinges as they had in the shyp named the Trinitie. But as the kyng of *Portugales* trade was great, and our necessitie greater, in the meane tyme Themperour (who was nowe goyng into Italie to be crowned in the yeere. 1529.) gaged the *Malucas* and the spicerie to the kyng of *Portugale*, for three hundred and fyftie thousande Ducates, without any tyme determined,

Sebastian Cabote.

The Emperour and the kyng of Portugale ioyned in aliance by mariage.

The Portugales robbe the Castilians.

The coronation of the Emperour.

The gagyng of the Ilandes of Malucas.

determyned, otherwyse then the controuersie defined vpon the vyage of the ryuer of *Caya*: for the which thyng, kyng Iohn punyshed the licentiate *Azeuedo*, because he payde the money without declaration of the tyme. The couenaunt of the pledge was blyndly made, and greatly agaynst the myndes of the *Castilians*, as men that well vnderstoode the profite, commoditie, and ryches of that trade: Affyrmyng that the trade of spices myght haue been rented, for one yeere or for two, for sixe tymes as much as the kyng gaue for it. *Peter Ruiz* of *Villegas*, who was twise called to the bargayne, as once at *Granada*, and an other tyme at *Madrid*, sayde that it had ben muche better to haue pledged *Estremadura* or *Serena*, or other great landes and cities, rather then the *Malucas*, *Zamatra*, or *Malaca*, or other ryche landes and ryuers in the East, not yet well knowen: forasmuch as it may so chaunce, that either by continuance of tyme, or aliance, the pledge myght be forgotten, as though it parteyned to the ryght of *Portugale*. In fine, the Emperour considered not the Iewell that he pledged, nor the kyng what he receyued. The Emperour was oftentimes counsayled to release the pledge of those Ilands, in consideration of all the aduantage he myght haue thereby in fewe yeeres. Furthermore, in the yeere. 1548. the procuratours of *Cortes* beyng in *Valladolid*, made petition to the Emperour, to surrender the spicerie to the kyngdome of *Castile* for vi. yeeres, and that they woulde repaye to the kyng of *Portugale* his. 350. thousande crownes, and after those yeeres, restore the trade to the crowne, that his maiestie myght inioye the same, as was agreed at the beginnyng. But the Emperour, being then in Flaunders, sent woord to the counsayle, that they should not assent to *Cortes* his request, nor speake any more hereof. Whereat, some marueyled, other were sory, and all helde theyr peace.

Zamatra and Malaca.

Exemplar Bullæ Seu Donationis, Autoritate cuius, Episcopus Romanus Alexander eius nominis sextus, concessit et donauit Castellæ regibus & suis successoribus, regiones & Insulas noui orbis in Oceano occidentali Hispanorum nauigationibus repertas.

Alexander Episcopus, seruus seruorũ Dei, Charissimo in Christo filio Ferdinando Regi, et Charissimæ in Christo filiæ Elizabeth Reginæ Castellæ, Legionis, Aragonum, Siciliæ, et Granatæ, illustribus, salutem et Apostolicam benedictionem.

Inter cætera Diuinæ maiestati beneplacita opera et cordis nostri desiderabilia, illud profecto potissimum existit vt fides catholica & Christiana religio nostris præsertim temporibus exaltetur ac vbilibet amplietur ac dilatetur, animarumq; salus procuretur, ac barbaræ nationes deprimantur et ad fidem ipsam reducantur. Vnde cum ad hanc sacram Petri sedem Diuina fauente clementia (meritis licet imparibus) euocati fueremus, cognoscentes vos tanquam veros catholicos reges et principes: quales semper fuisse nouimus, & a vobis præclare gesta, toti pene orbi notissima demonstrãt, nedum id exoptare, sed omni conatu, studio, et diligentia, nullis laboribus, nullis impensis, nullisque parcendo periculis, etiam proprium sanguinem effundendo efficere, ac omnem animum vestrum, omnesque conatus ad hoc iam dudum dedicasse, quemadmodum recuperato regni Granatæ a tyrannis de Sarracenorum hodiernis temporibus per vos, cum tanta Diuini nominis gloria facta, testatur. Digne ducimur non immerito, et debemus illa vobis etiam sponte, ac fauorabiliter concedere per quæ huiusmodi sãctũ ac laudabile ab immortali deo acceptũ propositum, indies feruentiori animo ad ipsius dei honorem et Imperij Christiani propagationem, prosequi valeatis. Sane accepimus quod vos qui dudum animum proposueratis aliquas insulas et terras firmas remotas et incognitas, ac per alios hactenus non repertas, quærere et inuenire, vt illarum incolas et habitatores ad colendum redemptorem nostrum et fidem catholicam profitendum reduceretis, hactenus in expugnatione et recuperatione ipsius regni Granatæ plurimum occupati, huiusmodi sanctum et laudabile propositum vestrum ad optatum finem perducere

perducere nequiuistis : Sed tamem sicut Domino placuit, regno predicto recuperato, volentes desiderium vestrum adimplere, dilectum filium Christophorum Colonum, virum vtique dignum, et plurimum commendatum, ac tanto negotio aptum, cum nauigijs et hominibus ad similia instructis, non sine maximis laboribus, ac periculis, et expensis destinastis vt terras firmas et insulas remotas et incognitas, huiusmodi per mare vbi hactenus nauigatum non fuerat, diligenter inquireret. Qui tandem (Diuino auxilio fasta extrema diligentia in mari Oceano nauigantes) certas insulas remotissimas, et etiam terras firmas, quæ per alios hactenus reperte non fuerant, inuenerunt. In quibus plurimæ gentes pacifice viuentes, et (vt assiritur) nudi incedentes, nec carnibus vescentes, inhabitant : Et vt præfati nuncij vestri possunt opinari, gentes ipsæ in Insulis, et terris prædictis habitantes, credunt vnum deum creatorem in Cœlis esse, ac ad fidem catholicam amplexandum et bonis moribus imbuendum, satis apti videntur : Spesque habetur, quod si erudirentur, nomen saluatoris Domini nostri Iesu Christi in terris et insulis prædictis facile induceretur. Ac prefatus Christophorus in vna ex principalibus Insulis prædictis, iam vnam turrim satis munitam, in qua certos Christianos qui secum inerant in custodiam, et vt alias insulas ac terras firmas remotas et incognitas inquirerent posuit, construi et ædificari fecit. In quibus quidem Insulis et terris iam repertis, aurum, aromata, et aliæ quam plurimæ res præciosæ diuersi generis et diuersæ qualitatis reperiuntur. Vnde omnibus diligenter, et præsertim fidei catholicæ exaltatione et dilatione (prout decet Catholicos Reges et Principes) consideratis, more progenitorum vestrorum claræ memoriæ Regum, terras firmas et insulas predictas, illarumque incolas et habitatores, vobis diuina fauente clementia subijcere, et ad fidem Catholicam reducere proposuistis; Nos itaque huiusmodi vestrum sanctum et laudabile propositum plurimum in domino commendantes, ac cupientes vt illud ad debitum finem perducatur, et ipsum nomen saluatoris nostri in partibus illis inducatur, hortamus vos quamplurimum in domino, et per sacri lauacri susceptionem, qua mandatis Apostolicis obligati estis, et per viscera misericordiæ Domini nostri Iesu Christi attente requiribus, vt cum expeditionem huiusmodi omnino prosequi et assumere prona mente orthodoxæ fidei zelo intendatis, populos in huiusmodi Insulis et terris degentes, ad Christianam religionem suscipiendum inducere

velitis

velitis et debeatis, nec pericula nec labores vllo vnquam tempore vos deterreant, firma ſpe fiduciaque conceptis, quod Deus omnipotens conatus veſtros fœliciter proſequetur. Et vt tanti negotij prouintiam Apoſtolicæ gratiæ largitate donati, liberius et audacius aſſumatis, motu proprio non ad veſtram vel alterius, pro vobis ſuper hoc nobis oblatæ petitionis inſtantiam, ſed de noſtra mera liberalitate, et ex certa ſcientia, ac de Apoſtolicæ poteſtatis plenitudine, omnes Inſulas et terras firmas inuentas et inueniendas, deteſtas et detegẽdas verſus Occidentem et Meridiem, fabricando et conſtruendo vnam lineam a polo Arctico, ſcilicet Septentrione, ad polum Antarcticum, ſcilicet Meridiem, ſiue terræ firmæ et inſulæ inuentæ, et iueniendæ ſint, verſus Indiã, aut verſus aliam quamcumque partem, quæ linea diſtet a qualibet inſularum, quæ vulgariter nuncupantur de los Azores, et Cabo verde centum leucis, verſus Occidentem et Meridiem. Itaque omnes inſulæ et terræ firmæ repertæ et reperiẽdæ, detectæ et detegendæ a præfata linea verſus Occidemtem et Meridiem, quæ per alium Regem aut Principem Chriſtianum non fuerint actualiter poſſeſſe vſque ad diem natiuitatis Domini Noſtri Ieſu Chriſti proxime præteritum, a quo incipit annus præſens Milleſſimus Quadringenteſſimus Nonogeſſimus tertius, quando fuerunt per nuncios et capitaneos veſtros inuentæ aliquæ prædictarum inſularum, Autoritate omnipotentis Dei nobis in beato Petro conceſſa, ac viccariatus Ieſu Chriſti, qua fungimur in terris, cum omnibus illarum dominijs, ciuitatibus, caſtris, locis, et villis, iuribuſque et iuriſdictionibus ac pertinentijs vniuerſis vobis, heredibuſque, et ſucceſſoribus veſtris (Caſtellæ et Legionis regibus) in perpetuum tenore præſentium donamus, concedimus, et aſſignamus: Voſque, et hæredes, ac ſucceſſores prefatos illarum Dominos, cum plena, libera, et omnimoda poteſtate, autoritate, et iuriſdictione, facimus, conſtituimus, et deputamus. Decernentes nihilo minus, per huiuſmodi donatiõnẽ, conceſſionẽ et aſſignationẽ noſtrã, nullo Chriſtiano Principi, qui actualiter prefatas inſulas et terras firmas poſſederit vſque ad predictum diem natiuitatis Domini noſtri Ieſu Chriſti ius quæſitum, ſublatum intelligi poſſe, aut auferri debere.

Et inſuper mandamus vobis in vertute ſanctæ obedientiæ (vt ſicut pollicemini et non dubitamus pro veſtra maxima deuotione et regia magnanimitate vos eſſe facturos) ad terras firmas et inſulas predictas, viros probos et Deum timentes, doctos, peritos, et expertos ad inſtruendũ incolas et habtaitores prefatos in fide chatholica, et bonis moribus

moribus inbuendum, deſtinare debeatis, omnẽ debitam diligentiam in præmiſſis adhibentes. A quibuſcumque perſonis, cuiuſcunque dignitatis, etiã imperialis et regalis ſtatus, gradus, ordinis vel conditionis, ſub excommunicationis latæ ſententiæ pœna quã eo ipſo, ſi contra fecerint incurrant, diſtrictius inhibemus ne ad inſulas et terras firmas inuentas et inueniendas, detectas et detegendas verſus Occidentem et Meridiem, fabricando et conſtruendo lineam a polo Arctico ad polum Antarcticum, ſiuæ terræ firmæ et Iſulæ inuentæ et inueniendæ ſint verſus Indiam aut verſus aliam quamcumque partem, quæ linea diſtet a qualibet inſularum, que vulgariter nuncupantur de los Azores, et Cabo verde centum lucis verſus Occidentem et Meridem vt præfertur, pro mercibus habendis, vell quauis alia cauſa accedere præſumat, abſque veſtra ac hæredum et ſucceſſorum veſtrorum prædictorum licentia ſpeciali: Non obſtantibus conſtitutionibus et ordinationibus Apoſtolicis, cæteriſque quibuſcumque, in illo in quo imperia et dominationes et bona cuncta procedunt: Confidentes quod dirigente Domino actus veſtros, ſi huiuſmodi ſanctum ac laudabile propoſitum proſequamini, breui tempore cum fœlicitate et gloria totius populi Chriſtiani, veſtri labores et conatus exitum feliciſſimum conſequentur. Verum quia difficile foret præſentes literas ad ſingula quæque loca in quibus expediens fuerit deferri, volumus ac motu et ſcientia ſimilibus decernimus, quod illarum tranſſumptis manu publici notarij inderogati ſubſcriptis, et ſigillo alicuius perſonæ in eccleſiaſtica dignitate conſtitutæ, ſeu curiæ eccleſiaſtice munitis, ea prorſus fides in iudicio et extra ac alias vbilibet adhibeatur, quæ præſentibus adhiberetur ſi eſſent adhibitæ vel oſtenſæ.

Nulli ergo omnino hominum liceat hanc paginam noſtræ commendationis, hortationis, requiſitionis, donationis, conceſſionis, aſſignationis, conſtitutionis, deputationis, decreti, mandati, inhibitionis, et voluntatis, infringere, vel ei auſu temerario contraire. Si quis autem hoc attentare præſumpſerit, indignationem omnipotentis Dei, ac beatorum Petri et Pauli Apoſtolorum eius, ſe nouerit incurſuxum.

Datum Romæ apud ſanctum Petrum, Anno incarnationis Dominicæ 1593 quarto nonas Maij, Pontificatus noſtri, anno primo.

(∴)

The copie of the Bull or donation, by thauthoritie whereof, Pope Alexander the syxt of that name, gaue and graunted to the kinges of Castile & their succeffours, the Regions and Ilandes founde in the west Ocean sea, by the nauigations of the Spanyardes.

ALexander Byshop, the seruaunt of the seruauntes of God, to our most deare beloued sonne in Chryst kyng *Ferdinando*, and to our deare beloued daughter in Chryst *Elizabeth* Queene of Castyle, *Legion*, *Aragon*, *Sicilie*, and *Granata*, most noble prynces, gretyng, and Apostolical benediction. Among other woorkes acceptable to the diuine maiestie, and accordyng to our hartes desyre, this certaynely is the chiefe, that the Catholyke fayth and Christian religion, specially in this our tyme, may in all places be exalted, amplified, and enlarged, whereby the health of soules may be procured, and the Barbarous nations subdued and brought to the fayth. And therefore whereas by the fauour of Gods clemencie (although not without equall desertes) we are called to this holy seate of Peter, and vnderstanding you to be true Catholyke prynces, as we haue euer knowen you, and as your noble and woorthy factes haue declared in maner to the whole world, in that with all your studie, diligence, and industry, you haue spared no trauayles, charges, or perils, aduenturyng euen the shedyng of your owne blood, with applying your whole myndes and endeuours hereunto, as your noble expeditions achyued in recouering the kyngdom of *Granata* from the tyranny of the *Sarracens* in these our dayes, do plainly declare your factes, with so great glory of the diuine name. For the whiche, as we thynk you worthy, so ought we of our owne free wyl fauorably to graunt you al thynges, whereby you may dayly with more feruent myndes, to the honour of God, and enlargyng the Christian Empire, prosecute your deuout and laudable purpose, most acceptable to the immortall God. We are credibly informed, that whereas of late you were determynied to seeke and fynde certayne Ilandes and fyrme landes, farre remote and vnknowen

and

(and not heretofore founde by any other) to the intent to bryng the inhabitantes of the same to honor our redeemer, & to professe the catholike fayth, you haue hytherto been much occupied in the expugnation and recouerie of the kyngdome of *Granata*, by reason wherof you coulde not bryng your sayde laudable purpose to the ende desyred. Neuertheless, as it hath pleased almyghtie God, the foresayde kyngdome beyng recouered, wyllyng to accomplishe your sayde desyre, you haue, not without great labour, peryls, & charges, appoynted our welbeloued sonne *Christopher Colonus* (a man certesse wel commended, as most worthy and apt for so great a matter) well furnyshed with men and shippes, and other necessaries, to seeke (by the sea, where hytherto no man hath sayled) suche firme landes and Ilandes farre remote, and hytherto vnknowen, who (by Gods helpe) makyng diligent searche in the *Ocean* sea, haue founde certayne remote Ilandes & firme landes, whiche were not heretofore found by any other: in the whiche (as is sayde) many nations inhabite, lyuyng peaceably, and goyng naked, not accustomed to eate flesshe: and as farre as your messengers can coniecture, the nations inhabytyng the foresayd landes and Ilandes, beleeue that there is one God, creator in heauen, and seeme apt to be brought to the imbrasyng of the catholyke fayth, and to be imbued with good maners: by reason wherof, we may hope that yf they be well instructed, they may easyly be induced to receyue the name of our sauiour Iesus Christe. We are further aduertised, that the forenamed Christopher hath now buylded and erected a fortresse, with good munition, in one of the foresayde principall Ilandes, in the whiche he hath placed a garryson of certayne of the Christian men that went thyther with hym, aswell to thintent to defende the same, as also to searche other Ilandes and firme landes farre remote, and yet vnknowen. We also vnderstande, that in these landes and Ilandes lately founde, is great plentie of Golde and Spyces, with diuers and manye other precious thynges, of sundrye kyndes and qualities. Therfore all thynges diligently consydered (especially the amplyfying and enlargyng of the catholike fayth, as it behoueth catholike princes, folowyng the examples of your noble progenitours of famous memorie) whereas you are determined, by the fauour of almyghtie God, to subdue and

bryng

bynge to the catholyke fayth thinhabitantes of the afozesayde landes and Ilandes.

We greatly commendyng this your godly and laudable purpose in our Lozde, and desyrous to haue the same brought to a due ende, and the name of our sauiour to be knowen in those partes, do exhozt you in our Lozde, and by the receiuyng of your holy baptysme, wherby you are bound to Apostolical obedience, & earnestly require you by the bowels of mercie of our Lozd Iesu Chzist, that when you intende foz the zeale of the Catholyke fayth to pzosecute the sayde expedition, to reduce the people of the foresayde landes and Ilandes to the Chzistian reigion, you shall spare no labours at any tyme, oz be deterred with any perils, conceiuyng fyrme hope and confidence, that the omnipotent God will geue good successe to your godly attemptes. And that beyng auctozysed by the pziuilege of the Apostolycall grace, you may the mozefreely and boldly take bypon you thenterpzyse of so great a matter, we of our owne motion, and not eyther at your request, oz at the instant petition of any other person, but of our owne mere liberalitie and certayne science, and by the fulnesse of Apostolycall power, do geue, graunt, and assigne to you, your heyzes and successours, all the fyrme landes and Ilandes found, oz to be foũd, discouered, oz to be discouered, toward ẏ west & south, drawing a lyne from the pole Artik to ẏ pole Antartike (that is) from the Nozth to the South: Contaynyng in this donation, whatsoeuer fyrme landes oz Ilandes are founde, oz to be founde towarde *India*, oz towarde any other part what so euer it be, beyng distant from, oz without the foresayde line, drawen a hundzed leagues towarde the West and South from any of the Ilandes whiche are commonly called *De los Azores* and *Capo verde*. All the Ilandes therefoze, and fyrme landes, founde and to be founde, discouered and to be discouered, from the sayde line towarde the West and South, such as haue not actually ben heretofoze possessed by any other Chzistian kyng oz pzynce, vntyll the daye of the natiuitie of our Lozde Iesu Chzist laste paste, from the whiche begynneth this pzesent yeere beyng the yeere of our Lozde. M. CCCC. lxxxiii. when so euer any such shalbe founde by your messengers and captaynes, we by the auctho̓itie of almyghty GOD, graunted vnto vs

in

In saint Peter, and by the office whiche we beare on the earth in the steede of Jesu Christ, do for euer, by the tenor of these presentes, geue, graunt, assigne, vnto you, your heyres, and successours (the kynges of Castyle and Legion) all those landes and Ilandes, with theyr dominions, Territories, cities, castels, towres, places, and villages, with all the ryght, and iurisdictions thereunto parteynyng: constitutyng, assignyng, and deputyng, you, your heyres, and successours, the lordes thereof, with full and free power, aucthoritie, and iurisdiction: Decreeyng neuertheless by this our donation, graunt, and assignation, that from no Christian Prince, which actually hath possessed the foresayde Ilandes and fyrme landes, vnto the daye of the natiuitie of our Lord beforesayd, theyr ryght obteyned, to be vnderstoode hereby to be taken away, or that it ought to be taken away. Furthermore we commaunde you in the vertue of holy obedience (as you haue promysed, and as we doubte not you wyll do vppon mere deuotion and princely magnanimitie) to sende to the sayde fyrme landes and Ilandes, honest, vertuous, and learned men, suche as feare GOD, and are able to instruct thinhabitantes in the Catholyke fayth and good maners, applying all theyr possible deligence in the premisses. We furthermore streightly inhibite all maner of persons, of what state, degree, order, or condition soeuer they be, although of Imperiall and regall dignitie, vnder the payne of the sentence of excommunicatiō, which they shal incurre if they do to the contrary, that they in no case presume, without speciall lycence of you, your heyres, and successours, to trauayle for merchaundies, or for any other cause, to the sayde landes or Ilandes, founde, or to be founde, discouered, or to be discouered, towarde the West and South, drawyng a lyne from the pole Artyke to the pole Antartike, whether the firme landes and Ilandes, founde and to be founde, be situate toward *India*, or toward any other part, beyng distant from the line drawen a hundred leagues toward the west, from any of the Ilands commonly called *De los Azores* and *Capo Verde*: Notwithstandyng constitutions, decrees, and Apostolycall ordinaunces whatsoeuer they are to the contrary. In hym from whom Empyres, dominions, and all good thynges do proceede: Trustyng that almyghtie GOD, directyng your enter-

prises

pices, if you folowe your Godly and laudable attemptes, your labours and trauayles herein, shall in shorte tyme obtayne a happie ende, with felicitie and glory of all Christian people. But forasmuche as it shoulde be a thyng of great difficultie these letters to be caryed to all suche places as shoulde be expedient, we wyll, and of lyke motion and knowledge do decree, that whyther so euer the same shal be sent, or wheresoeuer they shalbe receiued, with the subscription of a common notarie thereunto requyred, with the seale of any person constitute in ecclesiasticall dignitie, or suche as are authorised by the Ecclesiasticall court, the same fayth and credite to be geuen thereunto in iudgement, or els where, as shoulde be exhibyted to these presentes.

It shal therefore be lawefull for no man to infrynge or rashly to contrary this letter of our commendation, exhortation, request, donation, graunt, assignation, constitution, deputation, decreee, commaundement, inhibition, and determination. And if any shall presume to attempte the same, he ought to know that he shal therby incurre the indignation of almyghty God, and his holy Apostles Peter and Paule.

Geuen at Rome at saint Peters: In the yeere of thincarnation of our lorde M. CCCC. lxxxiii. The fourth day of the nones of Maye, the fyrst yeere of our seate.

(.·.)

(.·.)

An Abridgement of.P. Martyr his.5.6.7.and.8. Decades, and particularly of Ferd. Cortelius conqueſt of Mexico, by.R.VV.

THe fyrſt foure Decades of.P. Martyr, you haue already ſeene done into Engliſhe by R.Eden, as alſo certayne parcelles of the foure laſt. P.Martir made eight decades of the weſt Indiſh newes: in leſſe labour theſe may be run ouer, ſpeciall regarde being had vnto that Decade wherein the moſt principall matter is expreſſed: I meane the fyrſt, and that chiefly for the famous conqueſt of the citie Themiſtitan, in Mexico prouince, yea of all that great region we doe nowe vſually call newe Spaine. As for the ſixte Decade, it conteyneth very little matter worthy the rehearſal, except it be certeine reportes of the Spaniards, how they found, where they trauayled in the Weſt Indies, plough ſtuffe of gold: that the prince of *Nicoragua* with his family became chriſtian: that certaine beardles Indians greatly feare ſuche men as haue beardes: that they vſe to ſacrifice lyue men vnto their Idolles, eyther taken in the warres, or fatted vp at home bountefully for that purpoſe: that *Nicoragua* Mere, for the greatneſſe and vnknowen length thereof, for the ebbes and fluddes and many Ilandes therin, myght worthely be called a freſhe water ſea. This freſhet hath ben thought to run into the Northweſterne ſtreicte, rather of ignorance (the courſe therof being not throughly knowen) than that it ſo falleth out in deede, as.P.Martyr wryteth. Finally in the.9.&.10.bookes of the ſixt Decade, newes is ſent to Rome of the controuerſie betwixt the Spaniardes & *Portugales*, concernyng the *Moluccaes*, handled more effectually & in more ample maner, by.*R.Eden*. Fol.448.than.*P.Martyr* in this place penned it. Wherfore it were a needleſſe worke and *actum agere* in deede to trouble the reader therewith any further, eſpecially whereas in this volume, mention hath ben made therof, euen by.*P.Martyr* him ſelfe, as you haue already ſeene.

The lyke opinion am I alſo of, touching the.viii.&.viiii.decades, ſome parcels wherof the Aucthour doth repeate out of his former

wꝛitinges as Dec.7.c.2. the ruine of the Ilandes *Iucaies*, out of his fourth Dec.c.3. Item out of the ſecond Decade.c 10. the nature of that ſpꝛing in the Ilande *Boiuca*, otherwyſe called *Agnaneo*, the water whereof who ſo dꝛinketh, by repoꝛte, of an old man becommeth young agayne, is in many wooꝛdes repeated by .*P. Martyr*, Dec.7.c.7. the whole ſumme of whoſe ſeconde diſcourſe thereof is expꝛeſſed in the foꝛmer place, by. *R. Edens* addition of this clauſe (Perhappes with ſome diet) the which wooꝛdes are not in *P. Martyr* his texte: to be ſhoꝛte, the two kindes of bꝛeade the Indians doe make of the rootes *Iucca*, and a kynd of graine called *Maiz*, ſuffitiently declared. Dec.1.lib.1.f. Dec.3.lib.5. lib.9. Dec.3. be repeated againe, Dec.8.c.3. Other parceiles of theſe afoꝛeſayd Decades, wherein the ſubtelties of theyꝛ Magicians and Coniurers *Peaces* oꝛ *Pages* are diſcribed, their Tigres crueltie, their ſundꝛy kindes of wylde beaſtes, foule, & Serpents, their diuers ſoꝛtes of trees and fruites, partly may you reade of in the bꝛeuiarie of *Gonzal. Ferd. Ouiedus* hiſtoꝛie: as of the fountayne of pytch, the ſtone pellets naturally made foꝛ Gunnes. Fol.224. out of the.7.Decade.c.7. and the Glowooꝛmes out of the ſame c.9. partly in *R. Eden* his notes of newe Spayne, *Peru*, *Rio de la Plata*, *Baccaleos*, and *Florida*, ſet downe in this volume Fol.225. as particulerly of the Nutſhelles vſed in ſteede of money, taken out of *P. Mart.* Dec.8.c.4. Partly in *Theuetus* wooꝛkes of the newe founde wooꝛlde, Engliſhed long ſince, and finally in thoſe bookes which ſundꝛy learned *Simpliciſtes* haue lately wꝛitten pꝛincipally to ayde the Phiſitians of our tyme.

Some other curioſities there be conteyned in. *P. Martyr* his two laſt Decades, namely the *Iucaien* women, to be ſo fayꝛe, that foꝛ theyꝛ loue other countrey Barbares ſeeke to inhabite thoſe Ilandes. Dec.7.c.1. The Spanyardes well vſed of the *Iucaiens*, contrary to all curteſie, to haue carried away many of thoſe Ilanders into ſlauery and miſery: Agayne certayne traueylers to haue ben ſeene there that had tayles lyke fyſhe. Dec.7.c.2. Fonde fantaſies of mens ſoules departed, Dec.7.c.3. wandꝛing firſt Noꝛth and than South about the wooꝛlde, afterwarde to growe young agayne in iolitie: Agayne, other to imagine that the departed ſoules reſt in Caues, and to be that reflexion of the ayꝛe the which we doe call *Ecchо*. Dec.8.c.9. The contention betwixte *Garaius*

and

and *Corteſius*, for ambition, Dec.7.c.5.& Dec.8.cap.1.& 2. The great Cormorantes that deuoure fiſhe of fyue pounde weight at one morſel. Dec.7.c.9. The ſhameleſſe daunſes of naked women at theyr funeralles and obſequies. Dec.7.c.10. Theyr worſhipping of the croſſe in *Saltier*. ˣ. Or made thus, |x| vppon theyr newe borne babes to dryue away deuylles, as alſo in the nyght tyme if they feare any thyng, imagining with that ſigne the place to be purified. Dec.8.c.9. The *Chiribikes* follies in daunſing whole weekes togeather, theyr language full of difficulties for leauyng out ſome ſillables in ſpeech, theyr maner of mariage by clippyng the brydes heare, Dec.8.c.8. The dead bodyes of gentlemen to be roſted, & ſo hanged vp to roofe for buttry goddes, the bones of other that laye buried a whole yeere to be taken vp againe at the xii. monethes ende, and ſolempnely buried. Decade 8.c.9. To conclude, How Captayne *Olitus*, whom *Corteſius* feared not a litle, & therefore ſent vnder the pretexte of honour as it were to diſcouer other landes, tooke head him ſelfe agaynſt *Corteſius*, and miſerably was murthered in the end Dec.8.c 6 & 10. Theſe with ſome other the lyke thinges, may the curious reader finde in many woordes, ſet downe in the aforeſayde.7. and.8 Decades, ſpoken of all for the moſt parte before in. *P. Martyr* his other doinges, or mentioned in *Ouiedus* Summary, or by. *R Eden* briefly noted, or not greatly needfull to be ſet foorth at large in Engliſhe, except they were matters of greater weight. One ſpeciall thing I obſerued amongſt other in reading ouer theſe 6 7. and. 8. Decades, to wyt, the Weſt Indians not onely to be conquered by the Spaniardes, but alſo to be theyr ſlaues and bondmen: the cauſe why after the conqueſt made of them, the Spanyardes doe in continuall bondage and ſlauery keepe them vnder, is expreſſly brought foorth by. *Pe. Martyr*. Dec.7.c 4. in the ſpanyſh tounge, as it was read at the Indiſhe counſayle booke in Spayne, and may thus be Engliſhed.

Theſe be the Indians qualities, in reſpecte whereof they deſerue no libertie.

IN the continent or fyrme lande they eate mans fleſhe: they be more gyuen to *Sodomye* than any other nation of the world: there is no order of iuſtice among them, they goe naked, they haue neyther loue nor honeſtie, they bee fooles and furious,

there is no truth in them,except it be for theyr owne profit: inconstant,without all discretion, very vnkynde, & louers of nouelties: they delyght to make them selues dronke with wynes made of diuers hearbes,fruites,and graine,as ale and sider, & to ouercome their braynes,as wel otherwise with hearbs,as in making drinke thereof,or eating them. They are very bruitishe,and doe make it a prayse to wallowe in vyces. No obedience,no reuerence at all sheweth the young man to the olde,the childe to his father. Neyther teaching nor chastning amendeth them:they be traitors,cruell,so full of reuenge that they neuer forgyue any offence, great enemyes vnto our religion. They be slothfull,theeues,of iudgement very grosse and base, without all honestie and good order. Neither doe the men behaue them selues loyally with theyr wyues, nor the wyues with their husbandes:they be superstitiously giuen to soothsaying,as fearful as Hares, filthes,eating lyse,spiders,& woormes,whersoeuer they finde them: they haue no arte, nor good condition of men. Hauing learned any pointes of Christian religion, they are woont to say that to be good in Spayne, but in India nothing woorth,for that they desire not to alter their maners. They haue no beardes,for they peele and plucke vp the heare as faste as it groweth. They take no pietie on sicke folke, suche as bee very sicke, they gyue ouer to some one kynsman or neighbour of theyrs,or els carry them to the mountaynes to dye there,leauing with them some small portion of bread and water, and so goe theyr way. The elder they waxe,the woorse they bee: vntyll they be xi.or xii.yeeres olde, some hope there is that they would prooue ciuil and vertuous, when they grow elder,they become bruit beasts. In conclusion,I say that god neuer created so corrupte a people for vice and beastlinesse, without any mixture of goodnesse and ciuilitie:they are as blockishe as Asses,making no accompt at all to kyll them selues.

In the fyst Decade is written by.*P. Martyr*, or geathered rather by him out of *Ferd.Cortesius* relations,the conquest of that portion of the West Indishe continent,that lyeth in the hot zone, neare the Tropike of Cancer, betwyxte our Weste sea and *Mar del zur*, the chiefe prouince wherein is Mexico, and the principall citie *Themistitan*. This region, after that it was conquered by Cortesius, beganne to be called *Noua Hispania*, newe Spayne,for the lykenesse thereof vnto the Spanysh kyng-

dome

done in nature of soyle, greatnesse, disposition of the ayre, & other such lyke thynges, as *Cortesius* him selfe writeth vnto Charles the fifth, humbly desiryng his maiestie to allowe of that name. Some later wryters haue gyuen the particuler name of one shyre vnto the whole, callyng it *Mexico*, and the generall name of that whole shyre to the head citie therein, calling *Themistitan* lykewyse *Mexico*, howbeit in trueth *Themistitan* is the principal citie in *Mexico* prouince, *Mexico* the chiefe prouince in all newe Spaigne. Of this countrey, the commodities it doeth yeelde, the nature of the inhabiters, partly you haue already seene in *Gon. Ferd. Ouiedus* historie. Fol. 221. and chiefely Fol. 225. The kyng of this countrey bare name *Monte Zuma*, or *Muteezuma*, as *Cortesius* that conquered him writeth. in *P. Martyr* his Decades printed in Spaigne. An. D. 1530. *Meteezuma*. in his. 4 Decade, entituled *de insul. nuper inuentis to. no. orb. p. 506. Multoxumam*, as also in the last edition thereof at *Cullen*, ioyntly with the three first decades, the which our Printer in the translation hereof, hath followed in the discourse of the West Indies Ilandes. Straunge names are many tymes diuersly written, though in effecte they meane all one, *Henricus* say we, with the Frenchmen *Henry*, the Almans *Henreich*, the Italians *Arrigo*, the *Portugales Henrico*, as *Barros* speaking of king Iohn the first his sonne, whom *Cadamust* called in his Nauigation *Huric*.

This kyng was so welthie, so mightie, his dominions so large, that the inhabiters knew no other prince in all the worlde, of him *Cortesius* had intelligence by *Montegius* and *Portucarrerius*, and from him certaine rich presentes for his maister Charles Themperour, as in the aforesayd discourse of the west Indish Ilands it hath ben sayde. Wherefore the. 16. day of August, in the yeere of our Lorde. 1520. *Ferdinandus Cortesius*, with. 15. light horsemen, and fyue hundred footemen well appoynted, besides three noblemen of the citie *Cempoal*, named *Teuchus*, *Mamexus*, & *Tamaius*, and. 13 hundred men of that countrey, to serue in steede of packe horses, for cariage, after the maner there, began to set forwarde from his Castle *Vera crux*, towardes *Themistitan* in *Mexico*, distant from thence Westwarde ja hundred leagues, or thereabout. *Cempoal* standeth from *Vera Crux*. 4. leagues, eche league in this countrey is. 4. Italian miles. Foure dayes iourney from *Cempoal* *Cortesius* was enterteined curtuously by the inhabiters of a good-

ly ſhyꝛe named *Sienchimalen*, as alſo by the citizens of *Texuacan*, after that he had paſſed with his army an exceedyng hygh hyll, thicke clad with yſe & ſnow euen in the moneth of Auguſt. The like entertaynment was offered him & his compaine as hee marched forward, vntil he came to the *Taſcaltecans* lande, who are ſo great enemies vnto the *Mexicans*, that liuyng amyd their dominions, they had rather want their greateſt neceſſaries, to wit ſalt, and cotton to cloath them, than become ſubiects in any wiſe to the Pꝛince of *Mexico*. With theſe *Taſcaltecans*, *Corteſius* had thꝛee conflictes paſſing thꝛough their countrey, & in the ende valiantly gaue them the ouerthꝛow. *Taſcalteca* is a greater citie, moꝛe populous, and better ſerued than *Granata* in Spayne was, at what time the Moꝛes yelded: their bꝛead is made of *Maiz*, that is, Indiſh coꝛne, a very good ſeat foꝛ hauking, hunting, & freſhe water fiſhing, ſea fiſh is ſcarſe, foꝛ it ſtandeth from the ſea aboue. 50. leagues: of pulſe good ſtoꝛe. This towne wals, & houſes in number 20000. built of ſtone, high, & ſtrong, in reſpect of the enemy euer at hand: they keepe markets and fayꝛes. The people doth weare hoſe, and maketh good accompt of Jewels, pꝛecious ſtones, of creſtes, & bulhes of feathers, to ſet them fooꝛth in the warres, they garniſhe euery thing with gold: wood is bꝛought to be ſold to the market on mens ſhoulders: timber, booꝛdes, bꝛicke, lime, & ſtone, are vſuall merchandiſe. Theyꝛ Carpenters, Maſons, & Potters, are very ſkilfull. There is no veſſell wꝛought amongſt vs moꝛe artificially than theyꝛs is Medicinable hearbes are ſolde openly. They vſe baths, the nation politike, gouerned in maner of a common wealth. The whole circuit of this pꝛouince is. 90. leagues, full of townes, boꝛoughes, and villages, hils and dales moſt fruitfull, & well ſtoꝛed of good ſouldyers, in reſpecte of their enemyes rounde about them. About one league of this citie encamped *Corteſius*, & by his ſpials vnderſtanding the citizens not to miſtruſt oꝛ feare any inuaſion, tooke the ſtrongeſt part therof by night: in the moꝛning came the beſt citizens to offer him all obedience. *Corteſius* than returning with the victoꝛie & victuals to his campe, found it in a troubleſome mutinie foꝛ the great diſtreſſes & pꝛeſent calamies they thought them ſelues to be in, ſo far off from their owne country, in the midſt of their enemies. This mutinie appeaſed he with good wooꝛds, & comfoꝛtable reaſons, perſuading them their enemies to be weaker, the ſpꝛeadyng abꝛoade of the goſpell to be

Taſcalteca.

now

now in their hands, them selues to be Spaniardes, who esteeme not death to wyn glory: a most happy death that to be, where life is spent in the conquest of infidelles and barbares, & to lye by the sea side idlely, that were to no purpose. Thus appeased he the rebellious myndes of his companyons, and after. 20. dayes abode made in this prouince, he led them into an other shire for pastures and riuers the most commodious, for habitation best in all that countrey. The principall citie hath name *Churultecal*, as great, as faire, as *Tascalteca*, and so gouerned, vntil the king of *Mexico* oppressed it. Here was *Cortesius* receyued with songes, musicall instruments, and trumpets, by the priestes and children of the citie after their maner, & wel feasted. The end of all this mirth was an vproze of the inhabiters agaynst him, procured by the kyng of *Mexico*, as it was supposed, whereof *Cortesius* hauing secrete inteiligence by a woman of *Cempoal* that folowed his Campe, summoned a parle with the beste citizens of *Churultecal*, at his owne lodging. Those citizens first laid he fast by the heles, & than speedely with his army, warned to be in a readinesse for that purpose, set vpon the deceiptful Barbares of a soden, before that they were throughly prouided, and gaue them the ouerthrow. The prince of *Mexico* acquitted him selfe of this vproze, protesting by his Ambassadors to *Cortesius*, that his disloyall subiectes the *Churultecals* had bruted that conspiracie vnder his name to doe him iniury, whom they would not willingly obeye. He sent withall rich presentes, praying *Cortesius* to come to *Themistitan*, promising him that he should want nothyng there, notwithstandyng the harde prouision thereof in so barren a place, altogeather in the water. To conducte *Cortesius* thyther, he sent also certayne Gentlemen for guydes, and other of his nobilitie to receyue him as he came neare. To speake of euery curtesie shewed him in this iourney, and to wryte of euery place he passed, and particularly to reheatse euery dayes iourney, euery hyll, towne, ryuer, house, and gardeyne, by the way, would breede ouermuche tediousnesse. In fewe, the Lordes of the countrey, as he went, vsed him well, especially in *Guazucingo* prouince, and *Chialcho* shyre, the one whereof was violently oppressed by the prince of *Mexico*, the other willingly subiect vnto him. In the cold mountaynes he wanted no wood, in the townes hee was prouided for, and his

Churultecal.

companions, who were of Cempoallens, Taſtaltecans, Churultecans, & Gazucinges, in number. 4000. of Spaniards not aboue. 300. In this maner, Corteſius accompanyed & folowed, came at the length into a vale, bearing name Colua. wherein be two meres, the one ſalt water of. 60. leagues in circuit, the other a freſhet. Partly on the land, partly in the ſalt meere ſtandeth Iztapalapa a fayre towne, from whence to Themiſtitan, the royall ſeat of Mexico, there lyeth a way on a ſtone wall, two ſpeares length broad, built vp in the water by hand with infinite charges, the wall ſerueth alſo for a bridge, by this bridge ſides ſtand three fayre townes, Meſicalcingo, Coluacan, & Vichilabuſco. The firſt is ſuppoſed to haue. 3000. houſes, the ſecond. 6000. the third. 4000. wel built, eſpecially their Towers, & their Temples wherin they doe ſacrifice. In theſe townes great aboundaunce of ſalt is made, that ſerueth all ſuch as doe acknowledge the Prince of Mexico for their Lord. Other be denied it, as of the Taſcaltecans it was ſayde. This ſalte meere ryſing doeth flowe into the Freſhet, & as it ebbeth the Freſhet falleth into the ſalt meere agayne. The freſhe water may ſerue neuertheleſſe for drinke, the ſalte water becommeth not freſhe therewithall. The wall hath many draught bridges for warfare, and ſluſes for paſſage, where toll is payde vnto the kyng. Halfe one league before you come to Themiſtitan, where the lyke bridge or cauſey from the lande ioyneth with the aforeſayde wal, ſtandeth a ſtrong Caſtle, double walled about, with two ſtrong Towers, not poſſible to be conquered. To this place came a thouſande Gentlemen Courtiers foorth of the citie to receyue Corteſius, all apparelled a lyke, ſaluting him one by one after theyr countrey maner, to wytte, touchyng the ground with theyr finger, and than kyſſyng it, in ſigne of reuerence. After all them came the kyng of Mexico Montezuma him ſelfe in the middle of the bridge, accompanyed with two hundred of his nobles, orderly two and two, in better attyre then the other afore ſayd, but all on their bare feete, though euery body in this countrey otherwiſe weareth ſhooes. The kyng as he went, leaned vpon the ſhoulders of two noble men, the one whereof was his brother: not that he needed any ſuch helpe, but for that the kynges of Mexico are woont ſo to be honoured, as though they were holden vp by the ſtrength of theyr nobilitie.

These two noble men, *Cortesius* meeting with king *Meteezuma*, and lyghtyng of his horse to imbrace hym, dyd forbyd hym to touche theyr kyng, as an vnlawful action in that countrey: the rest of the kynges company came orderly to salute Cortesius, after theyr maner. Cortesius presented the kyng with a chayne of Bugle, set with some Diamondes and Rubies, of no great value, but such as pleased the kyng, who rewarded hym agayne with two other chaynes of gold, wrought in maner of sea Crabbes, & Snails, & so returned into ỳ citie with Cortesius againe, where he, lodgyng hym in the royal pallace, erected therein for hym a throne, and presented hym the seconde tyme with other riche gyftes, and prouision of all thynges necessary for hym and his trayne. All the bridge length, as he went with the kyng, stoode on eche syde certayne great Temples, wherein were sacrificed slaues, and chyldren payed for tribute by kyng Meteezumaes vassalles. Neere vnto Cortesius throne kyng Meteezuma had his clothe of estate, where vnto the Spaniardes, before his nobles there assembled, he spake in this sort.

Noble and valiaunt men of armes in the feelde, and mercyfull Capitanes vnto such as do yeelde them selues, you are welcome into this countrey. Of auncient tyme we haue heard, and in our old Chronicles we do reade, that neyther I, nor any of this land, be auncient inhabiters hereof, but aliens and forreyners, brought hyther by a great prince, vnto whom we were al subiect. While this prince, leauyng vs heere, went home agayne to see his countrey, our forefathers maried, had issue, buylded vp houses, and erected certayne cities, so that at his returne we neyther woulde go backe agayne with hym, nor ackno wledge him for our prince any more: Wherfore we haue been euer of opinion, that his posteritie woulde come to recouer this countrey, and make vs his subiectes againe. Consyderyng then the place from whence you say that you do come, and that which you gyue vs to vnderstand of your great and myghtie lorde and kyng that sent you hyther, we be throughly perswaded that he is our true Lorde, so muche the more, for that, as you say, he hath long since knowen that we dwelt heere Assure your selues therfore, that we wyll all yeelde vnto you, and acknowledge you our lordes, in his name that sent you: in this wyll we not fayle, we wyll not deceyue you, all my

Kyng Meteezuma his oration to the Spaniards.

domini-

dominions ſhall you rule, for all my ſubiectes ſhall obey, commaunde all that we haue, for you be nowe in your owne prouince and houſe. Be ye mery, and refreſhe your ſelues after your long trauayle and many laboures in the warres. I am not ignorant what hath happened vnto you all the way, I doubte not but that the *Campoales* and *Churultecanes* haue ſaid euyl of me vnto you, but I pray you geue no credit vnto any mans wordes concernyng me, eſpecially vnto my enimies, ſome wherof hauing ben my ſubiectes, at your commyng are gone from me, and do report vntruethes of me, to purchaſe therewith your fauour. I knowe that they beare you in hande, that my ſeate, the furniture of my houſe, the very walles therof, are beaten golde. Furthermore, that I am a God, that I fayne my ſelfe a God, and ſuche lyke toyes: but you ſee all thynges here are made of lyme, ſtone, and earth. Do you not ſee that I am made of fleſhe and bone, mortall, and corpulent: you ſee they haue not sayde the trueth. I haue in deede certayne plate lefte me by my forefathers, what ſoeuer I haue it ſhall be yours, diſpoſe thereof as you thynke good, I wyll nowe departe to other of my houſes where I am woont to lye, I wyll ſee that neyther you, nor your trayne want any thyng: be ye of good cheare, be gladde, for you are in your owne countrey, you be in your owne houſes.

As he ſpake this he diſcouered his body to the ſkynne.

Corteſius aunſweared in fewe, and to the purpoſe, eſpecially concernyng that poynte, the kyng of Spayne to be that prince whom they looked for. After fyre dayes ſpent there ioyfully, noyſe was brought to *Corteſius* of certaine murthers and iniuries offered vnto the Spanyardes in a towne of *Muteezumaes* dominions, and that by *Muteezuma* his conſent. This occaſion tooke he, throughly to bryng *Muteezuma* in ſubiection. And fyrſt he cauſed hym to keepe that houſe wherein *Corteſius* laye, then to ſende for the malefactors, whom *Corteſius* openly executed, by whoſe confeſſion *Muteezuma* founde gyltie, was for a tyme ſet by the heeles, but delyuered agayne by and by, confeſſyng his faulte, and promyſyng all loyaltie and dewtie, choſe rather to remayne a trew ſubiect in *Corteſius* palace, then to lyue abrode at libertie like a kyng, as in effect he ſhewed, both in ſendyng abrode commiſſion to diſcouer the golde mynes throughout all his dominions at *Corteſius* motion, in geatheryng togeather great ſummes

A conſpiricie agaynſt the Spanyardes whereof Antezuma was conuicted.

summes of golde and treasure to be presented vnto the Spanyshe kyng, in geuyng both counsayle, and the meanes howe to conquer erstelie prince *Cacamozin*, *Muteezumaes* vassall, refusyng all obedience vnto the Spanyardes, finally in a publike assembly, exhortyng all his nobles to acknowledge the kyng of Spaine for theyr soueraigne Lorde, and to yeelde vnto hym that obedience and in his name, to *Cortesius* that duetie, whiche he hym selfe was woont to looke for at theyr handes. The processe was written by publike notaries, confyrmed by the nobles, and a copie thereof delyuered vnto *Cortesius*. *Mexico* prouince, enuyronned about with hygh and Alpyshe mountaynes, standeth in a playne countrey in circuit .70. leagues, about the greatest part whereof are two Meres, the one of salt water, the other of freshe. The two lakes go one into the other at a streict, caused by litle hylles that runne amyd all the foresayde playne. This streict is passed by boate out of the one lake into the other, to all the townes standyng on either syde of the aforesayd lakes. Our Indyshe wryters name the boates *Canoa*, the Indians call them *Accaler*, troughes as it were, all of one peece. I haue traueyled in the lyke vpon the ryuer *Sone*, in the edge of France, neere hygh *Burgundie*. In the mydst of the salte Mere, two leagues euery way from the lande, standeth that ryche and welthy citie *Temixtitan* or *Themistitan*, no lesse in quantitie then *Siuilia*, or *Corduba* in Spayne. From the land, vnto it lye foure wayes, or walles built vp out of the water two Speares length hyghe, commodiously for suche as trayuayle thyther by lande, with sundrye draught brydges by the way, to cut of inuasions if neede were. Of these foure wayes, one was that, where *Cortesius* met with kyng *Muteezuma*. In one of these walles or brydges, freshe water is brought from the lande into the citie by two gutters, no lesse in quantitie then hoggesheades: the one thereof serueth when ỹ other is either stopped, or musty. The streats are streight, many in number, built much after the maner of Venice, both to go by lande and by water. The brydges ouer the water in this citie be made of woodde, of suche breadth that tenne may passe ouer them togeather, so many in number, that it were a thyng almost infinite to recken them.

Mexico.

Themestitan.

The

The number of houses therein amounteth to .60. thousande. Amongest other one streate is very large, sumptuously buylte, and famous for all sortes of merchaundies, that prouince yeeldeth, wont to be solde there .60. thousande merchauntes, as it is thought dayly haunt that streat . There are solde sundry sortes of mettales iewelles, fruites, foule, hearbes, and all other necessaries seruyng for meates, clothes, warfar, buyldings, and pleasure. For euery speciall kynde of merchaundies, is appoynted a speciall standyng by it selfe . They sell by tale and measure, the vse of weyghtes as yet they haue not. Theyr mony is a kynde of Nutte shels, of the kynnell it selfe is made theyr drynke. The tree is planted vnder the bowes of some other for defence, vntyl it be growen strong, hable to abyde the heate of the Sunne, then is the sense tree cut downe, and that let to rontime, many Lordes haue thereof great reuenewes in that countrey. Steele and Iron they want, in steede whereof they vse to make theyr instrumentes of a kynde of harde stone, wherewith they woorke golde, syluer, copper, brasse, exellently wel in what fourme or shape so euer they lyste. You can not shewe them any kynde of thyng, but they wyll drawe it, and set it out most lyuely in metall, so cunnyng artificers they be. To the markets all thinges are brought, eyther by water in *Canoaes*, or on slaues backes. There standeth a goodly palace in the market place for iudgement. There be resydent alwayes .x. or .xii. graue senators, to see good order kept in that streate, to decide controuersies happenyng there, to punyshe offenders. Other see what is to be solde in the market, and what measure is made. Many gorgeous temples be in this citie, many goodly towers buylte where noble men haue ben buryed, with gallant chappelles to theyr Idolles, many princely palaces, for that all the nobilitie of that countrey lyeth some parte of the yeere in the citie, and the best citizens great ryche men. The good order and policie in so barbarous a uation, is wonderfull to beholde. Concernyng their abhominable Idolatry, *Cortesius* is worthy of great commendation, for the throwyng downe the Idoles where he came, beyng a stranger, though the princes of that prounce and *Meteezuma* also tooke it not well, principally in the palace, persuadyng them that it was not seemely for a kyng to worshyppe that whiche a

knaue

knaue or slaue of his had made. Euery noble man hath, besydes the palaces in the citie, his castle, souldiers, receyuers, & other officers in the countrey: and neere the court gallant houses for recreation, with pleasaunt gardens, orchardes, pondes, & other the lyke delightes. The noble men and Gentlemen of this countrey, can not be fewe in number, whereas dayly the court is furnished with fyue hundred young gentlemen, besydes the multitude of seruyng men that attende on them. And the fashion in this countrey is of all the nobilitie, to sende theyr sonnes for education sake vnto the Court, although many of them dwel an hundred and fyftie, or two hundred leagues of. So large & so myghtie is the kyngdome of *Mexico*, & yet so well gouerned, the kyng so duetyfully obeyed of all his subiectes, aswel absent as present, eche shyre yeeldyng and duely paying vnto hym the commodities therof, according to theyr custome, that *Cortesius* thinketh no prince in the world to be more feared & reuerenced of his people. The kyng hath sundry goodly pallaces, and in them many ryche and costly ornamentes, of golde, of syluer, of feathers, so artificially wrought, that neyther any sort of needle worke, nor kynde of picture, may seeme to make the lyke shewe. Among the rest, three special houses of recreation the kyng hath in his palace. In one of them are a number of monstrous and deformed persons, dwarfes, crookebackes, syngyng men by nature, twoo headed monsters, and others, with theyr keepers. The second house is so large, that in it commodiously two kynges may be resident. The place is set foorth with many Alabaster & Marble pyllers, ten goodly pondes therin, well stored with fyshe, and foule, of al sortes that eyther do lyue in the water, or on the lande, with their keepers, and diuersities of meates for theyr diuers natures. In this place kept he also young chyldren, that had whyte heades, & were of fayre complexion, aswel boyes as gyrles. The thyrde house serued for Lions, Tygers, Wolues, Fores, and other the lyke wylde beastes, eche sort in theyr seueral dennes. The least of these three houses is so well buylt, that the kyng at his pleasure may lodge therein, with all his court. The prince is thus serued. Fyue hundred gentlemen at the least, with theyr folowers, gyue attendaunce at the court al the day long, though they come not alwayes in the kynges syght. These gentlemen syt downe

The Courtiers.

The kynges houses.

1

2

3

The seruice of the kyng.

to

to dynner when the kyng ſytteth, and do fare as well as he, theſe folowers haue theyr reuerſion . The buttrey, cellar, pantry, and other offices neuer ſhut, come in who wyll, meate & dynke he can not want. The hall wherein the kyng dyneth, is matted vnder foote, his meate is brought vp by .300. young men penſioners, flethe, fyſhe, fruites, ſalates of all ſortes vppon chaffyng dyſhes in the wynter to keepe the meates warme . Theſe wayters neuer come neere the boord, for the kyng ſytteth on a leather cuſhyng artificially wrought, at a table rayled about, within the precincte whereof ſtandeth his Sewer, to ſet hym downe thoſe meates he lyketh of beſt . At his ryght hande ſyxe olde men ſyt downe, vnto whom the kyng hym ſelfe carueth. The kyng waſheth before meate and after, he is ſerued in earthen dyſhes, his cuppes be of the ſame mettall: he chyfteth hym ſelfe foure tymes a daye. Whatſoeuer he hath once vſed, be it apparell, napery, or any other kynde of houſholde ſtuffe, it is neuer brought hym any more to vſe, but beſtowed by hym vpon his ſeruauntes or frendes at conuenient tymes. For honour ſake eche one commeth into the palace barefoote, in moſt humble wyſe they come before the king, when they are called, bowing downe theyr heads, theyr eies to the ground. It were great preſumption to looke the king in the face when he talketh with any of them. A man would thynke they were all dombe in the preſence of the kyng, ſuche is theyr ſilence. No man dare turne his backe to the kyng, but departyng from hym eche one goeth backewarde. No man dare go out of his place when the kyng paſſeth by . At his goyng abrode he is folowed with a great troupe of his nobles and gentelmen, and hath three rods borne before hym, one whereof he taketh in his owne hand when he commeth forth out of his lytter, wherin commonly he is caryed abrode . In concluſion no heathen prince hath ſo many ceremonies as this kyng of *Mexico*. Quietly in this citie from the .8. of September the yeere of our lorde .1520. vntyll Maie folowing, remayned *Corteſius* with al honour, enioying his pictoryc, and rulyng ſo myghty a kyngdome conquered by hym, with al proſperitie. When *Velaſque* a Spanyarde, then Lieuetenaunt of *Cuba*, that euer enuied at his good hap, ſent *Naruaez* a luſty young captayne with eyghtene ſayle wel appointed to commaund *Corteſius* out of *Mexico*, and to geue ouer the rule of that

countrey,

countrey, which he him selfe had paynefully conquered vnto their pleasure, by forged patents from the Spanyshe kyng. Muche amazed at the fyrst was *Cortesius* with this tydinges, considering that if he went agaynst *Naruaez*, the *Mexicanes* not yet throughly brought in subiection might in the meane time reuolte: againe if he staied, *Naruaez* might put his conquest in ioperdy, violently forcing ỹ countrey euerywhere as he came. The matter was thorowly knowen to the barbares of *Themistitan*. The king himselfe had brought hym by his vassalles, paynted in a table, the ships, theyr number, artillarye, horsemen and footemen landed. In the ende *Cortesius* resolued hym selfe to go agaynst *Naruaez*. Wherfore leauyng at *Themistitan* a Garryson of Spaniardes, the whiche he highly commended vnto *Muteezuma*, marched forward with .170 footemen, sendyng other .80. that way before hym. *Naruaez* lykewyse came on agaynst *Cortesius*, and had nowe taken *Cempoal*, and stirred vp agaynst hym those citizens. *Cortesius* hauyng intelligence of *Naruaez* certayne beyng there in an high towre garded with .800. souldiers, and .19. Canons set at the steyre foote, thynkyng neuertheless nothyng at all of his comming, set vppon *Naruaez* with .250. men, and there tooke hym on Witsunday night, the rest of his company yelded them selues. In the meane while the citizens of *Themistitan* reuolted against theyr prince and the Spanyshe gouernement, as by a messenger dispatched thither from *Cempoal*, to declare *Cortesius* good hap and *Naruaes* imprisoment, it was vnderstoode. The castle of *Themistitan* besieged, in many places set a fyre and vndermyned, the Spanyshe Garryson to be in great ieopardye, the fyue boates they made, burnt, the messenger him selfe greeuously wounded, *Muteezuma* the kyng onely to fauoure them, and hym nowe scarsely obeyed, the nobles to choose death rather then to obey suche geastes, that keepe theyr kyng lyke a warde, that dispossesse them of their owne citie, that meyntayne therin theyr enimies the *Tascaltecans* & *Guazuingoes*, euen before theyr face at theyr owne charges, to despight them, that deuoure theyr vittayles harde to come by in that citie so situated in the water, that iniurie them, that lay on tributes, that by hooke and by crooke make away from them whatsoeuer good there is to be had, that breake downe theyr Idolles, and suppresse theyr auncient rytes and cerimonies.

Cortesius

Cortesius returneth to Themistitan.

Cortesius therefore speedily with .70. horses and fyue hundred footemen, and as muche artillery as he could, returneth againe to *Themistitan*, whyther he came about mydsommer daye. At *Cortesius* entrie into the citie agayne, the Spanyardes, throughly beaten by the Barbares with dartes and stones from hygh pine-apple trees, & an hygh tower that was neere, began to take hart, and to hope for good happe after theyr great troubles. The Barbares lykewyse vnderstandyng of *Cortesius* comming, grew to be more cruel and fyrce, with horrible cryes, shootyng of theyr arrowes, and throwyng an infinite number of dartes and stones, for the company of them was innumerable, that the ayre seemed darke and cloudie therewith. *Cortesius* sent out a captaine with two hundred to rescue the Spanyardes in the palace. This captayne slue many of the Barbares, but the multitude was so great that he dyd litle good. Foure of his souldyers were slayne, he hym selfe, greeuously wounded, had much a do to retyre agayne. *Cortesius* set vppon them at an other syde, litle harme dyd he them likewyse, for that as sone as the Barbares had spent theyr dartes and stones, eche one gat vp into the turrette of his house to saue hym selfe. The fyght helde on fyrcely a good while. *Cortesius* was forced in the ende to retyre with some daunger, and losse of many of his soldiers. The whiche thyng when the Barbares had espied, they begane to geue a newe assalte on euery syde of the palace, to fyre the gates, and stoutely to continue batterye, fyghtyng euen vppon theyr felowes dead carcasses, and wyshyng with them rather to be slayne, then to lyue in bondage vnder the Spanyardes. Thus spent they in armes the whole daye, yeeldyng a newe supply of men (the multitude was so great) foure tymes an houre, and raysyng clamors all the nyght long to the Spanyardes great annoy, that then coulde take no rest after theyr paynefull and daungerous conflycte the daye tyme, fewe in number, fyghtyng from morryng to nyght without intermission, and .80. of theyr companye wounded. The next day the Barbares set vppon the Spanyardes agayne. *Cortesius* planteth .xiii. feelde peeces, and furnysheth his vangarde with harquebuziers and archers, but theyr enimies so litle esteemed death, that seyng at one shoot a dozen of theyr felowes torne in peeces, all feare set a syde, they supplyed styll the voyde

boyde places. The day folowyng, the Spanyardes wanting victuals, issued out in open feelde: they slue many Barbares, they ouerthrew the houses neare ỳ pallace, they tooke certaine draught bridges, but at night they returned with their Generall and 50. of their company wounded, as hungry as they went foorth. Wherefore they caused warlike engines to be made of boords, in fourme of a fouresquare house, going on wheeles, placing in ech one therof. 20. shot, whom many rascall souldiers folowed with pikeaxes and hatchets, to do harme that way in destroying their buildings: but stones & dartes came so mightily & so thicke about the Spaniardes eares, that such as went thus foorth, were faine to creepe home againe out of their engines torne in peeces: they that taried at home could not once looke out but they were domaged. Kyng *Muteezuma*, desirous to dissuade his citizens from the assalt, shewyng him selfe vnto them out of the Pallace, had a blowe with a stone, whereof in three dayes he dyed. This Prince was of a very good nature, wyse, and very patient, his body the Spaniardes lefte vnto the *Mexicans* to bury, for that they them selues had little other leasure then to thinke how to saue their liues, rather than to bury the dead. Muteezuma slayne.

The next day the nobles of the countrey came to a parle with *Cortesius*, at the same place where *Muteezuma* tooke his deaths wound. *Cortesius* exhorted them to peace, otherwise threatning the vtter decay & ruine of that their so famous and noble a citie, with protestation of pietie on them whom once he had taken to be his friendes, promising pardon for that which was done, and settyng downe what befel vnto other nations that refused his friendshyp. The *Mexicans* making small accompte of his woordes, answered, that they tooke him for no friend, but for their enemy, that he should depart with all his trayne out of their countrey if he would haue peace, otherwise they woulde so long continue theyr siege, vntill by force they had dryuen him out, though for euery Spanyarde slayne, there dyed a thousande *Mexicans*, for his friendshyp they cared not, pardon they asked not, most willingly they would all dye, so that they might deliuer their posteritie from the Spanyshe tyranny. A Parle.

Wherefore *Cortesius*, waying with him selfe the great daunger that presently might ensue for want of victualles if he stayed, the

Mexicans continuing their assalte, for perill to be stopped at the draught bridges if he departed, so muche the more for that these Barbares were not ignorant of .70. thousand ducates heaped vp togeather by him in that prouince: set vppon them the seconde tyme with the aforesayde engines, but all in vayne. So stoutly their enemyes defended them selues, and so fiercely they resisted the assalte giuen. Chiefly the Spaniardes courage appeared in winnyng of a certayne Tower that alwayes commaunded them, nexte in the ruine of such houses as for the nearenes thereof bred them great incombrance and perill. After many woundes receyued, and great slaughter done on both sides, the principal citizens, counterfectyng a conclusion of peace, promysed obedience vnto *Cortesius*, so that all deedes past myght be forgotten. *Cortesius* lykyng well thereof, at their request set free a priest he had of theirs in prison, to deale betwyxt them, and throughly persuaded that no guyle was ment, withdrew his company from skirmishing. But he was no sooner set downe to dynner, after his restlesse afflictions and continuall labours, but the *Mexicans* tooke the towne bridges, and voyded the trenches, which *Cortesius* for passage had caused to be filled vp. Presently therefore he rushed out amongst them agayne with his horsemen, but the iourney went so hardly with the Spanyardes, that *Cortesius* wounded in the head was scarsly able to retyre agayne, many of his company were slayne, such as escaped were not able to continue in the fielde any longer, wearyed with blowes, worne out with hunger. It remayned only, that now they eyther presently must perysshe, or els depart out of the countrey. By nyght therefore *Cortesius* and his souldyers priuely thought to slyp away with *Muteezumaies* children, and certayne of the *Mexican* nobles captiues, charging the Spanysh kyng his officers with the fifth part of his treasure, and takyng the residue thereof with him. But the Barbares hauyng intelligence thereof, oppressed them in the way, tooke theyr goods, slue many of the Spaniards, and with them their captiues: if happely any escaped, they were such as marched in the midst, for both the vaugarde and rereward were altogeather discomfited and lost, to the number of 150 Spanyardes 42. horses. 2000. *Tascaltecans*, and *Guazuzings*, that ayded them. Thus paynefully, with great daunger and no lesse griefe, *Cortesius* lefte *Themistitan*, pur-

Cortesius fleeth out of Themistitan.

sued

sued by his enemyes that folowed him, nothyng holpen by the way as he repayred home, refreshyng his Campe with a dead horse, after fyue dayes spent with the foode of parched corne, and that in small quantitie before he came to *Tascalteca*.

The *Tascaltecans* curtuously entertayned him and his, with whom he made his abode. 20. dayes, to refreshe his wearyed army: that done, he conquered other cities in that prouince, eyther enemyes vnto the *Tascaltecans*, as *Tepeaca*, where he buylte for safetie of passage *Segura la Frontera*: or suche as for feare of the *Mexicans* had not yeelded them selues before, to wyt, *Guaccachiulla*, *Izzuca*, and other principall townes therabout. Finally, he sendeth for horsemen and shot out of the Ilande *Hispaniola*, wynneth many Barbares fauour & assistance agaynst the *Mexicans*, maketh prouision of 13. flye Boates, to annoye by water the citizens of *Themistitan*. *Meteezumaes*, *Nepheu*, *Catamazinus*, the new kyng of *Mexico*, fearyng on the other syde the Spanyardes returne, and seeing many of his subiectes to fall from him, wanteth not in any wyse to set all thinges in a readinesse for warres, especially pykes, to annoye the horsemen, whom they most dreaded. Eightiene leagues from *Tascalteca* towardes *Themistitan*, standeth *Tazuco*, a goodly citie of the *Mexicans*. *Cortesius* fyrst of all tooke this citie, & caused his prouision for fly Boates wrought in *Tascalteca* to be brought thyther. Such was the hatred of the *Tascaltecans* and *Guazuzings* agaynst the *Mexicans*, that they carried the tymber vppon theyr shoulders from *Tascalteca* to *Tazuco*, without any grudging, for the prouision aforesayde. From *Tazuco Cortesius* cut a passage into the salte Mere of *Mexico*, to bryng his flye Boates to the siege of *Themistitan*: this trenche, three Englyshe myles long, and foure fathome deepe, was finyshed by. 8000. pyoners of that countrey in fyftie dayes. This nay annoyed very muche the citizens, in destroying theyr sculles and troughes, and stopping their passage from place to place, besydes the assalte giuen therewith to the towne it selfe. *Cortesius* army, euer as it came, destroyed all suche places by the way, that either persecuted him fleeing away before, or presently might domage his returne.

Cortesius returneth to the siege of Themistitan,

The citie he besieged in three places at once, after that hee had cutte of all the freshe water conductes, and taken the wayes

and bridges, and stopped all passage for any enemy of his into the towne: the number of his souldiers amounted vnto 120000. for out of all the countrey about, the Barbares came with *Cortesius*, some for libertie, some for friendshyp, some for hope of gaine. The siege lasted neuertheless ten weekes, in the ende whereof with continuall battry the citie defaced, and more than 100000. citizens woyne out partly in fight, and partly wasted with misery and hunger, *Cortesius* tooke theyr new kyng priuely walkyng in a secret corner of the lake, and subdued throughly with him the citie *Themistitan*, 14. townes by the lake syde, & all the *Mexican* realme and prouince, vnto the Spanyshe crowne, in the iurisdiction whereof it doeth presently remayne. The spoyle of the citie, in value great, *Cortesius* diuided amongst the Spanyshe souldyers, reseruyng the fyfth parte therof, and certayne fine feather woorkes, the whiche he sent into *Europe*, to be presented vnto Charles the fyfth kyng of Spayne, and Emperour, than in Germanie.

Themistitan conquered agayne.

Who lysteth to see this hystorie more at large, may reade *Cortesius* Nauigations, and *Frauncis Lopez* woorke thereof written in the Spanyshe tongue, made not long since Italian by *Lucius Maurus*, and if I be not deceyued, nowe a doyng into Englyshe. An abridgement thereof I promysed, or a commentary, as *Cæsar* termeth suche kynde of wrytynges, to gyue other men occasion to set foorth at large those thinges by leasure, which briefly are noted and signified in fewe vnto some, that willingly woulde not be altogeather ignorant thereof, nor yet stande to long in any such discourses. To set downe particulerly eche Spanyarde and Portugale his doynges in these new discouered landes, to drawe Geographically the places, to wryte all their battelles, victories, and conquestes, to describe the cities rased, the townes erected, to poynte out the Capitaynes personages, to shewe theyr traueyles and good hap, it would requyre an other *Homere*, an other *Thucydides*, an other *Liuius* labour: it would requyre an other Emperour to set students a woorke, as *Iustinian* dyd his lawe geatherers: the relations of the Indyshe traueylers are so many in number, theyr reportes so diuers, the volumes written therof so huge, and in so sundry languages.

R.W.

FINIS.

R. VVilles Speciall aduiſes to be obſerued in readyng ouer this woorke.

Fol. 6. *De Medea.* put out *De.*

Fol. 7. Of my Decades, reade of my fyrſt Decade. For as the two fyrſt bookes of the firſt Decade were by. *P. M.* dedicated vnto *Aſcanio Viſconte*, than Cardinall and Vicechaunceller of Rome, ſo are the eight bookes folowing in the ſame Decade writen to the Cardinall of *Aragonia*. Fol. 54. Euery Decade hath ten bookes or Chapters, whereof it hath, according to the Greeke woord, that name.

Fol. 20 *A. and. O. &c.* His meanyng is, that this ſelfe ſame poynte is extreme Weſt, in reſpect of one halfe of the worlde, and extreme Eaſt in reſpecte of the other halfe, or hemiſphere beneath vs.

Fol. 31. *Iuga de Canias.* Reade. *Iuego de Canas.*

Fol. 35. *Barramedabas.* Reade. *Barrameda.*

Fol. 39. To be part of the continent. This was then ſpoken for want of further knowledge, as in other writynges folowyng it will appeare.

Fol. 45. The gold whereof they are made is natiue. &c. This place ſhould be thus Engliſhed. Their golde is lyke vnto that golde in Germany, wherof the Florenes are made. The nexte ſentence likewiſe is not without ſome falte of the tranſlator, for the latin goeth thus. *Alibi in eo tractu intra vaginam mentulam nerium reducunt, funiculoque præputium alligant.*

Fol. 47. *Gorgodes Meducias.* Reade. *Meduſæas,*

Fol 49. Being demaunded of me. This place ſhould you reade thus. Being demaunded of me afterwarde, were it not a ſea ſeparating two landes: they anſwered, the water thereof to be freſh & ſweete, & the further they went vp againſt the ſtreame, it to be ſo much the more freſhe & ſweete, to be full of Ilandes and holeſome fiſhe. They dare aduouche the breadth thereof to be more than. 30. leagues, and the ryuer very ſwiftly to fall into the ſea, yeeldyng vnto the fury of the freſhe water.

Fol. 49. Beyond the citie of *Cathayo.* They ſuppoſed it according to theyr ſkyll in vnknowen places.

Fol. 50. *Animæ album.* Reade. *Animen.*

Item. You ſhall now therfore. This ſentence is not in. *P. M.* But

an other of the ſame length, wherin he abaſeth his own knowledge, in reſpecte of *T. Liuius*, and auoucheth the fantaſies following to be better than *Lucianus* tales, for that *Lucianus* fayned his fables, but theſe follyes to be truly ſuche in deede.

Fol.51. But nowe moſt noble Prince. Three other vaine tales are here left out, of the beginning of the ſea, and the original of woman kynde : all *Greece* could neuer haue imagined more vayne, more ſcornefull, more ſhamefull fables : and ſo are they lefte to ſuch as lyſt to reade them in that language wherin *P. Martyr* dyd wryte them, with the prayſe of ſuche Barbarous miniſters as doe preache them.

Fol.57. The yeere of Chriſt. 1520. Reade. 1502.

Fol.83. *Pezulana*. Reade. *Petrus Arias*.

Fol.89. Or that in *Niogita*. Reade, or that in the blacke burnt Moores countrey, or kyngdome of *Melinde*.

Fol.90. Water is turned into ayre. Reade, ayre is turned into water.

Fol.98. The niene Boates of *Culchas*. Reade, or *Culchas*.

Fol.153. *Collacutea* Reade. *Calecut, Cochin, Comorin*

Fol.164. *Eteſti*. Reade, *Eteſiæ*

Fol.169. *Cemobal* Reade, *Cempoal*

Fol.186. The generations of nations. Reade, of metalles.

Fol.231. Eight. Reade, eighteth.

Item. 36. Reade, 63.

Fol.232. The Weſt Ocean. Reade, South Ocean, namely *Mar del zur*.

Fol.234. περι in the margine, ſhould haue place in the texte before. οἰκυμένης. Reade, the Greeke verſe οὗτως and ὠκεανος.

Fol.252. *P.* 231. In the margine. put it out.

Fol.253. *Peruſe*, theſe foure volumes, Read, the foure volumes.

Fol.260. *Santlianum*, Reade, *Santianum*.

Fol.265. *Obo, alias, Oba* and *Obi*

Fol.268. *Eladimer, al, Volodimer*.

Item, *Smolne, al, Smolensko*

Fol.269. *Impreignable*, Reade, inexpugnable.

Fol.270. *Nicene*, Reade, *Nice*. And of theyr fayth more lykely hereafter. fol. 273 although fol. 302. the former opinion be (recited againe.

Fol.274. Prohibit, Reade, prohibited.

Fol.283. *Volham*, Reade, *Volgha*

Item

Item, *Diuidna, al, Duina*

Item, *Vistiuga*, Reade eche where, *Vstinga*

Fol.279. *Schondia*, for these countreys folowing see *Ortelius*, 45. table in his first edition, *de reg*, *Septentional*

Fol.280. *Sigismundus liberus*; Reade, *liber*, for he was Baron of *Harbestein* & the *Deutche* Barons are called frey heren, wherof in latin also his title was written, *Liber Baro ab Herbestein*, out of his wooркes is that discourse taken. Fol.301.

Fol.281. *Wardhus* Castle.54. the one rowe of figures here signifieth the longitude, the other sheweth the *Latitude*. The reader for his assurance herein, shall doe well to conferre all the figures so set, with the Mappes, lest he be deceyued.

Fol.294. By vnknowen nations. Reade, motions.

Fol.297. The ryuer *Clesma, al. Desma*.

Item. *Marouians*. Reade. *Morauians*

Fol.298. This tongue is spred further. Read agayne of the *Sclauon* tongue at large. Fol.301.

Fol.304. *Bengas*, Of theyr money, and also of all other nations coynes shall you haue a speciall discourse heereafter, if God sende vs lyfe.

Fol.308. *Tumen*. It should seeme to be that *Tamen* spoken of before. Fol.246.

Fol.310. To *Artach*. Reade, in *Artachs*. Fol.335.

Fol.311. *Besermanni*. What they be. Reade,

Fol.312. As do the Christians, imagining so of vs, for that many Christians, to wyt, the meaner sorte, dwel commonly euer in one place.

Fol.316. Seuen werstes, to wyt, seuen *Moscouian* myles, that is, fyue Englyshe myles and somewhat more.

Fol.321. It shall suffice to the reader, put out. to.

Item. *Sachana. al, Sughaua*.

Hisnouogrod. Reade, *Nisnouogrod*.

Tartars, Nogaies, pointe it thus. *Tartars Nogais*.

Bilbil. al Bilbek.

Casbin. Reade, *Casmin*.

Baccho. al Bachu.

Fol.323. *Sharuan, al. Chirua*, and *Seruan*.

Tollepan. Reade, *Torbante*.

Fol.324. *Arash al. Exesch*.

Fol.326. Unto *Mecha* in *Arabia*, to honour Mahumets tombe,

whereof you ſhall reade in *Lewes Vartomannus* Nauigations.
Item. *Ardaxuil.* Reade. *Ardouil.* Item. Fol.320. for *Ardeuelim.*
Fol.327. Dught to be beloued. Reade, beleeued.
Fol.329. *Tulibante.* Reade *Torbante.*
Fol.329. The *Perſians*, to wyt, the Gentlemen of *Perſia.* Eſteeming artes and ſciences, for ſilkes and furnitures of horſes.
Fol.326.&.330.
Fol.330. *Turqueſtan*, it lyeth Northeaſt from the *Caſpian* ſea.
Item. *Phiſon*, is thought to be *Ganges*. it ſhould rather ſeeme to be ſome braunche of *Tigris*.
Fol.331. *Deli.al.Dalangar.*
Caraconi.al.Coraſſan.
His chief manſion place, it was ſo: but now it is not. Fol.322.
Fol.337. *Potofarina*, reade *Portofainra.*
Boua, reade *Bona.*
Fol.345. We made ſayle. Reade, ſale.
Fol.354. inclinations, diuinatiõs. Read, diuiations or wandryng.
Fol.358. Stranger ſolgiers, reade Soldyers.
Fol.375. In the meane tyme. This is the later ende of the ſixte Chapter, the reſidue whereof the Printer hath for modeſtie lefte out: And Eden him ſelfe hath in this tranſlation alſo lefte out many thinges to be ſeene in the latin coppe, eyther as ſuperfluous, or vnſeemely. I am not willyng to defraude *Vartomannus, Eden*, or the Printer of theyr due.
Fol.382. *Condaliis.* I would reade *Sandaliis*, as it may ſeeme in the letter folowing, meanyng thereby a kynde of high ſhooe or buſkyn.
Fol.394. Rime. Reade, rine.
Fol.429. It was loſt and not founde vntill this day. It may be that *P.Martyr* dyd wryte the hiſtorie thereof at large, in Pope Clement the.7. his time, that happely was loſte at the ſacke of Rome: but his abridgement of the aforeſayd viage ſhall you finde written to Pope *Adrian* afterwarde in his fyft Decade, Cap.7. Out of the which woorke, togeather with the reportes of other traueylers that went the aforeſayd vyage, this preſent Pamflet hath been taken.
Fol.429. A day loſt in three yeeres and one moneth. I doe not thinke but that in very deede theſe Spanyardes that ſayled thus

thus rounde about the woꝛld, folowyng continually the weſt, dyd loſe on day in theyꝛ iourney. In lyke maner I am of opinion, that if the Poꝛtugales folowed continually the Eaſte rounde about the woꝛlde, they ſhould fynde at theyꝛ iourneyes ende one day to many. I meane it thus.

Let two paſſengers depart from *Liſbona*, the one Weſtward, the other Eaſtwarde, rounde about the woꝛlde, and both returne home agayne that daye whiche we do call Mydſommer daye. I ſaye that day woulde be to the Eaſterne paſſengers the next day after Mydſommer daye, to the weſterne traueylers but Mydſommer euen. My reaſon is, foꝛ that euery .xv. degrees of the great circle Eaſt oꝛ Weſt, maketh difference one houre: wheꝛefoꝛe Eaſtward after fyfteene degrees, you ſhal begyn your daye one houre ſooner: after fyfteene degrees Weſtward, you ſhall ende your daye one houre later, then you dyd in that place whence you dyd ſet fooꝛth. The whole circle than of the woꝛlde conteynyng preciſely .360 degrees, that is, foure and twentie tymes .xv proportionably to the .24. hours of the day, how can it be otherwiſe, but that theſe paſſengers traueylyng ſtyll eyther Weſtwarde rounde about the woꝛlde, oꝛ Eaſtwarde, ſhoulde either myſſe a daye at theyꝛ iourneyes ende oꝛ elles fynde one to many.

Fol. 430. The epiſtle of *Maximilian Tranſiluane*. This preface is to be founde in the tome of the nauigations wꝛytten in Latine. Fol. 524.

Fol. 436. The pole Antartike Of theſe ſtarres, and the oꝛder therof about the Antartike pole, may you reade moꝛe at large in *Albericus Veſputius* naugations. Cap. 119. to be ſeene in the volume of nauigations witten in Latine. Fol. 91.

The Table.

Richarde Willes Epistle dedicatorye to the Countes of Bedforde.
The Preface for the whole woorke.
The fyrst discoueryng of the west Indies. Fol. 1
What maner of man Christopher Colombus was. Fol. 1
What labour Columbus tooke. Fol. 2

The fyrst part.

Why they were called Indians. Fol. 3
Of the colour of the Indians. Fol. 4
Plato his testimony of the west Indies. Fol. 5
Seneca his testimony thereof. Fol. 6
P. Martyrs Epistle to Charles the Emperour. Fol. 30
The fyrst Decade. Fol. 8
The seconde Decade. Fol. 57
The thyrde Decade. Fol. 94
The. 4. Decade otherwyse entituled of the west Indish Ilandes. Fol. 155
A briefe rehearsall of the contentes of the aforesayde Decades. Fol. 173
R. Edens preface, Gonzalus Ferdinandus Duiedus Epistle to Charles the 5. concernyng his historie of the west Indies. Fol. 185
The ordinarie nauigation from Spayne to the West Indies. Fol. 187
Of two notable thynges as touchyng the west Indies: and of the great ryches brought from thence into Spayne. Fol. 188
Of the golde mines and manner of woorkyng in them. Fol. 188
The maner of fyshyng for pearles. Fol. 191
The familiaritie that the Indians haue with the deuyll. Fol. 193
Of temperate and habitable regions vnder the Equinoctial line. Fol. 195
Of dyuers particular thynges, as Woormes Serpentes, beastes foules. Fol. 198
Of trees, fruites, and plantes. Fol. 204
Of Reedes or Canes. Fol. 207
Of the venomouse apples wherewith the Canibales enuenome their arrowes. Fol. 209
Of fyshes and the maner of fyshyng. Fol. 211
Of the ryssyng and fallyng of our Ocean sea and the south sea called Mar del zur. Fol. 215
Of the stricte of lande betweene the north sea and Mar del zur. Fol. 216
Howe thynges of one kynd differ by the nature of the place, and of the beastes called Tigers. Fol. 217
Of the manners and customes of the Indians of the firme lande and of their women. Fol. 219
Of the Ilandes Hispaniola and Cuba. Fol. 221
Of the Ilande Cuba and other. Fol. 224
Of the land of Baccallaos. Fol. 225
Particularly of newe Spayne called Noua hispania or Mexico. Fol. 225
Of Peru. Fol. 226
Of the ryuer called Rio de la Plata that is the ryuer of syluer. Fol. 226
Of the landes of Labozador and Baccaleos lying west and northwest from England, and beyng part of the fyrme lande. Fol. 227

The second part

The description of the lande Florida. Fol. 228
For maister. Cap. Furbysheys passage by the northwest. Fol. 230
Reportes of the prouince China. Fol. 237

Of

Of the Ilande Giapan and other litle Isles in the east Ocean. Fol. 251
Aloysius Froes letters touchyng Giapan. Fol. 253
Of two Illes betwixte China and the Moluccaes. Fol. 260
A discourse of dyuers voyages and wayes by the whiche Spices, precious stones, and golde were brought in olde tyme from India into Europe and other partes of the worlde also of the voyage to Cathayo and east India by the north sea, of the voyages lykewyse of Sebastian Cabote and particularly of Moscouia. The third part. Fol. 254
A briefe discription of Moscouia by Munster and Gastaldus. Fol. 271
A discription of the north regions and howe they are habitable, contrary to the opinion of the olde wryters. Fol. 275
Schondia. Fol. 279. Swecia or Swethland. Fol. 287. Bothnia. Fol. 187
Groenland. Fol. 280. Gothia or Gothlande. Fol. 288
Islande. Fol. 281. Finland with Emingia. Fol. 288
Laponia. Fol 282.
Norway. Fol. 284.
The difference of regions and causes of great cities. Fol. 288
Paulus Iouius historie of the Moscouian ambassage. Fol. 289
Other notable thynges concernyng Moscouia geathered out of Sigismunde Baron of Herbestein. Fol. 301
A discription of the regions and people lying north and east from Moscouia to the ryuer Petzora and the prouince of Jugra and Oby euen to Cathayo. Fol. 305
Of the famouse ryuer Tanais. Fol. 308
The way out of Moscouia to Cathayo. Fol. 309
Of the Tartars. Fol. 311
The nauigation by the frostye sea. Fol. 315
K. Edwarde the .6. letters to the northeasterne princes by Sir Hugh wyloughbye, in latine and Englyshe. Fol 318
Our Englyshe merchauntes voyage into Persia. Fol. 321
Of maister Jenkensons voyage into Persia. Fol. 322
Of the last vyage into Persia in the yeere of our lorde. 1568. Fol. 324
Of the kyng of Persia his name. Fol. 330.
Of the Persians religione and other their fashions. Fol. 325
Of the Persian Empire and the originall thereof. Fol. 329
Of Persia out of .M. P Venetus. Fol. 329
Of the Persian kyngdome out of Haytthon. Fol. 330
Of Ormius kyngdome ioynyng vnto Persia. Fol. 331
Of the Sophi or kyng of Persia accordyng to the late writers. Fol. 331
The trafique of Persia with other countreys. Fol. 332.
Of the Persian gulfe. Fol. 332.
The preuileages graunted by the Sophi to our merchauntes. Fol. 332
Arthur Edwardes vyage into Persia, with the continuance of the former preuileages. Fol. 333.
The commodities that Engglyshe merchauntes may haue by the trade into Persia. Fol. 335.
The maner howe Christians become Bussomen. Fol. 335
Of the Bombasine or Cotton tree. Fol. 336.
The writyng of the Persians. Fol. 336

The

The Table.

The fourth part.

Of two voyages made out of Englande into Guinea in Afrike. Fol.336.
A briefe description of Afrike. Fol.337.
The fyrst voyage to Guinea. Fol.338.
Pinteado his letters patentes made hym by the kyng of Portugale his maister for his returne. Fol.341.
The seconde voyage to Guinea, with a more full description of Africa, Ethiopia, and the blacke Moores countrey. Fol.342.
The Doues of the Ilande Madera. Fol.353.
Of .S. Thomas Ilande vnder the Equinoctiall line. Fol.353.
Lewes Vertomannus nauigation into Arabia, Egypte, Persia, Syria, Ethiopia, and East India. Fol.354.
The contentes of the whiche voyages are these folowyng.

The contentes of the .vii. bookes of nauigations and voyages of Lodouicus Vartomannus to the regions of Arabia, Egypte, Persia, Siria, east India, and Ethiopia.

The contentes of the fyrst booke.

The fyrst Chaptere is of the nauigation from Venice to Alexandria in Egypte. Fol.355.
Of the citie named Cayrus, Alcayr, Memphis, or Babylon in Egypte, vpon the ryuer of Nilus. Cap.2. Fol.355.
Of the cities of Berynth, Tripoli, and Antioch. Cap.3. Fol.356.
Of the cities of Aman and Benin. Cap.4. Fol.356.
Of the citie of Damasco. Cap.5. Fol.357.
Of such thinges as are seene in the citie of Damasco. Cap.6. Fol.358.
Of the Mamalukes of Damasco. Cap.7. Fol.358.
The iorney from Damasco to Mecha: And of the maners of the Arabians. Cap.8. Fol.359.
Of the strength and valiantnesse of the Mamalukes. Cap.9. Fol.361.
Of the cities of Sodoma and Gomorrha. Cap.10. Fol.361.
Of a mountayne inhabited with Iewes: And of the citie named Medinathalhabi, where Mahumet was buryed. Cap.11. Fol.362.
Of the Temple or Chapell and Sepulchre of Mahumet and his felowes. Cap.12. Fol.362.
Of the Secte of Mahumet. Cap.13. Fol.363.
The iorney to Mecha. Cap.14. Fol.364.
The fourme and situation of the citie of Mecha: And why the Mahumetans resort thyther. Cap.15. Fol.365.
Of the Merchaundies of Mecha. Cap.16. Fol.366.
The pardons and Indulgenses of Mecha. Cap.17. Fol.366.
The maner of Sacrificyng in Mecha. Cap.18. Fol.367.
Of the Vnicornes of the Temple of Mecha, whiche are not seene in any other place. Cap.19. Fol.368.
Of dyuers thynges whiche chaunced to the autour in Mecha. Cap.20. Fol. 368.
Of the red sea, and why it can not be sayled in the nyght. Cap.21. Fol 370.

The

The Table.

The contentes of the secounde booke.

Of the citie Gezan in Arabia Foelix. That is, the blessed or happie Arabia. Cap. 1. Fol. 371
Of certayne people named Banduin. Cap. 2. Fol. 371
Of an Ilande of the red sea named Camaran. Cap. 3. Fol. 371
Of the citie of Aden, and theyr maners and customes towarde straungers. Cap. 4. Fol. 372
Howe the women of Arabia are greatly in loue with white men. Cap. 5. Fol. 373
Of the liberalitie of the queene toward the autour. Cap. 6. Fol. 375
Of the cities of Lagi and Aiaz in Arabia Foelyx. And of the towne of Dante. Cap. 7. Fol. 375
Of Almacharan, a citie of Arabia Foelyx: And of the fruitefulnesse thereof. Cap. 8. Fol. 375
Of Reame, a citie of Arabia Foelyx: And the Temperateneſſe thereof. Cap. 9. Fol. 376
Of Sana, a citie of Arabia Foelyx. Cap. 10. Fol. 376
Of Taessa, Zibith, and Damar: great cities of Arabia Foelyx. Cap. 11. Fol. 376
Of the Soltan of the foresayde cities: And why he is named Sechamir. Cap. 12. Fol. 377
Of Monkeys and Marmasettes, and other beastes noysome to men Cap. 13. Fol. 377
Of certayne places of Ethiope. Cap. 14. Fol. 377
Of the citie of Zeila in Ethiope: And the great fruitefelneſſe thereof: And of certayne straunge beastes seene there. Cap. 15. Fol. 377
Of Barbara, an Ilande of Ethiope. Cap. 16. Fol. 378
Of Ethiope, reade more in the last nauigation in the ende of the booke.

The contentes of the thyrde booke.

Of Persia, and of certayne townes and portes of Persia. Cap. 1. Fol. 378
Of the Ilande and citie of Ormus or Armusium: And of an Iland of Persia where pearles are founde. Cap. 2. Fol. 378
Of the citie named Eri, in Corozani, a region of Persia, and of the ryches thereof: Also of Reubarbarum. Cap. 3. Fol. 379
Of a ryuer thought to be Euphrates: and of Castorcum. Cap. 4. Fol. 379
Of the citie of Saint Bragant, bygger then Babylon: And of the kyng of Persia, named the Sophi. Cap. 5. Fol. 380

The contentes of the fourth booke.

Of India, and of the cities, and notable thynges seene there: And fyrst of the citie of Cambaia, most fruitefull. Cap. 1. Fol. 381
The maners of the people of Cambaia: And of the Soltan of that citie Cap. 2. Fol. 381
Of the citie of Ceul, and the maners of thinhabitantes. Cap. 3. Fol. 382
Of Goga an Ilande of India. Cap. 4. Fol. 383
Of Decham a very fayre citie of India. Cap. 5. Fol. 383
Of certayne other goodly cities of India. Cap. 6. Fol. 384
Of Canonor and Narsinga, great cities of India. Cap. 7. Fol. 384

Of

Of the fruiteful citie of Bisnagar in the kyngdome of Narsinga. Cap.8. Fol. 384
Of the Docilitie, agilitie and wytte of Elephantes. Cap 9 Fol. 385
Of the ingendryng of Elephantes: And of the magnificence and ryches of the kyng of Narsinga. Cap.10. Fol. 386

The contentes of the fyfth booke.

Of the famous and ryche citie of Calecut Cap.1. Fol. 387
Of the kyng of Calecut: And of theyr Idolatrye. Cap.2. Fol. 387
Of the maner whiche the kyng useth at his meate. Cap.3. Fol. 388
Of the Priestes of Calecut named Bramini. Cap.4. Fol. 388
Of the diuers sectes of Idolatours in the citie of Calecut Cap.5. Fol.39 8
The apparell of the kyng, queene, and the inhabitantes of the citie of Calecut: And of theyr maner of feedyng. Cap.6. Fol. 389
Of theyr custome after the death of the kyng. Cap.7. Fol. 389
Of theyr changyng of wyues. Cap.8. Fol. 390
The maner of feedyng of the common people of the Idolaters: And of their Justice. Cap 9. Fol. 390
Of their honouryng of Idoles. Cap.10. Fol.390
Of their maner of warre. Cap.11. Fol. 391
Of theyr shyppes and maner of saylyng on the sea. Cap.12 Fol. 391
The palace and courte of the kyng of Calecut. Cap.13. Fol. 392
The Spices of Calecut. Cap.14. Fol. 392
The foules and byrdes of Calecut. Cap.15. Fol. 393
Of a most fruitefull tree of all the worlde. Cap.16. Fol. 393
Howe they sowe Ryse. Cap.17. Fol. 394
Howe theyr Phisitions visit the sicke folkes. Cap.18. Fol. 394
Of theyr exchaungers, bankers, and brokers. Cap.19. Fol. 395
Of thinhabitantes of Poliar and Hiraua. Cap.20. Fol. 395
Of foure fouted beastes, foules, and byrdes of Calecut. Cap.21. Fol. 395
Of certayne Serpentes whiche are seene in Calecut. Cap.22. Fol. 396
Of the lyghtes and lampes whiche are seene in the palace of the kyng of Calecut. Cap.23. Fol. 396
The great multitude of Idolaters whiche resorte to Calecut for pardon of theyr sinnes. Cap.24. Fol. 396

¶ The contentes of the syxth booke, of the Nauigation of India.

Of the citie of Caicolon and Colon. Cap.1. Fol. 397
Of Cyromandel a citie of India. Cap.2. Fol. 397
Of the Ilande of Zailon, and the precious stones founde there. Cap.3. Fol. 398
Of the tree of Cinamome in the Ilande of Zailon. Cap.4. Fol. 398
Of Paleachet, a citie of India. Cap.5. Fol. 399
Of Tarnasari, a Citie of India. Cap.6. Fol. 399
Of the wylde and tame beastes in the citie of Tarnasari. Cap.7. Fol. 399
The maner whiche the kyng of Tarnasari useth when he permitteth his wyfe to be deflowred of whyte men. Cap.8. Fol. 400
The maner of burnyng dead bodies in the citie of Tarnasari. Cap.9. Fol. 400
The Justice which thinhabitants of Tarnasari obserue. Cap.10. Fol. 401
Howe the Mahumetans are buryed in the citie of Tarnasari. Cap.11. Fol. 401
The dyuers sorts of their shyps or other vesselles of sailing. Cap.12. Fol. 401

Of

Of Bangella, a great and ryche citie of India: And of the great power of the kyng of that citie. Cap.13. Fol. 401
Of certaine Chriſtian merchauntes which trafique there. Cap.14. Fol. 402
Of Pego a famous citie of India. Cap.15. Fol. 402
Of the magnificence, humanitie, and great ryches of the kyng of Pego. Cap.16. Fol. 403
Of the citie of Melacha, and the great ryuer of Gaza. Cap.17 Fol. 404
Of the Ilande of Sumatra or Taprobana. Cap.18. Fol. 405
Of an other kynde of Pepper: Alſo of ſylke, and the precious gumme called Laſerpitium or Belzoe. Cap.19. Fol. 405
Of three ſortes of the tree of Aloes. Cap.20. Fol. 405
Howe the gummes of Aloes & Laſerpitium, are proued. Cap.21. Fol. 406
Of diuers merchauntes in the Ilande of Sumatra or Taprobana. Cap.22. Fol. 406
Of the Iland of Bandan where Nutmegges & Maſe are founde. Cap.23. Fol. 407
Of the Ilande of Monoch, where Cloues growe. Cap.24. Fol. 407
Of the Ilande of Borneí. Cap.25. Fol. 407
Of certayne obſeruations vſed in the nauigation to the Ilande of Giaua. Cap.26. Fol. 408
Of the Iland of Giaua, & the maners of the people. Cap.27. Fol. 408
Of the cruell maners in ſleying their parentes to the Anthropophagi to be eaten. Cap.28. Fol. 409
Of the ſtrange courſe of the Sunne in the Iland of Giaua. Cap.29. Fol. 409
Of their returne from the Iland of Giaua. Cap.30. Fol. 409
Agayne of the citie of Calecut after their returne thyther. Cap.31. Fol. 410
Of the commyng of the kyng of Portugales ſhyps to the citie of Canonor. Cap.32. Fol. 411
Howe the autour playde the phiſition, and counterfet holynes, leſt he ſhoulde be taken for a ſpie of the Portugales. Cap.33. Fol. 411
How the Mahumetã prieſtes cal the people to their church. Cap.34. Fol. 412
The maner of praying among the Mahumetans. Cap.35. Fol. 412
What ſubtiltie the autour vſed to depart from Calecut, to go to the Portugales. Cap.36. Fol. 413
How he fled to the Portugales from the citie of Canonor. Cap.37. Fol. 413
Of the nauie of the citie of Calecut, and of the memorable conflicte betweene the Chriſtians and Mahumetans: In the which the Portugales with incredible valiantneſſe, gaue their enimies the ouerthrowe: And howe the kyng of Canonor reioyced at the victorie. Cap.37. Fol. 415

The contentes of the ſeuenth and laſt booke.

The voyage or nauigation of Ethiopia. Cap.1. Fol. 419
Of dyuers and many Ilandes of Ethiope. Cap.2. Fol. 419
Of the Ilande of Monzambich, & the inhabitantes therof. Cap.3. Fol. 419
Of the Cape, named Caput Bone Spei: That is, the the Cape of good hope. Cap.4. Fol. 421
Of the hygher eaſt India, called Terciera. Fol. 42
Of the prices of precious ſtones and ſpyces, with their weyghtes and meaſures, as they are accuſtomed to be ſolde both of the Moores, & the Gentyles; and of the places where they growe. Fol. 423.

Of

Of the Ruble. Fol. 423
Of the Rubies whiche growe in the Iſlande of Zeilam. Fol. 423
Of the kynde of Rubies called Spinelle. Fol. 424
Of the Rubies called Balaſni. Fol. 424
Of the Diamondes of the olde mine. Fol. 424
Of Saphires. Fol. 425
Of Topaſies. Fol. 425
Of Turqueſſes. Fol. 425
Of Iacinthes. Fol. 426
Of Smaragdes or Emeraldes. Fol. 426
Of dyuers kyndes of ſpices, where they growe, what they are wooꝛth in Calecut, and whyther they are caryed from thence. And fyꝛſt of Pepper. Fol. 426
Of Cloues. Fol. 427
Of Cinamome.
Of Ginger called Beledi.
Of Ginger Mechino. Fol. 427
Of greene Ginger in conſerues.
Of the Apothecaries dꝛugges, and of what pꝛice they are in Calecut and Malabar. Fol. 428
Of the weyghes of Poꝛtugale and India, and how they agree. Fol. 429
Of the vyage made by the Spanyardes rounde about the woꝛlde. Fol. 429
Maximilian Tranſiluanus letter thereof to the Cardinall of Saltzburge. Fol. 430
The debate and ſtrife, betweene the Spaniardes and Poꝛtugales foꝛ the diuiſion of the Indies, and the trade of Spices, and the Moluccaes, out of Lopez de Gomara. Fol. 448
The repartition and diuiſion of the Indies and newe woꝛlde betweene the Spanyardes and the Poꝛtugales. Fol. 448
The cauſe and aucthoꝛitie whereby they deuided the Indies. Fol. 450
Howe and by what occaſion the Emperour layed the Ilandes of Moluccaes to pledge to the kyng of Poꝛtugale. Fol. 451
Pope Alexander the .6. his Bull touchyng the afoꝛeſayde partition of the Indies, Latine and Englyſhe. Fol. 452. & Fol. 454
An abꝛidgement of .P. Martyꝛ his .5. 6. 7. and .8. Decades, & particularly of F. C. conqueſt of Mexico by .R. W. Fol. 457

FINIS.

Imprinted at London by Rychard Iugge. Anno. 1577.

Cum Priuilegio.

DS77
D2910
c



